

Zhan Long

(斩龙)

Volume 01

Starting from Scratch

Shi Luo Ye

(失落叶)

Story Description:

Li Xiao Yao. Former S.W.A.T member, but retired into an ordinary security guard. While being sent to grab a ladder, he accidentally stumbled upon the VIP room instead of the storage room, and found a women in the middle of changing. As revenge, she brought him out in the middle of nowhere and kicked him off there. He spent hours walking back, only to find himself being kicked out due to lack of payment. As bad things pile one after another, his previous supervisor offers him a new job as the bodyguard for the daughter of the Tian Xin group CEO, both in reality, and in a virtual reality game -Hello

Original Story can be found here: [Link](#)

Chapter 1: 34D Goddess

In the heat of summer, sunlight pierced my skin like a poison-tipped arrow. As I stood in the lookout post, the beads of perspiration dripped down my cheeks and onto my grass-green uniform. It looked as if there was an open tap spewing down my face, making this unbearable heat even worse.

I stood motionless. The sweat on my brow dripped past my eyelashes and stung my eye. God damn, that security manager took away the umbrella in the post just to pick on me, the newcomer to the security department. It's okay, I'll be the better man and not complain..... Damn you, I'm dying of heat here.

My name is Li Xiao Yao¹. What an uncommon name, isn't it? My parents hoped that I would grow to deal with bullies and help the poor, but I could not live up to their expectations. One could only describe me as ordinary, seeing that I have only worked for less than two months in some Hangzhou science company as part of security. I've had to bear the shame and discipline required to go a few days without food, all because this job couldn't afford me three good meals a day. I didn't even have a full security uniform and had to work a daily afternoon shift, which forced me to bear this summer heat in the first place. My life was as bitter as the juice squeezed from a bitter gourd².

Moreover, I've fantasized about meeting beautiful women in uniform before, but in the two months I've been here, nothing of the sort happened. The women here were so ugly when without makeup they could scare someone out of their wits, and even if they put on makeup they would still make you defecate in your pants.

As I shifted my gaze away to the company building in the distance, a woman exited. She was Wang Yan, the flower of the banking department. Her chest and legs were 9 points, however her face was only 1 point.

Wang Yan knew me, and she swayed her hips, walking out of the building leisurely. She had heels of at least 7 cm³ and her slender snow-

white pair of legs set in full display. She stopped at the lookout post, smiles, and says: “Li Xiao Yao, “Destiny” opens the day after tomorrow. Do you want to continue working this boring security job? Or do you want to follow me and join the group our banking department is making to be our goon? You know, I obtained the limited edition game helmet...”

I glanced at the white helmet, which indeed was the recently released Destiny limited edition helmet. This helmet costed at least 10,000RMB and my monthly wage was only 1,000RMB. What a long shot!

Looking forward, I said with neither arrogance nor servility, “That would be too unfair to you, Miss Wang. I must work to earn my keep.”

Wang Yan then raised the helmet, bending her waist. It revealed her two mountains. “You know, this Big Sister over here really likes your ice-cold demeanor. You should think about this carefully. If you change your mind, I can provide you with three meals a day and a game card. Also...”

She raised her head to look at me seductively, her buttocks bending upwards very obviously, saying “if you do well, a special reward as well” while smiling sultrily.

I remained silent until the tactful flower of the banking department departed, to which I breathed a sigh of relief and relaxed.

The security manager Lao Yu coughed, saying with a smile: “Li Xiao Yao, Wang Yan has taken a liking towards you, hasn’t she?”

I remained silent and stood there, allowing the Sun to continue to roast me, like an Australian roasted chicken. I felt like I was steaming up.

To be honest, Wang Yan was not the one that tempted me the most. Yes, it was the game, “Destiny”. Taking 10 years of development to produce, “Destiny” boasted 97% realism, compared to the paltry 39% of those before. Additionally, to the rookie me who has not touched VRMMOs at all, how could I not be tempted? Sadly, my monthly wage was too pathetic to afford this luxury.

My body trembled a little, and just as I began to suspect that I really had been roasted, Lao Yu suddenly shouted: “Li Xiao Yao, you don’t have

to keep watch anymore, Liu Zong wants you to lend a hand at the photograph department. It's the weekend and there's a group of models taking pictures, which is why they're short of manpower.

"Okay, I got it."

The photograph department is at the 7th floor. They normally invite some stars or models to photograph to promote some new products. As for who is here today, I did not know.

As I entered the 7th floor, the staff recognized me immediately. "Li Xiao Yao, go to the filming studio and help us move the boxes quickly."

I knew it! I really had the life of a box-mover.

"Hi, do you know who is getting photographed today?" He pats my shoulder and asks.

"Nope, whoever is getting photographed does not concern me in the slightest." I replied while shaking my head.

He smiles. "No wonder you haven't had a girlfriend all your life, you're so stubborn!"

Haven't had a girlfriend!

These four words had the weight of 4 heavy punches to my heart, hurting my self-confidence.

"Who is it that is making you so excited?" I asked.

"A huge star, man. And she has beauty beyond measure! You should consider yourself lucky to even get to see such a goddess. It's your lucky day!"

"Forget the star, I'm only here to move boxes."

"..."

Upon entering the film studio, before I even finished moving the boxes, the film director shouted: "Li Xiao Yao, go to the 13th warehouse and grab me a ladder. Go quickly!"

"Okay!"

I am an integral part of the company, wherever stuff needs to be moved, I'll be there. With this attitude, I would have been the CEO soon.

Sprinting to the warehouse door, I tried to open it and realised it was locked. Well, it was fine as I had the key anyway. Grabbing the bunch of keys, I confirmed that I had taken the correct key and opened the door.

Swish!

As the door opened, I briskly walked inside, only to hear a shriek. The scene in front my eyes almost paralyzed me—

There was a perfect nose-bleed scenario here. It was a young woman with an extremely exquisite body, who seemingly was changing clothes. In her hand was a pink bra that was not worn yet, and her twin peaks trembled slightly. There were two flesh-coloured strawberries. Panning downward, silk covered her private parts and beyond that there were a pair of pearl-like long legs. It was simply stunning!

She was shocked speechless and stood there in a daze, staring at me for a full two seconds with her eyes full of anger, before calmly saying: "Who are you?"

I was also stunned. Not saying a word, I immediately slammed the door shut.

It was as if I was suffocating, silently standing there. Luckily, when I rubbed the area under my nose there wasn't any blood. There wasn't any sound coming from inside. This woman was refined and refreshing, eons above the women at our company. And if I am not mistaken, this is the star that the guy was talking about. What in the world have I done?

1.7 meters in height, appearance with a full 10 points, body 10 points as well, and not to mention a 34D bust. Definitely must be the star.

Although my heart ripped a little from all the toughness of this life, I think this life can be considered fulfilled.

Taking a look at the door plate, I realised my mistake. The sign said Changing Room B, which I mistook for 13. Where is the 13th warehouse? Who in the world designed this door plate, spacing the B so far apart?

Ten minutes later, a trembling me arrived at the filming studio with a ladder in hand.

On stage, there was a person showered with bright lights dressed in purple, our company's product in hand. Her smile was radiant and melted my heart. One could sit here for a long time just admiring. The studio directors stood there dazed, admiring her beauty but I did not do the same. That's right, this woman was the 34D! I'm dead, she really is the star.

"Cut!"

Putting the ladder down, I whispered to the director: "Director, I've brought the ladder, do you need anything else?"

Not turning his head from 34D's stunning legs, he told me: "It's fine, you can return first!"

"Okay..."

As I was about to leave, the woman who was blasted with shining lights stood up and said: "Ah, the man in the security uniform over there, please don't go yet."

The film directors were confused. "Miss Lin, what do you need?"

34D looked at me, her beautiful eyes stared cunningly. With a profound smile, she said: "My bodyguard had matters to attend to, so he left first. In a short while, I'll have to return home alone. I'll let this security guard bring me home instead."

"Okay, sure!"

One of the film directors patted my shoulder, murmuring in a low voice: "Lucky son of a gun, she's got her eyes on you."

My lips curled into a wispy smile, lifting my head to gaze at her. "Got her eyes on me? She's obviously thinking of how to dispose of me..." I thought to myself.

Half an hour later, all the filming was done. 34D walked over, her fragrant smell attacking my nostrils. She smiled at me saying, "You just

wait here, don't leave yet."

I lowered my head in silence, palms full of sweat. The situation just got a whole lot worse.

After about 10 minutes, 34D appeared from the changing room with a white top and shorts, looking fresh and new again. A dazzling pair of long legs and intoxicating cheeks led one to admire, but I did not have the heart to appreciate it. This is because I could feel her murderous intent beneath that smile. A girl of this caliber definitely had more killing power than those ugly women.

"Let's go?" she asked with a smile.

I nodded my head gravely.

I followed her out the building, only to realise the sky was clouded and it was about to rain.

In the parking lot, a white Audi TT's lights shone. I clenched my fist, not sure what to expect.

"Get on!"

34D said imperatively.

I obediently got into the passenger sit while she sat on the driver's seat comfortably. Hanging her stuff, she turned to look at me with mysterious eyes and said: "Don't worry, we'll go out to play for a while."

"Go out to play..." I softly murmured. My heart was beating furiously. Did she want to play with her Audi, or did she want to play me?

The Audi TT's engine roared and it bursted out of the parking lot. Not stopping in the urban district, she drove directly to Mt. Tianping's mountainous roads. At the same time, the sky rumbled with thunder and rain started to fall. Pi pi da da The pitter patter of the rain against the window started. However, the car showed no signs of slowing down, which made my heart almost stop. Although this 34D drove masterfully, it was definitely too dangerous to drive like this.

The Audi suddenly came screeching to a halt, the car in the road

shoulder. Silently, she laid against the seat and looked at me while smiling: “Wait here for a bit.”

“...”

She dialed a number, saying “I’ve arrived, what time will you guys be arriving? Why? Just because it’s raining, we can’t race anymore? Don’t joke with me and come here immediately!”

I did not say anything, but I’ve already smelled the scent of something ominous.

As expected, thirty minutes later, two cars raced up the mountain path, one a Ferrari, and the other a Camaro. Both of them were excellent at racing, this was definitely a race between rich people’s children, dear lord. Though the TT is great, how can it compare against a Ferrari?

I looked at 34D, and she looked at me. giving a pleasant smile which bewitched me.

“You...” I maintained calm and said: “Are you planning to die with me?”

34D smiles and softly says: “What’s wrong, are you scared?”

I straightened my chest, saying: “Don’t be ridiculous?”

“Also, the way you stared in the changing room just now already decided your fate” she said.

“Sorry, I didn’t mean it. I was only trying to get a ladder.”

34D stretched her body, saying with a smile: “No problem, don’t mind it.”

“How can I not mind it, I’m about to die here!” I thought to myself.

Translator Notes

1. 逍遥自在 xiāo yáo zì zài meaning carefree and taking life leisurely.
2. Hard to localise this, in Chinese the word 苦 can mean both bitter and tough, so the author is comparing the bitterness of the bitter gourd juice to MC’s tough life.
3. 7 cm is about 3 inches.

4. 10000RMB is about 1600USD.

Chapter 2: The Driving God of Legends

In the curtain of rain, the Ferrari's window rolled down to reveal a young man with dyed hair, eyes full of arrogance. "Yo, I see today you brought a loser as well."

34D smiles, saying: "Yes..."

My self-confidence was attacked and I clenched my fist tightly in anger. I really wanted to rush out there and smash the Ferrari but after smashing it, I wouldn't have enough to pay for the damages. Forget it, I'll resist the temptation.

"Let's start!"

The 34D at my side pushed the gear stick down and started the engine. The Ferrari at the side also started to move.

zoom

The car chassis rushed forward and the inertia was extremely frightening.

The three cars rushed forward together and raced down the mountainous road under the curtain of rain.

Straight ahead was a sharp turn and I grabbed onto the armrest tightly, mouth clenched. At this speed, if the car did not drift, it would get flung into the ravine below.

Whish

The beauty at my side violently turned the steering wheel while simultaneously tugging on the gear stick. Such precise drifting!

As expected, the tyres of the car skidded on the ground, taking a nice drifting arc. Completing this turn, 34D managed to pull ahead of the other cars.

34D's lips curled into a smile, laughing sweetly. She turned to look at me, to which I returned a blank stare. This made her a little disappointed. She probably wanted to scare me into kneeling on the seat and asking

“Please, spare me and let me out of this car”.

From behind, the roaring of an engine could be heard. The Ferrari swerved past the TT, overtaking it in an excellent arc. The TT truly could not compare to that of a race car.

The Goddess tightly gripped the steering wheel, her eyes glued to the front. She continued to accelerate.

34D tried to overtake the Ferrari but to no avail. She was slightly irritated and nearly scratched into one of the guard rails once.

Whish

Rain water splashed up from the front when the Ferrari turned sharply, perpendicular to the TT. 34D had no choice but to slam the brakes, causing her visible displeasure.

Slamming the steering wheel, 34D gritted her teeth.

The man in the Ferrari continued to laugh, saying: “What’s wrong? Do you only have this much skill? Where did the fiery attitude you challenged my younger brother with from last week go? Hahaha!”

I exited the car hurriedly, walking over to the driver seat and knocked on the window. “Climb over to the passenger seat, let me try!” I said to her.

34D was stunned: “You? Do you have a driver’s license?”

I crack a smile and reply: “Nope, but you don’t have to worry...”

“You’re asking me to relax when you don’t even have a driver’s license?”

“You already lost anyway, and since you want to die with me, you might as well let me try it out!”

“Okay then...”

34D decided, climbing over to the passenger seat. A pair of snow-white legs were displayed in front of me, which made my mouth water. If she didn’t hate me, that would be great. What a beautiful lady, snow white...

Sitting in the driver’s seat, I push down the gear stick, poking my head out of the window. “Hey, it isn’t over yet. First one to the mountain wins,

deal?”

The Ferrari man's face contorted with disdain, saying: “Tch, a security guard... let me bet with you then!”

The Ferrari flew into action, followed closely by the Camaro, and me at the end. Neither quickly nor slowly, I approached the second bend and slammed the gas pedal, pulling up the gear stick. Skshhhh The sounds of the tyre screeching flew past the Camaro as I brushed past it. That was a beautiful pass if I do say so myself. End-to-head, the Camaro guy was afraid and had no choice but to slow down. Who would dare to follow me that closely?

At the fifth bend, I seemed to have no intention to accelerate at all, but when I reached the bend I immediately accelerated, speeding forth. The TT was now side-by-side with the Ferrari, completing a high-risk overtaking move. The muddy water splashed onto the Ferrari's car as I completed the maneuver.

Upon hearing the angry shout of the Ferrari man, 34D could not hold in her laughter.

A few minutes later, the Ferrari overtakes another car again. This time I gently hold on to the steering wheel, tilting the rear of the car. This scared the man and he turned the Ferrari as well, causing the rear to scratch against the Ferrari's number plate.

“ ... ”

As the TT rolled to a stop, the Ferrari stopped as well. The angry man opened the door and scolded: “Lin Wan Er, count yourself lucky this time. We will meet again. Damn it!”

The Ferrari and Camaro sped into the rain as losers of the race, quickly escaping in shame.

I lie back into the seat, body poised to look out the window. The rain slowly stopped as well.

34D silently sat there for awhile, for saying: “Your driving techniques aren't half bad, where did you practice?”

I laugh, “I was in the traffic police department for awhile. I was known as the number one driving god.”

“...”

Seeing the heavy atmosphere, I decide to ask: “This is horrible weather to have a race in, how could you not treasure your life?”

Eyes a little red, she looks out the window. “Someone like you can not understand my past grievances.”

I laugh a little. “Your grievances? Look at me, I don’t even have money for the next meal, and my rent hasn’t been paid for the past two days. Look at you, you drive an Audi TT and you still call it a grievance? Your mother is a grievance!”

34D looks at me pitifully with apologetic eyes. She pushes the door open and says “You should get out...”

Of course, I get out.

Zoom

The car engine roars, and the Audi TT speeds away into the distance.

Standing in the rain water, I was dumbfounded for a short while before realising: “Damn it, I just got left on the mountain top! Great, this is a good comeback, this is a brutal comeback!”

Wiping the rain water off my face, I smile. Reaching into my pocket, I find less than 10 cents. There’s no way I’m going to be able to ride public transport back. What a minor issue, this couldn’t set me back one bit.

Taking to my heels, I run an entire 20 kilometers back to the company. An incredible sight occurred – a young man dressed in a security guard uniform continuously ran past public transport and rental cars, dredging deeper and deeper into the stream of traffic, stopping for no one at all.

After a little over an hour, I arrived at the entrance to the company, short of breath and panting heavily.

Naturally!

I only managed to get back to the company at 5pm, which worried me a great deal. I did not have any dinner prepared, but since it's the rush hour now, I couldn't go to the company's cafeteria to eat as well.

Changing out of my uniform, I left the company building.

As the night fell, the city's lights shone brightly, as if a graceful woman had just put on her evening gown. What a pity, this sight could only be enjoyed by rich people and as for people like me... I belonged to the group known as 'city garbage'¹.

Oh well, it's time to earn money now.

Clang clang clang

The sound of the chuan² banging against the wok³ clamoured into the night. This was a stall that only opened at night⁴. Fried rice, fried noodles, fried vegetables, small dishes like this were sold and there were many customers.

After cooking about 20 plates of fried rice, head full of sweat, the boss patted my shoulder and said: "Well done, Xiao Li, you've worked really hard today. Here's your pay for today..."

I ecstatically took the 5 yuan⁵ and set off for the next destination.

Beside the big road, there was a red light district club called Bi Hai Lan Tian⁶. This is the place where rich people gather and waste money. As I slowly walked up to the entrance, the young bouncers ahead recognized me immediately.

After entering, a fatty looked at me and smiled heartily, saying: "Ah, you've finally arrived, Li Xiao Yao!"

I nodded my head, asking: "How many songs today?"

"3 songs, 10 yuan each!"

"Okay, thanks Brother Biao⁷!"

"Hold on, wear your attire first!"

A Western style top was thrown at me and I quickly put it on. Walking

deeper into the club, I walked up the stage and sat in front of a big piano. Putting my fingers to work, I played three songs in total – the first Tian Kong Zhi Cheng⁸, the next being Xiao Gou Yuan Wu Qu⁹, and the last being Yu De Yin Ji¹⁰. After finishing the last song, the club erupted into applause.

I quickly exited the stage, smiling for the audience before preparing to leave. Just as I was about to leave, a tender arm grabbed my hand. It was the arm of a beautiful foreign lady, who hurriedly put a piece of paper into my front pocket. On it was a string of numbers. She smiled seductively and said: “Hi, call me!”

I smiled lightly and exited the main entrance, removing my attire and taking the three 10 yuan bills from the fatty, walking away.

Looking at my back, Brother Biao lets out a deep sigh-

“My gosh, what a talent!”

Spending 5 yuan on a plate of omelette rice, I guess I managed to get by another day. Slowly walking along the big street, I see a huge LED screen displaying a “Destiny” advertisement. This game was a major breakthrough that many video game addicts have been waiting for. I as well, am a video game addict and I really wanted to dive into the world of “Destiny”. However, I did not have enough money at hand. What’s more, there were only 1 million helmets sold worldwide, and the black market is selling it for 10000RMB a piece. There’s no way I would be able to play. Forget it, I should just slowly save up and wander around¹¹.

It’s such a shame, the day after tomorrow will be the launch of “Destiny”. If I miss the first day launch, I’ll surely fall behind the rest!

I returned to my lodging, Long Hua Xiao Qu¹². It was a two room flat consisting only a bedroom and living room, with a rent of 800 yuan. However, I have not paid the bill for two days now, and the sarcastic old landlady whose heart is cold and criticism is fiery would not let me stay for much longer. There was no other way to deal with this kind of woman at this age other than to endure it.

Arriving at the first floor of the building, I reached for my keys and tried

to open the door. Hmm? It wouldn't open!

What's going on?

Looking closely, I realised the lock had been changed. There was also a note above that saying: 'Li Xiao Yao, since you haven't paid the rent in two days, there are people coming tomorrow to decide if they want it. There's no choice, I'm kicking you out. Your stuff is beside the kitchen!'

I turned around to find a blanket and some toiletries on the floor, all collected in one place.

Racking my brain to understand what's happening, I finally understood

—

Damn it, I've been evicted!

Lifting my head, I see countless bright stars in night sky. It would be great for poetic inspiration...

Hmm, today is a weekend, there will countless mushy and romantic lovers in the park. I definitely can't sleep there. Guess there's no choice, I will have to sleep in the lawn outside Long Hua Xiao Qu. It's summer anyway so besides the mosquito bites, there won't be much else to disturb me. I'm a strong man, and I know martial arts so I won't be scared of any robbers.

Around 11pm, the night was cooling and I was cuddled in the blanket. In the corner of the lawn, my consciousness slowly drifted away.

Bzzzzzz

The mosquitoes buzzed incessantly around my head. This was a challenging task to endure but I wouldn't let it affect me. I placed a thick mosquito net over my head which covered my face and protected me from the mosquitoes but did not obstruct my breathing.

The night passes and at dawn, the rooster does it's job.

I open my eyes and see the morning sky, which reminded me of a poem: I wake from my dreams, the willows billowing in the dying of the moonlight¹³.

Before I manage to finish reciting the poem, an arm suddenly rests on my shoulder. “Brother Xiao Yao, what are you doing sleeping outside?”

Translator Notes

1. Trash of society, not sure why the author decided to phrase it differently.
2. The chuan is shovel-like cooking utensil that helps when frying using a wok.http://www.wokshop.com/HTML/products/accessories/access_wok.html for reference.
3. The wok is a bowl-shaped cooking vessel.<http://en.wikipedia.org/wiki/Wok> for reference.
4. In China road-side night stalls are very common and cheap, so people usually eat there.
5. 5 yuan is about 1 USD
6. 碧海蓝天, if anyone would like to suggest a name first this please do.
7. 彪哥 means “Tiger Brother” but that would sound weird.
8. 天空之城, directly translating it means Fortress in the Sky, but I’m not sure if it’s supposed to mean something else.
9. 小狗圆舞曲, d/t means Round Dance of the Dog, again not sure if it has other meanings.
10. 雨的印记, d/t means Imprints of Rain.
11. 笑傲江湖 Apparently it’s a famous novel meaning The Proud, Smiling Warrior written a long time ago, but I’m not sure what the author means here.
http://en.wikipedia.org/wiki/The_Smiling_Proud_Wanderer for reference.
12. 龙华小区, d/t means District of the Dragon.
13. 今宵梦醒何处, 杨柳岸, 晓风残月 It’s a part of a poem by 北宋 柳永, unfortunately I couldn’t find any English articles on this. There is a Chinese explanation of this
[here:http://www.exam58.com/scmj/3647.html](http://www.exam58.com/scmj/3647.html). I tried my best to translate it into English but you probably shouldn’t take it seriously.

Chapter 3: The Soaring Grasshopper

Awaking from my slumber, I arose and turned my body, only to see Song Han – he was 24 years old, and one of my buddies from the previous game. His nickname is Xiao Lang and he filled the role of an assassin in our group. Furthermore, he was considered the best player in our group.

I knitted my eyebrows. If Song Han and my other buddies who viewed me as a hero found out I was evicted today, and was forced to sleep in the lawn and wake up drenched with morning dew, I would not be able to bear the shame.

I whispered in a low voice: “Recently I’ve been learning a new style of high-class martial arts, which requires me to absorb nature – wind, rain, cold and even the morning dew. As such, I decided to sleep outside yesterday. What brings you here?”

Song Han looks at the toothbrush and bowls next to me. His frowns and says: “No matter how I look at it, you have been evicted. How long did you not pay your rent?”

I shake my head, “It’s all a false image, we are both adults now. We need to look past outer appearances and into the true nature of the situation. Has your ethics teacher not taught you that before?”

Song Han grins, saying: “Brother Xiao Yao, don’t lie to yourself, was it the stingy old landlady that gave you problems?”

I shake my head again, answering: “How can that be? You’re imagining things...”

At that moment, a door to my right opened and the landlady poked her head out to look. She acts as if she didn’t see the both of us and snided: “Oh, that Li Xiao Yao bugger, he didn’t come home last night. I can ignore it if he didn’t pay the rent, but to not pay the water and electricity bills as well? He even asked for a few days of extension! What has happened to the youths of today? Since their body is so strong, why don’t they go out and work a little? Can’t even pay the rent, no future prospects, it’s this kind of people that don’t deserve a girlfriend for their entire lifetime!”

I solemnly thought: “You can scold me for being poor, but to insult me and curse me to never get a girlfriend? That’s too cruel!”

Song Han smiled wickedly and said: “She really is annoying, how did Brother Xiao Yao endure her for so long? It really has been hard on you. Do you want me to get rid of her, to chop her head off?”

“Relax and put down the butcher knife, young one...”

“Then wait for me for half an hour!”

“What’s up?”

“You’ll know in a while!”

I packed up all my stuff, tying them into bundles. This way, I could travel with ease. After waiting awhile Song Han returned. In his hands were a big bucket which was filled with yellow dung. Noticing that, I couldn’t help but knit my eyebrows. “Xiao Lang, what’s up with that?”

Song Han smiles, taking a small disposable bag out from his pocket, which was filled with dirty grasshoppers and other such insects, saying: “I went to Master Liu’s house to collect these little flies, and then went to Grandma Wang’s house to catch a bunch of crickets and grasshoppers. Since that landlady of yours doesn’t care about pride, let’s give her something from lost times – a grasshopper-dung bomb¹!”

My whole body shuddered as I thought of what to expect next.

“Brother Xiao Yao, hide further away!”

“Okay!”

I lugged all my stuff and sprinted about 10 meters away, while Song Han smeared the dung on the landlady’s house walls and poured the disposable bag of insects into her house. He also purposely scratched her windows before leaving. That definitely wouldn’t be able to be washed away.

Taking a deep breath, I strongly patted Song Han’s shoulder: “Xiao Lang, you really are my long lost brother!”

Song Han giggles and proclaims: “We should leave here quickly, hell

will break loose!”

“Yes!”

As we left, the screams of the landlady could be heard, but whatever, I don't plan to meet her any time soon.

On the street, Song Han helped me carry the plates and bowls while I slinged the bundles of clothes over my back.

“Brother Xiao Yao, I came to find you for a reason, he said, shaking a porcelain bowl.

I nodded my head in agreement, saying: “I know, say it. What have you come to find me for?”

Song Han stopped and clenched his fists. Eyes full of fighting spirit, he smiled and said: “I looked for you because Lao K and Hu Li want to rebuild the Zhan Long office. We could leave more records of us in heroic destinies. How about it?”

I looked him in the eye and said: “Do you have enough for the helmet?”

“Temporarily, no!”

“That's no good, wait a little more, we need to earn money first!”

“Brother Xiao Yao, you've already been evicted, where do you live from now on?” Song Han asked with obvious worry.

“Don't worry, how could this little matter affect me? I can ask for the company to give me a night shift, and from then on sleep in the building's foyer. There are water coolers and toilets, so you don't have to worry at all.” I smiled rashly and replied.

Song Han nods his head. “That's good, let's leave it at that for the moment. I'll return when I have saved enough for the Zhan Long office!”

“No problem, take your time. What's your latest job?”

“Ah, I've applied to be a pastor, to help people arrange and conclude their wedding ceremonies!”

“Good, there are future prospects in that.” I gave him a thumbs up. “Go

and help me get the pastor license as well, we can help to arrange people's marriages together!"

"Okay!"

At the company.

The security head slammed the chair and table, pointing at me: "There's no slots! The night shift isn't something you can just apply for and get. Our department has so many security guards, and everyone wants to get the night shift. Do you think that by applying, I'll give it to you? Dream on! And besides, what are you trying to do with the blanket and quilt in your hand? Are you trying to go on strike?"

I smile pleasantly and reply: "No way, I don't have that kind of courage, security head."

"Ou, whatever, since you know now, stick to your afternoon shift and get rid of that lousy blanket!"

"Yes, leader!"

Carrying my blanket out of the company's gates, "Hmm, I've been rejected again. I can't use the 'sleep in company foyer' plan any more. Whatever. Even if the world rejects me a million times, I'll still ask with the same pleasant attitude. That's because attitude is the determining factor in everything. There's no choice but to find another way." I thought to myself.

Just then, a police car drove up beside me, and the door opened. Out came the silhouette of someone I was very familiar with. It was the S.W.A.T team head and previously my superior, Wang Xin!

"Get in!" Wang Xin says.

I nodded, threw the blanket into the car and got in. "Leader Wang, you're not inviting me to tea, are you? I've left the S.W.A.T team for almost 2 years now, surely everything's been wiped clean, right?"

He smiles and replies: "You little brat! Ah, from a special agent to a S.W.A.T member, from a S.W.A.T member to a traffic police officer, from

a traffic police officer to an auxiliary police officer, and now you're a security guard. Normal people rise up the promotion ladder, are you taking the opposite path?"

I was slightly embarrassed by his words and said: "It's nothing..."

Wang Xin gave me a good look before speaking. "When you were being kicked out of the S.W.A.T team, I knew, the fault wasn't yours was it? However, you were too obvious. Cases that nobody touched, you alone took. Although you managed to find the culprit, they also have methods to get rid of low-ranking officers. I really wanted to help you at that time, you know? But as they say, wanting to help doesn't mean it actually is possible². Surely, you wouldn't blame me right?"

I shake my head, softly replying with a smile: "It's all in the past, I have already forgotten about it..."

"Mm, that's good"

Wang Xin tells me, "This time, I've come to look for you to offer you a job, a very serious and important job, and I hope you can consider."

"What job?" I ask.

He replies: "Tian Xi Corporation, you've heard of it before right? It's currently the biggest science and technology corporation in South-East China, and is the forefront of modern technology."

"Yea, I know of it. What gives?"

"Tian Xi Corporation is apparently so large it attracted the attention of several groups, and even foreign influence is seeping in. The CEO of Tian Xi is of military nature, and so he's not afraid of the threats. However, his weak point lies in his daughter. He's hired many bodyguards to protect her but all of them were not up to standard. He asked me for help, and I immediately thought of you..."

I smile coldy and say: "No thanks, don't involve me in this kinds of missions any more, I don't want to get backstabbed again. I've had enough!"

“Don’t be like this... Your only job is to protect the young lady and ensure she doesn’t get hurt, furthermore, the pay is quite high.”

My eyes suddenly gleamed: “How much?”

“8000RMB a month!”

“Ou...”

I consider it for awhile, but I declined: “Forget it, I don’t want to do these kinds of life-threatening jobs any more. I feel the security guard job is quite decent, the only danger I have seen is a water dispenser falling over.”

“...”

After several moments, Wang Xin looks at me and says: “Okay, how about this? I’ll increase the price specially for you, how does 10000RMB sounds? Surely it’s enough, right? Besides assassinations, I doubt you could get a higher-paying job.”

How enticing!

It looked like was I suffocating there, fighting the battle of greed against logic. Finally, I said: “This much, I still have to consider. After all, I don’t want to sign a contract of servitude again.”

Wang Xin looks at my luggage and says: “Then... how about 10000RMB plus an airy blanket? It’s feathered!”

“What?”

I shudder in excitement, tightly clenching my fist: “An airy blanket, feathered as well... There’s no way anyone in the world could resist. Okay, I’ll do it!”

Wang Xin smiled, saying “Nice!”

I thought about it some more, and then added: “Though, you’ll have to return me my partner. There’s no way I’m relying on my fists to protect the young lady.”

Wang Xin nods, saying: “Of course, your buddy is already in the trunk,

take it yourself! After you take it, I'll bring you to the employer. If there's no problems, the contract can be signed immediately!"

"Good!"

Getting off the car, I opened the trunk and in it was a long, black cloth bag. The exterior was exquisite, decorations and all. Within the bag, there was a old-fashioned long-sword. I grabbed the familiar long-sword and the nostalgia overwhelmed me. I could not resist saying: "Xiao Hei, we haven't seen each other for two years now!"

Wang Xin stood at the side, saying: "I vouched for you with my life to get that dangerous weapon out of our armory. You're really an oddball, you know? Using this kind of sword to threaten the city bureau committee member. You really know no bounds, huh?"

I said lightly: "Whatever it is, if no one wants to do it, I'll do it instead."

"Come, let's go see your employer!"

"Okay"

Ten minutes later, the car stops gently next to an extravagant training ground. With the black cloth bag in hand, I walk into the training grounds. In the distance, the sounds of swords clashing could be heard. Woah, there was an expert!

Translator Notes

1. I have no idea how to translate this properly, basically they are pranking her, though it's done very vulgarly.
2. 力不从心, meaning something like 'Though I really want to help, it's outside of my power'. If anyone knows a good phrase to represent this, please tell me.

Chapter 4: Meeting the Goddess again

Entering the training grounds, I could see two people sparring in the distance. Their swords clashed again and again, what's more, both of them were not using the fake competition-use swords, they were using swords like Xiao Hei – plain, heavy large swords!

One of them was wearing black outerwear, his appearance looking very imposing. His lips slowly formed a smile. Just one slash of his blade rendered the opponent's attack useless. He carried the aura of a winner. There's no need to think hard about it, this person is definitely my employer, the legendary CEO of Tian Xi Corporation!

Wang Xin brought me up to the front, shouting out: "Director Lin, I've brought the person I introduced!"

The person stopped his blade, turned around and smiled. "Leader Wang! You've arrived at last. Let me see, this person you've personally recommended. You've praised him a lot, now show me what he's made of!"

Wang Xin pointed at me, saying: "This is the person I'm talking about – Li Xiao Yao. Xiao Li, this is the CEO of Tian Xi Corporation, Li Tian Nan, you should introduce yourself."

Lin Tian Nan looks at me, eyes devoid of any feelings. He extended his hand, and smiled. "Young One, nice to meet you!"

I stretched my hand out in return. "Nice to meet you too!"

Luckily, there wasn't any excessive strength used when he shook my hand. If not, it would have been a blood bath!

The person in white beside Lin Tian Nan looks at me and smiles arrogantly. "What can someone like him do?" he says.

Leader Wang smiled and answered: "Once you test him, you'll find out."

Lin Tian Nan consented, saying: "Li Xiao Yao, this is my third brother, Lin Feng. Third Brother, why don't you test this guy's skills?"

Lin Feng nodded his head, walking forward with his sword in hand. “Do you know how to use guns effectively?”

“Of course, I’m experienced in both long range combat and near range combat.”

“Can you use a sword?”

“Yes, I’m experienced!”

“Good, then let’s see your skill in using a sword.”

Saying that, Lin Feng raises his broadsword, eyes full of contempt. The two bodyguards brought a large cement tile over. The tile had a steel bar in it as well, but luckily it already started to rust.

Lin Feng smiled, saying: “One slice of the blade to cut it in half, can you do it?”

Saying that, his blade swung down and the sword made a loud clang sound. The cement tile split into two and fell to the ground.

Leader Wang praised him: “Excellent, excellent. Li Xiao Yao, it’s your turn to try.”

I walked up nonchalantly, receiving the brand-new sword from Lin Feng. Smiling, I swung the blade down. ka cha, the blade slices the cement tile into two cleanly.

Lin Feng looked a little shocked, saying: “Good, let’s carry on then!”

Lin Tian Nan said otherwise. “Third Brother, you don’t have to test anymore. Li Xiao Yao is way stronger than you.”

“Big Brother, what do you mean?” Lin Feng was puzzled.

Lin Tian Nan walked forward, pointing at the blade. He then responded: “Third Brother, although you did indeed slice the cement tile in two, your blade chipped a little. Look at Li Xiao Yao’s sword. It’s the exact same material, but after he cut the tile in two, his was perfectly fine. Do you understand the difference between the two of you now?”

Lin Feng was stunned. “Why is this?”

Lin Tian Nan smiled slightly and replied: "You used brute force to slice the material in two. He, however, controlled the blade with his internal energy, allowing it to flow into the blade and split the tile into two. It wasn't actually the blade of steel that sliced the tile, but his internal energy. Do you understand? Okay. Li Xiao Yao, since you were introduced by Leader Wang, I don't have to check your morals and qualities. Tomorrow, you'll accompany my daughter and enrol in Liu Hua University. Since she's attending her first year, you'll be a first year as well. I'll send someone to help you admit into the university this afternoon."

"Liu Hua University... Year One..."

My mind was mangled. "Mister Lin, I'm already 25 years old, don't you think it's unsuitable for me to join as a Year One student?"

"There's no problem, you might have the vibe of an elder, but you can always have a young heart!"

"..."

Just like that, we left the training grounds, my Xiao Hei still on hand. Sitting in the police car, Leader Wang instructed: "Liu Hua University is a renowned upper-class university, to be honest it's really expensive. I'll tell you first, your school fees are all handled by our department's resources. However, if you finish the semester with 7 red marks¹, you can expect your death!"

I felt remorseful for accepting. "I don't want to continue this life any more..."

"There's no escape, if you break your promise, I'll ensure you're locked up for 10 years!"

Since it was a new job, I was still feeling unaccustomed. The 10000RMB I got from Leader Wang was kept safely in my hands. I'll just find an apartment near the university. Whatever happens, I will deal with it as it comes.

Carrying my luggage with me, I walked up to the front of the university.

From afar, the school environment looked pleasing. Xiao Hei in hand, I walked around the campus grounds before entering one of the housing districts beside the campus. I looked around a bit before seeing an advertisement on an electricity pole. Dialing the number, I soon found myself knocking on the door of the apartment. Not long after, a 100kg woman walked out and smiled happily. “You’re looking at the apartment right, come in!”

The moment I entered, I knitted my brow. There were melon peels all over the living room, which was fine. However, the really disturbing part was there was a used Durex condom lying on the floor. The first thing I thought of was disgusting. Really disgusting!

“What’s the condition at night like here? Is it noisy?” I questioned.

I must be careful about this. The previous situation was unbearable, it was as if there were mentally challenged before living there.

Especially since everyday, I hoped that the 34D beauty was my next-door neighbour. What I got was a pot-bellied old uncle who played the Er Hu² until 3am in the morning!

It was still bearable last week, but this week it turned into something horrible!

Everyday I worked morning, afternoon and night shifts. When I returned home, I still had to endure the pestering of this stupid old man. If the ocean could wash away my worries, I hope it will wash away this old man first.

Delved deep into my thoughts for awhile, the landlady brought me back to reality by saying: “The conditions aren’t too bad, it isn’t that noisy. You should enter the room and see for yourself.”

I nodded my head and entered the room. Just as I entered, I could hear the squeaking of a bed next door. There were occasionally moans from a woman as well. As I listened to it, my face flushed a full spectrum of red. I’m sorry I can’t handle it since I haven’t had a girlfriend yet!

“How much do I have to pay?” I asked.

“Three-room flat, the final apartment as well, I’ll charge 400. I’ll take a 3 month deposit on top of that, so a total of 1600RMB!” The landlady replied.

I shake my head: “That’s too much isn’t it? Look at the state of this place. You still want to charge 400 a month?”

“This place costs this much, even if you go to other places to look, you’ll still get this price. It’s not expensive at all, think about it yourself. If you don’t want it, I’ll give it to someone else instead.”

Knitting my eyebrows, I walk up to the window. Once I lifted the curtains, I saw a nude woman happily humming in the opposite building.

Immediately I turned around and said: “I’ll take this place!”

The next morning, I casually woke up, got dressed, and carried a small bag out. I’ll use this place as a home for now.

25th of August was the admission day for Liu Hua University.

When I reached the school gate, there were already tons of people around.

My phone sounded. It was Leader Wang, asking me to wait at the right side of the gate for him. Meeting up with him, I looked at the crowd and asked: “Leader Wang, about the person I need to protect, what kind of person is she exactly?”

Leader Wang smiled deeply, answering: “I’m not too sure, but according to rumours, Lin Tian Nan’s daughter is super beautiful, even more so than those stars on TV!”

I nodded my head. “That’s good...”

Soon after, a Lincoln stopped by and a female student exited the car, surrounded by several bodyguards. She entered the school grounds from quite a distance away. The man walking in front was a man I knew. It was Lin Feng.

As the crowd made way, a beautiful girl wearing a short skirt walked up, tugging a luggage. Her long hair fluttered in the wind. A beautiful and

captivating face appeared from within the crowd, and very quickly, she garnered the gazes of the crowd. She widened her pair of precious eyes, staring at me sternly. “So it was you...”

My body trembled a little and my heart clamoured: “How in the world could it be her again? The person I need to protect, it’s 34D Goddess again! I’m done for, this life is over for me.”

Lin Feng smiled, saying: “Oh, you guys know each other? Li Xiao Yao, this is the person you need to accompany in the University, it’s my elder brother’s precious gem, Lin Wan Er! Wan Er, come and meet the new student!”

Lin Wan Er walks forward, dragging her luggage as well. Her short skirt fluttered in the wind and her mystifying snow-white pair of legs was exposed. Her face brimmed with a large captivating smile, and she happily sounded: “Li Xiao Yao, nice to meet you.”

This one line of formality was supposed to sound pleasant, and yet I could only hear the faint sounds of a murderer. It’s August and the days are supposed to warm, yet my entire back was shivering. My god, my future is gone.

Nodding my head, I say: “Wan Er, nice to meet you...”

“Come on, let’s go register.”

She grabbed my collar and dragged me to administration. At the same time, she stole glances of the black bag in my hands, asking: “What’s this?”

“It’s my dining partner!”

“Mm...”

34D Goddess, no, Lin Wan Er smiles, turning back quickly and waving at the bodyguards. “Okay, I’m fine now, you guys can go back now. Third Uncle, you can leave as well!”

Lin Feng and the bodyguard team left for tea, while I was dragged around by Lin Wan Er. Since I haven’t studied in a university before, she

helped a great deal.

Arriving at the registration counter, Lin Wan Er hands the admission notice, saying: "Chinese department, Lin Wan Er, as well as... oh. Chinese department, Li Xiao Yao."

When the teacher-in-charge raised his head, his jaw dropped. Saliva spewing, he said: "Oh, you're placed in the first female dorm, do you need me to show you the way?"

Lin Wan Er smiles, her eyes wide and sparkling: "There's no need. Can you tell me Li Xiao Yao's dorm number? I'll have him accompany me and I should be able to find the way myself."

The teacher-in-charge wiped his saliva, saying: "Li Xiao Yao is placed in the second male dorm, you two are quite close together."

"Oh, thanks, teacher-in-charge."

"Lin Wan Er, please leave me a message..."

Entering the first female dorm block, Lin Wan Er's dorm room was on the fourth floor. Seeing as there was no one, I carried her bags up the stairs, helping her place her things down. After that, I say: "Miss Lin, you should give me your number so it's easier to contact you."

"Okay!"

After swapping numbers Lin Wan Er opens her suitcase. She took out two helmets, one white and one red. She took the red helmet and passed it to me, saying: "Here, this is for you."

I was shocked. "This... this is the "Destiny" headgear right?"

Lin Wan Er replied: "Dad says to let you play this game as well, so you can watch over me in the other world too. You should understand already, right?"

I nodded my head, taking the helmet. Then, I asked: "Miss, do you hate me?"

Lin Wan Er bit her lips, looking deeply into my eyes, both of her arms folded. Her twin peaks showed, and she smiled, saying: "This question,

I'm not too sure of how to answer so I'll answer you with my actions in the future. Go on, go back to your dorm."

Exiting the female dorm, I held the red helmet tightly in my hand. It's a limited edition one too! My heart fluttered as I thought: "Damn it, who cares if you hate me or not, my path to conquering "Destiny" cannot be blocked!

Translator Notes

1. 7 red marks means 7 failures, in case you're unsure.
2. The Er Hu is a classical Chinese Orchestra instrument.<http://en.wikipedia.org/wiki/Erhu> for reference.

Chapter 5: The Nine Main Classes

In the afternoon, I was on the phone with Lin Tian Nan. The content was pretty simple – he'll let me get close to Lin Wan Er to protect her. Moreover, I am to get rid of any male in the entire school who tries to lay their hands on her, no questions asked. If not, I should inform him immediately. Of course, he purposely stressed the last sentence, which was to never hold any feelings for Lin Wan Er. At the same time, he felt that Lin Wan Er would look down on me any way so there was no need to bother. This hurt me a fair deal.

Liu Hua University's dorms were fairly decent. Each room was supposed to be shared by two people, and blankets, daily necessities and other commodities were given to us in a set. Sitting in the large bedroom, I finally realised why Leader Wang was so uptight about the school fees – there was no way this school term costed anything less than a few ten thousands.

At dinner time, I went to the female dorm 1 alone. Not long after, Lin Wan Er came down, followed by a girl in a green dress. She was pretty, at least pretty enough to steal a few glances in a large crowd. Too bad she's standing next to Lin Wan Er, who was far beyond comparison. From afar, I thought: this girl made friends too recklessly!

After the two girls stopped in front of me, Lin Wan Er shot me a glance before saying: "Come on, let's go eat!"

I kept my mouth shut, saying nothing at all. My status here constantly reminded me that I wasn't part of the rich families that could send their children here. I was hired to be a bodyguard for her.

Surprisingly, the beautiful girl next to Lin Wan Er keep looking at me strangely. She extended her hand and said to me with a smile: "You must be the Li Xiao Yao that Wan Er talked about, right? She has told me everything. I'm her roommate, Dong Cheng Yue. Nice to meet you!"

I shook her hand, nodding and smiling. "Nice to meet you, Dong Chengl."

“How old are you, Xiao Yao?” Dong Cheng Yue suddenly asked.

I shivered a little: “21...”

“Considering how you look, that can’t be true, right?” she asked mischievously, her head slightly tilted.

I tightly clenched my fists: “Fine, I’m 23.”

“That’s not true either, you definitely look like you send your children here instead.”

Dong Cheng Yue continued to make fun of me, before Lin Wan Er stopped her, saying: “That’s enough, you should stop teasing him so much, Xiao Yue. What’s there to tease about this boring guy? Let’s quickly go and eat so we can prepare a little earlier. Tomorrow ‘Destiny’ officially releases, and we need to rush to the number one spot quickly!”

Dong Cheng Yue smiled happily, saying: “Okay, okay. but I find Li Xiao Yao is really interesting though.”

I smiled sarcastically, replying: “You praise me too much, Dong Cheng. Which canteen should we eat at?”

“Number 1!”

“Okay.”

The two beautiful girls were in front of me, talking about school-related topics in high spirits, happily laughing and smiling. Lin Wan Er finally let out a smile. From the side, I snuck a peek and my heart fluttered a little. She looks really good when she smiles.

In the dining room, Lin Wan Er sat together with Dong Cheng Yue on the opposite side, while I sat alone. The two of them wanted a Western-style dinner. I ordered two servings of omelette rice and one serving of Xie Huang Geng². This only happened because Lin Wan Er took out her gold credit card and paid for all the food. Thank god I don’t have to pay for my food while working as a bodyguard. I could save the money from my salary to buy Xiao Lang, Lao K and Hu Li the helmets so we could enter the game world together and rebuild our Zhan Long office. Once again,

we could gain fame and glory!

Hmm, to be honest the Zhan Long office never once had fame and glory...

“Xiao Yao~” Dong Cheng Yue looked at me with a smile, saying: “I’ve heard from Wan Er that you also have a gaming helmet, you going to accompany Wan Er in the game as well right?”

I nodded my head, saying: “Yea, my gamer ID is 000747, it’s relatively early isn’t it?”

Lin Wan Er puckered her lips. “Dad made people line up for days to go get the helmets, so obviously it’s early. We actually wanted to send that helmet to someone as a gift, but that person already purchased it, so you’re lucky this time.”

Dong Cheng Yue smiled, asking: “Xiao Yao, have you played any games before?”

I raised my index finger to indicate one, saying: “In 2014, wasn’t there that game that boasted 27% realism? It’s called Conquer which I played before.”

“Oh, really?” Dong Cheng Yue’s beautiful pair of eyes widened in surprise, saying: “I’ve also played Conquer before, what were you called and what rank were you in the server-wide rankings?”

I replied fearlessly: “Forget about the name, I myself can’t even remember clearly. I only remember being placed at about 3,970,000th rank!”

Dong Cheng Yue smiled again, saying: “As far as I know, doesn’t Conquer have about 5 million players? Aren’t you a below-average player then?”

I nodded my head, “Practically...”

On Lin Wan Er’s beautiful face a little disappointment appeared. She said: “Wu, then... then do you mean that the limited edition helmet I passed to you was wasted? Damn, what a pity...”

Dong Cheng Yue, while smiling, lightly hit Lin Wan Er's shoulder and said: "Everyone has some self-respect, don't put it that way... Xiao Yao, we'll be playing Destiny together, what plans do you have? Out of the five races and nine classes, which one will you choose?"

"Well... to be honest I haven't looked at any information yet." I replied.

Lin Wan Er got a little mad. "You haven't even looked at any information and you still shamelessly accepted the helmet I gave?"

I smiled wryly and said: "There's not much to worry about, if I just go online and read about the races and classes, I'll naturally know what to choose. Dong Cheng, why don't you tell us about the races and classes?"

Dong Cheng Yue seemed to be a game addict, and she recalled religiously: "The five races are humans, wind elves, barbarians, undead and moon elves³, the barbarian being the strongest class in terms of power. The wind elves are great at long distance combat and the moon elves are the best at prolonged fights. The undead have an attack boost of 15%, which is considered the most dreadful. The humans are the most average of all the five races, but they can choose any class."

I nodded my head: "What about classes?"

Dong Cheng Yue blinked her eyes, before smiling and saying: "The nine classes are swordsmen, magicians, berserkers, knights, assassins, healers, marksmen, archers, and monks⁴. You should be able to tell from the names of the classes what their jobs are since you've played before. Oh yea, what class and race are you going to select?"

I take in a deep breath before saying: "That's easy. I'll select a support class, one that can heal. I guess I'll select the healer? That's the one they nicknamed the 'breast milk' class⁵?"

Dong Cheng Yue smiled widely: "Yeah, the healer can heal others, it's definitely going to be a popular class. I thought you were going to choose something like a swordsman, knight or a berserker, those kinds of classes. I heard that most of the boys in our class are going to choose those violent classes."

As she said this, she looked over to Lin Wan Er mischievously and said: “Wan Er, there’s a guy who’s willing to play the support class for you, you should just go ahead and marry him.”

Lin Wan Er replied with no expression at all, saying: “If you want to, you can go ahead and do so yourself. I’m not happy with this at all. Li Xiao Yao, I’m interested to see how you survive the early stages of the game by picking the healer class. Picking a support class as a guy, I’ll see how well you fare!”

Of course, I understood what Lin Wan Er meant. The healer had no attack power at all, and you definitely need someone to carry you in the early stages of the game. If a girl picked it, she could just stand at the beginner village and ask sweetly: “Brother, won’t you help me level?” Definitely, some guy would help her. If a guy picked it, unless you were those super handsome Korean stars, you definitely would be sitting there alone hitting things with a wooden rod.

However, my heart was prepared and wasn’t afraid of that at all.

I confidently told Lin Wan Er with a smile: “There’s no cause for worry, I’ll be able to manage.”

Lin Wan Er’s lips pursed a little. She did not say anything and seemed as if she still doesn’t fully trust me.

Dong Cheng Yue on the other hand warmly said: “I’ve already decided to be a magcian – a class that loses out in terms of pure strength. It’s Destiny’s version of a magic-user. Wan Er decided to be an assassin, so we could alternate between short and long distance combat and get levels that way. We should be able to rush for the top soon!”

I nodded my head, saying: “Mm, good luck to you guys!”

After eating dinner, we exited the dining room and casually strolled outside. There were lots of students heading in our direction.

A few minutes later, a guy suddenly pointed at us as if he saw ghosts, and yelled loudly: “I... I haven’t seen wrongly, have I? That girl... isn’t that Lin Wan Er, the star that five months announced ago she was quitting the

entertainment industry?”

After that, several guys turned to look our way, and some nodded: “Yea! That really is Lin Wan Er! Wow! Who knew Lin Wan Er would go and attend Liu Hua University, I’m so lucky!”

Several male students suddenly rushed forward, and one in particular shouted: “Lin Wan Er is that you? We... could we take a picture? I’m your greatest fan, and I really loved your [Heart of Time] piece!”

Lin Wan Er looked a little embarrassed, softly saying: “I’m sorry, I already quit. I only want to study here normally from now on.”

Whish

I quickly stood in front of Lin Wan Er, my arms spread out wide, holding several guys back. I smiled and said: “I’m sorry, but Miss Wan Er doesn’t want to be disturbed, so please respect her decision as fellow schoolmates!”

One guy got enraged, saying: “Who in the world are you? Is this a place where you can speak? Get lost!”

I did not speak a word, but I jerked my arm a little, and hu the sounds of a few guys stepping backwards could be heard. Each one of them stood there, all slightly afraid. They didn’t even understand how they got pushed back.

Coldly standing there, I didn’t say a word. I didn’t let any stranger get close to Lin Wan Er, which was Lin Tian Nan’s biggest order.

Dong Cheng Yue giggled from behind, saying: “Woah, this Xiao Yao is actually pretty decent.”

“Let’s return to the dormitory?” I asked.

“Okay.”

Lin Wan Er was standing below the female dorms, when she suddenly looked at me and said: “Li Xiao Yao, tomorrow’s breakfast and lunch will be sent to our dorm directly, you don’t have to come. At 12 noon tomorrow Destiny opens so don’t disappoint me.”

“I understand.” I nodded.

Only after seeing Lin Wan Er did I myself leave. Walking on the pathway connecting our dorms, I wiped the sweat off my forehead. I don't know what job she had, to actually have so many hardcore fans. The journey ahead of me will be long and arduous!

Entering the bedroom, I opened the door only to find a diary on the table. There was a guy sitting on the bed on the opposite side of mine. There's no need for much guessing, this should be my roommate.

My roommate raised his head, his thick glasses reflecting light into my eyes. He smiled and said: “You must be my roommate, Li Xiao Yao right? Nice to meet you, I'm called Tang Gu, but you can call me Ah Gu.”

I nodded my head, saying: “Mm, nice to meet you glasses boy.”

“Please use my name, Tang Gu!”

“Sure, glasses boy.”

Glasses boy's age was definitely above 25, seeing as his head contained so many wrinkles. I wonder how much money this guy poured into the school before they allowed him to attend, what complete horse hockey.

Glasses boy quickly pulled the chair out, seating on it. His face was extremely excited, and he said: “Just now, I was at the canteen and I saw you and Lin Wan Er sitting together. What's your relationship with her? Hoho, knowing Lin Wan Er, you must be really lucky!”

“Lucky for what?” I asked with a little confusion. “Who exactly is Lin Wan Er?”

“My god!”

Glasses boy slammed the table, saying: “You don't even know? Lin Wan Er... two years ago, when she was 17 years old, she came out with a hit single [Heart of Time] which shocked the entire Asia continent. From then on, she was known as a goddess. She's the idol of many guys' dreams! What a pity though, five months ago she quit the entertainment business. Who knew, she actually came to Liu Hua University to study.”

I was shocked: “So... she could sing?”

Glasses boy spat a mouth of blood on his computer screen.

Translator Notes

1. They address each other as __同学, which means Student __. That would be too long though, so it's currently just __. If anyone knows a better way to address that, please leave a suggestion.
2. It's a broth made of crab meat and other stuff, apparently it's high in protein and fat so it's a highly nutritional meal. Here's an image:<http://www.ttmeishi.com/Images/CaiPu/PicK102853333265.jpg> for reference.
3. Chinese gaming terms that I can't really find suitable translations for. Please leave suggestions for this as well. Original text: 人类、风精灵、野蛮人、亡灵、月灵
4. Again, not sure about these gaming terms. Original text: 剑士、灵术师、狂战士、骑士、刺客、悬壶医者、火枪手、弓箭手、苦行僧.
5. 奶水职业 meaning breast milk class, it's supposed to mean a heavy support class.

Chapter 6: Brother Xiao Yao Takes on the World!

The next day, at 11am, there was still an entire hour before 'Destiny' officially opened. I ate a boxed lunch early and sat there in the bedroom with glasses boy just waiting for time to pass. What's more, I managed to squeeze out all the details from glasses boy. Apparently this guy is an online site operator who opened several black market stores and earned upwards of 10000RMB a month. He paid 3000000RMB to study here in Liu Hua University, reason being he wanted to become educated and talented. No matter how I look at it though, this guys seems to want to just play here for four years and rot to death after graduating like me.

On the desk, there was a Destiny magazine that was distributed, which included a lot of information about the game. I took a quick look, but nothing really stood out. However, the game had one master designer, four executive designers and an additional 150 other designers. One of the executive designers looked extremely familiar – it was Lin Cheng!

Body trembling a little, I sat there dazed. Don't tell me it's that old geezer?

I quickly pulled a chair out and opened Tang Gu's computer. "Hey glasses boy, let me use your computer for a while." I said.

"Ah, what's wrong?" Glasses boy got shocked and said: "I'll let you, don't be so sudden next time though. What's wrong with you, Li Xiao Yao?"

I opened a browser and quickly searched the web using the keywords 'Destiny' and 'Lin Cheng'. As expected, the information appeared. Lin Cheng was the main designer of Destiny. There was also a picture of him with that always-smiling face. I laughed in disbelief – it really was that stupid old geezer!

Glasses boy looked at me, surprised. He said: "Oh, what's up? This Lin Cheng, you know him?"

I nodded my head but didn't say anything. How could I not know this

guy? From 14 to 19 years old, I was always by his side, constantly practicing and training my body. Who knew this geezer would run off to game design and design this super popular game?

Knitting my eyebrows, I said: “Glasses, this Destiny is obviously a game right? Why did they choose this old man to be part of the main design team? I really don’t understand...”

Glasses boy smiled: “Obviously you won’t understand, Destiny was announced really early on, and it’s major selling point is that it invited all the big names in each profession to join the design team. For example, the world’s best blacksmith, the world’s best archer, even a herbalist and a martial artist were invited. This game could be considered the closest to reality ever. The mental aspect like attitude and spirit all took a major step forward, and additionally, you can create your own skills and styles. Whatever it is, this game is heaven for game addicts.

“Create your own skills and styles...” I muttered. “So it’s like this, huh?”

“Why, have you seen a ghost?” Glasses boy hit me.

I shook my head while smiling, saying: “I’m fine, let’s prepare to enter Destiny.”

“Mm, wait till I get higher leveled, I’ll carry you!”

“Carry your dad, just focus on not getting clobbered by monsters. The information says the monsters are extremely ferocious, if you die once you’ll lose a level. Be careful!”

“I know already, I was ranked 7000+ in Conquer, and I’m considered a pro. How could I mess up Destiny?”

“Stop gloating already.”

My lips curled into a smile as I thought of what Dong Cheng Yue said. She was ranked 79th in Conquer. She definitely is a top tier player. What’s more, apparently Lin Wan Er was ranked even higher than that. These people really invested a lot of money into game. One by one they all become so ferocious.

At 11.50am, I put my helmet on. It scanned my iris, confirming my identity. As expected, it could not find any information on my previous account, so I had to create a new account and choose a class. However, at the moment there was only a timer counting down to the launch of Destiny. There was nothing I could do for now.

I waited impatiently as the 10 minutes slowly trickled by. Apparently glasses boy says that the very first person to enter the game will get a prize. I won't bother since I'll definitely make my character look handsome, and then I can achieve my life-long goal – finding a girlfriend.

“3!”

“2!”

“1!”

Finally, as I counted down, Destiny launched. A scene of a desolate temple and ruins appeared in front my eyes. The camera panned in the sky, and a big Sun shined viciously down upon me. At the foot of the mountains, there was a battlefield. The neighs of the war horses could be heard. There were thousands of arrows whizzing past, and in the background was a gigantic tree that grew into the sky, beyond human vision. Below the tree, cavalry rushed forward and bodies were slaughtered. One by one the barbarians holding battle axes let out a savage roar, their teeth horribly disordered.

On the mountain top, a beautiful young woman sat there, body fully plated with armor. She looked at the entire battle field with her beautiful eyes and suddenly stood up. Her pair of heavenly legs slightly bent. Teng The sound of her springing into the air could be heard. As she flew down the mountain top, her arm pressing onto an umbrella. Swish the blood-red umbrella sprang open, stopping her fall. She unsheathed her blade and slashed.

Bang

Her blade shone as she charged at a group of barbarians and she turned them into a pile of meat. She smiled confidently and with a swing of her sword, the battlefield around her combusted into flames, rapidly killing

everything.

Roar!

In the midst of the roar, a huge body towered over her, casting a shadow down on her. That was a special barbarian who had a golden axe. It was a legendary-level barbarian hero. The axe was covered in flames and it swung down at her.

The girl's reaction was extremely quick, stepping backwards to avoid it. At the same time, she reached for the blood-red umbrella on her back and quickly opened it. It sprang open with a swish and turned into a defensive shield. Bang, a bullet was fired from the umbrella and it shocked the barbarian with electricity. The axe still hit the umbrella and the loud clangsound was imprinted into the girl's heart.

She widened her pretty eyes and her pupils had flames dancing in them. With one flash of her dagger, she left a wide cut on the barbarian's neck. Violently, she killed the barbarian. She then proudly soared up towards the World Tree.

The scene suddenly shrank, supposedly this was a opening cutscene. The entire Destiny map was shown on the screen. At the south side was the human population and their seven main cities. In the middle the Bu Gui Ocean¹ was occupied by the Sea Nymphs. The North was fully uncharted, and icons of monsters like dragons, undead and barbarians were displayed. After that the the sky was filled with a giant word – Destiny. This game's art was truly breath-taking!

After that, a menu appeared and the system notice said: Please pick your race!

5 races appeared before my eyes, being the Human race, Undead race, Moon Spirit race, Barbarian race and the elf race. As I looked through each one of them, I realised: The undead looked too undesirable, which conflicted with my goal of creating a super handsome character. The moon spirits looked really tempting, but it was limited to girls only, because the race's name was moon spirit girl. The barbarians were too crude. The wind elves had wings they could use to fly, but they were too

squishy and died easily. As a result, I chose the human race in the end. The human race is good because it looked identical to real life people.

I confirmed my selection of the human race, after which the system showed an image of a male who slowly morphed to match my features. He was wearing simple villager clothing and held a wooden sword. To be honest, he looked pretty handsome already so I didn't customize the character look at all. After that, the system notice changed, saying: Please select your class!

There's not much to talk about here, the class I wanted to be the most was the healer. To each his own, the healer provided healing, which could be said to be our youth generation's most important aspect!

I smiled lightly, but when I thought about how I was going to train my healing and levels, I felt I was too near-sighted...

Oh well. I confirmed the selection of the healer class, and before me stood a character in cloth, about 1.8m tall. I fit the 'tall, handsome and wealthy'[2](#)branding.

The system notice changed once again, now saying: Please enter your name!

I thought of this long ago.

A panel appeared in front of me with a text box in it, indicating for me to type in my name –

Diao Chan of the Three Kingdoms[3](#)

Ding

System Notice: The name you selected is already in use!

I clenched my fists tightly, saying: "What in the world, such a weird name and it's already taken!"

It's fine, I thought of a backup name just in case something like this happened. This time, I typed the letters in –

Miss, Please Stop[4](#)

Ding

System Notice: The name you selected is already in use!

Again a system notice, my heart almost shattered into pieces, this is too hard, all the names I want are taken! Continuing on, I typed yet another name. This time, I made it less cool-sounding, hopefully it's not taken already.

Brother Xiao Yao Takes on the World⁵

System Notice: The name you selected is already in use!

“What the?”

I almost coughed up blood. I gritted my teeth, focused my will and decided to use a name I've used for a long time but eventually decided to abandon –

Xiao Yao Zi Zai⁶

Ding

System Notice: The name you selected is not in use, do you want to use this name?

Oh, finally. I managed to select a name, who cares about anything else?

After selecting the 'confirm' button, a character was created, just like that. System Notice: Do you want to enter the game world immediately?

After selecting 'yes', shua a flash of light blinded me as I entered Destiny. Flashing lights whizzed past me, and before long I finally got put on a simple and slightly broken platform. Looking around, I saw several broken pillars. There were also confused noobs around me. System Notice: You've been assigned to the 19th Beginner Village, [Straw Dog Village].

Straw Dog Village, what a good name!

Standing on the platform, I didn't rush to exit this place. Beside me, tons of people drew their swords and charged into the plains surrounding the village. Mm, it seems they really wanted to grind their levels.

Reciting the words 'Player Information', there was a screen full of information that was brought up in front of me. Indeed, it was the player stats.

Xiao Yao Zi Zai (Novice Healer)

Level: 1

Attack: 1-1

Defence: 2

Health Points: 100

Magic Points: 50

Charm: 0

What great attacking power, 1-1. Can I even defeat a chicken? Seriously...

In my hand was a old broken wood staff. I glanced at it. Mm, it seems the 1-1 attack power was because of this lousy weapon. Walking out, I decided not to rush out and grab some mob kills. After, I don't think I'll be able to snag any. Being a healer, I must gathers lots of information. I won't stick with the group of noobs outside and try to kill grass dogs.

Walking to the blacksmith, a tall and bulky guy greeted me. He smiled and said: "Boy, do you want to buy weapons?"

I nodded my head, and quickly started to browse through the selection. There was metal sword that only required level 1 to equip and it had attack power 1-3. However, it costed 15 copper coins and I only had 10 in my wallet. Damn it!

After thinking about it for a while, I decided. I took out my old wooden staff and sold it for 7 coppers. I had 17 coppers now and I happily bought the sword. It wasn't a high class sword, and the requirement and stats weren't that high either. Whatever, I'm a healer, some times I need to rely on my knife when I'm doing an operation, and some times I need to rely on it to eat⁷. It's attacking power was good enough.

Sword in hand, I walked on.

Translator Notes

1. 不归海, directly translating means 'Ocean of No Return'. Which do you prefer?
2. 高帅富, it's a term used to refer to the ideal boyfriend in the current Chinese society. <http://www.chinasmack.com/glossary#高富帅> for reference.
3. 三英战貂蝉 not sure about exact translation, but it's supposed to be Diao Chan.
4. 姑娘请留步, which is supposed to mean please stop and chat for a while, lady.
5. 逍遥哥哥战江湖 ridiculous to translate, I have no idea what 战江湖 means. Direct translate means 'Brother Xiao Yao Fighting the Lakes and Rivers' but it's obviously not supposed to be translated directly. 战江湖 is a game in China that's very popular, so I think it's supposed to mean something like enters the game or starts the game, something like that. Again, please inform me if you know what it means.
6. 逍遥自在 from chapter 1 (I predicted it and made translator notes!) means taking life carefree and easily. See chapter 1's translator notes for reference. ↩
7. It's a pun on the chinese word 刀, because it can mean the scalpel that surgeons use, as well as a sword. (Basically what it means is Xiao Yao is justifying his buy by saying that as a healer, when he 'operates' on people he uses the 刀, and when he's trying to earn money by killing mobs he's also using the 刀.

Chapter 7: Creating a Skill

Walking back to the village entrance, I stopped for a while only to get pushed from behind by beserkers carrying their battleaxes. These people are too excited to kill Grass Dogs, aren't they?

Having strength that doesn't match up to others, I resisted the urge to do the same.

Looking at the stats menu, I realised the system gave me 10 stat points at level 1. I put them all into Strength. That's right, this is my fighting style. I'll fight the world with my ability as a healer to heal and my strength to fight. This is the true way to success!

I'll have to take it slow and wait patiently. I can't steal the mobs that the beserkers, swordsmen etc. with stats all added to strength out there are killing. I'll look around in the village and see what quests I can get. Then I'll go kill the Grass Dogs, that's killing two birds with one stone!

In the small village, there was a well sitting right in the middle of the plaza. Beside the well was bits and pieces of stone. Each stone was separated from the rest, but together they lined up to form a brilliant formation.

I took a good look for a whole 5 minutes before realising – it's the Seven Star Style! There's no mistaking it, this is the formation of the Seven Star Style. Previously, while I was training under the old man, I had to learn the way of the Seven Star Style while wielding a sword, which gave me heaps of suffering. In the game, there actually was a Seven Star Style! This can only mean one thing – between the game designers, there must be an actual sword master. If not, there's no way the Seven Star Style was implemented.

As if magnetised to it, I couldn't stop myself from walking to the foot stands, facing the shining light's mysterious form. Spontaneously, I drew my sword and starting slashing.

Clang

Although I'm a healer, I added all 10 points into strength, which gave me a decent physical strength boost. The sword was unsheathed and it carried sword energy. I have not felt this since so long ago, who knew it would be in a game that I felt this familiarity with the sword again.

My heart beated furiously. Damn, if it's really like this, plus with the info that was given in that pamphlet, this could really be the time for me to shine!

Clang

The second time I slashed, my feel for the sword grew a little.

It was as if I was in a daze, standing there just swinging my sword over and over again. I lost myself in the game and was slowly understanding the way of the sword. There's some pleasure to be had in this if you were a swordsman.

About an hour after I started practicing with my sword, many noobs gathered around and watched me curiously. There was even a level 2 beserker with his battleaxe, shaking his head while looking at me. "Oi, even if the game said that you could create your own skills, do you really think it's possible? Only an idiot like you would believe this stupid rumours. This guy looks as handsome as me, I wonder why he's so dumb though."

I didn't show any expression at all and continued swinging my sword. Just like this, everything else was swallowed away by my concentration.

In a blink of an eye, it was already afternoon. I didn't make any progress at all. I kept feeling as if I was about to break through but it just didn't happen. I continued all the way to 8pm at night, when the phone outside rang. It connected to the game system and displayed Lin Wan Er's phone number.

"Li Xiao Yao, Xiao Yue and I are going offline for some dinner, you want some?"

I was very excited once I heard that. "I'll go with you guys. I haven't eaten much since afternoon... I mean I need to protect you guys..."

Lin Wan Er giggled and then continued: "Okay, come to us and when we see you, we'll go down too."

"Okay!"

Logging out in this some town should be fine since it was a safe zone.

Taking off my helmet, I looked above my bunk to see glasses boy shivering, as if he had a stroke or something. He should be leveling. I shouldn't disturb him, and just eat with Lin Wan Er.

Outside, I reached the girl's dorm and soon after a graceful Lin Wan Er arrived together with Dong Cheng Yue, who was carrying a white handbag. Despite the distance separating us, Dong Cheng Yue shouts with more enthusiasm than Lin Wan Er: "Hi, Xiao Yao!"

I nodded and smiled: "Good evening, where should we eat?"

"Let's go, canteen number 1 again? After we come back we can continue leveling. On September 1st we have to start lessons already, so we should take this opportunity to focus on the game!"

"Mm."

In the dining room, we ordered several fried dishes, and the three of us sat there facing each other, waiting for our dinner. The two ladies were also pretty hungry, as the sound of stomachs rumbling could be heard. It was as if they were about to eat me up too.

Lin Wan Er looked at her phone, resting against the back of the chair. Her long hair extended past her shoulders. In that short period of time, she captivated everyone who was looking at her. I too was looking at her and I had to tell myself: Don't forget, I need to respect Lin Tian Nan's orders as well.

After a while, Lin Wan Er raised her head to look at me, saying: "Li Xiao Yao, after one whole afternoon, what level are you?"

"Level 1, I haven't had any experience fighting at all."

Lin Wan Er was shocked and her mouth was gaped. "There's no way, right? Not killing mobs or gaining experience, what were you doing? Even

if you become our mule¹, you at least need enough stamina to run back to the capital. At this rate even the small monster on the way back can kill you...”

I rubbed my nose, embarrassed by what she had said. I said: “Actually... actually I was just getting used to the freedom this game had to offer, at the moment I have not gotten completely used to the 97% realism of this game.”

“Ha... what a noob!” Lin Wan Er suddenly smiled.

She should have achieved her goal and must be feeling quite satisfied right now, making fun of me. I knew this woman bore a grudge... or did she? That’s not quite right, considering I practically saw everything that day. With this big shot’s personality in mind, Lin Wan Er not killing me straight away can be considered as forgiving already.

Dong Cheng Yue also looked at me with shock. “Xiao Yao, you’re really one of a kind...”

I nodded and smiled, saying: “Xiao Yue, what levels are you and Miss?”

Dong Cheng Yue pursed her lips a little: “We’re alright, I’m level 7 and Wan Er is level 6. To be honest you don’t have to call her Miss, Wan Er doesn’t really mind. Just call her Wan Er...”

Lin Wan Er stared at me: “No! He’s not allowed to call me Wan Er!”

“I understood, I won’t call you that, Miss.” I replied.

Dong Cheng Yue looked at me, then at Lin Wan Er. After that, she seemed to have understood something, and covered her mouth while laughing: “Oh, looks like something must have happen between the two of you. There’s no way it would be like this if that’s not the case... Ahhhh, Wan Er, stop pinching me, I’ll stop!”

The two beautiful ladies were messing around and several males that were eating were stunned. Even the noodles that were in their mouth dropped out.

Not long after, the dishes arrived. I didn’t take much, only the food in

front of me. I also ate three bowls of rice though. Lin Wan Er looked at me with surprise. That's no expression to have, she must think I eat too much while only being level 1. I guess she thinks I am a good-for-nothing.

At 10pm that night, the phone sounded and Lin Tian Nan's number showed up.

"Xiao Li, how was today? Wan Er didn't trouble you much, did she?" Lin Tian Nan asked.

I shook my head, saying: "How can that be, Miss has treated me well. Mr Lin, you can rest assured!"

Lin Tian Nan smiled. "Mm, Wan Er's personality is actually gentle, but... regarding the situation of having a bodyguard around to protect her, she has always been non-compliant. The several bodyguards I've hired before you couldn't take it any more and gave up. I hope you can persevere and continue on..."

I smiled lightly and said: "To be frank with you, it's not that tough. It's just accompanying her for meals, playing games, little stuff like that. I can handle that much, at least."

Lin Tian Nan laughed heartily at my response, saying: "That's great, then. How's your aptitude in gaming? What rank were you in the previous game?"

"About 3 million plus."

"Wow, that's really noob..."

"..."

Hanging up the phone, I realised that glasses boy logged off and cooked himself some instant noodles. He was very excited, saying: "Little Li2, how is it, this 97% realism game? It's awesome, isn't it? I'm already level 4, not bad right? What level are you?"

I said with an expressionless face: "Level 1, how did you get..."

"Haha, level 1? Wow, how many times did you get killed by monsters, to only be at level 1?"

“There’s nothing I can do, level 1 it is. I’m a healer anyway so I have no attack power...” I calmly replied.

“Healer, this breast milk class? Although you can’t kill anything, but you can heal yourself. Surely you couldn’t be killed back to level 1, right? Li Boy, you’re a special kind of noob. No worries though, with your brother over here, I can return and help you level. I’ll definitely make you one of the top ten in Destiny!”

“You idiot! Will you die if you stop bragging?”

“Haha!”

At night, I played a little over an hour more, returning to try and find the special sword skill feeling, but again, there was no progress. I’m not worried though. It’s only a game anyway. Even if I don’t break through, there’s no rush. At 12, I logged off and slept. This was the schedule given to me by Lin Wan Er.

The next day, I got up at 7am, went out to get some snacks, and wanted to give them to Lin Wan Er and Dong Cheng Yue. It’s a pity I couldn’t go up, as the dorm lady fiercely shouted: “You rascal, if you want to get into the female dorms, you’ll have to get past me!”

I quickly left and at the same time, I found out there were two other young bodyguards in the dorm main office. From their movements, I can tell they know gong fu. Mm, this must be Lin Tian Nan’s arrangement. For his daughter, he hired other bodyguards besides me.

Returning to my dorm, I continued practicing the sword.

In a flash, it was late morning again. I had to repair the sword as I practiced with it but as usual there wasn’t any break through. Though, I felt like it was very close, an imminent and intense feeling of breaking through.

In the afternoon, I was in the dining room with Lin Wan Er and Dong Cheng Yue again for lunch.

“24 hours already...” Dong Cheng Yue smiled and said: “Apparently, most of the players have left their respective beginner villages and the

highest level achieved so far is level 12.”

Lin Wan Er held her hair as she ate, saying happily: “I’m at level 11!”

“After this, all I need is 2 more hours to reach level 11. I’m a spiritualist and yet my training speed is slower than an assassin. Wan Er, you’re giving me too much stress...” said Cheng Yue.

Lin Wan Er smiled, pointed at me and said: “It’s alright, that person over there can give you some solace. Li Xiao Yao, what level are you? Oh and, what rank are you?”

I hesitated a little before saying: “Level 1, I’m exactly 1,000,000th place.”

Lin Wan Er’s pretty face turned to stone, staring at me completely shocked. “There’s only a million players in the opening of the game... You... you’re really a disgrace to Destiny”

I scratch my nose silently.

Dong Cheng Yue smiled as she ate: “It’s fine, when I have a break I’ll come back and carry you through.”

I nodded my head, saying: “Thanks a lot, Dong Cheng, you’re a lot more caring and sincere than our Miss over here...”

Lin Wan Er immediately shot a glance at me, killing intent awaiting: “Oh, can you repeat that?”

I tightly grasp my chopsticks, saying: “Come on, let’s eat. Once we finish eating we can go back and level more.”

1pm, at the Grass Dog Village.

Clang

I slashed for the Nth time. At that moment, the sword surged with a formless energy. At the same time, my body shivered. A gold color rose from my feet and the system sound played.

Ting

System Notice: Congratulations, you have completed the proficiency

training! You have created a skill. As a result, when you have a sword equipped and drawn, your attack power is increased by 10%. Please choose a name for your skill!

1. Mule in MMORPG terms means an extra character that stores more loot for your main characters.
2. 李小子, usually to refer to a younger person, or if you look down on the person.

Chapter 8: The Sword Tempest

Bzzz

My head went blank as I trembled with excitement. Finally, the noob goes pro! The game really let me make a skill. Damn, that's cool. If I equip a sword I gain a 10% increase in attack damage. This skill is a little too strong. Although my attack right now was only 6-6 and a 10% increase would basically amount to nothing, later on when I gain more strength and power, the effects would be monumental. This buff is so good. What's more, my weapon later on should be sword-related, if not this skill would go to waste!

After pondering for a long time about what exactly I should name this wonderful skill...

My mind flashed and a name popped out – Sword Tempest¹!

This name is perfect. After you wield your sword, a massacre follows. This is only but the path of the sword. It's the opening to the fight. I'll use this!

Ding

System Notice: Congratulations, you have successfully named the skill. You are the first person to create an SS skill in the entire server, do you want to disclose your identity?

I immediately smashed the 'No' button. I must stay low-key. Low-key not for fame or for showing off, but to protect my life. Since olden times, those who are famous always receive jealousy². Once my identity is disclosed, who knows how many times I'll get murdered. I'm not scared of publicity but instead scared of getting beaten. It's pretty alright, being like this, a level 1 healer. The pros won't even bother disturbing me. This feeling is simply spectacular.

Ding

System Notice: Congratulations, player xxxx has understood the SS skill – [Sword Tempest]!

Currently, the whole server was chaotic.

Very quickly, in my Skills tab an icon of a sword flashed. My first 'obtained skill' which was also my second skill, was a SS grade skill. The other was the healer skill, [Hemostasis³]. It was D rank, and indeed, the lousiest healing skill. No matter though, it's still decent as I can heal myself.

[Sword Tempest] (SS) : While wielding and using a sword, your attack power is increased by 10%. Does not consume any strength. Cannot be leveled.

[Hemostasis Lvl 1] (D): Heals 50 HP, costs 5 MP. 0/100 EXP, level 1.

After finishing my preparations, finally, I was ready to take on the world!

Finally, carrying my sword, I was ready to step out of the beginner village, a whole 24 hours after the opening of the game. My inventory was completely empty of supplies, or should I say, I could not afford to put any supplies into my inventory. Whatever, slowly, I'll get whatever I want.

Outside the beginner village, the clumsy players were killing the Straw Dogs near the forest. The Straw Dogs are level 1-2 monsters, which is also the lowest leveled monsters in the game. These lousy players...

Escaping the crowd of players, I found another road. The north of Straw Dog Village was a secret forest, but the map showed little red dots there. This means that the monsters are above my level, but who cares? I can still try, since I have a natural advantage. I can hit and heal at the same time, and I also have [Mighty Sword Wave] to help, even if it isn't much help at all.

In the distance, a few players were bickering over a plain white tunic, loudly shouting: "This equip can sell for 20 coppers, it's ours! We are the main DPS dealers!"

I could not help but snicker: "What noobs!"

Looking down, I see a bunch of copper coins sitting out in the sun inviting people over. Very quickly, I ran over and looked around. Great,

there isn't anyone. I started picking up the loot.

Oh! I'm rich! Looks like it's my day.

I spent all the money from before on fixing my sword, and currently all I had was this 1 copper. Which idiot killed all the Straw Dogs but didn't pick up the loot? Really, what a genius.

Continuing on, after going around the Straw Dog spawning areas, the players were few and far between. There were dense clumps of bushes and shrubs. The Straw Dogs rarely spawned.

After a few minutes, a low growl sounded. Finally, I've found a mob worth fighting. It was a ferocious Hyena. God damn it, all the mobs around this beginner villages are dogs.

[Hyena] (Common Monster)

Level: 3

Attack: 7-11

Defence: 3

Health: 150

Skills: None

Good, a level 3 monster. Just killing two of these will bring me to level 2. Let's go!

Clang

I pulled the sword out of the sheath, and the [Sword Tempest] activated and gave me a 10% attack boost. Walking forward, although I wasn't very near, the Hyena got aggro'ed and howled. It rushed out, and with no skills, it looked to open its mouth and bite me directly.

Rushing to react, before the Hyena bit me, my sword was already falling on its forehead. Kacha a {12} jumped out. At the same time, the Hyena bit my leg and hung on, taking 25 hit points away from me. Hoho, it's cleanly twice of my damage.

I was not worried and continued to attack as I attacked faster than the

Hyena and it kept howling and growling. When I took two hits, I immediately raised my hand and a holy beam fell upon me. [Hemostasis]!

{+50}

Strong! Able to both hit and heal, this is truly the emperor's path to success!

After some time, I killed the Hyena and shua my experience bar filled to a full 50%. At the same time, it growled and fell to the ground, exploding into two coppers. I quickly took them. Not a bad reward...

Continuing on, after sweeping the second Hyena, shua a golden light fell on my head and I raised one level. I broke through the level 1 barrier and became a level 2 healer. All 10 points were added to strength as usual, but as a healer the 10 strength points only gave 5-5 more attack damage, as I had a 0.5x strength multiplier. If I were a berserker, it would be a 11-11 attack damage boost, this is so unfair...

Sword tilted at an angle, I walked on. I'll farm to death!

After killing tens of Hyenas, I saw that my MP was very low. A [Hemostasis] costs 5 MP and my max MP was only 60. With no immediate healing items, I would probably die here. Luckily, at that moment, I leveled up and reached level 3. My HP and MP filled back to full and I continued adding the 10 stat points I gained to strength. My character really became a fighting priest.

[Xiao Yao Zi Zai] (Novice Healer)

Level: 3

Attack: 11-13

Defence: 4

Health Points: 120

Magic Points: 70

Charm: 0

Although a healer is naturally weaker than the others, if I change to a

good weapon, I can break through the monster's defence if they are at least the same level as me. If I can break through, it'd be great since I can heal myself, then I won't have to worry about dying. After a prolonged battle, I'll have better survival capabilities than any other class. Though, I added all my points to strength and not magic, so I don't have enough MP. I need to get healing items, if not I can't fight for long.

Mm, I'll stay here and kill some more. After earning about 50 coppers, I can go back and buy some potions. With the potions, I can go deeper into the woods and kill higher leveled monsters.

Kacha

After slicing through a Hyena's head, another two coppers exploded out and I quickly grabbed them in one swift motion. I moved onwards to kill more mobs. After leveling up, my attack power got higher and killing the Hyenas proved to be less of a hassle than before. It's pretty useful.

Crossing some plains, and then moving forward some more, in the distance I saw a Black Bear wondering around the trees. It's level 5 and its attack, defence and health stats are all ridiculously high.

Tightly grasping my sword, I took a deep breath. Let's try killing it, if I don't manage to kill it I can run!

About 10 yards from the Black Bear, it got aggro'ed and came sprinting after me, its massive body flying through the plains. Its furs stood on end and it raised its paw, ready to attack.

Pam

The fresh blood splattered everywhere. The combat in the game is so realistic, my shoulder got a large wound and blood pooled dyeing it red. A damage number popped up –

{42}

God damn, it hurts!

I quickly raised my sword to attack but it only dealt {15} damage. I continued to attack and at the same time, the holy light of [Hemostasis]

shined down upon me, healing 50 health. Once it went off cooldown, I immediately used it again.

Gu

The Black Bear ferociously opened its jaws and took a big bite of my arm, leaving it dangling. Again, it took a large amount of hit points.

{82}

My god, I could only get hit once more.

I got scared and quickly took to my legs and ran. Who in the world would be idiotic enough to stay there?

After running for my life, I took two steps backward and managed to aggro the Black Bear again. It ran after me, and in the short period of time where I wasn't being attacked, I raised my sword and healed myself for {50} HP with [Hemostasis] at the same time. I continued to attack the Black Bear in this manner.

It was only a level 5 normal monster, and yet it took me a full 30 seconds to beat it. At last, the Black Bear let out a deathly cry. I only had 41 HP left when it ended.

Paafuu

The bear dropped to the ground and disappeared. I heard the sound of items dropping but it wasn't the clear tinkle when copper coins dropped. Wow, I even got an equip, not bad. That looks like a really dumb wristguard though.

Rushing to grab it and see, I realised it average.

[Black Bear Gloves] (White Equip⁴)

Type: Armor

Defence: 7

Required Level: 4

Armor, huh? I can't equip it anyway, so I'll just sell it. It's a white equip anyway, so I doubt anyone would want it.

On the ground, there was also 5 coppers. High level monsters are so much more generous than those Hyenas. I picked it up, turned around and left. I'm not killing any more bears for now, since their attack is so high and I'm so squishy. I simply can't take the hits. Currently, I have no equips besides my sword. Some random guy with no armor will simply be killed anyway.

I continued killing the Hyenas. At level 3, killing level 3 mobs becomes so much easier. In only an hour, I reached level 4. At the same time, my inventory was 47 coppers heavier. It seemed like it was going to explode.

Taking a look behind me, there were quite a few players training here now. I probably can't stay here for too long. I'll go back to the village and sort my items, buy some potions, then go find higher leveled places.

Carrying my sword, I walked back past the plains with my head lowered. At this moment, several people walked past and a level 6 barbarian carrying a battleaxe rushed up to me and asked: "Hey, dude. In this grinding spot, did you get any equips that a beserker can use?"

I discreetly took out the armor gloves from my inventory and said: "White equip, no class specifications, do you want it?"

Barbarian guy smiled: "7 defence, huh? Being a tank, of course I want it. How much are you selling for?"

I looked around. "The shop buys it for 21 coppers, can you pay more than that?"

"Of course!" The barbarian smiled happily. "I'll give you 50 coppers, how's that?"

"Okay, deal!"

After few seconds later, I walked away with my sword, my inventory close to 100 coppers, or a single silver.

Returning to Straw Dog Village, I took out the level 2 armor I got from killing those Hyenas, as well as their skins and other white equips and sold them all. At last, my inventory had 121 coppers! I took a look around the shop. Level 2 tunic, +2 defence, 70 coppers. That's too expensive. No

thanks, I'll just wait for mobs to drop some equips.

I reached the potion shop. A level 1 blue potion healed 50 MP and costed 5 coppers each. In one breath I bought 23 and repaired my sword as well. Again I was broke, having only 1 copper left. Yet again, I was like a noob.

Leaving the place, my path to becoming a fighting priest has begun!

1. 剑起波澜 If anyone has a better translation please comment.
2. 木秀于林风必摧之, which means something like people will always wish for popular people to fail or something like that.
3. Using Inkira's spell names, since I want to promote consistency.
4. There are levels to the item rarity which are represented by the colors, I can't seem to find any additional information on this though. Apparently the author forgot to mention the tier list and mentioned it only later on in the story. Thanks to Arissa for pointing that out.
White < Green < Bronze < Silver < Gold.

Chapter 9: Bramble Bear King

Opening up my map, because of my level restrictions, I could only see bits and pieces of the areas around the village. Beyond that was completely empty. Contemplating for a while, I finally decided to head North-East.

That was a little further away from Straw Dog Village and there are lesser players as well. If I get KS'ed² as this special kind of healer class, I'll probably die out.

Looking at my skills tab, [Hemostasis]'s experience level reached 77/100. Just a little more and I can level it up. Level 2 [Hemostasis] can recover 100 HP in the blink of an eye, and my survival capabilities will thus drastically increase.

Onwards!

Carrying my sword out of the village, I took the path out of the Straw Dog Village area. I cut through the Hyena area, continuing into the dense forest. After 20 minutes of walking, I finally reached the area that I didn't dare to challenge previously – the Wild Bear Forest. Inside were bears of all kinds, all level 5-7. Taking a look at my level, it wouldn't be incorrect to say that I was forcing myself to take unnecessary risk, but I had 23 Blue Potions and should probably be able to fight prolonged battles.

On!

I charged straight at a level 5 Black Bear. I swung my sword and took care of it in 30 seconds, healing myself 4 times in the process. I spent 20 MP on one bear, which was acceptable. I went on to find another target.

A level 4 player killing a level 5 mob grants a little experience penalty, but the leveling rate was still half decent. In about an hour, another Black Bear fell and I reached level 5!

Gaa

The Black Bear let out a terrifying cry, and erupted into a grey hand guard. Picking it up, I realised I could use it.

[Black Bear Arm Guard] (White Equip)

Type: Cloth

Defence: 3

Required Level: 4

Wearing the White hand guard³, my defence rose to 9. When I looked up, a level 7 Grey Bear was growling, its claws inviting me. It was looking me straight in the eye, which only spelled one thing – certain death.

With the sword in hand, I slowly advanced forward and looked around. There wasn't any other mobs or players within 50 yards. I'm taking on this level 7 Grey Bear solo, let's go!

Sou

I rushed forward and braced my sword. Reaching it, I brandished my sword at its head but only the sound of a loud clang could be heard. It was as if I was swinging at steel. The damage number I inflicted wasn't that high either...

{15}

Even with an attack of 23, I only hit this little. This Grey Bear's defence must be really high, even higher than the Black Bear.

Kong

Raising it's head, it roared loudly, swinging its claws, one of which hit my shoulder. I was anticipating the attack and when the Grey Bear attacked, I tried to dodge to the right but too bad, I still got hit.

{37}

It hurts like hell! The healer class with Cloth Armor is simply too squishy!

I swung my sword to deal more damage and at the same time, I was thinking – Why can't I dodge the monster's attack? [Destiny] announced that according to the player's skill, you could, with proper footwork and movement, dodge attacks. Why can't I do it?

The second time, the Grey Bear's claws swung down again. I saw it and quickly stepped back.

Pa

{39}

One tight slap across my face. It really hurts. Quickly, [Hemostasis]!

The third time, when the Grey Bear was attacking, I purposely stood there. Just as the claw reached right before my eyes, I reacted and hopped in the opposite direction of the claw about 1-2 yards. I only heard the sounds of wind rushing past me. This time I managed to use the short amount of time, and a big word floated up –

{Miss}

Battle Notice: You dodged the Grey Bear's attack. Finished movement – [Elementary]!

Silently celebrating, I swung down with my sword at the speed of lightning and kacha my sword directly hit the Grey Bear's eyes. A {34} rose up from the attack. Attacking the weak point, this was one of the gamer's most important skills.

What a pity, my reaction speed wasn't that high and my movements were also slow. If not, I could probably evade plenty of attacks and my success rate would at least be around an [Apprentice Level]. This Evade technique was something that you needed to learn, if not no matter what you fight against, a monster or a player, you'd be losing out. Of course, it's different from person to person. There are many types of evasive moments, and it relies mostly on how the poor player deals with it and reacts to it4.

Kacha

My sword once again slashed the Grey Bear's head, and it let out a groan. It fell and dropped another equip. My luck was out of this world, getting two drops in a row.

In the green grass, I bent forward to pick up the item. It was an average

looking robe. I looked at it and god damn, I was disappointed. It was an attribute item!

[Grey Bear Robe] (Black Iron)

Type: Cloth

Defence: 10

Magic: +2

Required Level: 5

Once I saw the attribute, I smiled with glee. It was so good! A +2 in Magic was something I needed, and the defence was also commendable. I quickly put it on and immediately, my defence rose to 19. The healer's Magic growth was 1.0x, so a +2 in Magic meant an additional 20 MP. It gave me an additional 4 [Hemostasis] uses. Truly, it's a wonderful item.

Paafu

Staring at the robe I had on, I changed the POV for a short while and yeap, it really looked like a Chinese uniform. My entire character looked scholar-like. Only my sword broke the look. If I changed it to some books, it would be perfect! Though, killing things with books sounded stupid. Killing things with a sword was definitely more reasonable.

Having high enough defence, I went on to challenge more Grey Bears. As expected, I only got hit for {20+} damage. It was definitely acceptable. At the same time, I continuously worked on my Evade movements. I focused all my concentration on the fight. The Grey Bear's attack was different every time thanks to the random number generation. I had to come up with new ways to dodge every single time.

Battle Notice: You dodged the Grey Bear's attack. Finished movement – [Inferior]!

Battle Notice: You dodged the Grey Bear's attack. Finished movement – [Inferior]!

Battle Notice: You dodged the Grey Bear's attack. Finished movement – [Elementary]!

A bunch of battle notices appeared one after another and slowly, I found myself getting to enjoy the combat in Destiny more and more. I was immersed in the game. Although the success rate of dodging was very low, only about 10% at most, it was a repeatable form of training. Being able to dodge some of an enemy's attacks definitely couldn't be a bad thing. Though I haven't fought it out with any players yet, so I'm not too sure where this is effective or not. I guess now I have something to look forward to.

Now, killing a level 7 Grey Bear was not stressful any more. Currently, most players only had a set of White Equips. I, on the other hand, was equipless head to toe, except for a Black Iron Grey Bear robe. This was simply a luxury. [Destiny]'s drop rate was considered low. It was announced previously that low level monsters would only drop a Black Iron tier item about 0.1% of the time. Every one already had their expectations set.

In a blink of an eye two hours had passed, and I reached level 7 by killing nothing but Grey Bears. All my stat points were added to strength as usual. On one hand, I needed the strength for more attacking power. On the other hand, I was a healer, a full and complete nurse. I needed the high strength to increase my arm strength, if not I would not be able to equip weapons later on. I definitely couldn't use a staff to smack people, or I would be made into laughing stock.

Looking at my stats, mm. I guess I'm still 10 levels below the outstanding people.

[Xiao Yao Zi Zai] (Novice Healer)

Level: 7

Attack: 31-33

Defence: 21

HP: 160

MP: 130

Charm: 0

Although my attack isn't as high as a berserker or swordsman, my defence isn't as high as a knight, and my magic power isn't as high as a magician or other healers, my speciality lies in the fact that I can both heal and attack. It's the fabled solo path. Although it's slightly third-rate...

I walked on and considering my levels and stats, I decided to try and fight a level 9 monster. You need to have the smarts to survive!

Raising my head, I found that the sky turned dark. The moonlight was like water, condensed into the patch of forest. Occasionally, there would be blood-curling howls from bears that would make one's hair stand on end. Mm, I've arrived at the deepest part of the Wild Bear Forest.

Quickly stopping, I found a new target. It was a bear with prickly spikes on the top of its head. The name was perfect and it was level 9 as well, just what I was looking for.

[Bramble Bear] (Normal Monster)

Level: 9

Attack: 32-50

Defence: 15

HP: 300

Skills: [Sharp Claws]

Introduction: Bramble Bear, a type of animal modified by magic. It has a lot of attack power, and it could return 10% of damage taken back to the dealer. It most often hides in the forests and doesn't come out. It kills all types, even humans.

"Hoho, this is it..."

Wielding my sword, I took the challenge head on. God damn it, Lin Wan Er and Dong Cheng Yue should both be above level 14, and yet I'm messing around below level 10. I need to get to level 10 quickly, get out of the beginner village and go to the main city, if not I'll lose all my self-respect!

Hua

With the effects of [Mighty Sword Wave], my sword took a brilliant arc in the air and headed straight for the Bramble Bear's eyes. However, its movement speed was a little too fast, moving its head aside. It's too difficult to hit the eyes of a moving target like this!

{17}

As expected, the defence was high. I was starting to doubt my strength a little.

The Bramble Bear groaned, and it raised its sharp claws. Shua a line of red follow the claws as they swooped down. This must be the skill [Sharp Claws]. I must dodge this, if not it'll definitely hurt a lot. My eyes were locked on the Bramble Bear's movements, deciding which way to move to avoid the attack. I immediately stepped backwards about 2 yards, but I couldn't dodge it in time. My chest took the hit and burned with pain.

{51}

Once I saw how much damage that dealt, I felt like I lost my will to fight. I hurriedly used [Hemostasis] and attacked with my sword. As the battle continued, I would be able to heal and the Bramble Bear would not. This must be my win!

Yet again I took several claws and my HP was almost gone. [Hemostasis]'s cooldown was 6 seconds, which would not be able to keep up with the monster's damage any more. I was starting to get nervous and worried. Thankfully, just then a [Lv +1] rose from on top of my head. The next time I use [Hemostasis], it'll use 10 MP directly.!

{+100}

Thank god, I reached level 2 [Hemostasis] just in time.

It was then that I realised how scary a level 9 monster is. Slowly hitting it, I managed to kill it after 1 minute. My luck was normal this time, only dropping 3 coppers⁵. I picked them up, drank a Blue Potion and continued hunting for another Bramble Bear.

I played all the way to 7pm, but I didn't get a message from Lin Wan Er at all. Looks like she's also hard at work, and she didn't plan to get offline any time soon. Oh well, I'll grind till level 9 then.

At 9pm, after a shower of golden light, the sword-based healer reached level 9. The stat points from level 7-9 were again, added to strength. This ensured that I would remain powerful.

Wuowuo

The flies danced and piles of human bodies were stacked there. Atop a green rock, a wild bear with golden gloss slept. Above its head was the words –

[Bramble Bear King] (Boss Monster)

Level: 10

1. 荆棘熊王, I used the manga translation's name for this one.
2. Kill-stealed, game novel so I'm using game terms.
3. The tier of equips I was talking about in chapter 8. White is common and mostly trash.
4. I'm presuming what the author means here is rich people can just buy potions and ignore the damage but poor people have to fight without the potions so they need to evade to survive.
5. Not sure if author wrote it wrongly, but the Black Bear dropped 5 coppers and the higher-leveled Grey Bear drops 3. Seems legit.

Chapter 10: Bramble Sword

Paa

The sword entered the mud as I quietly sat there, thinking about what to do. The beginner village boss, huh? Looks like it's hard to find. I'm surprised no one has killed it yet. It surely has to do with my exploration in the deep jungle. This Bramble Bear King surely must be the Grass Dog Village's strongest monster. Once it's killed, it'll surely drop loads of great items, so I must not miss out on it.

But, what should I kill it with? Surely I can't use this body of mine with second-rate fighting skills and one piece of cloth armor to kill it, right?

I looked at the sky, then back at the boss. Slowly, my willpower gathered and I made up my mind. Mm, it's not like it can't be killed. I'll need to use the landscape. The Bramble Bear King's body is huge, and its legs aren't considered long. It's attacking style should also be limited by this. Perhaps, I could use that big hole in the tree on the right and hide inside. Maybe then, I can slaughter this boss.

Hua

Standing up, I hesitated for a short moment before deciding to go through with it. Whatever I say, I shall do.

Just then, as I was getting up, a low voice came from behind me.

"Hi, friend. Do you plan to kill that bear king on your own?"

Damn, there's people now.

I took my sword and turned. There were 5 people about 30 yards away from me, all levels 8-10. One of them had a team leader symbol on his arm. He was level 10, which was pretty rare.

[Western Tyrant¹] (Novice Swordsman)

Level: 10

His name was quite aggressive. Behind him, there were 4 other people. Two were level 9 magicians, one was a bald barbarian shaman and one

was a musket-wielding knight. This team feels a little weird. Or... more like this team doesn't have a healer!

Western Tyrant walked up, looked at me, and then he laughed heartily, saying: "Dude, you're really something. A healer wielding a sword, hoho. How much strength did you add, having this much arm strength? Whatever it is, even if you can wield a sword, you can't kill a level 10 boss solo.

I looked at them without saying a word.

Western Tyrant continued: "How about this? You join our team of five, and we all kill this Bramble Bear King together. If a cloth equip drops, you and our two magicians will Roll and see who gets it. How's that? Or else..."

I couldn't help but smile cynically. "Or else what? You're gonna bully me? With a team of five but no healer, you five can't even kill the boss anyway. You guys should know that!"

Western Tyrant flashed a evil look before smiling happily. "Don't think so much about it, I didn't mean it like that. Although I, Liu Ying, am not any kind of well-natured prince², but to steal the kill on a boss is something I definitely won't do. Look, you can't kill it solo, we also can't kill it without a healer. Why not just team up and follow the suggestion I previously mentioned? Hmm... your [Hemostasis] level should be at least level 2, right? Level 1 [Hemostasis] only heals 50 HP. If it's only at level 1 there's no way we can kill it."

I nodded my head: "Mm, my [Hemostasis] is level 2. Though... I have a request. You must agree to this or else even if you PK me here, I won't agree."

Western Tyrant laughed loudly. "Okay, it's better than having to kill you. Say it. Though, it mustn't be too ridiculous. Other than that, I'll accept anything."

"Okay!"

I glanced at Western Tyrant, as well as the knight next to him. Smiling,

I said: “About this, I don’t need the cloth equip. If a cloth equip drops, you guys can have it. I only want sword-related weapons. As you guys can already see, my weapon is a sword. I only have this request. Once a sword drops, I’ll Roll together with you guys to decide to gets it. How’s that?”

Western Tyrant let out a “Hmm?”, considered for a while, then finally said: “Although I’m a swordsman, seeing as you’re a battle healer who uses swords as well, okay then. If a sword drops we’ll roll. Come, join our party!”

“Okay!”

I entered Western Tyrant’s party. The party of us 6 prepared to kill the boss. The five of them discussed about their roles. If a sword drops, I’ll join the Roll. If a cloth armor drops, I don’t get any thing. Western Tyrant really doesn’t want me to get anything, huh? Taking away my Roll chance like that. A sword isn’t even that like of a drop any way.

“Okay, let’s go ready to fight!” Western Tyrant said while holding his sword. Looks like he’s about the same as me in terms skill. He methodically ordered: “Tu Lu, you’ll tank. Take the boss’s aggro. The magicians will concentrate their firepower directly on the boss. Knight, you’ll use your Heavy Slash. I’ll use my Multiple Slash to attack. Xiao Yao Zi Zai, you make sure Monk doesn’t die. Keep healing him.”

“I understand!”

Monk, huh? That 24 years old or below barbarian took a staff and rushed in. From afar, he hit the Bramble Bear King.

Guu

{8}

What pitiful damage. The Monk class in Destiny has high scaling on their defence and health, also known as the meat shield class. Only in the late game does their attack shine. Currently, it’s laughable how low it is.

WRAHHH

The Bramble Bear King got aggro’ed and jumped down from its rock

ferociously. As it landed it clawed the Monk and a frightening damage number appeared.

{74}

“Holy...” Western Tyrant stared blankly. “Tu Lu, you’ve been adding 5 Defence and 5 HP each level right? Yet, you still took 74 damage from 1 hit. Have you given your defence away?”

The Monk leapt back quickly, yelling loudly at the same time: “There’s no problem with my defence, the Boss’s attack stat is way too high! I only have 500 HP, so I need Xiao Yao Zi Zai to heal me well!”

“Okay!”

When the Bear King attacked for the second time, I immediately healed the Monk and he gained 100 HP. Crisis averted, somewhat.

Western Tyrant let out a roar and charged in with his sword. On his sword a golden hexagram shone, and with a shua shua sound he hit the boss twice. It’s the swordsman class’s skill – Multiple Slash. It should be level 2, judging from his damage.

{58}

{61}

It’s pretty obvious that Western King added all his stat points into strength. The two magicians behind started waving their staffs and channeling their magic. They fired waves and waves of fireballs. Fire magic, huh? Shua shuaThe Boss’s health dwindled by over 100 HP. The Bramble Bear King should have 3000HP at most. Effects of the magicians’ work could be easily seen as the HP bar dropped line after line.

Shua

{+100}

I healed the monk again. After that, I moved closer to the boss with my sword in hand. I wanted to test my damage. What resulted was a clang sound and a damage number floating up –

{21}

Western Tyrant shouted in shock: “My god, that’s really strong! You’re an oddball of a healer!”

The Bear King took another swing of his claws and forced the monk to retreat. Western King hurriedly replaced his position, taking the hit from the Bear King. He lost about 90+ HP, but he shouted: “Xiao Yao Zi Zai, don’t bother healer me. Continue to heal the Monk! We need to control our firepower and not let the Boss aggro get messed up!”

I nodded my head and continued healing the monk.

Although the entire duration of the fight was dangerous, the Monk’s defence was really too high. Coupled with my healing, the Boss couldn’t deal any damage and after only two minutes of intense fighting, the Bramble Bear King’s health dropped to 7%.

Hei

Western Tyrant, while carrying his sword, suddenly appeared next to me. His eyes was full of content. No way, is he trying to kill me?

“Damn Bear King, go and die!”

The blade had the golden hexagram again, attacking twice. Another Multiple Slash. He wanted to use it on me! One for the boss and one for me. God damn, you want to get rid of me in the confusion of battle? Good thinking!

Sha

My legs danced on the grass as I quickly jumped 2 yards away. A big MISS appeared and Western King stared blindly, shocked to no end. The Monk’s HP fell below 200 and he shouted loudly: “Xiao Yao Zi Zai, what in the world are you doing back there? Quickly, heal me!”

I purposely bided my time. The Bear King attacked with his claws twice and killed the knight directly. The Monk wasn’t getting healed either and he got angry.

As if understanding my intentions, Western Tyrant didn’t attack again

and just apologised, smiling and saying: “Sorry, my hand slipped there...”

I immediately thought to myself: ‘Hand slipped? Why don’t you let your hand slip and cut off your manhood while you’re at it?’

Whatever, I gave the Monk a [Hemostasis] and charged at the Boss at the same time. I stayed out of Western King’s reach. If I were hit by a swordsman’s Multiple Slash, even if I didn’t die up front, I’d still be at least half health down. That definitely can’t happen.

A few seconds later, the Bramble Bear King let out a huge roar and fell to the ground. It was dead!

Hualala

An equip dropped with a silver coin. The Boss was quite generous, huh? It dropped silvers directly.

After I understood their intentions, I wasn’t going to let them get their way. I was the nearest to the Boss and when I took a look around, I was shocked. A sword really dropped! A glimmering longsword! I stretched out and grabbed it immediately. At the same time I used the Roll system function and determined my Roll points. It stopped at a beautiful 99 points!

The 5 members looked at the sword’s stats and were shocked beyond belief.

[Bramble Sword] (Black Iron Equip)

Attack: 21-35

Strength: +3

Required Level: 8

Who would have guessed? A sword really dropped! The only equip that dropped was a sword!

A silver coin or 100 copper coins also dropped. It could be counted as a small fortune.

“Damn!”

Western Tyrant's eyes looked as if they were about to pop out. Wielding his sword, he said: "Damn it, kill him!"

The players finally showed their true colours. Western Tyrant's sword had the golden hexagram again. Yet again, the Multiple Slash!

I quickly jumped back but I only managed to dodge 1 hit.

{Miss}

{71}

At the same time, the two magicians starting chanting and fire rained down from the heavens. I have no way to dodge this.

{81}

{+100}

{77}

In the split second between the attacks I healed myself. I ran towards the nearby forest while silently praising my healing skills. To my chagrin, a rush of cold air blew from behind me. Western Tyrant was a swordsman, whose movement speed should be much higher than mine. He swung his sword down in one smooth motion. An basic attack fell on my head.

{88}

A wave of pain entered my body and lights shone in front of me. I died!

Shua

I appeared at a nearby grave, really close to my corpse. I need to run back to the corpse to revive. Dang it, after killing the Boss I reached level 10, and now I'm level 9 again.

The five members stood there. Western King shouted angrily: "Xiao Yao Zi Zai, unless you are a wuss and don't mind hiding forever, you should come out now and forget about the Roll! If you do that we can still be friends!"

I couldn't help but smile. I said: "You're not fit to be a friend of mine.

The Bramble Sword is mine. If you guys have the luck, roll a 100. If not, shut up!"

As expected, the members started to Roll.

Western Tyrant: 41

Knight: 91

Ding

System Notice: Roll ended. Item [Bramble Sword] is given to player Xiao Yao Zi Zai!

Pa ta A black sword appeared in my inventory. It really was the Bramble Sword! Hehe, dying and dropping a level was still worth it!

1. Original text is 西楚霸王, might be a reference to a movie (perhaps) linked

here:<http://zh.wikipedia.org/wiki/%E8%A5%BF%E6%A5%9A%E9%9C%96>

2. 正人君子, meaning a virtuous, righteous and handsome person.

Chapter 11: Obsession Kills

While in spirit form, I ran up to the corpse of the boss. Near the corpse was Tyrant of Western Chu, guarding my corpse, looks like he plans to kill me as soon as I revive in hopes of my Bramble Sword dropping.

I couldn't help but laugh at him, hah, I don't care if you guys puppy-guard my corpse, I'll just wait, I have tons of time, now let's see who has more patience.

.....

At this time, my cellphone rang, immediately, the call was forwarded into <<Destiny>>. It was Ling Wan Er calling me...

"Li Xiao Yao?" Ling Wan Er's voice was extremely beautiful.

"Yeah, m'lady?" I asked.

Ling Wan Er laughed before continuing: "Yue Er and I are planning to get something to eat, come over to our building and wait there..."

"Alright, I'll be there in 5 minutes."

"Good, we'll wait for you."

Looking at Chu's pathetic party, I hid a smile. In my mind, I said to them I'll be getting some free food, take your time! Then I logged off while in spirit form which guaranteed my safety in-game.

After I took off the helmet, I glanced over my roommate. Glasses was twitching on his bed, he must be in a fierce fight. Whatever, it's his own problem, time to leave!

At the girl's dormitory, Ling Wan Er and Dong Cheng Yue were waiting for me outside. As soon as they saw me, they rushed over. Dong Cheng Yue patted her stomach, complaining: "I already told Wan Er to get dinner but she insisted that I keep on playing. Now I'm starving, let's hurry and get a midnight snack."

I smiled at Dong Cheng Yue: "Alright."

Liu Hua University's cafeteria is always open, 24/7, showing the

incredible wealth Liu Hua University has.

After ordering a couple of dishes, we dove in. Since I was really hungry, I disregarded appearance and swallowed 7 steamed buns in an instant. The two girls were shocked at my voracious appetite. From afar, a couple male students were also shocked, staring at me: “That guy...not caring a bit about his appearance, even in front of those two girls!”

Ling Wan Er’s smile was frozen on her face and gave me the evil eye: “Were you starved in your past life? Eat slowly.”

I nodded without saying anything, instead, I finished my seafood soup in one gulp, MLGBD [ref]1[/ref], when have I ever had such great tasting food? Being rich truly has its good points.

.....

Dong Cheng Yue finished her plate and was tasting her soup before smiling at me: “Xiao Yao, Today’s the day where you get pass your level 1 obstacle right?”

It was incredibly awkward for me: “Yeah, I’m level 9 already ...”

“Oh! You’re pretty fast in raising your level, getting to level 9 in just 10 hours!”

Ling Wan Er kept her poker face, glancing at her phone before talking to Dong Cheng Yue: “It’s pretty late, we should get back and sleep.”

She just ignored me!

I asked: “Dong Cheng, what level are you guys?”

Dong Cheng Yue smiled again before proudly saying: “I’m already a level 15 mage, trying to get to level 20 in order to register officially as a mage. Wan Er’s level is even higher than mine, she’s already level 16. God, the speed in which Assassins are able to raise their levels right now is insane, even the mages can’t keep up.”

I asked: “You guys already left the newbie village?”

“Of course, we left the village yesterday...” Dong Cheng Yue winked before continuing: “Oh right, me and Wan Er choose Fan Shu City as our

main city, what about you?”

I thought about it and said: “My newbie village is really close to Ba Huang City, maybe I’ll stay there for some time before venturing out to find you guys...”

Ling Wan Er gave me another evil eye with her perfect smiling poker face: “Oh, so you really don’t want to see me in game eh?”

Immediately I shuddered feeling a killing intent from her. Instantly I straightened and hurriedly said: “What are you talking about? I actually really want to go to Fan Shu City to meet up with you and Dong Cheng. But the monsters between the city have really high levels, and I’m only a small healer. How in the world can I get over there? On my way there, I’ll be killed tons of times, I might even be sent back to newbie village...”

Finally, Ling Wan Er’s poker face showed signs of breaking, she forcefully swallowed a laugh, biting her lip, before regaining composure: “Okay, then just stay at Ba Huang City, if you find yourself in a bad spot, then come and find us.”

Dong Cheng Yue excitedly added: “Yup yup, me and Wan Er will protect you!”

Ling Wan Er showed signs of irritation: “Why are you so happy Yue Er?”

Dong Cheng Yue instantly froze, while blushing she quickly said: “Well...me and you are both damage dealers, if we could bring Li Xiao Yao, we’d also have a healer. The pace at which we can kill monsters would definitely increase, right.....”

“Really?” Ling Wan Er’s eyes flashed an indiscernible emotion and stared at Dong Cheng Yue before reverting back to her sweet, poker face smile: “Alright, I trust you...”

Dong Cheng Yue patted her chest: “Ugh, that was close...”

“What did you say?!”

“Umm, I said that this soup is really good...”

“ ... ”

.....

At about 10 PM, I escorted the two girls back to their dormitory and took a walk around the dormitory. After finding a spot where no one else was around, I quickly jumped above the wall of the dormitory. On top of a tree, I monitored the dormitory's surroundings.

Since it was at night, the University was extremely crowded, there were students that belonged to the University and a surprising number of students that didn't belong to the University. On the roads of the University were countless Porches and Ferraris that raced past each other. After waiting for 2 hours, to about 12 PM, I left my "post". After such a long guard, I ensured that there wasn't any immediate danger. At least for now, there wouldn't be anything that could harm Ling Wan Er.

Even though the game is fun, I must not forget my job to protect Ling Wan Er. My top priority isn't to be with Ling Wan Er and Dong Cheng Yue but rather to ensure that no harm befalls Ling Wan Er.

While I was on the tree, I opened my phone to check up on Tian Xin Corporation and Ling Tian Nan. I needed to figure out what Tian Xin Corporation and Ling Tian Nan have done to cause such danger to themselves and why they were so important. To be able to have police from Hang Zhou directly send out men (me) to protect Ling Wan Er, Tian Xin Corporation must have extremely powerful connection and Ling Wan Er must be extremely important to Ling Tian Nan.

On my phone, I was able to access data on Tian Xin Corporation –

Tian Xin Corporation, founded by core engineers by Lockheed Martin, holds patents in high-tech radar invisibility technology and is a major player in the production BMI compounded materials. In 2015, they split from Lockheed Martin and under project leader, Ling Tian Nan, became a supplier of the Chinese military. With them, they brought state of the art technology in weaponry. In recent years, they began developing nano-bullets, using the fact that the high frequency sound that atom collision makes can be used melt metal. These new bullets are extremely effective against armored units such as tanks. In addition, they are a huge player

in developing China's most advanced aircrafts and radars.

After reading Tian Xin Corporation's bio, I couldn't help but take in a huge breath. I never imaged that Ling Tian Nan could be that important, from the information gathered, Tian Xin Corporation's addition to the Chinese military boosted the development of Chinese weapons by at least 10 years, especially strengthening China's Air-force. Because of Tian Xin, China was finally able to make progress on fifth generation aircrafts.

Because of how strong Tian Xin is, every country in the world is envious of Tian Xin's technology. Yet, Ling Tian Nan is extremely cautious and doesn't show many weaknesses that can be exploited. One of the few, or the only weakness that Ling Tian Nan has is his daughter. Because of this, many people have tried to kidnap Ling Wan Er and use her to threaten Ling Tian Nan in giving up his company's latest technological innovations. As a result, the Hang Zhou police is also handling Ling Wan Er's protection, trying to find someone that is both smart and strong but also unnoticeable to protect Ling Wan Er, and that person is... you guessed it, it's me!

As I sat atop the tree, I shuddered at the enormity of the task that was entrusted to me.

I switched my focus back to afar, maintaining high awareness of my surroundings. I quietly checked the surroundings one last time, yup, final checks show that tonight is definitely safe.

"Aah aah....."

As soon as I was positive that it was completely safe, small sounds came from the right, startling me. Looking over, I closely examined the space to my right, hmm, there are 2 upperclassmen, a guy and a girl... the guy was seated on the rock chair while the girl was on top of the guy. On her right leg dangled her panties, hmm, it's a bright pink. The two of them moved slowly and even though they didn't make any huge movements, they still made quite a bit of sound.

I jumped off the tree, a soft "paa" sound accompanied my jump. Even though the sound wasn't big, the two upperclassmen still heard me and

turned their head in unison: “Who is it!”

I shuddered at their attentiveness, calmly, as if I were talking to lions: “Just walking around...Sorry if I am interrupting, please continue.”

Taking a shortcut by walking across the grass, I reached a lamppost by the side of the road in a couple of steps. Behind me, someone said: “MLGBD [ref]1[/ref], let’s continues, these bastards!”

.....

I was looking forward to taking a shower once I got back to my dormitory. But unfortunately, Glasses was already taking a shower so I had to wait.

While waiting, I sat in front the dorm’s desk and used Glasses’ computer to go on the internet. After I booted up his computer, the first thing that popped out was Destiny’s official website, in the tabs next to it was information about the players with the highest levels, best equipment etc., it was extremely messy.

But I didn’t browse through the stuff that Glasses was already reading, I needed information that would actually help me.

After browsing through Destiny’s official website, I finally got a grasp of Destiny’s map. On the map were 7 great kingdoms, of them, the Chinese sever had access to Tian Ling Castle. Under Tian Ling Castle, there were 3 secondary cities, Fan Shu City, Jiu Ling City and Ba Huang City. Once new players walk out of the newbie villages, they would choose one of the three castles as their home castle. For Tian Ling Castle, the monsters around it were way to high leveled. At this point, the player with the highest level is only level 18, even for him, attempting to go to Tian Ling Castle is suicide. After all, even if he had the best level 18 equipment, he still wouldn’t be able to defeat level 70 monsters around Tian Ling Castle, the gap between stats was just too huge.

Then I zoomed in onto Tian Ling Castle and its three subordinate cities, yeah, Grass Dog Village was closest to Ba Huang City and very, very far from Fan Shu City, I’ll visit Fan Shu later.

At the same time, Glasses finally finished his long shower and walked out of the bathroom. When he saw me, he couldn't help but laugh: "Li Xiao Yao, how's did your leveling go today?"

"I'm at level 9, what about you, Glasses?"

"Impressive, that's a pretty fast pace, already level 9, even I'm only level 13. Right now I'm at Jiu Ling City, where do you plan on going? How about coming to Jiu Ling City and playing with me, we can take on the world together..."

My mouth twitched at the thought of being together with Glasses: "It's alright, for me to get to Jiu Ling City, I need to go across dozens of mountains and swim through dozens of rivers. I'll probably be killed back to level 1 before I even reach the city. I'm close to Ba Huang City, so I'm planning on making Ba Huang City my home city."

Glasses also smiled when I mentioned me being killed back to level 1: "Alright, just wait until your level is high enough and able to own horses, then you'll be able to go anywhere you want, don't be impatient and try to come to Jiu Ling!"

"Yeahhh."

I looked at the time, it was about 3 hours since I logged off, let me log back on.

.....

After my data was read, "Shuaa", a blinding light transported me near Bramble Thorn Bear's corpse. I was still in my spirit form and looking around, there didn't seem to be anyone around. I was about to revive when a thought crossed my mind. I should probably double check my surroundings. After walking around, I found Tyrant of Western Chu hiding behind a fallen tree, the two mages were also hidden behind shrubs. How wretched, these people are way too obsessed, right? All this for a Black Steel tier weapon? Really...such wretchedness.

I logged off, took a shower and went to sleep. If they really want the weapon then why don't the puppy-guard my corpse for an entire night.

Chapter 12: The Alchemist

Please note that this isn't a perfect word to word translation, instead there are parts that are added to aid the flow of the story. For example in the last chapter, people started laughing for no reason after seeing Xiao Yao which is really confusing. And then in this chapter Ling Wan Er calls out wait to Xiao Yao even though Xiao Yao made no motion to leave.

The next morning, I woke up bright and early, not to play games but rather to perform my duties. After dressing and brushing my teeth, I headed out.

My first task was to buy 3 servings of breakfast. Afterwards, I headed to the girls dormitory and called Ling Wan Er. Within minutes, she came down, wearing a sky blue miniskirt along with a dress shirt. Her two sources of pride were precariously pressuring the buttons on the dress shirt. Thankfully, she also noticed this and wore a T-shirt inside of her dress shirt.

I stood in front of the gate, glanced at her, looked away and then couldn't resist and peeked at her again. She is truly gorgeous, but unfortunately she also holds a grudge against me.

Like before, Ling Wan Er gave me the evil eye as soon as she saw me: "How long are you going to stare at me? I'll be taking the breakfast, now you should hurry back and raise your level in <<Destiny>>. After all... after all, you work for me... If your level is too low, I would feel ashamed."

I took a deep breath and promised: "I promise to not disappoint, I'll be taking my leave now."

"Wait..." Ling Wan Er suddenly called out, she paused for quite a bit before articulating her next words: "Li Xiao Yao, I want to ask you... before, were you really a part of Special Ops?"

I was taken aback by the question: "Huh, why are you asking about that?"

"I only want to understand. I don't trust what Wang Xin's says, how can

a special ops who's killed someone before be as shameless as you? All you do every day is leach off of our food and game time..." (<<Destiny>> costs about 1 yuan, 16 cents per minute to play)

While speaking, she kept peeking at my face, widening her smiling when she saw that I started looking downcast. As expected, Ling Wan Er still was out for revenge. Her happiness is built from my pain.

I tightened my fist before replying: "It doesn't matter if you don't believe what Wang Xin said. All that matters is me being able to protect you. I'll be heading back now."

Without so much as a glance at Ling Wan Er's, I started walking back to my dorm.

"Oh, you're angry? You can't be that easily angered right?"

I turned around and mustered the sunniest smile possible and said: "M'lady, you really know everything! Don't you?"

Looking at my face and voice, dripping with sarcasm, she knew that she hadn't gotten under my skin. Her frustration at having her victory taken away made her stamp her foot in anger: "Hmph, that's enough, I'm going back to raise my level."

"Okay, have fun playing!"

On my way back to my dorm, I nibbled on a meat bun and thought about what I would do today in <<Destiny>>. So, my goal today should be to get to Ba Huang City. Thus, I would be able to at least keep pace with the majority of players in <<Destiny>>. At the very least, I should leave Newbie Village, staying there would be pinning myself as a loser.

...

After returning to my dorm, I immediately logged into <<Destiny>>, sliding the metallic helmet over my head.

"Shuaa"

Instantly, the darkness was replaced with blinding light. I was still in Wild Bear Forest. I carefully looked around, yup, Tyrant of Western Chu

and his companions had left. It was probably because they knew that I had logged off and waiting around for me to respawn was useless. After all, they, like me, were trying to get to Ba Huang City, so any grudges could be settled there.

I revived in peace after checking my surroundings one last time.

After a golden light, I was in control of my body again. In this empty forest, I opened my inventory. Phew, when I died I only lost a couple of potions and not any of the important things. From my inventory, I took out Bramble Thorn Sword.

The sword caught the light and shined brightly –

- [Bramble Thorn Sword] (Black Metal Tier)
- Attack: 21-35
- Strength: +3
- Level Requirements: 8

...

The 21 to 35 points of attack from the Bramble Thorn Sword was like god compared to the 1-3 points of attack that my level 1 Steel Sword gave me. As I held Bramble Thorn Sword, I could clearly feel the power welling up in my arm, coming from the sword. At the same time, my stats increased by a huge chunk –

- [Xiao Yao Zi Zai] (Trainee Healer)
- Level: 9
- Attack: 69-83
- Defense: 23
- Health: 180
- Mana: 150
- Charm: 0

...

69 – 83 attack, incredibly, swordsmen of the same level who put all of their stat points in strength probably would be jealous of this attack. Mm,

with Bramble Thorn Sword, the possibilities were limitless.

With Bramble Thorn Sword in hand, I plowed forward. Currently I'm only at level 9 with 57% experience, I'll be able to get to level 10 after killing a couple of monsters. Afterwards, I'll go back to Newbie Village, restock on some potions, repair my equipment and head out to Ba Huang City.

On a hill back to Newbie Village, a level 9 Thorn Bear was peacefully basking under the sun. I smiled at the bear, let's see what my 83 points of attack can do.

"Shuaa"

I sprinted towards the bear and simply slashed when I got close enough. The hit flew true and landed on the bear's forehead. A damage number flew up from my strike, my attack didn't disappoint –

"117!"

Incredible.

While the thorn bear hadn't reacted to my first strike, I landed my second strike!

"114!"

The thorn bear was immediately enraged. It raised its sharp claws and slapped at me. I took the hit head on and took 37 damage but at the same time, I landed my third strike onto the thorn bear. With that it was defeated, hmph, this damage isn't anything to be laughed at.

I picked up the 4 copper coins that dropped from the corpse of the thorn bear and continued on my way. After killing about a dozen thorn bears, a light appeared above me, signaling my level has increased to level 10. With the new level, I gained 10 stat points and put them all in strength which boosted my damage by 5-5. Alright I was ready to go back to the village, recuperate and head out to Ba Huang City.

...

After getting back to Newbie Village, I sold a couple of white tier

leather armors. With this, I had 2 silver coins! After I repaired my equipment, I went to the pharmacy. Since I was a healer, I didn't need any potions that would recover health, instead I needed potions that would restore mana.

But when I asked for the prices of the mana potions, I was heartbroken

—

- [Mana Potion LV-1]: Recovers 50 mana, 5 copper coin/potion
- [Mana Potion LV-2]: Recovers 100 mana, 50 copper coin/potion
- [Mana Potion LV-3]: Recovers 150 mana, 5 silver coin/potion

.....

What the heck, I can't even afford a level 3 potion! Ugh whatever, I'll just buy lots of level 1 potions, they should be enough while I head to Ba Huang City.

When I got to the village's gates, the village elder who was stationed besides these gates sent me off. The elder shakily used his bark-like hand to mess up my hair, in his eyes, tears were welling up: "Child, you've grown and now you're about to leave this village. I truly feel happy for you, remember, you are our pride. In the future, you will definitely be a great adventurer (the name NPC's call players) and help Tian Ling Empire defeat its enemies."

I nodded: "I understand, elder."

"Child, I have 3 letters of recommendation, you may choose one of them..."

In front of me a table lit up,

[Fan Shu City] [Ba Huang City] [Niu Li City]

With your letter of recommendation, you can go to the city that you choose and showing the letter of recommendation to a teacher of your profession, you will be able to learn skills unique to your class!

It was a no-brainer, I choose Ba Huang City. As soon as I finished, the elder started talking again: "Go, my child. No matter where you go, even if

you become an ordinary soldier or a commanding general, don't forget today. You will always be our source of pride..."

.....

Ba Huang City is located at the northern point of Tian Ling Empire. In fact, it's located at the northernmost tip of the human continent. It's also the city that's closest to the unknown lands to the north. It's more like the first line of defense against monsters in the north rather than simply being a city. This was one the reasons that I choose Ba Huang City as my home city. Another, more important reason is that the monsters around Ba Huang City are probably more savage than monsters around the other 2 cities. Under these conditions, players at Ba Huang City would have more chances to improve.

After confirming Ba Huang City's location on my minimap, I began heading towards it. On the way, I saw quite a few of players also heading to Ba Huang City, most were also level 10. Everyone seemed to be in a rush to get to Ba Huang or challenge some strong monsters even if their levels couldn't support them, as if there wouldn't be enough monsters for them if they were late. In reality, <<Destiny>> was designed to be able to support 100,000,000 players online at the same time and there are at most 1,000,000 players that play right now. Therefore, there's no need to hurry and challenge strong monsters.

Along the way, I saw a warrior with white tiered armor that was followed by a female healer. The healer wore cloth armor and held a healing staff which had the outlines of a Medicine Pot on top of it. This was a real healer unlike me.

In addition, I met many players that choose to be Wind elves, they were mainly archers, mages or healers. Because Wind Elves could fly, many players choose to be Wind Elves, in fact by one estimate, about 35% of all players choose to be Wind Elves. But I didn't choose to become a Wind Elf because Wind Elves were basically sitting ducks while in the sky. In addition, the growth of Health and Defense for Wind Elves was extremely bad while spell damage had decent growth but fighting on the backline didn't fit well with my play style.

...

Travelling with other newbies that were heading towards Ba Huang City ensure my safe passages. In fact, the majority of monsters blocking the paths had already been killed. After traveling for about 70 minutes, a towering castle appeared. In front of the castle was a huge rock knife. That's Ba Huang City's main landmark, the legendary Ba Huang Knife, maybe it's a god-tier weapon...

After entering the castle, with some directions, I found the teaching association.

Besides a dark green pool was a dozen of female Wind Elves who congregated together while holding healing staffs. They all were healers and at the center was a level 50 NPC Wind Elf who was the professions instructor.

I walked up to her, took out my letter of recommendation and said: "Teacher! This is my letter of recommendation, I'm an adventurer from Grass Dog Village, please let me study under you."

The instructor stared at the Bramble Thorn Sword in my hand, her shocked face betraying her calm voice: "Okay, from now on you are a trainee healer of Ba Huang City and a part of our empire's pride."

...

Ding

- [Encourage]
- Encourages target. The target gains 1% extra attack damage per level in Encourage.
- Requirements: Level 10 – Healer Professions Only
- Cost to learn: 1 Silver Coin

There was only 1 skill that I could learn!

But the skill itself was pretty good, at level 1 it would raise 1% damage but at level 10 it would raise 10% damage. At the same time, it's incomparable to [Turmoil Sword] which raises 10% damage instantly

without any proficiency.

It pained me to part ways with 1 Silver Coin but I did in the end, NND [1]).

...

After talking with the instructor, I decided to go raise my level and proficiency of [Encourage]. But, I remembered something, there was something that I had to do before heading out.

I needed to get a productions professions. I needed to become an Alchemist.

1. NND = Motherfucker

Chapter 13: Grass Fruits

With the aid of the system help menu, I found the alchemist instructor to be located at a small forest, just outside of Ba Huang City.

With my Bramble Thorn Sword, I jogged to the location of the alchemist instructor, but when I got there, what should have been a small forest was only an empty field.

What's going on here? I pulled up the online forum for <<Destiny>> and searched for posts regarding alchemy. Soon, I found a post that was tailored to my need –

- [Question]: Where is the alchemist instructor? Why can't I find him?
- [Answer]: Motherfucker, I searched for the alchemist instructor for an entire morning and found out that the alchemist instructor isn't at the place where the system guides you. Instead, the alchemist instructor is in the forest, outside to the northern gate of Ba Huang City. There are at least 11 spots where the instructor can be found and every 15 minutes the instructor goes to a different spot. Ridiculous!

...

So that's why I couldn't find him.

I went around to the small forest, and searched there. It took about 10 minutes before I finally found the instructor napping under a Ginkgo Tree. The name displayed on top of his head was [Alchemist Mi Fu].

I walked up to him and respectfully bowed, saying: "Hello there. I would like to become an Alchemist!"

But after I bowed, he didn't reply to me. Trying to stay respectful, I decided to keep my eyes to the ground and keep bowing, after all, I didn't want to displease the instructor. But after quite a while, he still didn't reply, confused I looked up. What the hell? He left.

I had thoughts of quitting alchemy but reason won and so, I kept on searching for the instructor. After another 10 minutes, I found the

alchemist under another tree. I walked up, this time with a bit of force, I said: “Hi. I would like to become an Alchemist!”

Mi Fu looked up and glanced at me before saying: “Kid, do you really want to become an alchemist?”

“Yes!”

“Okay!” Mi Fu smiled: “In order to become a great alchemist, one must have a sharp mind. If you can correctly answer my three questions, I’ll give you a task. Only after you have completed the task will you be able to become a full-fledged alchemist.”

“Okay, please begin!”

Mi Fu’s smile became even wider: “What kind of wheel can’t move around?” (The question is actually asking what kind of car can’t move around and the answer is a play on Chinese words which unfortunately can’t be expressed in English)

I paused, this was a riddle! After a few seconds, I got the answer: “A wind-mill”

“Correct. Next question, how can you use a single leaf to cover the entire sky?”

“Use the leaf to cover your eyes.”

“Last question, there’s a caterpillar and he wants to cross a river, but there is no bridge. How can he cross the river?”

This was a hard one. I thought about it for a full minute before tentatively answering: “He metamorphosis’s into a butterfly and flies across the river?”

“Yup, not bad...” Mi Fu finally sat up. Looking at me, he asked: “Do you really want to become an alchemist?”

“Yes!”

“Alright!” Mi Fu took out a miniature shovel from his pocket and said: “Alchemists must be able to collect herbs by their own power. To the south-east, there’s a Grass Fruit Forest, go there and collect 10 Grass

Fruits. If you can do this, I'll let you become an Alchemist."

"Ding"

Do you accept the quest – [Alchemist's task]?

Of course, I accepted. The quest description matched what Mi Fu said, collect 10 Grass Fruits. This shouldn't be too hard, but the only difficulty is that I don't know what level the monsters are in the Fruit Forest.

...

With my miniature shovel, I left the alchemist instructor. After about 10 minutes, I arrived at Grass Fruit Forest. At the edge of the forest, countless butterflies flew up and down. It's quite breathtaking.

I tightened my grip on my Bramble Thorn Sword, even though the forest looked peaceful, there might be extremely strong monsters in it. Right after entering the forest, a green Bat that was resting on a tree came flying at me.

- [Blood Sucking Bat] (Normal Monster)
- Level : 12
- Attack: 55-62
- Defense: 24
- Health: 400
- Skills: [Transfusion LV-1]

Description: A low level monster in <<Destiny>>. These Blood Sucking Bats are skilled in leeching away health. They often destroy nearby fields, making farmers and hunters very wary of them. In fact, many lives have ended at the hands of Blood Sucking Bats.

...

Looking at the clumsy actions of the Blood Sucking Bat, I couldn't help but laugh. This is too easy!

I thrust my sword at the approaching Bat. It was simple yet effective. Puchi. I hit the abdomen of the Bat. Instantly the Bat, which was about the size of a small rubber ball, cried out in pain. My strike caused 97

points in damage.

Instead of backing away, the Bat flew into my chest, opened its Bloody mouth and bite my exposed shoulder. The Bat turned 50% of the damage into his own health –

43

+21

I didn't bother looking at the wound on my shoulder and instead, focused on slashing at the Bat. With a couple of hit, I ended the life of the Bat. After I killed the Bat, I gave myself a hemostasis and recovered 100 health. After dying, the Bat left behind 2 items, one of them was 5 copper coins and the other was a dark green card. After I picked it up, I was shocked –

- [Blood Sucking Bat Illustrations] – Illustration type item. After finding the Illustration of a monster, a player can tame a monster to become a pet.

...

“A pet?”

I was shocked. Even though I knew that there are 3 slots for pets for each player, of the thousands of players that I passed since arriving at Ba Huang City, I hadn't seen anyone with a pet.

Well, might as well use it. Shua, the [Blood Sucking Bat Illustration] was transferred to my Illustration Book. After opening my Illustration Book I was able to understand the process in taming a monster. What I had to do was find a level 1 monster that I had the Illustrations to and use some Sealing Cards to tame it. The chances for sealing varied with each monster and only level 1 monsters could be tamed.

Right now, I don't have any Sealing Cards so there was no point in trying to find a level 1 Blood Sucking Bat. So I continued forward. After a few steps, I found what I was looking for. In front of me were some light green shrubs, they were the level 1 herb, Grass Fruit!

Each stalk had quite a few fruits but when I tried to pick the fruits, they wouldn't come off, so I took out my shovel and carefully dug the entire stalk out of the ground. When I finished digging and pulled out the Grass Fruit Stalk,

“Ding!”

- System notice: Congratulations, you have collected [Grass Fruit] * 1!

...

With renewed vigor, I looking for other stalks of Grass Fruit, luckily there was one right beside me. In a couple of moments, I had 2 Grass Fruit Stalks tucked in my inventory.

With my Bramble Thorn Sword, I continued forward. Soon, I encountered more Blood Sucking Bats. A few meters in front of me were 2 Blood Sucking Bats. Looks like I'll have to lv2...

My lips curled into mocking smile, it's time to fight!

Shua!

My bare foot slid across the grass. Raising my sword, I slashed at the closest Bat with my entire strength. Peng. It was a critical strike! A 178 floated above my strike. After the Blood Sucking Bat took the hit, its body flew backwards. At the same time, I noticed that, in <<Destiny>>, once a hit lands, the opponent falls backwards or tenses up for a slight moment which affects the counterstrike used by the opponent, at least that was the case for these Blood Sucking Bats. Anyways, this momentary pause gave me a chance to land another hit on the Blood Sucking Bat before the Bat could even react to the first strike.

Cccchhhing

91

Taking advantage of the slight pause in the Bat after landing the second hit, I slashed at the Bat from below. As a result, the counter attack that should have happened after the first hit and had been delayed to after the second hit was now delayed to after the third which killed the Bat.

Bramble Thorn Sword's attack speed was quite slow. It took about 1.5 seconds to perform a normal attack, but with the lag between my attacks and the counterattacks of the Bat and my impressive damage, I was able to kill the Bat without taking a single hit...

While fighting the second Bat, I began thinking, for the first Bat I attacked, I started off with a critical strike which caused a slight pause in the Bat, hit the Bat again which postponed the counterattack once again and finally before the Bat's counter strike could connect with me, I finished it off. Is that... a combo? Wait, since I devised it myself, could this be what legendary use – a compiled combo?

Hmph, things are about to get interesting.

...

Soon, I had collected 9 stalks of Grass Fruit, and when I dug up the 10th stalk of Grass Fruit, a familiar sound rang out beside my ear.

Ding!

- System Notification – You have learned the skill – [Herb Collection]!

In nearly every game that I have ever played, [Herb Collection] is a skill essential to Alchemists and Pharmacists. I couldn't believe my luck. To have gotten such an important skill this quickly, great! Compared to my [Turmoil Sword], [Herb Collection] didn't take long to learn at all. The main difference between Pharmacists and Alchemists was that Pharmacists specialized in making health potions while Alchemists specialized in making mana pills. Even though the products of the two professions are quite different, they are both professions that guaranteed a huge income. At least I hope that's the case.

From my observations, I realized that every time a player raised their level, they would get a 10 point boost in mana. But the skills that the player uses would also become stronger and take up more mana. For example, my Hemostasis took 5 mana at level 1 and would take 50 mana at level 10. But this is only a low level ability, for players who get to level 50, a high tier skill at level 1 would use up 20 mana and 200 mana at

level 10. A swordsmen who only puts all of his stat points in Strength and not Spiritual Power would only have 550 mana to use at level 50. Once he uses a couple skills, he would be out of mana. If he doesn't use any mana pills then he'd be stuck using basic attacks. This meant that the need for mana pills was limitless, as long as there were people playing, there would be a need for mana pills.

My goals to making money are quite simple, first of all, I need to give money to my sister for her college fees and secondly, I need money to rebuild the Zhan Long team in <<Destiny>>. All I have in my savings is 8000+ RMB or 1300 USD. A single headset for <<Destiny>> costs 10,000 RMB, which is why I desperately need to find a method to make the most money in the shortest amount of time.

Alright, Alchemy, my first step to riches. Even if my overall level becomes low, I won't hesitate to spend time on Alchemy's level.

...

After returning to the small forest, I found the alchemy instructor Mi Fu and gave him the 10 stalks of Grass Fruit.

"Oho, young man, as expected, you completed this tough task. From now on, you are one of the smart and courageous Alchemists. You will go to the extremes of Earth, explore places that have never been seen by the human eyes in order to find the rarest herbs and create the most precious pills..."

Mi Fu patted my shoulder. With his hand came a beam of light. After the beam of light disappeared, the title of "Trainee Alchemist" appeared under my name. In addition, I learned a new skill – Alchemy! My hard work was not in vain!

.....

Mi Fu looked at me and continued: "Now, you are an Alchemist, but... hmm, young man, since you're an adventurer of Ba Huang City, why didn't you go to city's lord to receive your city emblem?"

"City Emblem?" I had never heard of that before.

“Hmph, you really aren’t the brightest, are you?” Mi Fu patted his forehead, as if it was hurting: “As an adventurer of Ba Huang City, you should go to the lord’s building, find the city’s lord and become recognized as an adventurer of Ba Huang City. The lord might even give you a gift...”

“Whattt?!”

I ran back to the City, leaving Mi Fu alone under the Gingko tree. What the heck? The system help never told me about this! Looking through the help menus and forums there weren’t any posts about the emblem and gift either! I’m guessing not many player in Ba Huang City know about this either.

Chapter 14: Let the Blood Spill over Ba Huang

Shout out to Freespot who helped me translate this chapter! Also, sorry if the writing's a bit rough in this chapter, it's late at night and I'm super tired.

There were countless players around Ba Huang City. Outside in the forests, there were thousands if not tens of thousands of players fighting Blood Sucking Bats and other monsters. Inside the city, there were countless players selling items.

A level 10, white trash tier coat was selling for 5 Silver coins! I don't think anyone's going to buy that, after all, a coat with 5 defense really doesn't have many uses or retain its value and money is so precious right now that one would be better off buying some potions and raising one's level.

There were quite a few people in front of the Pharmacies, Blacksmith Forges and Training Halls but there wasn't anyone on their way to the meet the lord of the city, no one but me. Looks like everyone was busy trying gain an advantage over one another and weren't planning to pay their respects to the lord.

.....

The blood red path to the city hall was guarded by soldiers wearing black armor, that didn't shine under sunlight. Inside the city hall was an sword-wielding general, the feudal lord of Ba Huang City. The Chinese server of <<Destiny>>, only had three secondary cities and one main city, which meant he was one of the highest ranking officials in the Chinese sever.

I walked forward and courteously said: "My lord, I would like to become an adventurer for Ba Huang City..."

The lord had a huge beard, with his hand on his sword, his eyes swept over me: "Young man, do you really want to become a member of Ba

Huang? Are you willing to defend this city to your last breath?"

I nodded: "Yes"

"Good, come over here, you will now become a member of Ba Huang City."

Paa. The lord's hand, covered with a gauntlet, patted my shoulder. The strength that the hand used was far greater than my imagination. Under his pat, I winced at the pain in my shoulders but at the same time a familiar ringing sound rang besides my hearDing!

- System Notification: Congratulations, you have joined Ba Huang City as an adventurer and received the right to use recall scrolls for Ba Huang City. In addition, you have received Ba Huang City's city badge – [Let the Blood Spill over Ba Huang]

...

Shua!

A badge of a bloody battle knife appeared on my shoulder. I'm guessing that that's Ba Huang City's unique badge. The badge granted a City Buff – [Let the Blood Spill Over Ba Huang]: Anyone who wears this badge will receive a 3% increase in attack and defense!

Hmph, choosing Ba Huang City as my home city has paid off. I wonder what effect the badges from Fan Shu City and Jiu Li City have, I'll remember to ask Ling Wan Er and Dong Cheng Yue next time I see them.

After registering as an adventurer of Ba Huang, I left the City Hall since there was nothing more to keep me there.

But right when I was about to leave the City's gate to venture into the surrounding forest, a player yelled: "Buying a [Blood Sucking Bat Illustration], I'll pay good money for it!"

[Blood Sucking Bat Illustration]?

I opened my inventory, hmm, after killing more than 20 bats, I had found 2 illustrations. One, I used myself and the other one was sitting

snugly in my inventory. Therefore, I went up to the player buying the illustration. He was about 20 years old, level 13 and his game ID was “New Moon Merchant Number 4”

I walked in front of him and asked: “My friend, why do you want to buy those illustrations?”

The merchant laughed: “It’s a business secret!”

“Is it really a secret? All you want to do is use the [Blood Sucking Bat Illustrations] to catch some Blood Sucking Bats and sell them as pets right?”

The merchant’s eyes narrowed: “Wuh? How’d you know?”

Now it was my turn to laugh: “Really? You thought that only you would think of that? Anyways, I have a [Blood Sucking Bat Illustration], so how badly do you want it? If I think the price is right, I’ll sell it to you. If it’s not then I’ll just use it myself and catch some bats to sell. Then we’ll be competitors!”

As soon as he heard that I had an illustration, the merchant’s eyes lit up: “My good brother, do you really have the illustration? Our group of 30+ people have been killing Blood Sucking Bats for 4 hours now and not even a single [Blood Sucking Bat Illustration] has dropped! How good is your luck to have one already?”

I was shocked, was the drop rate for the illustrations really that low? Was my luck really that good?

I took out the illustration and waved it in front of the merchant’s eyes: “Mm, you want this right?”

“Incredible, you really do have it. Brother, how much are you going to sell it for? Please, please sell it to me!”

“Make your offer!”

The merchant nodded and raised 5 fingers: “50 Copper Coins!”

I smirked: “Alright, Ima go fight some monsters. Bye!”

“Wait, wait...” The merchant hurriedly tugged my sleeve: “Even if we

can't make a deal, we can still be friends right? Don't be in such a hurry to leave, if you aren't satisfied with this offer, we can still discuss it right?"

I smiled, the merchant took my bait. I also held up 5 fingers: "This price..."

"You don't mean... 5 Silver Coins!?"

"Yes, 5 Silver Coins. You have 30+ people killing Blood Sucking Bats right now, each person should be able to get about 1 Silver Coin's worth of drop or so in 1 hour, your people would have made about 30 Silver Coins. Even though you guys have gotten 30 Silver Coins, none of you have a single Illustration. So the real question is, why am I not selling this illustration for 50 Silver Coins? But since this is our first time trading, I'll leave the price at 5 Silver Coins, take it or leave it."

The merchant whose face paled after my speech, immediately said: "Yes yes yes. I'll take it. 5 Silver Coins right?"

After opening the trade window and traded with the merchant, my inventory was one [Blood Sucking Bat Illustration] lighter and my purse was 5 Silver Coins heavier.

...

After selling the illustration, I immediately headed to the general store. After flipping through a couple pages in the catalogue, I finally found what I was looking for. Before, when I looked through the recipes in [Alchemy] –

- LV -1 [Grass Fruit Pill]: Recovers 50 mana.
- Needs 3 Grass Fruits, 1 Empty Bottle
- LV -2 [Silver Leaf Pill]: Recovers 100 mana.
- Needs 4 Silver Leaf Herbs, 2 Refinding Water, 1 Alchemy Pot
- LV -3 [Seven Star Pill]: Recovers 200 mana.
- Needs 3 blades of Seven Star Herbs, 3 Refining Waters, 1 Alchemy Pot

.....

Both, Alchemy Pots and Empty Bottles were single use items, which meant that they would be consumed after I created the pill. So I decided to buy 100 Empty Bottles because after refining 100 Grass Fruit Pills, I should be able to get to level 2 in [Alchemy] and at that point, there isn't much meaning in continuing to make Grass Fruit Pills. Each of the Empty Bottles cost 2 Copper Coins so the combined cost of the 100 Empty Bottles was 2 Silver Coins. The Alchemy Pots however cost 20 Copper Coins. The price was ten times the price of an Empty Bottle! After buying 10 Alchemy Pots, I switched my focus to Sealing Cards, they were 1 Silver Coin each. I bought 2... and surprise! I'm out money.

This time, I went out of the Eastern gate of Ba Huang City. In front of me was a sunny forest, Clear Rainforest. The rainforest, which surrounded Ba Huang City, had a variety of low level monsters. The majority of the monsters were small animals or bugs that wouldn't cause much damage. It was the perfect place for level 10-20 players to raise their levels. It was also where I was about to make a lot of money!

I rushed into the rainforest, my foot crushing countless flowers and grass. My first goal was to collect Grass Fruits and raise my [Alchemy] skill to level 2. A level 1 Grass Fruit Pill can recover 50 mana which footed the mana for 5 uses of [Hemostasis] but the cooldown the pills is 30 seconds which meant that I wouldn't be able to use Hemostasis to it's full potential (Author never says what the cd is on Hemostasis but from this it's assumed to be less than 6 seconds).

Inside the forest, there were plenty of Grass Fruits lying around but before I could pick them, I had to kill the Blood Sucking Bats that "guarded" these precious herbs. Whatever, the bats gave precious experience which is always welcomed.

Ka Cha! (Common sound effect in Chinese for beheadings)

The Blood Sucking Bat that, moments ago, so valiantly rushed at me was now dead at my feet. With his death, a golden light shone over me, I was level 11!

Every time I fought a Blood Sucking Bat, I would carefully check if it

was a level 1 bat. If it was a level 1, I would have sealed it without hesitation. After all, no one had a pet at this stage and any pet, even a pet that had stupidly low stats like a Blood Sucking Bat, would sell for huge amounts.

Unfortunately, lady luck didn't shine on me and no level 1 Blood Sucking Bat appeared.

After an hour of collecting Grass Fruits, I found a quiet spot in the forest and began to refine the Grass Fruits into Grass Fruit Pills. After emptying my stock of Empty Bottles, my [Alchemy] skill reached level 2!

.....

I stood up, taking a look at my status, I realized that I was level 12. Now that my [Alchemy] skill was level 2, the new goal would be to gather Silver Leaf Herbs, so that I could increase my [Alchemy] level even higher.

Even though I could see piles of fully grown Grass Fruit, unfortunately, I didn't have any interest in the Grass Fruit now that my [Alchemy] skill was level 2. I was slowly moved forward, carefully searching the ground for Silver Leaf Herbs. After searching for about 20 meters, I discovered the first batch of silver leaf herbs. With a silver glow, they hid under shade of the surrounding trees. Unexpectedly, they were actually easier to find than I imagined!

Without a worry in the world, I walked forward, smiling at my fortune. But right when I was about to collect the Silver Leaf Herbs, a bird's screech sounded above me and suddenly a silvery light dived towards me.

Puuu!

Blood sprouted from my forehead, a sneak attack!

“71 ! ”

The treacherous attacker? A bird that was clad in silver. Even though its body was very small, its damage to me was proof that its attacks were exceptionally ferocious. Its beak, which looked like it was plated in silver, made me wince just by looking at it –

- [Silver Feathered Bird] (Ordinary Monster)
- Level: 15
- Attack: 55-80
- Defense: 19
- Health points : 550
- Skills: [Silver Feather Strike]

Description: The Silver Feathered Bird is one of Clear Rainforest guardians. These metallic birds have a outlandish speed and extremely strong penetration attacks. Their persistence in guarding the Silver Leaf Herbs make countless herb pickers curse and hate them.

.....

Quickly snapping out of my trance, I slashed at the Silver Feathered Bird, striking it in it's flight and causing 112 points of damage. I realized that even though the bird's offensive power is quite high, its defense was insufficient, which meant that while it could kill quickly, it could also get killed quickly.

Jie Jie!

After the Silver Feathered Bird was hit, it let out chirped angrily and quickly rushed at me twice. The damage and pain from it's attacks were on a level that I had never experienced before, even while fighting the Bramble Thorn Bear King. I had to use 3 consecutive [Hemostasis]s, for me to barely stay alive. Luckily, I'm a sword practicing healer. For a common swordsman with my level and equipment, even having 2 lives would be insufficient for him to kill a Silver Feathered Bird.

Puu!

I thrust my sword. It caught the Silver Feathered Bird's body square and took away the final slivers of it's health.

Paa Ta!

A pile of Copper Coins dropped on the ground. Wow, there were 11 Copper Coins. These level 15 monsters were perfect for leveling, they gave a generous amount of money and a decent amount of experience.

.....

After placing the Copper Coins in my purse, I squatted down and started to collect the Silver Leaf Herb. After finishing, I ventured further into the forest.

This time, because of my scary encounter earlier with the Silver Feathered Bird, I searched for Silver Feathered Birds each time I saw a Silver Leaf Herb. If two Silver Feathered Birds attacked me at once, I would die without a doubt. My life was definitely more important than a Silver Leaf Herb.

After half an hour of searching, fighting and collecting, the sky turned dark. It had become night in the game!

I looked up, appreciating the intricacy of the game when suddenly a silver flash appeared between the trees, oh great, another Silver Feathered Bird. But when I looked at the Silver Feathered Bird's level, I involuntarily shuddered, it was a level 1 sealable Silver Feathered Bird!

- [Silver Feathered Bird]
- Level: 1
- Description: Sealable

.....

Chapter 15: The Incredible Price for the Silver Feathered Bird

For a long time, I had thoughts of killing myself. A level 1 monster is very rare, or rather a player that had an illustration for a type of monster and found a level 1 monster of that type was very rare. Unfortunately, I only have the [Blood Sucking Bat Illustrations], I have yet to find the silver bird illustrations... what can I do? AH!

Standing under the tree, I hesitated for a long time, finally, with much regret, I left.

No, no, no, I did not give up. Far from it, I decided that even if I have to wait till the seas are dry and rocks crumble, I'm going to subdue it. Until I get the [Silver Feathered Bird Illustration], I would hunt and hunt and hunt..

.....

I randomly walked around in the rainforest collecting Silver Leaf Herbs and killing Silver Feathered Birds. Some would find this boring, to simply walk while doing repetitive tasks but I viewed it as an opportunity to sharpen my skills. This is nothing compared to those time when I waited for 36 hours in deserts, waiting for that rumored cross-border drug deal. During that time, I lied in wait without moving nor eating, even when ghost crabs crawled over my arms, I did not dare to move. Compared to that, the difference between the two is like heaven and earth.

After 5 hours of slaughtering, it was 8pm. Only god knows how many Silver Feathered Birds I've killed. Either way, through this, I was able to raise my level to 15. In addition, during my hunt, 5 White Tiered item dropped and combining all the Copper Coins that dropped, my purse became 7 silver coins heavier, Unfortunately, my Bramble Thorn Sword only had 10% of it's durability left. Looks like I would have to go back to Ba Huang before continuing to hunt.

Jie Jie.

Another Silver Feathered Bird rocketed towards me, hastening it's death. The Silver Feathered Bird's angry chirp still lingered in the air when my Bramble thorn sword slashed it twice, killing it instantly. The moment it died, my heart skipped a beat. It dropped 2 items, the first was a green cloak and the other was... an illustration card. After 5 hours of hard work, did I finally find what I needed?

Bending down, I picked up the illustration card. It was a [Silver Bird Illustration]! Without thinking twice, I used it, and it changed into a ray of light that fell into illustrations handbook, My illustration was now a page longer

- [Silver feathered bird]
- Attack: ★★☆☆
- Defense: ★★
- Health: ★★☆☆
- Agility: ★★★★★
- Magic: ★★
-
- Skill: [Feather Strike]

.....

The Silver Feathered Bird's attributes of 3,5 stars in attack and 4 stars in agility should be enough to meet the prerequisites of an attack pet. For now, it should be a top tier attack pet. The only weakness to it would be it's low defence and magic ability but that shouldn't matter too much since the main use of pets right now is to help it's owner raise his level, not to decide the outcome of a battle.

Moreover, when I picked up the green cloak, a grin spread across my face, good stuff!

- [Silver Feathered Cloak](Black Iron Tier)
- Type: Cloak
- Defense: 30
- Strength: +4

-
- Level requirement: 15

.....

Cloaks are not specific to any class, like chain-mail, leather armor or cloth armor. This means its defensive abilities are generally weaker than the other defense oriented equipment. But for me, who only has 29 defense points, the cloak adds an extra 30 points in defense which would double my defense. It definitely is worth my trouble of killing Silver Feathered Birds for 5 hours!

With the green cloak, the looks of a newbie finally disappeared. More importantly, my attributes also rose a huge deal –

- [Xiao Yao Zi Zai](Trainee Healer)
- Level: 15
-
- Attack: 101-112
- Defense: 59
- Life(Health points): 240
- Magic(Mana points): 210
-
- Charm value: 0

59 points of defense, that definitely makes me a beginner tank(person who can take lots of damage)! My heart was filled with joy, raising my Bramble Thorn Sword, I rushed to the location where I first found the level 1 Silver Feathered Bird. I hope to god that the bird hasn't been killed or sealed. That bird is as good as mine and anyone who dares touch it will feel my wrath.

After returning to the tree where I found the level 1 bird, I took a look around, and sure enough the same level 1 Silver Feathered Bird was still lingering around, great!

Excitedly, from my inventory, I pulled out the 2 Sealing Cards,worth an impressive amount of 1 Silver Coin each. Even when I locked the Sealing

Card onto the Silver Feathered Bird, the bird kept happily chirping. The seal card, meanwhile, reflected the success rate of sealing the Silver Feathered Bird – It was 27.4%.

The hell! Even though it's only a low grade sealing card, the success rate shouldn't be that low, right? I'm only carrying 2 sealing cards, time to ask for lady luck's blessings again!

Shuaaa.

I suddenly casted the sealing card, which immediately caused 6 bolts of light to descend, trapping the Silver Feathered Bird between them. After doing so, the bolts of light started to flicker, changing from bright to dark and back to bright. After several seconds. the lights shattered, signalling the failure of the seal.

“Fuck!”

Anger swelled up within me, that was an entire Silver Coin wasted! Likewise, the bird is enraged by my attempt to seal it and does a rotating dive at me. Paa! The blow lands, in front of my chest, a small 14 shows up, meaning that I took 14 damage. Incredible, for a level 1 [Feathered Strike] to deal that much damage, the potential damage at higher levels can't be overlooked.

Steadying myself, I pull out the second and final sealing card.

Shuaaa!

The card flies through the air and hits the bird, the bolts of lights that descend, once again, start to trap the Silver Feathered Bird. Even though the huge suction coming from the sealing card pulls the bird down, the bird doesn't give up and struggles to break free. Quite a few times, when I thought that the bird had finally been sealed, it rises up again, desperately struggling against the bolts of light. At the last moment, when the effects of the sealing card started to die off, I prayed for the bird to give up struggling: Birdie please stop struggling, I promise I'll feed you the best millets that come from Shu Bei Zun An!

Finally, it seems as if my prayers had been answered and a ray of light,

brighter than the others, surged forward and pulled the Silver Feathered Bird into the card. In an instant, the Silver Feathered Bird had disappeared, and my pet slots, which were empty before, now had a silver bird inside of it.

Diinnng.

System Notification: Congratulations, you have successfully sealed “Silver Feathered Bird”, Because you are the third player to have successfully sealed a pet, you will recieve an additional reward of 2000 experience points and 1 point of charm!

.....

Shuaa!

A familiar golden ray of light appeared above me, I had reached level 16! Shockingly, sealing pets gives experience! In addition, I was also rewarded with one point of charm, even though I don’t know what it does, it definitely is going to be useful...

I opened the pet slots and found out the Silver Feathered Bird’s stats, mmm, it seemed like it was very powerful –

- [Silver feathered bird]
- Level: 1
-
- Attack: ★★ ★ ☆
- Defense: ★★
- Health points: ★★ ☆
- Agility: ★★ ★ ★
- Magic: ★ ☆
-
- Skills: [Feather Strike]
- Excellence: 47%

.....

Looking at my pets stats, I understood that all Silver Feathered Birds

had the same star stats and the only distinguisher between a good Silver Feathered Bird and a bad one is probably the Excellence level of the bird. For example, my Silver Feathered Bird had a 47% Excellence which represented it's superiority within the Silver Feathered Birds. But what exactly does the 47% Excellence mean?

In complete silence, I open up the forums to gather intel about this new pet stat, Excellence.

Finally, after a long time i found the appropriate intel.

[Excellence]: Generally speaking, the difference between two pets' stems from the pet's Excellence percentage. A pet's attributes can be calculated through having it's foundation attributes * (1 + Excellence). This means that Excellence determines a pet's potential.

.....

Oh, so in my case, with a superiority of 47%, my Silver Feathered Bird would have 47%(1 + 47%) higher stats than a regular Silver Feathered Birds. But it also raises a larger issue, a pet with an Excellence percentage of 100% would have twice the stats compared to a pet with an Excellence percentage of 0%! Motherfucker, pets that have low Excellence percentages are as good as useless.

I looked at my Silver Feathered Bird's stats again. Because of it's Excellence percentage, this Silver Feathered Bird could only be counted as a middle tiered pet. My fervent joy at sealing this Silver Feathered Bird disappeared with the less than optimal stats of the bird. Whatever, my Bramble Thorn Sword doesn't have much durability left so I should go back to Ba Huang to repair it. At the same time, my inventory is almost full because of the sheer amount of Silver Leaf Herbs that I managed to collect. As for this Silver Feathered Bird, I don't plan to raise its level, it's not because of it's low stats but rather because I need to sell it to raise money to buy the Alchemy Pots for the Silver Leaf Herb!

.....

A recall scroll costs the enormous amount of 1 gold, I might not be able to afford it, but I can run back to Ba Huang.

After dashing all the way back to Ba Huang City, repaired my equipment, I went to the northern square. The northern square was extremely busy, the yells of players trying to advertise their items was deafening.

“Selling a level 9 White Tiered mail armor! It gives 40 points in Defense! It’s a must for knights, swordsmen or monks! At a humble price of 1 silver, do not miss this opportunity!”

“Selling Grass Fruit! Price is 4 Copper Coins per Grass Fruit! It’s a lot cheaper than buying Grass Fruits from NPC stores! Young heros, you should buy one for your girlfriend healers and even if you don’t have a girlfriend this will help you get one!”

Selling a level 5 Black Iron Tiered dagger! It’s attack is 12-15 and adds a point in Agility! Assassins come and see! Selling it for cheap, please tell me how much you think this worth, but if you don’t have 20 Silver Coins, don’t waste my time!”

.....

I looked in my inventory, it seems like I have nothing that would sell well. Instead, I buy 50 Alchemy Pots and refine 50 [Silver Leaf Pill]s. After refining the pills, I place the 50 level 2 pills in front of me, setting the price at 40 Copper Coins each which is cheaper than the prices of NPC stores. I had set up a mini-stall!

Shortly afterwards, I summoned my sealed Silver Feathered Bird. Showing off the stats of the Silver Feathered Bird, I shouted loudly : “Freshly sealed pet, a Silver Feathered Bird that focus’ on attack and agility. It has the skill [Feather Attack]. It definitely is one the best attackers right now! Come now and bid your prices!”

My yell evidently had a huge effect, right after I finished, my stall was surrounded by people who were bidding eye-opening prices –

A level 11 warrior with White-Tiered equipment: “Brother, how about 80 Copper Coins?”

Another level 15 girl healer showed off her quite gruesome body before

saying: “Handsome, I want it! How about 40 Silver Coins? Why don’t you sell it to me? Wait, do you have a girlfriend, if you don’t, you could give it to me as a gift, right?”

The bystanders all started laughing when the healer shamelessly said that. I awkwardly stood there, thinking, even if someone gave a Silver Feathered Bird with 100% Excellence, I still wouldn’t ever be even close to you.

The offers kept coming in but no one offered more than 1 Gold Coin, maybe it’s because it’s because a majority of the money that everyone owned, went to buying potions. Or maybe it’s because monsters only give a couple of Copper Coins on death, thus making the idea of having 10000 Copper Coins unrealistic. But despite all that, I knew that the bird was worth at least 5 Gold Coins, any less than that would be selling it short.

.....

After waiting about 20 minutes, finally, a young gunner came out of the crowd. His arm was covered in a black light, yup, he had a Black Iron tier leather wrist protector. In addition, he was level 18 and his ID was “Run Quickly Little Pig”, this was a real buyer!

After seeing my Silver Feathered Bird, Run Quickly Little Pig’s eyes showed a deep desire but he quickly hid his desire and displayed a bored expression. He wanted to haggle the price down!

I smiled at him: “Hello there, are you interested in buying this?”

“This Silver Feathered Bird, what’s your bottom line? Don’t try to inflate the price!”

My tongue darted over my lips before I replied: “A lot of people want this, you and I both know this. The lowest I’ll go is 5 Gold Coins, any lower and I won’t be selling it. At this time, when no one has a pet, having a pet would allow for the owner to raise his level a lot quicker. You should know this, and therefore, this pet is definitely worth every Copper Coin.”

Run Quickly Little Pig nodded: “Yup, I understand. Can you wait a moment? My boss is coming here right now.”

.....

Soon, the crowd was split by a level 18 swordsmen. With his sword, he immediately came to my stall, laughing: "There really are pets in Ba Huang City? Ha ha, I love my luck, this pet is as good as mine!"

I said: "5 Gold Coins please."

"5 Gold Coins? That's ridiculous!" The swordsman said shockingly, suddenly as if he remembered something, he said: "Fuck, it's you!"

.....

I looked up, at his player ID and also received a shock. In front of my was Tyrant of Western Chu, my good old "friend"...

Shuaaa.

I cleared the stall and smiled at Tyrant: "I'm not selling it anymore!"

"Hey, wait..." Run Quickly Little Pig hurriedly stopped me, saying: "Brother, don't let a little grudge prevent you from doing business. You see, my boss here, really, really wants this pet. Before, you said you wanted 5 Gold Coins, alright it's a deal, 5 Gold Coins for the pet!"

I winced and leaned against the rough City Wall. With my arms folded across my chest, I smiled and said: "If I'm selling to Tyrant of Western Chu, then I want 20 Gold Coins and not a Copper Coin less. Still want to buy it?"

Chapter 16: Mortal's Scroll

“What the hell? 20 Gold Coins?!” The Tyrant of Western Chu was obviously angry, but he done anything to me. It seems like he really wants this Silver Feathered Bird.

On the side, Run Quickly Little Pig whispers: “Ying brother (common name for friends in chinese), we must buy it, you said it before, if we want to stand at the top of Ba Huang City, we need to be one step ahead of others. Look, the number of people under us, our equipment and levels are quite impressive, but we don’t own a pet. This is the first pet to appear within Ba Huang City, so if we buy this Silver Feathered Bird, we would be the first ones to own a pet in Ba Huang City.”

The Western Tyrant gnashes his teeth, saying: “But...But 20 gold coins is too expensive, this guy is clearly trying to take advantage of us!”

Run Quickly Little Pig gave a small laughter: “Brother, with your position and status, do you really care about 20 Gold Coins? Hmpf, I’ll take care of this...”

Tyrant of Western Chu purses his lips and nods: “Mm.”

.....

Piggy quickly spins around, looks towards me and smiles: “Xiao Yao Zi Zai, we will accept your price, 20 Gold Coins, for this Silver Feathered Bird. But, give us 10 minutes to gather the money, as you know, everyone at most carries a few silver coins, and 20 Gold Coins is no small amount.”

I nod, “Alright, I’ll wait for 10 minutes, go!”

“Yes!”

At the same time, my phone rings. Like before, it is forwarded into <<Destiny>>, looking at the number, it’s Wan Er’s...

“Li Xiao Yao. I’m hungry you know...”

“Currently I can’t leave the game, give me 10 minutes okay? I’ll come to the girl’s dorm in 10 minutes, wait for me, okay?”

“Hurry up!”

Ending the call, I continue waiting. Before the 10 minutes are up, Quickly Run Little Pig comes running back. We exchange goods, 20 Gold Coins for me, 1 Silver Feathered Bird for him. Waa, the dazzling sparkle that the Gold Coins give off is really gorgeous. Taking advantage of others whenever I can, damn, that was a vicious deal.

With the trade complete, I no longer have anything to do.

.....

After the Tyrant of Western Chu got his pet, he wanted to kill me. But since, this is a city safe zone, no matter how little IQ he has it can't be that low. So he glares at me with killing intent before picking up his sword and bitterly walking away. He's probably going to level up his new Silver Feathered Bird pet, because a pet without levels is undoubtedly weak.

My situation is a lot easier. Before, there were plenty of Silver-Leafed Herbs in my bag for me to use, the only problem was that I had no Alchemy Furnace and thus no way of refining the herbs. But, now that I have money, I can buy as many Alchemy Furnaces as I want. Every Alchemy Furnace costs 20 copper, and every bottle of Refreshing Water costs 10 copper. I rush to get my Alchemy level up to level 3 before doing anything else. Level 2 potions can sell for 50 copper, so that's a profit of 40 copper, but that amount of profit is nothing. Level 3 potions on the other hand can sell for 5 silvers at the NPC store, this is the way to earn money!

Remember that 1 Gold Coin = 100 Silver Coins = 10000 Copper Coins

.....

Kneeling at a corner of the plaza, I used [Alchemy] 300 times, and finally, my bag is full of level 2 Silver-Leafed pills. At the same time, a “Ding” sound appears, after spending 120 pieces of silver coins, I finally reach level 3!

Ding!

System Notification: Congratulations! Your Alchemy level has risen up to LV-3, and because you are the first LV-3 Alchemist, you receive a reward: Charm +1!

Another point in Charm, nice!

Even leveling up rewards you with charm, this is wonderful. Who knows how much Charm Lang Wan has, she would probably enter the game and have a message pop up:

System Notification: Congratulations! Because you are more beautiful than others with a 34D attractiveness, you receive a reward: Charm +5!

.....

If that happened then I would would definitely quit!

.....

Standing in the plaza, I shout, "FRESHLY MADE LEVEL 2 POTIONS! RECOVERS 100 MANA! ONLY 30 COPPER PER POTION! ON SALE NOW! COME HERE IF YOU WANT TO BUY SOME!"

The surrounding sound immediately drops, and within the crowd, a young girl fiddling with her dagger suddenly stops, and glances towards me. Her look trigger a familiar melody, "Only because the crowd looks at you for a split second more, they will never forget your face. I can only dream if one day we can meet again, I will miss the loneliness..."

"Hey!"

The young girl walks forward, awakening me from my musical world. She looks at me, with a strange glare, "You are quite strange, do you not want to do business? Are you really selling level 2 potions for 30 copper coins each?"

I focus my eyes and look up. Wow, this girl is quite the beauty, although her equipment are all white tiered, and the ups and downs of her body is very charming. Her dagger looks like a Black Iron, and her face is really beautiful, mm, it's a minimal of 8 points, at the same time, there are words floating on top of her head, almost trying to say, "Do not anger her"... This is a rose with thorns---

ID: Yue Qin Qian [LV-19] Trainee Assassin

.....

Level 19 assassin, she probably has no difficulty in killing the my level 16 healer that only has cloth armors. I can't anger her, can't anger her, I must improve my attitude!

A radiant smile appears on my handsome face, I lower my head to look at her and ask, "Yep, 30 copper coins per potion. How many would you like?"

Qing Qian smiles, "That's good, I'll take as many as you have!"

I look into my bag. I have a total of 300 bottles, but I need 50 for personal use, so I say, "I have a total of 250, do you really want them all?"

"Yes, give them all to me!"

"Okay!"

I open the trade window, put in 250 bottles of potion, and Qing Qian also quickly puts in 75 silver coins, and says with a sweet smile, "Thank you!"

"You're welcome!"

I turn around and prepare to leave, but she stops me, "Wait, where are you heading?"

I turn my head and ask, "Hm, why?"

Qing Qian tilts her head while looking at me, and smiles, "How about this, add me as a friend, and in the future if you have any high-leveled potions, tell me and I'll buy them. I will always need them."

I am a bit surprised, "You are an assassin, do you really need this many potions?"

"Oops, I forgot about self introductions. Actually, I am a manager level personnel from Prague Guild. My Position is Deputy Chief Officer. Prague's Guild, you've heard of it before right?"

I nod my head, "Mm, I've heard of it, in <<Conquest>> there's also a

guild called that, it was one of the top 10 guilds in the country.”

“Mm, that’s good. ” Qing Qian looks deeply at me, “If you created that many level 2 potions, your alchemy level must be level 3 right? Sooner or later, we will have a great need for level 3 potions, how about...how about you join our guild, and become our head alchemist? We...”

She smiles shyly, “We have a lot of benefits~”

I breathe deeply to fight against the temptation, “No thanks, I like running around solo, and I don’t like having restriction from guilds. Especially a big guild like yours, where I need to follow orders from above. I am a person who enjoys going around solo.”

Qing Qian pouts her mouth, with a regrettably-looking smile, “That’s fine, I won’t try and force you, since we are friends from now on. If you have anything you want from my guild, feel free to contact me!”

“Mm, thanks!”

“OK, then I’m off...” Qing Qian turns and walks a few steps, then suddenly turns around and whispers, “Xiao Yao, I will remember you, from now on we’re friends....”

“Okay.....”

.....

I stand there with my heart pumping dangerously fast, and silently cursing myself for being useless, then I start to do my own things.

The Prague’s Guild, they certainly know what they’re doing, using such a beauty to draw people in. Who knows how many players were charmed and joined the Prague’s Guild. It must not be a small amount. Sadly, it is ineffective against me since these days I’ve been following the out-of-this-world beauties Ling Wan Er and Dong Cheng Yue around. Because of that, my immune level against these powerful beauties have been greatly increased!

Looking at the time, 10 minutes has passed already! Crap, disconnect quickly!

As I flew towards the girl's dorm, from far away, Ling Wan Er looks at me and stomps her feet, "Arg, Li Xiao Yao, you useless **** had us standing for 11 minutes!"

Dong Cheng Yue smiles lightly, "He must have had something busy in the game right? Or else he wouldn't have let you stand around..."

I walk up and say, "Sorry I'm late, I was busy in the game!"

Lang Wan mocks, "Oh? You just reached level 10, what could you have been busy with? Were you trying to get a girlfriend by guiding level 1 girls around?"

I cough, "Oh you think too much. I was just creating some level 2 mana potions and doing business..."

"Creating potions?" Wan Er had her eyes wide open looking at me, "You finished the starting quests for being an Alchemist?"

"Ohh? What about it?" I look at the beautiful Miss, "Have you not finished it?"

Wan Er's face became red, a rare expression, and doesn't look at me anymore. Even my own heart wavers by this little girl's behaviour. It would be great if she kept this face.

Cheng Yue teases her as well, "Wan Er wanted to become a pharmacist, but when answering the instructor's questions, she answered all three of them wrong, so now she has to wait until tomorrow to try again..."

I tighten my face, since I'm afraid if I laugh out loud I would probably get killed by Wan Er.

Wan Er faintly glanced at me, "If you want to laugh then laugh, we wouldn't want you to hurt yourself, would we?"

I wipe away some tears, "Nothing of that sort! I just thought that m'lady is so smart, the system must have been bugged for you to get the answers wrong...."

Ling Wan Er: "See, even he knows. Like I said, there must have been a bug..."

Cheng Yue says, “Ah...I feel like my IQ will get dropped by you two, let’s go and eat....”

.....

With a table full of food, the three of us sit around it and eat.

“Li Xiao Yao, how are the monsters around Ba Huang City, is there anything special about them?” Wan Er looks at me, and adds another sentence, “Oh, I’m not talking about the monsters above level 15, only the ones under level 15, since I know you can’t possibly beat anything past level 15...”

My mouth twitched slightly, “...I’m already level 15...”

Cheng Yue’s mouth opened slightly, “Wow, your level is increasing pretty fast! You already reached level 15 after this short amount of time!”

I laugh a bit, “I haven’t been to the other cities, but I would guess it’s probably the same right? The special thing about Ba Huang City is the city badge, which is <Let the Blood Spill over Ba Huang>, attack and defense +3%.”

“Ah? There’s a city-wide buff?” Wan Er opened her attractive small mouth.

I was shocked, “Don’t tell me that you’ve haven’t went and gotten a city badge?”

“We really didn’t...”

I opened up my cellphone, searched around for a bit, and said, “Ah, Fan Shu’s city emblem, every player receives an undroppable <Mortal’s Scroll>. <Mortal’s Scroll>’s effect is absorbing your online time’s energy, converting it into EXP and gives it to the player. In other words, players from Fan Shu should be leveling up the quickest.”

Wan Er silently eats her rice, whining, “When we get back let’s get the <Mortal’s Scroll>. I’m so pissed. I was wondering why that barbaric knight that we just pk’ed had a floating scroll on his arm...”

Chapter 17: Seven-Star Herb

In Ba Huang City, on the crowded eastern exit of the plaza, I carried my newly repaired Bramble Thorn Sword and parted through the crowd. I've decided that I have to reach level 18 soon, preferably by the end of this morning, and reach level 20 as quickly as possible reach, so that I can be recognized in my occupation.

After a player is recognized for his occupation, he can use new skills specific to his occupation. For example, as a trainee healer, the skills available are limited to [Hemostasis] and [Encourage], then after graduating from a trainee, they can also learn to use skills like [Heal] and [Therapy], etc. The good thing about [Heal] is, at level 1 it recovers 150 HP, at level 2 it recovers 300 HP, it's triple the effect that Hemostasis has!

So I walked out the city gate and took a look at the mini-map. I can't raise my level by wandering mindlessly. So, since I also need to pick level 3 herbs to make level 3 pills. The level 3 potions created from [Alchemy] by a player can recover 200 MP, while the level 3 pills sold by the NPCs can only recover 150 MP, and they sell for 5 silver coins. So, it is quite worth to buy the potions created by a player This is a quite a rare business chance! According to Yue Qing Qian, it seems like no one in Ba Huang City has reached level 3 in [Alchemy], so it seems I am the only one, yep, this is a one in a lifetime chance!

.....

【Seven-Star Pill】: Recovers 200 MP, Seven-Star Herb x3, Refined Water x3, Alchemy Furnace x1

The main ingredient for level 3 pills are Seven-Star Herbs. They usually grow deep within Clear Rainforest. In addition, within the rainforest, there is a valley called the Seven-Star Valley. Unsurprisingly the majority Seven-Star Herbs can be found within that valley, and the distance from the city to the valley is about 30 minutes. Usually players are unwilling to go that far, just to fight monsters, and even if they do go, they find a group to party with, since if there are many high leveled monsters there.

Sha sha, the breeze rattled through the leaves, disturbing the serene grace of the forest. Follow the narrow path, I slow down and take a look at stats. I'm at Level 16, 250 HP, 177 attack. I should be able to solo the monsters Seven-Star Valley.

Taking care to avoid the level 15 Silver-Feathered Birds, they didn't give much experience and would only dull my blade. With Bramble Thorn Sword hidden within my cloth clothing, the appearance of me, a cloth profession holding a heavy sword, is quite humorous.

After 20 or so minutes, I look around and see a slope towards a valley. My mini-map is also showing that I'm right next to Seven-Star Valley. Hooray, I have arrived!

As I take out my sword and prepare to dash into the valley, I suddenly hear sounds coming from the other side of the forest.

"Get your act together guys! We have arrived at the Seven-Star Valley. This is our first group activity, no excuses will be tolerated!"

Crap, I better hide!

As I hide behind some trees, a total of 10 people come out the forest. The leader of the party is holding a sword on one hand, with shiny dark armour covering his body. Then I become thunderstruck at what I see. It's Tyrant of Western Chu, level 19, and the players in his party seem to be his underlings. In fact, Piggy comes running up Tyrant of Western Chu. In addition, there are two elf archers, flying 20 yards off the ground, overseeing the area.

I hold my breath and dare not to say anything..

On the shoulder of Tyrant of Western Chu is the Silver-Feathered Bird pet. Incredibly, it's already level 16. The speed at which pets level up is pretty quick, huh?

.....

Tyrant of Western Chu turns around to talk to the approaching Piggy, "Piggy, are you sure there's a boss in this Seven-Star Valley?"

“Yes boss. At 6 am this morning, one of my friends was killed by the boss here. The monsters in Seven-Star Valley have really high levels, so we need to be careful since we didn’t bring enough healers this time.”

“Oh? Two healers is not enough?”

“Ehh, how should I say it. Killing bosses places a lot of stress on the healers, they need to use Hemostasis carefully or our casualties will be every serious. Looking at a replay of the player you guys killed, that Xiao Yao healer, he performed Hemostasis really well, if we have two healers with that kind of control, then killing this level 20 White-ranked boss would be a piece of cake.”

“Don’t you dare mention Xiao Yao Zi Zai. Next time I see him, I swear I will skin him alive, and take back my Bramble Thorn Sword. That sword has 35 attack on it! The one that I use now only has 21 attack...”

“Boss, if we want to stand on top of Ba Huang City, we need to find players with potential such as Xiao Yao. As you know, guilds such as the Prague’s, the Flying Dragon’s are also settling in Ba Huang City. We have quite a lot of rivals, and even though we had 200+ players, it may not be enough anymore. ”

“I know, I’ll pay attention. But if this Xiao Yao comes out, I’ll be sure to kill him, just you wait and see!”

“.....”

.....

I watched Tyrant of Western Chu’s group go into the valley from afar and waited until I could no longer see them anymore. Since they have two elves flying around, I can be spotted easily. I’m quite doubtful I can win a 1v1 against Tyrant of Western Chu, and with his group of 10 people, there is no doubt that I will die instantly.

After waiting ten minutes, I take my Bramble Thorn Sword and enter the Seven-Star Valley. This valley is quite large, so it’s quite easy to avoid Tyrant of Western Chu’s group and find herbs. You know what they say: Less PKing, more monster eliminating, only then shall your level keep

escalating!

Stepping on a pile of crumbled rocks at the valley's entrance, I stick my head forward and look into the valley. It seems that the entire Seven-Star Valley is windy, and there is no shortage of high-leveled monsters within it. 10 meters away from me, there's seems to be a group of wolf monsters. One of the large wolf, whose body is covered with red fur and strangely, green grass, growls menacingly at me. Its level isn't low either...

【Wild Wolf】 (Normal Monster)

Level: 18

Attack: 77-100

Defense: 30

Health: 500

Skill: 【Whirling Claws (LV-2)】

Description: Wild Wolves, a group of creatures that occupy the wilderness, seen to attack players and pets. Although Ba Huang City sends troops to annihilate them long ago, the Wild Wolves still go on abnormal rampages around Ba Huang City.

.....

Looking at the creature's attributes, I'm a bit shocked. It's obvious that I can't fight this, no, it wouldn't even be a fight, it would be a one-sided massacre and obviously not in my favor. With an attack of 100, my cloth armor defense has no way of holding up. So I grab my Bramble Thorn Sword and go around the bushes, then I turn slightly right and go straight towards the middle plain of the valley. This way I'll avoid the hordes of creatures in the forest.

Far away, in the open grassland, Tyrant of Western Chu and his 10-man team are killing monsters. He shouts out, then a golden hexagram glows and hovers over the edge of his sword. Sha sha! The Wild Wolf receives a combo of two slices and loses almost 300 HP. it makes me jealous looking at the special combo moves that Tyrant of Western Chu has, it's both

elegant and powerful, unlike himself.

Looking at my own skills, other than [Turmoil Sword], the rest of my skills are centered around healing and buffs. If I want a main attack move, then I need to create a new skill. Thankfully, it's possible within this game. But, creating skills is no easy feat, if you don't have enough experience or practice, you can't create one. By my estimates, only 2 or 3 players in the entire game have made unique skills.

Whatever, money comes first. As long as I have an active and strong heart, this era belongs to me!...

I avoid Tyrant of Western Chu's training group like the plague, and enter the eastern region of the Seven-Star Valley. Stepping on the soft moist grass, I have a slow walk in the jungle. Of course, I would like to be anywhere but there in the jungle where wolves could ambush me at every angle but I have to be in the jungle to get the Seven-Star Herbs. There's a saying for this, no danger means no gain. Before long, I see dots of lustre on top of the rocks that are in front of me. Awesome! So I race ahead, and indeed, on top of the rock is a seven-coloured herb, growing like grapes on a vine. It's the level 3 Seven-Star Herb!

After picking countless amounts of Silver-Leaf Herbs, my [Herb-Picking] skill was already level 3. I take out my shovel, carefully trace along the roots of the Seven-Star Herb, and gently dig it out. This is a basic herb picking technique, in various books that I read before, they also say: "The sap of plants come from the roots". A lot of medicine use roots as its ingredients, the same should probably be able to be applied to the Seven-Star Herbs in front of me, and..done!

After digging the herb out, a sound rings—

Ding!

System Notification: Congratulations! You have collected 【Seven-Star Herb】x2

Indeed, if you pick up the herbs with the roots, you get double the amount. Looks like my magnificent plan to create level 3 pills is no longer so far away now!

.....

While I still absorbed in the frenzy of uprooting the Seven-Star Herbs, I heard a low growl behind me. Grrrr! On instinct, I drop the shovel and spin around. Holy crap! A Wild Wolf was about 10 meters away and ready to pounce.

Raising my hand, I draw my Bramble Thorn Sword. [Turmoil Sword] immediately activates, giving me an extra 10% attack damage, which is currently +11.7 attack. When I level up later and get better gear, this 10% bonus attack damage will become more useful but it's still quite an impressive skill right now. With such a great effect, [Turmoil Sword] deserves its rank of being an rank SS skill. The SS rank is inferior only to the SSS rank, so it should be a near God-Tier skill right?

I go and slash at the wolf. The Bramble Thorn Sword arcs through the air and lands on head of the Wild Wolf. Ouch!

“142!”

Good attack! At the same time, the wolf jumps and also slashes at me with his claws. Weirdly, there's some sort of red glow on the tip of its claws. Wait! It's【Whirling Claws (LV-2)】. Before I can finish my thought, the wolf's claws reach my shoulder, gifting me with a wave of pain. I assure you that the pain was not fake, it felt like my shoulder just got hit by a brick. At the same time, my HP also dropped by 119 points!

I wave my hand to cast Hemostasis which recovers 100 of my HP. At the same time, I continue to attack, two continuous strikes. Although they both are solid hits, I don't push on it and prepare my legs to dodge when the Wild Wolf attacks. After eating the two attacks, the wolf suddenly pounces. Should I dodge left, right, LEFT. But I didn't dodge completely, even though I could have sworn that I dodged the attack, my speed was lacking and the hit glanced off me. I lost 71 HP, looks like this won't be too hard as long as the wolf doesn't use his skill too much.

Every time the wolf attacks, I leap away trying to dodge its attacks, but I fail time after time because of my lack of speed, and finally I give up trying to dodge. The Wild Wolf's agility is high, far higher than mine, and

even if I dodge earlier, I would still get hit because the wolf would see me shifting and change it's attack accordingly. I'm not going to bother anymore, I'll attack it straight on...

.....

I hear the wolf cry Wuuu. A final howl before it drops dead beside me. I pick up the coins, and turn to leave, it was tough beating it, but I must move on, there's money around here, I can smell it.

After picking quite a few Seven-Star Herbs, I realize that the Seven-Star Herbs only grow on rocks, so in the valley, I circle around the scattered rocks, trying to find stalks of Seven-Star Herbs. If my luck hold up, I shouldn't run into Tyrant of Western Chu's group.

Chapter 18: It's a Small World

In the mountain valley, I stood on top of the warm corpse of a huge wolf.

Opening the [Alchemy] menu, I selected the Seven Star Pill's recipe. The recipe required 3 Seven Star Herbs, 3 bottles of Refined Water and finally an Alchemy Furnace. Since I had all the materials necessary, all that's left was for me to confirm the refinement.

Ding!

System Notification: You have succeeded in refining a【Seven Star Pill】. Your [Alchemy] proficiency has increased by 1. Because you are the first player to refine a Seven Star Pill, you are rewarded with an extra point in charm.

.....

Great! I earned a point in my charm stat. Although I still do not know what the charm stat does, surely it's something useful. Also, since I won't be the first player to reach level 20, or the first to have a level 3 attack combo, I can only strive to be number one in [Alchemy]. At least for now, I'm unrivaled in the art of [Alchemy] which is heartwarming.

Putting away the Seven Star Pills and taking hold of my Bramble Thorn sword, I kept moving forward. Along the way, I kill the attacking wolves and gather the scattered Seven-Star Herbs that don't appear as often as I would like them to appear. While my efficiency isn't at it's maximum, the gains from the grinding is quite welcoming.

After nearly 2 hours, I had gathered over 112 batches of Seven-Star Herbs, But if I want to achieve level 4 in [Alchemy], I would need to refine 1000 Seven-Star Pills. The materials that go behind refining 1000 Seven-Star Pills are staggering. I would need 3000 batches of Seven-Star Herbs, in addition to 1000 Alchemy Furnaces and another 3000 bottles of Refined water. This is one of the reasons as to why top guilds are able to have first class production players. The casual player simply cannot afford to compete with such harsh resource requirements.

While being in a guild has its advantages, my own advantages are also quite significant. I can fight monsters and heal myself at the same time. The only consumables that I require are mana pills which I produce myself. So, I'm basically a self sufficient production line. In addition, after selling the Silver-Feathered Bird, I gained 20 Gold Coins, an incredible amount of wealth, which will be my fund for the materials that are vital in my level raising in [Alchemy].

.....

Continuing forward, I reached the center of the Seven-Star Valley. At the center, the grass that was abundant before, became scarce. In addition, I hear a wave of howling from in front of me.. When I climb on top of a short hill to locate the source of howling, the scene in front completely shocks me. At least 100 level 18 wolves were proudly howling towards the sky. In the middle of the howling wolves, there was a wolf that had golden fur covering its body. Undoubtedly, that was the Wolf King, a level 20 Gold-ranked boss, sitting there arrogantly. Behind it, there's a large cave. Without a doubt, that cave is the Wolf King's nest.

I licked my lips, and thought if the Wolf King has this many underlings guarding it, then I shouldn't even think about fighting the Wolf King. But on the other hand, the Wolf King's nest could be worth investigating, who knows, maybe there could be some special herbs inside? But if I just stroll on in, I would be the next meal for the wolves in front of the cave. Maybe I should see if I can enter through an alternative "entrance" above the cave?

Scaling the mossy rocks, I discover that the Seven-Star Herbs are grown more and more densely as I get closer to the Wolf's cave. Careful not to let a single herb go to waste, within 10 minutes, I've picked over 100 batches of Seven-Starred Herbs!

Ka cha!

I carefully wedge my Bramble Thorn Sword into the surrounding rocks, and gently excavate the Seven-Star Herbs as if the herbs were my own children.

Sha sha!

As I pulled up the roots of a Seven-Star Herb, suddenly the grass and dirt around it slide down. They all slid into beyond my sight with a Sha sha sound. Did I dig through the cave?

With utmost caution and a trembling heart, I kneel down and peek into the hole that I made. Faintly, a string of light appears within the remaining sediment. Could it be that this hole connects to the Wolf King's nest? There might be a chance for me to go into its nest! Wouldn't the nest of a level 20 Gold-ranked boss have tons of precious treasures?

My heart is pumping like there's no tomorrow... Hehe, my chance has come!

I take my Bramble Thorn Sword, and I start digging my way towards the cave. The small hole that I peeked through is becoming bigger and bigger, and before long, the dirt started to drop down by its own, and a small hole appears.

Bam!

The tip of the sword strikes a rock, instantly, a Peng sound rings and a soccer-sized rock falls down and hits one of the Wild Wolves in the cave. At the same time, the entire hill trembles, making me hang on to the hole I made with bone-white hands. After carefully examining the cave, the cave seems just like the weak Lego castles that children make. A bit of shaking, another hole, and I fear that the whole cave might collapse on its own. I don't want to see that happen.

Suddenly, I hear unnatural sounds, it's almost as if... players! The noise was made by players!

I quickly hide behind some rocks, and peek out. Coming out the forest is a group of players, and just not any group, it's the Tyrant of Western Chu's group! Finally, they've killed the surrounding Wolves, and advanced towards the Wolf King. In fact, Tyrant of Western Chu is at level 20! A swordsman at level 20, I wouldn't want to mess with him!

Looks like this party wants to clear a way to kill the Wolf King.

Their team composition is very well balanced. Within the party, there is are two level 19 Monks with high HP and high Defense who would act as the front line, two Magicians that provide DPS, two elf archers, two healers, Piggy with a gun, and the leader as well. For this party, killing this level 20 Gold-ranked boss shouldn't be too hard for them.

I make a quick decision, I'm not going to meddle with their affairs. I'll enter the Wolf's nest first, since I can see there are plenty of Seven-Star Herbs in there. After all, my main responsibility right now is to increase my proficiency in [Alchemy], everything else comes second. The main purpose of my trip to this valley was to collect Seven-Star Herbs, and not to interrupt Tyrant of Western Chu's plans. I gain nothing by doing so. Besides, I am not the type of person to hold a grudge for a long time. Even though Western Tyrant has harmed me before, why should I care about his lowly life now? Hmph, just wait until I create a SSS level attack .. then I'll have a showdown with him...

.....

Pa!

I jump down, and land gently on the inside the cave. A Wild Wolf near me quickly rushes up to kill me, sorry, rushing to its death is what I meant. With my Bramble Thorn Sword, I kill it with 4 strikes. Afterwards, I look around, unfortunately, my sight isn't adjusted to the darkness. After about half a minute, my eyes finally adjust, and when I look more carefully, I see that the cave has a few more Wild Wolves, but more importantly, the walls have enough Seven-Starred Herbs to make me drool! I better quickly collect them!

5 minutes later, I killed 10 or so Wild Wolves, and even though their attack damage is very high, as long as I keep proper HP management, it'll be very hard for them to kill me. I can both heal and attack at the same time, I'm the Unbeatable Healer Swordsman!

After finishing off the Wild Wolves, I take out my shovel, and carefully collect the Seven-Star Herbs littered in the Wolf King's nest. After nearly an hour, I completely wiped out the populations of Seven-Star Herbs

within the cave, collecting near 2000 batches of the herb, my picking efficiency is godly! Just a bit more and I'll be able to raise my [Alchemy] level to 4, but sadly I don't have the supply of Seven-Star Herbs has been exhausted by me.

Continuing deeper in the cave, it seems to be no treasure within the cave. At least that's what the bones on Wolf King's resting place, and some smelly feces tell me... As a member of the royalty, why would you put the toilet next to the bedroom!?

.....

I spin around and prepared to leave, my mission is complete!

At the same time, I can hear a really intense battle happening outside the cave. Pinning myself against the cave wall, I take a peek outside. Woah, the Wolf underlings, about a hundred, had all been killed, and now Tyrant of Western Chu's group just started to battle the boss. The Monk who's holding a wooden rod get a "X" scratch on his face. Seeing the considerable damage from that attack, the two healers clumsily hurry to heal him. At the same time, the magicians keep launching their fireball, dwindling the Wolf King's health. Currently Wolf King's health is around 10000, and is slowly but surely decreasing. I'm guessing in about 5 minutes the Wolf King will lose his life.

Standing at the entrance of the cave, I think about my situation. If I dash out now, I am certain I'll get seen, then I'll die very painfully because of Tyrant of Western Chu's hatred for me. But if I let them kill the Wolf King, the chances are that they would leave after defeating it. So I just need to wait a bit longer...

.....

Grrrr!

I hear the angry cry of the Wolf King. Obviously it's enraged with its claws flying left and right taking the monk's HP to about 20% or so, but the healers, clumsy but reliable, quickly recover his health before he takes another hit from the Wolf King. On the other side, the Wolf King who doesn't have any healers, has its health reduced to about 10%, 1000

HP.

Piggy smiled when he saw the end in sight: “Haha, good job guys! Let’s finish this up!”

“I expect some Gold-tier equipment from killing this boss!” Tyrant of Western Chu was also quite excited.

“Don’t joke around boss, the first Silver-tier equipment haven’t come out yet, and even the first Bronze-tier equipment haven’t come out yet, the best equipment in Ba-Huang City are Green-tier equipments, and you’re thinking about Gold-tier?”

“Ha! Let’s kill it then we’ll know!”

But at this time, the Golden Wolf King growls with anger, its fully body starts to emit a blood-red glow!

.....

“Wha.. The boss is in a frenzy?!” Tyrant of Western Chu, readied his weapon, preparing for the vicious assault of the Wolf King.

Who would have guessed... The Wolf King spun around and went straight into the cave!

“It’s not going into a frenzy, it’s escaping! Hurry and chase it!”

I was shocked as well, the Wolf King flashed straight past me and went into the depths of the cave. Such a coward... When you can’t win, you just go into the cave and hide?

.....

Tyrant of Western Chu comes chasing after the Wolf King, and when he sees me, his whole face becomes livid with anger.

“The Xiao Yao bastard is here! Kill him!!”

Whir...

With his sword arm shaking from his anger, a golden hexagram starts to form at the edge of his sword! The attack is coming!

.....

Shasha!

The skill finishes in an instant, and while Tyrant of Western Chu's attack was very powerful, in the split second before it came down, I understood its path and dodged with my quick feet. A huge "MISS" pops up at my previous position. I successfully dodged the first strike! This is the instinct that I've gained from these few days from trying to read the movements of the wolves, subconsciously, I was forming a dodging skill!

"MISS!"

"145!"

Unfortunately, I could only dodge one of the two strike from his combo. The sword mercilessly hits, and my soul nearly breaks. Tyrant of Western Chu's damage is a bit too high isn't it? If he landed that combo, I would have already been dead!

.....

Shasha...

The unsteady ground in the cave sinks slightly from our weight. Unlike Tyrant of Western Chu, whose eyes haven't gotten used to the darkness, I can see the two Wild Wolves approaching Tyrant of Western Chu! My chance has come!

Chapter 19: Bloody Dagger

Roar!

The two Wild Wolves leap towards Tyrant of Western Chu's back. Since he was the closest to the Wolves, it's only natural that he becomes the target for their attacks. After using [Hemostasis] on myself, I take my Bramble Thorn Sword and rush ahead to attack Tyrant of Western Chu as well. I slice horizontally with an ordinary sword attack, but I am lacking in practice....

Whoosh

"95!"

Tyrant of Western Chu's HP decreased by a chunk, and in addition the two Wild Wolves behind me also raises their claws and used [Whirling Claws] LV-2. Tyrant of Western Chu's health immediately drops into the red zone, and his face turns into a shade of deep purple. Knowing that he is at a disadvantage, he turns around and run,

"Healers!" yells Tyrant of Western Chu.

His two healers quickly runs towards him. Crap, I'd better not let these two healers heal him, or else I won't have any chance in winning!

I lower my sword and quickly chase after Tyrant of Western Chu. One of the healers rushed up to him, and the staff started glowing to heal Tyrant of Western Chu, but I quickly catch up and slice towards the healer's neck with my Bramble Thorn Sword.

Whoosh!

"274!"

A critical hit, instant death!

Ding!

System Notification: You have killed player [Drizzling Rain]. Sin +100 points, you've become a "Chaotic Player"!

.....

“You...Xiao Yao you bastard!” says Tyrant of Western Chu, full of anger.

I don't bother responding to him, and after taking a hit from Tyrant of Western Chu, I quickly cast [Hemostasis], and run towards the second healer with my Bramble Thorn Sword. I slice towards the healer's chest, and the damage shows as “161”. With cloth armor and only investing stat points in magic, the healer is defenseless against my attack. After 1.5 seconds, I quickly slice again. The healer can only stand there shocked, without any thoughts of healing herself, and dies with a cry.

Bang!

I hear a gunshot sound, and immediately afterwards, Piggy enters my vision, running with a gun in his hands. He shoots me from afar and takes out 74 Health Points. At the same time, Tyrant of Western Chu comes and attacks me with a powerful strike!

“!!!”

I quickly withdraw, and keep running back. I use the familiar terrain to my advantage, and run into the flat-grounded cave. At the moment when Tyrant of Western Chu's group enters the cave, they'll see nothing but pitch darkness. While they cannot see me, I will take this chance and escape!

“Boss...”

The two elf archers also rushed with Tyrant. I take advantage of their blindness, and with a raise of my sword, I slashed twice, and finished one off. Simultaneously, an arrow appears in my chest, and my Health becomes next to nothing. My mana pool has almost reached its limits, so I cannot cast [Hemostasis] anymore. Well, I already killed 3 people, there's no need to go any further, or else this will get ugly!

Tyrant of Western Chu's vision adjusts to the darkness and he comes running and shouting after me.

“Xiao Yao you bastard! Stand still, I will cut and burn you until nothing but ashes remain!!”

I grin a bit. Well since it's come to this, you can't blame my heart for

being so ruthless...

Pa!

I parkour step on the walls and spring into the air. In the air, I squeeze myself through gap between the rocks where I came down earlier. Down below, Tyrant of the Western Chu's group, a total of 7 people, chases after me. With their killing intent, my skin started to get goosebumps.

.....

I escape the cave, and emerges into the blinding sun. I quickly spin around and use my sword to hammer on the moss rocks. From my experience before, this is an important pressure point for the cave, and it seems to support the entire cave.

Bam!

Sparks fly out, and the rock completely crumbles under my sharp Bramble Thorn Sword. Following that, the rocks around it start to collapse into the cave, what a scene!

BAMBAMBAM!

The entire hill deforms in a split second, and dust goes in every direction from the Wolf King's nest. In the blink of an eye, the Wolf King's nest has been completely crushed by the hill's collapse. After I wobble on top of the sinking hill, I slide down onto the collapsed cave. At the same time, I hear cries from under my feet. Tyrant of Western Chu, Piggy, and all the others got crushed by the rocks, and were now dead!

In the same instant, I hear a system announcement—

Ding!

System Notification: The first Gold-ranked Boss [Bloody Wolf King] has been killed by player [XXXX] via a special method. As a reward, the player gains 3 charm!

[XXXX]? Who's that? I think and look around...Oh! I have 5 charm now, so that player is me! Sadly, since I didn't kill it manually, I didn't get any experience points, or else I would have risen from level 18 to level 20, or

maybe level 21, or even possibly level 22....

Tyrant of Western Chu's groups have died, and they would need about 10 minutes or so to revive. I should scam before they revive. Oh wait! I still have one more thing to do!

I pick up my Bramble Thorn Sword and run towards the Wolf King's corpse. I still haven't picked up the items that the Wolf King dropped, and I can't possibly be wasteful like this, these treasures are the rewards for my bravery and intelligence...

I quickly savage the area, and after 3 minutes, I noticed some gold fur under a pile of rocks. Chipping away at the rocks for a bit longer, I see the Wolf King's corpse. I flip the corpse, and I see two dropped items, plus a reward of 2 gold coins! I'm rich baby~

Picking up the gold coins and the equipment, I can see a dagger that has a reddish-tint suffused over it. The other equipment is a green leather chestplate. It looks pretty good, and with a flick of my wrist, a window appears with the statistics of my new equipment—

[Bloody Dagger] (Green equipment)

Attack: 55-90

Agility: +5

Others: Increases the instant-kill rate by 0.1%

Level Required: 20

[Green Chestplate] (Green equipment)

Defense: +17

Strength +4

Level Required: 20

.....

My mood instantly turns great, my goodness, who knew that the boss would drop two Green-ranked equipment? Although its not Silver-ranked, it is still a lot stronger than Black-Iron Ranked equipment that I have. In

addition it is a level 20 Green equipment, and to the top players that are around level 20 right now, it is a priceless artifact! I'm rich again baby~

<<Note: [Destiny]'s equipment ranking is as follows: Black Iron -> Green -> Bronze -> Silver -> Gold -> Purple -> Emperor -> Sacred -> Saint -> Divine -> God>>

I put away the Bloody Dagger and the green chestplate in my bag, and I take my Bramble Thorn Sword to prepare to leave. Going along the mountains and blending into the forest, I disappear in an instant. Even if Tyrant of Western Chu's group revives, they will have no chance of finding me, since the Seven-Starred Valley is enormous. They can't split up and try to find me, because they can't defeat the level 18-20 monsters individually, so they can only move together or else it's game over for them.

But, the boss and the drops have been stolen, plus they all dropped one level. Looking at Tyrant of Western Chu's short temper, I think with every fibre of his being, he really wants to cut and burn me until nothing but ashes remain...

Indeed, before long, a paid System Announcement is transmitted through the air—

Ding!

System Announcement (Tyrant of Western Chu speaking): "Xiao Yao Zi Zai! You better remember today's events you bastard! You are not only angering me, you are making an enemy of the entire [Wrath of the Heroes] guild! Just you watch, I will personally wipe you away from the face of the earth, and on that day, you will deeply regret your actions today!"

This player speaker system is pretty effective huh. 10,000 yuan (~\$1600) to speak once, this guy must be pretty damn rich!

Well, since my name is in red because I killed players, I need to continue killing monsters. Every monster kill reduces my sin point by one, so I after 300 monsters kills my name will return to normal. But whatever, this suits me fine, I can level up while I kill monsters!

.....

But, before long, I hear a drop sound. It's a message from a friend, and I only have one person on my friends list. The extremely beautiful, the charming, assassin Yue Qing Qian, Deputy Chief of the Prague's Guild.

"My friend Xiao Yao, what have you done to anger these insane people from [Wrath of the Heroes]?" asks Qing Qian.

After thinking for a while, I give her a reply. "We had a small argument back at the starting village, and just now we had some slight problems in the area around Ba Huang City."

"It seems that you haven't dropped any levels. You killed them?" she asks again.

"Yeah, I killed two healers, one archer." (Xiao Yao)

Qing Qian seems pretty surprised. "Wow! Very impressive. If I'm not mistaken, you are also a healer. What kind of attack allowed you to take out three of them? Last time I saw you, you were wearing a sword on your belt. Tell me, what kind of healer also uses a sword?"

I smile a bit. "Well...I am a person who doesn't go by the standards, so I took the Berserk Healer route, all my points are put into strength."

"I see, I see. You really are one strange fellow. Oh yeah, how's your alchemy level?"

"It is level 3 now, I've already started making level 3 pills."

"Ah good." She sends that with a smile-emoticon, and continues. "Then I'll put an order down. Level 3 pills, at least 1000 batches, can you provide it?"

"Yep, no problem. 1000 batches. But, the Seven-Starred Pills recover 200 MP, 50 MP more than what they sell at the NPC store. So looking at the price, I will sell it at 5 silver coins per pill, same price at the NPC store. I'll let you know when I have everything prepared."

"Okay, no problem. I'm going to go now, you go on and play. But be careful, if you die while having a red name, you will drop a lot of your

materials and equipment.”

“Don’t worry. Oh yeah, I still have two more items, would you have any interest in them?”

“What are they?”

I send the pictures and attributes of the Bloody Dagger and the green chestplate to her, and after a few seconds, she sends me a call request.

“Wow! How did you get your hands on these Green-ranked equipment?” she asks with a voice full of excitement.

“Trade secret. If this gets out, I can’t do anymore business can I? Do you have any interest in these?” I reply with a smile.

Of course I do! Level 20 Green-ranked dagger, this could be the first ever Green-ranked equipment! I do want it and you can give me a price, but throw in a discount in name of our friendship!”

“Fine...” I go quiet for a second to think. “The Bloody Dagger will be a bit expensive though...How about this, I’ll sell you the dagger for 5 gold, plus the chest plate for 2 gold. A total of 7 gold, it shouldn’t be expensive right?”

“Yep, deal!” Her eyes seemed to twinkle when she finished up the deal in call window.

“Okay, when I finish killing the monsters to clear my red name and return, I’ll get these to you.”

“Okay!” Qian Qing says with a smile, but quickly adds another sentence. “Wait! Xiao Yao, you are a kind person...”

“Thanks, you are kind as well...”

“Yep, we are both good people...”

“.....”

.....

Chapter 20: My First Earnings

Ca!

My Bramble Thorn Sword slices through the neck of the Wild Wolf, and the later falls to the ground with a stream of light. I don't even know how many monsters I've killed, but I'm level 19 now, one step closer to the important promotion of level 20! At the same time, I've collected many different cloth armor, but the defense that even the best cloth armor gives is uncomparable to the powerful attacks of the Wild Wolves.

At the same time, I look through my skill window. Up until now, it seems like no one understands the concept on how to make their own skill. There is a simple reason for this. Everyone is bad. Well, to be honest, if custom skills were easily made, this game world would be in complete chaos right now.

After carefully looking through the requirements for creating a combo skill, I realized quite a few things. A combo skill is a skill that effectively uses attacks, defenses, dodges, and knockbacks to force one's opponents to be one step behind, making the opponent unable to defend or dodge. Afterwards, one's attacks would easily land while the opponent's would be weak and useless. Although I can do such complex combos in real life, in the game, the requirements for making a skill are a lot more harsher. The power, angle, and timing has to be perfect, or else you will not be able to create your own skill.

.....

While killing the Wild Wolves, I thought about the past. Even though I trained under the old man for many years, the only technique that he passed down was very simple, it used attacks to suppress the opponent. In reality, he didn't even tell me the name of the sword technique. Perhaps even he didn't know himself, since there was no specific set of motions for this sword technique, rather it was more like a lot of attacking moves that did not correlate to one another.

Cha!

I thrust my Bramble Thorn Sword forward, and with a Puchi sound it pokes a hole straight through the Wild Wolf's neck. Using the momentum, I slash left, pulling the sword free and spin my body, landing a heavy and powerful strike on the Wild Wolf's forehead. Stab, slash, and punch. Using this simple combo, I've defeated mountains of Wild Wolves, but sadly, even after using them countless times, the requirements for creating a new skill still are not met. I wonder why...

Well screw it, let me level up before thinking about it too deeply!

Also, I realize that the 3 attacks that I've been using are all ordinary attacks, so even if they really triggers the requirements for making a new skill, the power of the skill won't be too strong. I should master the melee attacking skills in games, then combine two or more skills to make a custom combo skill. Of course, the combo would need a good finisher attack, because only then will my attacks be classified as dangerous!

While killing wolves, I kept on picking Seven-Starred Herbs. Soon, 3 hours flash by, I even forgot to eat lunch! But, my experience is at level 19, with 94% completed. Only 6% left until level 20!

.....

My red, chaotic name turned back to normal a long time ago since I've killed so many monsters. At the same time, I hear some walking sounds coming from the far side of the forest. More players huh. It a group of 5 players, all level 18-20. They looked at me from afar and then went on their way. I have no intention of bothering them either, so I grab my sword and leave. There are over 3200 batches of Seven-Star Herbs in my bag, and that's the result of only one day of herb-picking! In fact, I have enough for me to get my alchemy level to 4, and with this, I should be the first alchemist to reach level 4!

Half an hour later, I return to Ba Huang City and after repairing my equipment, I sent Yue Qing Qian a message: "Qing Qian~ I've returned to the city now, I'll wait for you at the Northern plaza entrance. If you want the weapon and the armor come quickly!"

Tick!

I received a message from Qing Qian, "Okay, I'll get there in a minute!"

Whoosh!

In the distance, the bright flash of a teleportation scroll blinks, and the beautiful assassin appears. It's Yue Qing Qian.

"Xiao Yao!"

She waves to me from afar, and quickly runs over. Waving her dagger, she smiled. "It seems like it's time to get rid of my level 7 Black-iron dagger!"

Surprised. I stared at her, "Did you just...use a city return scroll?"

"Yep!"

"That's, that's 1 gold coin!" I say heartbrokenly.

Qing Qian flashes another charming smile, "Nah, one gold coin is nothing. Prague's Guild has over 2000 players near Ba Huang City killing monsters, which is enough to allow the top few hundred players to use money freely. Besides, Xiao Yao you are one of my precious friends, when you call for me, how can I not come?"

My face blushes slightly. "I really can't bear it... Whatever, let's trade!"

"Okay!"

Opening the trade window, I put in the Bloody Dagger and the green chestplate, while Qing Qian puts in 7 gold coins. How generous, this Prague's Guild is really rich!

I felt a bit curious, and ask, "Qing Qian, how many people are in your guild?"

She blinks her eyes, and replies with a smile, "There are currently 40 thousand people registered online, but a lot of people didn't get the gaming helmet early, so there are only around 2700 people who entered the game, and they are all in Ba Huang City. Of the 60 thousand players who entered Ba Huang City, there are 2700 players from the Prague's Guild!"

After speaking, Qing Qian looked at me weirdly, “Xiao Yao, you should join our guild! Look, you’ve already angered those crazy people at [Wrath of the Heros], and you’re all alone. If you join Prague’s guild, we’ll go and eliminate [Wrath of the Hero Lords]!”

My heart leaps at the benefits of joining, but I quickly dispel that thought. “Nah, it’s fine. I’ve already been accustomed to being alone. Moreover, I am not used to being ordered around, let’s just leave it as that...”

But Qing Qian continues, “Look. You are at level 19, and you’re almost at level 20, you can get promoted soon! When you learn the true healer skills such as [Heal] and [Therapy], you would become one of the most important players in our guild...”

I laugh, unable to hold it in, “Now now, don’t try to convince me anymore, or else I’ll think you’re selling insurance...”

She laughs as well, “Fine, I’ll leave it as that. Are you planning to start making some Seven-Star pills?”

“Yep. Are you going to stay here and watch me make the pills, or will you come back in a while?”

Sha!

Qing Qian pulls out the Bloody dagger from her waist, waved it a bit in front of my face, and smiled, “The attack on this dagger is pretty high, I’m going to go out the city to kill a few monsters. When you’re almost done brewing up your potions, send me a message, then I’ll come find you. How’s that?”

“Perfect.”

.....

Seeing Qing Qian leave the city, I immediately go a material store to buy a whole bunch of refined water and alchemy furnaces. Level 3 pills cost 3 bottles of refined water and one alchemy furnace, a total of 50 copper coins, or 0.5 silver coins. But, every pill can sell for 5 silver coins, this is an absurd amount of earnings! My chance to make big money is

here!

I open up the alchemy window, and finish creating a pill~

System Notification: You have successfully created [Seven-Starred Pill]
x1, [Alchemy] familiarity +1!

System Notification: You have successfully created [Seven-Starred Pill]
x1, [Alchemy] familiarity +1!

System Notification: You have successfully created [Seven-Starred Pill]
x1, [Alchemy] familiarity +1!

System Notification: You have successfully created [Seven-Starred Pill]
x1, [Alchemy] familiarity +1!

.....

I get a pretty good feeling when I see my alchemy level continuously rising. After nearly two hours of pill making, finally I stuffed my inventory full of Seven-Star Pills, and the system also pops an alarm to tell me reward my hardwork!

Ding!

System Notification: Congratulations! Your [Alchemy] level has risen to LV-4, and since you are the first player to reach [Alchemy (LV-4)], you are rewarded with 4000 experience points, and charm +2!

Shaa!

A stream of light falls upon me, and I automatically level up to level 20. I finally reached the level where I can get promoted!

Putting all my points in strength, I feel like a complete new person~

[Xiao Yao Zi Zai] (Healer Trainee)

Level: 20

Attack: 126-137

Defense: 64

HP: 290

Mana: 260

Charm: 7

.....

As I continue creating more pills, I send Qing Qian a message. When she comes flying in from the north door, holding the Bloody Dagger, I had almost finished using up my materials.

“Finished?”

“Mm. So you want all 3000 pills?”

“Yep, wait a moment, let me grab some money....”

“Okay!”

A few minutes later, a level 21 male elf player, grasping a longbow, comes flying down. It seems like he has already been promoted to an official archer. He takes out a bag of coins and throws it to Qing Qian. At the same time, he observes me and smiles, “So this is the person, the healer swordsman that you’ve been talking about, Qing Qian? Quite a person huh...”

“Hello....”

“Okay, I’m leaving now, my team still needs me!”

He tightens his grasp on the longbow and stomps both feet on the ground. Instantly, he flies up and out of the city. Impressive, the speciality of the elves really is something, they can both fly and run...

.....

I open up the trade window, separate the 3000 pills into 5 separate trades. 600 pills per trade. Qing Qian also carefully gives me 30 gold coins per trade, which equals a grand total of 150 gold coins! When I finally finish the trades, my total balance is also around 150 gold pieces. When I bought the alchemy furnaces and bottles of refined water before, I spent around 15 gold coins, now I earned it all back in one go.

Looking at my satisfied face, Qing Qian laughs a bit, “Xiao Yao, now you

are probably the wealthiest person in the entire Ba Huang City, how are you going to spend all this money?"

I paused before continuing, "Isn't there a currency market or something in [Destiny]?"

"Ah? You want to sell the gold coins?"

"Yep, the selling prices are the highest right now!"

"True." Qing Qian smiles a bit. "Looking at the current market, 1 gold coin can bring you about 20 Yuan (~3.2 dollars) or so. These 150 gold coins can bring you quite a bit of money huh. Do you really have an urgent need of money right now?"

I shamefully nod my head, "Yep, I have an urgent need of money right now. In my little friend group, I am nicknamed the "Penniless God"...."

"Pff.. Well then "Penniless God", I wish that you prosper eh?"

"Mm, okay...."

.....

After receiving the pills, Qing Qian didn't leave, but instead tilted her head and looked at me, "Xiao Yao, you're already level 20, how about you go get your promotion quest! I'll even help you finish the mission!"

I gave it some thought and replied, "Nah, its fine. I'm pretty confident in my own abilities. If I really do need help, then I'll call you at that time. You are the deputy chief of the Prague's guild, I don't really want to trouble you."

"Ah, that's fine then."

Qing Qian spins around and leaves, while I logged onto the official game website. I enter the "Treasure Grove" section, which is the virtual and reality economy market. Naturally, there are people who are selling gold coins. I scan across, and I find out that there are people selling 1 gold coin for 30 Yuan (~4.8 dollars)! I'm not going to be that greedy, so I post a offer of 100 gold coins for a price of 2500 Yuan (~400 dollars) for them. Hopefully someone buys them!

.....

Clapping my hands, I think its time to get promoted! The level 20 healer skills are waiting for me!

Chapter 21: Spider Queen

In the job training center, the healer instructor stands at the same spot as before, with her long hair drifting in the wind. When she sees me walking up, she immediately shows a sweet smile, “Oh, young healer, you have grown quite strong now. Would you like to get promoted?”

Well then, this NPC is quite observant!

I nod, “Yes teacher, I would like to get promoted!”

“Okay!”

The instructor smiles and stretches her hand forward, “First, you must pay me a processing fee of 10 silver coins before I can start your promotion mission!”

“Okay....” I give out 10 silvers. After all, I no longer have a lack of money!

The instructor stretches her neck looking at me with an amused expression, “Good. If you want to become a real healer, you must complete this test. Come. This is a sheet of sheepskin. If you enter the graveyard at the south of the city, you will find a spider’s cave there. Find the gravestone at the deepest part of the cave and jot down the text written on the gravestone. That is your mission. But be careful, there are many dangers inside the spider cave, you may die a very painful death!”

My whole body trembles a bit. But the mission didn’t care if people were willing to do it or not, it was forced on you...

System Notification: You received the training mission [The gravestone text in the Spider Cave]! (Mission difficulty: Level C)

Mission Description: Enter the spider cave and jot down the text found from the gravestone deep inside the cave. You are not allowed to form teams. If a player forms a team, or accepts healing from other players, then the mission will instantly fail. At that, you will need to wait another 72 hours before re-applying for the mission!

.....

My god, this is quite harsh. I'm not allowed to team up nor accept any help from other players! Qing Qian said she would help me out, but she probably didn't know about this requirement huh?

Walking out the door and opening the player lists, I take a look at the list of healers in Ba Huang City. The highest level for healers is level 23, but they are all trainee healers, none of them have been promoted! Well of course, this quest is really harsh and it makes absolutely zero sense. Clearing a level C mission is impossible for a sole healer. But for me, the healer swordsman who can attack and heal simultaneously, this should be a piece of cake.

In the entirety of Ba Huang City, there are over 1000 healers who are over level 20, but none of them have been successfully promoted. That speaks for itself, I'm guessing most of the healer's heart have been broken at the impossibility of completing the quest....

Well, taking my Bramble Thorn Sword, hum a song, and leave Ba Huang City, heading straight towards the graveyard at the south. The minimap even recorded the location of the spider cave, this'll be a piece of cake. But at this time, I suddenly hear a system alarm—

Ding!

System Notification: Congratulations! Your offer at the [Treasure Grove] of 100 gold coins has been bought by player XXX with 2500 Yuan. After a 10% trading fee, you receive 2250 Yuan, it has all been sent to your card with the number of 6227002008730084***!

(That's the author's card number)

.....

Checking my bank account, yep, it seems my total balance is over 10,000 Yuan, I'm rich baby~

Night quickly falls while I travel to the graveyard in the south. Near the graveyard, a few soldiers from Ba Huang City seem to be guarding the graveyard. They were all holding long spears and looking at the crows on the trees. They seem to be chatting about something. Hm, since there are

NPCs, I wonder if there's any simple quests for me. Since I'm out here already I might as well kill a few extra monsters.

Walking up to them, I hear the conversation that the NPCs are having.

"Yeah, those crazy poisonous brutes are getting crazier and crazier these days...." The captain sighed deeply. "Not only do the cows and sheep get attacked by the spiders, even our transportation team got attacked! I even hear that a few people got killed by the poison from the spiders and because of this, commander threw a fit at the guards of the transportation team...."

Another soldier says, "Well it can't be helped... Those brutes are really sinister...."

The captain looks up, towards me, and says, "Oi, you there. Are you an adventurer from Ba Huang City? Why are you eavesdropping...."

I reply, "Boss, I am willing to lend you a hand. Tell me, how can I help you guys?"

"Huehue...." The captain's eyes taunted me. "A small healer, how can you possibly help us? Can you enter the spider cave, and bring us back 100 spider fangs?"

I nod, "Yep, I can!"

The NPC looks shocked, "Alright, then show us your strength! This is a reward poster. If you collect 100 spider fangs and give them to me, I will reward you greatly!"

Pacha!

A blood-red reward poster is dropped into my inventory, a necessary component in this quest—

System Notification: You received the quest [Slaughter in the Spider Cave]! (Mission difficulty: Level B)

Mission Description: Enter the spider cave and kill the spiders within the cave. Bring back 100 spider fangs to the captain of the soldiers. If you do so, you will receive a grand reward. If you can kill the Mother Spider,

you will receive an even greater reward!

.....

I got the quest. Time to go!

Entering the graveyard, I see random skeletons wandering around. They are all level 19 monster, better avoid them. Killing them takes too much time, so I'll deal with them after I find the spider cave!

Going around, I open the leaderboards for Ba Huang City and scan through them. Waa, there are indeed plenty of skilled players, and I'm at... Eh, I'm not in the leaderboards huh....

- 1) Yan Zhao Warrior, level 25 Swordsman
- 2) Admiral Li Mu, level 25 Swordsman
- 3) Yue Qing Qian, level 24 Assassin
- 4) Flying Dragon in the Sky, level 24 Mage
- 5) Yue Wei Liang, level 24 Assassin
- 6) Admiral Bai Qi, level 24 Berserker
- 7) Fierce Tiger, level 24 Berserker
- 8) Admiral Wang Jian, level 24 Swordsman
- 9) Basaltic Robber, level 23 Archer
- 10) Student of He Shi level 23 Trainee Healer

.....

The amount of players who have already been promoted is over ten thousand. This competition is quite scary, because I haven't been promoted yet, and I am quite a long ways off from the top. Oh well, I'll slowly catch up. Now this leadership board is only players from Ba Huang City. If I include the players from the other two cities, Fan Chu City and Jin Li City, I think I would be ranked in the 100 thousands. It is even said that the players in Ba Huang City are the most inferior of the three major cities... I feel like crying now....

As I collect more information, it seems that the first ranked player, Yan Xiao Warrior, is not just any player. He is the guildmaster of the Prague's guild, meaning he's the boss of Yue Qing Qian. In addition, the 3 players in the leaderboard, Admiral Li Mu, Admiral Bai Qi, and Admiral Wang Jian are undoubtedly from the same group. It is getting pretty exciting here in Ba Huang City, heroes popping up left and right, something interesting is bound to happen soon!

.....

Sasa....

Stepping on the fallen leaves, I went into the graveyard and reached the location that the minimap indicated. But I don't see the entrance to the spider cave. Rather, I am standing in front of a huge gravestone. Where is the entrance to the cave?

Looking at the gravestone, I see that there are a list of initials carved into it—

“Wu Shi Zhe, began his journey as a scholar. After three years, he began to practice martial arts. During an archery session, he hit one of the drum officials and was forbidden to continue down the path of martial arts. Afterwards, he became a doctor, fairly well known for his works. Later, he formulated a new recipe, and upon ingesting the new medicine, he died.”

“These guys....”

As I was reading the text, my eyes became wider and wider. What is with these talented yet stupid game designers!?

I heard some rustling sounds coming from under the gravestone. The leaves started to move around, then suddenly a blood-red shadow appears, giving me a fright. It's a spider that's about the size of a CD, but unlike normal spiders, it has a blood-red body—

[Blood Spider] (Normal monster)

Level: 20

Attack: 85-105

Defense: 40

HP: 700

Ability: [Life Steal (LV-3)]

Description: The guardian of the spider cave. These spiders draw and drink blood, enough so that they can recover themselves in the middle of battle. They are very hard to deal with.

.....

Oh, so the spider cave is directly under this gravestone! Make way!

My Bramble Thorn Sword flashes forward, and I perform my proud 3-strike combo: Stab, slash, and punch. I need about 3 seconds to perform this combo, and although it takes a bit of time, every strike lands squarely on the spider. The spider violently shakes, and cries out. Three damage numbers pop up—

“112 ! ”

“91 ! ”

“123 ! ”

Indeed, the last strike was the strongest. If only the last strike became a swordsman's heavy strike, or some skill that the swordsmen have, it would have been deadly!

After the three strikes, the spider counter attacks. But I respond to this resistance by healing myself, and retaliate with 2 more strikes, and I finish it off. After it dies, I pick up the 7 copper coins that it drops.

Bending over, I use my Bramble Thorn Sword and poke the ground. The leaves separate, and a cave invisible to the outside appears. Down below is the spider's cave, so it's a hidden area!

As I was slowly going down the cave entrance, I slipped! Falling into the spider cave, I dropped about 10 meters down before landing on solid ground. After propping myself up, I analyzed my surroundings. It seems that the environment is fairly damp, and very dark. From afar, I notice a red shadow quickly heading this way. Oh great, another Blood Spider.

Because my vision in this area is greatly affected, I can only see about 3-5 yards away, the easily defeated Blood Spider becomes much more dangerous.

After killing the Bloody Spider, I hear a Pacha sound. A spider fang dropped! I picked it up and put it in my inventory, time to continue on.

The spider's cave has a lot of twists and turns, and there are Blood Spiders everywhere. But after killing dozens of them, a new type of spider shows itself in front of me. The body has an emerald green color, it's a poisonous spider!

Hiss.....

Emitting some strange sound, the poisonous spider jumps towards me. I slash with sword to kill it, but before I land my second strikes, the spider sprays poison at me, and I get a dose of it on my face—

Tick!

Battle Notification: You have been poisoned. Every second you lose 10 HP for 10 seconds!

I quickly cast [Hemostasis] to heal. No matter how long this battle stretches on, I, as a healer, am not afraid of some poison!

.....

After wandering around in the spider cave for about an hour, I had collected over 70 spider fangs. But, I have yet to reach the end of this cave. So I continue on. Suddenly a bright light pierces my eyes, and I reach a Great Hall. From a distance, I can see a huge gravestone in the hall, and behind it an immense crystal coffin, which emitted an unholy green beacon; truly a remarkable work of craftsmanship. It seems like this room was the resting place of an old general. But not only that, there's an enormous green spider peering on top of the coffin. It has a radius of almost 2 meters, and it repeatedly shoots out poison, drenching the coffin as it feasts on the old bones of the once mighty warrior.

“Nasty.....”

I frown, and also scan the spider. Ah, it's the boss, the [Spider Queen], level 21 Silver-ranked boss. It seems this will be an interesting fight....

Chapter 22: My First Bronze Equipment

【Spider Queen】(Silver Boss Monster)

Level: 21

Attack: 0-0

Defense:100

Hit points: 50,000

Skill: 【Spawning Spider Eggs】

Description: The Spider Queen corrodes and feeds on the bones of the ancient deceased, absorbing the strength of the dead to produce unlimited spiderlings. This has filled the cave to the breaking point, therefore the Spider Queen must be killed to contain the epidemic of spiderlings in the South Tomb.

.....

I went silent, while examining the attributes of the Spider Queen, I was shocked by it's stats. A 0-0 attack value for a level 21 boss monster, what kind of monster is this? This could indicated one thing, the Spider Queen would mass produce spiders, instead of directly attacking me, like a hive.

In the spider hall, besides the Spider Queen, there were also 12 level 21 poisonous spiders. I can probably attract the poisonous spiders to attack me without aggroing the Spider Queen, then after finishing them off, I can finally aggro the Spider Queen. I can only hope that my healing capacity will be capable of keeping up with the consumption of my health points.

The plan has been set; I immediately start executing it.

I lure one poisonous spider after another, slaughtering them all 5 minutes later. Only the Spider Queen is left, her huge body trembles slightly, but no spawning has been initiated. She doesn't seem to have been aggroed.

I started carefully examining the hall, the Spider Queen was encased in

a huge coffin. The coffin and the wall that it was touching made a 60 degree angle, if I could stand in the corner, only 4-5 small spiderlings would be able to attack me, while the rest would have to wait for their turn. So as long as I can sustain my health, this would be my chance!

Shasha

My foot slipped on some dust, and I glide to a distance of approximately 3 meters from the spider queen, thereby aggroing it. Her huge body began shivering, pushing out a small round green egg, it rotates a little and then ruptures, out comes a small poisonous spider.

I quickly examined its attributes...

【Small poisonous spider】(Ordinary monster)

Level: 20

Attack: 40-50

Defense: 20

Hit points: 100

Description: Spider Queen's spiderling

.....

I am overjoyed! As expected, these small spiderlings don't pose a threat. With their low attack and defense, this quest is truly possible! Raising my sword I start slashing at the broodmother, she shivers, losing 57 hit points. Her defense is so high that I almost can't damage her at all

Meanwhile, the Spider Queen is constantly convulsing and twitching, which mass produces new spiderlings. It sure is fast, and the majority of them are poisonous spiderlings. They soon form a small group around me, endlessly attacking. Unfortunately for them, each attack only takes out 7-8 health, so my level 2 hemostasis can easily sustain me.

Pop

Suddenly i get a burst of pain from my ankle and lose over 30 points of health. When I take a closer look, a fire spiderling had appeared. It had

an immense attack power of a hundred points. This amount of damaged poses a threat!

The Bramble Thorn sword slices through the fire spiderling, dealing a fatal blow of a hundred damage, problem solved. Without worry, I let the poisonous spiders hit me, while I continued to hit the Spider Queen.

As my striking power is limited, even though I'm a healer swordsman, I can only deal around 2000 damage a minute. Because the Spider Queens has tough defensive abilities, my attacks are limited to around 50 damage every 1.5 second, this is going to be an extremely long fight.

.....

After a full half hour of constantly hitting, the Spider Queen health is down to 8%. However my cloak's durability is only at 15%, sooner or later my equipment will break, hopefully it isn't before the Spider Queen's health drops to rock bottom.

Fortunately, the Spider Queen doesn't have an enraged state, so a few minutes later it's health is finally depleted.

"Please, drop Silver-ranked equipment...!" I pray deeply for high-end drops, unknowing that even Green-ranked equipment was very rare, and Bronze-ranked equipment is only a luxury for the top players, so how could a Silver-ranked equipment drop?

Whoosh!

My Bramble Thorn sword passes through the forehead of the Spider Queen, causing green slime and blood to splatter in all direction. The life of the Spider Queen's quickly vanished and with it her spiderlings also dropped lifelessly to the ground.

I quickly clean my face of the layers of venom that had been sprayed on me, before looking towards the body of the Spider Queen for equipment drops. A golden ray emerges announcing I rose to level 21.

Pop!

Jumping over the corpses, I head towards the sole two pieces of

equipments. One is a pair of cloth boots, which are delicate looking and caused my heart skips a beat in delight. The other drop is a lightly glowing, oddly shaped, brass ring.

I reach out and pick up the equipment, quickly viewing the attributes of the boots

【Flame boots】(Green Tier)

Type: Cloth armor

Defense: 12

Magic Power: +5

Passive: Increases the effectiveness of healing spells by 10 points.

Requirement: Level 20.

.....

I'm overjoyed at how truly great this item is. First, it gives an extra 12 points in defense. Second, it gives an increase of 5 in magic power and lastly there's 10 extra points for my healing spells!

I immediately equip the flame boots. They feel delicate and nice – Finally, I'm no longer barefooted.

Continuing onto the glowing brass ring, I wipe it clean to reveal a golden surface. The attributes which appeared on the screen, gave me a huge ear to ear smile.

【Ring of the Berserker】(Bronze)

Endurance: +12

Passive: Increase the attack damage of the user by 7

Required level: 20.

.....

My mind goes blank at the eye popping stats of the ring. It's a Bronze-ranked equipment! Amazing! Not to mention, it's a ring that is very suitable for me.

After equipping the ring I look at my stats. They've increased quite a bit!

[Xiao Yao Zi Zai] (Trainee healer)

Level: 21

Attack: 131-149

Defense: 77

HP: 384

MP: 290

Charm: 7

.....

12 points extra in endurance increases my HP by 84. Although healer only get 0.7 health per point in endurance, 84 health is better than nothing, not to mention that it's almost $\frac{1}{3}$ of my original health. There are also 10 extra points in effectiveness for healing spells from the boots, making this trip quite worthwhile, or should I say, I turned quite a good profit this trip.

As I proudly stand on top of the coffin, I pick up the spider fangs in the hall. Once I collected enough for my quest, I could not pick up any more. So I leave to finish the quests, and to become the first healer to get promoted!

Pacha!

I accidentally stepped into a bush and a pair of dried out, bony hands shoot out towards me. They grabbed my left leg, scaring my soul out of me! I swing my sword mindlessly, and shout "Don't try to harm me monster!"

The branches in the bush are chopped into pieces, scattered left and right... I look closer, and I find out that it was only a corpse, sucked dry by the Spider Queen. It gave me quite a fright though....

I turn around and left the spider cave. Ahh, the fresh night air from

outside. Quite relaxing....

Coming to the guard outpost at the graveyard, I hand the spider fangs to the NPC soldier captain. His mouth opens wide, “Wow! You actually killed that evil Spider Queen! That must have been quite the adventure, you are our hero! Come here, young adventurer. Collect your reward!”

Ding!

System Notification: You finished the quest [Spider Cave Slaughter], and you receive 7000 experience points. Since you also killed the Spider Queen, you receive an extra reward item: [Killer Bee Seal].

.....

Oh, I even get a seal?

I take new seal out of my bag, and I wave my hand to use it. The seal turns into a flash of light and disappears within my Seal Book. I click on it to check out the stats. Ohhhh, the killer bee is a lot better than the Silver-Feathered Bird, pets really are one of the necessities for early game leveling~

[Killer Bee]

Attack: ★★★★★☆

Defense: ★★★

HP: ★★★☆

Agility: ★★★★★☆

Magic Power: ★★★☆

.....

Starting out with 4.5 stars worth of attack and agility, it would serve well as a player killing pet, though it can also make leveling up easier and more efficient! But to put use to this seal, I need to find the actual Killer Bee. I wonder where the Killer Bee comes from... I even opened up the official wiki, but I couldn't find any information. The company for <<Destiny>> is so stingy. Trying to get information about <<Destiny>> is

like trying to take a loan from a bank, they won't give money/information to a person who truly needs it.

Whatever, I'll just return to the city to get my promotion!

I run straight to Ba Huang City and find the healing instructor. The beautiful healing instructor is still standing tall with her staff, giving off a young vibe. She looks at me, and gives a charming smile, "Ah, my dear, have you finished your quest?"

I take out the sheepskin, already carved with the text from the gravestone, and give it to her.

"I'm finished...."

The instructor seemed shocked, "Okay, young healer. You've allowed me to see hope. Come, this reward belongs to you. You are now a real healer!"

Ding!

System Notification: Congratulations! You have finished your promotion quest. You have been promoted into a healer! Also, since you are the first player to be promoted into a healer. Special reward: Charm +5!

.....

I already have 12 points of charm, but I still don't know what charm is for...

I keep on chatting with the instructor. At the same time, two learnable skills pop up in front of my face—

[Heal (LV-1)]: Recovers 150 HP of the target's health, cooldown of 6 seconds, costs 10 mana. Requires level 20.

[Therapy (LV-1)]: Heals injuries(negative status condition), costs 10 mana. Requires level 20.

.....

[Heal], it's the upgraded version of [Hemostasis] and has a recovery power that is 3 times stronger than [Hemostasis]. Since, I can also use the

two skills in rotation, as long as I don't get one-shotted, I'll be able to recover. [Therapy], I don't need to use for now. When players receives a large amount of attacks, over a long period of time, they will produce injuries that reduces their fighting power. That's when [Therapy] comes into use, but since players at this stage just die before injuries start to occur, [Therapy] is useless.

With the flick of my finger, I learned both skills. Now I am the first healer to be promoted in the entire server!

.....

Ringring!

I receive the incoming call, its Wan Er, "Li Xiao Yao, disconnect and come down. It's pretty late, and I have some stuff that I want to say to you!"

"Coming!"

Chapter 23: He's Mine

It's 8 p.m in the school's bar.

There's some light music playing in the bar, casting a calming spell on the patrons of the bar. The bar is a place where a lot of the students in the school come to relax after a hard day of courses, and of course there's a large portion of people who come here find their true love.

I have no interest in love, because Wan Er, who's sitting in front of me, is staring at me with her large, beautiful eyes.

Putting down my cup, I say, "Miss. I'll leave if you stare at me any longer..."

Wan Er purses her red lips, and asks again, "Did you really get a bronze ring? You're not lying are you?"

"It's true!" I nod deeply.

With a sulky expression, Wan Er looks at Cheng Yue, who's at her side, and mumbles, "Yue.. Why does this guy have such good luck... How is it possibly that he got a 12 endurance ,7 attack bronze ring? Ahh,.. God why.... "

Cheng Yue smiles lightly, "Probably because Xiao Yao is handsome..."

Wan Er glares at me, "How is he handsome, he looks just like Bi Fu Jian... " [\[1\]](#)

"....."

After a while, Wan Er continues, "Oh yeah, school starts in 2 days, so, there will be a welcoming dance party tomorrow night. Cheng Yue and I got the invitations. Li Xiao Yao, you come too, and familiarize yourself with our new classmates."

"Welcoming dance party?" I widen my eyes, "I don't dance...."

"There's no problem, just be there and it'll be fine. I also hear that there's some good food there~"

"Yep, let's go!"

.....

I sip my cup of tea, and ask, “Miss. You got the [Mortal’s Scroll] right?”

She nods, “Yep, the experience gain is quite a lot! Every hour I gain 5% of my current level’s experience! Even if I stay idle for an entire day I can almost level up.”

I ask, “Do you know if this also applies to the higher levels?”

Cheng Yue laughs, “Impossible, don’t think about it. When a player reaches a high level, then the level difference between this city and the other cities will only rise, then wouldn’t all the players from Ba Huang City and Jiu Li City all come over? Oh yeah Xiao Yao, what level is the highest level player in Ba Huang City?”

“Level 25, a swordsman called Yan Zhao Warrior, who is the guildmaster of the [Prague]’s Guild. ”

“Ah, so it’s him...” Wan Er opens her mouth about to talk but then bursts out laughing.

That look made all my hairs stand up, “What’s wrong? Is there a problem with this Yan Zhao Warrior?”

Cheng Yue replies, “Prague’s guild was also a guild in <<Conquest>>. Yan Zhao Warrior is a 50 year old guy, his control in game is quite good, but his strongest point was his power to persuade people to join his guild. Because of him, the almost extinct [Prague]’s guild was rebuilt. You’re in Ba Huang City, is it possible that you joined [Prague] as well?”

I shake my head with a smile, “Nah, I’m not planning on joining any guild for now.”

Wan Er looks at me, “Why not?”

I stick out my chest, “That’s because... it’s very simple. This gaming helmet is a gift from you, so therefore, I’m waiting for you to take me in. In the future when you create your own guild, or join into other guilds, I’ll follow you in.”

After hearing that Cheng Yue couldn’t stop herself from laughing,

“Good thinking Xiao Yao. I’m thinking of creating a guild, why don’t you join mine....”

“No!” Wan Er’s voice was a pitch higher than usual.

“Why not?” asks Cheng Yue.

“Because... Because he’s mine!”

“Is that so? Yours huh.....” Cheng Yue laughs villy.

Wan Er lowers her head immediately, her whole face had become a deep crimson. After a few seconds, she regains her composure, lifts her head up, and coldly looks at me, “Actually.. this guy’s gaming skills are barely decent. In my dad’s words, he’s a noob and is mostly likely to spend time setting up stalls to sell items. Oh how I pity that limited edition flame red helmet...”

“.....”

.....

We stayed in the bar until 10 pm. Afterwards, I escorted the two beauties back to the girl’s dorm, and continued to wander around in the dark for a while. After clearing the coast, I jumped on top of the same tree to observe the surroundings. At 15 degrees south-east is a security uncle sitting and smoking. In addition, at 35 degrees north-east, there’s a person in a black trench coat sitting on the stone bench in the small park. Unless you look closely, you won’t notice him.

Without a doubt, they are hidden guards pre-arranged by Lin Tian Lan for his precious pearl, Wan Er. The old man must have been troubled quite a lot. Who knows how many people he sent into this university. As for me, according to Tian Lan’s instructions, I am to be Wan Er’s friend, classmate, and also the trump card, last line of defense in this school. Therefore, my position is very important.

I breathe deeply, 1000 meters in front of Liu Hua University is a police station, so it is extremely safe here, at least there shouldn’t be any problems at night. These two personal guards also seem to be extremely observant. The atmosphere around the two was different, the two were

probably part of Special Ops teams. And they've definitely killed before, or else they wouldn't be able to emit this kind of special, trained aura.

.....

Returning to my dorm, I immediately fell asleep when I reach my bed. I sleep soundly until the next morning. After waking up I went and bought breakfast for Wan Er and Cheng Yue. While standing in front of the entrance to the girl's dorm, the dorm manager fiercely looks at me, and says one sentence, "Brat. If you put dare to even place a foot in this building, I will break your legs!"

I involuntarily shiver at the threat, and rethink my actions of delivering the breakfast upstairs.

A few minutes later, a beauty comes running down, it's Cheng Yue in her pink skirt. Her two slender legs are quite eye-catching in the rising sun.

"What do we have today?" She asks while tilting her head.

I smile, "Red bean bun, milk, bread, help yourself~"

"Okay."

Cheng Yue grabs the breakfast from me and says, "Xiao Yao, don't forget that tonight's the dance party! Wait for us here at 6 P.M. Dinner is also served at the dance party!"

"Okay..." I nod with a smile, "Then I'm leaving!"

"Wait!"

"What is it?"

She smiles, and says, "Just now, Wan Er told me, when both of us reach level 30, we'll go and visit Ba Huang City and find you there. We'll see what kind of mess you've got yourself into in Ba Huang City..."

I feel a bit awkward, "What.. What mess are you talking about? I'm just...going with the flow in Ba Huang City, there's nothing wrong with that right.... Oh right, Cheng Yue, what is your game IDs? I'll join you when I get on!"

“No need, when we get to Ba Huang City, you’ll know who we are when you see us!”

Without waiting for me to say anything, she quickly runs up the stairs with her skirt, a gust of wind passes... Ah, it’s pink....

.....

I set a goal for myself while returning to my place. Today’s mission: Reach level 22. After that, I’ll find my next path to fortune: The killer bees. Even though I have a seal for the kill bee, I need to find the bees before I can actually seal it. Although I’m a healer swordsman, my attack damage is not enough, so I need to have a strong pet to compensate for this weakness!

Cha!

When I go online, I’m at the job training center, so I turn around and leave. I have a few hundred level 3 Seven-Star pills in my bag, which instantly restore 200 MP, which is more than enough for me.

At the northern entrance of Ba Huang City, near the forest, a vampire bat is roaming around. The little bats near the city have the lowest level, and their attacks are also one of the weakest out of all the monsters.

Walking in front of the bat with my sword in hand, the bat starts rushing forward while chirping at me, and activates its blood-sucking attack, but it only took out 12 HP.

I raise my hand, and cast [Heal].

Cha!

“+12!”

My HP is back to full, and at the same time, I gain 1 skill experience point. By allowing the vampire bat to attack me repeatedly, I can cast [Heal] to gain more skill experience. Repeating this cycle for an hour or so, [Heal] and [Hemostasis] finally reach level 3. At this level, casting [Heal] recovers 450 HP, which is over my maximum points. [Hemostasis], on the other hand, recovers 150 HP, which is more suitable for me.

During the entire training process, countless amounts of players look at me with pity, shaking their heads——

“Look, that healer is really an idiot, he’s not even retaliating against the bat!”

“He really is an idiot!”

“A shame, he is quite good looking!”

.....

After finishing this mission, I smoothly kill all of the annoying bats with my sword, and then find a place under the tree to rest. I start looking through the forums, looking for information regarding the whereabouts of the killer bees. Not long after, my eyes land on the name of a place on the map——Poisonous Grassland

The Poisonous Grassland is south-east of Ba Huang City, roughly 15 minutes or so of traveling, and it consists of level 22-25 monsters. Yesterday, there was a group of players who went there, and pointed out that the main monsters of the Poisonous Grassland are wasps, so there’s a possibility that there might be some killer bees within them! Okay, let’s go!

I bring my supplies, repair my equipment, and start to leave. The journey of an adventurer begins!

I walk along a small road. After ten or so minutes, I see a small forest full of sunshine, and I can also faintly hear humming sounds, it looks like I’ve arrived at the Poisonous Grassland!

“Ah, bro, run! Damn! These guys are vicious!”

Suddenly I hear cries in front, and I see one elf archer holding a longbow flying out of the forest, but right behind him is a huge wasp, as big as a washbasin! The bee stings the elf in two quick successions on his body and two large damage numbers appear——

“121 ! ”

“240 ! ”

The combo attack instantly kills the elf. After he dies, the wasp's slowly returns peacefully to where it was from. On the ground though, there is a berserker holding a battle axe, running for his life, with his face flustered, "What the hell?! Who said that the monsters here are easy prey? Our healer couldn't even keep up with the damage! What should we do?!"

After saying that, he suddenly stops, then flames appear on his battle axe. He yells, "Fire axe!"

Bang!

The wasp chasing him gets knocked back, and receives by 221 damage. This is the berserker's level 10 skill, [Fire Axe]. It adds fire damage to the next attack, but the wasp still has around 70% HP left. Its stinger suddenly starts to glow, a golden hexagram! This move seems familiar... Oh! Its a level 3 combo attack!

Shasha!

A LV-3 combo attack can attack 2-3 times, and this time the combo successfully pulls off all three attacks, totaling to a damage of 400. The berserker, who had all his points put into damage, has his 300 HP evaporated in an instant. He cries out while kneeling to his death, his level is dropped down from 22 to 21... what a shame...

.....

Shasha....

Stepping onto the grassland, I circle around the corpses, and avoid any players around the area. I don't care about any compromises or grouping up, I will enter deep into the Poisonous Grasslands by myself. I have superb healing skills decent attack damage. lvling a wasp, shouldn't even break a sweat!

1. https://www.google.com/search?q=%E6%AF%95%E7%A6%8F%E5%89%91&es_sm=122&source=lnms&tbm=isc

Chapter 24: Baby Bobo

Circling the dense forest, I stay out the Poisonous Grassland. Along the way, I see many different types of flying insects such as the deadly wasp I had seen before. I went in closer and read the information about the monster—

[Bumble Bee] (Normal Monster)

Level: 22

Attack: 79-114

Defense: 40

HP: 600

Ability: [Combo (LV-3)]

Description: The lords of the Poisonous Grassland, these wasps are the most vicious of the grassland. Even a mighty beast, such as a tiger, can't do anything about them.

.....

"Bumble Bees huh...." I squint my eyes, "Like Bumble Bee from Transformers..."

Clang!

I draw my sword, emitting a gust of air. [Turmoil Sword]'s effect immediately take place, raising my attack by 10%, my attack damage should be 165 now. I'm sure I can break through the 40 points of defense that the Bumble Bee has. But before I could plan my attack, the Bumble Bee notices me and quickly rushes towards me, stinger first. There's no golden hexagon, the first attack is definitely a normal attack!

97!

Ow... The instant the Bumble Bee's stinger connected with my arm, I sent my Bramble Thorn Sword forward attempting the stab, slash, and hack combo. But, once the Bumble Bee took my first strike, it activated Combo (LV-3), the stinger starts to glow, it attacked me with three strike

combo!

110!

+450!

121!

214!

+150!

That scared the hell out of me, but luckily, I'm still alive. In the short amount of time between the attacks of the combo, I used [Heal] on myself. The level 3 [Heal] recovered 450 HP, which almost returned me to full health. I add [Hemostasis] after the combo finished, and my health recovered to around 50%. I go completely pale. Damn! No wonder that 7-man team got annihilated, the attacks of the Bumble Bee are powerful.

Pa!

I slash at the Bumble Bee angrily and slice the Bumble Bee 8 times. It dies with a jiji sound, and its body falls down, giving me a fair bit of experience points and 11 copper coins. Copper Coins are always a good thing.

I open up the map, and at the deepest point within Poisonous Grassland, the green grassland becomes a dark shade of crimson. Yep, the high level monsters should be in that area. All I need to do is waddle in there. As long as I carefully heal myself between the combo attacks of the Bumble Bees, they won't be able to instantly kill me, and being a healer, as long as I'm not dead, I can recover my health.

.....

After more than an hour, stepping over countless Bumble Bee corpses, I enter the deeper part of the grassland. Sadly, the Bumble Bees haven't dropped a Bumble Bee seal, or else I would be rich right now with Bumble Bee pets. The Bumble Bee's attack level is 4 stars, which is higher than the Silver-Feathered Bird, if I can seal one, I will become undoubtedly be rich!

In front of me is a thorny bushes. Not the one to be deterred, I wave my sword and cut a path. Finally, when I slice aside the bushes and look up to examine my “art work”, a flower scent floats in the air and rushes to my nose. On the grassland beyond the bushes, I see a colourful wasp flying around, emitting an annoying bzzz sound. In addition, their stringers look strangely metallic, they are what I was trying to find – Killer Bees!

I slowly approached the nearest Big Wasp, when it was about 20 meters away, I greedily read the attributes of the monster. Know thyself and thy enemy, thou shall not be defeated in a hundred battles!

[Killer Bee] (Normal monster)

Level: 24

Attack: 94-154

Defense: 50

HP: 700

Ability: [Combo (LV-3)]

Description: The lords of the Poisonous Grassland. Even mighty beasts such as tigers can't do anything about them.

.....

When I look at the attributes for the Killer Bee, my heart skipped a beat. My God, 154 attack damage! Used with the combo ability, I might not survive to see the next day. This is quite challenging!

Approaching with light steps, I attack first!

Sha!

I rush out my hiding place and cast level 2 [Encourage], which raises my attack by 2%. Even a tiny bit makes a difference! I draw an arc, and slice horizontally.

Bang!

117!

The killer bee's body flies backward from the power within the strike.

But almost immediately, it buzzes back to initiate it's counter attack. It's a Combo! While it stabs me continuously, I nearly run out of HP, but I take the chance and cast [Heal]!

174!

180!

+354!

172!

I barely escaped with my life, that was way too scary. Although I have some decent armor, it's still a cloth armor and against high leveled monsters, it's too weak, bah!

I heal myself at the exact right time, and save myself from death. The rest of the fight is a lot easier since the cooldown for the combo is quite high. But even without combos, the Killer Bee is quite formidable. After managing to kill the Killer Bee, I covered in cold sweats. How is this a normal monster? This is more like fighting with a boss for survival!

The first Killer Bee didn't drop any equipment, so I continued on. I cruised around some Killer Bees, checking their levels before I made a move, But even then, I didn't find a single level 1 Killer Bee...

After fighting countless Killer Bees and not finding a level 1 Killer Bee, it's nearly noon so I eat my lunch box, and continue on.

I kept hunting the Killer Bees in the Poisonous Grassland until 3 p.m. I keep repeating the same movements, I kill some Killer Bees, then they respawn again, then I kill them again. I repeat this over and over and will keep repeating it until I find a level 1 killer bee!

.....

Finally, the reward shows itself. When it's almost 4pm, a level 1 Killer Bee appears!

Shaking from excitement, I hold onto a small tree for support. To calm my nerves I take a breath. The level 1 Killer Bee is happily dancing around in the fields, Afraid that the level 1 bee will fly out of my grasp, I

immediately take out a hefty stack of seals. Since I was quite rich, I had bought 100 seals for this moment! This level 1 Killer Bee is mine!

Sha!

The seal flies out, and envelops the head of the level 1 Killer Bee. Like before, a hexagram bolted down with light flies down. But the Killer Bee resists, violently darting out of the hexagram. Slowly the lights fade, the sealing had failed. The bee happily flies back into the flowery grassland...

But I gnash my teeth and persist. With a 24% chance of sealing it, I will be successful!

I keep on trying, and on the 5th seal, finally, the Killer Bee stops darting out of the hexagram. With a flash of light it enters my pet storage. I'm going to be rich now!

I excitedly open up my pet list window. The attributes for the Killer Bee show up on the screen, pretty good—

[Killer Bee]

Level:1

Attack: ★★★★★☆

Defense: ★★★

HP: ★★★☆

Agility: ★★★★★☆

Magic Power: ★★★☆

Excellence: 74%

.....

Excellence of 74%! This is a fairly high-end pet, and that 4.5 stars worth of attack can cause people to drool over this pet or flinch when the pet is flying at them. This is good stuff!

With unmatched excitement, I decide that I'll keep this Killer Bee. My first pet!

As I was about to release the Killer Bee to level up with me, I noticed something glittering in front of the forest, undoubtedly another Killer Bee respawning. But it's a black shadow appears!

No, that's not right. I've seen plenty of Killer Bees respawns, but the respawn of this one is very slow, but very elegant as well!

I rub my eyes, and continue watching. Within the golden glow, a wasp similar to the killer bee respawns, but it is also different. The wings have a faint golden colour, and the stinger is golden as well. Its body is sturdy and strong, it's thin shell lightly sparkles under the sun. It's like a huge bee with armor!

I look at the attributes of this strange creature, and I almost faint away. Oi, its level 1! It's really level 1!

[Bee Overlord] (Elite Monster)

Level: 1

Description: The evolved state of a Killer Bee. A monster that is said to be a killer in legends, the Bee Overlord has uncomparable attack power and agility, it is a nightmare to poachers, and the murderer to many heroes.

.....

Looking at my seal window, the Killer Bee seal is flashing on a column. When I open the seal information window up, not only is there a picture of the Killer Bee, there is also a seal for the Bee Overlord, apparently the Bee Overlord still counts as a Killer Bee! This is great, I can seal the Bee Overlord!

Buzz!

My mind goes blank, at the surprise! It's an elite-ranked monster and level 1! And monster seals are so rare that they are like 10 point beauties, rare and unobtainable. But for me, I have the seal for Killer Bees which means that I can seal Bee Overlords. This only means one thing, God, I'm going to make a fortune!

Hovering over the Bee Overlord drawing's head is the sealing chance——11%. Hm, I can take this slowly, I'll seal it eventually. There's nothing to be afraid of when I have 95 seals!

Cha!

I throw out the first seal, but it was easily shaken by the bee and [MISS] pops up. The Bee Overlord flies at the same spot in circle, it's taunting me...

Cha!

I send out my second seal, and after 1.5 seconds, [MISS] pops up again. The bee continues to taunt me.

Third seal! Taunt!

Fourth seal! Taunt!

Fifth seal! Taunt...

.....

Luckily I am a patient person, I was about to go insane after missing 87 seals. How is this an 11% chance, it's more like 1%!

On my 91st seal, I throw it out, and like the 90 times before, a hexagram appears. I mutter, "I pray to you God, please have mercy on me!"

The Bee Overlord buzzes non-stop, but unlike before, it stays in the hexagram. Slowly, the Bee Overlord shrinks smaller and smaller, and with a sha sound, it goes into the seal. With a flash it enters my pet window!

I immediately open the pet window to look up the Bee Overlord's attributes. At that moment, my heart really felt like it was going to stop! The stats are too good. The wasted seals have all been compensated for~

[Bee Overlord]

Level:1

Attack:★★★★★

Defense:★★★★

HP: ★★☆☆

Agility: ★★★★★

Magic Power: ★★☆☆

Excellence: 97%

.....

Compared to the Killer Bee, the good point about the Bee Overlord is that the attack is 5 stars instead of 4.5 and it's defense rose by 1 star. The rest of the stats are the same. Like the Killer Bee, the Bee Overlord's HP and magic power are pretty low, but the agility is pretty high. But the most important stat I need is attack damage to compensate for my low attack damage, and the Bee Overlord has huge high attack damage, so that's good enough for me. With my [Heal] and [Hemostasis], the Bee Overlord's will be able to sustain high damage and keep dishing out high damage!

More importantly, it has 97% in excellence, which I've never seen before!

My heart is going crazy, and I immediately call out the Bee Overlord and lead it to kill monsters. I have one more thing that I need to do, I need to create a name for my pet. If I call it "Bee Overlord" it'll be a bit too domineering. With this pet that is full of damage, I need a cute and adorable name, so it can hide the killing intent!

After thinking for a while, I happily give the Bee Overlord a new name —Baby Bobo.

Ah, what a fearful name!

Oh Baby Bobo. Your name will go down in [Destiny] history! You will become an unshakable force. You will be honored for centuries, feared by all!

Chapter 25: Yan Zhao Warrior

Bang! Snap!

The edge of my sword cuts through the killer bee's wings, as I attack the bee directly!

A stream of golden light falls on us, which means that me and Bobo leveled up. Bobo flaps his wings, and happily flutters around. He circles around me joyfully, while following my attack pattern. He is quite vicious!

(EC: Bobo is bipolar or psycho. thaddpole and cheese agree on this matter)

Both me and Bobo put all of our 10 stat points into strength. After an hour or so, Bobo's level is already 15, with all 150 points put into strength. I open my pet window, and I am quite surprised. Wow, he is only level 15 but his attack damage has already surpassed mine!

[Baby Bobo] (Bee Overlord)

Level: 15

Attack: 192-291

Defense: 101

HP: 305

Magic Power: 173

Ability: [Combo (LV-1)], [Sting (LV-1)]

.....

This attack damage is quite seductive. It's equivalent to a level 15 swordsman who put all his points into strength, and he still has a hidden trump card. Bobo's attack and defense are both fairly good. He's going to be ready for battle soon!

Changing pet status: Battle State!

I look towards a killer bee that's far away, and I aim with my sword, "Sic 'Em!"

Sha!

Darting forward, Bobo shoots off like a bullet. Wow! With 4.5 stars in agility he's so swift... Also that 97% excellence is beyond godly. This pet, will absolutely be a nightmare to any enemy player, thank god I own it!

Bobo quickly reaches the killer bee. He raises his stinger, and with a golden hexagram on the stinger, he delivers a one two punch, and two damage numbers pop up. Then, without warning, he strikes again, and plunges his stinger straight into the bee, and the third damage number also pops up—

“197 ! ”

“201 ! ”

“312 ! ”

.....

Poor killer bee, it died without any chance of retaliation!

I looked on with my mouth wide open. Bobo is certainly godly, it killed a level 24 monster when he himself is only level 15!

Bobo happily flies back, and I can say nothing. His damage exceeds my healer swordsman's damage by sooo much, it makes me want to go hide in a hole. Whatever. I decided to return back to the city, since there was only about an hour left until 6 p.m. I should do some business around the Ba Huang city when I get back, then I can join today's welcome dance party. Dance party huh. Back in my mission days I had been to parties in Paris, Tokyo, Hanseong, etc. Except for my bad English, I do have decent manners, so there should be nothing wrong with me going to that party...

I pick up my sword, return Bobo to his seal, then return back to the city. Bobo would have been too eye-catching. Me, a level 22 healer doesn't gather much attention, but if I bring a Bee Overlord into the city I will become the center of attention. It can easily lead to me becoming prey for others, to speed up their leveling, so it's better not to show off for now.

Returning to Ba Huang City, I set up a stall. I put down some White

equipment, and also pull out the 74% excellence Killer Bee, and yell, “Those who pass by dare not miss this chance! Ba Huang City’s 74% excellence Killer Bee with a 4.5 star attack! The best pet for player killers, buy it here and now! Anyone with gratuitous amounts of money come and check this out!”

After I yell out, I attract many stares, and there are even people who suspect me of lying—

“He’s talking nonsense right? 4.5 star attack, that’s a bit too exaggerated...”

“Yeah yeah, and that 74% excellence. He’s exaggerating right? In the entire Ba Huang City, the highest excellence percentage in a pet belongs to that top player on the leaderboard, who has a vampire bat, with 69% excellence!”

“Yeah, is this guy an idiot?”

.....

But when I pull out the statistics of the killer bee, no one in the crowd says anything more. They all put on heavy stares, and some even cracked their knuckles. If the city didn’t stop player killing, I would have been easily killed and ransacked!

After a while, a level 23 undead swordsman comes walking up, and he sticks his head into the stall, and asks with a raspy voice, “Oi, how much are you selling this killer bee for?”

I raise 3 fingers, “This much!”

“30 gold coins? I’ll take it!”

“Who said that, its 300 gold coins...”

“Ehh! that’s a bit expensive, sorry, I can’t buy it...”

.....

Plenty of people shout out their bids, but none were over a 100 gold coins. Of course, a 100 gold coins is about 2500 Yuan (~400 dollars), and there wouldn’t be too many people who are willing to pull out 7500 Yuan

(~1200 dollars) without thinking, but I believe that there are also people who have plenty of money, especially in a game like [Destiny]. As long as it is a good item, not to mention 7500 Yuan, there are people who would recklessly throw out 75 thousand Yuan (~12000 dollars)! The important thing is that this killer bee only has 74% excellence, and that's not the highest possible number. If there's one with 100% excellence, the price would go up at least tenfold!

The attack growth and excellence rate are two important factors in pets, so a pet with 5 stars in attack, and 50% in excellence would have the same price as a pet that has 3 stars in attack, and 100% in excellence. In order to come up with a reasonable price, the two factors must be combined.

Tick!

I receive a message, and who else except my good friend Qing Qian, "Xiao Yao, I hear you're selling a 74% excellence killer bee?"

"Yep, do you have an interest in it?"

"Yes, so don't sell it for now, and wait for me, I'll come in two minutes!"

"Okay!"

In exactly two minutes, Qing Qian, with a smile, comes running to my stall from the crowd with the Bloody Dagger by her side to look at the statistics of the killer bee, "Waa, this is a pretty high-end pet! Xiao Yao, how much are you selling it for?"

I smile as well, "I'm holding an auction right now, so whoever bids the highest wins. But, Qing Qian, if you want it, I can provide some... accommodation."

She shakes her head, "Nah, I can't possibly buy a pet of that quality, it's our uncle who's interested in it. Wait a while, he'll be here in three minutes, and he'll discuss the price with you."

"Okay!"

After a few minutes, a level 26 swordsman pushes away the crowd. He

has the darkish face of a berserker, and hovering on top of his head is a line of words, and they are eye-catching words—

ID: Yan Zhao Warrior LV-26 Swordsman (Highest level player in Ba Huang City)

.....

Damn, he even has such a cool leaderboard indication, that golden ID is pretty nice. Even Qing Qian has a golden ID hovering over her head. So this is the difference between power and status, I am really jealous of them!

Yan Zhao really seems like an uncle. He smiles and looks at me, “You’re Xiao Yao right? Not bad, you already have these accomplishments. Who would have guessed after the Silver-Feathered Bird, you even got this high-end killer bee? Your luck doesn’t seem to end, and I hear you work solo, and you even finished the promotion quest for healers, you are really not bad...”

I smile as well, “Boss, you want to buy the killer bee?”

He nods, “Yep, give me a price!”

I shake my head, “Nope, the merchandise is here. You name the price, if it’s the right price then I’ll sell it to you!”

“In that case...”

He thinks for a while, and raises 5 fingers and says, “Would you sell it for 500 gold coins? If you sell it, I will immediately get the money!”

I nod, “Yep, 500 is good!”

“Ah, nice and quick. Give me 10 minutes!”

“OK!”

Yan Zhao then leans against the city walls with his black sword, while laughing and talking to Qing Qian about some of the internal matters of [Prague]. I continue selling the White equipment, and less than 10 minutes later, 3 or 4 people comes and trades with Yan Zhao, then he straightens up and walks towards me, smiling, “I’ve collected the coins,

let's trade!"

"Sure!"

I open up the trading window, and put in the killer bee. I also double check to make sure it's killer bee instead of my Bobo. I would suffer a huge loss if it's Bobo... Bobo has such strong attributes. I will rely on that when its level is higher. I wouldn't sell it for 500 gold coins, even if 5000 gold is offered I still wouldn't sell it. Don't spend mindlessly when you're rich, and don't do greedy things when you're poor!

.....

With a ding, the trade is complete. I receive my 500 gold coins, and Yan Zhao claps his hands and releases the killer bee. "Xiao Yao Zi Zai, are you sure you don't want to join my guild? There are a lot of groups and guilds in Ba Huang City, and I can say this with confidence, [Prague] is absolutely one of the most powerful guilds in this city. If you join us, with your power, you will have a bright future!"

I smile, "Thanks for the offer, but I will not be joining any guild for now since I have friends waiting for me."

"That's fine. I guess that's it, see you then!"

"Bye!"

Qing Qian waves to me, and after giving me a smile, she follows Yan Zhao and leaves. A beauty like Qing Qian is wasted on a person like him, who doesn't have the looks...

.....

Looking at the time, it's almost 6 p.m. My stomach is growling, so I disconnect from the game.

A warm gust of air blows past Liu Hua University.

Night has already fallen, so I wait under a lamppost. Before long, Wan Er and Cheng Yue walk out. My eyes almost pop out after seeing them. Wan Er is wearing a dark blue skirt, and that perfect face under the light really gives off a charming vibe. Also, combined with that 34D and that

elegant hip, her figure can really capture my soul...

I swallow my saliva to focus, ahh, the miss is very pretty....I need to keep it together!

On the other hand, Cheng Yue is wearing a white skirt, and clinging onto Wan Er's arm. The two of them look just like twins!

Wan Er arrives at the side of the road and glares at me, "Can we go now?"

I look at her, but my soul is still captivated.

"What are you doing, still staring?" Wan Er seems a bit shy, and her face is slightly red.

Cheng Yue teases me on the side, "Xiao Yao, isn't Wan Er fabulous today?"

I nod, "Yep."

Cheng Yue swallows her laughter, "Don't look too closely, you'll have plenty of chances later when you accompany her~"

"Oh..."

I elegantly turn around, "Okay, let's go the dance party..."

With a bang, I hit my head on the lamp post, and I see stars within my vision...Damn it, why is there a lamp post here?!

The two ladies quietly laughs behind me, and the three of us walk towards the dance party hall. This is probably one of the liveliest places in the the school, and the poor little me can join these kinds of parties... Yep, I'll be sure to eat until I'm full, and I won't hold back at all!

Chapter 26: It's You!

Liu Hua University, Big Assembly Hall

The entrance is mobbed by the crowds, already many peoples has been waiting to go through. Several males dress in black tuxes collected admission tickets from the crowd. But as a freshmen, we only need our student identity card to be able to go in.

“Uhhh... Don't tell me you didn't carry along the student identity card....” Dong Cheng Yue teases.

I extend my hand out of my pocket, pull out a wrinkled student identity card and smile: “Relax, I'm certainly not that forgetful, see?”

“Then hurry up!”

Lin Wan Er nods, and grabs onto Dong Cheng Yue hand. The two beauties resemble night elves that are known for their grace and beauty. I quickly follow behind and wave my student ID at the “guards”, they pause before saying: “Come on in...”

.....

The moment I entered the hall, I was stood still, shocked at the extravagance of the party. In the huge and spacious hall, huge feasts were arranged, there's enough to feed me for an entire year, no, probably two years. And the wine glasses were stacked on top of each other with red wine in them. Damn, what a waste of expensive wine, if someone even touches the stack, they'll all go to waste! I wonder who is hosting and paying for today's welcoming part, does he have too much money to spend?

Looking up, countless bright chandeliers were embedded at the top of the ceiling, appearing similar to that of a starry night. The scene is indescribable, my best attempt would be, this is the pinnacle of luxury.....

“Chinese department, class 1!”

Far away, several males wearing formal black attire extended their hands out with a courteous smile: “Isn't that the freshmens Lin Wan Er,

Dong Cheng Yue? We are here, Chinese department's class 1 table is here!"

Lin Wan Er looks up in surprise but recovers almost immediately, leading me and Dong Cheng Yue over to that table. At the table, a male with black moles on his long chin steps forward extending his hand: "Hello classmate Lin Wan Er, I'm the Chinese department's student union president, fourth year student. My name is Jack, nice to meet you."

But, Lin Wan Er didn't shake hands with him, instead, she simply lowered her head and said: "Hi, Senior!"

Flustered, Jack hand still stood in the air.

I seize the opportunity to move forward, reaching for his hand and smile: "Hello president, I'm first year freshmen Li Xiao Yao, at the same time, Lin Wan Er is my friend. Nice to meet you!"

Even though Jack is surprised by gesture, he realizes that I had just saved him for an embarrassment and shows a grateful smile: "Nice to meet you....."

Dong Cheng Yue secretly smiles, and drags Lin Wan Er: "Wan Er, let's sit over here. Li Xiao Yao come after you finish acquainting with senior....."

"Ok."

.....

I sighed as I appraise Jack's very expensive suit. For me... my shirts are from American Apparel while my pants are from G2000 (Hong Kong brand), my shoes are New Balance. However even though the clothes can be separated by cost but self-respect does not separate into valuable and worthless. Therefore without hints of servile nor overbearing, I greeted my senior and afterwards headed to Lin Wan Er's table. From today on, my role will be a university freshmen, and also Lin Wan Er's friend. Of course, this is Ling Tian Nan's arrangement. In fact, he even altered my records, now no one can find out that I used be be a mercenary, commando, SWAT, criminal police, traffic police, guard etc. Although it

isn't hard for Ling Tian Nan to do this, it really helps me.

Soon afterwards, more and more students come with young immature face revealing their envy for the extravagance displayed at the party. Moreover, some students that had come to the party are from prestigious family, and were wearing luxurious attire that put Jack's attire to shame. Looks like tonight isn't a welcoming dance party but more like a show off how rich you are party.

Behind me, sharp gazes sting my back. Several class 2 students of the Chinese Department were staring daggers at me after discovering delicious prey, Lin Wan Er and Dong Cheng Yue. Because these two beauties were sitting very close to me, almost giving the impression that they were leaning against me, the targets of their hatred was me. Because I, if I may say so, give off the impression of handsome, courageous young man, they probably thought that I was dating the two. I concentrated, blocking out all sounds until I could finally hear them gossiping quietly: "Look, the two beauties on the next table, aren't they Lin Wan Er and Dong Cheng Yue. Supposedly come from extraordinary family background, tsk tsk....."

"Lin Wan Er!! Didn't she..... Is it the Lin Wan Er that sing heart of time? Damn, she really resembles her posters. She..... she is my girl..... goddess. I..... when did I start stuttering..."

"Pah, you good for nothing! She is Lin Wan Er.....wow, looking good!"

"Say, who is that repulsive fellow, he seems very familiar with Ling Wan Er....."

"Doesn't matter. He's wearing the 2017 styles of American Apparel, he's definitely a nobody. Right after the party start, you guys go and "help" him to start drinking. Make sure he leaves the two girls so that I can start!"

.....

My gaze flirted over to that table. The person that just spoke was a young man with red dyed hair. He seems about 25 years old, the same as me! But, from his posture, he seems very arrogant. He was wearing a deep

red suit, definitely by some famous brand. In fact, even his watch is sparkling gold. Oh, that's the 2016 limited edition of Vacheron Constantin embedded with pure gold and diamonds. I remember seeing that it cost about 2,000,000 Yuan (333,333 USD) per watch. Who is this guy?

"That person.....red hair, who is he?" I look at Dong Cheng Yue: "Why do I feel like seen him before? Yue Er, don't turn your head, just casually glance over....."

Dong Cheng Yue carefully picks up her glasses of red wine and sneaks a glance: "Liu Ying, son of the chairman of Feng Ling Corporation in Hang Zhou. The company is worth about 1,000,000,000 Yuan (166,666,666 USD). But, he's a third year student, dunno how he got into this party. By the way, Liu Ying has a very bad reputation at the university. Stay away from him."

I nodded: "Ahh, I understand."

Beside me, Lin Wan Er purses her red lips. She throw a sideways glance at me : "Why are you paying so much attention to him?"

"Not really. But I do think that, in a moment they will come over to invite you girls to a dance or toasts. I need to be prepared for that....."

Lin Wan Er: "....."

.....

Just then, another person plopped down beside me. It's glasses, Tang Gu.

"Haha, so you're here...." Tang Guo put his arm around my shoulder, but his eyes stayed glued to Lin Wan Er and Dong Cheng Yue. This guy.....

I push off Tang Guo arm and say: "Glasses, why did you come?"

"C'mon, I'm also a freshman and, I'm also in the Chinese department. If not, how would I be living in the same dormitory as you?"

Xiao Yao: "....."

Tang Guo looked at Ling Wan Er and then his voice began to tremble.

His cheek blushed blossomed into a deep crimson and soon after he started to take disgusting deep breaths: “Miss Lin Wan Er, hello..... I am..... I am Li Xiao Yao roommate Tang Guo, it’s very nice to meet you.”

Lin Wan Er humbly smiled. Her eyes squinted into crescent moons: “Same to you.....”

Tang Guo nearly choked on himself. Instead of respond, he hid behind his cellphone and then in a low voice he said: “Li Xiao Yao, you truly have good fortunes.....”

I was astounded: “ What fortunes?”

“Keep pretending!” Tang Guo places his cellphone in front of me and says: “Look! The university has a tradition where when freshmen enter the school, the school posts a list of top the top 10 most beautiful women of the school!”

“Oh, the top 10.....”

“That right.....” Tang Guo wipe off his saliva and said: “The results are in. Lin Wan Er is ranked number 1 and Dong Cheng Yue came in second. The second year female student Xi Tu Xue went from first to third place. Furthermore, in fourth and fifth place respectively is Wang Ran and Liu Lu. They all got bumped down.....”

The corner of my mouth twitched: “Useless.....”

Lin Wan Er glance: “Exactly, that’s useless.....”

Woah, this is the first time she and I reached an same agreement.

Tang Guo lightly smiles and looks away. Suddenly, he turns back to me when he see’s Liu Ying’s group: “Yo, Li Xiao Yao, are Lin Wan Er and Dong Cheng Yue your friends?”

I nodded: “Of course, what’s the problem?”

“Then get ready to protect them.....”

“What?”

“That guys, Liu Ying , do you known him?” Tang Guo lowered his voice,

to the point where only I could hear him: “Liu Ying, crown prince of Feng Ling corporation is a third year university student. In two years that he join Liu Hua university, he gain reputation of being queen killer. Last year, out of the top 10 most beautiful women, seven were rumored to have gone on Liu Ying’s bed.....”

I was astounded, speechless to said how can this matter be permitted. My virgin self can’t accept this!

Beside me, Lin Wan Er dully says: “ Men that are two timing are the most loathsome.....”

I turn around amazed, surprised to see that her hearing is very keen. Lin Wan Er’s beautiful face was also staring at me and with a charming smile: “Relax, I’m not going to drink or dance with that guy.....”

I nodded: “Ahh, Ok....”

.....

Soon afterwards, the host declared that the evening party had finally begun. And me? As soon as the food came out, me and Glasses devoured through the food. As if we had just gotten back from a hungry trip to South Africa. Soon, me and glasses swept away everything. At the table were around 20 people. Although a couple of the guys started to chat with Ling Wan Er and Dong Cheng Yue, but I kept on eating, not my problem!

When I was only slightly full, a group of students from Economics Department surged toward us. These freshmen were obviously drunk with their cheeks bright red. Among these people, one tall individual with respectfully asked: “All the student from the Economics Department is here, please don’t say no, ok?”

“How could I....”

Lin Wan Er stood up, holding a filled red wine glass and drank it in one gulp. Her cheek had turned a slight pink when she finally sat back down. Afterwards, she shoot a gaze at me, making me feel uncomfortable.

As people continuously arrive to give a toast, Lin Wan Er continued to

drink glass after glass. She became somewhat languid, slumping in the chair. Tilting her head, she began to boldly stare at me, showing a complicated expression. But I did not dare to look at her in the face. I could tell that she was furious, furious at her father for sending a someone to monitor her. Furious at having her unrestricted life, restricted. I knew this, but at the same time, I had no say in the matter.

“Wan Er, you’ve drank enough, shall we go back now?”

I reached out and lightly grabbed Lin Wan Er very soft and tender wrist.

“Don’t touch me!”

Lin Wan Er furiously withdrew her hand, like a wounded beast. Beside me, Dong Cheng Yue seemed puzzled: “Wan Er, are you alright?”

Lin Wan Er look at me: “I’m sorry, I....”

I didn’t speak. I only silently returned her gaze.

.....

At the same time, another group came. Then a very familiar voice floated through the air: “Miss Lin Wan Er, can I, Liu Ying be fortunate enough to invite you to a toast?”

I got up abruptly, looking at Liu Ying and said: “Wan Er has had too many already, let me replace her instead!”

“Who do you think you are?”

Liu Ying’s eyebrows were raised, exerting his overbearingness. But as soon as he saw me, his eyes widened: “I knew you looked familiar, Xiao Yao Zi Zai!”

Chapter 27: A Gentleman's Revenge

My body tenses up. How did he know my [Destiny] ID? Who is he? Focusing on him, I quickly realize the pampered prince wearing a Vacheron Constantin watch, was none other than the man I've defeated several times in Ba Huang City, Tyrant of Western Chu!

I calm down quickly, and lightly ask: "Do I know you?"

Liu Ying coldly glares at me: "You may not recognize me, but I surely recognize you! How's that Bramble Thorn Sword working out for you? In Seven-Star Valley, you killed our entire group. How impressive!"

I showed a calm smile: "It wasn't much, I was just punishing evil."

"Get out of my face!"

Seeing Ling Wan Er behind me, Liu Ying calmed down before continuing, "Look, because Ling Wan Er knows you, I won't continue this quarrel... I'll give you 3 seconds to get out of my face, a worthless dog should know its place."

I stood still: "Ling Wan Er has had too many drinks, I'll toast with you in her place."

"Who the hell do you think you are?"

Liu Ying face goes red. The white wine in his glass, splashes into at my face. The spicy smell of an aged thirty year old bottle of 53 degree Maotai, worth 25000 yuan (4100 dollars) surges into my nose. Ah... What a waste.

"Xiao Yao!" Glasses suddenly stands up.

Liu Ying glares at Glasses with killing intent, defeating Glasses' courage. He falters and sits back down slowly, without speaking another word.

.....

I stood still, staring blankly at Liu Ying. I had over 20 methods available to kill him instantly, but I restrained myself. I am the last line of defense

against any threats towards Ling Wan Er, I cannot reveal my identity by showing off my skills for such a trivial matter. I must remain under the radar, because my usefulness would be at its end as soon as I act out.

“What? Aren’t you going to fight back?”

Liu Ying continued to edge me on: “What’s wrong? Are you a coward outside the game?”

I stared at him coldly, emitting killing intent.

Rustle..

Liu Ying unconsciously takes two steps back. It seems like he felt the killing intent in the air, but he probably doesn’t realize exactly what he just experienced.

Lin Wan Er stands up slowly, holding in her hand, a glass of red wine, and says: “That’s enough, I drink it!”.

She took a large sip of wine. Afterwards, she picked up a napkin and wiped the liquor off my cheeks.

Liu Ying just stares at us, shocked: “ Just wait, sooner or later, Xiao Yao, I will make you regret your decisions. I will have my way, and never once have I been unable to have my way!”

I say nothing, and turn around. The shocked faces of my classmates fall into my view. I grope for a glass of white wine from the table and finish it. With the spicy wine sliding down my throat, my anger slowly fades. I tell myself, I’m no longer the young man governed by my emotions, the me today, only has one mission, to protect Ling Wan Er.

Dong Cheng Yue murmurs “Xiao Yao, sorry about that..”

I smile at her, “It’s nothing.”

Ling Wan Er who has been silent since drinking the wine, suddenly makes a bow towards everybody before saying: “ Sorry, I’m feeling a little unwell, I’ll be leaving.”

Without waiting to see the reactions of everyone, she turned around and left. I hurriedly followed after her, after all protecting her is my job.

Looking at our backs, Dong Cheng Yue's lips part but no sound comes out.

.....

Outside of the Assembly Hall, the freezing winds tend to sober people up rather fast. Wan Er's dark blue skirt flutters, sticking to her beautiful, slender legs in the sparkling snow, under a lamp post. She walks somewhat unsteadily, so naturally I approach her and attempt to support her with my arm: "Miss, are you alright?"

Ling Wan Er shakes her head, and removes my arm: "Go away."

"....."

Letting Ling Wan Er lead the way, I quietly follow her into the flower garden. She finally stops at a stone bench, hugs herself, and starts to cry.

I stand by her side, a lone figure in the chilling wind.

After a long time, Ling Wan Er raises her head, her eyes filled with tears, and says: "Xiao Yao, do you know how much I dislike you? I hate you, I really hate you!"

"....."

Her tears didn't stop: "You're his will, a shadow that's always imposed on me. Why? Are mother and me just tools to you? Why can't I do things that I want to do? Why do I have to do things that I don't want to do? Why am I being monitored like a criminal? I never asked for any of this, I don't want any of this! I hate him and I definitely hate you..."

I kept my mouth shut, but I knew who she was talking about, her father Ling Tian Nan.

"Miss."

After a while, I sound out: "The evening is cold, we should return now before anyone gets sick. "

But Ling Wan Er kept sitting there, crying. Finally she stood up, wiping away her tears away revealing blood-shot eyes: "I'm sorry."

I shake my head with a faint smile: "No, you haven't done anything wrong, nothing at all."

"I shouldn't have gotten angry at you."

"It's alright, the angry Wan Er is the best Wan Er."

"So you like being yelled at..."

"Really?"

"Hehe..."

A girl's mood is like the weather, changing quickly without any pattern. But I knew my pace, although it seemed like me and Ling Wan Er are very close, we are actually very, very far.

We walk side by side on our way back to the dorms.

After a while, I asked: "Miss, do you truly want to revolt?"

Ling Wan Er suddenly stops and gives me a surprised look, "What do you mean?"

I show my brightest smile, "If you truly want, I'll support your revolt against him."

Ling Wan Er suddenly stops, showing an astonished face. After a while she starts laughing and pats me on the shoulder before continuing, "Forget about it, I don't believe you because you're just one of father's little pet dogs."

"Little pet dogs..." my anger throbbed through my words.

Ling Wan Er had a smile on her face when she walked into the women's dormitory.

.....

I stood still, watching the already faded backline of Wan Er. But soon afterwards, a sexy woman with a small red purse came up to me: "Does this handsome fellow want to accompany me tonight?"

Damn, even prostitutes come into the school?

I push down the urge to arrest her. Instead, I clench my teeth, without saying a word.

Not too far away, a group of people are walking towards us, it's Tyrant of Western Chu aka Liu Ying and his group of friends! Judging from the manner in which they were walking, they probably had drank a bit too much. But Liu Ying still dangled a half-full bottle of wine in his hands. He had an unusually wretched face when he said, "It's such a pity that I didn't get Wan Er today, her body is out of this world and her face is simply too beautiful. Haha, if I get her to my bed, I wouldn't leave for 3 days straight, if you know what I mean..."

Several of the boys in the gang started laughing.

An idea immediately hatched within my head. I rush forward, and pull the prostitute into some nearby shrubs.

"Ow, don't rush!" The girl spins around, and sticks onto me, and says, "Do you want to do it in the grass? I'm fine with it but you're gonna have to pay 50 dollars, alright?"

Without a second thought I pulled out 200 yuan and say: "This is for you, if you help me do one thing!"

"What is it?"

"You see that red head over there? He's a rich idiot. All I want you to do is lure him into a room with you."

"Is he really, really rich?"

"Filthy rich"

"Alright, deal".

.....

The prostitute pushed me away and walked towards Liu Ying's group. Under the lamppost, she quickly made a deal with Liu Ying. Although the prostitute wasn't ugly, Liu Ying had just been rejected which was probably why she convinced him so easily.

I hide in the shadows, tailing them closely while they walked out

through the campus gate. I took out my cellphone and dialed for Wang Xin.

“Brat, what’s the matter?” Wang said

“Boss!” I laughed into the phone, “Can you notify the people that are responsible for H(illegal adult) stuff to come near Liu Hua University? Also, get me a uniform, we’re gonna bust someone tonight.”

“Hmm? When did you start caring about that kind of stuff?”

“Because I saw it alright? Just send them over quickly or I’ll just leave...”

“Alright, but kid, don’t you ever dare threaten me again.”

“Whatever!”

.....

I followed after Liu Ying and the prostitute until I saw them entering 168 Quick and Easy Inn. Shortly afterwards, I find 4 police officers sprinting over. I knew all of them, “Brother Xiao Yao!”

“Uniform?”

“It’s here.”

I quickly change into the brand new police uniform. There’s even a badge in the shirt pocket. Holy, it’s the deputy officer’s uniform.

With the other 4, I entered the hotel and we flashed our badges. When asked about what room Liu Ying went in, the receptionist answered with: “Its room 308.”

.....

We went quickly to the third floor and gathered around room 308. I tried entering by swiping the card, but a chain was in place. So I kicked the door open and heard moans.

I pull out my police badge while lowering my hat, after all I don’t want to be recognized. Then I shout: “Freeze both of you, we suspect that you are involved in prostitution. You can seek counsel from a lawyer, but you must come with us.”

Liu Ying is staring drunk at me: “You shits, get out! Don’t you know who my father is?”

I moved forward and brung my knuckle down on Liu Ying’s cheek. It was satisfying to hear a slight crunch and a slight trail of blood leave Liu Ying’s mouth.

“It doesn’t matter who you are... Go and cuff em.”

Satisfied, I left with a smile. I took off my uniform and gave it to the guard stationed outside the room. Before I left, I told the guys to not take the girl and only take Liu Ying. With quick strides, I walked out of the inn. Now any bad feelings that I had because of the party were gone. Hmph, even though I didn’t act out at the party doesn’t mean that I won’t take my revenge. I always adhere to one rule – Gentlemen take their revenge the same night.

TL: I’ll translate to chapter 37 and go from there, deciding if I want to continue or not. Also, I’ve been reading all of the comments, the encouraging one and the more down-to-earth ones. I’ll get back to you guys at chapter 37!

Chapter 28: The Four Arts

A turbulent night passes.

The next morning, the entire school was abuzz like one large frying pan. There were rumours circulating around. The gist was that last night, “Handsome Liu” the spoiled rich kid, was caught passing the night with a prostitute and arrested by cops. His actions had disgraced his entire family.

Even though I triggered last night’s events, I didn’t speak a single word of what happened and kept a low profile. My revenge was carried out without a hitch, and no one could connect Liu Ying’s fall to me. Probably in the eyes of the Liu Hua University students, I, Li Xiao Yao, was a weakling who did not dare raise a hand against the person who trampled over his dignity. But, that doesn’t matter; how others look at me is of no significance; rather, what concerns me is.... today, September 1st; classes start today!

.....

Looking at today’s class outline, I scratched my head. Why did I choose to enroll in the Chinese Department, I wonder?

The 2 classes in the morning required us to look over the [Complete Library of the Four Treasures] (The largest collection of books in Chinese history) and selections from Mencius. Reading these 2 books, It’s all greek for me; , I can’t even finish a single page before my eyelids start to droop ! How will I survive these classes? I hate Mencius now...

On a small path in the school garden, hauling a small mountain of books, and walk next to Wan Er and Cheng Yue. A sweet fragrance of osmanthus flowers invades my nose. The environment in the school garden is refreshing to say the least, and the amount of pretty girls in the university is as plentiful as the clouds. But then again, students who come to this university are usually very well off, so they would have the time and money for makeup, and would generally have a better beauty sense. Compared to the company women that I met, they look like heavenly

angels. (Chapter 1 – Company Girls)

First period was about the [Complete Library of The Four Treasures]. The class took place in a huge classroom, with a few hundred people all having class together. Wan Er and Cheng Yue were both straight A students, like a dutiful body guard, I braced myself and sat with them in the first row. At soon as they sat down in the first, huge shuffling sounds came from behind, apparently a lot of boys forced themselves forward, hoping to get a glimpse Liu Hua University's number 1 and 2 beauties.

I feel a chill down my spine, the result of envious stares behind my back. But, the professor was smiling merrily, thinking that his teaching were what caused the class to be overflowed with students, but little did he know that it was the power of the two beauties, or else this boring class would never have over 100 students participating...

I propped up my face with my hand, and I started to doze off. looking forward to the afternoon when I can play [Destiny] again. I haven't been logged on for a while, hopefully the level gaps didn't get too big. ...

Bangbang...

Amidst the muffled sounds, Wan Er nudges me with her elbows a few times, and smiles sweetly at me while the professor says, "This student in the front row, can you tell me what are the four books that are in the [Complete Library of the Four Treasures]?"

I jump up, and with full confidence, answer , "Is it Guqin, chess, books, and paintings? (Four Arts)"

The professor froze for a moment there.

Wan Er clenched her teeth, and muttered under her breath, "Idiot, it's politics, history, philosophy, and writings!"

I suddenly understood what the books I was reading were about, and shamefully I sit back down with my cheeks burning red. Then after a few more minutes I fall asleep again.

.....

After painfully enduring the painful morning classes , I quickly ate something for lunch, and returned to the dorms, it was game time!

Sha!

I appear back in Ba Huang City, and look at my level. It's still level 22, and the player who is at the top of the Ba Huang City leaderboard, Yan Zhao Warrior, had already risen to level 27. That crazy guy, he probably wants to rush to level 40, and become the first person to be promoted the second time. I've heard rumors that if you get to level 40, every occupation can learn a new damage skill. It is a clear divider for players, so it doesn't matter how good equipment a level 39 has, their potential can't be compared with a level 40 who has been promoted. Or so the rumours say.

Looking at the pet window, I can see the Bee Overlord sleeping peacefully, waiting for me to summon him. Hm, if I hunt strong monsters now now, there shouldn't be too many problems, at least my damage output isn't be too bad, and with this 97% excellence Super Saiyan bee helping me, my damage output has to be way higher than any swordsman who is the same level as me!

.....

I repair all of my equipment, and pack dozens of potions in my inventory, enough to last me through a couple hours of intense monster hunting. Hmmm I need a goal when I start hunting, I can't mindlessly kill monsters, that'd be stupid. Okay, let's go find the level 4 herbs! I can already make level 4 potions and pills. Level 3 [Seven-Star] pills can only recover 200 mana, while the level 4[Chilling Wind Pill] can restore 300 mana, so there's quite a big difference.

Most of the players right now are over level 20. For mages, their level 20 AOE spell—[Rock Spikes] costs 30 mana at level 1, and 90 mana at level 3. Even if one uses it meaningfully, one [Rock Spikes] spell costs 90 mana. Looking at the consumption rate, in order to maintain a careful use of [Rock Spikes], one would have to use the [Chilling Wind Pill], which recovers 300 mana, or else there's a chance that a mage's mana pool will

be completely depleted, and a mage that can't use spells is a sitting duck..

Opening my ability window, I check the recipe for the level 4 pill—

[Chilling Wind Pill] – Recovers 300 MP. Chilling Wind Herb x3, Seven-Star Herb x1, Alchemy Furnace x2.

.....

Hmm, I still have quite a bit of Seven-Star Herbs left, so I just need the Chilling Wind Herbs instead of the Seven-Star Herbs. I open up the forums, and seek their whereabouts. After searching for 10 minutes or so, I got a hit; a wandering level 22 assassin found traces of the Herb growing in a forest north of Ba Huang. However, he didn't have the picking skill and returned empty handed. The forest, called "Chilling Wind Forrest", has snow along its borders.

I checked the minimap, though I knew the forest's general direction is north, I couldn't pinpoint its exact location . I guessing it'll be an hour from Ba Huang by foot. So after considering it for a while, I clench my teeth and buy a Ba Huang City return scroll, to save an hour of walking on my return. With my level 4 alchemy, I can definitely earn 1 gold coin in an hour!

Preparations are finished, time to go!

Holding my Bramble Thorn Sword, I walk out Ba Huang City's bloodstained entrance. It seems that like the name city, it's inhabitant are filled with bloodlust. There are plenty of players with dark classes such as Barbarians, Moon spirits, Undeads, etc., and almost every moment, someone gets PKed in the vicinity of Ba Huang. The competition between the many guilds is ferocious. But for me, an lone player, my only goal is only to quickly level up and train my skills.

Stepping on the grass, I reached a forest outside of Ba Huang City. I didn't pay any attention to the weak monsters under level 20, and entered the forest by myself. After walking for almost half an hour, I suddenly entered a blood-red area in the map. Going further ahead, there are monsters that have levels exceeding my own , which explained why the system set the area ahead as a blood-red color; to warn me that the

following area is not recommended for me, and that I will most likely die there.

Raising my hand, a golden hexagram appears beneath my hand, and Baby Bobo comes flying out flapping his wings. The level 15 Bee Overlord, with 291 attack damage, the system definitely didn't factor that in!

Bobo spins around, and looks excited, without a worry in the world.

Continuing on, there is a damp and dark shrubbery area. Looking further ahead, I see an undead soldier loitering about, wearing a beat-up broken chain armor, holding a rusted crossbow, and making some heavy breathing sounds. Was it wailing?

I inch myself forward, but that zombie was 5 levels higher than me, so I couldn't check its attributes.

[Undead Hunter] (Normal Monster)

Level: 27

Attack: ???

Defense: ???

HP: ???

Abilities: ???

Description: An undead hunter, occupying the cold forest in the wilderness. They are humans that lost their life, relying on the weak-minded dead spirits to hang on to life. They will slaughter any intruder that steps into their territory mercilessly. Ba Hang City has posted numerous bounty posters, but no one has dared to collect their heads...

.....

It's quite the problem charging in without knowing its attack and defence, and disadvantages with the level gap is quite big. Seems like tackling this will be an headache. But, according to rumours, killing a monster that is at least 5 levels above you, grants increased drop rates and extra experience gain but only applies if you solo it, like me; a party wouldn't receive an experience bonus.

Seeing Bobo dancing and flying on my shoulder, I smile a bit. Yep, I'll use this guy to hunt this zombie while training my own his level, If all goes well, there will be no problem at all.

“Charge!”

I point with my sword, and with a Sha sound Bobo rushes forward, as quick as lightning. Damn, that's the result of 4.5 agility and 97% excellence. The beauty of high agility!

Buzzzzzz...

I thought the buzz was very annoying at first, but now its like music to my ears. Bobo's stinger lights up and with a golden hexagrams, stings the chest of the Zombie. With the attack,the tattered leather armor gets ripped away. With the pieces of armor, some of the rotten flesh of the zombie also fall off. With just one combo, the zombie has already lost a huge chunk of its health—

138!

120!

141!

Despite the level difference, (the monster is level 27 and Bobo is level 15,) for Bobo to deal this kind of damage is unbelievable..

Oooooooooo...

The hunter raises his crossbow, and fires an arrow at Bobo. With a Pa, the arrow lands with a sickening crunch. Instantly, a large portion of Bobo's health drops—

254!

I stare at it, as if I can feel the attack falling on myself instead of Baby Bobo, and quickly wave my hand to cast [Heal]. That quickly pulls Bobo's health back up, and at the same time, I draw my sword, and [Turmoil Sword] automatically activates. I strike thrice, and follow up with a [Hemostasis] for Bobo. With our harmonious attacks, we will be undefeatable throughout the world!

After being attacked by me and Bobo, the zombie finally falls with a cry. It died!

Sha!

A golden stream of light falls over Bobo, my own experience had increased significantly and Bobo leveled up to 16! I put all of it's points into strength. Anyways, killing monsters with a higher level is indeed more efficient.

.....

Our duo continued forward, and after nearly 2 hours of hunting, I had made 47 silver coins! Wow, what a fortune!

During this time, my level also rose to level 23, and Bobo to level 20. His leveling is pretty fast, and his attributes have risen significantly as well

[Baby Bobo] (Bee Overlord)

Level: 20

Attack: 271-388

Defense: 194

HP: 485

AP: 194

Abilities: [Combo LV-2] [Stinger LV-2]

Excellence: 97%

System Note: The equations for the attributes for Bee Overlord after level 20

Attack = LV 10 (0.97 + 1)

Defense = LV 5 (0.97 + 1)

HP = LV 12.5 (0.97 + 1)

AP = LV 5 (0.97 + 1)

.....

Baby Bobo's attack of 388 would probably be a hack-level attack at this stage in the game. In addition, his 194 points of defense isn't too far off from some of the weaker monks, and 485 HP is enough so that Bobo won't get insta-killed by same level monsters. Mm, I think this is pretty good!

With Baby Bobo, a name that would fill anyone with warmth, we continued to cut through the forest. In the distance, I saw some snow laying on the ground, we finally reach the colder areas! The map declares: Attention! You have entered the [Chilling Wind Forest]!

Involuntarily, a chill spreads over my body. I'm finally here, [Chilling Wind Forest]!

Chapter 29: Peerless Strike

Surrounded by mounds of snow, I finally arrived at [Chilling Wind Forest]. In the distance, I spotted the level 4 herbs – Chilling Wind herbs, glowing against the pure white snow. This is gonna make me a fortune!

I carried my Bramble Thorn Sword, and pushed forward against the tough wind the treacherous snow. The arctic chills mercilessly lashed against me; I was shivering all over, after all, how was it possibly resist the cold with a thin white robe?

I wrapped my Silver Feathered Cloak tightly against me. It helped, to a certain extent, its still freezing! But, I will sacrifice my own well being for the glittering herbs that were waving in the wind, as if they were saying hello to me.

.....

But before I could pluck the herbs from the ground, I hear a growl, monsters! On the minimap, at my right, was a large bright red dot. Looking over, I took a few steps back involuntarily. Hidden between the trees was an undead soldier with a broken steel sword. Its flesh had long since decomposed, revealing disgustingly green bones. The soldier's helmet had obviously undergone many battles, broken off at parts and showing the soldier's green skull.

[Green Rock Skeleton] (Ordinary monster)

Level: 29

Attack:???

Defense:???

Health:???

Skills:???

Description: The Green Rock Skeletons are the guardians of Chilling Wind Forest. These powerful skeletons were once famous guardians of the kingdom, but because of evil spirits that were slowly corroding their

spirits, they became blood thirsty, seeking blood from friend or foe. Before the skeletons died, they were trapped in a mountain and after “resting” with rocks within the mountain, they have rock-like defense and durability. Because of how tough they are, they have wandered Chilling Wind Forest for thousands of years and no one has been capable of thoroughly defeating them.

.....

The skeletons obviously have an immense amount of defense, but thinking from another angle, the skeletons are probably lacking in attack. This is great for me! Baby Bobo has 5 stars in attack growth with a 97 degree of excellency. Together with my healer abilities, we easily counter the high defense of the Green Rock Skeletons!

“Oh, here I come, easy experience!”

In a great mood, I draw my sword and command Baby Bobo to attack. He rushes forward and uses [Stinger] and [Combo] in conjunction causing loud rock-like “clang clang” sounds. How high is it’s defense?

110!

74!

69!

71!

.....

I didn’t know whether to laugh or cry looking at those numbers, the Green Rock Skeleton should have about 1400 health. This is going to be a looong fight. After those continuous attacks, the Green Skeleton instantly retaliated, hitting Baby Bobo for 144 point of damage. Its attack power truly wasn’t that high compared to its level, even the level 27 Undead Hunters hit harder. All I had to do was cast a [Hemostasis] to completely heal Baby Bobo’s health and then I joined the fight.

Ding!

21!

My damage is... so low. Sniff*

After a bit more of fighting, the Green Rock Skeleton collapsed and dropped 45 Copper Coins. Quite generous, but unfortunately it didn't drop any equipment.

Afterwards I turned around to pick up the Chilling Wind herb, I got 3 stalks from one herb thanks to my herb picking skill. With the herbs in my hand, I felt like I had accomplished great, but there weren't any system rewards. Maybe I held my expectations too high.

I continued my hunt for Chilling Wind Herbs, at the same time, I kept dueling Green Rock Skeletons. I'm incredibly grateful for Baby Bobo, without him, I would have to hit the Green Rock Skeleton more than 73 times and it would take around 3-5 minutes, factoring in health regen, to simply kill one skeleton! With the help of Baby Bobo, it would only take around 30 seconds to defeat one. An Overlord Bee with a 97 degree of excellence, is the greatest gift that I could ever ask for.

I continued killing and collecting herbs for almost 3 hours, skipping dinner, simply to continue the hunt.

I had lost count of the number of Green Rock Skeletons that I had killed. But when Baby Bobo's level 3 [combo] finished off a Green Rock Skeleton. A "pata" sound accompanied its defeat. The slain skeleton had dropped 2 items. One was a dark green illustration card, while the other was a shining two edged spear, oho seems like I'm about to switch weapons!

Full of excitement I picked up the illustration card, it was a Green Rock Skeleton illustration!

【Green Rock Skeleton】

Attack power: ★★☆☆

Defense power: ★★★★★

Vitality: ★★★★★☆

Agility: ☆

Magic power: ★★

Skills: 【Cleave】【Rock Shield】

.....

Gee, the Green Rock Skeleton was an absolute defense pet with a 5 stars in defense and 4.5 stars in health. If you distributed its stats points to further strengthen these stats it would truly be useful for tanking, especially in boss fights, it might even be better than a tank monk, especially right now when most players don't have decent equipment.

I applied the Illustration Card to my Illustration Book, why not? I would continue hunting and gathering around here anyways. In fact, I accidentally killed a level 1 Green Rock Skeleton a few minutes ago, now that I think about it, I was really stupid for killing that level 1 skeleton.

I picked up the dull green spear. As soon as I touched the spear, a slight chill sneaked into my palms. Luckily, my strength enough to wield it, although with a slight difficulty. This gave me a good feeling, the attributes of this weapon definitely wouldn't disappoint me...I reached out, and called forth its properties, and immediately grew wild with joy when I saw them! Several hours of killing green rock skeleton have finally paid off.

【Ancient Shining Spear】(Bronze tier)

Attack: 100-125

Strength: +14

Passive: Increases the attack power of the user by 0,5%

Level requirement: 24

.....

I was grinning from ear to ear, the spear had a 125 attack damage upper limit! What I needed the most were weapons, my Bramble Thorn Sword was becoming an under leveled item, its attack was barely high enough to hurt other players. In addition, the Ancient Shining Spear was a Bronze Tier item! It would definitely have a huge value, even after I stop using.

I immediately equipped the Ancient Shining Spear, although I had to give up the 10% damage boost from my [Turmoil Sword], it was still worth it. This is actually the first non-sword weapon that I've equipped, but it would appear that the attacking patterns, stabbing, hacking and slashing, is similar to with a sword.

After equipped the Ancient Shining Spear I displayed my status. Yeah, I'm once again a healer with some insane (not in a normal way) stats.

【Xiao Yao】(Healer)

Level: 24

Attack power: 230-255

Defense: 80

Health points: 424

Mana points: 320

Charm: 12

.....

Although my attack is still nothing compared to Baby Bobos attack power, I should be able to break through the Green Rock Skeleton's defense and do reasonable amount of damage now. And that's enough to satisfy me.

I gripped the Ancient Shining Spear, full of joy. I waved the spear wildly in the air leaving flowery trails of light, gorgeous.

Enough fun and games, I had to look for my pet Green Rock Skeleton.

Around 7 pm I finally succeeded in finding a second level 1 Green Rock Skeleton in the Chilling Wind Forest. I immediately started to capture it, and after 9 seal card I finally succeeded. A Green Rock Skeleton holding a broken sword and making silent roars, appeared in my pet menu. It's a great catch!

【Green Rock Skeleton】

Level: 1

Attack power: ★★☆☆

Defense: ★★★★★

Vitality: ★★★★★

Agility: ☆

Magic power: ★☆

Skills: 【Cleave】【Rock Shield】

Degree of excellence : 75%

.....

It's so good, I'll easily get rich on this, after all a 75% of excellence pretty much means that it's a high grade pet.

.....

I had received a good pet, yes, but I still continued to hunt with Baby Bobo and rose to level 25 before the end of the day. Although I'm not yet an outstanding player, I'm not even near the top at Ba Huang, I have the help of the Ancient Shining Spear and Baby Bobo, with these two, keeping my position as the best damage dealer/healer combo shouldn't be too hard.

I continued hunting until around 9 pm, when the third level 1 Green Rock Skeleton appears!

This time it took 11 seal cards in a row before I successfully sealed it.

This being my third pet, my pet spaces were filled. The third Green Rock Skeleton had a 49% degree of excellence, thereby it was a medium grade pet. I don't know what price it will fetch, but without a doubt it wouldn't be as valuable as an attack pet that can help its owner raise levels more efficiently, like the killer bee.

Looking at my inventory, I had gathered enough Chilling Wind Herbs to make the cost of a Return Scroll.

.....

I had just pulled out my Return Scroll when I suddenly heard faint

sounds of skills being used, the metallic sound of warrior combos especially stood out. Before I knew, I had arrived at the border between the Chilling Wind Forest and an area called Wild Cemetery. In the direction of the Wild Cemetery there should be players killing boss monsters or maybe PK'ing, I decided to have a look at the fun...

With my Ancient Spear, I crossed out of Chilling Wind Forest and hid behind a particularly large cluster of grass. I got startled when I came into viewing range of the fight, there were at least a hundred people engaged, fighting a boss with 15% health left. It looked as if there two guilds that were competing for the boss. Wait! One of the guilds is Prague

.....

“Zheng Zheng Zheng”

The boss used a combo, but Yan Zhao Warrior's steel armor withstood the blows, and then muttered: “Peerless Strike!”

Huaaaa

He surged forth, making a huge jump upwards, his sword flickering with an breathtaking light. He had used a combo attack, attacking with a straight trust, sweep, sweep back, roundhouse kick and finally a straight hack. He had attacked 5 times in 1,3 seconds and every attack accurately attacked the same spot for increased damage. Holy, he had created a custom skill!

I'm truly shocked that somebody had succeeded in creating a custom skill. From my experience, it surely wasn't an easy task.

Even though Yan Zhao Warrior, Prague's guild leader, was busy fighting the boss, he shouted: “Block their attack, focus on killing the boss, as long as we succeed in getting the loot we are victorious. Qing Qian, Wei Liang, go and prevent them from getting near the boss.”

Within Prague guild's group, two figures suddenly disappears, they both used stealth, a skill unique to assassins. Although I didn't see them clearly before they dissappeared, I'm sure one of the assassins was my big time customer, Yue Qing Qian.

.....

Leading the opposite group, was a level 27 swordsman, Admiral Li Mu, like Yan Zhao Warrior, he was also among the highest level players of Ba Huang City, by his side were level 26 Berserker, Admiral Ba Qi and a level 25 Archer Admiral Lian Po.

Shua shua

With some colorful flashes, Admiral Li Mu beheads a healer from Prague and at the same time, he rushes through the defensive line of 2 knights and plunges his blade into a mage dealing 442 damage, a fatal strike.

General Li Mu roars: "This level 30 boss is ours! Go forward brothers, don't let these Prague dogs get them!"

At the start of the battle, Admiral Lian Po had immediately started hiding between rocks and bushes, attempting to snipe kill Prague's healers. Both guilds had the same tactic, first eliminate all of the healers, and then engage in deadly combat. If the healers were still alive, the players could fight for days without a clear-cut victory.

.....

Sha!

I sat down calmly, examining the battle from the mountain ridge. I had no reason to hurry back, and who in the right mind would go back after seeing this fight? This was a perfect chance to learn more about skills and saw how to manage skills for their maximum potential. Time to learn...

EDIT: The other chapter is really far away from done, so this is probably going to be the only chapter posted today, sorry!

Chapter 30: Prague vs. The Generals

Hup!

In the chilling wind, a bloody dagger extends from the darkness and goes straight towards General Ba Qi's throat. The level 26 berserker goes pale, knowing that he's the target of a sneak attack. In front of him is a beautiful assassin wearing shining leather armor and holding a Bloody Dagger. It's Yue Qing Qian, the deputy chief of Prague's guild!

Her leather shoes tap the ground and her strike instantly stuns General Ba Qi. After using her beautiful eyes to scan around for threats, she prepares a skill. The dagger starts to glow red and begins to charge. After holding it for about 1 second, the skill finishes charging and it activates —[Bleed] LV-3!

Cha!

321!

After striking, General Ba Qi suddenly wakes up from the stun and quickly runs backwards, hoping to reach safety. But right after he turned around, Qing Qian activates another skill, level 3 [Backstab]: Raises damage dealt by 30%. Ba Qi's body sprays forward and a damage of 289 pops over his head. He had died!

.....

"Crap, Ba Qi died!"

Not too far away, General Wang Jian runs over with his sword. He unleashes a straight stab. The attack is very simple, but Qing Qian isn't able to dodge or parry it, so she takes the strike.

Gah!

272!

That strike almost killed her and Qing Qian quickly retreats away. But Wang Jian's attacks followed her like shadows. A sharp pitch comes from the sword and two golden hexagrams climbed on the sword! It's the

beginning of a level 3 combo!

“Damn it, heal me quickly!”

Qing Qian takes her dagger and quickly runs away. Two level 3 [Hemostasis]s were casted on her and she recovers 300 HP, her health is full!

General Wang Jian is a young man, about 20 years old. His face is impassive, while he pursuits Qing Qian; his sword is drags along the ground. He rushes, determined that he will kill Qing Qian at any cost. Under the moonlight, Qing Qian’s cloak floated like the wind and under the leather armor, a pair of legs as white as snow were running frantically. Although she was being chased, she was not panicking and continuously gave glances in the direction of General Wang Jian, trying to predict his next move.

Ha!

Yelling out, Wang sees a chance and suddenly dashes to the bushes in front of Qing Qian. Raising his sharp sword, he goes activates a skill, [Heavy Strike]. With his attack damage, Qing Qian, might not survive this.

Hup!

A dagger cuts through the wind and before Wang’s sword reaches its target, he receives a gorging attack from behind and loses 250+ Health. Another assassin beauty appears behind him and from quickly slashes him with her dagger, two more 180+ damage numbers pop up over his head.

“Die!”

Wang Jian side steps to avoid Qing Qian’s dagger. Simultaneous, he chugs down a health potion and slices towards the assassin behind him. Using the break, he jumps down the hill. He knows that he has no chance against two assassins as a lone swordsman.

On top of the hill, the two assassin beauties stand shoulder to shoulder. With the exception of their equipment, they are basically the same!

Although the game allows slight alteration of appearances, it definitely wouldn't permit such similar appearances. Which means...These two assassins are twins!

Yue Qing Qian LV-26 Assassin

Yue Wei Liang LV-26 Assassin

.....

Behind the bushes, I'm stunned. Damn, Qing Qian and another sister huh. These two sisters must have quite some potential or else they wouldn't have been noticed by Yan Zhao.

During this time, the fighting at the top of the valley is getting increasingly intense. General Li Mu is clever; he made killing off the healers an extreme priority and now he has the advantage in numbers. Although Yan Zhao is very strong, he can't be everywhere at once. After seeing the healers be pummeled by the arrows from afar, his anger reached a boiling point and roars, "You guys, come with me and finish off that archer!"

Before Yan Zhao's group reaches the archers, Li Mu had already brought his own group to intercept the Yan Zhao's group. By the time Yan Zhao breaks through and heads towards the archers, his entire group had been annihilated.

General Lian Po, a level 25 archer, is about 50 years old. He can pretty much be considered a veteran in the General's family. In reality he is probably an uncle or something. Yan Zhao is also a 40 year old or so uncle. When the two uncles clash, who will emerge victorious?

.....

Pa!

While stepping back, Lian Po pulls back hard and fires accurate shots at Yan Zhao. In a couple of seconds, Yan Zhao's health falls below 50%.

"Prepare to die!"

Finally, Yan Zhao closed the distance and could attack Lian Po!

Although he roared, he doesn't pull out his sword. Instead he lands a heavy punch on Lian Po's shoulder, and the momentum forces Lian Po to lose balance and fall backwards. Yan Zhao didn't want for his attack to miss, so he made sure that Lian Po couldn't avoid his attack before attacking! With a sharp cry, he activates a skill— [Peerless strike]!

The custom combo! Here it comes!

But Lian Po smirks and suddenly leans himself backwards. He rolls down the hill, plunging into a field of Horsetail grass. He had planned this all out! He used the landscape to avoid Yan Zhao's [Peerless Strike]. Without [Peerless Strike], Yan Zhao is just a regular swordsman, albeit with a slight high damage!

Looking at the 5 of misses that pop up, Yan Zhao's face turns into an ugly shade of green and tightly grips his fists, "The hell, devious, very devious..."

A gust of wind comes from behind. Yan Zhao quickly spins around and in front of him was General Li Po's attack! In the entire General family Li Po should be the strongest, since he's ranked 2nd in the Ba Huang City leaderboard. This means, he is one of the only players that can threaten Yan Zhao!

Ding!

Within the sharp cry of the sword, the golden hexagram also start forming and Li Po's level 3 attack is just in front of Yan Zhao's chest—

"199!"

"201!"

.....

Yan Zhao's entire body starts to waver. Suddenly his knee rises and slams into Li Po's chest! At the same time, he stabs straight through Li Po's throat with a two-handed wield on his sword! This old guy is quite vicious!

448!

Since Li Po didn't have full HP originally, he was instantly killed! He slowly kneeled down and became a corpse.

Yan Zhao breathes deeply and takes out a health potion. He was just about to drink it when two arrows come soaring at him. Ba Huang City Leaderboard's top player twitches before falling to the ground, dead. In his death, he drops a large heavy black sword. From behind the corpse General Lian Po picks up the long sword and says coldly, "Level 22 Bronze tier longsword huh, not bad..."

After the messy brawl, the battle is near its end. The result? The General family won because of their numbers. The remaining five people from the general's side surround the boss and confidently battle it. There aren't many players from [Prague] that are still alive, only Yue Qing Qian and Yue Wei Liang linger in the darkness. It seems like they are waiting to deal the fatal blow to the boss.

.....

I continue sitting in the bushes, silently waiting for the final outcome.

"Careful. The boss is about to die. Don't let anyone steal it!" General Lian Po yells, while pulling back his bow and firing harsh arrows into the boss's neck.

The boss growls angrily and swings both arms to hit General Wang Jian but, the General family still has a healer and Wang Jian's defense isn't bad either, allowing him to withstand the blows of the boss.

3%

2%

1%

Looking at the boss's HP that has almost hit rock bottom, my heart starts to pump quicker. Qing Qian and her sister should start making a move soon right?

They made their move just like I predicted. The General's healer suddenly trembles as a 552 damage sign pops over his head. He falls to

the ground, dead. Behind him appears, Qing Qian with the Bloody Dagger. She quickly rushes forward and uses the hilt of the dagger to stun General Lian Po who has an arrow nocked.

On the other side, Wei Liang viciously stabs the heart of the boss and continues stabbing despite the nasty blood flowing out. Finally, the boss cries out and dies while dropping a bunch of items.

“Grab the items!” General Lian Po says in a panic.

Sadly the speed of the swordsman could not match that of an assassin's. Qing Qian reaches the corpse first and grabs it all in one swipe. All three drops went into her bag and she quickly rushes up the hill yelling, “Sister, let's retreat. We can't win a 2v5!”

But Wei Liang steels her heart and says, “It's fine, you go on ahead. I will fight and die to the bitter end!”

Just as General Lian Po recovers from the stun, Wei Liang dodges General Wang Jian's attack and stabs the old man's back. General Lian Po slowly falls down from one backstab. Without healers, people die nearly instantly!

Cha...

Wang Jian yells, “I'll go chase after Qing Qian, the equipment is on her!”

Behind Wang Jian, Wei Liang finishes off a berserker. But before she stabilizes herself, rocks suddenly explode under her feet causing tremendous damage. It's the mage's level 20 ability, [Rock Spikes]. Although Wei Liang is only 5 meters away from mage, she steps stop and she falls down, dead.

.....

On the hill, Qing Qian's legs tattered by thorns, keeps moving forward. She didn't have time to worry about the pain because she had the three spoils of the fight in her inventory. Coming from behind was Wang Jian who used a level 3 speed boost ability, reserved specifically for swordsmen. It raises attack speed by 6% and movement speed by 3%,

which slowly closes the distance between Qing Qian and him. In addition, the mage behind Wang Jian is also catching up.

“Damn it...” Qing Qian’s eyebrows furrow knowing how much trouble she’s in. Even though she has a city return scroll, it takes 5 seconds of casting to activate. That is enough time for Wang to kill her two times and over.

“Die!”

Leaping forward, Wang Jian catches up with his opponent. He raises his sword and strikes heavily!

258!

Qing Qian gets hit and misses her footing. Then an ice spell hits her shoulder which drastically reduces her movement speed. The enemy mage had also caught up.

226!

Although Qing Qian’s equipment is fairly good, her total HP should still only be around 500. It has almost hit rock bottom!

.....

I stay hiding in the bushes for a while. My heart and mind’s thoughts are clashing together. My iron commandment is that I never step into the business of others. But...another one of my commandments is for me to help my friends in need. Qing Qian said it before, we are friends and this fact will never change.

I grind my teeth and make a compromise. I will heal her, but I won’t attack the others!

With a wave of my hand, I cast [Heal]!

“+450!”

In an instant Qing Qian’s health nearly filled up. She gives out a surprised, “Ah, how...?”

Wang Jian’s eyes stare towards my direction with fury, “There’s another

healer still hiding!”

Qing Qian quickly understood the situation and went straight for the mage with her dagger. Mages can only learn [Spirit Shield] at level 40. Before that, they barely have any defense. There should be no reason why he won't die!

Bang!

While stabbing the mage, Qing Qian gets hit by another level 3 ice attack. So I cast a level 3 [Hemostasis] from afar and raise her health back up. Following the crunching sound of leaves, General Wang suddenly appears in front of me. With the sword glowing hexagrams, he angrily yells: "Xiao Yao Zi Zai? You looking to die?!"

TL: Many of our terms don't match up, so within the next few days, the earlier chapters will be updated. In addition, the ends of each chapter will have a link to the next so that readers don't have to flip back to the Zhan Long page each time.

Chapter 31: Daily Meetings

General Wang Jian's fighting skills were like heaven and earth compared to Liu Ying's. His attacks are lightning fast, leaving no room for other players to dodge them. Not only that, his level 3 combo ability attacks from 3 different angles! Such aggression! This is how you completely overwhelm your opponent!

At the same time, his killer bee also comes flying over, I'm finished!

I scan over my skills, and I see [Heal] and [Hemostasis] are still in cooldown. There's no way for me to stick in a recovery skill between Wang Jian's attacks to save my life. Wang Jian's level 3 combo attack combined with the attacks of his killer bee, would instantly drop my health to nothing. Ok, fine. A life for a life. I'll hide my Bee Overlord, and when Wang Jian kills me, Bobo must kill him as well!

.....

General Wang Jian clenches his teeth, "You little healer, die!"

The sword slashes towards my shoulder, and I feel waves of pain accompanied with 3 damage numbers.

312!

298!

334!

.....

Actually, Wang Jian's first two attacks had already killed me. This is the difference between our levels, my opponent has a very high growth in strength to attack, while I'm stuck with a crappy growth rate but at least I can heal myself instead of chugging health potion constantly. In pain, my whole body falls backwards, but the moment before I die, I call my Bee Overlord, and it uses a 3-strike combo aimed straight at Wang Jian's chest!

"What the hell is this...?!"

Staring at the adorable, yet aggressive Baby Bobo, General Wang Jian is dumbfounded at the 3 damage numbers that appear in front of his chest

355!

327!

712!

.....

Oh my God, even though I died, it was worth it! Bobo's last strike was a critical hit! Ah, this feels good. Even if Wang Jian had two lives he still wouldn't have survived that. If I knew this would have happened, I would have sent Bobo to attack as soon as Wang Jian came near me, it only takes Bobo a single combo to destroy Wang Jian!

Shua!

I was forced into my soul form, appearing within the cemetery. I check and see what I dropped. Looks like none of my equipment dropped, the only things missing were 3 White equipments, and 2 bundles of [Chilling Wind Herb]s. Ah how it pains me, but Wang Jian also died. The entire General family have been annihilated, so they shouldn't be able to pick up my items. Let me return first, to see if there's any chance of revival!

After running for 7 minutes, I return back to my corpse.

The wind brushes against the pine trees, and I stand next to my corpse. I didn't dare revive, because not far from me were General Li Mu, Wang Jian, Bai Qi! In fact, General Wang Jian had already revived! Wang Jian was sitting on my corpse, sipping a health potion.

.....

"This Xiao Yao Zi Zai bastard ruined our plans!" Wang Jian kicks the leg of my corpse, and says furiously, "If he didn't do that last second heal on Yue Qing Qian, we would have undoubtedly gotten the boss level equipment!"

General Li Mu shoots him a glance, and simply says, "You know, Xiao

Yao Zi Zai is one of the top healers in Ba Huang city. At the same time, he is one of the the top alchemists. He has quite a bit of business with Yue Qing Qian; they probably formed a friendship. If that is true, then him helping Yue Qing Qian is forgivable ”

Wang Jian furrows his brows, “Boss, what do you mean by that?”

Li Mu smiles faintly, “In all of Ba Huang City, there are not many healers that have high levels or promoted from a trainee healer, but Xiao Yao did it! On top of that Xiao Yao is level 4 in [Alchemy] and also in [Herb Picking]. Don’t we need these kinds of people? I think you should put down your anger, and carefully consider our family’s future development.”

Wang Jian mutters a bit more, but doesn’t continue speaking.

On the side, the 50 year old archer holds his long bow while sitting in the bush says, “You little punks think about this too easily. Do you think because we won against [Prague] today means that we are stronger than them? Wrong. Today, they only brought around 70 players, yet then have thousands of players in Ba Huang City. How about us? The main force is us four, and even if you add up our relatives and friends, we couldn’t even reach 40 players, we can’t be compared to [Prague]. Today’s victory is a fluke, in reality we lost.”

Li Mu nods, “Yep. Looking at the long term, we don’t have enough money, players, and we don’t even have an official guild. We’re basically solo players playing together, but luckily we leveled up quick, or else we wouldn’t even have this group of 40 or so members. I hear that [Flying Dragons], [Prague], and [Wrath of the Heroes] have all settled into Ba Huang City. Their resources, members are all superior than us. So, we have to work hard right now, so we can also rise to the top.”

Wang Jian raises his head, and grunts, “Boss, do you think you’re a new reporter? Don’t say useless things, even now Xiao Yao Zi Zai hasn’t revived yet, what should we do?”

Li Mu stands up, holding his long sword, and says, “Yan Zhao and their group have probably revived by now, and there will be a large amount of

people from [Prague] coming here. What we need to do is very simple, we return back the city and avoid them. Since the boss is already killed, I don't want us to face Yan Zhao again!"

"Okay, let's go!"

The group takes out their city return scroll, and become flashes of light as they return back.

.....

I stand next to my corpse, but I still don't dare to revive. I'm not sure if there is anyone staying around from the General family, just to kill me a second time.

"Don't worry and revive, haha!"

In the bushes, a graceful shadow walks towards my corpse. It's Yue Qing Qian holding a dagger. She blinks her eyes and says, "I already scouted the area, everyone from the Generals have left, so go on and revive!"

Sha!

I successfully revive, and instantly cast [Heal] on myself, my HP is back to full! I also swallow a [Seven-Star Pill] to return my mana as well. I look at Yue Qing Qian, and laugh, "Oh Qing Qian! What a coincidence!"

She returns the laugh, "Yeah, what a coincidence! Wanna have dinner together?"

I shake my head, "Nah, I'm studying ancient literature, pretty busy..."

"Okay..." Qing Qian looks deeply at me, and says, "Xiao Yao, I'm thankful for your help. Without you, [Prague] would lost the loot of this boss. I never would have thought that the Generals were this strong, and we only brought some weaker players. We almost got completely wiped out..."

I sighed, "Well, I was only planning to help you a bit, but I never would have thought that General Wang Jian would come for me instead, and my pet accidentally killed him. Sigh, now that I've angered the Generals, it'll

be hard to show my face in Ba Huang City...”

Behind me, a fresh sound comes, “Then join us in [Prague], the doors of [Prague] will always be open to you!”

From downhill, a person equipped with a long sword comes walking over. It’s uncle Yan Zhao. He is indeed a skilled player, making his own skill, or perhaps he is a swordsman in real life as well.

Yan Zhao comes to my side, and the twin sister, Yue Wei Liang also come smiling, “Yeah! Brother Xiao Yao, you’re so close to Qing Qian, join us in [Prague]! Then you and her can be together, how nice eh...”

A few people from [Prague] chant, “Haha! Get together! Get together!”

Qing Qian’s face turns crimson, and she waves her dagger, “Say another word and I’ll kill you!”

The crowd goes silent.

I hold the ancient spear, and smile, “Thank you for thinking about me Yan Zhao, but I truly don’t want to join any guilds. I am used to playing by myself in games. ”

Yan Zhao straightens up, looks at me, and says, “Zi Zai, I understand what you mean, but...but in this world you cannot always be wandering around by yourself. A person will eventually feel lonely. I still think that you should join us. I can...I can, after the guild is finished settling in, I can let you be an elder, how’s that?”

I laugh a bit, “No thanks, I won’t join any guilds. Unless...Unless my old pals come together again and we will conquer [Destiny]!”

“Your pals?” Yan Zhao seems surprised, “You have a studio? Or a guild?”

“Studio.”

“What’s it called? Doesn’t matter if it’s from <<Conquest>>, <<Overlord>>, or even <<Empire>>, I am well informed of any large studios or guilds from these games. Tell me which one...”

“Zhan Long...” I feel a bit embarrassed.

Yan Zhao goes quiet and thinks for a bit, “Cough cough, I don’t really remember this studio, but who would have known that there is a skilled player like you Xiao Yao, you have plenty of potential. Anyways, I’ll let you consider it, or maybe wait until your Zhan Long crew gets back together, then join us, that would be a wonderful as well. Look, that Qing Qian is so close to you, and when she’s with us she always mentions you, the swordsman healer, and also...”

Yan Zhao lowers his voice, “She doesn’t have a boyfriend, and her mother keeps telling me to get her to get with someone!”

I laugh out loud.

Qing Qian’s face goes completely green, and with monstrous killing intent, says, “You damn uncle, you wanna die?!”

Yan Zhao laughs, and waves his hands, “Nahh, I have no intention of dying. Ok, I need to go now, you two go on and continue chatting. Oh, one more thing Xiao Yao, when you get time, can you provide some more high level mana pills for us. [Prague] will keep on challenging different areas in the map. We’ll take all the pills you have...”

I nod, “Okay.”

Yan Zhao brings his people to leave, and right before he’s out of hearing range, I yell, “Uncle Yan Zhao, wait!”

“Hm?” He asks.

I rub my hands, and smile, “That...I wanted to ask, your combo, how did you make it? How come I researched for long, but couldn’t find how you do it?”

Yan Zhao had a blank look, and smiled, “That..Wait until you join [Prague]. I’ll tell you then~”

.....

Damn guy, still hiding secrets..

I’m speechless, this Yan Zhao guy is really stingy. Whatever, I’ll slowly figure it myself, I don’t need help!

I turn around, and look at Qing Qian. I extend my hand and say, “Come on, return the [Chilling Wind Herbs] back to me, I’ll go and make some level 4 mana pills...”

Chapter 32: The Level 30 Ling Wan Er

Yue Qing Qian gracefully advances and hands over the two batches of Chilling Wind Herbs, pouting: “I wanted to keep these batches as a souvenir.”

“For what? I’ll make you a Chilling Wind Pill, it’ll also be a souvenir when you eat it.”

“Assassins don’t use mana, they only use energy”.

“Well, whatever. I’ll return to the city to produce the pills, are you coming with me? Level 4 chilling wind pills restore 300 mana! Is Prague interested in them?

“Of course!”

Yue Qing Qian winks: “Just now during the boss fight, several of our mages ran out of mana, and became sitting ducks. That was the main reason the Generals defeated us!”

I nodded: “Alright, let’s use a return scroll to return to Ba Huang. “

“Fine”

.....

Shua shua!

Two rays of light emerge at the desolate teleportation gate of Ba Huang city. Yep, when it comes to return scrolls, 1 gold a pop is still a luxury for casual players, it can only be afforded by the top guilds and players. Which is why it’s so desolate here.

I went into a general shop to buy batches of Refined Waters and Alchemy Furnaces. After opening the alchemy interface, I enter the materials, so I could start synthesizing the pills. Shortly afterwards, the first Chilling Wind Pill popped in my hands.

Ding!

System Notification: Congratulations, since you are the first player to produce the level 4【Chilling Wind Pill】you get a reward of: Charm +1.

.....

I still have no idea what the charm stat does, but what player in their right mind would dislike having an additional stat? Surely it would come in handy at some point, since it's so scarcely distributed to players. (TL: Charm not equal to Fame)

Yue Qing Qian stood quietly and watched me synthesize the pills.

I glanced towards her and said: "Yue Qing Qian, how much are you going to pay for the level 4 pills?"

Yue Qing Qian thought for a moment before saying: "I have to discuss it with Yan Zhao, it's not my decision to make."

"Alright"

She quickly made a call and responded: "Yan Zhao said that last time we gave 4 silver per level 3 pill, as for the level 4 pill which are 50% more effective, we'll offer a 50% increase in the price. So 6 silver per pill? "

(TL: Yes, it was 5 Silver last time, for the level 3 pills, Yan Zhao is trying to take advantage of Xiao Yao)

My face went pale by their offer: "What! I'm being ripped off here! Is the Prague guild declaring bankruptcy soon? I want at least 10 silvers per level 4 pill. Heck, several other guilds would easily offer 20 or maybe even 30 silvers per pill. As my regulars I'm putting a good offer for ya, but your leader is such a miser!"

Yue Qing Qian makes a faint smile: "Alright alright, the price is 10 silver coins... At least be a little more relaxed, Xiao Yao."

I purse up my lips: "I only make friends to earn more money, nothing more..."

"Okay..."

.....

I quickly create a stall where we could sit while waiting for synthesizing process to be finished, in the meantime we chatted.

“Xiao Yao, did you know that General Li Mu thinks very highly of you? He says that you are the number one healer of Ba Huang City and in addition that you have the highest individual battle potential? What do you think?”

“Lies,” Touching my nose, I bitterly said: “If you looked at the individually abilities of General Wang Jian, Li Mu or almost any other top tier player, they would be capable of killing me instantly in a duel. Even against you, I wouldn’t stand a chance. “

Yue Qing Qian leans closer and smiles:” You are being way too modest, you should remember that your class only wears cloth, and can’t use armor. Other healers would immediately die in a melee situation, yet you were able to kill Wang Jian. Moreover, the timing of your healing is truly outstanding. I have been playing for a long time, and yet at most I’ve only seen 10 with your skills.”

I looked doubtfully at her: “For how long have you been playing?”

Yue Qing Qian proudly pushed out her chest, which was close to a C size, said: “I am 19 years old, and have been playing 3 years. You? “

I smiled:” Hmm... After I retired from the military in 2012, I’ve played for 5 years. I have played <<Conquest>>, <<Overlord>> and similar games in the transition period from 3D to VR. So I have a lot more experience than you.....”

“Ah?”

She looks at me with an astonished look: “Xiao Yao, you retired? You were a soldier?”

I quickly dodge the question and change the topic “Are you and Wei Liang actually sister by blood? Because you look identical, are you guys twins?”

Yue Qing Qian chuckles slightly, but does not pry any deeper “Yes, Wei Liang is my younger twin sister, we play together.”

“Hmm, very well, how did you get to know Yan Zhao then?”

“That’s...” Yue Qing Qian thinks before she says: “He is one of my father’s friends, and a huge fan of VR games. He was one of the founders of Prague and decided to become one of the pioneers in <<Destiny>>. I and my sister started the game together with him, and got a managing position easily.... Xiao Yao, I’ve always thought you were just like a riddle, mysterious.”

I said faintly: “What can I say, I am a complicated person, you know?”

“Bah ! ”

“.....”

.....

After a long time, I was finally done synthesizing the level 4 Chilling Wind Pills. It was a pity that the Chilling Wind Herbs were spread so far apart, so I had only collected enough to create a little over 900 pills. But, this was enough to increase my proficiency in [Alchemy] to the 49% in level 4. Once I get to level 5, no alchemist in the entire game will be able to stand up to me...

I traded 800 Wind Chilling Pills for 80 gold, according to our price of 10 silver a pill. Afterwards I went to the auction site and discovered that gold exchange range had dropped to 20 RMB, so I immediately offered 100 gold for 1900 RMB before the price of gold would drop any further.

Several minutes later someone bought them, this meant I had more than 12000 RMB on my bank account. I’m getting rich!

Yue Qing Qian was happily walking away with the mana pills, when I stopped her by calling her name: “Qing Qian!”

“Huh?”

“I have two pets for sale, would Prague be interested?”

“What pet is it?”

I immediately take out the descriptions for the two Green Rock Skeletons with Excellences of 75% and 49%

.....

“Well...”

Yue Qing Qian squinted her eyes together: “That is one super defensive pet, it’s perfect for tanking...”

I nod: “Your guild’s killing a lot of bosses right? This would definitely be able to substitute for some of your knights or monks and by its default high defense and health it would be invincible, don’t you agree?”

I could see the desire sparkling in Yue Qing Qian eyes, she definitely wanted it.

I looked at her: “Do you not have enough money?”

“Uhhh...”

She nods and says: “Yeah, I really want a pet for tanking, but I can’t use the guild’s funds to buy a pet for myself and my own funds are insufficient. I only have a little more than 20 gold.

I thought for a moment before I said: “Hmmm.... It should be alright to sell this Green Rock Skeleton with a superiority of 75% to you for 20 gold, after all you are the one who buys all of my pills, is that alright?”

“Really?” She was excited.

I nodded: “Yes, really, why would I lie to you?”

“THANKS!!”

There wasn’t any patience left in her, she immediately opened the trade interface and entered 20 gold. The business of selling pets sure was lucrative. At this moment, many players were camping around the Poisonous Grassland looking for level 1 bees to seal, but they clearly had a smaller chance to succeed because of how many people were there. The pioneers were lucky, being the first in new areas meant that one was able to solo hunt for pets.”

.....

I gaze after Yue Qing Qian as she leaves, before I continue onwards to the market square. Surprisingly, the place is completely filled, the eastern side is where pets of all sorts are being sold. But those prices...a killer bee

with a superiority of 37% is going for 100 gold, really, that's a lil too expensive, right?

With some difficulty I found a gap within the seller and settle there before I shout:" Selling a Black Iron tier sword and a level 1 Green Rock Skeleton pet with 5 stars in defense and 4.5 star in health. It's a perfect tank pet. I need to go eat so the highest bid within 20 minutes gets it, bid quickly!"

Soon after I was surrounded with people bidding, the thorn sword was quickly sold for 3 gold. The Green Rock Skeleton however, was very popular because of its superiority of 49%, the price kept rising.

A barbarian carrying a battle axe growled: "I want that Green Rock Skeleton! Sell it to me for 10 gold! Or else don't you even dare to exit the city afterwards – I'll kill you every time I see you!"

A beautiful lady mage approached: "Hello handsome, would you sell it to me for 11 golds?"

A hunched over assassin approached and said: "Young fellow, I'll offer you 13 gold for the Green Rock Skeleton, if you don't sell it to me, I'll make you feel the pain of being stabbed in the back and bleeding to death! Hehe..."

.....

Looking at the vicious mob of people, I sought to escape by pointing to a mage "Hey you! I'll sell it to you for 19 gold, trade me."

Completing the transaction, I earned another 19 gold!

Suddenly the phone rang, it was the gorgeous Lin Wan Er requesting I'd accompany her for a midnight snack.

I quickly disconnect from server, and went offline.

.....

Beneath the girl's dorm, the two attractive beauties were waiting impatiently, I walked towards them and said: "Good evening beautiful ladies"

Dong Cheng Yue giggles before saying: “Xiao Yao, you’re looking good as well”

“.....”

Miss Lin Wan Er laughs, and says: “Alright stop saying useless things! Let’s go eat and come back, with two hours of leveling. I’ll be able level up!”

I said: “There is no need to be in such a hurry right? Why are you trying to raise your level so quickly?”

“I want to raise my level tonight, to become the top player of Fan Shu City”

“What level are you?”

“I’m borderline Level 30.....”

“.....”I took a deep breath, shocked.

Chapter 33: Death's Medicine

Dinner was simple. It consisted of some random Italian cuisine and a cup of tea.

Holding a cup of hot tea, Ling Wan Er sits to the opposite of me quietly. The street lights rush in from the window, illuminating her pale cheek and... her breathtaking breasts. Today, she is wearing a revealing low cut blouse, which causes the boys at the next table to take frequent peeks at her.

“Li Xiao Yao?” Lin Wan Er suddenly asked.

I quickly take my eyes off of her chest, but I fail to control my accelerated heartbeat and say, “Yeah?”

“There doesn’t seem to be many high level players in Ba Huang City.” Lin Wan Er blinks and asks: “Is the Prague’s Guildmaster, Yan Zhao Warrior, the player with highest level? What is his level?”

“Hmm,” I nod: “Yan Zhao Warrior was level 28, but after getting killed by The Generals it dropped down to 27.”

“Oh, The Generals? I’ve never heard of it..... ”

I smile: “They have a handful of high level players, but not enough to go against Prague. So for the time being, they are not well known.”

Lin Wan Er’s eyes glow beautifully with a little laugh: “Oh really? However even with them, Ba Huang City is a lot less competitive than other cities. In addition only a few large guilds such as the Flying Dragon and Prague are in Ba Huang City. Even then, they aren’t the top three guilds, so Ba Huang City’s competition shouldn’t be too rough, you’re so lucky!.”

“Well, that’s not true, since Player Killing(PK) outside the city is very common occurrence here.”

“Ah?” Lin Wan Er looks at me with contempt and says, “Are you afraid of PKing?”

On one side, Dong Cheng Yue taps Lin Wan Er's shoulder and laughs: "Don't say that Wan Er, did you forget his class? Healer has low offense and can only heal. How can he PK, what can he do? Does he use his handsome face to hit another player?..... "

Lin Wan Er purses her red lips: "Which part of him is handsome?"

Dong Cheng Yue narrows her eyes and says: "But I really think he is a handsome and warm person"

Lin Wan Er: "....."

I cough to ease the atmosphere and ask, "Miss, what about Fan Shu City, who is the highest level player?"

"Hero's Tomb's Guild leader – Q Sword! "

"Oh, really? Q Sword, what kind of person is he?" I'm a bit surprised.

Lin Wan Er takes a deep breath making her seductive 34D breasts heave up and down and whispers: "[Q Sword], is the most handsome man in Fan Shu City. In addition, he and [Ice Sword] are at the top of the [hit and recover style]."

"Hit and recover style?"

Dong Chen Yue chuckles: "Xiao Yao, you're so lame, you don't even know the basic tactics of PKing. Hit and Recover Style, Pulse Stopping Style and Thorn style are the top three PKing Styles. [Q Sword], was the top player in <<Overlord>>, he got there with his skills at being a expert in the Hit and Recover Style. In just a few days after he joined <<Destiny>>, he's being called a god by players in Fan Shu City.

Lin Wan Er smiles and says: "Yeah, He is my Idol"

I stare at Lin Wan Er for a few seconds, silent. There's a strange feeling in my heart.

Dong Cheng Yue lays on the desk, and narrows her eyes: "Xiao Yao, you... You don't want Wan Er to have a male idol, right? Don't hide it and answer me directly!"

Suddenly, I feel that Dong Cheng Yue is quite fierce: "Your thinking too

much. Whoever the Miss likes has nothing to do with me. I am only responsible for protecting the Miss, if..."

"If what?" Lin Wan Er asks.

"Nothing...Never mind."

"....."

Dong Chen Yue chuckles: "Well, this atmosphere is really awkward. Xiao Yao, when Wan Er and I are level 30, how about we go to Ba Huang City to see you? Strong or weak, you're our companion, we can't let you stay in Ba Huang city all alone!"

I say: "That's good"

Lin Wan Er pouts and purses her lips: "OK, lets help him level up, poor healer"

Me: "....."

"What's your ID?" Dong Cheng Yue asked.

"[Xiao Yao Zi Zai]"

"Ahh?" Dong Chen Yue's mouth falls open: "What? You are Your that rumored healer, the very first one to be promoted in Ba Huang City?"

I puff out my chest and say, "Yup, awesome right?"

Lin Wan Er jokes: "It doesn't matter, you're still a healerGimme Milk!"

(TL: Awesome in Chinese involves the word, cow -> milk and healers are also jokingly called milkers.)

I clench my fist: "Don't discriminate against my class, even healers have a irreplaceable role in team fighting."

"Lets go home early and rush to level 30!" Lin Wan Er sees that I am pissed and immediately reveals a refreshing smile: "Dong Cheng Yue and I will level our skills to LV-4 and then we will go look for you in Ba Huang City! "

"Ok!"

.....

Back at the dormitory, I didn't connect to the game right away. Instead I open Glasses' notebook and search for any relevant information about [Q Sword]. I became a little dismayed after the search, he is definitely an arch nemesis–

ID: [Q Sword]

Q Sword is the found of Hero's Tomb Guild, the guild ranked second on China's Guild Leaderboard. Since <<Overlord>>, Q Sword has become a legendary player. According to rumors, his real name is Bei Cheng Feng, the successor of Henan's Bei Cheng Freeform Martial Arts' successor. He is also the son of Northern Star Corporation's chairman, and is worth over 100 Billion. Most importantly, Q Sword is very handsome, which causes many female player to chase after him when he enters Fan Shu City.

.....

Pow!

I slammed the laptop shut. Freeform martial arts? Oh, when I was still with that old man, I fought against Freeform martial artists but I never saw Bei Cheng's Freeform martial arts. Maybe, through <<Destiny>> I can face the apex of freeform martial arts.

No wonder Lin Wan Er took notice of Q Sword. He really is exceptional, but ...even though Ling Wan Er has so much interest in him, she's ignoring the master martial artist right next to her!

Enraged, I hook on my helmet. I'll try to get to level 30, although it's still quite far for me, whose level 24. Increasing the level of Baby Bobo is also good. The growth rate of the overlord bee is extremely high and it's my strongest trump card. Raising levels is definitely the road to strength. I must get to level 26 tonight and increase Baby Bobo to 25 in order to be stronger!

Shuaaa!

I'm online inside Ba Huang City.

My first tasks were to repair my equipment and stock up on potions and seal cards. Standing at the North gate of Ba Huang City, I open the map to look for a new place to grind that isn't too close because that's where all the novices are at. The newbs start to drop off after the map is about 20 minutes of walking distance from the city. The maps there have higher level monsters, which is ideal for high-levelled players like me.

Looking around for awhile, I see blood-red dots on the East side of the map. Which means that the monsters there are at least level 30. With Baby Bobo and killing monsters 6 levels above me is not too much of a problem.

After confirming my destination, I set off immediately through a low level monster-infested jungle. I also notice that a level 24 healer is indeed very sought after. Along the way, at least 10 teams have sent party invites to me –

“Hi there, the level 24 Healer. Please join our party, we're going to kill level 25 wild boars. It gives quite a bit of experience and for all cloth armor drops you can have them!” a Barbarian carrying a Battle Axe roars.

Another player, this time a pretty Elf Mage gently flaps her wings, hovering off the ground a few feet in the air, and asks sweetly: “Brother Xiao Yao Zi Zai, do you want to join our team to kill toxic wasps? They are level 27 monster, we will roll for equipments...”

“Yeah, in our team, my sister is 17 years old and doesn't have a boyfriend!”

.....

I politely decline all of the offers. In fact, I didn't send out Baby Bobo, whose appearance is quite unique and bound to attract attention.

After nearly 30 minutes, the monsters around me are level 28 Hyenas and Goblins, but they are not my target. These monsters' offensive and defensive property are relatively average. The only reason I bought so many seal cards was to seal one or two high end attack type pet and sell them back at Ba Huang. In this game, one needs to be patient, killing the same monsters for more than 5 hours in a map should get you a pet and

the chance to become rich. This game requires you to be lucky and tough. I'm definitely tough, back when I was fighting..... Oops! I have to keep going!

Further ahead, a small, empty village appears. But in the corner of the village is a blood red Ba Huang City flag and a small garrison for NPCs.

Carrying my spear, I go towards the garrison. But suddenly two shua sounds shatter the peaceful air and I subconsciously move backwards!

Clap clap!

Two iron arrows pierce the earth. The sentry, an NPC Archer found me!

I quickly raise my spear and say loudly: "Don't shoot we're on the same side! "

The Archer on the outpost laughs: "Ohh, it's an adventurer from Ba Huang, sorry, I thought you were a monster..."

.....

In the camp, an NPC, sitting on a wild boar while holding a battle Axe, smiles at me: "Kid, you sure have some guts to come to this desolate area."

I smile and wave the spear in my hand: "I have more than just guts!"

"Very well!"

The man stands, suddenly words float on top of his head, "Qian Ling, Patrol Captain". Coming over, he pats me on the shoulder, and with a loud laugh: "Boy, I have a very dangerous task, do you have the guts to accept?"

"Yes!"

Qian Lin looks up at the sky and after a deep breath says: "This place, originally belonged to Ba Huang City's duke Luo Lei. Unfortunately, a few months ago an evil mage came here. He developed all kinds of terrible potions, one of them could turn into a living person into a zombie! So this place has become the land of the death with very cruel zombies. They are gathered in the mage's underground lab. Right now, we need a person to

go to the bottom of the labs and find a bottle of Death's Medicine. If you can bring back Death's Medicine, you will be the pride of Ba Huang City and also the pride of the Tian Ling empire. Do you have the guts to take up this task?"

Ding!

System Notification: Do you accept the quest "Death's Medicine"?
(Mission difficulty: B)

.....

Patrol Captain Qian Lin looks at me with contempt and says lightly: "It doesn't matter if you don't go. After all, not everyone is so courageous. If you don't go, you can go back to Ba Huang city and boast about killing countless monsters, drink at the pub and woo women. After all to go or not, is your choice right?"

I gnash my teeth: "This quest... I accept!"

Note: I'm super sorry about being late, the raw for this chapter got deleted and it took me a rlly long time to find another version of it.

BTW, I can't believe I haven't said this yet, HAPPY VALENTINES DAY!

Chapter 34: Early Signs

“You sure are a brave boy!” Qian Lin looked at me, not with praise, but rather with some arrogance as if he was saying, “Little boy, I knew that you would accept when I said that.”

In addition, for a lone player to complete a quest of B difficulty, especially if that player was a healer, would be slightly tough, very hard.

But, a promise is a promise, and since I’ve already promised to get that medicine/potion, I must find a way to get it.

I raised my Ancient shining spear and advanced.

.....

To the north, the entire map was blood-red. That is definitely where the laboratory is, but I have to find the entrance to it first.

Sha sha.....

As I move forward, my white shoes step on the black pliable grass. The entire area around me is filled with bones and the stench of death. The air is filled with flies, and the corpses sometimes even twitch, but I don’t worry since none of the corpses show signs of reincarnation. Even if it does, I would have an advantage, since it would be newly reincarnated.

“Hmmm?”

Looking at the minimap, a small blue dot had disappeared. I knew this was a sign of another player, so I was not alone. There were several reasons for it to suddenly disappear: death or stealth. Of course, a player could also recall back to the city or suddenly go offline, but the chances were slim...

I kept moving forward. At the same time, I sneaked glances behind me. As predicted, invisible footsteps appeared on the delicate grass. Here he comes!

I quickly turned around and swung my spear in a wide arc.

Clang!

The blow of the spear heavily clashed with a green dagger, diverting it and knocking its owner back. The assassination attempt had clearly failed. The assassin who appeared was approximately around 20 years old and carried high level expensive equipment.

ID: Wind Chaser

Level: 25

Race: Undead

Class: Assassin

.....

Wind Chaser saw that his attack had been diverted. and he immediately prepared for round 2. With his dagger, he used【Gouge】, a skill unique to assassins used to stun enemies. It's the ace of their trade.

“Baby Bobo, attack!!”

With a golden hexagram flashing on his stinger, the deadly Baby Bobo quickly emerges and immediately does a Lv. 3【Combo】attack. Two quick attacks come out. Baby Bobo's combo can do a maximum of three attacks and a minimum of two. The skill deals a fatal amount of damage to Wind Chaser.

319!

331!

Being hit by those two strikes, Wind Chaser's body turns limp and slowly collapses to the ground. His resentful voice emerges before he falls: “Xiao Yao Zi Zai, just you wait; this map will be your grave. “

I frowned deeply while looking at his corpse. Where did he come from and what would he gain by killing me? It seemed like he had been waiting for my arrival to assassinate me, but he didn't expect Baby Bobo, which resulted in his death.

I could see two possibilities. Wind Chaser was either from Liu Ying or

The General. However, since the character of the The Generals was pretty decent and they didn't hold a big grudge against me, it could only be Liu Ying. Liu Ying's finally taking action to kill me within Ba Huang City.

I bend down and pick up what Wind Chaser dropped: a green tiered leather armor. Unfortunately, I couldn't equip leather equipment but it should be worth at least a couple of gold coins, so I throw it into my inventory.

I moved on with my spear resting on my shoulder, while shaking my head and saying with a smile, "I don't care if you try to kill me. I'll go and do my mission. If you come, I'll be happy to send you to your grave."

.....

The closer I got to the core of the map, the worse the smell got due to the increase of rotten corpses. Any normal player would have turned off the smell system because of the suffocating smell, but I didn't since I've been accustomed to the smell of death since long ago and I couldn't afford to lose one of my senses when someone is trying to kill me.

In the distance, I saw a bloody, giant's skull that's half buried in the ground. You could see it had recently been placed there, it was still leaking huge droplets of blood and had maggots crawling all over it. There was a large man-sized hole between its sharp teeth. This must be the entrance to the laboratory.

Ughhh....

I almost vomited after seeing the entrance. Whoever designed this map definitely has a really sick taste.

I squint my eyes together as I enter the Giant's head. As expected, there are stone stairs which continue down into darkness. It looks kind of fishy, but I continue anyways.

Ding!

System Notification: You entered the【Black blood Cave – First Floor】(A Wicked Warlock's laboratory)!

.....

Yes, I found it!

In front of me is a swallowing darkness. My vision was limited to about 1-2 meters in front of me. I'm completely dependent on the red dots shown on the minimap to avoid or encounter monsters. As I descend the final step of the stone stairs, I emerge onto a moist stone floor. Less than 10 meters away, there are two red dots, and they're emitting a few low growls.

As I slowly move forward with one hand pressed to the wall, my hand hits a moist object. Bringing my hand to my face, an oily smell invades my nose. Holding up the Ancient Shining Spear and using the light green light emitted from the spear, I saw that my hand had hit a lamp. Underneath the lamp was a steel ring, and after pulling on it, the entire cavern lighted up.

Slightly farther away were two zombies in tattered clothing. I attempt to see their attributes.....

【Merciless Zombie】(Ordinary monster)

Level: 30

Attack: ? ? ?

Defense: ? ? ?

Health: ? ? ?

Skill: ? ? ?

Description: Merciless Zombie, the guardian of the underground Laboratory.

.....

Unfortunately, its level is 6 level higher than mine, so I cannot see any of its attributes, but does it matter? When Baby Bobo and I are together, we're invincible!

I ready my spear before issuing orders to Baby Bobo. As always, he

immediately initiates his attacks with a sting and then a combo. The Merciless Zombie screams and his health drops by 500+. The non-defense orientated monsters simply cannot stand up to Baby Bobo's attacks.

“ROAAAAAAAAAAR”

Waving their nearly fallen heads, the two zombies headbutt Baby Bobo. At the same time, a strange green glow falls on their heads and the attacks instantly connect with Baby Bobo.

211!

189!

Baby Bobo's health points immediately drop into the red zone. Looking at the incredible damage inflicted, I quickly use a Lv. 3【Heal】on him.

I quickly stab the necks of the zombies with my spear and together with Baby Bobo's continuous attacks, we kill the first merciless zombie in around 11 seconds. I could clearly see the huge chunk of experience from killing that zombie, raise my experience bar. That is some legit experience!

In addition to the high XP reward, it also dropped a silver coin.

Slowly but surely, me and Baby Bobo develop a unique teamwork. I would heal him while he would relentlessly attack. But as I pick up the silver coin, I remind myself that there is no shame in letting a pet do the hard work, after all, I was still working hard to heal him.

.....

It didn't take long before the second merciless zombie collapses under the adorable Baby Bobo's continuous attacks. This time, it doesn't drop any silver coin, but a piece of equipment and a blood red card instead.

As I reach down, I see it's a pair of dull green leggings.

【Merciless Death's Shin Guards】(Green Tier)

Type: Steel Armor

Defense: 35

Strength : +9

Level requirement : 25

.....

A typical attack orientated shin guard that could definitely be sold for profit; it gets thrown into my backpack.

More importantly, this blood red card looks a lot more promising. It doesn't dissappoint...

【Fire skeleton】

Attack: ★★★★★

Defense: ★★★★★☆

Health: ★★★★★☆

Agility: ★★☆☆

Magic: ★★☆☆

.....

When I look at the stats, I think for a bit. It surely is a type of pet that would become mainstream at some point, since it is well balanced and offers high basic stat values. Yes, its value isn't nearly equal to Baby Bobo who has 5 stars in attack, but it is still good. It is the type of pet which would be able to hit hard and sustain a good amount of damage for a long time.

Shua!

The illustration card changes into a ray of light as it enters my illustration handbook. I dearly hope that the map contains fire skeletons and hope even more that there are loads of level 1 skeletons. I would get rich!

I quickly continue forward while killing. After all, they are zombies, which means they re-spawn quickly. After quite a while, I finally find the stairs in a corner, which lead to the next level.

When I came down to the next floor, I saw that it was already lighted up

with lamps, and showed level 30 imps carrying tridents. If I had to describe them with one word, it would be ugly. The imps had blood red veins snaking around on their skin, and looked like they would burst at any moment. It seems like they are quite lacking in strength but its probably compensated with increased attack speed, I'm guessing they have an attack speed of around one attack per second. This is gonna be a tough test for my healing skills.

I had the choice between two different corridors, so I chose the one to the right, since I had no need to exterminate every single imp on the floor.

“Chirp chirp!”

The first imp which we fought met his end by a single combo of Baby Bobo. As I approached to pick up the loots, a bang sounded while the imp's body blew up, splattering blood all over me.

.....

Nearly one hour later at the end of the second floor, I found the stairwell to the third floor. Just before I was about to go down, I heard the voice of a distant player speaking.

“Look! There's a monster's corpse! Somebody has gone past here; it must be Xiao Yao Zi Zai. Forward!! That dog made me unable to approach Lin Wan Er! Humph. Just wait and see! I always get the last laugh!”

TL: Soz, was out for the morning and gonna be out for the afternoon also, so prob only chapt of the day. Sorry!

Chapter 35: The Ageless Beauty

Liu Ying! Even before I saw him, I heard him cursing at me. Of course, I would never let him near Ling Wan Er. She knows what he's like and she's disgusted by it, so even if he tried to win her over with his handsome looks or monstrous wealth, like he did with the other 7 top 10 girls, she'll still reject him. After all she doesn't need any money with her dad the chairman of Tian Xin group.

.....

I frowned as I stood on the stairwell to the third floor, this could be a huge problem if Liu Ying had brought a massive amount of players. Especially since they had the sole goal of trying to kill me, while I had a quest to complete.

Well, I had no other choice but to continue downwards and hope for the best.

When I came down to the third floor, the lamps automatically lit up. But it was unnecessary because the entire map was filled with balls of fire! I found them! The Fire Skeletons!

The fire skeletons weren't covered in clothing, instead its entire body was actually covered in a dim flame. When I looked at its status, I saw that it was a level 31 monster, and since it was of the fire attributes its offensive definitely wouldn't be low. Taking a look at my own status, I was at level 24 with 99% experience, and Baby Bobo was level 23. Baby Bobo's level would be at most be equal to my own, since pets cannot outlevel their owners.

"Forward!"

Raising my spear, I sweep and stab towards a fire skeletons weak point, its neck.

147!

189!

My attack is somewhat forced, but thankfully baby bobo takes charge

and hammers away, quickly wiping out 600 health points from the skeleton. Which causes the fire skeleton to rush towards me and punch me in the chest. I was sure if this was reality, my ribs would have been broken.

389!

Damn, it hits really hard. As a healer I have less than 150 points of defense, which is really dangerous in close quarter combating.

I retreat two steps and makes Baby Bobo hold aggro on the skeleton. After around 20 seconds, the fire skeleton emitted a low death roar before collapsing.

Shua!

A golden light emerges and I rose to level 25 with 2% experience. The experience give by these skeletons is very generous. At the same time, baby bobo also reached level 24. This is good. I estimate by the time I kill another 30-40 fire skeletons, I will be at level 26!

With each step forward, me and baby bobo become more coordinated in battling. In less than 1 hour, two golden light emerge in succession. I roses to level 26 and Baby bobo rose to level 25.

[Baby Bobo] (Bee Overlord)

Level: 25

Attack: 369-492

Defense: 246

Health: 615

Magic Power: 246

Skills: **【Combo LV-3】【Stinger LV-3】**

.....

492 attack points! That surpasses lvl 30 melee players unless they hold a divine weapon with 200 attack points. But at the current stage, weapons of 150 attack points are rarely seen. As for baby bobo's defensive power,

he has as much armor as a lvl 30 heavy armor player. This lvl 25 baby bobo can be considered a PK weapon!

I haven't heard anything from Tyrant of Western Chu for the past hour, but I knew it would be too fortunate to assume he was gone. He and his group are probably stuck battling the spawned monsters. He would definitely be more than willing to use a lot of resources to get to me, and there was no way that the level 30+ monsters would delay him forever.

When I looked at the time it was already 1 AM, whatever, I'll sleep in class tomorrow.

I killed endless amounts of skeletons, great experience, it took less than two hours to get to level 27 together with Baby Bobo. Pets had the blessing that they would automatically, as they rose to some levels, get significant increases in attributes, unlike players which heavily relied on items.

As I proceed forward, a huge circular room came into my view. It was densely packed with fire skeletons, and in the middle of skeletons was the stone stairs to the fourth floor. Damn, do I really have to kill all these skeletons? I can barely handle 3 skeletons at once, if there were more, I wouldn't be able to sustain the health of me and my pet.

As I look over the fire skeletons, my eyes suddenly brighten. Looking closely, I see that very near the entrance to the fourth floor there is a smaller fire skeleton, when I look at its rank –

【Fire skeleton】(Ordinary monster)

Level:1

.....

Finally! A level 1 fire skeleton emerged! But I was still outside the sealing range. The sealing range was 40 yards, and I was more than 50 yards away, I knew I had to slowly kill my way forward before I would be able to seal it.

I commanded Baby Bobo to stay in place, as I slowly moved forward. As soon as I aggroed a skeleton, I would run back and me and baby bobo

would finish it off. I kept repeating that.

Barely half an hour later I hear the faint sound of players reaching the third floor.

In the distance, I see a familiar face, with light armor and a long sword, it's Tyrant of Western Chu. As soon as he saw me, his eyes turned red with fury: "Xiao Yao you really are here, I've finally found you. This time, you won't escape even if you grow wings!"

Thankfully there were many respawned fire skeletons between us. He couldn't recklessly charge through them, especially since the fire skeletons had high attack power which meant that if two of them crit, he would be dead before any healer got to him.

Behind Tyrant of Western Chu, Piggy appeared together with Wind Chaser. Wind Chaser looked coldly at me while saying: "Boss, my report was right, wasn't it? He has a quest in this zombie cave."

Tyrant of Western Chu said: "Call everyone down here, so we can start clearing towards him. He has no chance of escaping this time"

After a while 5 mages, 3 healers, 2 musketeers, 3 archers, 7 knights and so on. A total of over 50 people had emerged in the Black Blood cave, Tyrant of Western Chu's entire group. Did he really call so many simply to kill me? Aren't they thinking way too highly of a healer?

Wind Chaser saw my level and said: "Boss, he's at level 27, his level is even higher than yours."

Tyrant of Western Chu chuckles: "So what? I'll make sure he returns to level 26."

Piggy carefully examines the circular room, before he said: "Boss look!"
"What?!"

Piggy points towards one of the fire skeletons: "Look, that's a level 1 fire skeleton. I received the illustration card for it a short while ago."

"Great" Liu Ying's eyes light up and he smiles: "Let's hurry up and clear the path through these fire skeletons and Xiao Yao, that level 1 fire

skeleton is ours!”

.....

Chills went down my back when I looked at their group, they had many long ranged players, one round of shots from the mages and musketeers would be my end. I must remain a fair distance from them or it would be the end.

However, I was completely unwilling to give up on the level 1 fire skeleton, especially after seeing its stats. Even if I die, I must succeed in sealing that pet.

I could hear the constant barrage of their long ranged attacks, in mere seconds they killed another level 31 fire skeletons. It would take them at most two minutes before they would be within range of me. I must destroy their rhythm, one way or another.

I thought about it for a moment before I gave up my progress towards the center and circled to the opposite side of the hall, as far away from them as possible.

“Boss, what is he doing?” Piggy asked.

Liu Ying growls: “He’s probably just scared, it doesn’t matter. Just focus on clearing the path, when we succeed he’ll die in seconds. “

”Okay”

.....

I stood still, before I started controlling Baby Bobo.

Shuaa!

Baby Bobo begins to move at an astonishing speed, rushing into the center area of a group of monsters, attracting nearly a hundred nearby fire skeletons hostility before. charging into Tyrant of Western Chu’s group like a lightning bolt, quite frightened!

“Shit, his pet!!!”Piggy face turn green.

“Hurry and kill his pet. Then the fire skeletons hostility will

dissappear!" shouted Feng Zhe.

Unfortunately, their speed is too slow. By the time archers started aiming at baby bobo, the fire skeletons had already swarmed onto of them. This should teach them to not underestimate their enemy!

.....

"Retreat, withdraw to second floor immediately!" Liu Ying's ability to adapt isn't bad.

However hundreds of fire skeletons had already closed in. Where can they run to? In a blink of an eye, more than half of the players fall. Such a tragic sight, approximately 40 dead bodies lying there, motionless.

"Curse you Xiao Yao Zi Zai. Just you wait, I will make you pay!"

I laugh and resummon Baby Bobo. Once again, we proceed onward clearing monsters. The distance between me and that level 1 fire skeleton is getting closer and closer.

.....

Almost half hours has passed, but Liu Ying still hadn't shown his face. Whatever, the level 1 fire skeleton was only about 42 yards away.

All I need to do is kill another two monsters before I would be in range, my heart is pumping with adrenaline.

Then at this moment, the third floor entrance bursts into noises and sounds. A figure tumbles down from the stairs, sobbing and shouting in pain. It was a female assassin with a extremely beautiful figure, her health's at about 40%. She look very pale, behind her beautiful figure is Wind Chaser pursuing after her.

"Still want to run? Rotten bitch with no sense of shame, go to hell!"

Wind Chaser pulled out a dagger but the female assassin quickly struck his wrists and simultaneously raised her dagger. She then positioned herself behind Wind Chaser and activated the skill backstab.

Puff!

Blood spurted out of Wind Chaser as he slowly fell to the ground, dead!

However, on the girl's shoulder a scarlet flower blossoms. She was shot by a musketeer on Liu Ying's group!

.....

Clenching my teeth, I pull out my spear and rush towards her!

From far away, I give a [Heal] to cure the assassin's health while Baby Bobo quickly dashes toward the musketeer and kills him.

Dragging the girl's arm, I whisper: "Run!"

.....

Upon reaching the inner field, I stop. At this moment, she opens her pair of beautiful eyes and asks: "Your..... Your big bee is very powerful!"

I nodded: "I'm flattered."

During the conversation, I notice her stats...

ID: [The Ageless Beauty]

Level: 24

Race: Human

Class: Assassin

"How did you get Tyrant's men chasing after you?" I ask.

The Ageless Beauty protrudes her small lips: "How should I know? Originally, I planned to come down here to level. On second floor, some random people ambushed me and killed my vampire bat! Hmph! It was given to me by my older brother and they ended up killing it. Therefore I tried to sneak through toward the third floor but they still discovered me!"

I pursed my lips: "Alright, come with me. I'll get the monster's agro and you will be in charge of killing it!"

"Ok!"

.....

I managed to draw over 3 fire skeletons while she relentlessly

backstabbed them from behind, quickly killing them. Finally, I was near enough to seal, I smile at the assassin: “Ageless, I’m going seal that level 1 fire skeleton!”

“Ahh?” She open her mouth and immediately nodded: “Ok!”

Shua!

The first seal flies out, MISS!

The second seal flies out, MISS!

I’m feeling somewhat anxious, beside me Ageless Beauty is even more anxious than I am, Her dagger seems to shine dimly.

When my third seal flies out, a blood red glow sweeps by. A stunned mark appears above Baby Bobo’s head, At the same time, The Ageless Beauty’s beautiful eyes lock onto me, her dagger goes straight through my waist.

312!

Behind me, her bat also attacks, taking out 200+ health. Before I could heal myself, I was already out of health!

.....

.....

Chapter 36: Lower Your Sword!

I turned around and saw Ageless Beauty staring at me with a pair of cold eyes. At the moment of my death, I hear some cold words, “This is what you get for going against Tyrant of Western Chu.”

Cha!

My body becomes limp, and I go into the soul status. I respawn in a nearby graveyard, which is near the NPC guard post that I encountered before. Going to the Black-Blooded cave should only take around 10 minutes, but, while ‘saving’ Ageless from danger, I killed a musketeer, and my name became red. Because of that, I dropped an extra level when I died, dropping from 27 straight down to 25. Sigh. What a huge loss!

I stand alone at the graveyard, and check my item and equipment. I seem to have dropped my white-tiered cloth wrist and leg guards, but luckily I didn’t drop my Ancient Shining Spear, or else that really would have made my heart break. Also, some other non-essential equipment from my bag also dropped. A red-named player’s item drop rate is really huge.

I clench my first, and think back. Ageless Beauty is definitely part of Liu Ying’s group. That guy, to make me take the bait, he used Ageless and Wind Chaser to create such a scene, and Wind Chaser even sacrificed 2 level for Ageless to gain my trust and empathy. All in all, it was a betrayal, sigh...

.....

Without any rage, I smile slightly, and take my Ancient Spear. In my soul form, I head towards the Black-Blooded cave. At the same time, I open my pet window, and my mood just switches instantly. Not towards anger, but towards ecstasy, because in my pet window, I have an extra pet, a Fire Skeleton with lingering flames around it!

I wave my hand over it, and the stats of the Fire Skeleton pop in front of my face, which makes me even happier—

【Fire Skeleton】

Level:1

Attack:★★★★

Defense:★★★★☆

HP:★★★★☆

Agility:★★☆

Magic Power:★★☆

Excellence:100%

.....

100% excellence!!!

The line of words float in front of me, and I feel like my whole body has been electrocuted. Damn, this luck. This might be the first pet that has 100% excellence. Looking at this Fire Skeleton's attack, HP, and the 100% excellence, isn't this a godly pet? In fact, compared to my previous sales of the Silver-Feathered Bird, Killer Bee etc, this Fire Skeleton is on another level!

Great, even though I didn't finish my mission this time, it's fine. This Fire Skeleton will sell for at least 100 gold coins! I'm rich!

I make my way back, and return to the 3rd level of the cave. Looking from afar, I notice that Tyrant of Western Chu, Ageless Beauty and Wind Chaser etc. are grouping together to clear out the Fire Skeletons, slowly advancing towards the staircase going to the 4th level.

My corpse is within the group of people, silently laying there. A system notification says that I can revive right now, but I instantly click the 'No' button. If I revive right now I will get slaughtered instantly!

Looking at my corpse. Ageless Beauty frowns slightly, and says, "Xiao Yao Zi Zai must really hate me right now..."

Wind Chaser spins around and says, "Don't worry about it. The moment this person entered Ba Huang City he has been obstructing [Wrath of the

Heroes]'s plans. Hmph, he deserves to die!"

Yan Suo holds her dagger and says "This...Xiao Yao Zi Zai, is he really Li Xiao Yao, a first year in our Liu Hua university?"

"Yeah, you should be able to check the archives. Li Xiao Yao, a newcomer in the Chinese department's class 1."

Yan Suo still seems very worried.

Liu Ying holds his sword and walks towards her. He embraces her, "Xu Yue, why are you so worried? Remember, you are my women, you need to forever stand by me! Is it that...you've fallen for that little brat?"

Yan Suo's little mouth opens, but she says nothing. After a short while, she suddenly hits Liu Ying's chest, and smiles, "What kind of joke is that? I fall for Li Xiao Yao? Impossible. Although he's very handsome, I don't like weak people. Don't tell me that it's not clear to you who I like?"

Liu Ying laughs, lowers his head and kisses Ageless' lips. "After we finish this map, we'll properly enjoy ourselves! Haha!"

Yan Suo's face becomes red, and continues stay in Liu Ying's embrace.

While holding a gun, Piggy runs towards them, "Cough, Boss. We need to hurry and kill off the monsters so we can enter the 4th level quick right? I feel like Xiao Yao's soul has already come back, or maybe he's even watching at this moment. Are you trying to anger him to death by showing all this love? You know what they say, the more love you show, the faster you die..."

Liu Ying raises his eyebrows, and shouts into the empty space behind him, "Li Xiao Yao, do you see this? She's mine, don't even think about touching her you little brat!"

I clench my fists, and stand there without moving. A gentleman's revenge can wait 10 years! I must have patience.

.....

After half an hour or so, the 40+ people from [Wrath of the Heroes] completely wiped out the Fire Skeletons, and they even got a few Green-

ranked equipment from the drops. All of them are excited, and praised this cave.

The moment before entering the 4th level, Tyrant of Western Chu glanced at my corpse, and says, “You three, stay here to look over his corpse. The rest follow with me into the 4th level, the boss in the cave should still be there, don’t let him ruin our boss hunting!”

“Yes boss!”

One knight and two musketeers stayed next to my corpse.

I choose not to revive, and I follow them in my soul form into the 4th level of the cave. The 4th level is occupied by Black-blood zombies, level 33 monsters with very high attack damage. But Liu Ying brought 40+ people, all over level 20 and promoted, so killing the Black-blood zombies is a piece of cake.

.....

I stand in the corridor of the 4th floor, and look from afar. Mm, behind the crowds of Black-blooded zombies, there’s a grey shadow sitting quietly. He’s holding a staff, with loose hair, and his whole face is black. He doesn’t look anything like a human nor a ghost, extremely frightening. Hovering over him are some eye-catching words—

【Mage Bi Ke】(Gold-ranked Boss)

Level: 35

Attack: ???

Defense: ???

HP: ???

Ability: ???

Description: The evil mage Bi Ke, former mage of the Ba Huang City royal family. When he was young, he travelled to all 7 empires, and had quite a big reputation. Under unique circumstances, he came into contact with dark magic, and was immersed into the darkness. He could no longer be saved. Finally, he created the death medicine, and became one of the

most wanted criminal of Tian Ling Empire.

.....

I take a deep breath. It's a level 35 gold-ranked boss, so it's possible that it will drop gold-ranked equipment! That in itself is very tempting. In addition, no one has a gold-ranked equipment in the entire game, in fact, no one has even seen a silver-ranked equipment. The highest rank currently for equipment is bronze, so the major guilds would be challenging silver and gold-ranked bosses to gain high level equipment. This level 35 gold-ranked boss is quite a good catch.

If it drops a gold-ranked equipment, that would be amazing!

But sadly, I am alone. But how can I possibly let them finish off this boss? Impossible. Also, next to Bi Ke is a bottle of green medicine. Without any doubt, that's the item I need for this mission. If I get the medicine, then my mission is complete.

From afar, Liu Ying also sees the boss, and can't hold his excitement. He slashes with his sharp sword and kills off a Black-blooded zombie, before yelling, "Nice! There's a boss, and it's a gold-ranked one! Li Xiao Yao brought us here, and he gave us a grand gift!"

On the side, Piggy quickly runs and frowns, "Boss, don't be so happy so soon.."

He mutters another few words, and quickly, a knight dies from the claws of a Black-blooded skeleton.

I blink my eyes, and quickly understand. In my soul form, players that are alive can't see me, but other players who are dead and in soul form can see me. They sacrificed a knight to check if I'm poking around or not! Cruel...

.....

Well, I make a quick decision. I called out the system fairy, and disconnected from the game. You might have a devious plan, but I have my own plan. Who's afraid of who!

I take off my helmet, and brew a cup of coffee. Then, I sit on my bed, and peacefully look out into the starry sky.

On the other bed, Glasses also takes off his helmet, and looks at me surprised, “Li guy, everyone else is busy leveling up, how do you have the leisure to drink coffee in the middle of the night?”

I smile a bit, “Nah, I’m having a slight break right now. I’ll get back on later. I’ll play overnight today, and sleep in class tomorrow!”

Glasses also smiles, “Same here. Great minds think alike!”

After waiting for a good 30 minutes, I go back online.

Sha!

My soul is still at the 4th level, and the knight that died already revived. Of course, he wouldn’t wait half an hour just for me. Also, even though there are 40+ people, they may not even be able to finish up a level 35 gold-ranked boss. They know that, so they need to have their whole force available, or else the Mage Bi Ke might wipe out the entire group of [Wrath of the Heroes].

After waiting for nearly 4 hours, it’s almost morning, Finally, Liu Ying and his group finished off all the Black-blooded zombies, and prepared to kill the boss!

“Careful everyone, the monks will go first and attack the boss to get their aggro. Healers heal the monk, and the attacking group will attack in 3s. Ranged attackers be careful who you hit, don’t cause any friendly fire!”

Liu Ying holds his sword, stands aside and commands his force.

On the side, a level 27 monk charges with his steel rod. As expected, he is completely bald, but he has full armor. Before reaching the boss, he stands still, and chants something. Suddenly, his hands spread open, and a golden light envelops the monk. It is a skill the monks get from their promotion—[Lower your Sword] LV-3! It lowers the attack of the target by 3%, and the monk securely gets a lot of aggro!

.....

Jie jie jie jie...

A gloomy laughter echoes throughout the halls. Mage Bi Ke laughs, and suddenly stands up. Magic power sparkles around him, and while holding a staff with a skull, he says, “You little ants. So you’re Ba Huang City’s pawn? Looks like it, come. I’ll open the doors of hell for you! I’ll kill you all!”

He raises his staff, and with a “bang”, a ray of lightning hits the monk!

591!

The entire guild of [Wrath of the Heroes] stares at the monk with their mouths wide open, “Quick, heal him! Go in, GO IN!”

Chapter 37: Jade City Sword

Hong!

A vortex of black flames consume a group of players. 3 wind spirit mages, and a human musketeer fall at the same time. All of them had 500 points of damage dealt to them. Mage Bi Ke's attack is far too strong!

"Careful!" Liu Ying shouts and activates his combo. "These black flames have a cooldown of 15 seconds, ranged people be careful!"

Before he even finished, Mage Bi Ke raises his staff high, and yells, "I look upon the doors of eternal life. Guardian of hell, show your fierce fangs, and let the world know of it's bite—

I, Bi Ke, summon【Hellhound】!"

Growl!!!

A black hexagram swirls, and a blood-red head pokes out of it. Following the head comes blood-red claws. A Hellhound, about the size of a large lion. As soon as it appeared, it clawed at two of the monks from [Wrath of the Heroes]. Pupu The strikes were extremely quick, and the monks fall without a sound.

771!

810!

The Hellhound's attack are very aggressive, the attacks are undoubtedly the bane of melee players!

Yan Suo goes in, reveals her dagger, and when she successfully landed an stun, she yells, "The Hellhound only has 4000 HP, kill it quickly, or else everyone will die! Ranged attackers, change targets!"

Some wind magic starts to stir up, and from afar, a few musketeers kneel down. A strong gunpowder smell spreads, then many bang sounds can be heard. All the musketeers fire, and the HP of the Hellhounds quickly pummels, and when another barrage comes, it gets killed!

.....

The boss uses his flame attack every 15 seconds, and summons a Hellhound every 60 seconds. After understanding this pattern, Liu Ying's group had an easier time fighting him.

Slowly but surely, the Mage's HP is under 20%. Liu Ying's face also slowly becomes relaxed, and shows a smile, "Haha, if this goes on for a few more rotations, we can finish the boss off!"

Piggy aims his gun, and says, "We should still be a bit more cautious. Our group has lost 50% of its original force, and two teams of 10 are almost wiped out..."

Liu Ying nods to that, "Mm, we should be able to kill this boss after 2 minutes or so. Those who died come and quickly revive. Everyone be more serious and finish off this boss, it may even drop a gold-ranked equipment! At that time, us at [Wrath of the Heroes] will be supreme in Ba Huang City!"

.....

I hold my ancient spear, and look from a distance in my soul form. I clench my teeth. I can't revive right now, do I just look at them while they successfully kill off that mage?

At this time, the tables suddenly turn.

Ah!

A sad yell, one swordsman is killed by the Hellhound. Liu Ying's eyes go red, "Tch, how'd that happen?! Healers do your job! Use [Heal]! And... mages! Freeze the Hell Hounds, don't let them get away!"

Behind him, a healer's face goes pale, "Boss, I'm already out of mana. Level 3 [Heal] uses 30 MP, I only have 20 now, and my pills on cooldown!"

A few other mages also clench their teeth, "Our mana pool is almost dry as well..."

"Tch!" Liu Ying seems extremely angry, "Didn't you guys say that you would be able to endure drawn out battles? Why can [Prague] kill gold-ranked bosses while we can't? You're all garbage!!"

On the side, Yan Suo says, "I hear that [Prague] uses level 4 [Chilling Wind Pills] to recover mana. We are using level 3 [Seven-Star Pills], there's a difference of 33% in mana recovery..."

Liu Ying bellows, "I don't care about the casualties! We go all in! The HP of the boss is nearly in critical condition. Who cares if we all die? As long as we kill off the boss, it will be our victory! Tell the 3 people who are guarding outside, come in! "

"We don't need to guard over Xiao Yao's corpse?" Piggy asks surprised.

Liu Ying laughs coldly, "It's been 5 hours, why the hell are we still guarding him? This Li Xiao Yao bastard probably already went to bed. Why would he spend all that time in his soul form just looking at us?"

"Yes boss!"

.....

I hold my ancient spear, and my heart is hammering inside my chest. I immediately run up to the 3rd level, and when the 3 people from [Wrath of the Heroes] enter the 4th floor, I go and revive!

Sha!

My real body appears at the 3rd level, and at the same time I cast [Hemostasis] on myself to recover my HP, and I quickly swallow a [Chilling Wind Pill] to get myself back to my best condition, or full mana. I call Baby Bobo out, ready my spear, and head towards the 4th floor. Hehe, the time for revenge has come. Revenge, cannot wait a single night, so before the sun comes out, I'll kill all of these guys off!

Entering the 4th floor, I see that the predators have become the prey! Without the support of the ranged attacks, the 2 Hellhounds that the mage summoned were not killed in time, rather the vicious Hellhounds were going around and killing everyone else! The ranged and melee attackers of [Wrath of the Heroes] fall like the grass, the end of the battle is near!

I look closely at the HP of the boss. It is almost at 3%, its almost over!

.....

Next to Liu Ying, only 4 members of [Wrath of the Heroes] remain, the rest are all dead!

The assassin Wind Chaser screams, and becomes a pile of ashes after taking the flame attack by the mage. Yan Suo looks behind her, at the remains of Wind Chaser, and sees me! She's yells "Oh god!"

"What's wrong?" Liu Ying turns around as well, and his face goes completely green, "Damn! He...He's still here!"

Piggy runs while holding his gun, "What do we do?"

"The boss only has around 3% HP left, so we need to dodge Xiao Yao's attacks, and concentrate on the boss and finish him off. As long as we get the last hit, we will be victorious!" Liu Ying's full attention is locked on the mage, smart but he's underestimating me.

I take my ancient spear and stab at Piggy's shoulders. A damage message of 189 pops up.

Ah!

He quickly retreats, but my speed isn't slow. I swing my spear towards him from an awkward angle, and hit the retreating Piggy. His HP is nearly gone.

With my third attack, Piggy lowers the gun in his hands, and while dying he sighs, "Actually, we should have never angered this Xiao Yao person..."

In a flash of light, Piggy becomes a corpse, and only Liu Ying and Ageless are left on the battlefield. I was too lazy to kill them, so I wave my hand, and cast [Heal] on the boss!

Sha!

+450!

After the flash of light, Liu Ying's face becomes as purple as an eggplant, "You...Xiao Yao Zi Zai you bastard! There is no one in the world who is more shameless than you! Who in the world heals the boss..."

Before he gets to finish his sentence, the mouth of a Hellhound devourers Tyrant of Western Chu's head!

On the other side, black flames come roaring down, and Ageless is forced to kneel on the ground. Her beautiful face gets cooked to a crisp black, and while her head is smoking, she stares at me, and falls with a surprised face.

.....

Bobo starts attacking the boss, and lands a triple hit combo on the boss. I quickly react to the situation, and dodge the Hellhound's attack. The remaining HP on the boss is less than 500. Ha, I came in at the right time!

Bang

I stab with my ancient spear, and it shatters the heart of the mage!

Finally, the last thread of HP from boss disappears.

.....

Sha!

A ray of golden light falls upon me, and I rise to level 26. The experience that this gold-ranked boss gives is quite plentiful!

Following the death of the mage, the two remaining Hell Hounds also disappear with him. The thing that is most exciting though, is the items that the mage dropped. Within the multiple equipment that the mage dropped, I see a golden light enveloping a long sword. Nice. The sword reaches my hand, and it's...a gold-rank equipment?! Is it?

I quickly rush up and gather all the drops in one swipe. At the same time, I hear a ding next to my ear—

Ding!

System Notification: You have received the first gold-rank equipment—[Jade City Sword], would you like to reveal personal information?

I instantly chose the option that hides my name. Instantly, a ring can be

heard throughout Ba Huang City's skies——

Ding!

System Notification: Player XXXX has received the first ever gold-ranked equipment ——[Jade City Sword]! As a reward, the player will gain +3 charm, +5000 experience points, and 100 gold coins!

.....

Waa~ Gold coins, 100 pieces!

My mouth is unable to close from all the excitement, this reward is really good! <<Destiny>>'s company is indeed very generous, giving me free money!

I collect all the equipment, and also grab the death medicine behind the fallen mage. As I spin around, I notice a few glows from far away. The players from [Wrath of the Heroes] are starting to revive!

Time to bail! I am a red-named player right now, if I die, I will drop equipment. I don't care if I drop all my items, but I cannot drop my [Jade City Sword]!

I take out my city return scroll and start to use it, but I get a message: "You are a red-named player right now, so you cannot be send back to your main city currently. But, you can be transported to the nearby [Tower of Repent]. (Within the [Tower of Repent], every hour online will reduce your sin points by 30.)"

I confirm, and I bail!

.....

Sha!

In the amazed eyes of the [Wrath of the Heroes] members, I leave before they can even start to move on me, and I leave this cursed place. Suddenly, my view darkens before revealing a old brick wall. I was stuck in a jail cell on a medieval tower! I can only see past some iron bars. I see forests and swamps, and also birds chirping, butterflies flying. What a good place to go, sadly I can't leave.

Confirming that the area is a safe zone, I open my bag to check my spoils. [Jade City Sword], the sword with the golden glow is in my hands. When I hold it, a surge of strength enter my body. I wave my hand, and the stats of the long sword appear in front of me. My lord, these stats. This is the godly equipment that I want~

【Jade City's Sword】(Gold-rank equipment)

Attack: 210-300

Strength: +25

Vitality: +20

Others:

-Increases attack damage by 3%

-Ignores 1% of the target's defense

Description: In ancient days, Jade City hanged in the horizon. Strong people from all over the continent came to Jade City and found a godly weapon in Jade City, and that is this Jade City's Sword. According to rumours it contains godly powers that can split mountains and destroy boulders.

Level requirement: 30

.....

Level 30 gold-rank equipment, the attack damage on this is... incredible!

I am extremely excited, but I put the sword back in my bag. I'll put this away for now and wait until I reach level 30, I'll use it then!

Then, I take out the remaining two pieces of equipment, both of which dropped from the gold-ranked boss. But the difference between these items and the sword is astonishing. There was one green-ranked leather wrist protector, one green-ranked leather helmet. I can use neither, so I put that aside as well, and when I return to Ba Huang City to sell it off, I should get quite a bit of gold coins.

.....

Looking at the time, it is 6 am in the morning. Morning classes start at 8, so I wake up at prepare at 7. I'll stay in the [Tower of Repent] for a while, and after I revert back to a white-name I'll go and face the world with a smile!

But I don't just sit around doing nothing. Holding Jade City Sword (Doesn't give any bonus'), and I stab and slash through the air. I continue to practice my new combo, which is a stab+slash+hack+ram+slash combo, 5 continuous strikes! I repeatedly practice it. But sadly no custom skill is created. Whatever, it's no big deal, I can take it slowly, I have plenty of time!

TL: 38? Probably another hour or two

Chapter 38: Meet me at the back gate if you dare!

7:30 in the morning.

Underneath the girl's dorm, I wait patiently for Wan Er and Yue Er. I haven't slept all night and my body is reflecting it. I'm shivering as I wait there while holding a book. Today's lesson is on—ehh, I forgot it. I just randomly brought some books!

After a few minutes, two beauties come out the girl's dorm and they seem to glow in front of my eyes~

Wan Er is holding her books, while wearing a pink and white jacket. She also revealed her snow-white shoulders, making me light headed.

“What's up?”

Wan Er walks up to me, and smiles, “Your eyes are so red, did you not sleep all night to level up?”

I nod, “Yep. Miss, your eyes are really red as well, so you didn't sleep either right? What's your level now?”

Wan Er smacks her lips, and with a slightly arrogant tone she says, “Level 31 assassin, pretty strong eh?”

“Yep, that is pretty strong...”

Before disconnecting, I checked the leaderboard. Ba Huang City's #1 player is still Yan Zhao Warrior, level 29. No matter how fast he tries to level up, Wan Er is already way past them. Also the assassins Qing Qian and Wei Liang are only level 27. The level difference between them is very apparent.

“Let's go to class...We can sleep then...”

“Yeah...”

.....

The 3 of us go to class shoulder to shoulder and this time we didn't sit

arrogantly in the first row, but instead chose the middle rows. Wan Er and Cheng Yue sit near the wall, while I sit in the open, near the walkway. I take my chinese textbook and put it in front of my face, and immediately go to sleep. Behind us, a group of boys are staring at the two beauties Wan Er and Cheng Yue. They want to come closer, but are afraid to do so. So they can only watch from afar, while their hearts pump like crazy.

As I was sleeping, I hear the bell. I raise my head and while still half-asleep and ask, "Time for lunch?"

On the side, Wan Er says without any expression, "Not yet. Only first period has passed..."

"Mm, then I'll sleep for a bit more..."

"Mm."

.....

While hazily passing through the morning, I painfully wait for the 3rd period to end.

I stand up and do some stretching. Ahh, I feel alot better now.

At the same time, loud noises come from outside the classroom.

"What's that?" Wan Er asks surprisingly.

I shake my head, "I don't know, it might be some random big shot coming from the school, I dunno..."

"Oh...Which big shot..."

Before she finishes her sentence, a girl wearing a green T-shirt walks in front of the classroom. She's pretty beautiful and with good body proportions. Her face is fairly nice and it can be the daydream of many guys... I stand in the walkway of the classroom staring at her. It's not because of her beauty. It's because she seems familiar...

"Who's that?" A few boys behind me ask.

Glasses pushes his glasses up and with eyes of passion he says, "Xu Yue, a second year student in the business department, the department

manager, and also in Liu Hua University's top 10 beauties, she is 9th. She is indeed pretty..."

My body involuntarily shakes. Damn, I have a bad feeling about this!

Indeed, Xu Yue walks straight up to me and stops when we are half a meter apart. She stares at me and says with a cold voice, "You...You are Xiao Yao Zi Zai right?"

I take a deep breath, "What about it?"

Xu Yue laughs, "You brat, pretty arrogant huh!"

Behind her, a few more male students come in. A person wearing famous brands and a shiny gold watch comes with them. It's the legendary Liu Ying, nicknamed as the most handsome person in this school.

Liu Ying walks up, puts his hands on Xu Yue's shoulders and stretches his head forward to give her a kiss on her face. He then looks at me and laughs, "Li Xiao Yao, lying dead in a cave, how do you feel?"

I respond, "Pretty good..."

The color of his face changes and he immediately gets angry. Then he says, "You damn crap, I give you a bit of light and you just shine it in my face! Do you still want to play the hero? Let me tell you, Xu Yue is my woman. I don't care whatever stupid dreams you have. Don't even think of getting near Xu Yue. Look yourself in the mirror. Do you think you are good enough for her?"

I rub my mouth and seriously say, "Liu Ying, when did I ever say I wanted to get near Xu Yue? This person...she isn't even my type. Spit whatever you wanted to say and don't talk in riddles!"

Liu Ying's face becomes even more twisted and he points at my nose, "What I want to say is very clear. You vermin, don't even show your face in front of me. Xu Yue is my women and the likes of you shouldn't even breathe the same air as she does. Clear enough for you? Only I can have this women, don't even think about it you bastard!"

“...”

The students around us all go silent. Everyone seems to think that I am going after Xu Yue and was found out. Even Glasses pushes his glasses and says, “Ah Li. You are pretty ambitious eh? You want to get your hands on this beauty...”

“.....”

.....

Right when I become speechless, I smell a sweet fragment beside me. I don't know when Wan Er stood up, but she puts her pulls onto my arms and snuggles her face in my shoulder, and smiles at Liu Ying, “Oh? Is he really not good enough for the likes of Xu Yue? I don't think so. I think that Li Xiao Yao is a pretty good guy...”

After saying that, she sends me a glare and whispers, “Follow it up!!”

I stare blankly, but then I understand the situation. So I take hold her shoulder. I feel the smooth skin and it makes me so happy that I might faint..

“You!”

Liu Ying's whole body shakes. He wanted to come and taunt me at first, but he didn't expect that Wan Er would retaliate with such tactics. Although Xu Yue is pretty, compared to Wan Er she is nothing. With the help of Wan Er, it's Liu Ying and Xu Yue's turn to be speechless!

“You! Just you wait Li Xiao Yao!”

Liu Ying points at my nose and says, “Meet me at the back gate after school if you have the guts!”

After saying that, he takes Xu Yue and angrily rushes out the classroom.

.....

I stand there with a blank face. “Meet me at the back gate after school if you have the guts!” This sentence really brings me back to my primary school days...Those dreamlike times, ahh memories...

On the side, Wan Er glares at me and says, “What, you don’t want to let go anymore?”

I quickly release her hand, “Cough, Miss...”

Wan Er doesn’t say anything. She sits back down and looks at her textbook. She raises her thin finger and smiles, “Today, you owe me one. Remember it...”

I sit back down as well and say in a low voice, “Mm, I will return this favour...”

.....

Cheng Yue leans on the desk and looks at Wan Er. Then she looks at me and smiles, “Wan Er, I think you were very brave just now~ You pull out a sword when you see injustice on the road. A beauty saving a coward~”

Wan Er bends over and laughs, while I scratch my nose, “Yue, don’t say things like that...”

Cheng Yue laughs and asks, “Xiao Yao, Liu Ying told you to come to the back gate after school. Are you going? Everyone is looking forward to the challenge...”

I purse my lips, “Why should I go? His body is so weak because it has been destroyed by wine and beer. He can’t even take a punch. How can he possibly challenge me? I’m not going to bother...”

“Oh right, why does Liu Ying hate you? If I remember correctly, his ID is Tyrant of Western Chu and he’s even in a guild...”

“Mm, yesterday night, we PK’ed a bit...”

“Oh I see...”

Cheng Yue goes online with her cellphone and looks at the forums. Suddenly she says, “Waa, Wan Er look! The first gold-ranked equipment has appeared and it’s a weapon as well—Green City Sword! It’s the weapon for any sword wielder, like swordsman and knights. So it should be the most valuable out of all the weapons! I wonder who’s the lucky guy that got it. Hmm, the name has four characters...Hm... Who would it be...”

Wan Er lightly smiles, “How should I know, my ID is only two characters. Is it...Yan Zhao Warrior?”

TL:Warrior -> Peerless is two characters, Yan Zhao Peerless doesn't work

“I doubt it...” Cheng Yue immediately denies it. “From 2013, the [Prague] guild had always been going downhill and Yan Zhao is trying his best to raise it back up. If he really got the sword. Then he would have shown his name, to spread his reputation. I doubt that he would miss this rare chance. Look, when he got the first bronze helmet, he revealed his ID...”

Wan Er suddenly looks at me and started to laugh.

I feel slightly sad and ask, “Oi, why did you laugh when you looked at me?”

Wan Er is still shaking from laughter and says, “I was just thinking... People like you would never have such good luck to get the [Green City Sword], although your ID is 4 characters...”

“Hmph, wait til the day I show you [Green City Sword]. That'll surprise you eh?”

Wan Er straightens her body and looks at me with a tilted head and says, “Okay, I'll see how you can possibly get the [Green City Sword] to surprise me...”

“...”

.....

Tick!

I get a message on my cell phone telling me that the 100 gold coins I put on sale has been bought by someone for 17 Yuan (~2.7 dollars) apiece. So I got a total of 1700 Yuan (~270 dollars). Just like that, my bank account has 15000 Yuan (~2400 dollars) now.

After eating lunch and escorting the two beauties back to their dorm. I call Song Han's phone number—

TL: Song Han is part of the old Zhan Long team

“Oh Xiao Yao, what’s up? Something happened?”

“Yep, something happened. Do you know when the 2nd version of the [Destiny] helmets will be sold?”

“In about a week right? What about it?”

“I’m here at Liu Hua University’s north entrance. I need to give you something.”

“Okay, I’ll be there in 20 minutes!”

“Okay!”

.....

After 20 minutes, a 10 year old electric motorcycle comes rolling down. Song Han takes off his bike helmet and smiles, “Xiao Yao, what’s the problem?”

I hold out two plastic bags and give it to him, “There’s 15 thousand Yuan here and you should have 5000 yourself. When the helmet is released, grab 2 of them!”

TL: Yeah, Xiao Yao put the money in plastic bags

“Ah! 15 thousand!”

Song Han starts getting excited and his face goes red, “I get one, K gets one, and all that’s remaining is Fox. Our Zhan Long group has some hope of reviving!”

I nod, “Yep, when the helmets are released go buy them. Then find K and Fox. Hurry up and level up in the game or the level differences will be too high and it’ll be hard to revive our group.”

“Okay!”

After seeing Song Han leave, I relax. Well my mission is half way through. I need to continue making money and rebuild Zhan Long!

Chapter 39: Dispute Over the Fire Skeleton

I sit next to the dorm windows after lunch, sipping a glass of water to replenish my energy. Time to go online!

Sha!

I reappear in the [Tower of Repent]. I open up my bag just to make sure that all my equipment is still here, I relax after I seeing my [Green City Sword] and pet [Fire Skeleton]. Mm, last night's painful work isn't wasted. Looking at today when Liu Ying and Xu Yue came to our class to make a huge fuss about it, they must be extremely, extremely angry. Last night I spent 5 hours in soul form observing and waiting for them, Liu Ying must not have thought that someone would have this much patience.

Of course, that was nothing to me. In order to find the perfect moment, I can even wait for 24 hours!

.....

Looking at the time I still have 74 minutes until the [Tower of Repent] gets rid of all my sin points, so I continue trying to make a new combo custom skill!

Rustle rustle...

I step on the stone floor, and suddenly stab the air. The sword goes straight, and it leaves a ripple through the air. I flick my wrist, and slash horizontally. I then hack and ram, then slash horizontally again. A 5 strike combo, a bit similar to Yan Zhao's [Peerless Strike], but I can't seem to activate the custom skill creator from the system.

I can easily use this type of attacking in reality. Of course, that's only when I'm stronger than my opponent so that my rams are effect, or else it wouldn't work. But, if I get this combo working, then my attack damage output would increase exponentially.

.....

An hour passes in a flash, and my red name has disappeared. I take my ancient spear and walk out of the [Tower of Repent]. I'm out of city return

scrolls, so it can't be helped. I'll turn in my quest first, and grab some experience points from it. I'll return to the city after. Luckily, the distance between here and Ba Huang City isn't that far, only about 20 minutes!

20 minutes later, Ba Huang City.

I hear plenty of yelling coming from the stalls, and I look at my own level. Level 26. No need to rush leveling, I'll sell my items first, and I'll plan what to do after earning some gold coins!

I found an empty space in the northern part of Ba Huang City to set up my stall. I wave my hand, and a blood-red hexagram appears on the ground. After some howling sounds, a blazing little skeleton crawls up from the ground, his eyes were bloodshot, and whimpered towards me, showing his allegiance to me. Hehe, the 100% excellence fire skeleton, a attack-vitality-type pet, very useful!

I show the statistics of the fire skeleton to the public while putting the other green-ranked and black-iron tiered equipments onto the stall, and then yell on the top of my lungs, "A groundbreaking pet! Level 1 fire skeleton, 4 stars in attack, 4.5 stars in HP, 100% excellence! Even if you're not buying come take a look, and spread the word! The highest bidder wins, the auction will only last for 30 minutes! There are also green-ranked and black-iron ranked equipments, if you want them hurry up and look!"

After that yell, I instantly attract a large group of players, their main focus is the 100% excellence fire skeleton. At this stage, people with pet seals are rare, and the people that can find and actually seal the level 1 pets are even more rare. This 100% excellence is way too eye-catching!

This pet's attraction rate is so high that people came flashing back into the city. Plenty of people used their city return scroll to come back from outside, just to see this fire skeleton!

Tick!

Yue Qing Qian sends a message to me, "Xiao Yao, Ba Huang City's 100% excellence fire skeleton, is it you who is selling it?"

“Yep, do you want it?” I reply.

“I have a green-rock skeleton already, but my uncle really wants it. 100% excellence, it’s too tempting!”

“Then bring him here!”

“Okay!”

.....

In the crowd, a young swordsman stands there silently. He’s level 28 and is holding a longsword that’s glowing lightly. The armor he’s wearing is at least black-iron ranked, suitable for his class. A line of words hovers over his head, “General Wang Jian” One of the most important figures in the General family. In the entire family, he’s probably second to only General Li Mu.

In the noisy bidding, Wang Jian walks up, glares at me, and says, “Xiao Yao Zi Zai, where did you get this fire skeleton?”

I smile, “Black-blooded cave, what about it?”

“Nothing much, I want it.”

“Throw me a price.”

“100 gold coins.”

After giving his price, the people who were bidding a few silvers, a few gold coins didn’t say anything anymore.

A few seconds after Wang Jian gave his price, another sound rings, “Hehe, you have the nerve to only give 100 gold coins? I’ll give 150 gold coins!”

Coming from a crowd of people walks another swordsman. I look at his face, and damn! It’s Tyrant of Western Chu! This guy wants to buy my fire skeleton!

But, business is business, it doesn’t matter who buys it.

I raise the corner of my mouth, “150 gold coins?”

Tyrant of Western Chu nods, and beside him is Yan Suo, who is leaning

against him while holding a dagger, “What’s wrong? Are you worried that we can’t pay up?”

I shake my head, “Nah, but I’m waiting to see if there’s anyone else who will bid more.”

“Hmph!”

.....

Finally, after a few minutes, Yan Zhao brings a dozen of players from [Prague], including Yue Qing Qian and Yue Wei Liang. The moment they arrive, the air in the plaza seems to have solidified and, and everyone looks towards the group from [Prague]. Everyone seems to be in agreement that Ba Huang City’s future will be in the hands of [Prague]. so everyone is respectful towards them, including Tyrant of Western Chu

“Yan Zhao!!”

General Wang Jian clenches his fist, and prepares to unsheathe his blade.

Yan Zhao’s eyes sweep over Wang Jian, and smiles, “Oh? The General family is here too eh? Good good, this 100% excellence fire skeleton, it seems like everyone wants it!”

After saying that, Yan Zhao raises his fist, and says in a powerful voice, “Xiao Yao Zi Zai! This fire skeleton, I offer 300 gold coins!”

I am obviously very happy since the price is raising!

General Wang Jian sends an icy glare, “Yan Zhao, although this fire skeleton is not bad, its a attack-vitality-type pet. Anyone with a bit of brain know that this is worth at most 200 gold coins, but you offer 300. What is the meaning of this?”

Yan Zhao smiles, “Although it is a attack-vitality type pet, it can greatly help the owner when its level is high enough. The benefits of having a higher level than others, everyone knows it, or else why would I try to be #1 on the leaderboard?”

Wang Jian clamps his fingers together while grinding his teeth and says

, "Fine, since Yan Zhao you want this fire skeleton so badly, I'll give it to you. The General family will give it up."

"Thanks!"

But, on the side, Yan Suo lightly smacks her lips and says, "Since the General family don't want it, then [Wrath of the Heroes] will take it. 400 gold coins."

Xu Yue's words cause Yan Zhao's face to change ugly, "500 gold coins. Continuously raising the price will do no one good. Tyrant of Western Chu, you should understand this."

Pa!

Liu Ying holds onto his sword, and says coldly, "In the world of business, everything is fought fairly. What's this, does Yan Zhao want to use [Prague] to pressure [Wrath of the Heroes]? There seems to be some reliance on your power to bully the weak huh?"

Yan Zhao waves his hand and smiles, "You think too much. I don't mean it that way, but...I've heard, you people from [Wrath of the Heroes] and Xiao Yao have a very deep history of hatred The game hasn't even been out for a week and there's already been over 3 PK fights. Your arch nemesis's pet, do you really want it?"

Liu Ying glares at me, and says lightly, "Xiao Yao Zi Zai? Ha. This person is no more than a piece of trash on the road, and even I'm too lazy to kick it away. But for this fire skeleton, its a smart deal. It's nothing much."

.....

"Sigh..."

Behind Yan Zhao, Qing qian puts her hand on the dagger on her waist, and says quietly, "Does Tyrant of Western Chu have no shame in insulting Xiao Yao?"

Yan Zhao doesn't move, and puts his hand on Qing Qian's dagger, "Don't be angered. We are here to do business, not to start a war."

Liu Ying laughs, “Yan Zhao, you are indeed a clever person that knows circumstances, so, this fire skeleton?”

Yan Zhao smiles lightly “Since you want this fire skeleton so badly, I’ll just let you have it. I can find other attack-type pets!”

“Okay! The fire skeleton belongs to us!” Xu Yue twists her hip, and continues being embraced by Liu Ying.

I take the fire skeleton, and open up the trade window, “Okay. Tyrant of Western Chu, 500 gold coins, and this will belong to you!”

Liu Ying accepts the trade, and quickly, 500 gold coins come rolling in, trade complete!

.....

“Oi!”

After receiving the fire skeleton, Liu Ying reveals a face of despisement, “Li Xiao Yao, just you wait. Today you sell this fire skeleton to me, and perhaps tomorrow I will use this fire skeleton to end your puny life! Just you watch!”

I furrowed my brows, and say, “Ok dog, I still have business to do, leave.”

“You!”

Liu Ying’s hands goes towards his sword, and yells, “You think you’re all mighty? Do you dare to have a duel with me at the northern gate? Life or death, it matters not. Will you come?!”

I look at the [Green City Sword] in my bag, and then I think about how much I need to train my level, and smile, “Nah, it’s fine. I don’t have any time to waste on you player killers, leave...”

While saying that, I wave my hand, and sha a golden hexagram appears, then Baby Bobo is released. I glare at Liu Ying, and say coldly, “Attack damage of 492, level 3 combo strike, can you take it? Leave, don’t shame yourself.”

Liu Ying involuntary shudders, and it seems that he felt the presence of

the Bee Overlord.

.....

On the side, Qing Qian prepares her dagger and says, “Tyrant of Western Chu, if you want to do some player killing, perhaps I’ll keep you entertained?”

Liu Ying looks at Qing Qian, and with dirty eyes, he smiles, “Nah, although the body is pretty good, you’re at most a C cup, I have no interest in you!”

Qing Qian stomps her feet in anger.

Yan Zhao is speechless, and says in a low voice, “Qing Qian, that’s enough. we’ll go and train our levels now, don’t attract unneeded business!”

“Okay...”

The cute little girl looks at me, and then goes with the uncle.

.....

I sit near the city walls, and continue selling items. I sell everything 30% below the market value, so I can quickly clear out my inventory in order to store more equipment in the future. I store the [Green City Sword], and pick up my ancient spear. Today, we will rush to level 30!

TL: Last Chapter today :(, phew went from 34 to 39

Chapter 40: The Letter

I prepare my stuff and get ready to leave, but suddenly my steps go heavy and I don't go anywhere. I collect my thoughts, and think for a while. Ah, I remember. I haven't been to the city master of Ba Huang City recently, so I should check that place out. A lot of high level missions are given by those big shots, so there's no harm in checking him out!

With my Ancient Spear, I ran to the hall of the City Master. Unlike the first time I came here, this time, there were many players hanging around, all hoping for a quest and talking to every NPC in the city hall, they even talked to the servants sweeping the floor!

I went up to Ba Huang City's Master – Duke Luo Lei.

.....

With a bushy jet-black beard, Luo Lei looked at me and laughed. His heavy arm pushed against my shoulder while saying, "Young healer, its quite rare to find someone as young as you with such talent. Alright, since its like this, I have a very important mission for you.

Ding!

System Notification: Because you have more than 15 charm, you have activated a main quest. Would you like to accept the quest [A Letter]? (Difficulty: AA)

....

A letter? Difficulty AA?

My eyes widened, this AA quest must be very savage. For a B level quest, I died a few times,, so this AA quest will probably kill me over and over again?! But, the quest is right in front of me, how can I give it up? Even if I die over and over again, I will finish this.

I press confirm!

Ding!

System Notification: You accepted AA difficulty quest [A Letter!]

Quest Description: With Duke Luo Lei's letter, you must go to the Phoenix Valley to find General Pei stationed there. Give this letter to him, and he will give you your new quest!

.....

With a pop, the lambskin letter went into my bag. It emitted a golden glow, indicating that it was a quest item. After giving me the letter, Duke Luo Lei crosses his arms. At a height of 2.5 meters, he looks like a barbarian rather than a Duke. He stares at me and says, "Young man. I haven't seen that little brat since that faraway expedition 7 years ago. Whether he gets the letter or not depends on you!"

I furrowed my brows. Hm, although I don't understand what Luo Lei just said, if I follow the quest's instructions, I should be fine. First I'll go to the Phoenix Valley, and find General Pei that's stationed there!

Time to go! Destination: Phoenix Valley!

I leave out the northern gate, and scan the area around me, checking for members of [Wrath of the Heroes]. Afterall, I don't want to be ambushed while doing a mission like last time. Then I immediately take my spear and go into the nearby forest, heading towards Phoenix Valley. Its located North-West of Ba Huang City, near the border and next to the ocean. The map is covered in a crimson color, so that means the monsters there have definitely have a higher level than me. Looking at it, it does seem like some place that NPCs would be in...

I avoid the areas where I see monsters to keep a low profile. I release Baby Bobo out, and let him sit on my shoulder, curled into a ball. We hid our strength and another player would only see an ordinary player and his pet going through the forest. After a long journey of 50 minutes, I see a level 33 forest cheetah lying in some bushes, slightly further ahead. This dotted creature seemed very vicious, seems like I can't just avoid them anymore.

.....

Kaa...

The ancient spear stabs through the neck of the forest cheetah. I continue on and see a small hill. After I slipping and tripping up the hill, I finally reach the top of the hill. Looking down, the scene below shocks me. In the large valley, I see NPC soldiers everywhere. Their camps are uncountable, and the battle horses whine constantly. Waves of knights in black armor pass through, with their battle flags flying the wind, on the flags are the emblems of Ba Huang City, same as the one on my shoulder. As long as you belong to Ba Huang City, both players and NPCs have the extra 3% in attack and in defense.

As I go down the hill, I slip, and lose my footing, rolling down the hill and finally falling into a small river. Far away, a few NPC soldiers laugh, “Is that little brat an adventurer from Ba Huang City? He’s too clumsy!”

I let the sneers of the NPC pass by me, and while holding my ancient spear, I walk deep into the army camps. At the middle, I find the largest tent within the entire camp, surrounded by guards holding swords. Before I even entered the tent, a few people take their swords and point them at me, “Halt! Who goes?”

“I’m an ally!”

I show them the emblem on my shoulder, and say, “I am an adventurer from Ba Huang City and under the commands of Duke Luo Lei, I’ve come here to find the General Pei!”

“General Pei?” A guard asks suspiciously, “What’s your proof showing that you were sent by the duke?”

I pull out the letter, and wave it around, “This, isn’t this enough?”

The guards look at it for a second. The imperial stamp for Ba Huang city was on the outside of the letter.

“Ok, that’s fine. Come with me!”

He also shoots a glance at my spear, and shakes his head in disapproval, “These days, healers don’t use staffs but instead use spears, what is going on in the world?”

.....

I follow the guard into the huge tent. In the middle of the tent was a huge sand tray. Beside to the tray stands a person wearing fire-red armor, it's General Pei!

"General, this person says he has a letter for you from the duke!"

"Oh?"

Pei smiles a bit, and with his hands on his sheathed sword, he walks up to me and says, "Boy, although you're an adventurer from Ba Huang City, you look pretty weak, I doubt you even have enough strength to tie up a chicken! How did you reach here? From what I know, the Phoenix Valley is surrounded by thorns and monsters, how can a little healer like you... not be eaten by those creatures?"

I take out the letter, and smile, "If I didn't get this letter to you, how can I possibly relax and be the food the creatures?"

"Haha! Well said!"

Receiving the letter, Pei's face grew dark as he read the letter. He looks at me and says, "This letter seems to be for me, but in reality its for someone else. Do you know about this?"

I shake my head, "I don't know."

Pei clenches his teeth, and punches the tray of sand, and mutters, "That selfish little brat!"

"What's wrong?" I ask.

Pei's face is full of anger, and says, "The duke Luo Lei is one of the country's most respected warrior. He's been in countless battles through his life, and the result is that he founded Ba Huang City. He has a son called Luo Lin. Luo Lin was born a genius. When he was 16, he has already been a well known soldier in the country's special army school. When he was 17 he became a sky knight, and met few rivals. But, when he reached 19, he suddenly left Ba Huang City, disappointing everyone, including his father, and went to a place where no one is willing to go..."

I'm surprised, "What place?"

“The Frozen Wastelands...”

“Frozen Wastelands?” I have no idea where that is.

Pei nods and says, “Within the borders of Ba Huang City, even though there are many beasts that roam freely and many undead, it’s actually not that dangerous. But the area beyond these borders is called the Forbidden Land, where even star class swordsmen have lost their lives. It’s an extremely dangerous place. The brat, Luo Lin wanted to train and raise his skills, and went into the Frozen Wastelands alone. We don’t even know if he’s alive or dead. So I don’t even know if this letter can be sent to the intended owner. Boy. I can’t let you go to the Frozen Wastelands just to get yourself killed!”

I go silent for a moment and weigh the benefits and the consequences. After a couple seconds, I clench my fists, “It’s no problem. How can I give up without even trying?”

Pei looks at me, and laughs, “Boy. Your attitude reminds me of my younger self back when I was still carefree and fearless. That’s fine, but you must show me your strength so I can trust that you can go alone in the Frozen Wastelands!”

I nod, “Fine!”

Ding!

System Notification: Your AA level quest has changed into [Proof of Strength]!

Quest Description: In the maple forest located south of the Phoenix Valley, there is a group of bandits that always rob the nearby villages. When you find the bandits, kill at least 100 of them, and find their tomb robbing logs, pages 1-7. When you bring it back to General Pei, you will receive a grand prize and prove your strength to General Pei!

.....

I get the mission and leave immediately. Summoning Baby Bobo, we head towards the south-west part of the Phoenix Valley. After about 5 minutes, the forests ahead suddenly turn into a fire-red color. We’ve

reached the maple forest! The whole sky, full of falling maple leaves, make me want to just sit down and enjoy the sight. But further within the forest I see lines of smoke snaking out, and tents lined up one after another. Around each tent are 10 or so bandits.

I inch my way forward, and check out the stats of the bandits—

【Bloody Bandits】(Ordinary Monster)

Level: 35

Damage: ???

Defense: ???

HP: ???

Ability: ???

Description: A group of bloodthirsty bandits.

.....

A level 35 monster, that only makes them seem savage. From afar, I call Baby Bobo, and that little guy hones in onto a bandit that is all alone!

After [Combo] and [Stinger], the bandit's health dropped over 700 points, but that's not enough. A level 35 monster usually has 1700 or so HP, so they aren't killed that easily.

"Crap, intruders!!"

After being attacked, the lone bandit alerted the bandits around him, and quickly, the nearest bandit woke up and together they attacked Bobo!

I don't act arrogantly and quickly use [Hemostasis] to recover Baby Bobo's health. At the same time, I ready my spear and help Bobo fight the bandits. After a couple rounds of brawling, the two bandits finally fall. But my mana is pretty much spent. Man, it takes a lot of effort to kill high leveled monsters.

Pa Ta!

When the second bandit died, a sheepskin was left behind. After picking it up, I realized that it was the third page of the [Grave Robber's Log]. On

it, “Today we dug yet another grave. Inside the grave were bronze cauldrons, but sadly they’re mostly broken, or else I would have sold it for a few gold pieces, and maybe I could have even gotten married.”

.....

I throw the log into my bag, and my mouth twitches a bit. Continue!

The bandits’ levels are high, and the experience they give is obviously high as well. After 2 hours, I rose to level 28. At the same time, I killed a bunch of bandits, and they dropped log pages 1-6. I only need the last one.

.....

While I was killing the bandits, I suddenly see a few blue dots on the minimap far away, players are coming!

.....

Sasasasa....

The maple leaves separated, and a beautiful shadow holding a dagger came into the forest. She bends slightly and quickly disappears in the air. In that moment though, I saw her ID—Yan Suo!

Out of all the players possible, [Wrath of the Heroes] send theirs again!

Chapter 41: Wizened Vision

I can see a group of people approaching. In the front is Tyrant of Western Chu! When he sees my lone shadow, he could not help but laugh, "Xiao Yao, where are you going to hide this time? Nobody can help you now."

"...."

The leaves next to Tyrant curved downwards even though nobody was stepping on them. It had to be Ageless Beauty, because invisibility didn't mean that one wouldn't be affected by their surroundings. An assassin's stealth would be especially useless in water since the water would make ripples, clearly showing their position.

When I look behind Tyrant of Western Chu I saw more than a hundred people. As a lone player, I have no chance against them.

I turned around and ran through a thorny field. It would be a waste of time to respond to their nonsense. My main focus should be to finish the quest as quickly as possible and rush towards level 30. My [heal] skill has risen to level 4, which means it now heals 600 health, and Baby Bobo is almost able to solo a bandit at this point.

.....

Whush...

A few shadows fly over me, and before I could respond, arrows started flying towards me.

I try to dodge them, but I still end up getting hit by two of the arrows. I used [Hemostasis] to return to full health, before looking up and seeing three wind elf archers. The archer at the front sneers, "Xiao Yao, with us wind elves scouting, do you still think you can escape? Did you think that [Wrath of Heroes] would let you escape so easily?"

I cry inside, I have no chance to escape from the wind elves; after all, out of the 5 races, they are the only ones who can fly. They could control the situation with long ranged attacks, and Liu Ying had brought more than

10 of them with him.

Behind me, Liu Ying and his men came running. I also knew that somewhere out there, Liu Ying's lover, Ageless Beauty, was approaching to take my life.

I clench my teeth, I knew that I had to let them attack first, but getting killed without returning something wasn't my style. But if I waited for the attackers to attack me and have their names grayed, I could kill them without worrying that I would have a red name.

.....

Shuaaa!

Baby Bobo flies into the air, stinging one of the archers and instantly killing him. They had a grey status, since they had attacked but their attacks had not killed. Which meant they could be killed, without the killer getting chaotic, so Baby Bobo auto retaliated. He moved onto the next archer and made another hit.

412!

One of the main weaknesses of the Wind elves was that when they lost more than 20% of their max health, their wings would break, and thereby losing their flight ability.

I rush forward with my ancient spear, stabbing directly into the abdomen of the archer. I dealt 237 points of damage, it was enough to successfully kill him.

In the air Baby Bobo chases down the last wind elf, it doesn't take long with his superior agility before he makes 2 normal attacks. The three wind elves had turned to ash as they died.

“Go!”

As I'm about to move further away I heard the familiar sound of gunshots, shortly afterwards I feel the pain from two bullets impaling into my back from a musketeer.

257!

224!

Immediately afterwards, I use hemostasis on myself, returning some of my health, while Baby Bobo was sent to attack Piggy!

”Assassins go!”

Tyrant of Western Chu shouted loudly, Baby Bobo suddenly stops midway, he got hit by [Gouge] from Ageless Beauty! Seeing this, Tyrant of Western Chu shouts: “ Mages, Cast [Chilling Wind]!”

There are about 10 mages that simultaneous cast [Chilling Wind] and [Rock Spikes] towards Baby Bobo, a total chaos of spells.

198!

219!

187!

.....

I didn’t even have a chance to even heal Baby Bobo before Baby Bobo was killed.

Liu Ying leaps forward, swinging his sword at me as he shouts: “Xiao Yao, it’s time for some payback.”

Clang!

I held my ancient spear horizontal to block against Liu Ying’s slash. My strength is clearly inferior to a swordsman, as I get forced backwards with each strike. Suddenly my back reaches a thorn bush, and I’m unable to move further back. Two berserkers surge forward with their battle axes using their [Fire Axe] skill toward my right and left shoulder. Unable to defend, a pain erupts from my sides and I slip into the afterlife.

371!

344!

.....

Shuaa!

My soul form appears in the nearby cemetery. I received quite a shock when my hands were empty... This could only mean one thing, that my ancient spear had dropped.

I clench my teeth as I attempt to remain cool, and not explode in anger. As a healer facing so many high leveled players, what can I do? They have 5 Wind elves and can basically one-short baby bobo, my only source of damage now that my Ancient Spear is gone.

With my current level and pet, I would at most be able to take on 3 people, but it would be impossible if one of them had a pet or they have good teamwork.

In spirit form, I sprinted back to my corpse. Like I thought, both Liu Ying and Ageless Beauty were standing guard over my corpse.

Liu Ying is carrying my ancient spear with a pathetic expression on his face: "Unexpectedly, such a trash player like Xiao Yao carries such a good weapon, this ancient spear is now in better hands."

Ageless Beauty smiles charmingly: "Yeah, that Xiao Yao kid, humph, besides looking handsome he doesn't have a single good point.... such a weak and cowardly kid...."

Piggy frowns and disagrees: "Not necessarily, think about how he faced all of us without fear. We should not underestimate him, think of how he's been able to turn the previous situations around."

"Bah ! "

Liu Ying steps on my corpse and says: "See how I'm stepping on him? Who did you say was the most powerful?"

Piggy holds the musket against the ground without uttering a single word.

.....

Ding!

I waited for almost an hour, but they showed no signs of leaving. But a bit later, I received a message from Yue Qing Qian: "Xiao Yao ge-ge, is

your corpse being camped by Tyrant of Western Chu?"

Me: " Yeah, how do you know?"

"Don't worry, I'll gather some people to help you respawn!"

"No!" I hurriedly said : " There is no need for you and Prague to challenge Tyrant of Western Chu because of me, it's simply not worth it. Qing Qian let me handle it."

"No" she insist: " Relax, I won't rely on Prague for this, it'll be me and my friends. I know where you are, so just wait 20 minutes for me".

" Well I can't stop you, so thank you Qing Qian"

"Hehe, no need to be so formal."

"....."

.....

After I turned off the communication with Qing Qian, a drop sound appeared.

System Notification: "Player [Wizened Moon] has sent you a friend request, do you accept?"

Huh, who is this? I accepted the request, and a picture of a beautiful young girl pops up in my friends list. The face looks very familiar but more importantly, she's a level 32 mage.

Ding!

Wizened Moon sent a message: " Hehe, do you know who I am? "

I said: "Dong Cheng Yue ? "

"Yup! Me and Lin Wan Er are in Ba Huang City. But are you being camped?"

I was quite embarrassed: "Well, its [Wrath of Heroes]..."

"What grudges does the [Wrath of Heroes] hold against you?" Dong Cheng Yue becomes indignant: "You're my friend, and Lin Wan Er said, how can we let you be bullied when you are one of us? If we allowed that

our reputation would hit rock bottom.”

I am speechless: “Please, just wait for me in Ba Huang city”

“Okay, hurry up and revive!”

“Mm....”

.....

Before long, another group of people appear near the forest, and I see the shadow of the two beauties from [Prague], indeed, Qing Qian and Wei Liang came!

“Damn it!”

Tyrant of Western Chu suddenly stands up, and looks at them, “Damn [Prague] is coming. Hurry, everyone prepare yourselves, they don’t have many people!”

A few swordsmen go ahead and intercept their opponents, but Qing Qian moves incisively, and with a flash she breaks through. She sprints above the leaves, straight towards the mages of [Wrath of Heroes]. Before she even reached them, a wave of light shatters, and 30+ [Prague] players emerge!

Instantly, both sides collided into each other, and it becomes a battlefield. Players were dying left and right, way quicker than I ever imagined.

Revive!

My body is still lying on the ground, so I call Bobo, and also cast [Heal] on myself to full HP, then I attack weaponless, and command Bobo to attack those damn [Wrath of Heroes] members. First I need to get rid of those mages, or else the people that Qing Qian brought won’t be enough.

Clang!

In the air, two daggers collide. Qing Qian was forced back a few steps, and at the same time the assassin that crossed hits with her was also forced back into a tree, its Ageless Beauty.

Qing Qian looks at Ageless Beauty, and clenches her teeth, “Hmph, this is the women who harmed Xiao Yao? How shameless...”

Xu Yue’s face distorts, “Die!”

In two seconds, Xu Yue falls, killed by Qing Qian’s [Bleed] and [Backstab] combo. She didn’t even have room to retaliate. Its obvious as to who’s inferior to who.

.....

Noticing me, Tyrant of Western Chu yells, “Xiao Yao Zi Zai revived! Everyone kill him first!”.

In the next instant, I become the target of everyone, and Qing Qian yells, “Xiao Yao be careful!”

Being destroyed by the [Chilling Wind] spells and [Armor Break]s attacks, I slowly fall back down. Eh, I’ve died again. That dropped me down to level 26, at the same time, Qing Qian dragged me to her team, which only consisted of two living players, one was Qing Qian and the other was Wei Liang.

Standing in the graveyard, I quickly send a message in the group chat, “Wait for me, I’ll revive immediately, I can get there in 7 minutes!”

“Don’t worry...” Qing Qian says, “There aren’t many [Wrath of Heroes] players still alive, even Tyrant of Western Chu was killed by my sister...”

“Mm that’s good...”

.....

But, after a few seconds, Qing Qian cries out, “Waa, this is...”

The next moment, her soul form appears not far from me, and starts to whine, “A very powerful assassin came, and killed both me and Wei Liang...”

“.....”

.....

A few few minutes later, I return to the battleground, and the battle is

already over. A full ground of corpses, who knows what happened!

On the branches of a tree, a pair of snow white legs are slowly wave back and forth. Its a young girl wearing leather armor, with a fiery-red dagger hanging on her waist. Her left hand supports a heavy, steel umbrella, and her face is nice and soft, with bright eyes and white teeth. Undoubtedly, she's a beauty, and extremely charming. Hovering over her shoulder is a line of golden words, "Fan Shu City's #3 player", which shows who she is. She's sitting there relaxed, and holding the steel umbrella, while staring at all the corpse, and laughs, "Come! Revive one and I'll kill one! Don't touch my person!"

I'm stunned, and when I look at the words hovering over her head, and her face, it seems pretty familiar—

ID: Wizened Vision LV-32 Assassin

.....

Shasha!

Two shadows instantly respawn, Qing Qian and Wei Liang are more rash than me, and instantly pick up their daggers and rush towards the young person on the tree. Qing Qian's eyes are full of anger, and says, "You will die today!"

The stranger jumps down and rushes towards Qing Qian and Wei Liang. A dagger appears in her right hand, and with a clang she knocks Qing Qian back, and with her left hand she swings her heavy umbrella!

Bang!

She opens up her umbrella, and the force pushes Wei Liang back!

I stare at the battle with a blank face, Qing Qian and Wei Liang, they're both top tiered players in [Prague], but they can't even touch their opponent? This...She's a bit overpowered isn't she?

.....

Sha!

I revive, and cast [Hemostasis] on Qing Qian, and say, "Everyone stop!"

All three beauties look towards me.

I feel a bit embarrassed standing there, and say, “We’re all allies...Miss, why’d you come?”

The level 32 assassin Wized Vision, is Wan Er! Who else would it be? Holding the steel umbrella, and staring at me with the beautiful eyes of a Moon Elf, and smiles, “I heard that you were getting bullied around here, so I came to take a look...”

“...”

TL: Wized Vision is only a temporary name and might get changed...
Sorry!

Chapter 42: A Misunderstanding

Buzz!

The bloody dagger emits a red glow, and Qing Qian grinds her teeth, “How can I let this go when you’ve already killed us? I’ll get revenge first and talk later. I don’t care if you’re a high ranked player from Fan Chu City!”

With small steps, Qing Qian shifts left and right on the fallen leaves to gain momentum, and with an exploding PA, she rushes straight towards Lin Wan Er. Suddenly another dagger appears in her left hand and she attacks with both daggers!

“Huh?”

Lin Wan Er uses her left hand to steady the iron umbrella across her chest!

Bam!

Bright sparks fly in every direction. Wan Er’s power is not inferior to Qing Qian’s; it’s even a bit stronger, and when she pushes her arm out, the impact immediately sends Qing Qian flying back. Then, Lin Wan Er uses the force of the impact to propel herself backwards, resulting with both women jumping back to around 3 yards. On top of Li Wan Er’s head, a *Miss* could be seen, meaning that Wei Liang’s sneak attack failed to hit her target. All of this seems to be within Lin Wan Er’s calculations.

Wei Liang’s body becomes unbalanced from her failed strike, and Wan Er takes advantage of it by pushing her with her umbrella, Bang, Wei Liang falls backwards and rolls down the grass, her beautiful face becomes blemished by the grass. She leaps back up and looks at Qing Qian, muttering, “Sister...”

Qing Qian stares at Lin Wan Er while gnashing her teeth.

Wan Er just smiles as she stands there, glowing in the moonlight with no visible tension. Her young figure is draped in leather, and a dark red cloak slightly flutters in the wind behind her. She leans her left hand on

the iron umbrella, and holds a dagger in a right hand. With no rush and a slight grin, she says, “If you two beautiful ladies are Li Xiao Yao’s friends, then can we stop? It was all a mistake...”

Qing Qian says with a cold face, “You insist we should stop? Don’t forget, you killed at least 5 people from Prague, and, in addition to that, I lost 2 levels while Wei Liang lost 3. How do we settle that?”

Wei Liang, with her dagger in hand, snaps as well, “If this is not avenged, other players will think that players of Ba Huang City are easily bullied!”

Lin Wan Er’s dagger movement causes a slight red glow, and she crosses her eyes and smiles, “I’m sorry okay? That...”

At this moment, a voice erupts in the air: “That’s enough Wan Er! Since they are so overbearing, just fight them, and then apologize to Li Xiao Yao afterwards. Hmph. Otherwise, they’ll think people from Fan Chu City are like persimmon and can be easily squashed!”

.....

Qing Qian looks up and sees a flying Wind Elf. Level 32 Mage, Wizen Moon!

Sha!

On the ground, a berserker from [Prague] stands up and mutters into the air: “Damn... Wizen Moon, a mage and ranked as the seventh highest level player in Fan Chu City. Also Wizen Vision, an assassin ranked at the third highest level in Fan Chu City. Not only is she the best assassin in that city, she is also said to be the best and strongest in the server...”

“So that’s the back up?” Qing Qian lightly looks up.

.....

I quickly step in between Wan Er and Qing Qian, and say, “It’s all a misunderstanding!”

I point towards Wan Er and introduce her to Qing Qian, saying, “Qing

Qian, these two are Wizened Vision and Wizened Moon. They are my friends in real life from a university, and they came to Ba Huang City to look for me.”

Then, I look at Wan Er and point to Qing Qian, saying, “Miss, this is Qing Qian. Although she’s from the [Prague] Guild, she is also my friend, and she helps me out a lot. While my corpse was being watched, she brought members from [Prague] to help reclaim my corpse. But due to my negligence, I didn’t know that you two would come so soon. If I had, none of this would happen....”

Wan Er blinks her eyes: “They...really were trying to help you fight your enemies?”

I nodded, “Yeah. ”

“Then it is really a misunderstanding.....”

Wan Er walks to Qing Qian and Wei Liang, slightly lowers her body, and with an elegant smile, she says “I did not know you two were helping Li Xiao Yao. I am sorry, and I know saying these words do not amount to much, so I will compensate you out of sincerity...”

With that, Lin Wan Er’s little hand takes out a helmet with a golden glow from her bag and hands it to Qing Qian before smiling and says, “This level 27 bronze cold scale battle helmet is a drop from a level 31 BOSS. Wizened Moon and I are unable to wear it, so is it enough for Prague’s guild? Please accept it along with my sincerity.....”

Qing Qian intended to not relent, but after looking at the helmet, her eyes revealed great desire. Indeed, this level 27 bronze helmet is unique, and while Qing Qian is unable to wear armor type, Yan Zhao Warrior can definitely use this helmet to boost his defense and offense.

Acquiring the scale helmet, Qing Qian shows a slight grin and laughs, “I’m surprised that Xiao Yao has friends this strong. Two beauties who are among the top ten players from Fan Chu City, are actually friends with Xiao Yao. It’s hard to imagine, since I only thought this idiot only plays by himself! ”

“Ahem,” I cough, “Hey, don’t take the opportunity to insult me.....”

Qing Qian chuckles, “Okay. Let bygones be bygones. I’ll accept this helmet and I thank you for the gift, Wizened Vision. Wei Liang and I, along with everybody else who has lost a lot of experience will accept this apology but what should we do about these corpses from [Wrath of Heroes]?”

Lin Wan Er pouts and purses her lips: “Ah, camping corpses is so boring”

I say, “Don’t be like that. Just stay here for another half an hour, since I still have a quest here and must kill some bandits for the last quest item in order to complete a AA-rank quest”

“What?” Lin Wan Er, stunned, shouts with her small mouth, her beautiful enticing breasts moving up and down. “You...you’ve got AA-level main quest? ”

“Yes, otherwise I would not agree to let Qing Qian bring people to help.....”

“Okay” Dong Cheng Yue finally flies down to the group with her wings behind her while carrying a green salk staff and says with a smile: ” Wan Er and I have nothing to do.. so we will help you complete your task....”

I’m embarrassed, “But...but...this task cannot be shared...”

“That’s okay. We can kill monsters for their experience, since their levels are pretty high....”

“Ok!”

.....

Zap!

A light breaks through the clouds, and shines throughout the jungle.

Lin Wan Er just stands there, allowing her body to soak up the sun. Her snow white skin seems to suffer some burn damage, since smoke starts to appear little by little. This is caused by a racial disadvantage, since for

moon elves, during the day, attack damage is dropped by 25% and the damage from direct sunlight is 1% of health lost per second.

I look at her but do not say anything.

Lin Wan Er blinks her beautiful eyes, “What’s wrong?”

I point to her smooth shoulders, “Miss, you’re releasing smoke.....”

Lin Wan Er makes an “Oh” then lifts up her iron umbrella and suddenly, with a whoosh, a dark red umbrella opens up and covers her from the sun. Looking at it, I can only see up to her beautiful mouth. Well, this is also a sight to behold. During the daytime in Ba Huang City’s territory, one can see plenty of users with umbrellas training their levels. Due to the racial disadvantage of being a Moon Spirit, its restricted to only females, but the system gives additional options when making the character, such as facial and body modifications. Because of this, Moon Spirits became the most fascinating race for all male players, and if there are any Moon Spirits training by your side, your fighting prowess can be unlimited!

“Oh...this is”

Lin Wan Er goes to the corpse and kicks it with her white leg, causing it to roll over and reveal its face, becoming slightly surprised: “How can this person be so familiar? ”

Dong Cheng Yue quietly says: “Isn’t he...? ”

Lin Wan Er instantly understood everything, “Hmm, I see... so that’s why Liu Ying and Xu Yue came to our classroom to cause trouble for Li Xiao Yao that day....”

I point to the other side: “There, that smoking temptress is Xu Yue, ahem, one of our University’s top ten beauties....”

Dong Cheng Yue chuckles, “I heard Xiao Yao was attacked sneakily in a zombie cave by the [Wrath of Heroes] guild. Additionally, in order to get his attention, this Xu Yue disguised as an innocent player getting chased, and then killed him. Afterwards, they all laughed at him for trying to be a good guy, right?”

My face turns red, “A thing of the past, don’t mention it...”

Lin Wan Er purses her lips and blinks her eyes: “You like her?”

I look down: “No...”

“No? Why did you blush then? ”

“Miss, your robe’s loose”

“..... Go to hell!!”

.....

And so, Qing Qian watches over the corpses with a group of friends, and every time players from [Wrath of Heroes] resurrect, they would be killed again. After a while, none of them dare to resurrect anymore.

I go along with Wan Er and Dong Cheng to kill thieves. With them besides me it becomes a pleasure to kill these monsters.

“Are they the thieves?” Cheng Yue asks.

“Ok, I’ll run ahead and lead! ”

“No, don’t, all you have to do is heal Wan Er. ”

Dong Cheng Yue raises her staff to use her Cold Wind Spell, a direct hit on a bandit, dealing “417” damage. I secretly wonder about how much mp is required to that cause much damage.

The roaring thief rushes forward, and Lin Wan Er brings her dagger up and uses the skill, [Gouge]!

319!

With small pretty steps she maneuvers around and floats behind the monster, and then uses the skills [Hemorrhage] and [Backstab] simultaneously with her dagger!

447!

512!”

Dong Cheng Yue instantly uses a Fire Spell on another target, causing the banditto collapse suddenly. Damn, they are able to kill the bandits

with zero injuries. The degree of understanding between the two girls is really outstanding!

Raising my two hands, I am speechless, “You.. ...that’s how you two train to increase your level?”

“Yes, what’s wrong?” Dong Cheng Yue chuckles.

“It’s too strong.”

Lin Wan Er: “Li Xiao Yao, what do you rely on to train? Look at your level; you fought and died many times against others, yet your level is not low...”

With a raise of my hand, a golden hexagram appears. Baby Bobo comes out, with its wings flapping, and I simultaneously share the properties of my pet with the two!

TL: Wizeded Stuff IS NOT FINAL! Team still needs to come up with names for them and many other :(

Chapter 43: Cloudy Moon Staff

"What is this?!"

Miss Lin Wan Er stood with a blank face and blinking several times in shock as she reread the information again and again. Finally, she snapped out of her trance and looked at me like I was a monster, "5 stars in attack, 4 stars in defense and 4.5 stars in agility with a 97 degree of excellence... This monster is a beast... so that's why you're so successful in Ba Huang City even though you're a groupless healer."

My face grew pale, "You got it all wrong! I'm quite talented as well you know? Also, I have some good friends here, Qing Qian and Wei Liang, they have been helping out a lot!"

Lin Wan Er glanced at me, "I think they've been charmed by you, right?"

I said quite sorely, "Don't you dare to say anything thing, I'll..."

The beautiful missy looks charmingly at me, "You'll what? You want to fight me? Come on~ Let's fight~."

I look down and endure it, "Never mind..."

Dong Cheng Yue said smilingly, "This Bee Overlord is pretty good. Me and Wan Er's pets are killer bees with 87 and 79 excellence. These are considered quite high-class but compared with yours we would be embarrassed to show them off..."

"..."

.....

We continued killing thieves, taking less than 10 minutes before the last page of the diary dropped. As I quite joyful picked up the last page I said, "Okay, now the task is complete, would you follow me down to turn it in, or...?"

Lin Wan Er asks, "Are there any follow up quests?"

"There probably are, but first add me as a friend, okay Miss?"

"....." Lin Wan Er bite her lip quite flirty, with a teasing look in her eyes:

“But I do not add male friends, unless they are extremely handsome.”

I feel a tiny flame of fury in my heart as I clench my fist, “Will you add me or not?”

Lin Wan Er beautiful eyes continue teasing me, “How scary~What is a healer with no weapon going to do to me~”

“.....”

As she sees I remain silent, she smiles and says: “Oh well, I’ll make an exception even though you are not handsome.”

Dong Cheng Yue is speechless, “How is Xiao Yao not handsome? I think he’s the best looking guy at the university..”

Wan Er replies, “Cheng Yue, did Xiao Yao bribe you to say that?”

Dong Cheng Yue, “No...?”

.....

I put together the 7 pages to complete the logbook and said good bye to Qing Qian and Wei Liang who were still camping the corpses.

Afterwards, I lead Wan Er and Cheng Yue over the hills towards General Pei. Cheng Yue was flying and acting as a scout since the surrounding area had quite high-leveled monsters, but it was not monsters that we feared, it was the players. Cheng Yue and Wan Er had bronze weapons, so of course they would be the target of other people.

We entered the camp and immediately walked towards the General’s large tent. I went with the two girls at my side, and pulled out the journal from my inventory and said: “General I’m here to deliver the journal, as you requested.”

General Pei showed an surprised expression, but quickly changed it to a smile, “Young healer, you haven’t disappointed me. You have proved your courage and strength, so come forth to receive your reward. “

Ding!

System Notification: You completed the first stage of the AA level quest [The letter]. Your reward is 6500 experience, 2 points in charm, 20 gold

coins and [Cloudy moon staff].

.....

Whoosh!

Golden rays swirl around me as I rise to level 27, but the two young girls paid no attention to me and looked astonished as they said, “Cloudy moon staff?”

There was no chance for me to say anything about this matter, so I open up my bag, and take out the bright, silver staff. I wave my hand, and all the stats appear in front of me—

【Cloudy Moon Staff】(Silver Tier)

Magic Damage: 105-170

Magic Power: +20

Strength: +17

Additional: Increase spell damage by 1.2%

Level requirement: 30

.....

I take the Cloudy Moon Staff, and hand it to Wan Er, saying, “I don’t like to owe people favors. Since you didn’t kill both Qing Qian and Wei Liang again and even offered the helmet, please take this as a compensation.”

Lin Wan Er eyes glows excited as she holds the Cloudy Moon Staff, “Silver-ranked weapon... It’s probably only inferior to the Jade City’s Sword because it’s the first silver-ranked weapon in the server.”

Naturally after accepting the staff, as Lin Wan Er offered it to Cheng Yue, “Cheng Yue, now you can finally deal more than 500 damage!”

Cheng Yue is super excited, overjoyed having gotten this new weapon. Then she looks at me and says, “Xiao Yao, why didn’t you directly offer this staff to me?”

I smiled, “I feared that you would misunderstand it as love at first sight. And also, this staff is a silver-ranked weapon, I can’t give it out for free, so

if I give it to you, it'll cost at least 500 gold coins....”

Dong Cheng Yue booed at me, “Disgusting..”

Lin Wan Er covered her mouth, trying not to laugh.

.....

I continued the dialogue with General Pei, “Sir, what do you want me to do next?”

“Please wait a moment...”

General Pei stamps the letters before submitting it back to me and says, “Now this letter carries the stamp of the Imperial army. With this letter, the border patrols will let you go to the Chilling Wastelands. If you have some luck, you might be able to find Luo Lin and at that time, hand him this letter. Hopefully he will write a reply to the Duke, which you must deliver as well before the duke will reward you!”

I nods and say, “Thank you sir.”

I put the letter into my backpack as we leave the tent. After exiting, I immediately opened the quest log to look for the position of Luo Lin. Unfortunately there was no specific location, the only information available was that he was somewhere in the Frozen Wastelands.

.....

The further north we moved the colder it got. The cold wind washes over the forests. At some point Dong Cheng Yue drops down from the sky because it's too cold for her to continue flying. Her cheeks are quite pale, “It's so cold, I can't fly anymore.”

Lin Wan Er carries her iron umbrella on her shoulder and on her small charming waist she wears her daggers. She looks at me and says: “Xiao Yao, did you confirm that the quest location is in the north? We've been walking for more than an hour now and you haven't told us anything. You wouldn't lie to me and Dong Cheng Yue simply to have us walk with you, would you?”

I shake my head: “The mission objective is in the north, but there is no

clear location. In addition this is a high leveled location, so there should definitely be someone out here. Just how many levels are between us and the monsters?

Lin Wan Er narrows her eyes, saying, “Well look ahead, see that polar bear? I can’t even see its stats, so it’s at least level 39. Why don’t you kill it?”

“Alright, I’ll give it a try.” I summoned Baby Bobo and said, “Summon your pets to distract it before dealing damage. We’ll let the pets tank it, as a level 39 monster, it’ll hit hard. I’ll take care of the healing, so just focus on dealing damage.”

“Relax, its not going to destroy our group.”

“You never know!”

The three bees hum through the air as they rush forward using their Stinger and Combos to hit the foreheads of the polar bear. Lin Wan Er and Dong Cheng Yue’s killer bees only dealt an average of 100 damage per hit. It’s kind of pathetic compared to Baby Bobo which dealt an average of 250 per hit. The ice polar bear turns its head in annoyance.

Roar!

The polar bear wildly waves its paws and hits Cheng Yue’s killer bee

Pa!

988!

An instant kill. The killer bee fell to the ground.

Cheng Yue’s eyebrows shoot up and she quickly starts casting [Icicle] and [Rock Spikes] at the polar bear with the Cloudy Moon Staff. Earlier I gave her 3 level 4 Chilling Wind Pill, so she doesn’t have to worry about mana loss.

Shortly afterwards Lin Wan Er’s killer bee was hit by a deadly paw and fell lifeless to the ground. Lin Wan Er practically flew forward to the back of the Polar Bear and immediately used Backstab. From the high amount of damage, the Polar Bear’s attention immediately shifted from Baby Bobo

To Lin Wan Er. A quick paw flew towards her.

Bang!

Lin Wan Er defended herself with the iron umbrella and only lost 270 health but got knocked back, gliding quite far back. Yet she was unyielding in front of the mighty Polar Bear. She immediately rushes forward again with her dagger ready to strike. I have to switch between healing Baby Bobo and Lin Wan Er to keep both of them alive. Dong Cheng Yue is freely casting spells whenever the cooldowns come down.

Almost a whole minute later the Ice Polar Bear finally draw its last breath and fell to the ground, dropping a mere 3 silver coins..

All of us took a deep breath. This brutal battle had finally been concluded. I looked into the distance where the snow was dropping while frowning and said, "The quest indicator clearly shows it should be somewhere in this Frozen Wasteland, so it should appear somewhere..."

Wan Er looks at the oceans of snow and says, "You want..us to come with you into the depths of this barren land?"

I nod, "Mm, I only have you guys. If you guys don't come with me, then all I can do is die and revive non-stop until I get to my goal. Although I can't really provide much help if those bears 1-shot everyone..."

Dong Cheng Yue chuckles and says, "It's fine, we'll just kill them all, and send you straight to your goal! Wan Er, let's go!"

"But I really hope that these Polar Bears drop some suitable high level equipment."

.....

So we ventured forth into the depth of the Frozen Wasteland. The further we got, the higher levels the Ice Polar Bears became. It became more and more difficult to withstand their attacks, especially since Lin Wan Er and Dong Cheng Yue's pets kept dying and soon they were under level 20. Baby Bobo also dropped a few levels, but he had more survivability than their killer bees.

Bang!

A dagger stabbed through the throat of the Polar Bear, and under the powerful strike of Wan Er, the level 40 Polar Bear falls. It dropped a piece of snow white equipment. When I picked it up I saw it was a wrist guard.

【Polar Bear Wrist Guard】(Bronze Tier)

Armor type: Leather

Defense: 100

Agility: +21

Additional: Increases instant kill chance by 0.2%.

Level requirement : 34

.....

When Lin Wan Er saw its attributes she became speechless, “I only need one more level to equip this, and the stats are pretty decent as well.”

Dong Cheng Yue points into the distance, “I think we’re near the end of our adventure, look over there Xiao Yao...”

Following Dong Cheng Yue’s direction I looked into the far distance. I saw a snow covered mountain range and on the peak was an old worn down castle. I would probably be able to find Liu Ling in the castle, hopefully I can finish my quest there!

TL: Probs 2 chaps today! Uhh, 2 hour later?

Chapter 44: Dragon City

Ling Wan Er shows a smile, “Well, Li Xiao Yao, Dong Cheng and I are only accompanying you up to here. Since there are no more monsters ahead, we’ll be going back to Fan Shu City to train our pets. I hope you can rush to become the first healer to reach level 40...Oh, and don’t die...”

“.....”

The two of them pulls out a city return scroll, and one by one they turn into white light and disappear from my sight, I rub Baby Bobo’s head lightly and say, “Let’s go! Let’s show em how strong we get next time we meet! ”

.....

I equip a white staff dropped by a Polar bear. It has no properties except that it adds 50+ points of attack damage, which is better than nothing. We keep moving forward through the snow towards the barren landscape.

“HouHou.....”

In the mountains, the cry of the wolves can be heard, but I don’t think about them. They are a probably a bunch of high level wolves, me solo them? What a joke.

While I’m in a valley, my body suddenly starts shaking... I confirm that its not the cold, but the earth that is shaking! Shortly, the entire ground starts to tremble!

“What is this?!” I hold the staff firmly.

At this time, a huge figure appears in the hills about a hundred meters away. It’s at least 10 meters tall with a humongous stone hammer in its hand. The monster body is covered in green hair, and it has only one eye in the middle of its face, just like a Cyclops. Damn, it’s a legendary monster!

“Pow!”

I decisively lie down under tall green bristlegrass that’s around 20 cm

tall and stare at the Cyclops from a distance. Level: ??, attribute:?? It's a good thing to stay far away from this monster, or else I would die in a blink of an eye!

“HouHou.....”

The Cyclops is roaring at a black tiger monster in front of it, whose body is covered in blood-red flames. The tiger opens its bloody jaws and its hair stands up when it roars back with anger and fear.

The one-eyed giant madly roars back and sends its stone hammer out. With a bang, it hits the forehead of the giant beast, causing blood to splatter everywhere. The giant beast counters by using its claws to hit the left leg of the one-eyed giant, leaving several bloody scratches. A giant and a monster are having a death match near the border. Soon, the ground is completely dyed red from the fresh blood.

.....

I gnash my teeth, waiting for an opportunity. Once the two giants are low in health, I will go and... and...and what?! Those monsters have so much health and their levels are at least over 100, which means Baby Bobo can't even break their defense, and I'm not interesting in committing suicide...

Gnashing my teeth in anger while helplessly waiting there, the two monsters' fight has become more fierce, with blood splattering everywhere.

After a few minutes, I hear another roar. I see a barbarian with chains in hand flying down from the hills while yelling, “Evil livestock, how dare you act unruly in the wilderness of Dragon City? Come, let me kill you to feed the mouths of the hungry citizens of Dragon City! ”

Whoosh!

He suddenly sends out his chains and the spike goes through the beast's neck just like a gun, and instantly kills it!

I stare at him, while trying to read his stats—

[Beast Tamer Da Ling]

Level: ???

Attack: ???

Defense: ???

HP: ???

Abilities: ???

Description: One of the guardians of Dragon City. BeastTamer Da Ling is responsible for cleaning up wild animals near Dragon City, allowing safe passage for convoys. Additionally, he is also responsible for training new soldiers, who are also known as the mighty warriors loyal only to Dragon City's owner, [Luo Lin], and they will forever be loyal to him.

.....

A Beast Tamer.....??

I was confused but after looking at the map, I realize that the Dragon City is definitely in front of me. It's located hundreds of meters high up on the snowy mountains. Although it looks like its been abandoned for thousands of years, its actually filled with vitality. Gee, this is a miraculous city, I wonder if there are any dragon there!

While the thoughts were going through my mind, Da Lin wielded his chains to surround the cyclops' head, and then with a sudden pull, splat! The cyclops' head gets separated from his massive body, and roll down dying the snow with a bloody crimson.

I grind my teeth and look. Damn. I can't even hurt this kind of boss level NPC!

Just then, I sense danger around me, every nerve in my body tells me to escape! Not good, I have been discovered!

Dragging my staff, I retreated. But Da Lin drifted like a shadow towards me and with abang, he crushes the snow in front of me. He growled while looking at me ferociously, "Son, who are you? Why did you come to Dragon City? Are you a spy from Fiery Cloud City? You ought to die!"

I take several steps back, and stand up straight, while flashing my arm badge. I then say in a shaky voice, "I.....I am an adventurer from Ba Huang City, I've come here looking for someone!"

"Oh, really?"

The anger in Da Lin's eyes weakens and he says, "A Ba Huang City boy running to Dragon City to look for someone. Who are you trying to trick? Hmph, the world does not know the existence of Dragon City. They are all cowards! They don't even dare to come north and to face these monsters! Heh, you must be lying!"

I respond: "Coward. Who's a coward? I came here, and I can face the monsters. How is that considered to be how a coward acts? "

"What? You are really looking for someone?"

"Yes!"

Da Lin narrows his eyes and smiles, "Who are you looking for?"

I take out the letter from my bag and answer, "I am looking for a man called Luo Ling....."

"Ah?!" Da Lin shakes and says, "Luo LingYou.....You are looking for King Luo Lin, Dragon City's king? You really are a spy, and you're here to destroy the city, aren't you?"

I stare at him, "I'm only one person, how can I possibly destroy Dragon City? Look at the seal on this letter. If Luo Lin is the King of Dragon City, then this letter is written by the father of the king of Dragon City! "

"Is it Is it true?"

Da Lin immediately opens the letter and baffles, "I can't understand these imperial texts! Damn, but this seal I think that King Luo Ling has a medal like that! Are you really a lackey sent here by Ba Huang City?! OK, I'll take you to see Luo Lin Wang, and he will be able to tell whether you are a spy or not based on his wisdom!"

After saying that, Da Lin grabs my shoulders and lifts me up. After a moment, he chains the giant monsters, and, with a huge roar, heads up

the mountain carrying the huge bodies. The wind is roaring against my ears while the snow is pouring continuously. Damn, it is really cold. In a blink of an eye, he arrives at the edge of the city. He then yells out a roar, "I am Da Lin, lower the rope!"

Whoosh! An iron chain falls down the city wall, and Da Lin puts me on top of the giants' corpses. Then, with one hand, he climbs up the city.

Pa!

I suddenly fall into the city grounds. After steadying my legs, I jump down from the corpses. I look around, and see an icy floor. In addition, dozens of NPC soldiers around the city are on guard, but since they're wearing cloaks, I can't see their appearances.

"Come on, son!"

.....

Da Lin shoves me as I enter the barren city, and through a corridor, I see a group of young warriors practicing fencing in a training field far away. Even further ahead is a column of cavalry rapidly galloping, and leading them is a white horse. The rider, wearing a snow white cloak, jumps down to dismount in front of Da Lin. The cloak is then removed and an exceedingly beautiful face immediately appears right before me. She looks at Da Lin and asks, "What did you bring us today?"

Da Lin smiles compliantly, "Captain Frost, I have tons of meat which will fill us for half a month, and a spy who has letters for Luo Lin.. ..."

I grind my teeth, "I told you, I am not a spy!"

The beautiful NPC woman, with words hovering over her head declaring [Captain Frost of the Dragon Riders in Dragon City], comes closer to take a look at me and with a smile she says, "The great king, Luo Ling, will know whether you're a spy or not! Come with me, I will take you to King Luo Ling!"

"Okay..."

.....

Four guards, equipped with swords, stand beside me for “protection”, and I follow Frost to the inner core of the castle. Walking along a long tunnel for a quite a while, we finally arrive in the hall. It’s very plain, even lacking a decent desk. A black haired man, with his sword in hand, is standing at the edge of the hall, his knife shaped eyebrows locked. Above his head is a line of words: “King Luo Ling of Dragon City”.

“Sir Luo Lin!”

Frost gets down on one knee and respectfully says, “I’ve returned from patrolling. In addition, I found a messenger that might be a spy.....”

“Oh, really? A messenger?”

Luo Lin raises his head to look at me, and a pair of black eyes filled with wisdom and courage look at me. It almost seems that it is able to peer into my heart! He says, “Young adventurer, what kind of letter do you have for me?”

I hand him the parchment, then stand in silence.

.....

Luo Lin reads the letters and starts to tremble, his eyes turning red, and stands up with clenched fists, taking a deep breath of relief. He says, “I turned my back on my country, and I turned my back on my loving father...”

Frost looks up, “My Lord, what’s wrong?”

“Nothing” Luo Lin waves his hands and continues, “Back then, I disappointed my country and came to this deserted city, and established Dragon City. However, I failed to live up to my father’s expectations. Now, my father, Duke Luo Lei, sent me these letters to make sure I am still well, so I have to write him a reply letter.”

Frost nods: “My Lord, that is human nature. I will personally send your reply to Ba Huang city! ”

“No!”

Luo Lin shakes his head: “Captain Frost. You are a native of Dragon

City, so you will be considered an alien in Ba Huang City. It's better to let the adventurer bring the reply back ...”

“Yes, my Lord!”

.....

I rub my hands, secretly in glee. After experiencing multiple deaths, the AA-level task is finally nearing completion. I don't know what the system will reward me, but after getting the fantastic awards, I'll make sure to give a good lesson to my pals at [Wrath of Heroes]!

Chapter 45: Silver Locked Battle Boots

“Come with me, I’ll show you the way! ”

Captain Frost says coldly to me after Luo Ling finishes writing his letter and gives it to me.

With the sheepskin letter in hand, I follow and observe Frost from behind. Her long hair drapes over her elaborate shoulder armor, showing her tender side. But, she holds a white jade sword with snow-white armor. Her slender white legs fall on a pair of battle boots, leaving small footprints behind.

Once outside, I look up into the snowing sky. Meanwhile, Frost scrunches her eyebrows slightly and says, “The winter’s early this year. Food hasn’t been stocked and fire wood hasn’t been prepared. While the beasts are all around us in the forest, our warriors are low in numbers. I don’t know if we can get through this winter...”

Beast Trainer Dalin comes over with his chains and smiles: “Captain Frost, there’s no need to worry. I will hunt for more beasts to ensure that everyone in Dragon City has enough to eat for the winter...Although the seven empires have many talented warriors, their warriors are too pampered to come and help Dragon City. After all, nobody wants to be here without food..... ”

Frost brushes the snow from her eyelashes and says with a sense of importance: “No, we must acquire more people of talent. I can feel an evil power to the north of Dragon City. Dragon City was established in this mountain to block these evil spirits from invading our homelands. We need more people to help defend the city and its inhabitants! ”

DaLin smiles: “I know, Captain Frost, I’ll try to hunt for experienced men in General Pei’s army and make them work for Dragon City! ”

Captain Frost frowns: “If they don’t volunteer to support Dragon City, then what’s the point in bringing them? They’ll just desert the army, and besides, Dragon City’s warriors are blessed with talent and each of them are equal to 10 men. I don’t want to have cowards. They will only make us

even more vulnerable”

Dalin , frustrated, questions: “What do you want? ”

Captain Frost hesitantly replies: “I do not know”

.....

I stand on the sidelines listening silently. Eventually, I gather my courage and holding my staff, I say, “I...In fact, I am more than willing to join Dragon City. But, I don’t know if you would like to receive me? ”

“Oh, really? ”

Dalin looks at me, and then throw his head up, laughing, causing the nearby wall to tremble. He then looks at me once more before wiping away his tears and says: “Wow, haha, you’re an interesting one ... but ... A delicate healer like you wants to join Dragon City? Please, you’re killing me! Can you even kill a Wild Beast? Can you kill a Cyclops? If not, Dragon City does not need anyone to feed its horses!”

I clench my teeth and glare at the Beast Trainer without saying a word.

Captain Frost walks towards us and observes me with her eyes. Suddenly, her white hand presses down on my shoulders and she lightly smiles: “Your talent is quite high, unfortunately you don’t have the right class. You were born to be a warrior rather than a healer. Do you sincerely want to join the Dragon City? ”

I nod: “Yes, very much so! ”

Captain Frost laughs: “But you are from Ba Huang City, an adventurer under Duke Luo Lei! Why do you want to give up Ba Huang City’s honor to join the Dragon City, where it is cold and there’s not enough food; a place where evil beasts rampage. Tell me, why would you leave Ba Huang City? ”

I make a fist and answer without hesitation: “That’s because I have some slight issues with other people in Ba Huang City!”

Frost snorts a quick laugh and her cold face before, became much more human, “Oh, hopefully what you said is true.....”

I'm speechless, it was real! I'm at odds with [Wrath of Heroes] in Ba Huang City. Liu Ying has invested a lot of money into this game to recruit and make his guild stronger day by day, so I'd probably get killed and killed over and over again. Even if I have courage, I still lack the manpower to go against his guild. Thus, if I joined Dragon City, I'd be happy and free instead of worrying for my life every day!

Dalin pleads: "Captain, you must remain calm. This kid is probably can't even kill a chicken. If he joins Dragon City, our average standards will go down! You must be careful with this guy, don't accept just because handsome... .."

Frost slightly stunned, turns on Dalin, her eyes reveal a killing intent: "What are you saying?"

Dalin trembles with fear and immediately falls to his knees: "This subordinate talks foolishly and should be punished to death!"

Frost doesn't respond to the Beast Trainer, but instead, looks at me and says: "Young healer, I've decided. But if you want to join Dragon City, then you must be approved by King Luo Ling. Therefore, you need to get a letter of introduction from Duke Luo Lei. Only then can you join the Dragon City and be one of us!"

I take a deep breath and nod: "Ok, I will not let you down! "

After that, I pull out a portal scroll and use it.

Shua!

After returning to Ba Huang City, I head straight to the city hall with my staff. Inside the city hall, Duke Luo Lei is still sitting in his throne. When I come upon him, he immediately gets up. His wrinkled face turns into a huge smile and asks: "Young man, what news do you bring me? "

I take out Luo Ling's letter and say, "I found Luo Ling in the cold and barren lands, here is his reply! "

"Ah ! "

Luo Lei becomes extremely exciting while holding the letter, repeating,

“My son is not dead, he is not dead”

He finishes reading the letter and, several seconds later, says, “I know that his establishment, Dragon City needs resources. But the Frozen wasteland is a restricted area for me, so, I can only send a hundred soldiers to escort supplies and resources to Dragon City. This is already in violation of the Empire’s pact, but I hope my son does not blame me.”

I nodded: “He will definitely be grateful towards you! ”

Luo Lei smiles and looks at me: “Young man, I am really thankful for helping me accomplish my wish. Here, this is your reward! ”

.....

Ding!

System Notification: Congratulations! You have completed the AA main quest [The Letter]. As a reward, you will receive experience +29000, gold +200, charm +7, and get the quest reward items: [Silver Locked Battle Boots]!

.....

Shua!

A golden light fell, and I level up to 29. AA-level Main Quests’ rewards were extremely useful and were no joke. I open my inventory and find a new pair of silver boots lying in there quietly. I take it out and look at the attributes-

[Silver Locked Battle Boots] (Silver Tier)

Type: Armor

Defense: 75

Strength: +25

Endurance: +21

Additional: Increases attack damage by 0.7%

Required level: 30

.....

Damn, the properties of these level 30 silver boots are really good. It helps with two stats and they both gain 20+ points. In addition, there's the 0.7% damage bonus. This is the perfect equipment for players at this stage! However, I am just a Healer and it isn't useful for me at all Wait, Captain Frost said that if I join Dragon City, I can change classes. That means, I might be able to use these boots after all, so I put them back in the parcel!

I look at Luo Lei once more: "Duke, I have one more request"

"What is it?" "Luo Lei looks at me in surprise.

"The evil beasts are rampaging around Dragon City, which creates a dangerous situation for warriors stationed in the city. So, as an adventurer from Ba Huang City, I would like to contribute to Dragon City. I hope that you can write a letter of introduction for me to give to Luo Ling, so that I can become a member of Dragon City. However, my heart will always belong to Ba Huang City...."

Luo Lei thinks about it for a long time and finally nods: "Yes, you are my benefactor who has reunited my son and I. I will write one for you!"

After a few seconds, I head out with the letter of recommendation!

.....

I repair my equipment, resupply my potions/pills and portal scrolls, before heading out!

But at the northern gate, a group of players were blocking the way and creating lots of noise. Many of them are from Prague!

"No, how can you make such a decision. Qing Qian has helped developed our guild so much. How can you give her such a heavy punishment for something so small?!"

"Yes, Uncle, please reconsider..."

.....

In the crowd, Yan Zhao Warrior stands there dressed in a glowing

armor and with his cold eyes, he raises his sword and yells: “Quiet! ”

The hundreds of players from Prague immediately go silent.

Yan Zhao Warrior sweeps his eyes around and in a low voice: “Qing Qian is a daughter of my friend, so I certainly don’t want to mistreat her. But, since we are a big guild, Prague must abide by its rules. I repeatedly said that in the early stages of this game, Prague will give priority to leveling and killing bosses. We will not involve ourselves with intentional PKs. Moreover, we shouldn’t go and provoke other guilds. But because of one person, Xiao Yao Zi Zai, Qing Qian took members from Prague to provoke [Wrath of Heroes]. She must be punished, so she will be kicked out of Prague for a week, I’ll add her back in afterwards!”

The group of people stands there silently.

Qing Qian takes out her blood dagger and looks at the people. She then says: “I know all of you mean well, but I it’s ok, you don’t have to say anything. I’ll gladly accept uncle’s punishment and will leave... .. but, Prague isn’t an official guild in game, so I don’t know how to quit..... ”

Qing Qian grins while Yan Zhao Warrior’s face turns green.

.....

Sha sha!

I drag my staff and move forward, separating the crowd. Step by step, I head towards Yan Zhao Warrior and say, “Uncle Yan Zhao, it’s all my fault, so please don’t take it out on Qing Qian. Rather, I’ll take responsibility!”

Chapter 46: Challenging The Top Player

“You’ll take responsibility? ”

Yan Zhao Warrior suddenly looks at me and says in a low voice: “Xiao Yao, I know you and Qing Qian have a good relationship, but as a man, you shouldn’t involve others in your disputes. When seeing that Qing Qian wanted to take people to help you, you should’ve tried your hardest to prevent her from coming, rather than raising hostility between [Prague] and [Wrath of Heroes]!”

Facing the aggressive level 31 Swordsman, I, with a robe and a staff, look straight into his eyes and fearlessly say: “Being a man, I only know how to aid my friends when they are in a difficult situation. I know Qing Qian is my friend, and I will not allow anyone to bully her. I also know that being a leader, one should bear the fault of his subordinates instead of aggressively holding them responsible. Uncle Yan Zhao, do you deserve to be the leader of Prague?!”

.....

It was so silent, even the sound of a pin drop could be heard.

Yan Zhao Warrior is the top player in Ba Huang City, the leader of Prague, and even created his own combo, Peerless Strike. No one has dared to challenge him yet!

Qing Qian is standing there with a silly expression. Looking at my back, she mutters: “Xiao Yao ...”

Wei Liang’s pair of beautiful eyes are filled with worry as she whispers: “He’s dead, Xiao Yao is about to understand the wrath of Uncle Yan Zhao. He is really going to die ...”

.....

Yan Zhao Warrior’s eyes are about to pop while looking at me. After a full minute, he suddenly reaches behind to pull out his sword and says: “Xiao Yao, I am really happy that Qing Qian has you as a friend, but do you know the consequences of your actions? Come, show me the strength

of the best Healer in Ba Huang City. Let me confirm if you're worthy enough for Qing Qian to be kicked out of Prague over. If you have no strength and only empty words, I can only see you as a worthless kid! ”

Pa!

A blood-red flag falls on the ground –

Ding!

System Notification: Player “Yan Zhao Warrior” issues you a challenge. Do you accept? (When the player is killed, there are no item/stat losses)

.....

I raise my hand and wave my staff to accept the the challenge while my left foot stomps the ground. A golden-hexagram shines and Baby Bobo comes out on my right, buzzing and ready.

“Brother Xiao Yao... ..” Qing Qian sees me accept the challenge, her delicate shoulders are trembling and her eyes red as if almost crying.

I close my eyes and the voices around me disappear. My entire body enters a state of meditation and my senses become sharper than ever. I might be able to win against him if I wasn't a Healer. Everybody knows how strong Yan Zhao Warrior is, and even if it's Lin Wan Er, the odds of winning may only be 50%. The odds for me to win is basically non-existent.

My mind goes through countless tactics, and finally I choose one: I'll first kill Yan Zhao Warrior's 74% excellence killer bee and then use level 3 Heals to keep my health from falling and use Baby Bobo's strong attacks to kill Yan Zhao Warrior. I can win with this tactic!

System begins countdown while thousands of eyes stare at us-

“3! ”

“2! ”

“1! ”

Begin!

Sure enough, right when the battle begins, Yan Zhao Warrior summons his killer bee to fly forward while he runs to the left, trying to avoid Baby Bobo. He's making sure to keep his health at a decent level before going in for the killing blow!

.....

Baby Bobo flies to killer bee and the two pets both use their combo skills! Baby Bobo triumphantly cries out as his three strikes connect, each hit dealing more than 300 points of damage, while the killer bee's attack against Baby Bobo only did 600 damage. To make things better, with one cast of Heal, Baby Bobo's health is full again!

"Flip"

Yan Zhao's Killer bee falls to the ground, becoming a dead wasp. The players gathered let out a gasp. Who would have thought, Yan Zhao Warrior's pet dies in a blink of an eye!

"Ding....."

A piercing sound emerges as the tip Yan Zhao Warrior's sword glows with a golden hexagram: a level 4 combo! A Level 3 combo has a 50% chance to hit 3 times, while the level 4 combo has an 80% chance to hit 3 times. Additionally, it increases the damage dealt per strike!

Seeing that the opponent's blade is about to fall, I immediately try anticipate the direction it'll come and try to dodge. I slide backwards to the rear, while raising my staff across my chest to parry!

"Bang....."

Sparks appear around my staff. With the monstrous power behind the strike, I almost lose my balance. Consecutive numbers appear on top of my head –

"MISS! "

"147! "

"+160! "

"374! "

.....

Even though the first strike of the combo missed and the second blow was parried which lowers the damage, if I hadn't used Hemostasis after parrying the second strike, the third strike would have killed me.

Yan Zhao Warrior shows a surprised pair of eyes: "Eh? " It's hard for him to believe that his first strike missed, but as a veteran of many battles, he didn't dwell on it and does not wait for me to adjust my off-balance stance, and raises his sword and a blood-red glow appears, Lv.4 [Heavy Strike]!

Lv.4 Heavy Cut increases the damage of a single strike by 4%. Yan Zhao Warrior' base damage is already extremely scary to me since my defense is only 85, but with the addition of 4%, his attacks are a nightmare!

Heavy Cut takes 0.5 seconds to prepare so I thrust my staff straight out, using it like a sword, and quickly splice, split cut, ram, then slice again in a continuous attack. Unfortunately, its not a combo, but it still does 280 damage and knocks Yan Zhao Warrior back a half step and his [Heavy Cut] is interrupted.

Yan Zhao Warrior's face turns purple in anger and he sweeps his sword forward!

I see an opportunity and drop my body, the sword edge narrowly misses my forehead. Keng!It cuts the city wall behind me, causing sparks and gravel to fly out. I get nightmares thinking about how much it would have hurt if that actually hit me.

I smoothly roll to the side and use a Lv.3 Heal to go back to full health. I command Baby Bobo to fly back and use Sting, which hits heavily on Yan Zhao Warrior's shoulder!

Ding Ding!

"297! "

Gee, his defense is really high!

"DIE!"

Facing Baby Bobo, Yan Zhao Warrior does not hesitate to use a killing skill, he used Peerless Strike!

Peerless Strike is a combo composed of a straight thrust, slice, slice, kick, and finally a straight cut. The first three attacks are too fast and cannot be interrupted, but there's a .3 second gap before the kick. I figured this out after I repeatedly watched videos of his combo skill. The only weakness that I could find was the gap between the kick which is probably why his combo skill is only evaluated at A by the system!

Utilizing the 0.3 seconds gap, I fly forward before Yan Zhao Warrior begins his kick and stomp heavily on his foot!

“BAM! ”

The airflow becomes agitated but Yan Zhao Warrior's last two strikes disappear! Baby Bobo's health is low, but he just needs to land a critical hit and Yan Zhao Warrior would perish!

“Brush! ”

“254! ”

Unfortunately, it was not a fatal blow, and Yan Zhao Warrior has about 200 health left. He lands a hit on Baby Bobo, and Baby Bobo dies buzzing. My two healing skills still have 6 seconds on cooldown, so I had no way of saving Bobo, or the outcome of this match.

“Go to hell! ”

After killing Baby Bobo, Yan Zhao Warrior jumps forward, his sword blowing past my defending staff, and two consecutive strikes hit my shoulders!

“365! ”

“331! ”

My body is sent flying back with a BANG! and lands heavily in the corner, lowering my health to 0!

Ding!

System Notification: Player “Xiao Yao Zi Zai” has lost the challenge.
“Yan Zhao Warrior” Wins!

.....

“Beautiful! Leader won. Such a beautiful win! ”

“Uncle Yan Zhao is really the best in Ba Huang City! ”

“The Combo skill strikes and Xiao Yao is dead! ”

Everybody congratulates Yan Zhao Warrior, but his face shows no sign of happiness. Instead, he glares at me and then suspiciously looks at his sword. He seems to be very puzzled as to how I broke his combo. This duel seems to be a big deal, but although no one says it, a fight between a Healer and a Swordsman is not a fair fight. Yan Zhao Warrior missed his first combo, and his Peerless Strike was cut off. It can be said that this was his defeat even though he won the duel!

“Rustle”

Qing Qian steps forward and reaches out to take my arm. Looking at me with her red eyes: “Brother Xiao Yao, I’m really sorry... .. really sorry. It’s all my fault”

I shake my head and whisper: “It’s my fault, I caused this mess”

Qing Qian almost cried: “Brother Xiao Yao, why are you so nice to me?”

“Because Qing Qian is also good to me?”

Qing Qian: “.....”

.....

Yan Zhao Warrior stands there and coldly looks at me: “Xiao Yao, I don’t care what kind of relationship you have with [Wrath of Heroes], but remember, do not to involve [Prague] in personal matters. We will not participate in any of your feuds. Qing Qian might be your friend, but do you even know how to cherish friends?”

I stand up slap the dust off, and say: “Uncle Yan Zhao, as a friend of Qing Qian, in fact, I suggest that she should permanently leave [Prague]

guild and if I had a guild, I would ask her to join! ”

“You!” ”

Facing such a poacher, Yan Zhao Warrior's' face turns green. He points his sword directly at me: “Xiao Yao, you're no match for me, so what makes you say that? ”

I take my staff with me and say: “I may not be a match for you now, but that does not mean I will never match you in the future ...”

The Zhan Long Stats System

Before, I post chapter 47, I should probably make sure that the stat system in Zhan Long is clear.

1) Stat points – Each level up gives 10 stat points

2) Stats – Endurance, Defense, Strength, Magic Power, Agility

3)Correlations

Strength – Adds attack

Endurance – Adds health

Defense – Adds Defense

Magic Power – Adds Mana/magic damage

Agility – Adds movement speed – Not shown in basic stat list

4) Perhaps the most important – Growth Rates – (0.1 – 1.0)

Given a growth rate of .1, 10 stat points would give +1 in that field.

Hopefully this helped, and sorry if the previous statements were misleading.

Chapter 47: Dragon City'S Scavenger

Carrying my staff, I slowly departed towards the Ba Huang City northern gate.

Yue Qing Qian chased after me as I left. Standing outside the city wall covered with moss, she looks at me: "Xiao Yao brother....."

She almost about to cry in tears. I turned around and faced Yue Qing Qian. I held out my hand and gently stroked her snow white chin. Smiling I tell her: " I have to raise my level, when I'm strong enough, I'll be back to completely defeat Yan Zhao uncle, and take you away from Prague. Please wait for me to return!"

Yue Qing Qian unexpectedly nods, tears trickle down her cheek, "pow" each and every small teardrops splashes on the stone road.

Yan Zhao Warrior follow closely behind carrying a sword,looking very agitated and gritting his teeth. I'm guessing Yan Zhao must hate me with his entire soul, while Yue Wei Liang stand there expressionless: "Older sister.....Xiao Yao....."

.....

I turn away and quickly disappear in the forest with Baby Bobo. Carrying my staff, I swiftly run toward Dragon City.

It is 5 o'clock in the afternoon and Lin Wan Er hasn't called me yet, not that im feeling anxious to go eat, besides my main priority is to go to Dragon City and maybe change my class.

Many hours and countless ice bears later, I finally arrive underneath the cliff of Dragon City!

Standing below the cliffside, I look toward the top and grit my teeth. While barely holding the staff in my mouth I climb up the hill with great difficulty. After I climb about 200 meter, I slip and suddenly I find myself in a free fall. "PopPopPop" bouncing off the rock walls. I finally land on a limestone slab. System notification: "You been seriously injured, injury condition at 74%!"

Damn, to fall and get myself injured.....

I waved my arms and cast [Therapy], the skill that I had gained after my promotion to a healer, it quickly removes my injury, and I continue to climb!

Finally after 1 hour and 7-8 times falls, I stand before the immense Dragon City walls. Raising my arm and yelling loudly at the night soldier on guard: "Put down the rope, and pull me up. I have an important letters to give to the king of Dragon City!"

Shua!

From the top of the city walls drops a rope, I grasp it firmly, and start climbing towards the top. But my strength fails me and after a few metter, I fall back down. I cry out: "Brother above me, can you pull me up....."

The night guard shakes his head: "Useless..."

Nevertheless he was kind enough to pull me up.....

.....

After I get to the top of Dragon City wall, I let out a sigh of relief but before I could go find Frost, an invisible force pressures me. Behind me, a man walks toward me holding a flaming battle axe, he grabs me by my neck and says: "Hey, rotten boy, where did you come from? Why are you trying to secretly infiltrate our Dragon City?"

My face turn green: "Infiltrating? Can't you see that I came with the help of the night guards? I have a letter from Ba Huang city, to be deliver to King Luo Ling, you let go of me now!"

"Pah, this boy is arrogant...." The bearded man lets go of me but lightly places his axe at my neck: "Speak, what is your true purpose in coming here?"

I glanced at him, this guy must be a boss! With heavy armor, it was Dragon City's Vice Captain, Su Ke! With his bushy beard and incredible muscles, this guy must weigh over a ton! He must be a Barbarian. How'd

this guy become a Captain, I'm guessing even the largest of dragons would collapse under him.

At this moment, a cold voice come from behind me: "Su Ke, that's enough. Release him, right now he's a friend of Dragon City....."

"Oh, of course, Captain Frost....."

Su Ke hastily move away his battle axe, looking respectfully at the woman behind me.

Its Frost! Ah, the only thing I can look forward in Dragon City, and probably the only person in Dragon City that hasn't treated me cruelly.

Frost was dressed in a white battle armament, she gently look at me and asks: "Did you bring the introduction letter?"

I nodded: "Of course, I brought it. Duke Luo Lei personally wrote the letter!"

"Good....."Frost faintly smiles: "Give the letter to me, I'll carry out the introduction ceremony to Dragon City..."

"Sure."

I hand over the letter to Frost, she advance forward and places her cold hand over my heart and says : "Repeat after me.....Within the freezing Dragon's domain, I will always find warm kindness within my heart..."

I repeated: "Within the freezing Dragon's domain, I will always find warm kindness within my heart..."

Frost purse her red lip and continues: "Even if I die, I will fufill my mission. I will defend Dragon City's within the Dragon's domain as long as I live....."

"Even if I die, I will fufill my mission. I will defend Dragon City's within the Dragon's domain as long as I live....."

Frost smiles: "I wish to become a member of Dragon City, defending its honour with my life. And become the first line of defense for the 7 human empires. Even if I die, I will not betray the expectations of everyone!"

“I wish to become a member of Dragon City, defending its honour with my life. And become the first line of defense for the 7 human empires. Even if I die, I will not betray the expectations of everyone!”

“Good.....”

Frost palm send out powerful force and suddenly a golden ray descends from the sky, enveloping me. A familiar ring plays next to my ear —“Ding!”

System Notification: Congratulation, you may now change your job, you will become a “Swordsman” and receive the profession’s title “Dragon City’s Scavenger”. However your former class “Healer” will be deleted, the system will randomly retain 1 skill from your previous class. Confirm the class switch and become a “Dragon City’s Scavenger”?

.....

I was amazed, I would only be allowed to keep 1 skill from my previous class, Hemostasis, Heal, Encourage, Therapy are all vital skills! This is too cruel, I thought that I would get to keep all of my skills.....

I quickly confirm, I must change my class, or else I would not have any attack or defense. Most importantly, I don’t have any strong offensive skills. So how would I rescue Yue Qing Qian from Uncle Yan Zhao evil clutches beside class changing?!

Ding!

System Notification: You have randomly kept the skill—【Heal (Lv-3)】!

.....

Yes! To retain my strongest recovery skill, my luck is very good! I jump 3 feet high, damn, I’m extremely happy!

At the same time, another system notification comes—

Ding!

System Notification: Congratulations, you have successfully changed your class. You have become a “Dragon City Scavenger”, subclass of “Swordsmen”. You may now equip armor equipment and your growth

potential has changed: Strength Growth 1.0, Endurance Growth 0.8, Agility Growth 0.9, Defense Growth 0.8, you automatically obtain the basic class skill:【Combo】(LV – 1)!

.....

Looking at my new growth, my heart lets out a relieved sigh. Originally, the healer class had a Strength Growth of 0.5, causing every 10 point put into strength growth to only add 5-5 or possibly 4-5 in attack, now that I've become a swordsman with 1.0 growth, 10 point into strength growth would be 8-10 attack. Great!

Then I look at my attributes, already huge change has occurred—

【Xiao Yao Zi Zai】(Dragon City Scavanger)

Level: 29

Attack: 236-301

Defense: 104

Health: 410

Mana: 320

Charm: 25

.....

Without any weapons, I had 301 points of damage! If I was able to use Jade City Sword, I'd gain another 300 point of damage, 601 points of damage even surpasses Baby Bobo's. Tsk Tsk, this attack power is already impeccable!

Additionally, I obtained [Combo], this is the skill I really want the most, a prideful skill from swordsman class, a level 10 [Combo] can instantly deal 5-6 hits. The other classes are incapable of doing the same, therefore, the swordsman class become main damage dealer later. Of course, if I could make my own combo, then I would definitely be able to fight bosses on my own.

Looking at my experience, it's at level 29 and 7%. I still need quite a bit

to reach level 30, in that case, I should strive hard to reach level 30 before I go offline today. I should at least raise my [Combo] to level 3. Jade Cheng Sword and Silver Locked Battle Boots are waiting for me to equip them!

.....

Looking at Frost, I ask: “Umm.....lady Frost, who is my teacher?”

Frost hesitates before saying: “You are a low ranking member of Dragon City, therefore, your teacher will be Beast Tamer Dalin. He is responsible for Dragon City’s Scavenging missions, so he’ll be the one to teach you everything you need to learn.....”

“Alright, I.....where should I sleep at night? Inside the city?”

Frost smile: “No, scavenging missions are outside of the city, therefore you should not stay inside the city walls, I will send you to the place where Beast Tamer Dalin is at. Since you already been branded with Dragon City mark, he will recognize you!”

After saying that Frost suddenly grab hold of my arm, “Brushes” and throws me off the city wall, she’s trying to kill me!

.....

With the cold wind whistling past my ears, and snow mercilessly whipping against my face, I slowly grind to a stop. In a distance, a bonfire is getting closer and closer, finally!

Bang!

I face planted into the ground, but not to my death. Frost’s strength protected me. Lifting my head up, I saw an impressive man slowly roasting a wild boar. He used a thick solid tree branch to penetrate through the wild boar, and place it above the bonfire. His face was full of anticipation, this man is my teacher— Beast Tamer Dalin!

.....

“Ahh!”

My body began to ache as I turned myself over from the fall. Dalin

stares at me: “Boy, what are you doing here.....no wait what’s that mark on your shoulder? Oh no, did Frost allow you to become member of Dragon City?”

I nodded: “Yes, I’ve already become an honorable Dragon City Scavenger, and you are my teacher...”

Dalin patted his thigh: “Pah, that lady Frost, to deliver a useless person to be my apprentice is really despicable. I, Dalin, have traversed the entirety of the barren lands but never before have I seen someone as useless as you!”

I patted off the snow off my body and firmly said: “Although I’m weak, you still need to give it your all when you’re teaching me.....”

Dalin looks at me, gritting his teeth: “Very well, I will properly instruct you!”

I nodded: “Umm, right now I only have basic [Combo] skill, will teacher teach me a few more tricks?”

Dalin taps his head and then lays down at the edge of his tent: “Alright, we’ll discuss it tomorrow!”

.....

I sat silently near the campfire while Dalin vigorously eats his pork. When the first rays of light poked through the night clouds, he stood up, dragging his heavy chains and smiles: “Boy, we should hit the road, I will teach you the essential things to know in the Dragon’s Domain!”

I carry my staff and diligently follow after teacher.

The trials of the new Dragon City Scavenger have started!

Chapter 48: Ginseng Earthworm

Rustle...

The freezing wind howls through the forest and pounds of the city walls of Dragon city, making a frozen whirlpool. Two people can be seen walking through it. One with a burly physique and carrying a heavy chain and another with a staff and a tiny bee.

.....

"Sir, what's the main responsibility of a scavenger in Dragon city?"

Dalin drags the chains behind him, and smiles, answering: "Our main responsibility is to clean up the surrounding area of Dragon city from anything that would either pose a threat towards Dragon city or the ordinary soldiers transporting goods to or from Dragon city."

I nod, thinking back to the time when Dalin killed the Cyclops with a single blow. If I had to hunt down such creatures, I'd probably die before scratching them.

"Moreover..." Beast tamer Dalin looked into the distance with a cold look in his eyes: "There is another important duty."

"What duty?"

"Come with me!"

"Okay!"

Dalin leaped forward and traveling more than a hundred yards in a single leap. I rushed after him with my staff, until I came to an earth slope which had large lumps of steaming hot excrement. Some were even giving off small sparks on the top while the others were frozen solid. The pile had a radius of around 1 meter from the top to the button.

"What is this?" I was quite startled.

Beast tamer Dalin was looking in the sky, pretty curious, I looked as well: "Kid, what you see is the excrement of the phoenix. The phoenix's main food is the fruit that grow in volcanos. This causes the phoenix's

body to store lots of energy, which causes its excrement to be high quality and good for heating. Since the winters are unusually harsh in Dragon City, we must store lots of excrement to keep Dragon city warm in the winter.”

Suddenly Dalin’s chains dance in the air and compacts the excrements before he starts dragging them towards Dragon city.

I’m completely astonished, is this my duty?

“Kid, don’t just stand around. That side has lots of frozen Wild Boar excrement, carry it away.”

“Uhh.. Yeh...Yes....Yes sir!.....”

I glance towards a huge pile of excrement. Is this really poop? How big are these Wild Boars? When I entered the ranks of Dragon city, I expected to become a mighty Dragon warrior or Dragon knight. Instead my profession turned out to be an excrement mover..

Although there is a difference between the types of work, every job is vital, let’s work!

Paa!

I stuck my staff directly into the excrement and made an effort picking up the frozen excrement to carry back to the camp. The camp was extremely simple only consisting of a tent that could barely contain Dalin. I had to stand outside by the bonfire!

Next to our camp is a huge pit where we threw the excrements. I flicked my staff through the air and the excrement looked magnificent as it entered the pit.

Ding!

System Notification: Congratulations, you have successfully cleaned up debris and obtained 900 points of experience.

.....

Very unexpectedly I also gain experience by doing this? I couldn’t help but laugh, the experience is almost as good as hunting monsters. The

only downside is that there is no chance of dropping equipment or sealing cards.

I kept walking back and forth between the excrements and the pit together with Dalin. This area belongs to Dragon city's territory and since it was more than an hour walk from any major city with extremely high-leveled monsters, normal players would never venture here. This meant that I was alone in doing these humiliating tasks.

As I continued to move the excrement, I quickly got to 27% experience. I've strived to reach level 30 today. Then I would be able to wield Jade City Sword and Silver Locked Battle Boots, which would dramatically increase my strength.

.....

Rustle....

On the way uphill, Dalin quickly raises his arm in sign for me to stop and quietly says: "Kid, stop."

I narrowed my eyes as I looked around: "What's going on?"

"A jackpot's coming!"

"Oh?"

The soil was suddenly parted and a chubby head emerged. It looked a lot like an insect and a moment later my theory was confirmed, as the entire insect climbed out of the hole. It looked and moved like a sea cucumber. Its status displayed "Ginseng Earthworm" and its rank was unclear, which meant it was at least level 35.

"I am truly lucky today."

The Beast tamer Dalin is almost drooling while looking at it: "Kid, this Ginseng Earthworm is very high quality food. Within Tian Ling Empire a pound of its flesh can be sold for a hundred gold coins because of its rare taste and abundance of nutrition. In addition it's one of the best foods to fight against the cold. Such a big Ginseng Earthworm can feed the entire Dragon city for a week."

He firmly gripped his chains while staring at the mouthwatering Ginseng Earthworm. With a quick flourish, he pulled out some dried fish from his backpack: "Ginseng Earthworms have a fancy for fish, so I will lure it over here. You circle around it and ambush it, but be careful to not let it escape down into the hole. Once it's down in the earth its as agile as a fish in the water and impossible to catch."

I nod as I raise my staff and call Baby Bobo to circle around the worm.

Dalin quickly runs up the hill and drops the fish before concealing himself. Less than half a minute later the heavy earthworm has waddled over and began stuffing himself with the fish. Suddenly Dalin jumps up towards it and yells: "This time you will not escape!"

Chu!

The iron chains pierce directly into the Ginseng Earthworm and blood splatters in all direction. Its making an endless struggle and wriggles in an attempt to get free, before finally a snapping sound is heard. It had torn its own body through the iron chain and escaped. It took a huge chunk of damage, but that didn't stop it from rushing towards me and the hole.

"COME ON, GET IT!"

I cross my staff as I prepare to encounter it, meanwhile I command baby bobo to rush towards it. Baby Bobo immediately uses Combo and deals over a 1000 points of damage. Hmm the defense of the worm isn't even decent.

"Good, kid, stop it, STOP IT!" Dalin yells as he prepares to throw his chains again.

The Ginseng Earthworm is desperately rushing forward, I attempt to stop it, but it simply bashes me away. Baby Bobo is still furiously attacking and even though the worm's defense is low and it only has around a total of 5000 health, we were unable to kill it in such a limited time period.

Ka ka.....

In a blink of an eye the Ginseng Earthworm is back in the ground and gone. The chance was gone. You could hear how disappointed and bitter Baby Bobo was from his buzzing.

.....

Shortly afterwards me and Dalin both stand in front of the hole. Dalin is looking quite sad and disappointed as he says: "Damn, it actually escaped, such a shame..... Kid, it's not your fault....."

I purse my lips: "I didn't say that it was my fault..."

"Alright, there are a few giant boars up ahead, we will hunt those. As the winter draws closer, our employed convoys are often intercepted by either wild animals or bandits, so we cannot depend on them. We have to gather supplies ourselves. This is why we hunt."

I nod, but I ask: "Sir, as there are many strong generals in Dragon city, why don't they also hunt?"

Dalin smiles as he says : "There are many outstanding people in Dragon City, but they are either meditating or practicing martial arts and combat. So they have no time to hunt for animals. This is our responsibility and also one of the reasons Captain Frost allowed you to become a member of Dragon city. You could say that we are food providers to Dragon city's kitchen."

A bit disappointed, I look towards Dragon City and ask: "Sir, are there really dragons in this frozen wasteland?"

"Ah?!"

Dalin thought about it for a couple of moments before answering: "Who knows, its been a couple of hundreds years since anyone has seen a Dragon. I think the last time a Dragon was seen was 500 years ago in the war of empires. Maybe Dragons have since then lost the god's blessing and become a fable to never appear again."

I took a deep breath and stayed slight. Looks like I wouldn't get the chance to fight a Dragon.

.....

We continued forward and soon encountered huge boars at the forest's edge. Dalin was the main attack force, while I supported him. Less than 15 seconds later the boars drops to the ground disturbing a huge cloud of dust.

“Even though this meat is very tough, it's also quite a treasure in winter times.”

Dalin throws his chains around the porcupine and drags it back to the camp. When we arrived there were already more than a dozen black armored Dragon warriors waiting. One of the men with a bunch of excrements in one hand, turned around respectfully asking: “ Dalin, did you find some more food?”

Dalin lays down the boar: “Yeah, its around a 500 kilo boar, you may take it. After all there is nothing like bacon, and a pot of wine in the winter. That is the good life.”

“Haha, thank you sir.”

When we hand over the porcupine a system message appears.

Ding!

System Notification: Congratulations, you have successfully delivered food and received 3000 experience points.

.....

I felt joy, unspeakable joy! I also get experience from delivering dead monsters! This

meant that I could get experience both from killing monsters as well as delivering them to the pit. Also it was giving reasonably more experience than simply throwing excrements into the pit.

If I'm lucky the experience reward might increase further if I was doing it on my own. Either way, me and Dalin continued hunting and dragging monsters to the awaiting Dragon soldiers.

As the afternoon light dims, my experience had increased to 87%. I'm

extremely close to level 30 and became anxious, not wanting to get another set back.

“Kid, I’ll take a break now, go ahead and continue cleaning up the wilderness.”

Dalin laid down inside his ripped tent, enjoying the little extra sheltering and warm it gives.

I walked away with my Baby Bobo, it was time to solo hunt.

Chapter 49: Power Spike

Wandering through the wilderness, my first target isn't anything special. It's the lowest level monster that I can find—Steel Hat Goblins. Its a level 34 monster so I can see all its stats. It has average attack damage, decently high defense. Basically, its not a huge threat towards me. It'll become a stepping stone to level 30.

.....

In the dark night, the Steel Hat Goblins were walking around lazily while holding sharp axes. Occasionally, they made sharp screeching sounds, which is extremely annoying. From the outside, they looked just like little dwarves and the very nasty type one.

“Go!”

Under my command, Baby Bobo flies over there, and performs a [Combo] on a Goblin. Under the attacks 800 HP is taken away. I also rush up with my staff and with a small cry, a golden hexagram hovers over the tip of the staff, LV-2 [Combo], activate!

118!

99!

My attack is indeed much less than Bobo. The attack damage that this staff gives is too little, it's barely 10% of Jade City Sword's attack damage. What I need to do is be able to equip that weapon. That is my #1 priority.

Under the barrage of attacks, Goblin falls with a screech and dies. I wave and cast [Heal] and Bobo's HP is filled up the brim. At the same time, Goblin also dropped an item, its an axe as bright as snow—

【Steel Hat Goblin's Axe】(White Tier)

Attack: 25-40

Level Requirement: 30

.....

I pick it up and throw it in my bag. At this stage in the game, the

player's level are pretty high and most of them probably don't need any white-ranked weapons. But if I sell it in a store I might be able to get a few dozen silver coins, since the level on this axe is quite high.

Continuing, I kill a few dozen more Goblins. My experience bar is filled up to 94% at level 29. The distance between level 30 is getting closer and closer! Also, I got 7 more Goblin Axes, all white-tiered. Well, it's a small reward...

As I was fighting another Goblin, the dirt next to me starts wiggling and trembling. Hmm, this seems familiar!

Within a heartbeat, I understand what caused it. It's the Ginseng Earthworm! It was good enough to make my instructor drool, so I think it's similar to the Ginseng abalone in the real world.

Pa!

The head of the Ginseng Earthworm drilled up to the surface and I feel a sense of familiarity. On its back, I see a large wound. As it comes closer and closer, I confirm that this was the same one as before!

I look in my bag and there's a huge salted fish there. I got it from Dalin after seeing how Ginseng Earthworms were attracted to fish but I never thought that it'd be useful so soon! The Earthworm's total HP is 5000 and this time I need to control it well. I will not allow it to get back underground when it gets low on health. I need it to die on the surface so I can retrieve its corpse!

I think of an idea and I immediately unsummon Bobo. I slowly go forward and stop 100 yards away from the Earthworm. I take out the huge salted fish and throw it on the ground. The wind is also blowing towards the Earthworm, so the scent of the fish should reach it soon.

.....

I stay hidden and patiently wait. The Ginseng Earthworm was damaged before, so its more careful and alert this time. It raises its head and stares at the fish for 10+ minutes. Luckily I have plenty of patience, so I wait as well.

Finally, the Earthworm completely climbs out the ground and heads towards the fish!

Pa!

I jump out of the bush and while holding onto the Goblin Axe, I stab it into the ground with the edge facing towards the Earthworm. I hope this simple trap works well!

After that, I take out more axes and stab all 7 of them onto the trail of the Earthworm. I pray to God and hope my decision is correct. The instinct of these animals is to return on the same trail that they came in. Because of this, they never get lost or go off the trail!

I wave my hand and the golden hexagram appears on the ground with Bobo rushing out. He goes straight for the Ginseng Earthworm and used [Combo]+[Stinger]. At the same time, I also start to cast my [Combo] attacks. The Earthworm swallows the salted fish and then immediately tries to return back to the hole in the exact same path! I obviously can't stop this monster. If I try I'll just get tossed aside! But Bobo continues to attack from the back of the Earthworm.

"Huff...Huff"

The Ginseng Earthworm tries its best to run, but suddenly cries out. A huge hole is sliced in its stomach! The Goblin Axe trap is working and immediately cuts 500 HP off!

I take my staff and hurry up to follow it. I wave my staff around and randomly chunk down on it, while Bobo continues stinging!

Ginseng Earthworm's HP continues to drop slowly, but the simple-minded creature can't think straight and still continues on the original track it came in! As expected, it gets continuously sliced by the Goblin Axes and its HP drops in chunks!

A lump starts to form in my throat as the Earthworm gets closer and closer to the tunnel it dug! Then finally it cries for the last time and zero HP remains, then it falls.

Splat!

It drops dozens of silver coins and it also drops an armor that has a faint glow. I pick it up and instantly I feel that my hard work hadn't been wasted—

【Armor of the Earth】(Bronze Tier)

Type: Armor

Defense: 70

Strength: +19

Others: +15 attack damage

Level Requirement: 30

.....

I take the Armor of the Earth and can't contain my happiness. This game doesn't treat me badly, it even prepared a level 30 armor just for me! And with the silver-ranked Silver Locked Battle Boots, my defense will be pretty decent!

I throw the armor in my bag and immediately grab the end of the Ginseng Earthworm and drag it back to camp. I start and stop for almost 30 minutes until I finally arrive at the camp. Dalin is snoring thunders within his tent!

I walk up to him, kick him in the leg and say, "Teacher, look what I brought back for you!"

"Eh?"

Dalin opens his sleepy eyes, but when he sees the Ginseng Earthworm, he immediately jumps up, "Good job, little guy, you actually caught the Ginseng Earthworm! I have a whole new level of respect for you now!"

"....."

The tamer is very excited and raises both his arms and roars towards the direction of Dragon City. Within half a minute, dozens of Dragon City warriors come rushing down and one of them asks, "Master Dalin, what's wrong?!"

He points and says, “Look, what’s that?!”

“Ah?”

The face of the officer goes completely red: “That’s...That’s the legendary Ginseng Earthworm! Oh heavens, rumours say that Ginseng Earthworms are very cunning, so it’s extremely hard to kill or catch them. You guys got such a nice one!”

“It’s all thanks to this new scavenger!”

“Great! Dragon City will reward you appropriately!”

The officer walks up to me, pats my shoulders and smiles: “I hereby represent the King of Dragon City, Luo Lin, and give you these rewards, I hope you will receive it!”

Ding!

System Notification: Congratulations! You have provided a top-class ingredient to Dragon City, and received 24000 points of experience along with 1 extra point in charm. Your fame in Dragon City is rising!

.....

Whoosh!

A ray of golden light, finally, I’ve finally risen to level 30!

I ignore Dalin, the officer and the other NPCs and immediately grab all the equipment from my bag. With a bang, I wear the Silver Locked Battle Boots and the Armor of the Earth. Since, the swordsman class can wear heavy armor, I don’t need to sell these boots or the armor! My defense increases exponentially. By wearing these shiny silver boots and this glowing armor, I finally feel like a presentable soldier.

Hua!

With the wave of my hand, the half-broken staff become the Jade City Sword, the first gold-ranked weapon in the entire server! I am going to really rely on this sword from now on. A wave of strength enters my body, which is the result of the massive increase in attack damage! At the same time, I open a window of my own stats and even I’m shocked by my own

stats!

【Xiao Yao Zi Zai】(Scavenger of Dragon City)

Level: 30

Attack Damage: 514-695

Defense: 259

HP: 740

MP: 320

Charm: 26

.....

The extra 300 attack from Jade City Sword is extremely strong. It almost raised my attack up to 700 points and the defense is also 259 points now. Also, Jade City Sword and Silver-Locked Boots add a total of 41 endurance, with the base power endurance of swordsman at 0.8, it adds up to a total of 328 extra HP, which made my total HP to 740 points. I have really strong attack and defense!

TL: Apparently growth for hp is *10 per stat point o.O Sorry!

Clang!

I pick up the sword, and [Turmoil Sword] immediately activates, 10% extra attack damage!

With the flick of my wrist, I make the sword dance. With small moves here and there, it is definitely not something players can do if they don't practice swords in reality. Oh, I better start doing some level grinding!

I say bye to my instructor Dalin and enter the wilderness once more. This time, I challenge level 36 [Wild Hyenas]. This type of hyenas are very cunning and have high agility, but I should be able to kill it.

Around 20 yards in front of me, I see one hyena growling lowly. It seems like he/she is attracting a mate.

“Go!”

This time, Bobo stays where he is and I go instead. My sword starts to glow and the golden hexagram appears at the edge of the sword, level 2 [Combo] is whizzing downwards!

Pupu!

“379!”

“401!”

Looking at these huge damage numbers, I feel slightly dizzy. This is the direction I want to go!

The hyena cries out and waves its sharp claws. With a bang, it leaves a claw mark on my armor and took away 97 HP. Hehe, I have this heavy armor, you can't harm me!

I violently slash my sword horizontally, then I start my attack of [Stab+Slash+Hack+Ram+Slash] and this time it feels a lot smoother. All 5 attacks finished in 2.9 seconds and it knocked the Wild Hyena back!

Two more attacks and the level 36 hyena cries then dies.

I stand there and my mind goes blank for a while. During the 5 strikes I felt something special, like having a familiar technique just appear in front of me. Also, the time it took for the performance of the 5 strikes have decreased significantly, it definitely wasn't the 1.0 seconds per attack that its supposed to be. You don't need any science for this, it tells you one thing, that I'm close to creating my own combo skill!

.....

As I was happy about my new fortune, I hear a drop. A message coming from level 33 Cang Tong, which is also the beautiful Miss—Lin Wan Er!

“Li Xiao Yao, you're level training?” She asks.

“Yeah, it's 9 p.m. now, you want a night snack Miss?”

“Yeah, is that not ok?”

“I'll be there immediately, I'll wait for you downstairs!”

“Mm...”

Chapter 50: Skill Testing

The night wind blew and the dropped leaves danced. I walked on the forest path in the school yard. Even through its early autumn, there's a firefly dancing in the bushes.

In front of me, Wan Er is wearing a short white skirt. Even without makeup, her pretty face is bewitching under the warm light of the road lamps. Although she wore very simple clothes, anyone could tell that she was a top-class beauty. I followed behind Wan Er, which meant I am a bodyguard, if I walked side by side with her, it would imply that I am her boyfriend.

"Xiao Yao, today we're not going to eat in the cafeteria. Let's go out somewhere to eat. Where should we go and eat?" She asks suddenly.

I instantly reply: "We should go and eat expensive food!"

Wan Er suddenly stops then turns around and looks at me with those beautiful eyes: "You want to die? My savings for this month are used up and not much money is left..."

I spread out my hands: "Then let's eat some fried egg rice from a stall somewhere, but I'm only afraid that you won't like it..."

Wan Er pouts her mouth and smiles: "Who said that I won't like it? Let's go!"

"Will we really go eat fried rice?"

"Of course, why would I lie to you."

"Fine..."

.....

We go outside of the school and rows of stores are selling delicious food. 9 o'clock at night is the business peak for students and in Liu Hua University there are probably over a thousand students playing [Destiny]. So people that come here and eat is not a small number.

We chose a small stall and I pull out a chair and let Wan Er sit down

first. I then sit directly opposite to her and raise my hand and say: “Boss, two bowls of fried egg rice please! The 4 yuan (70 cents USD) ones!”

Wan Er takes out her cellphone and looks at the forums online. On the side, many students that were eating rice discovered that there is a super beauty here. All of them have their eyes wide open and their drool almost falls onto the tables.

I rest my chin on one hand and I look at Wan Er bored. She’s purses her lips and whines: “Damn it...I was ranked first just a few seconds ago in Fan Shu City, but now I’ve been overtaken and dropped back to fourth. I was just helping Cheng Yue with a quest, but now so many people passed me already...”

A pair of watery, beautiful eyes and nothing lacking on her face, I was enchanted. The clothes she wore suits her and her soft little face is pretty in the scenery of night. I was tempted to pinch her face, but of course I wouldn’t dare do so.

“I want to raise you like a pet...” I accidentally slipped some deadly words.

Wan Er was faintly distracted and says: “What did you say just now?”

I immediately corrected myself: “Nothing. I said nothing.”

The edge of her lips rise and she smiles: “Who do you want to raise as a pet?”

I shake my head immediately: “Nothing. You heard wrong...”

Wan Er snorts and says: “Whatever, you probably couldn’t afford to raise me...”

“.....”

“Oh right.” Wan Er looks at me: “I saw a post on the forums and it said because of Yue Qing Qian’s problems, you and Yan Zhao dueled and you lost...”

I nod: “Mm, Yan Zhao’s attack is way too high for me. I couldn’t take his level 4 combo strikes, so that loss is normal.”

“But I also heard that you broke off the last two strikes of Yan Zhao Warrior’s [Peerless Strike].” Wan Er smiles: “Peerless Strike only takes 1.7 seconds and you successfully interrupted the combo. You’re pretty good...”

My face goes red: “Actually, it was just lucky hit...”

“Of course it was...” Wan Er laughed then looked at me and asked: “Li Xiao Yao, my dad once told me that you’re no ordinary person. In all of Hangzhou city he said that there might not be even one person that can match your skill. Actually I’m also very curious. Are you really that powerful?”

I clench my teeth and reply: “Let’s not talk about that. If I don’t have to fight then I try not to fight, so I can avoid damaging any relationships...”

“Then why’d you duel Yan Zhao?”

“That’s because...”

“You like Qing Qian!”

“No. Absolutely not!”

“Hehe, lies!”

I give up: “Okay, I like Qing Qian. Are you happy now?”

Wan Er shrugs and lowers her head: “I couldn’t care less about your personal life and feelings~”

“.....”

After a few minutes the fried egg rice is ready. When I finished my second bowl, Wan Er didn’t even finish her first. I ask: “Why isn’t Cheng Yue with you today?”

“She’s doing a quest right now, so she said she’ll just get take out.”

“Ah...”

As she finishes up I clap my hands: “Let’s go now. Do we have classes tomorrow?”

“Yep, are you going?”

“I don’t want to. Will my grades be affected?”

“Nope, I’ll cover for you. I have connections with the professor tomorrow....”

“Okay!”

.....

We reenter the school yard and walk back onto the same road that we came in. The rocks on the road creak slight and don’t give way, but Wan Er is wearing heels that are at least 7 cm high. Of course they are beautiful, but while walking she’s a bit unbalanced, so she carefully treads along.

“Ah....”

Suddenly she cries out and trips.

With my fast reactions I stretch my hand around Wan Er’s waist to hold her up. But I miscalculated and my hand didn’t reach the correct area. My hands ends up in some elastic and soft area, but I don’t dare to release my hand. So I raise Wan Er back like this.

Cold sweat is falling and I immediately help her stabilize herself. I released my hand, although reluctantly...

“Eh...”

Wan Er shows an embarrassed face. Her whole face is red. she glares at me and says: “You...You did that intentionally!”

I immediately explain myself: “That was...an accident. How could I dare touch you in that spot?”

Wan Er stomps her feet: “Touch me where?!”

“That...I...That was a miscalculation. I never wanted to touch that area...”

“Hmph, my dad said that you were skilled. But you’re so bad...”

I decide to screw it all and say: “Yep. That was all intentional. What are you going to do about it?”

Wan Er doesn't know how to reply to that, so she just says: "Let's go, we need to rest early..."

.....

Before we get far, I hear some rustles in the bushes. Quickly 4 shadows appear in front of me with black jumpsuits.

I instantly stand in front of Wan Er to protect her: "What do you guys want?"

Although the road lamps are a bit dim, I can see that the face is full of evil intentions. The person in the back laughs: "Li Xiao Yao did you really think that we wouldn't attack you?"

My eyes go cold: "Liu Ying!"

"Right!" Liu Ying was also wearing a black jumpsuit and walks to the front, smiling at Wan Er. "Ling Wan Er, this is between me and Li Xiao Yao and has nothing to do with you. You can leave now..."

Wan Er's mouth opens slightly and says: "Liu Ying are you planning on starting a fight? Don't forget the school rules. Any student that starts a fight gets expelled!"

Liu Ying laughs: "School rules are for the good students and I am no good student. Ling Wan Er, I admit that you are my type. So please step aside. We don't want to harm you!"

Wan Er wants to say more, but I turn around and smile: "Miss, you don't need to leave Wait half a minute for me!"

She nods and maybe saw my self-confidence and smiled as well: "Mm, I'll wait..."

.....

"Damn brat, so arrogant!"

Liu Ying suddenly pulls out a baseball bat and yells to the other 3 students: "As long as he doesn't die, I'll take responsibility for everything!"

The other three students smile as they pull out more bats and rush towards me.

Rustle...

I step over the leaves and pebbles and suddenly burst over to them. I put strength in my left leg and my body leaves the ground. I chain two kicks and with two bangs two of the students fall heavily to the ground. I spin my body mid air and with a fist full of power I punch the third student with a thump!

Bang!

Blood and teeth fly out and the students' face instantly turns bloody. His face hit the ground with a light bang and passes out immediately.

“.....”

Liu Ying who was in the back was stunned. Three of his underlings were defeated so easily. This is something that he probably couldn't even dream about. So with his baseball bat, he goes all in and dashes towards me while raising his bat!

I stand there and my right hand sweeps along an arc shattering the baseball bat instantly. I retract my hand again and deliver it straight into Liu Ying's chest!

Liu Ying stutters back a few steps while clutching his chest. His face is full of cold sweat as he raises his head to look at me with a painful expression. The punch won't physically harm him, but he will feel a lot of pain.

.....

I clap my hands, turn around, and smile: “Okay, I'm done!”

Wan Er is standing there with her small mouth wide open.

She's speechless, so I pat her shoulder and say: “Miss, we need to sleep early~”

“Oh, oh...”

Wan Er snaps back into reality.

.....

“After Liu Ying joined the baseball club in the school. He gathered a group of lackeys...” Wan Er pauses but she continues: “I heard from some of my upperclassman, that quite a lot of male students were dragged into a fight by Liu Ying and the most serious damage was that both of a person’s leg were broken...”

I frown: “That is really out of control...”

“Yeah, his attitude from reality must have transferred into the game. So that’s why he can’t stop attacking you in Ba Huang City and wants to completely wipe you out...” We reach the girl’s dorm and Wan Er takes a deep look at me and smiles: “How about this. You come to Fan Chu City with me and Cheng Yue. Then we’ll be able to protect you~”

I shake my head and say firmly: “No, I will establish myself in Ba Huang City!”

“Okay, then I’m going up now...”

“Mm, good night Miss.”

“Mm..”

Chapter 51: Trolls

The next morning at 7 AM, quite a few students have already prepared their books to go to class but today's class is extremely boring. Both Wan Er and I have no interest in it, and Cheng Yue also wants to skip, so we decided that after eating breakfast we'll go level grinding!

At the ground floor of the girl's dorm, Wan Er and Cheng Yue walk towards me.

"Cheng Yue, we meet again..."

Dong Cheng Yue puts her hands behind her, and sarcastically says: "What? It's only been a day, and you already start to miss me?"

I ignore that comment and reply: "We'll go and eat breakfast, then we go online..."

"Oh? You're pretty calm..." She lightly smiles.

I'm astounded: "Why wouldn't I be calm?"

"All of Ba Huang City is in an uproar, don't you know?" Wan Er glances at me with her pretty brows: "Hmph. I really pity your future..."

"Future?" I have no idea what they're talking about.

Cheng Er tries her best not to laugh: "This guy really doesn't know!! Hehe, this morning, Ba Huang City went into an uproar. The player [Tyrant of Western Chu] gave out a ridiculous bounty for a player called [Xiao Yao Zi Zai]. I hear, if you can get a video that shows you killing [Xiao Yao Zi Zai], then you can trade that video to the [Wrath of Heroes] guild for 1000 gold coins!"

"Ha?!"

I widen my eyes: "1000 gold coins? You're not joking are you? One level of me is worth 1000 coins? I think I should suicide and grab all that money!"

"It's for real..." Ling Wan Er looks at me with both compassion and pity: "It's better if you don't show yourself too often, players from Ba Huang

City will look at you like a walking gold bar...”

I nod “Mm, I always keep my head down when I do things...But it’s not that easy to kill me. Hmph, Liu Ying is better off dreaming. Using money to suppress my level? Ha, impossible!”

“Is that so? Let’s make a bet.” Wan Er smiles.

Cheng Yue smiles on the side: “Wan Er’s mood is pretty good today, even suggesting a bet...”

“That’s fine, what do you want to bet on?”

Wan Er crosses her arms in front of her chest, and says: “How about this, go online for 5 hours. If you don’t get killed by anyone then I’ll treat you to a meal and let you order anything you’d like.”

“And if I lose?” I start to have greedy thoughts.

“If you lose, meaning if you die once, then you need to treat me and Cheng Yue for a meal. It doesn’t even need to be a top-class restaurant, just spend around 200 Yuan (~32 dollars) and it’ll be fine. How about it?”

“Its a deal!” I stretch out my hand.

Wan Er smiles, and also stretches her white, soft hand, and we shake on it. “Deal!”

Cheng Yue is probably the happiest, she gets to be treated no matter who wins or loses!

.....

After breakfast, at 8 o’clock in the morning, I go straight back to the dorms and go online!

Whoosh!

I appear in Dragon City, and all around me is an area of wilderness. South of me are the endless forests leading to Ba Huang City, and north of me is a mountain range with a continuous ice spine. The ice spine goes from east to west and separates the continent into a south part and north part. The south is where rain and wind falls peacefully with flowers and

plants growing vigorously and the land where the 7 empires in <<Destiny>> are established. The north is an area of unknown to mankind, and Dragon City is built in the middle of the ice spine, acting like a gate for the 7 empires.

I pull out the Jade Sword and think about what I should do. For the next 5 hours, I will go grind my level and do quests around Dragon City. Very few players come to this area, so for at least 5 hours I should be fairly safe and my bet with Wan Er is pretty much in the bag. Mm, I haven't eaten the Squirreelfish from the Pine & Crane restaurant yet. The dish costs 250 Yuan per pound...Personally, I can't pay for it but now I can have Miss buy it for me, what a rare chance!

At the quartermaster, I repair my equipment and also look at what he has to offer. Level 4 Health Potions, 50 silver coins per bottle, it regenerates 400 points of HP. Pretty decent, so I buy a few and throw them in my bag. If I ever get into an emergency situation, and my [Heal] is on its 6 second cooldown, I wouldn't be helpless. After changing classes to Scavenger of Dragon City, I lost [Hemostasis], which means that I need to be more prepared from now on.

I call out Baby Bobo, and he flies happily around the area. I think that even he can feel that his master's power increased significantly. But Bobo is always buzzing happily, even the second before he was annihilated by Yan Zhao...

I open up Ba Huang City's leaderboard—

- 1) Yan Zhao Warrior – Level 33 – Swordsman
- 2) General Li Mu – Level 32 – Swordsman
- 3) Yue Qing Qian – Level 32 – Assassin
- 4) General Bi Qi – Level 32 – Berserker
- 5) Yue Wei Liang – Level 32 – Assassin
- 6) Soaring Dragon – Level 32 – Mage
- 7) General Wang Jian – Level 32 – Swordsman

8) Fierce Tiger – Level 32 – Berserker

9) Black Tortoise – Level 31 – Archer

10) Frozen Gravestone – Level 31 – Swordsman

.....

The levels are pretty close to one another and Yan Zhao's level is rising pretty fast as well. He probably didn't sleep last night and kept on leveling up. Even the Generals can't chase up to his level. The two beauty assassins also get their place on the leaderboard. Black Tortoise and Fierce Tiger have been on Ba Huang City's leaderboard for quite a long time, so its no surprise that they showed up this time. As for Frozen Gravestone, he is a new high-level player. The early stages of the game has a lot of competition, but the skilled players show their dominance in the later stages.

I check my own position on the leaderboard, its 271st place, level 30 Scavenger of Dragon City. Looking at this placement, I am extremely proud of myself. I've finally reached the top 10000 in a game!

In the morning, I do my profession job, excrement mover. After I became an apprentice, Beast Tamer Dalin just sits around all day eating meat and picking his teeth. He doesn't do any work whatsoever.

.....

I take Bobo and walk around the wilderness, bringing back a few piles of excrement from Phoenixes. From that, I gain some experience, and afterwards, I try talking to the quartermaster. Finally the quartermaster speaks: "Young Scavenger of Dragon City! To the West of the city are some uninvited guests! They are strong trolls and I hear that they are the crossbreeds of whales and lions. Go there and kill 100 trolls then come back to collect your reward!"

Ding!

System Notification: Do you accept the quest [Slaughter the Trolls]?
(Quest difficulty: A)

Very nice, I quickly accept it, and an A level quest pops up in my quest menu. Why would a quest that asks to kill normal monsters be an A ranked quest? This can only mean one thing, the levels of the trolls are higher than mine. Damn, it may not be me slaughtering them but rather the other way around!

I go talk to Dalin again: “Instructor, do you have some secret skill that you can pass down to me?!”

Currently, I can’t return back to Ba Huang City to learn new skills so the only skill I have from being a swordsman is the [Combo]. Also, I didn’t even have a chance to learn Quick Blade, Parry, or Heavy Strike etc. since I can only learn skills from this extremely unreliable instructor!

Dalin lays on his little grass bed in his tent and doesn’t even bat me an eye. His finger picks his nose and he flings a snot-ball at me—“Nope!”

Clang!

I pull out my Jade sword and slice that snot-ball in half and say angrily: “Then I’m leaving...”

.....

Walking west for 10 minutes, I reached a dark green valley, the area for my quest. In the forest, 3 meter high trolls were just sitting there and between every two trolls was a boiling pot of soup. The Trolls had sharp teeth and a strong body. In addition, when their skin rubbed against their rock seats, sparks appear! These monsters!

I inch my way forward, and I look at their stats. Damn, I can’t see most of their stats, but I can see the level—

【Troll】(Normal Monster)

Level: 38

Attack: ???

Defense: ???

HP: ???

Abilities: ???

Description: Trolls, a group of monsters living in the wilderness. Trolls have extremely strong attacks and defenses but their movement are slow. That's their only weakness. Of course, if a warrior's sword is sharp enough, it can penetrate their thick skin, but in the past thousand years warriors haven't been able to kill off any trolls, and instead became ingredients for their soup.

.....

"Damn it! I hate eating alligators! Their skin is way too rough!" One troll says while holding a soup ladle.

Another one growls: "Idiot. don't whine. If it wasn't for you, we could have gotten that young woman yesterday. Her flesh must be very sweet and delicious!"

"Ha!" The first troll replies "With one hit, that woman wounded you! Those kind of women are impossible to swallow. She would break your throat and stomach, and jump out from your stomach!"

The third troll uses some branches to stir the soup and says: "No one say anything more. I heard that that woman is the captain of the castle on top of the ice spine and she's called Frost. She is already a heavenly ranked person, we can't even be compared to her!"

"Screw it, tomorrow we go to the western graveyard to grab some maggots to eat!"

"Okay! Everytime you talk about maggots, I start drool..."

.....

I almost throw up but I don't dare to suddenly go up and fight them. If these 3 level 38 monsters combine their attacks, I am pretty much dead instantly. So I must find a suitable moment to attack! Hmm, those trolls probably didn't eat anything good today, and as they drink that soup, they probably need to pee, and right when they are in the bathroom I'll attack them individually!

I wait for a full 3 minutes, and finally, the troll with the wound stands up, and slowly walks away from the campfires. He unties the cloth on his waist.....

.....

Screech...

I slowly pull out the sword, and a ray of light appears, showing that [Turmoil Sword] is in effect. My chance has come! First I'll kill off this slightly wounded troll!

Bang!

The Silver-locked boots step on the rocks and I dash towards the troll. Bobo's speed is even faster and goes straight into a level 3 [Combo] attack on the troll's behind!

"265!"

"234!"

"271!"

Indeed, the defense of the troll is pretty good.

At the same time, I activate [Combo] with my sword, and with a golden hexagram swirling on the sword's edge, I strike two times on its rock-like skin. This is no fake gold-ranked sword! The troll snarls but it lost quite a bit of HP—

"301!"

"312!"

Indeed, with [Turmoil Sword], in addition to Jade City Sword, my attack damage is just slightly over Bobo's!

.....

Growl!

The troll snarls, spins, and bashes his huge bat on me and Bobo—

"216!"

“279!”

I’m still good, and although Bobo’s defense isn’t as good as mine, he doesn’t need any healing either. I continue with the rapid attacks, Stab+Slash+Hack+Strike+Slash!

Clang!

The troll’s leg hits my chest plate, and knocks me back. Damn, it is quite tough!

Chapter 52: Wind Blade

Combos are continuous attacks that force the opponent to be unable to retaliate or block it and it is performed like a single attack. For example Yan Zhao's [Peerless Strike], is composed of a Stab+Slash+Slash+Kick+Hack. In these 5 continuous strikes, the first four strikes only do 30% of one's attack damage, but the last "Hack" does at least twice the damage of regular attacks. Therefore, the last strike of the combo will do over 50% of the combo's damage.

This is also why I chose to try to make my combo with "Stab+Slash+Hack+Ram+Slash". The fourth strike is "Ram", so as long as that strike is successful, the opponent will be stunned for a short while. It doesn't matter if the stun is as short as 0.1 seconds, it would be more than enough to finish the combo which is where the real strength of combos lie.

In <<Destiny>>'s system, in order for a "Ram" to be successful, one must have more strength and attack damage than the opponent, which is calculated through $\text{Strength} \times 1.5 + \text{Attack damage}$. So the fights of heavy armor classes, aren't solely decided by strength but also decided by a good weapon.

My development so far is me putting all my points into strength. With my [Heal], I can be undefeatable, since I don't put points in other stats such as endurance. I'm pretty much a pure-strength swordsman!

.....

Even though the troll in front of me didn't get knocked back, my fifth attack still dealt over 300 damage! Although it isn't part of a combo, it still greatly exceeds any normal attack!

The total HP of the troll is around 1900 or so and it stood no chance against me and Bobo's savage attacks. With a cry, it falls and dropped a shiny battleaxe!

I happily walk up and pick up the battleaxe. The stats aren't bad—

【Troll's Battleaxe】(Green-Tier Equipment)

Attack Damage: 75-149

Strength: +18

Other: +11 Strength

Level Requirement: 32

.....

Damn, the level requirement is too high and the quality of the weapon isn't that great either, so top-ranked players like Yan Zhao wouldn't want this. In a few days, most players would be level 32 or so, then this battleaxe might have some luck. Perhaps I can even sell it for a couple gold coins!

I throw the battleaxe into my inventory and continue. This time, I understand the trolls a bit more so I'm more confident. I kick over the pot of soup, and bring Baby Bobo to attack them!

"Grr...Damn human, I'll swallow you alive!"

The troll waves around his wooden stick, while I carefully evade, holding Jade City Sword. As a swordsman, my agility is extraordinarily good, so I dodge and a "MISS" pops up from the troll's attack. I then easily slice its huge leg and back away naturally. Because of my quick movements more "MISS"s show up. I only casted [Heal] once before I killed the second troll and with Bobo, I killed the third one fairly easily as well.

Following the two cries, my experience also increased by quite a bit. If all goes well, then after killing 100 trolls I should be able to rise to level 31 and after handing in the mission, I might even get near level 32; one step closer to being a top-level player!

Tick!

As I was killing trolls, a message comes in. It's from Yue Qing Qian, "Xiao Yao?"

"Mm, Qing Qian!"

“You have a bounty of 1000 gold coins by [Wrath of Heroes], did you know that?” She starts up a call and her voice appears, full of worry: “Where are you right now? Have you died yet?”

I couldn't help but laugh: “Of course not, I am currently in the middle of nowhere leveling!”

“Mm, that's good, be careful... How about I bring a few people to where you are, and level up with you. Then there would be no need to worry about the bounty hunters...”

“Nah, it's fine. Qing Qian you can go train by yourself, I don't want to burden you any more. After what happened... did Yan Zhao continue bothering you?”

“Nope. Yesterday he and my dad had a meal together and also drank quite a bit of beer. Although he did rant about how I was not being obedient...”

“Haha, then that's fine...”

“About that...” Qing Qian is a bit hesitant.

“About what?” I ask.

She says: “Xiao Yao, although Yan Zhao's a bit unyielding, he's a good person. After he beat you, you won't hold any grudges right?”

I reply: “Why would I, who do see me as eh? I didn't even have any battle abilities to start with. If I lost, then I lost. I'll continue working hard. In my eyes, Yan Zhao isn't an enemy, but rather a strong opponent that I need to defeat. My goal is to beat him in a fair and square fight so that he has nothing to say about me...”

“Mm!” Qing Qian lightly laughs: “I guess that's just how you are!”

“Okay, I'll continue to grind my levels, you work hard too!”

“Yep yep, I think it'll take 3 days to get to level 40. Let's see who gets there first!”

“Okay...”

.....

Continuing on, I kill one huge troll after the other. After I had killed over 70 trolls they finally dropped an armor equipment. It's a round helmet, shining in the damp grass. I pick it up and check it out, and my heartbeat speeds up. Finally a usable helmet dropped. Up until now there's been nothing on my head!

【Helmet of Cruelness】(Bronze-Tier Equipment)

Type: Armor

Defense: 62

Endurance: +17

Level Requirement: 31

.....

Holding the helmet, I check my level again. My experience is at level 30 and 99.4% full; I only need to kill one more troll!

Jade City Sword activates a level 3 [Combo] and I easily kill off another troll. With the golden ray falling upon me, I successfully reach level 31; I can wear the helmet now!

With a clang, I put the helmet on my head and I look like I'm wearing an inverted bronze spittoon...That really annoys me...

[TL: Spittoon – <http://en.wikipedia.org/wiki/Spittoon%5D>

At the same time, I look at my stats. My defense increases by a lot—

【Xiao Yao Zi Zai】(Scavenger of Dragon City)

Level: 31

Attack: 522-705

Defense: 322

HP: 886

MP: 330

Charm: 26

.....

322 points in defense. That's more than enough to defend against the attacks of players at my level. Also, my HP has risen to 886 points which means that I have a stronger safeguard. My [Heal] has also risen to LV-4, every time I can heal 600 HP, if I didn't have enough max HP then it would be quite a waste...Baby Bobo also became level 31 with me, and his stats are in no way inferior, this guy's high level is pretty cheaty...

【Baby Bobo】(Bee Overlord)

Level: 31

Attack Damage: 458-610

Defense: 305

HP: 763

MP: 305

.....

Our stats are enough to challenge everything around here; the monsters near Dragon City won't have a level too high until the next update. All I need to do now is to train my skills. I need to get [Combo] to LV-4 or else I won't do enough damage!

Soon, I've almost reached the amount of Troll kills needed.

Walking around on the hill, I find a roughly 30 year old player wearing a medicine bag on his back. He must be doing some kind of herb picking quest, huh?

From afar, he looks at me while I stare at him. Bobo is buzzing around and rushes forward with killing intent. But I stop him saying: "Don't be violent to everyone, let's go and hand in our quest..."

The herb picker looks at me and says nothing. He immediately turns back into the forest, probably to collect more herbs.

.....

I'd finally killed 100 trolls as I look at the time. It's almost 12 o'clock

noon. I immediately return with Bobo; I should deliver the quest before doing anything else!

After 10 minutes or so, I reach to the Dragon City Army Camp. The quartermaster towers over me and says: “Young Scavenger, you have shown your strength and killed those nasty trolls. You’ve prevented them from getting near Dragon City. Come, this is your reward!”

Ding!

System Notification: Congratulations! You’ve finished the quest **【Slaughter the Trolls】**. You receive 15000 experience points, 5 gold coins, and your fame in Dragon City has risen. You also received item: [Wind Blade]!

.....

Huh? [Wind Blade], what’s that?

I immediately open my bag and I see a faint blood-red skill book laying there. I hold it up and take a look; my mood becomes a lot more cheerful. This book is quite unexpected—

【Wind Blade】 (A): Summons the wind to concentrate on the edge of the sword and launches a fierce attack on the opponent. Level 1 increases damage by 3%. Level 10 increases damage by 30%. You may not have both this and [Heavy Strike] at the same time. Uses 20 points of MP, and has a cast time of 0.2 seconds. Level requirement is 30 and consumes 1 point of charm when learning it!

.....

My eyes almost pop out of their sockets...[Heavy Strike], the trump card of knights, swordsmen, and berserkers. At level 10 they only increase damage by 10%, but this [Wind Blade] is a lot better; level 10 increases damage by 30%! But the downside is that it needs 0.2 seconds of casting. It’s very easy to break the attack during the windup and it also needs to consume 1 point of charm to learn it...

I weigh the pros and cons learn it. To not learn this skill is too wasteful!

Whoosh!

My charm goes down to 25 points, and in my skill window [Wind Blade] appears in an extra row. [Wind Blade], with such a good skill, it will be in the last strike of my “Stab+Slash+Hack+Ram+Slash” combo, and conveniently if my “Ram” is successful then I can stun the opponent for 0.2 seconds, just enough to cast [Wind Blade], the strike will undoubtedly kill...

.....

When I talked to Beast Tamer Dalin again: “Instructor, do you have any new skills for me to learn?”

Who knows what he ate wrong, but Dalin suddenly rose up and smiled widely: “Boy, you really don’t disappoint me! Come, I’ll pass down my special skill to you!”

“Special skill?!” I get extremely excited: “Instructor, what’s your special skill?”

“Chains...”

“Damn! What chains?!”

“It is a special ability that can capture both beasts and enemies, watch closely...”

The Tamer strikes the ground, and a few hundred meters in front of us, chains suddenly appear from the ground and shatter a huge boulder!

Dalin puts his hands on his waist and proudly says, “How was that, Boy? Pretty powerful eh?”

I’m shocked and I hear some thoughts in my head—

Oh powerful fellow, you are mighty and majestic...On a horse you are like the wind...and...

This...This is not even powerful!

.....

But, I accept the skill, though I need to spend 10 gold coins to learn

it..What a rip off!

【Binding Chains】 (A): Strike the ground and choose a target for [Binding Chains]. At level 1 there's a 30% chance of binding the target. Uses 20 mana, lasts for 1.9 seconds. To learn this skill, you must spend 10 gold coins.

It goes without saying. 30% is better than 0%. I'll learn it!

Chapter 53: Pine and Crane Restaurant

10 gold coins for the A rank skill [Binding Chains] is a small price to pay, even if its not as strong as Wind blade. They are both surely stronger than the regular skills like [Combo] and [Heal] and not something you would usually be able to buy with a little gold, yet they cannot be compared to my priceless SS God class sword skill, which had to be earned by thousands and thousands of repeated practice draws.

I'm pretty ecstatic that I finally have gotten two completely new skills. First things first, I want to test them and see their power.

Using both hands, I raise the sword as I silently casted [Wind Blade]. Immediately, my arms begin to tremble as a teal colored aura envelops the blade. It takes 0.2 seconds for the blade to reach the state of being fully covered by the aura.

In the next moment, the blade started to emit a cold wind around it. Suddenly, I executed a downward slash, "Peng!", rock fragments flew as the rock in front of me was cut about 20 cm deep. Mm, a Level 1 [Wind Blade] raises attack by 3%, already significantly higher than normal attacks. Furthermore, training it to Level 4 would yield a 12% increase in attack, giving it insane power!

After trying [Wind Blade], I immediately went on to the next skill, [Binding Chains]. When I used it a small "bang" sounded and I could see how a chain came out of earth in the targeted area. It looked almost like a snake strangling its target for 1.9 seconds.

.....

When I finalized my testing, I had to say, the skills were definitely useful. Although they both had high requirements to the user, being able to control the actions of your opponent and predict the right timing to strike, they were undoubtedly powerful.

I went and talked with the quartermaster again to look for more quests, but he didn't have anything for me. So I decided instead just to go hunting to practice my skills, as they were still Level 1. Even a SSS rank skill

wouldn't be very strong at rank 1.

I choose to walk eastward together with Baby Bobo, after around 10 minutes we reached a high level area, the Cloudy Swamp. 'Oh yes, this would be a suitable leveling location' I thought when I saw that the monsters were level 37. They were crocodiles with scales reflecting the approaching sunset, pretty breathtaking if I were to say.

I had a look at their stats. 1886 health and 332 defense. This should be no problem.

"Hua hua..."

I rushed towards them through some shallow water with my Jade Sword drawn before attacking the crocodile with a level 4 [Combo]. 3 points of damage shows.

"367!"

"335!"

"352!"

The alligator made a furious howl; it lost more than half of its health from that one combo. The alligator opened its mouth and was about to retaliate, but my wind blade was ready. It struck heavily on the head of the crocodile, and a huge red number appeared. The crocodile had been killed in just a few hits, without a chance to retaliate.

"998!"

A critical hit! Such a huge amount of damage for a single strike. Its damage is almost equal to the combined damage of the [Combo] skill. The wind blade is deadly if it gets a critical hit or is part of a combo attack. If it had been rank 10, with an increase of damage by 30% in addition to the 10% from Sword Wave, the damage would have been incredible.

.....

Suddenly I realize, these crocodiles' skins are probably high quality leather.

Nothing venture, nothing gained. I immediately try skinning the crocodile with my Jade Sword. Its so sharp that it immediately starts cutting through the thick skin and slices off a chunk but just as I think I have succeeded, the chunk of skin begins to blur. A system message appears: You don't have the [Skinning] skill! You have failed to collect crocodile leather!

Damn, what a waste of time!

I continue hunting Crocodiles while focusing on practicing my skills, it doesn't take long before [Wind Blade] reaches level 2. The offensive bonus increases to 6% and the chance of failure lowers. As it levels up, it actually highlights a fairly annoying issue. I didn't increase my Magic Power stat at all as a healer, leaving me with the very small mana pool of 330. Level 2 [Binding Chains] and [Wind Blade] cost 40 mana per use each, and they will only continue to cost more as they level up.

No matter, my primary goal is still to get [Wind Blade] to level 4 as quickly as possible; after all I have more than enough [Chilling Wind Pills] to keep me going.

.....

After training hard for an hour, the familiar system tone appeared and the [Wind Blade] had at last leveled up to 4.

As I stand there, quite pleased with myself, I get a message from Wan Er : "Xiao Yao, have you gotten killed by any bounty hunters yet?"

I firmly respond: "Nope, you lost! Time for me to collect my winnings!."

Wan Er said: "It's already 1 pm and I'm pretty hungry. So come downstairs and we will decide what to eat"

"Okay!"

I log off and place the helmet at the side of the bed. As I look towards Glasses, I see him shivering heavily. He's probably in some extreme situation but it looks so funny that I can't help but laugh as I rush out the door.

.....

The two beautiful young women are already waiting downstairs on this autumn afternoon.

I adjust the collar of my Metersbonwe jacket. The sun was shining on my face, granting a nice feeling of warmth together with a gentle breeze. It was pretty comfortable.

“Xiao Yao, not bad!” Said Cheng Yue as she approached together with Wan Er: “It’s pretty impressive you were able to stay alive for the whole 5 hours. Surely there are lots of people who would have been tempted by the 1000 gold reward and would be searching for you. Its worth 15000 RMB”

I casually respond: “I’m leveling in a secret area, so they won’t be able to find me. Good afternoon miss Wan Er.”

Wan Er looks a bit sore as she responds: “Alright, you win. You can choose anything so go ahead, it’ll be my treat... “

I mutter quietly: “There’s this new restaurant called Pine and Crane Restaurant that opened on East Xi Road. I’ve heard that their signature dish is Squirreelfish and I’ve never had such a delicacy before, Miss...”

TL: Apparently Pine and Crane is a real and famous restaurant with outlets in Shanghai and other places in China

(<http://www.songhelou.net/>)

Pursing her red lips, Wan Er chuckles: “I know that place, let’s go. I’ll drive...”

.....

Wan Er’s 2-door sports car, the 2016 Audi TT, was parked in the school’s car park. It’s roof was covered by fallen maple leaves. It doesn’t look like it’s been driven since we started school. Perhaps this isn’t her car after all.

Wan Er fishes out her car key and opens the doors. Cheng Yue seems amused and smiles with her beautiful eyes, “Ah, the 2016 TT, and it’s even

the 2-door 3.0L variant! I've had my eyes on this for awhile, but my dad wouldn't let me buy a car because he's afraid I'd drive dangerously..."

Cheng Yue looks at me and says, "Xiao Yao, do you think the 2016 Model or the 2010 Model of the TT looks better?"

I smirk, "I haven't really researched on cars, but I think the Chery QQ and Jiang Nan Auto designs have a classic feel that are worth a second look!"

[ED Note: Super cheap economy cars. The QQ was the 2nd cheapest car in the world in 2008]

Cheng Yue: "..."

Wan Er sits in the driver's seat and lightly taps the window with her fingers, "Hey you two, get in. Don't just stand there chatting..."

I jump into the front passenger seat at lightning speed. My enthusiasm shows as I'm eager to stick close to the beautiful Miss as her bodyguard.

Cheng Yue who sits down behind, pouts and says, "This guy sure moved fast..."

"When it comes to free food, I'm very excited..."

"..."

... ..

As the engine roars, the TT exits the parking lot and Wan Er cruises into downtown very casually. Following the traffic rules closely, she puts us at ease. East Xi Road isn't very far from Liu Hua University. In the last 2 years, the place has developed into a business district and the restaurant industry has grown because with Zhejiang University in the vicinity, it gets quite busy..

Pine and Crane restaurant has roots back to Suzhou during the rule of Qianlong Emperor. Over time, it gradually grew and expanded and now there's even a branch in Beijing.

It's 1.30 PM in the afternoon. As we enter the restaurant, there aren't many people left inside. Picking a table next to the window, we take our

seats and I give the menu a quick glance. The price of the Squirreelfish has risen to 300RMB per 0.5kg, alright...

As the young and pretty waitress stands silently beside our table, I calmly say, "Squirreelfish, find us one that is about 1kg..."

"Sure, handsome!"

"We would also like a Watermelon Chicken, Pakistani Lung Soup, Roast Duck...and a bottle of Sea Blue..."

"Okay, is there anything else?"

"That's enough for now. Oh, and please bring us a jug of Watermelon Juice..."

I smile at Wan Er as I place the order, "You able to handle this much, Miss?"

Wan Er nods and laughs, "Ah, this is nothing."

"Snap!" , Wan Er broke the chopsticks in her hand...

Cheng Yue snickers, "You rascal Li Xiao Yao, you know Wan Er's living expenses for this month is only 5000 RMB? This meal will cost at least 1000+. How is Wan Er going to survive for the second half of this month, are you going to support her?"

"Oh, about that..."

Wan Er crosses her eyes, "He can't support much..."

I look at her and ask, "Miss, shouldn't you be very rich? I heard from Tang Gu that you released the hit <<Heart of Time>> which reached the Top 10 Songs of the Chinese Charts for 6 months in a row, how can you suddenly run out of money?"

Lin Wan Er's pretty face reddened, "Don't ask anymore..."

Cheng Yue giggles, "When Wan Er entered university, she deposited her money into the bank as a long-term deposit. Every month, she can only withdraw 5000 as pocket money, but...she's bought quite a lot of gold coins in the past 2 days. Just yesterday she spent 200 gold to buy a Silver

Tier Leather Breastplate. To top it off, this morning she reserved a Gold Tier Dagger that [Q Sword] acquired, which explains why she's out of cash!"

"Gold Tier Dagger?" I ask, astounded.

"Yup." Lin Wan Er nods and chuckles, "Level 35 Gold Dagger, attack 275, with an additional effect to ignore 7% defense on hit. That's why I'm spending a king's ransom of 900 gold for this dagger. I'll complete the trade when I go back online later this afternoon."

I frown, "[Q Sword] acquired a Level 35 Gold Tier Weapon, that's really something..."

Dong Cheng Yue: "Of course he would..."

Chapter 54: Attack of the Mercenaries

“Q Sword is already level 36 and ranked first in Fan Shu City. Also he’s already made a custom [combo] and learned an exclusive skill. Last night outside of Fan Shu City there was a battle and Q Sword singlehandedly challenged 9 players that were over level 30 and won. This guy is an idol to everyone...”

Dong Cheng Yue blinks her beautiful eyes, smiles, and says: “I also heard that yesterday’s battle caused a lot of girl players to confesse to Q Sword on the forums. ..”

Wan Er looks deeply at me and her pretty pupils bring a trace of provocation, but she smiles and says: “Mm, yeah I also feel that Q Sword belongs to the group of men that are perfect in every aspect. It’s normal for girls to fall for him...Unlike a certain person who chose the healer class and at the end...Was bullied left and right by Tyrant of Western Chu...”

I rub my nose and say angrily: “Miss, don’t mock me...”

“What are you talking about...” Wan Er spreads her hands and looks at me innocently: “I’m just saying the truth...Which reminds me, Li Xiao Yao what’s your level right now and what rank are you in Ba Huang City?”

I think for a bit: “Level 31 at 97% experience and almost level 32. As for the ranking, when I went offline I was around 300, but now I’m guess that it should be around 500...”

“Oh? Your level rises so fast?” Wan Er’s mouth is wide open.

I’m speechless: “Not as fast as you, already level 34 and almost level 35...”

“How about you come to Fan Shu City? I’ll introduce you and you can join [Q Sword]’s guild. How about it?”

“Q Sword’s guild?” I frown. “Isn’t that the one that’s really popular on the forums, [Hero Mound]?”

“Yep!” Wan Er nods. “It’s the second ranked guild in the entire server

and [Hero Mound] has a bit of history. There are over 80 thousand player registering. Is there any need to hesitate?”

I clench my fist and say plainly: “Nope, I’ll build up my own guild. I won’t join [Hero Mound].”

Cheng Yue looks at me in a daze and after a while says: “Xiao Yao is jealous...”

While my face is red, I say: “Nope. Definitely not. Jealous? What are you talking about? How can I be jealous of this guy? Impossible!”

Wan Er giggles, hums a song, and doesn’t bother me anymore.

Cheng Yue on the other hand says: “Don’t worry about it, but Wan Er and I decided that we’re going to join [Hero Mound]. But our hearts will be with you. To be honest, if I ever choose a boyfriend I would prefer people like you Xiao Yao...”

I sip my tea and say: “Thanks!”

“You’re welcome...”

.....

After eating lunch, it was about 3 o’clock in the afternoon. We hurried back to school and the two beauties continued to grind their levels which made me feel a bit pressured. I also want to quickly level up or else if I fall behind that would be pretty embarrassing. Also Wan Er and Cheng Yue both want to enter the second ranked guild. I should try joining around with some guilds as well. [Prague] is out of the question. Yan Zhao is furious at me. Also creating my own guild is even more out of the question. I have no funds, no members, and I can’t even attract any players.

Whatever, level grinding comes first. I’ll think about guilds when I reach level 40!

Whoosh!

I go online and I appear in the Desolate Cloud Swamp. Immediately when I get online I get bitten by a huge alligator. Damn the alligator I

killed before noon already respawned! I summon Baby Bobo and I slice towards the alligator with Jade City Sword!

I continue going forward and the alligators shows up less and less. In the shallow water plants, a small red dot appears on the minimap showing that there's a monster there. But...I can't see any monster, so it might be hiding under water.

Splash...

I walk in the water with my Silver Locked Battle boots and hold Jade City Sword tightly. I slowly walk forward. When I get closer to the red dot, it suddenly rushes towards me under the water! At the next instant, water splashes and a huge water snake as thick as my shoulder jumps out at me!

Ssss...

The moment it comes out of the water, it opens its mouth and bites my arm!

"317!"

I raise my head and look at it. Then I see that it's a level 39 monster. So that's why it was so vicious. [Desolate Water Snake] LV-39. Indeed the attack is not bad. Let's see how the defense holds up!

Jade City Sword shakes and the atmosphere around me swirls as I gather wind for the sword. I slice with my level 3 [Wind Blade] and it heavily chops at the head of the water snake!

"527!"

Hm, the defense isn't anything special and its HP should be around 2000 points or so. With one slice of my [Wind Blade], it took away 25% of its health. Bobo also buzzes over there to sting it with his combo. My sword shakes and I go in again for another attack. At the same time the water snake flicks its long tail and it crashes into my face with a bang, OW.

"319!"

I can't take anymore hits. So at the same time I use my level 4 [Combo], I also cast [Heal]!

“+600!”

With that my HP is almost full. Bobo and I combine forces and attack together. With a few strikes the water snake's HP drops and it falls with a slither. After dying it floats on the water and taints the water around it with a faint red tint.

I pick the 12 silver coins in the water plants silently and continue forward. Now that I have experience, when I saw another small red dot on the minimap I stood still. Then I punched into the water and cast [Binding Chains]!

Clang!

Steel chains break through the water showing the Desolate Water Snake. The snake is completely immobilized by my level 2 [Binding Chains] for 2.2 seconds. Both of us rush towards it. This time, killing it was a piece of cake. After finishing the water snake I scan around. At the edge of the swamp I see smoke rising and I also see a person! I'll go there and check it out!

.....

I leave the shallow water and slice away some thorns. In front of is a soldier with rotting legs. He's around 35 years old and over his head hovers a line of words—Garrison Leader Guche. On his shoulder there's the emblem of Ba Huang City, which provides the same buff that I get.

Guche is lying there and using leaves to cover both of his legs. Beside him is a campfire. His forehead is full of sweat and he's breathing quite heavily, it seems like he is going to die soon.

I take my sword and quickly run over to him. I kneel down next to Guche and ask: “What happened?”

Guche raises his head and looks at me. Then suddenly his pale face becomes full of color and says: “Ah! You're...You're from Ba Huang City, but you also have the imprint of Dragon City. Ahh...I'm saved!”

I ask: “What happened?”

Guche says: “Under the orders of Captain Frost, I carried gold coins to nearby towns and cities to buy food to bring back to Dragon City. But I didn’t expect to meet bandits on the way and they stole all the gold coins. I then tried to bring the injured soldiers back to Dragon City. But when we were in the Desolate Cloud Swamp, I was attacked by the [Poisonous Water Snakes] in the swamp. Now my lower body is rotting from the poison. So young Scavenger of Dragon City...”

He grabs my hands and says: “Please kill some [Poisonous Water Snakes] and bring their vemon sacs back to me. I need 10 of their sacs in order to cleanse this poison! If you really help me, then I will give you my most precious thing!”

Ding!

System Notification: Do you accept the mission **【Sac Gathering】**?
(Mission Difficulty: A)

.....

I quickly accept it and say: “Don’t worry, I will find 10 bladders as soon as possible!”

“Thank you young warrior!”

I leave Guche and return to the Desolate Cloud Swamp. After receiving the mission, the water snakes have mission marks on top of their heads. These [Poisonous Water Snakes] will start dropping vemon sacs, but I don’t know the probability of it.

After killing around 10 of them, finally with a splash the snake drops a mission item. In the water plants I found my first bladder. Okay I only need 9 more. Then I can finish this mission.

After a good hour or so, I collected 8 more bladders. I am near the end of this mission and I’m getting excited. Guche is a leader of a garrison. If I saved his life, he said he would give me his most precious item,..

As I was getting full of myself, I suddenly hear leaves rustling. In the

forest, a few players appear. Their movements are fast and in the front is a player with heavy armor and high leveled. He also is someone familiar

—

General Li Mu – Swordsman

.....

Huh, the General Family eh, what are they doing here? Behind Li Mu, General Wang Jian, Lian Po, and Ba Qi also came. They are all level 30+ high ranked players and their equipment are very high quality. 2 swordsman, 1 berserker, and one archer. Are they doing some huge quest or something?

“We found Xiao Yao Zi Zai. He’s actually here in the Desolate Cloud Swamp!”

Li Mu’s eyes suddenly go crazy and he pulls out his sword from his back and laughs: “Everyone prepare! Kill Xiao Yao Zi Zai once and we get 1000 gold coins. Kill him twice and we will have enough funds to create our guild!”

Ba Qi raises his battleaxe and laughs: “The boss and me will flank him. Wang Jian go straight and Lian Po will fire from afar! Haha! With our entire General family dispatches. This brat stands no chance!”

.....

My heart trembles. Damn these guys are here for the bounty?!

Nope. I’m not going to sit here and die. That’s not how I do things!

But I can’t attack first or else my name will turn grey or even red and I will suffer insane death penalties. So I have to wait and pretend that I’m weak. Wait until their name turns gray. Only then can I start attacking.

I hold Jade City Sword and don’t back down. But rather I charge ahead and yell: “Li Mu, I have no grudges against the General family, so there’s no need to cling onto me is there?”

Li Mu laughs: “Xiao Yao Zi Zai, although we have no grudges against you, people die for money. If you want to hate someone, go hate Tyrant of

Western Chu. Us Generals lack money, so don't blame us for this..."

I smile: "If you want the 1000 gold bounty then come!"

My sword trembles and a golden hexagram appears on it. I suddenly change my original course and I move right towards General Ba Qi. He's a berserker with high damage, but his defense is low. So I'll take him down first!

.....

"Die!"

Ba Qi's battleaxe starts flaming and it falls on my shoulder. A sharp pain comes from my left shoulder and my back trembles as well. An arrow has hit my back and two damage indicators pop up—

"341!"

"277!"

.....

My HP instantly drops and without hesitation I cast [Heal] and recover all my HP back. At the same time I dash behind Ba Qi. The agility of a berserker is too low so he can't dodge. I'll let him have a taste of this level 4 [Combo]!

"387!"

"401!"

"336!"

The grey-named Ba Qi falls down into the water with a cry and dies just like that. This is the power of the gold-ranked weapon, Jade City Sword!

Chapter 55: Struggle Between Life and Death

“What?!”

Wang Jian raises his sword and says angrily, “Isn’t Xiao Yao Zi Zai is a strength type healer? This...how can a healer with .5 growth in strength use a Level 4 [Combo] to oneshot Ba Qi?!”

Li Mu points at me with his sword and yells, “Stop talking and kill him already!”

I get hit by two more arrows in my back and lose 400+ HP. General Lian Po’s archery is way too strong. Facing me, Li Mu thrusts his sword towards me with exceptional speed! The player ranked just second to Yan Zhao, he is indeed strong!

.....

Clang!

I powerfully swing my sword as I step backwards into the shallow water with my Silver boots. Li Mu’s sword is forcefully knocked away with a clang. The surprise in his eyes becomes very obvious, he was mistaken to think that a healer’s attack damage and strength can be enough to knock him away.

Although I knocked the edge of his sword away, Li Mu reacts quickly. He bends and suddenly leaps forward, and he kicks my chest with his boot!

“171!”

I roll into the water with a dull feeling in my chest. I clench my fists and thrust them into the surface of the water. A row of chains break through the water, encircling Lian Po

Whoosh!

General Lian Po gets bound by the chains for 2.1 seconds. At the same time, Baby Bobo also appears behind him, buzzing around while a golden

hexagram starts to appear on his stinger.

“Ah damn...”

Lian Po curses, and falls on the ground, killed within moments.

Bang!

As I was focusing on killing Lian Po, I receive yet another blow from behind and multiple pets start chasing me around. Wang Jian comes rushing at me with the edge of his sword glowing, indicating a [Combo] cast, and the only thing I can do is keep backing away. While doing that though, I wave my hand, and cast [Heal]!

“+600!”

Li Mu appears at my side and attacks together with Wang Jian. Although my body is in the game, I flick my Jade Sword out of reflex and with a bang, it hits Li Mu’s wrist. At the same time I yell loudly, and the wind concentrates around my blade. With a teal glow lingering on my sword, I quickly slash toward Wang Jian’s shoulders.

“Careful!” Li Mu yells out.

Wang Jian frowns and backs away quickly and calmly. He saw the wind gather at my blade and backed away immediately. As soon as the strike fishes preparing, I slash at him but only manage to scratch at his shadow; a huge “MISS” pops up. I stare wide-eyed at the empty space where Wang Jian was. Damn, the [Wind Blade] strike missed. What kind of reaction time does Wang Jian have?!

At the same time, Li Mu leans forward. His shoulder heavily bumping my exposed side. With a bang, I lose balance and enter a state of immobility. I can’t do anything for 0.5 seconds!

Li Mu steadies himself and leans down again. A ray of light appears on his feet and pushes away the water, creating a small whirlpool. It’s the beginning of a combo! Damn it, this guy also learned a combo?

“Absolute Authority!”

Li Mu yells out loud. His body and the sword seemingly combine as he

stabs my chest. After that is a slash, then followed by a stab and then another slash. After 4 continuous strikes, he bellows and throws his entire body and sword straight at me. With a bang, he flings me into the air, and I lose all control!

Li Mu twists his body, and the edge of his sword starts glowing. The last attack, [Twisted Strike]!

At that time, the damage numbers of the 6 strike combo, [Absolute Authority], finally pop up—

“79!”

“81!”

“76!”

“84!”

“197!”

“514!”

.....

That last attack, [Twisted Strike], is really strong. The length of [Absolute Authority] was 1.9 seconds, and the combo itself is pretty original. I don't feel too much regret, getting killed by such a great combo.

After a sharp pain, I die and become a corpse. I respawn in soul form in a nearby graveyard.

I quickly open my bag and check my items. Ahh, I didn't drop any of my equipment, but I dropped back down to level 31. I also dropped a few batches of [Chilling Wind Pill]. Quite a shame, those are equal to shining white silver coins!

Still, the happiest people would be those Generals huh? Kill me once, and they get a bounty of 1000 gold. They made quite a big profit.

I clench my fist, and mutter to myself. I can't let this go. I need to retaliate or else the Generals will think I'm like a plate of food that they

can trample over whenever they want.

I run towards my corpse as I think about the coming battle. Those 4 Generals are all attack classes, so they have no healer. So I need to use more reasonable tactics; that'll give me higher chances in succeeding. First, I need to avoid the attacks of Li Mu and Wang Jian. Out of the four of them, those two are the deadliest. Wang Jian can easily dodge my [Wind Blade], and Li Mu has his strong combo.

Or maybe I should be kill Li Mu first, then face the others? If I focus hard, I might be able to dodge Wang Jian's attacks. I also have [Heal] and health potions, so I shouldn't die.

Yep, I'll do that!

.....

I return to the [Desolate Cloud Swamp], and of course, Li Mu and the others are watching over my corpse, while chatting—

Li Mu says, "Actually, I feel a bit sorry for Xiao Yao Zai Zai. For 1000 gold coins, we grouped up to kill him. I feel like we're giving the General Family a bad name..."

Wang Jian frowns, "Boss, when we are weak we have to bow our heads. For those 1000 gold coins, we do what we need to do. What else is there to say? After getting the gold coins, we'll publicly apologize to him. Besides, Xiao Yao Zi Zai helped [Prague] kill us and steal the boss. Killing him is perfectly reasonable."

Lian Po holds his bow, and says with a slight smile, "With the four of us combined he still killed two. Xiao Yao Zi Zai is very strong. Li Mu, do you think you can win in a 1v1?"

Li Mu mutters, "Without pets, I can win. With pets, I will lose. I heard that Xiao Yao's pet is a Bee Overlord, 5 star in attack, with 97% excellency..."

Ba Qi takes a deep breath, "Gah, that's really OP....."

Ba Qi slaps his leg and says, "Well, we'll kill Xiao Yao Zi Zai one more

time and then scram. We shouldn't stay in this area for too long..."

"Mm!"

.....

I wait silently for a good 20 minutes. I don't want to rush and revive recklessly. I'll make my move when they start to get twitchy. I need to finish the job in a split second!

I look at Li Mu, Ba Qi and the others. Their gray name status lasts for 30 minutes, and it's just about to end. I need to start soon! I silently countdown, preparing my counterattack after reviving--

"3!"

"2!"

"1!"

I revive, and it's time to take revenge!

Whoosh!

I revive right behind Li Mu, and I immediately drink a health potion to fill my HP up. I summon Baby Bobo and point towards General Lian Po, telling Bobo to attack him. Finally, I drop down and punch into the water heavily.

Clang!

Chains suddenly break through the water's surface, and bind tightly around Li Mu's feet. For 2.1 seconds, he can't attack or defend, and he's not even allowed to drink a health potion.

"Damn it!" Wang Jian reacts quickly, and his sword comes flying over.

But I'm prepared for it. I spin around and position myself behind Li Mu. At the same time, a golden hexagram starts to form on my sword as I combine the level 4 [Combo] and [Wind Blade] to attack him!

Li Mu widens his eyes, and mutters, "I'm done for..."

"228!"

“231!”

“229!”

“418!”

.....

I strike 4 times, and Li Mu’s 900 or so HP drains completely as he slowly falls over. Shortly after, he explodes with health potions and a faintly glowing necklace!

I stretch out my hand, grab the necklace out of midair and stuff it into my bag. I take my sword, crouch low, and dash towards Wang Jian.

Wang Jian widens his eyes, shocked, “Damn, this guy... he’s a sword expert!”

Still, even while facing my attack, Wang Jian doesn’t hesitate. He faces the edge of my blade with his chest and, with a whoosh, the Jade Sword cuts into his shoulder. But Wang Jian grabs onto my sword hilt, and with his other hand, his sharp blade starts glowing with a golden hexagram, [Combo] + [Heavy Strike] combined!

“233!”

“301!”

“218!”

“+600!”

“357!”

Thankfully I pulled off a [Heal] in the middle of the combo or else I would have been killed right there. Directly behind me, Ba Qi bellows. I can almost feel the flames from his axe burning my back!

I clench my teeth and put power into my feet. I lean down, kick Wang Jian’s leg. His whole body loses balance, and rolls into the mud with me. That also allowed me to dodge Ba Qi’s attack, and as I continue retreating, I look at the cooldown on [Heal]. There’s 3 seconds left, hurry up and get off cooldown!

Whoosh!

“274!”

Lian Po's arrow strikes again, and I see the end of my HP bar. Luckily, Bobo doesn't fail his mission and kills of General Lian Po with his combo. Meanwhile, Wang Jian and Ba Qi's pets, one of them is a Killer Bee and the other is a Green Water Insect, continuously bang on my armor. My HP will drain in the blink of an eye at this rate!

Grief consumes me as I see my HP plummet. I can only watch as Ba Qi's battleaxe falls on me while one second is left on the cooldown of [Heal]. No, that won't do. I must fight to the death. I counter Ba Qi's [Fiery Axe] + [Heavy Strike] with my [Combo] + [Wind Blade]. Under the violent attacks, I feel a hot pain in my chest as my HP completely depletes. Simultaneously, the Jade Sword slices open Ba Qi's chest. He dies as well with blood spurting out!

“Die!”

Ba Qi looks at his own health as it disappears. He is as sad and angry as I am, “How was he able to kill me too...?”

Wang Jian clenches his fist and stands off to the side with a heavy mood, staring at Ba Qi and I as we go into soul form.

.....

Whoosh!

I return to the graveyard again in my soul form, and check my equipment first. Mm, Jade Sword, Armor of the Earth, and the Helmet of Cruelness are still here. I only dropped a white tiered cloth leg protector. That's fine. Oh yeah, Li Mu dropped a necklace for me, let's see what kind of gift he left me. I take the necklace out of the pack and look. My mood instantly gets better—

【Necklace of Bravery】(Bronze-Tier Equipment)

Strength: +21

Others: Equipper gains 50 HP

Level Requirement: 30

.....

Very nice! Adds 21 strength and 50 HP; They're just the stats I need!

Chapter 56: Strength of a Thousand Men

Now that I have this Necklace of Bravery, my total HP rises to 930 points, its one step closer to 1000! At least now I won't die as easily. But damn, there's still that bitter feeling. I died two times, and dropped back down to level 30!

In my soul form, I return to the [Desolate Cloud Swamp], and Li Mu is silently standing there while holding his sword. He, together with Wang Jian and Ba Qi formed a triangle formation, with Lian Po holding his longbow in the middle. A typical defense formation. No matter which side I attack from, I can't get any surprise attacks off.

.....

"We killed him twice, equivalent to 2000 gold coins. I've already contacted Tyrant of Western Chu, and within the next 10 minutes, I will put the video of us killing Xiao Yao Zi Zai two times on the forums as proof, so that he has to keep his word." General Lian Po says faintly.

Wang Jian frowns, "That video... can't it be edited? We 4v1ed, and we still got killed, if people see that we would lose face! Also, Boss's necklace dropped as well, damn it. That necklace is worth at least 50 gold!"

Li Mu stand there quietly, and says, "No need, Xiao Yao is originally strong, why else would Tyrant of Western Chu give out a 1000 gold bounty? Although quite a few of us died, ultimately, we finished our bounty hunt. But what kind of class is 'Scavenger of Dragon City'? How did he get it..."

Ba Qi asks, "Boss, do we continue waiting here and kill him for the third time?"

Li Mu shakes his head, "Nah, we can't be too greedy..."

After saying that, Li Mu faces the open space, and yells, "Brother Xiao Yao Zi Zai! Today, we Generals were unfair to you, and we apologize for our actions. We only want the 2000 gold. My Necklace of Bravery dropped, you can keep that as our apology. We hope that you won't hold a

grudge against us, and we Generals will remember about you!"

After saying that, Li Mu mutters, "Let's go!"

All four pets are released, and they back away carefully.

.....

Being in soul form, I can't say anything back so I silently look on as they leave. I revive and summon Baby Bobo. I wear my nearly acquired Necklace of Bravery, a bronze equipment that's worth two levels. Luckily, equipment like necklaces and rings are hard to obtain, so the trade isn't too bad.

I continued killing water snakes and collected the venom sacs!

Before long, 10 sacs are in my bag. Okay, time to go to that NPC garrison leader to hand in the mission!

I enter the forest, and find Guche fairly quickly. His face has turned purple from the snake poison and his whole body is twitching uncontrollably. When he sees me, his death-like face sparks a trace of life, and he struggles to get up, "Young warrior, have you brought the venom sacs of the Desolate Water Snakes?"

I nod, and I take the 10 sacs from my bag to give to him. He washes them and then cracks the sacs and spreads the juice from the sacs onto his wounds. It is extremely effective, and with minutes, the rotting flesh started to flow with fresh red blood. Guche tears his clothing to wrap around his wounds, and then he stands with the help of a staff. He pats my shoulder, and says, "New scavenger, your help is very gratifying, I also see the hope in the cold and desolate Dragon City. Since you saved my life, now, I will give you my most precious things. Also, I represent the garrison when I say my thanks!"

Ding!

System Notification: Congratulations! You finished A-ranked mission [Sac Gathering]! You receive 9000 experience points, 10 gold coins, and your fame in Dragon City has increased! Also, you receive the item: [Elite Steel Wrist Guard]!

.....

Elite Steel Wrist Guards?

My heart thumps in happiness, I haven't heard of the rank Elite Steel before, it can't be black-iron equipment, can it?

I open up my bag and find an elegant wrist guard made out of silvery steel. I pick it up, wave my hand to see its stats, and I couldn't stop myself from smiling. I didn't save Guche for nothing—

【Elite Steel Wrist Guard】(Silver-rank equipment)

Type: Armor

Defense: 70

Strength: +25

Magic Power: +20

Other: Raises defense by 25 points.

Level Requirement: 30

.....

With a golden ray of light, I rose to level 31, of course, I can wear this level 30 silver wrist guard. I immediately equip it, and I feel like I got a lot stronger, especially in defense, it rose by a lot—

【Xiao Yao Zi Zai】(Scavenger of Dragon City)

Level: 31

Attack: 558-751

Defense: 417

HP: 936

Mana: 390

Charm: 25

.....

My defense is over 400 points now, and the best thing about this wrist

guard is it gives me 20 extra points of magic power. Scavenger of Dragon City's magic power to mana ratio is 1:8, so 20 points in magic power gives me 160 extra mana, and at this stage it is invaluable. When my [Combo], [Binding Chains], and [Wind Blade] reach level 4, plus my level 4 [Heal], a rotation of the skills will pretty much empty my mana bar. If my skills go off cooldown but I don't have enough mana to use it, that would be a pretty sad scene.

I continue, and without a quest, I start annihilating the water snakes, and two water snake seals drop. A high agility monster, but the value of it isn't high, and I haven't seen any level 1 Desolate Water Snakes yet. While killing monsters, I can grind both my levels and my skills, and luckily I still have a few Chilling Wind Pills, or else I wouldn't be able to grind my skills that much.

Level 3 [Wind Blade] and level 3 [Binding Chains] both need 60 mana per use and to raise them from level 3 to 4, I need to use the skill 1000 times. It's a very tedious process, and after grinding non-stop for 3 hours, it's already 7 o'clock at night. With a ding, [Wind Blade] reaches level 4. LV-4 [Wind Blade], increases attack by 12%, extremely powerful!

But, [Binding Chains] still needs a bit more time until it reaches level 4. I'll take it slowly.

.....

Tick!

As I was killing the water snakes, I get a message. It's from Wan Er, "Xiao Yao, have you looked on the forums?"

"I haven't. What happened?"

Wan Er opens up a voice call, and laughs light, "You're getting famous... The 4 Generals went to some remote place to kill you, but unexpectedly you killed quite a few of them. This video on the forums is getting near a million views! You should pay more attention..."

"Sigh..."

Wan Er continues, "You be careful. I hear that in Fan Shu City a few

groups want to go to Ba Huang City, and even in Jiu Li people want to go too. For a bounty of 1000 gold coins, these people are even more vicious than the Generals!”

“I got it, I’ll be careful.”

“Mm, then I’ll continue level grinding.”

“Okay.”

Just as Wan Er’s call ends, I get another message. This time it’s from Qing Qian, “Xiao Yao!”

“Mm, Qing Qian. What’s the matter?”

“A lot of people from Ba Huang City are going to the forests in the north. I suspect that their goal is you, what are you going to do?” She seems very worried.

I smile, “Don’t worry Qing Qian. If I can beat them, I’ll kill them. If I can’t, then I’ll just disconnect and go offline. It’s not like I’m going to keep on dying for no reason. If I go offline, those people will leave. I doubt they would play a waiting game with me.”

Qing Qian replies, “Mm, if you do that, I’ll feel relieved. That’s right, I’m coming towards you, throw me your coordinates. I have something to give to you...”

“Oh? What thing?”

“When you get it you’ll know!”

“Okay.”

.....

After giving her my coordinates, I continue level grinding and I also check the weapon ranking of Ba Huang City. In the rankings, Jade City Sword is ranked first, the second is a gold-ranked pike, the third is a gold-ranked dagger. All of their owners hid their IDs. That’s expected, no point of getting into trouble from people being jealous. As for the armor rankings, my Silver-locked boots and Elite Steel Wrist Guard are ranked as 278 and 311 respectively. The rest of my items don’t even reach the top

1000. Ranked first in the defensive items is a gold-ranked level 32 helmet, and who knows who has that item. This game is full of violent developments because there are so many skilled players!

Whoosh!

Light bounces off my sword, and I continue using the continuous strikes of [Stab+Slash+Hack+Ram+Wind Blade], and every time it takes shorter and shorter to use it. It gets along very well with my power, and it feels like it has already become one of my skills. Also, as my strength gets bigger and bigger, and the power of the strikes also slowly increase.

After a long time, and who knows how many times I used these 5 strikes, finally, I hear a noise next to my ear that shakes my heart. Has it finally come?

Ding!

System Notification: Congratulations! You have successfully created a combo. It satisfies the requirements of practice, power, speed, angle, etc. Your combo is composed of [Stab+Slash+Hack+Ram+Wind Blade]. Please make a name for it, if no name is given within 300 seconds, the system will automatically create one!

.....

Damn, I finally create the combo!!

I couldn't hide my happiness, and I silently enter a row of words. I named my combo【Strength of a Thousand Men】!

Ding!

System Notification: Congratulations! Your combo "Strength of a Thousand Men" has been created. The system ranks it as a S-rank combo, and you are the 7th player to successfully create a combo. Charm +3!

My heart almost stops, and looking at my reward, I'm already sure, that my [Strength of a Thousand] is S-rank, higher than Yan Zhao Warrior's A-rank and Li Mu's B-rank combos, it's really powerful!

My excitement doesn't stop, and holding Jade City Sword, I look into the

distance, and I find a level 39 water snake slithering around, and without any hesitation I slam it to the ground!

Whoosh!

With [Binding Chains], I trap the water snake. I take my sword and rush over there, creating ripples with my Silver boots. I silently cast [Strength of a Thousand Men], and the combo immediately activates. A wave of air spread from my feet, and with a whoosh it scatters all the droplets of water around me. My sword quickly slabs, slashes, and hacks with lightning speed, then vigorous power flows from my body, and I slam into the water snake, with that it is stunned for a short while. My sword starts to glow teal, and it collects wind for 0.2 seconds. [Wind Blade]! A chain of damage numbers fly up—

“278!”

“301!”

“298!”

“407!”

“1274!”

.....

The last strike instantly killed the water snake. With a combo I instantly kill a monster that's 8 levels above me! This is the real instant kill that I've been hearing. The system calculations are in front of me, my combo used 1.2 seconds which is a frightening speed. Compared to Yan Zhao's 1.7 seconds, Li Mu's 1.9 seconds, this combo is way quicker. Not only is the time shorter, the power is also stronger, and because its shorter, its harder to defend against. The difference is extremely clear!

Chapter 57: Pardon Card

TL: Unlike in other MMORPGs, Chinese mmorpgs are filled with PK/Guild wars because of its limited resources which is why there is an excessive amount of PKing in the book. PKing is a larger elements in this book than master killing.

“Shua!”

A gold beam fell upon me and I once again reach Level 32 after killing a Cloud Water Snake. I am close to tears, Damn, if not for the 2 consecutive deaths this afternoon, I would already within the Top 10 of Ba Huang City. To miss such a rare opportunity...

Suddenly, “Sha Sha”, the grass by the shore moved. A few seconds later, a beautiful silhouette appeared, Level 34 Assassin beauty, Yue Qing Qian.

“Qian Qian!”

I walk forward, “You’ve come a long way, what is it that you want to give me?”

Yue Qing Qian smiles as she stretches her hand into her waist-pouch and pulls out a card, “Look, I somehow managed to acquire this from an auction, I’m sure it’ll be useful to you...”

I reach for it and take the blood red card.

[Pardon Card]: After using this card, for 12 hours, the user will not receive any penalties for killing other players.

.....

“Oh?”

Shocked, I continued, “Qing Qian, this should be pretty expensive right? I really do need it though...”

Yue Qing Qian laughs and shakes her head: “Not really, it’s only 5 gold because not many people want it. Everyone is more focused on rushing to Level 40 for their second class upgrade. Nobody has the time to spend on killing people all day, Of course, Tyrant of Western Chu is an exception...”

Yue Qing Qian looks at my equipment from head to toe as she speaks.

“Eh? Brother Xiao Yao, you...why are you wearing heavy armor? Aren't you...aren't you a healer?”

I pat the Dragon City Scavenger insignia on my shoulder, “Nope, I just changed my class to Swordsman.”

“Wah, no wonder you could withstand the attacks from the Generals and even kill 3 of them...”

“I still died though, my level was insufficient...”

“Hmm.” Yue Qing Qian blinks and continues, “I suggest you stop training here, your current location is pretty much an open secret and is sure to attract endless players to try and kill you for the 1000 gold bounty. The temptation is simply irresistible!”

“I know, Qing Qian, you can return first, I'll change my training spot right away,”

“Okay, Brother Xiao Yao you must be careful!”

“Sure...”

.....

I watch Yue Qing Qian disappear into the distance, and then open the map of my surroundings. I do have to move from here, many players are going to come here looking to kill me soon. So it won't be possible for me to level in peace. Liu Ying wants to buy my doom, but I won't surrender so easily. I have to be as tough and difficult to kill as a cockroach, and bide my time for the perfect moment to strike back.

“Di!”

Yue Qing Qian sends yet another message: “Brother Xiao Yao, one more thing!”

“Yeah, what's up?”

“Have you heard of the [Vanguard] guild?”

“Of course, they are Rank number 3 in China, second only to [Legends]

and [Heroes Tomb]. How can I not have heard of them?”

“Well...” Yue Qing Qian sounds worried: “[Vanguard] guild left Jiu Li City towards Ba Huang City this morning. Their leader, Jian Feng is also on the way over, they will reach Ba Huang within a day. The whole Ba Huang City’s balance of power is going to change, even [Prague] is feeling the heat. Half an hour earlier, I heard that Jian Feng saw the video of you PK-ing the Generals and is interested to exchange a few blows with you...”

I clench my teeth: “[Vanguard] is a large guild, they shouldn’t be short on gold?”

Yue Qing Qian: “Though they don’t lack gold, but Jian Feng is insane. For a guy with the nickname Insane Gamer, he keeps seeking to challenge strong players. Just this morning, Uncle Yan Zhao dueled with him 5 times and lost 4 of those duels. You must be careful, Jian Feng is arrogant and cold-blooded, I suspect that if he sees you outside the city, he’ll kill you without even bothering to ask for a duel.

My heart sank: “Okay, I know...thanks Qing Qian, I’ll do my best and stay strong...”

“Okay!”

.....

Leaving the Desolate Cloud Swamp, I continue my journey towards the East. After I passed through a thick forest, I reach a large canyon ahead. It’s also the largest training area within the Dragon’s domain – Fire Stone Canyon!

The area of Fire Stone Canyon is at least 10 times the size of Desolate Cloud Swamp. This will make it safer for me to train here as it’s harder for other players to find me in such a large area.

“Wu wu...”

Standing on the canyon above, my whole body suddenly starts trembling as the cold wind blows through the gaps in my armor and chills me to the bone. As I gaze into the distance, all I see are fire-red rock, it’s like I’m within a raging, flaming volcano. On the side of the Fire Stone Canyon

nearest to me, I spot countless Level 39 Orcs who hold wooden clubs swarming around. With my current strength, training with monsters 7 levels above me is not difficult, and the EXP is wonderful. Alright, I shall hang around this area to train!

Swinging off from a protruding rock, I slide down along the mountain slope.

“Keng Keng” I use the Jade City Sword to carve a trace into the rock to slow my descent. Baby Bobo follows me in the air. A few minutes later, I plant my feet firmly onto the ground in the middle of the canyon. Just ahead, there are 2 Orcs, “Huchi huchi”, they breathe coarsely and I can’t make out what they are saying.

These are Porcine Orcs, with a human body and a pig’s head. Though I wouldn’t say that their body is entirely human either. Their torsos are exceptionally thick and strong, covered in entirely in slick black hair. Standing at about 2 meters tall, animal skin which seems to be leopard fur hangs from their waist. This is enough to prove that these Orcs are strong.

.....

“Ga Ga I smell fresh blood!” The Orc on the left is suddenly on the alert, with his ears perked, he laughs loudly, “Finally, a change of diet. I see a strong, young, human warrior. The delicious flesh of a warrior’s legs is great, let’s get him together!

.....

“Hong long long”, I hear the sound of footsteps as both Orcs brandish their wooden clubs and rush over.

I remain calm. With a swift stroke, I strike forward with my Jade City Sword, “Pu chi”, a normal attack hits the Orc in front. Immediately after that, a low whistling sound is heard as aura rises from my feet and the S Rank combo [Strength of a Thousand Men] is activated. I execute a flurry of strikes and cut forcefully. The final strike, [Wind Blade] splits the Orc as he screams in agony. With another attack, rays of white EXP points fly and seep into my body, making my EXP bar jump. The Orc is dead!

Turning around, Jade City Sword shudders as a golden hexagon forms on the blade and rotates, “Keng keng keng”, my combo lands on the other Orc’s wooden club. Baby Bobo’s combo follows, producing another ray of white light. Chuckle, with this combination, I can kill off two Level 39 Orcs within 6 seconds, my damage output is indeed outstanding.

As a third Orc rushes over, I lift my blade and dash toward him, wanting to execute my custom combo. Alas, a cooldown of 30 seconds are on all custom combos, so I have to wait for 20 seconds more before I can [Strength of a Thousand Men]. I immediately use Wind Blade and together with Baby Bobo’s attacks, we easily get rid of the Orc. I loss a little health, 1 hit from the Orc took out 80 HP from me, an amount that isn’t even worth healing over.

One step at a time, I gradually advance into the depths of the Fire Stone Canyon.

Up ahead lies a patch of dark green thicket belonging to the Deep Cold Forest, the sole forest in the middle of Fire Stone Canyon. Before I enter, my Herb Gathering skill lights up, signalling that there are high leveled herbs ahead!

Stepping into the forest, I look between a large tree and a rock and catch a glimpse of strands of dark blue grass swaying in the wind. It’s almost as if they are welcoming me.

Taking a number of steps forward, imaginary tears start to stream down my face as I spot the name of the herb in front of me. Indigo Seagrass, a Level 5 herb. It’s the essential ingredient in the refinement of Level 5 Indigo Seagrass of Immortality!

I take out my herb shovel and gather it excitedly!

“Ding!”

System Notice: Congratulations, you have gathered 2 x [Indigo Seagrass], your [Herb Gathering] skill as increased by 2!

“Ding!”

System Notice: Congratulations, you have gathered 3 x [Indigo

Seagrass], your [Herb Gathering] skill as increased by 3!

.....

After collecting 7 Indigo Seagrass plants, I happily stand upright to leave when suddenly, something scuttles out from the shrub in front of me. “Ji ji”, it’s tail flashes as an ice cone hurdles my way–

“Pa!”

“224!”

My body trembles. Damn, it’s a magic type monster–

Ice Rat, Level 40, data not available.

.....

Just before I initiate my attack, the Ice Rat sends it’s second ice cone my way, making me lose 200+ HP again. But he won’t be lucky enough for a third time as my Jade City Sword slashes into the Ice Rat in the next instant. An aura surges around me as my combo is activated. “Pa pa pa”, [Strength of a Thousand Men] strikes the Ice Rat continuously. Being a magic type monster, it’s health should only be around 1500 HP. “Ji ji”, it whimpers as it falls to the ground!

“Pa ta... ..”

My luck is pretty good, it’s just my first kill and I actually get a dark blue illustration as loot –

[Ice Rat]

Attack: ★

Defense: ★★☆

HP: ★★★

Agility: ★★★☆

Magic: ★★★★★

.....

Okay, a typical pet, magic potential growth at 4 stars is good if one uses

it as a magic pet. At least it would be useful to level and PK at the early stages. Magic is the weakness of armoured classes, and the proof is that this Level 39 monster can shave off 200+ of my HP with its ice cone.

I continue to roam around the Deep Cold Forest with my Jade City Sword in hand, searching for Indigo Seagrass while keeping an eye out for a Level 1 Ice Rat, making sure not to miss it.

After drifting around for more than an hour, it's almost 9PM already, but Lin Wan Er hasn't contacted me for supper. Dong Cheng Yue did joke that tonight was my turn to treat, because my bet with Lin Wan Er was still on-going and I got killed by the Generals twice, which meant I owed them 2 meals.

While fighting an Ice Rat, I suddenly hear the sound of footsteps and voices coming from just outside the forest—

“Boss, these are the carcasses of Ice Rats. It looks like there's a player nearby, and he must've been here recently because the carcasses haven't disappeared yet.....”

“Okay, let's go in and take a look. To train in this area requires a group of at least 10 players, or they wouldn't be able to withstand the monster's attacks.”

“Yeah!”

.....

Shadows move as a few players enter my field of vision. I simply stand there holding my Jade City Sword, surrounded by nothing but empty space. I stare at them as our eyes meet.

“Seriously.....”

A thin archer remarks coldly: “Xiao Yao.....Xiao Yao Zi Zai...to actually bump into him here. Boss, what should we do.....”

The Level 31 Berserker lifts his battle axe off his shoulder, as his face turns savage: “Isn't it obvious? Kill him!”

Chapter 58: Battle Between the Sword and the Shield

There were a total of 7 players. The two berserkers were level 31 and the party consisted of another healer, archer, musketeer and mage. In addition to this, there was a level 32 monk with heavy armor. Overall this team combination is perfect for targeting bosses. Also to level up to 32 as a monk certainly isn't an easy task, which shows how well of a player that monk is.

The captain seemed to be the berserker carrying a shining axe, above his avatar are the words, "Mu Tain", and judging by its looks, the axe should be a silver tiered item; its attack damage surely wouldn't be low. Though the biggest problem was probably their long ranged attackers, since I had no way of blocking or escaping it. A single round of attack from the entire team would probably be capable of killing me.

.....

Under a tree I smile and ask: "I'm simply walking around collecting Indigo Seaweed, doing nothing to you. Why would you want to kill me?"

Mu Tain waves his axe and laughs: "By killing you, we would earn a thousand gold. So of course we want to kill you. Do you have any last words before you die?"

I stayed silent for a second, before I said: "This Deep Cold Forest is my domain, if you aren't afraid, you can come and try to kill me."

Immediately afterwards, I rushed into the Forest and since it was nighttime the visibility for everyone was poor and I disappeared out of their sight.

Mu Tain pauses before saying: "Release your pets, we will let them find him for us. Today is the day that Xiao Yao Zi Zai dies!"

Moments later a few bats, goblins, and other pets were summoned. None of them had a truly outstanding attack force, therefore being a limited threat.

.....

“Rustle.....”

As my battle boots steps on the moist grass, I slowly walk through the forest. I’m kind of scared of facing a 7-member team, if they came at me all at once, I would definitely die. But if I focused my strengths and pinpointed their weaknesses, I would have a good chance in killing them. I’ll use Baby Bobo’s mobility to assassinate their healer before moving on to the squishies: the mage, archer, and musketeer.

I began to flank to the side of their party and raising my hand, I summon Baby Bobo. He flew towards the healer as quick as a bolt of lightning and breaks through their defense line and uses his LV4 [Combo]

“Crap!”

The healer immediately moves backwards and first hit of the combo misses, but Baby Bobo continues with his combo and two solid damages flew up.

“489 ! ”

“512 ! ”

Damn! The healer didn’t die. He must have added at least 5 points to endurance each time he leveled up in order to gain such a high health. While thinking this, Baby Bobo does a basic attack and the healer drops to the ground

Mu Tain quickly turns around and shouts loudly: “Musketeer and archer target and butcher his pet!”

The bullets and arrows almost immediately locked on to Baby Bobo and even though Baby Bobo’s defense was decent it wasn’t enough to stop their high attack power. They dealt a little over 500 damage and in addition, the mage cast a [Rock Spike] and [Chilling Wind] on Baby Bobo

“+600 ! ”

I stay in the dark while I cast the Heal on Baby Bobo. Afterwards,

I command Baby Bobo to retreat from the battlefield. If he stays there, he'd be a target practice for them!

"Monk, use [Lower Your Sword] on his pet!" Mu Tain yells as he makes a vicious attempt to hit Baby Bobo, but his attempt is futile as Baby Bobo is simply too fast.

A golden light emits from the monk's staff and hits Baby Bobo. Baby Bobo's attack got reduced by 10%! His 610 damage has become 549 in a split second. This fight isn't in my favor anymore.

"Fucker, you want to leave?!"

The other berserker charged forward with his battle axe. On the axe are flickering flames and it looks like he wants to use his fire axe skill to kill Baby Bobo.

I can't stay hidden anymore!

I quickly surge forward and use my Lvl 4 [Combo] with my Jade City Sword and as his focus is elsewhere, 3 numbers pop up.

"358 ! "

"347 ! "

"333 ! "

His face shows a glimpse of his panic and he immediately retreats. I followed him closely since he must be almost dead after being hit by my [Combo], even if he have added a lot of stat points to endurance. When my attack was ready I make an extremely fast vertical slash.

"Fuck, how is this possible ? "

The berserker is shocked at my speed and before he can recover his stance, his chest starts sprouting out blood. He drops to the ground and his battle axe drops!

Before I get the chance to grab the spoils, I immediately retreat. Just a second later, the spot that I was standing at before is hit by two arrows and a bullet.

.....

Carrying Baby Bobo in my arms as I retreat. I wait to heal both me and Baby Bobo back to full health. When we finally get back to peak condition, I approach again knowing that the graveyard where the players respawn is far from here. I have approximately 10 minutes to kill the rest of the party. I firmly believe that I must kill all those who dare to attack me, so no one believes they can push me around.

As I peek around, I see a furious Mu Tain yelling: "Damn two people have already been killed and what have you been doing? You guys have barely reacted and your pets are useless!"

The monk quietly said: "Our vampire bat are simply unable to keep up with the bee's speed."

"Just keep defending this area until they respawn. Then we will continue the hunt."

"Fine."

.....

Even though they can afford to wait, I can't. I command Baby Bobo to circle around to the other side. This time our goal is to kill the mage and archer.

Shuaa!

The humming Baby Bobo flies towards the mage as quick as lightning.

"He's here again!"

The mage was very observant and quickly manages to cast [Icicle Shot] onto Baby Bobo, which slowed him greatly. This enabled the mage to continue moving backwards, he's using the hit and run tactic.

As they were distracted by Baby Bobo, I approached the archer from behind. Using the Jade City Sword I used [Combo] to strike at his left shoulder and at the same time, I swung my fist at the ground.

Peng!

The [Binding Chains] was a success and the mage is rooted to the ground. In two strikes Baby Bobo, kills the mage. Mages are unwilling to put points into endurance like healers, since a mage's only job is to do lots of damage. So a mage must put every single point into Magic Power, otherwise he wouldn't have enough mana to keep up his lethal attacks.

As the archer dies, his vampire bat squeaks and disappears as well.

In seconds, two players have been killed and only 3 are left.

Hong!

A combination of pain and heat emanate from my shoulder as I got hit by a [Fire Axe].

Zheng!

“227 ! ”

Mu Tain takes advantage of my temporary stunned state to perform a normal attack for 154 damage. His eyes open wide, in shock: “What is that defense?!”

I didn't bother responding and tilted the edge of my sword to hit the abdomen of the musketeer. On the other side, Baby Bobo activates his LV-4 [Stinger], even with the 10% debuff on attack, the damage dealt is extremely impressive and the musketeer slowly falls to the ground.

.....

Zheng!

The monk hits me again and I almost feel like laughing as 49 points of damage pop up. A monk might be incredibly tough and have enormous amounts of health. But what does it matter if he isn't a threat in combat, such a shame.

“Its your turn now.”

I make a quick step sideways and a big MISS appears as I successfully dodge Mu Tain's attack. His eyes are filled with anger as he realizes that I might annihilate his entire team. He uses his LV 4 [Penetration], his next attack will ignore 20% of my armor.

I see that my skills are available again and quickly decide to take his attack head on, and immediately afterwards use [Combo] on him. The tip of my Jade City Sword glows golden hexagrams and I viciously make 3 continues attacks.

“357 ! ”

“342 ! ”

“344 ! ”

Mu Tain's health instantly drops to zero and he clenches his teeth as he dies.

Behind the team leader is the monk, who silently stood as he casted his spells. First, he casted a LV 4 [Regen] which improved his regen by 4% and afterwards a LV 4 [Golden Defense] which improved his defense by 12%.

“Come on!”

The monk exclaimed loudly: “Lets see you break my defense. Lets see the limits of a close-combat healer. Either you or me will die today.”

I continued staying silent, directing Baby Bobo to kill his pet goblin.

“Huaa!”

The Jade City Sword flips as I move forward in a smooth motion. In a single moment, I appear in front of the Monk with my sword ready to attack. He was horrified at my speed. Before I began my attacks, I took advantage of his surprise to crash into him. The defensive stance of the monk instantly shatters and he takes staggered steps backwards!

A glow emerged from my feet as I quickly used my S-Class combo [Strength of a Thousand Men]!

“98 ! ”

“101 ! ”

“79 ! ”

“109 ! ”

As I let out my continuous attacks, the Monk keeps losing his balance, stumbling backwards. Under the effects of my ram, he completely lost his balance, perfect for the 0.2 seconds delay for my [Wind Blade]. This would be the final hit.

Peng!

A huge number appeared when [Wind Blade] connected with the Monk.

“711 ! ”

The monk is surprised and stunned as he said: “That was.... was that a custom combo?”

I remain silent as I finish him off.

.....

Shua!

The level 32 monk died.

Chapter 59: Jian Feng Han

Looking at the ground, I see that Mu Tain and the monk both dropped some equipment. Mu Tain dropped a green-ranked armor, but my Armor of the Earth is obviously better, so I don't need it. But the monk dropped a shiny leg guard, so I pick it up and check it out. It's bronze-ranked and it's not too bad. My cloth leg guard conveniently dropped when I was fighting the Generals.

【Feral Bear's Leg Guard】(Bronze-rank)

Type: Armor

Defense: 65

Strength: +15

Other: Increases users defense by 20 points

Level Requirement: 30

.....

I'm almost in a full suit of armor now, and my defense also rises to another level, breaking 500 points. Even if I meet Mu Tain and his gang again, I may not lose 200+ HP when I eat an axe. I scan around the area to check for any other drops, spin around, and go into the forests to continue searching. After wandering around for a while, without finding anything new, Wan Er sent a message, "Want to go out for a midnight snack? We're hungry..."

"Mm, I'll be there immediately!"

"Okay!"

I disconnect and take off the helmet. I turn around, and I notice that a pair of eyes are staring at me. It's Glasses, aka Tang Gu!

"Oi, what do you want?!" I frown and ask.

Tang Gu continues to stare at me, "Xiao Yao, I hear you fought with Liu Ying and his gang and that you even beat all four of them by yourself! Is that true?"

I smile, "Where'd you hear that from? Don't joke around."

"Was that really not you? Liu Ying won't admit it, but students saw it..."

"I'm going for a midnight snack, you think what you want!"

I put a coat on and leave. I arrive at the girls' dorm and two beauties wearing skirts are waiting for me. With their skirts fluttering in the wind revealing their attractive long legs, I can't help but let my imagination roam.

"Where are we going today?" I ask.

Wan Er smiles, "Today you're treating so you can decide!"

I slap my leg, "Woops, I didn't bring money today. Can you cover for me today? I'll pay you back tomorrow..."

"You are shameless..."

"Cough cough, Miss is the best..."

"....."

.....

In the restaurant, we order a few dishes and a hot soup to get us through the night. Of course, having two beautiful women sitting in front of me is a blessing as a bodyguard. Looking at these two happily eating, I can't help but remember my previous experiences as a bodyguard.

The first time, I was the bodyguard of some foreign executive and drove him around all day. I also helped bring him all kinds of women. There was one time when, as I was driving, I started hearing moans in the back. That marked the end of that job.

The second time, I was the bodyguard of some bigshot drug dealer. I got paid 5000 Yuan (~\$800) everyday. During the drug deals, he killed a few innocent people in front of my face. Later on, when his enemies sent people to kill him, I did nothing as I saw his head got blown apart by an M9 pistol. After that, I dismissed myself...

My third employer is Ling Wan Er or rather, Ling Tain Nan. This is the

first time I didn't want to kill my protection target. Mm, I better cherish this.

.....

"Li Xiao Yao, what are you thinking about?" Wan Er suddenly raises her head and looks at me.

I smile, "It's nothing, just..."

"Just what?" She blinks with her pretty eyes and asks.

I go silent for a moment, then say, "I'm just worried that so many people in Ba Huang City are chasing after me, and because of that I might not be able to increase my level. I'm always getting killed, and if my level doesn't go up, I won't be able to resist. The bounty hunters will only get stronger as they come at me."

"How can that be?" She smiles lightly and says, "I was just looking at the forums, and I saw that you 1v7'd an entire group. It was pretty good, and a lot of people are calling you Ba Huang City's Border Zone's Death God..."

My face goes red, "What are you talking about? That was only a struggle for survival..."

Wan Er purses her lips, and stares at me, "Still, you really need to be careful..."

"You're talking about Jian Feng Han?"

"Mm."

Wan Er nods, and says, "Jian Feng Han. I dueled him some time ago. He is a person who understands battles very well and specializes in using his pets to lure others into a disadvantage. Also, he's somewhat of a battle maniac, and he won't allow anyone to be stronger than him. Think about it: virtually everyone in Ba Huang City knows you, and the bounty for you is so high as well, so its not possible that Feng Han come and challenge you!"

Cheng Yue is sipping her tea on the side, and suddenly smiles, "I feel

that instead of challenging you, he wants to teach you a lesson.”

After saying that, she sits up straight and says, “Xiao Yao. How about Wan Er and I go to Ba Huang City to protect you for a few days? I haven’t seen this Feng Han, and I really want to see his strength. How about it?”

Though I know she offered it to protect me, I shake my head, “Nah, it’s fine. I’ll deal with whatever happens by myself. I’ve already been making preparations against the people Liu Ying sends after me. If Feng Han really comes, then that’s fine. Even I get killed by him, I make sure he pays. Just you watch...”

“Then we’ll be expecting more meals from you...”

“.....”

.....

After eating, I return to the dorms, but I can’t sleep, so I grab my helmet and go online. Might as well grind a bit more and quickly get to level 40 for that second promotion. After I learn some new skills, I’ll feel a little safer. If I meet a really skilled player now, I may very well be helpless.

Whoosh

I appear back in the forest while holding my sword. I summon Baby Bobo, and I carefully check the area around me. Some level 39 Ice Rats scuttle around, but there are no players. Mu Tain and his gang got completely wiped out by me, so I’m guessing he gave up on the bounty. Of course, losing a level is quite an impact, and without a certain way to kill me, no one would risk it.

Everyone thinks that in the area near the border, this Xiao Yao Zi Zai is an extremely skilled player, but it’s nothing but a false rumor. Even though in these past few days I’ve killed quite a few skilled players, I know how much I’m worth. I may have done some damage to the Generals, but if I dueled Yan Zhao right now, I’d only have around a 40% chance of winning. Yan Zhao Warrior has been leveling insanely fast and keeps getting better and better equipment. In addition to all that, he has [Prague] backing him up; I can’t fight against him.

Whatever, I'll continue level grinding until level 40, and then I'll see what skills Beast Tamer Dalin has for me!

.....

During the night, I continue killing Ice Rats until around 12 o'clock. I have a ton of Indigo Seagrass, so it's time to return to the city and create a batch of level 5 Seagrass pills.

As I was thinking of leaving, I raise my head, and feel a chill. Rather than being actually cold, the chill was more like an aura, an aura of killing spirit. Behind me, at the end of an open ground. 20 yards from me, I see a young man wearing black armor and leaning on a rock. His eyes are full of provocation, and over his head there's a row of words—

ID: Jian Feng Han LV-37 Swordsman

.....

It's the guildmaster of [Vanguard], the extremely strong person that Wan Er talked about. This guy might even be above Yan Zhao!

He silently stares at me, and after a few seconds, he raises his head and smiles, "Oi, Xiao Yao Zi Zai, you're pretty interesting. To be able to resist bounty hunters trying to get that 1000 gold coin bounty, and single-handedly surviving in this high level forest. You live up to your name!"

I say lightly, "Friend, do you need me for something? I don't recognize you."

"The world has many heroes, why know them all? If I came here, of course I need you for something. That's..."

His eyes suddenly go cold, and yells, "My only goal for coming here—To defeat you!"

.....

I don't say anything more. I raise my hands, and pull out my sword. Feng Han definitely came, so I probably can't run away. Either I get killed, or he dies!

Feng Han smiles, and quickly reaches for his sword. At the same time, a

hexagram appears under his feet, and he summons his pet. It's a huge blood-red cyberus. It prowls, looks at me, and growls.

As if he could read my mind, Feng Han smiles, "Don't be surprised. This is a Hellhound, 4.5 stars attack 4.5 stars agility. It's slightly inferior to your Bee Overlord, but that's not important. Whether or not a pet is strong is determined by the owner! Come, Xiao Yao Zi Zai, and show me the strength of Ba Huang City's players!"

Stepping along the cold, grassy ground, Feng Han quickly dashes forward. At the same time, the Hellhound also rushes towards me from another angle. He's controlling both his avatar and his pet at the same time!

Clang!

The edge of my sword slices through the air and receives Feng Han's attack. With a clang they collide. His strength isn't too high and surprise sweeps across Feng Han's face when he gets pushed back, but he quickly recovers and his face becomes calm again. His feet slip backwards and he stops himself from falling at a seemingly impossible angle. But before I could consider his awkward moment, his arms are spread, and his sword is already slashing down!

Without thinking, I activate my LV-4 [Combo]!

Clang!

Our swords collide again, but Feng Han's moves just like a big ape so even though I have a higher strength than him, he still has an advantage. Before I regain my posture, he starts his attack again.

Bang!

"301!"

I get hit and with that, Feng Han stops my combo. I feel a wave of heat from behind as the Hellhound bares its fiery claws and pounces towards me!

Bobo immediately intercepts him, and he fights against the Hellhound.

At the same time, I slide along the ground, and a huge “Miss” appears from Feng Han’s third attack. He retreats a few steps to prevent any counterattack from me, and whoosh my attack hits air.

Damn it! If I continue this then I’ll die from Feng Han’s continuous attacks!

Bangbang!

I take two more hits on my shoulder, but I kick my feet out!

Bang!

“341!”

“297!”

“174!”

I retreat a few steps and awkwardly stop my fall. Suddenly, something becomes clear, I raise my head and look at Feng Han, muttering, “This pattern...This is from the 12 strikes in Extension Boxing?!”

Feng Han pauses, “You actually figured it out...Heh, but you’re still going to die!”

Whoosh!

I cast [Heal], and recover 600 HP, following up with a health potion, I’m back at full HP!

Rustle...

Feng Han’s body is like a shadow. He dashes towards me in an arc. He extends his arm and stabs towards me!

.....

Hmph!

I stand still, and focus. I suddenly lash out with my sword, and with a clang, I knock away my opponent’s sword. At the same time, I step forward, and my left fist heavily hits the chest of Feng Han!

Bang

“179!”

The ground around me starts to glow as I activate my combo, [Strength of a Thousand Men]!

“Oh crap...”

Alarm flashes in Feng Han’s eyes, but under my rapid strikes, his hip and chest get repeatedly attacked. But when he gets hit by the fourth strike of [Strength of a Thousand Men], he bends his body and his palm mercilessly pats the ground, and then with a flip, he backs away a few yards!

Whoosh!

[Wind Blade] slices the air, and a huge “MISS” pops up!

Chapter 60: Borrowing a Knife to Kill

I spin around and run towards the Hellhound. While running, I punch the ground and cast [Binding Chains]!

Whoosh!

As my fist reaches the ground, Feng Han shifts a few meters sideways, and a huge “MISS” pops up next to him. At the same time, his pet Hellhound also wags its tail as it backs away a few meters. Such coordinated control! Both player and pet moved at the same time to dodge my skill!

I need to kill the Hellhound first, or else Baby Bobo's HP can't keep up!

I raise my sword, and slash towards the Hellhound. But I wouldn't have thought that Feng Han kept on pulling the Hellhound back, making me unable to catch up to it. At the same time, I feel a chill behind my back, Feng Han's [Combo] is coming!

Before turning around, I sink my body downwards, and block my back with my sword. I couldn't block such a strong attack, and my entire body sprawls forward. But I spin my sword around, and I heavily slash Feng Han!

“341!”

“Eh...”

Looking at my attack damage, he seems a bit surprised. He takes his sword and backs away, and drinks a health potion. After taking 3 [Combo] hits, my HP is near empty. I wait for the cooldown of [Heal], and with a wave of my hand I recover 600 HP. But at that time, Baby Bob cries out, and dies from the attack of the Hellhound.

I can't chase Feng Han, so I can only spin around and chase the Hellhound, since Bobo died, its only fair that Feng Han's pet also dies. But I never would have thought that the Hellhound waved its tail and ran, giving me no chance to attack. Feng Han on the other hand recovered to full HP and immediately takes his sword and attacks!

My custom combo is still in cooldown, so I can only use [combo], and pray for the best!

Whoosh!

Within 3 steps of me, Feng Han suddenly stops. A golden hexagram starts to appear on my sword, the start of my [combo]. I can't let it go to waste, so I hastily rush forward to attack!

Who would have thought while he was backing away, the Hellhound attacked me from behind, and interrupted my [Combo]!

"I'm done for..."

My heart goes cold, and watching the glow of his golden hexagram flicker, his sword strikes my shoulder 3 times in succession, and I die!

.....

Whoosh!

I appear at a nearby graveyard, and check my equipment. I didn't drop anything, but I stand there expressionlessly. It's not that my skills isn't up to par with him, it's...it's my gaming knowledge isn't up to par. This loss, it is really because of the tactics that Feng Han employed...

After thinking for a full 5 minutes, going through what Feng Han did; controlling both himself and his pet, and continuously changing his opponent's focus while grinding down their HP. Even if I have [Heal] I still got killed easily. Although his tactics are very clear, but I can do nothing about it, his reactions are too quick!

Whatever, I'll return first!

After 10 minutes, I reach back to my corpse. From a distance, Feng Han holds his swords, and sits under a pine tree, He's staring at my corpse, obviously waiting for me to revive. He wants another round?!

Whoosh!

I don't hesitate to revive, and because of dying I lost a level. I cast [Heal] and my HP becomes full again. I take my sword, and [Turmoil Sword] automatically activates. I also summon Bobo out. This time I need to

counter-attacks, or else I would lose again.

Feng Han looks at me from afar, and smirks, "Xiao Yao Zi Zai. You're not bad eh, I felt a bit of pressure. It's really hard to find these kinds of opponents, Looking at Ba Huang City, there are probably only 10 people who have a strength like you!"

I silently listen, "And?"

"I quite admire you, how about you join [Vanguard]?" Feng Han smiles.

I point my sword at his chest, and say, "Admire me..is it? Let me kill you first!"

.....

I step on the ground with my Silver-Locked boots, and rush towards him. I raise my sword and attack.

Feng Han laughs coldly as he slowly unsheathes his sword, it seems like he has already calculated my path. With a clang, he takes his sword, and with a jump, he's on his feet. The leaves crunch under his feet, and suddenly he extends his leg and kicks!

My body is in the air, but I grab onto the chain armor on his shoulders, and my entire body changes it's original path. Going around Feng Han, a nearly perfect "MISS" pops up for his kick. At the same time, I roll on the ground, and punch the ground with my left hand. With a clang, I cast [Binding Chains]!

Sadly, Feng Han is very sharp, and he completely figured out my tactic. He slipped back a few steps, and "MISS" pops up for the [Binding Chains]. His sword starts to glow, and he slashes at Bobo but at the same time, Bobo's [Combo] also starts!

Bangbang...

After the rapid strikes, Feng Han's HP dropped over 500 points after Bobo's two attacks! But, Bobo's HP is only around 100 points now. The Hellhound growls, and prepares to take his life!

Whoosh!

“+600!”

I wave my hand to cast [Heal]. I need Bobo alive, or else I will lose against Feng Han and his pet!

.....

I command Bobo to back off, stretching out their firepower. Bee Overlords are very fast, and immediately Bobo backs off a few meters. Both the Hellhound and Feng Han's attack end up slashing air, and two beautiful “MISS” pops up. At the same time, I rush forward, raise my sword, and use [Combo]! My target: the Hellhound!

“397!”

“422!”

“447!”

Sadly, after three strikes the Hellhound still hasn't died and has around 50% HP.

Growl!

The Hellhound growls, and it jumps pounces at my chest. I twist my body, and my sword's edge skims the Hellhound, taking away 200+ HP. But within a moment, my HP is below 50%, from its attack. I immediately back off, and get Bobo to attack the Hellhound!

“Ah?”

Feng Han suddenly smiles in self-mockery. He never would have thought the tactic he just used would be copied and used by me.

With a bang Feng Han kicks his Hellhound away, and at the same time he uses his level 4 swordsman skill [Haste]: Increases attack speed by 8% and movement speed by 4%. After he kicked the Hellhound, his sword also aims straight at Bobo's head!

Boom!

“389!”

In a blink, Bobo goes into critical condition again. Feng Han's recovery

and reaction time is extremely scary. In addition, this guy's ability to adjust to the situation is very strong as well, he is a very scary opponent, or else Yan Zhao would have been able defeat him!

.....

I can only get Bobo to run for his life, and I also grab my sword and get as far away from Feng Han as I can. He calmly gulps down a health potion, and returns to full health once more. With him and his Hellhound, I could be killed in a single strike!

But, as fast as I can go, his speed is way superior to mine, and I can't escape!

"Hey!"

Feng Han lowers his sword, and it bounces against the ground, cutting the grass with every bounce. His smile is full malice, and he laughs, "Xiao Yao Zi Zai! You know, you're quite unique. But do you really think that you can survive when I want to kill you? You're better off dreaming!"

"....."

I don't stop moving. My attacks and tactics have been seen through by Feng Han so I have no way out. To be honest, if my gaming skill wasn't so bad, previously in [Conquest] I wouldn't have been ranked over 3 millionth place.

.....

Behind me, Feng Han comes closer and closer. I can almost feel Feng Han's sword on my back, its a really bad feeling, but I can't do anything about it. My pet control isn't impressive, and Bobo's attack patterns are quite foreign to me. I really can't see any chance of winning. [Combo] and my custom combo are really easily broken or dodged by him, and I can't land a sure attack!

I scan around me, and within the forest, I see 3 level 39 Ice Rats scuttling around. An idea pops up into my mind, and it seems possible. Should I try it out?

Holding my sword, I get Bobo to follow me. A few seconds later we reach the hill, and with a jump, we disappear into the forest!

Whoosh!

I step on some turnips, and my entire body rolls towards some bushes. The 3 Ice Rats immediately start to chirp, and within 10 yards in front of me, they start casting [Ice Cone]!

Behind me, Feng Han smiles arrogantly, “Don’t pointlessly struggle Xiao Yao Zi Zai...”

I turn around, and as those 3 Ice Rats fire their [Ice Cones] at me, I put away my sword, and I punch towards Bobo! At the same time, after Bobo receives my punch, he also raised his stringer, and stung my chest. We exchanged attacks!

.....

“Damn!” Feng Han’s face goes green, “Damn it, how did I not think of it...”

That’s right, aggro diversion!

Aggro diversion is a rule for wild monsters. Originally the 3 Ice Rats’s aggro were on me, but since I was attacking something else, their aggro immediately changes, and also Bobo attacked me, so as a result the aggro landed on the player behind me, Feng Han, who wasn’t attacking anyone!

Rustle rustle...

The three [Ice Cones] fly out, and they bring three damage numbers—

“276!”

“298!”

“304!”

.....

Feng Han’s HP is nearly gone, and his entire body is coated with a layer of frost from the attack, lowering his movement speed. At the same time, that Hellhound growls as it pounds towards me. He’s decided that if he

dies, the Hellhound to kill me as well!

Whoosh!

I hold my sword and dash towards Feng Han, and with a low yell, and 0.2 seconds of preparation, I release [Wind Blade], aimed at Feng Han's neck! He's been slowed so it doesn't matter how powerful or quick he is, he won't be able to dodge this!

"Gah, I don't accept this..."

Feng Han only says that, and then his body goes limp, and falls on the grass.

"579!"

.....

The Hellhound also disappears with him and I return my sword back to the sheath. Feng Han dropped a couple of health potions and nothing else. I immediately run out of the Ice Rat's attack range. After running a few hundred meters, I finally got rid of the aggro.

I take a deep breath. At least I killed him once in revenge. I should switch areas to grind, this isn't a place where I should stay...

Through the night, on the other side of the forest, I kill countless Ice Rats, and I return to level 32. Feng Han also hasn't appeared again. He was level 37 originally, and pretty close to Yan Zhao in the leaderboard, but with my [Wind Blade] he went back down to level 36 so is probably monster killing to get his levels back.

Chapter 61: Late Night Deal

At 4am in the morning, I have about 3500+ Indigo Seagrass in my inventory. They are neatly arranged in bundles of 100 and easily fill up 40 boxes of my inventory. The only other items I have space for are the City Scrolls, some Chilling Wind Pills , a stack of seal cards, and a slot for equipment.

“Snap!”

Jade City Sword strikes the head of an Ice Rat, splitting it into two as dark blue blood splatters everywhere. Before it died, it managed to reduce my HP by 300+ with an [Ice Cone]. The damage from these tiny guys is seriously painful.

It's about time to return and start creating mana potions. What's more, it's getting really late and I can't keep skipping class or the Professor will take note and deduct points off my grades. If I lose too many credits, I'll get skinned alive by Wang Xin; sending me to Liu Hua University costs a lot and it's all borne by the Bureau.

.....

As I raise my head, the forest in front of me vibrates as a new monster spawns. Dark blue rays of light encircle an Ice Rat as it spawns. Though the sight is beautiful, I only care about the line of words above the Ice Rat's head. Damn, I'm finally lucky today –

[Ice Rat] (Normal Monster)

Level: 1

Extra: Sealable

.....

Hell yeah, after getting chased by bounty hunters, I finally get to meet a Level 1 Ice Rat!

With a 4 Star Magic Attack growth, this magic pet's attack is certainly not lacking. Especially when it comes to heavy armor classes, these

attacks would be super effective. Even a single [Ice Cone] would equal the attack of a high-level magician!

I take a Sealing Card from my inventory and raise my hands to perform the seal lock!

“Shua!”

The seal card appears below the Ice Rat as the little bugger grumbles aloud. It prepares an [Ice Cone] with both arms and tosses it over. Although it hits me, a Level 1 monster has limited attack power and I only lose 40+ HP.

The seal card’s magic ensnares the Ice Rat and pulls it in. The most unexpected thing is that I am successful on the first try even though the seal only has a 21.9% chance of succeeding.

A flash of light appears in one of my pet slots. Great, a Level 1 Ice Rat!

I open the pet info and take a look. I’m overjoyed–

[Ice Rat]

Level: 1

Attack: ★

Defense: ★★☆☆

HP: ★★★

Speed: ★★★☆☆

Magic: ★★★★★

Excellency Rating: 90%

.....

In the early stages, having a magic type pet is really useful. With an Excellency Rating of 90%, this Ice Rat’s value is unquestionable. Attacks like [Ice Cone] and Frost Magic can continually devastate enemies, so as long as the owner protects it well, this Ice Rat will be able to mow down even the toughest of enemies.

I happily store the Ice Rat into my pet slot and fish out a City Scroll. It's time to return to Ba Huang City and repair my equipment before planning what to do next.

In a flash of light, I arrive at Ba Huang City. Though it's still in the wee hours of the morning, there are players about. There's even quite a few players selling their wares on the street. As I look around, it seems that many of the players are Level 30. Basically, a couple of all-nighters would mean level 30 and more than 40% of all players are at least Level 30 already. The speed that mainstream players raise their levels is indeed scary.

Upon reaching the store, I purchase the necessary ingredients and start to create the Level 5 Indigo Sea (Mana) Pills!

Indigo Seagrass x 3, Chilling Grass x 1, Alchemy Furnace x 2, after placing these ingredients into the combination interface and confirming the procedure, I hear a ring –

“Ding!”

System Notification: You have successfully created [Indigo Sea Pills] using Alchemy. Alchemy Proficiency +1. As the first person to create Indigo Sea Pills, you receive a reward: Charm +1!

.....

Yet another point to Charm. It's already 29 points. Its a pretty useless stat though, I'd rather gain gold coins instead!

I kept training Alchemy for the next hour. The 3500+ Indigo Seagrass in my inventory have now become 1100+ Level 5 Indigo Sea Pills. Its also the first batch of level 5 mana pills in the entire server. Being shrouded in secrecy, it's main ingredient surrounded by high level monsters with most players busy leveling up instead of going out of their way to face Level 40 monsters, not many players have been able to find out the secret to refining level 5 mana pills. With the game's current progress, it's common for players to gather Seven Star Herbs and Chilling Wind Herbs. I'm pretty sure that only a small handful of players have attained a Level 5 in Alchemy at the moment.

Opening my own stall, I display the Indigo Sea Pills for sale at a cut-throat price of 1 gold each! Level 4 pills recover 300 MP but the Level 5 pills recover 500 MP, the efficiency between the two is a really large jump. If you think about it, a team using Level 4 pills could get wiped out while fighting a boss because the Healer may have insufficient mana. However, if they were to use Level 5 pills, they can recover 500 MP every minute, which should be sufficient to stay alive. That's why Level 4 pills can only command 10 silver per pill but Level 5 pills can get 1 gold each.....although selling it for such a high price is equal to robbery in plain daylight!

At the same time, I put the Ice Rat pet up for sale and shout: "Valuable pet with 4 stars in Magic Growth and 90% Excellency for sale! This mythical creature will help you level and PK, interested players please place your bids!"

Within half a minute, my store is swamped with both players who stayed up late to level and merchants. Both the Ice Rat and Indigo Sea Pills are rarely seen treasures and naturally attract lots of interest.

The Indigo Sea Pills start to sell off one at a time as players part 1 gold for each pill. Looks like there are many rich players here!

Looking at the current exchange rate of gold to RMB at 1:11, it seems the opportunity to make quick cash is decreasing as the value of in-game gold drops as most players level up. If I want to make money, I must strike while the iron is hot!

Many players have bid for the Ice Rat, but only for a few gold, so I won't even consider their offers. After wandering around the Deep Cold Forest, facing off with countless bounty hunters and even fighting extremely skilled people like Jian Feng Han, I finally managed to capture this Ice Rat. If they think that they can get it for a few gold, they are gravely mistaken.

.....

"Di!"

I receive a message from my friend Yue Wei Liang, Yue Qing Qian's

younger sister: “Brother Xiao Yao, the person in Ba Huang City square selling the Ice Rat... .. is it you?”

I reply: “Yup, it’s me. What about it?”

Yue Wei Liang: “Elder sister just went to bed, but she did say that she wants a magic pet really badly to help her level because the effectiveness of using a magic pet in killing monsters is unmatched.....”

“Hmm? Qing Qian wants it? Should I reserve it for her?”

“Nah it’s okay, I’ll go offline and wake her up so she came come online and speak to you. Don’t sell it before she comes!”

“Sure!”

Immediately, Yue Wei Liang’s picture greys out and within a few minutes, both her and Yue Qing Qian’s pictures light up. A message comes right away: “Heehee, Brother Xiao Yao, can you send over the Ice Rat’s stats for me to take a look?”

I send it over immediately and in seconds, I get a response: “The Excellency is really high.....I really want it, Brother Xiao Yao how much are you planning to sell it for?”

I ponder for awhile: “With this Excellency and Magic Growth potential, it’s market rate should be about 500 gold. But since Qing Qian wants it, I’ll let it go for 200 gold.....”

Yue Qing Qian laughs: “That’s a good price but my pocket money is almost all used up already so I can’t buy gold. I only have 50 gold on me at the moment.....”

“Forget about it, I’ll just sell it to you for 50 gold then.”

“That’s not acceptable!”

Yue Qing Qian firmly rejects: “How about this, wait for a couple minutes as I wake up my Mom and ask her to transfer some money to me. It’ll be quick, I only need about 10 minutes!”

“Alright.....”

.....

I continue selling Indigo Sea Pills and after 15 minutes, Yue Qing Qian finally come back online and appears in front of my store with her dagger in hand: “Brother Xiao Yao, sorry for making you wait.....”

“It’s nothing. So I guess it’s settled?”

“Yeah!”

Yue Qing Qian opens her trade window and immediately places 500 gold into the trade.

I frown and cancel the trade: “Don’t need to pay me 500 gold, that’s a rip off price.”

“No, I cannot take advantage of you.” Yue Qing Qian says: “I heard that you got chased by many bounty hunters at Fire Stone Canyon. Even Jian Feng Han went after you, and knowing his skill and your level, I’m sure you must’ve died. After going through so much trouble to seal this Ice Rat, how can I let you lose out?”

I’m speechless and just quietly reopen the trade window and place the Ice Rat into it. Yue Qing Qian places 500 gold in and the trade is completed!

.....

“Shua!”

The Ice Rat is summoned and it squeaks while wagging it’s tail. Yue Qing Qian laughs and rubs it’s head: “Hey little one, let me give you a nice name!”

In the next moment, the Ice Rat’s name appears – Bulldozer!

I stand there shocked as Yue Qing Qian looks at me: “Brother Xiao Yao, how’s the new name?”

“Not bad, extraordinary taste.”

“Exactly, when killing monster with continuous Frost Magic, it will be just like a Bulldozer.....”

I nod: "Yeah, it's a Bulldozer..."

"Oh yeah, Brother Xiao Yao you've finally made Indigo Seagrass Pills! Shucks, it's really expensive, 1 gold a pill....."

"Why? Prague cannot afford it?" I chuckle.

Yue Qing Qian purses her red lips, and mutters quietly, almost as if she is sending out a message. Then, she raises her head: "Alright, Uncle Yan Zhao has decided to buy your Indigo Seagrass Pills at 1 gold each. But, he wants a monopoly. You can only sell it to Prague and nobody else. Of course using it yourself and giving to friends is permissible. What do you think of this deal?"

I nod: "Deal, I'll sell the rest of these to Prague then. There are 1100 pills here, do you want all of them?"

"Yes, wait a second as I get someone to send the money over!"

"Okay....."

.....

Not long after, a few players from Prague walk over and trade with Yue Qing Qian. Then, she turns around and opens her trade window. I place 11 batches of Indigo Sea Pill as she places 1100 gold. My heart almost jumps out when I see the gold. I'm rich, really rich! The day at Fire Stone Canyon has not been in vain!

The two beautiful twins, Yue Qing Qian and Yue Wei Liang go offline after the trade. Me? I hesitate for moment and then place 1500 gold for sale on the online exchange before going offline too. At a 1:10 exchange rate, my gold is selling for 15000RMB!

Taking off the helmet, my cellphone rings. It's a game notification showing that my 1500 gold has already been bought by somebody! I receive 15000RMB immediately what indescribable happiness.....

Feeling dizzy, I drop into my pillow and sleep for a few hours before class.....

Chapter 62: So You Like Me

Next day, in my first period, Chinese class.

I cross my arms in front of my chest, and I silently sit next to the Miss, and fall asleep...

“Hungry...”

Wan Er’s leans on the desk with her white arms, and uses her shoulder to nudge me, “Don’t sleep anymore, the professor is glaring at you. If you keep on sleeping, then he’ll come after you!”

I open my sleepy eyes, “Eh?”

“What time did you grind till last night?”

“4 AM.”

“Huh. I just checked your level, and you’re still at level 32. I think there’s no change...”

“That’s...”

I got quiet, but then I say, “I am taking it nice and slow for level 32, taking the scenic route while I grind. No regrets and I don’t give up, that’s the way to live well...”

Wan Er smiles lightly, and her dimples on the edge of her mouth become deadly, “What? So you didn’t get killed by Feng Han and drop a level?”

I want to bury my head in the ground... From such a beautiful mouth, how could such toxic words be said?!

On the side, Cheng Yue smiles and stretches her head back to look at me, “Xiao Yao, I heard that yesterday Feng Han admitted that he went to Fire Stone Canyon to duel you, but he didn’t say anything about whether he won or lost... Say, who won and who lost?”

I pause, “Winning or losing is common in battles...”

Wan Er nods like she knows everything and gives me a rotten smile,

“Oh, I know the result...”

I glare at her, “You know nothing!”

Wan Er shots me a glance, and my eyes land on her snow-white shoulders. Hehe, this revealing tank-top really tempts people to look over there...

“Look...”

Wan Er shoves her big cell phone screen into my face. On it is the forums for <<Destiny>>. She says, “This post was made by Jian Feng Han, he posted it yesterday...”

I glance at it, and I’m surprised. Indeed, Feng Han’s charisma is unique, bringing his [Vanguard] guild into Ba Huang City, making the situation in Ba Huang City extremely confusing. His reputation on the forums is very high as well, there’s a special red sticky for his post—

【Sticky】 About last night in Fire Stone Canyon! (Poster: Jian Feng Han)

Text: Ok, I admit it. Last night I did indeed go to Fire Stone Canyon by myself, and I was looking for the legendary healer Xiao Yao Zi Zai who made over a hundred members from [Wrath of the Heroes] unable to do anything to him. I wanted to see what kind of skill he had, so me and him dueled twice. The results? I won’t reveal them. But in conclusion, Xiao Yao Zi Zai is a pretty good opponent, I believe that with people like him, the future of Ba Huang City will be even more interesting!

.....

After that, there are countless replies—

【Post 1】 General Wang Jian: Not revealing the result? Heh, would it be that the legendary fighter #1 swordsman Jian Feng Han lost?

【Post 2】 Silent Moon: Ha! What kind of person is Jian Feng Han? He’s a hero! How can he lost to some random kid?

【Post 3】 Clear Ripple: Feng Han keep up the good work! I love you! You’re the coolest!

【Post 4】 Yue Qing Qian: Coughcough, I think Xiao Yao is the coolest,

I'm guessing that Feng Han must have lost...

.....

【Post 479】Jian Feng Han: Yue Qing Qian, how could you have known that I lost?

.....

【Post 1246】Yue Qing Qian: Hehe, Jian Feng Han you're a famous player... If you didn't lose, how can you explain about dropping from level 37 to level 36 last night?

【Post 1247】Always Tearful: Ah, well said! I would also like to ask, if Feng Han didn't die why would he lose a level?

.....

【Post 4779】Ink Painting: No need to say anymore. Feng Han release your battle videos, and don't tell us that you don't have it, within 24 hours, all of a player's data is saved!

.....

Finally, under the pressure of several tens of thousand players in Ba Huang City, Feng Han promises to release the two battles against Xiao Yao Zi Zai in half an hour.

"Well?" Wan Er's eyes were full of bad intention, "For a certain person, some sad video of their defeat will be broadcasted..."

I purse my mouth, "Hmph, I already got used to it..."

Cheng Yue smiles, "Don't worry, winning or losing is common in battles, you can just start over again Xiao Yao..."

I look at Cheng Yue, and then I look towards Wan Er. I raise the corner of my mouth, and I don't say anything. Without saying anything, I convey my meaning, look at Cheng Yue, she is way more comforting than you, Wan Er!

Wan Er is exceptionally smart, and instantly understands what I'm thinking. She didn't say anything, but she clenches her teeth and hmphs.

That sound, it makes my heart tremble. Ah damn, am I done for?

.....

After a few minutes the video finishes downloading. Wan Er mutes her phone sound and puts her Chinese textbook up. Then she touches the screen and the video starts. It's the first battle between me and Feng Han. The two beauties widen their eyes, while I'm sitting on pins and needles. Ah, the painful memories. Feng Han's player and pet tactic has been brought to the point of perfection, killing me is no problem.

After finishing the first video Cheng Yue sticks her tongue out and says quietly, "Ah, so that's what happened... Xiao Yao didn't die for nothing. Feng Han's battle tactics and control are indeed very high-class, he's very skilled!"

Wan Er is clenching her white fists and doesn't say anything while pouting.

"Wan Er, what's the matter?"

"Hmph, to bully my person like that..." Wan Er's eyes flash with killing intent and says while fuming, "I should find a chance to go to Ba Huang City and duel this Feng Han person..."

Cheng Yue immediately holds Wan Er's shoulders and says, "Don't be rash. You're an assassin and he's a swordsman. His heavy armor is way superior than your leather armor. Even if you are as skilled as he is, you can't take his hits. Besides you're not even as skilled as he is..."

Wan Er's face goes red, "Skill can be trained..."

I stay silent.

The second battle is about to start. In this battle my performance isn't bad. I copied Feng Han's man-pet tactics, creating some pressure on him. But then I still lost, so I revealed my trump card with the aggro diversion tactic. While looking at my [Wind Blade] slicing Feng Han's armor, Wan Er's tiny fist hits the desk with a bang and smiles, "Beautiful!"

Immediately the entire classroom became dead silent. On the lectern

the old professor pushes his glasses up and asked, "Student Lin Wan Er, do you have a problem?"

Wan Er stands up with her face flushed red and stammers, "No..."

She sits down slowly and the Miss's face is like a ripe red apple. Even I can feel the scorching heat. She looks down towards the desk and clenches her teeth, "Hmph, Li Xiao Yao you're dead!"

I wave my hand, "What did I do..."

Cheng Yue facepalms, "Two idiots..."

.....

After quite some time, Wan Er starts to draw skillfully on her notebook. After that she gently pushes the notebook in front of me. On the clean-white paper are some pencil handwriting. Well it's not really handwriting, but it's lines of arcs and routes. In total it's 12 small pictures. All of the pictures are marked with Chinese characters.

I look for a while. suddenly I realize what it is. I turn and look at Wan Er, "This...This is..."

Wan Er looks at me silently and her eyes contains traces of excitement, "Yep, it is!"

Cheng Yue looks from the side and opens her mouth, "Oh..This is Feng Han's battle tactics! Wan Er you're amazing, you even have this..."

Wan Er says faintly, "The man-pet diversion's bait, attack, and retreat tactics, I've already researched and seen them at an earlier time. But when using them, I'm not as skilled as Feng Han is. These are the 12 types of battlefield control in the man-pet tactics. If you can completely understand it then you will know thyself and thy your enemy. With your wits I believe that you won't lose as badly as before. You should know, although you won the second fight, it was using the game's loopholes or else you wouldn't have had any chance of victory. Next time if you see Feng Han, you won't be able to use the same trick again. A skilled person wouldn't lose by the same tactics."

I deeply understand and nod, "Mm, I understand. Thank you Miss. It seems that you really like me..."

Wan Er's suddenly stands up, glaring at me, "I...I don't!"

Around us a dead silence appears once again.

On the lectern the professor pushes his glasses, "Student Lin Wan Er, do you have a problem again?"

Wan Er raises her head and looks eyes full of despair, "Ah....I, I..."

I quickly stand up and explain, "Old man, Student Wan Er saw a caterpillar on the chair, so she was surprised, look..."

I stretch my hand and a colorful little caterpillar is dangling on my index finger.

"Ah..."

Wan Er yells in surprise again and embraces Cheng Yue.

I flick away the caterpillar on my finger and silently sit down.

The classroom is completely silent and the professor is almost completely petrified.....

.....

Ding Dong...

Class ends and I rip Wan Er's 12 battle tactics from her notebook and I carefully tuck it away. I should carefully study this. Damn Ba Huang City is full of tough players, if I don't carefully train myself, then next time I see someone strong like Feng Han I would get slaughtered again. I really need to study well!

Nearing the afternoon, after sleeping in 3 classes, I carry my textbooks and leave the classroom with Wan Er.

On the path of the school yard, the leaves flutter in the sky. Stepping on fallen leaves, I quickly follow Wan Er as if I was afraid that someone would take her away from me.

Before long, in front of us a few familiar people appear. It's Liu Ying and

his gang. But all these people have already been defeated by me, so I don't bat them an eye...

.....

"Li Xiao Yao, you are really carefree huh?"

Liu Ying ridicules me from afar and embraces Xu Yue. He laughs coldly, "Looks like your luck with women isn't bad huh!"

Wan Er spins around and coldly says, "Liu Ying, what are you saying!"

Liu Ying didn't reply, but only looks at me, "Li Xiao Yao. Just you watch and let's see how more carefree you can get!"

Chapter 63: Walking Around Elegantly

“What’s the matter now?!”

Dong Cheng Yue looks at me and then looks at Wan Er, “Is this Liu Ying guy looking for trouble again? Xiao Yao, why does he hate you so much?”

I spread my hands, “I have no idea, but I would really like to have a talk with him and dissipate any hatred, but sadly he doesn’t want to. What else can I do?”

“Whatever, it’s better to ignore people who want to take revenge all the time. These kinds of people, if you can’t make peace with them then you can at least hide from them.”

I nod, “Mm, well said!”

.....

I still have classes in the afternoon and it’s the most annoying class of all, calculus. Who would have thought that in the Chinese department, we still have to take calculus! What matrices, what sequences, I don’t understand it at all!

After eating dinner, I escort Wan Er back to the dorms. She needs to continue level grinding and I also return to my dorm to grind for 4 hours straight until 11 at night!

Toot toot...

Beside me, my cellphone rings. I accept the call in game and it’s a number that I don’t know. After taking the call I hear a sweet voice—

“Hello, is this Li Xiao Yao?”

“Yep that’s me. Who is this?”

“Guess!”

“Ru Hua?”

“What!” The caller is angry, “You little Li Xiao Yao. Now you’re all carefree accompanying some wealthy kids at some wealthy University

and you forgot about your old colleagues eh?”

I think for a while, then I say, “Oh, I know! Shen Bing!”

“Hehe, finally remembered me?!”

I laugh, “Of course...”

Shen Bing is an employee at the Public Security sub-bureau’s technology branch in Xihu District of Hangzhou city and she should have been promoted to bureau leader now. She is an expert in all kinds of technology and acclaimed by the leaders to have good potential. Also she is extremely beautiful and is at least a good 7 points. Her body is tall and she is the princess of the police. She is also the ideal person for many of her male police colleagues. If she wasn’t skilled and didn’t hold a high position. I think she would have belonged to someone a long time ago. Of course I left the police team for so many years. I don’t even know if she is single or not.

“Haha, it’s Shen Bing. Need me for something?” I continue asking.

Shen Bing’s tone becomes serious, “That’s... Leader Wang told me to be in charge of staying in contact with you. Remember this phone number because in the future I will use this line to communicate with you. But now I have news for you.”

“Oh, what news?”

Shen Bing says, “You’ve offended someone called Liu Ying in Liu Hua University right?”

“Mm.”

“Liu Ying has contacts all over the place in Xihu District. That...I just got news that stated Liu Ying spent 100 thousand Yuan (~\$16000) to recruit a mysterious expert. I think tonight they will make a move against you. I hear that as long as the hitman doesn’t kill you, anything else is fine. So watch out, you might get beat crippled...”

I’m stumped for words, “Damn, what is this.. he found an expert to deal with me?”

“Mm.”

“Who’s the expert? You should know right?!”

“Hehe...” Shen Bing laughs lightly, “I’ve hacked Liu Ying’s phone and email and painfully got the information about this expert...”

“Who is it...”

“Thunder Hands, Wen Tai Lai!”

“Ha!” I almost spit up blood.

Shen Bing continues, “Wen Tai Lai, this person throws very hard punches. I hear that he once broke a person’s 5 rib bones with only one punch. He has quite a few cases in the police office. But now he’s been hired in a bar called ‘No Returns’ and he’s there as a muscle. Usually he’s responsible for the safety of the bar at night and prevent any fights in it.”

I nod, “Mm, I got it...”

“What are you going to do? Don’t go crazy now...”

“Don’t worry...”

.....

I end the call and I raise my head and look. I’m under Dragon City, so I immediately leave the game.

I take off my gaming helmet and I take a deep breath.

To prevent any troubles from happening, I don’t want to make a huge scene. Since Wen Tai Lai is coming to take care of me, then I’ll just take the initiative and attack first. I can’t let him make a huge mess in the school or else Wan Er’s safety would also be threatened. That’s something that I don’t want to see happening.

I open up my suitcase and take out a huge black coat. Metersbonwe, this coat is great!

After that I find some sunglasses and I put it in my pocket and prepare for battle.

After leaving the dorms it’s already 11 o’clock in the night. The school’s

gates are already closed. If I want to leave then I would get investigated heavily and they would even dig up my ancestor's information. If not I won't be able to leave from the school gate.

I stand in the corner of darkness and look into the distance. Yep, I can't leave from the school gate.

I put power into both my legs and my body rises. I swiftly step on a stone stool and crawl up the school's walls. With a flip in the air I reach outside the school. I raise my hand calling a taxi, "Master, go to the No Returns bar on Xixi road!"

"Okay!"

The taxi arrives on Xixi road with lightning speed and I see a road full of bars. No Returns bar can be considered fairly famous. People from foreign places usually come here because the bars usually invite some famous stars to talk about the place. So the business is exceptionally good here.

I arrive in front of the bar only to find out that I didn't bring any money. Also I don't know anyone here, so it seems I can't enter. Which means I won't be able to find that "Thunder Hands" person...

I look around for a moment and look around. In front there are some little vigorous girls chatting.

I immediately walk up and say, "Hello beauties~"

A girl wearing a blue shirt looks at me and says, "Oh? What's up handsome?"

I smile, "Well...My friend hasn't come yet, but he said he was going to treat me today. Can I come in with you all? It's a bit cold outside..."

She smiles, "Sure! We're going in right now. You're coming right?"

"Yep, thanks!"

.....

I follow them into the bar and before I even sit down the blue shirt person hooks my arms and gives a flower-like smile, "Since your friend

hasn't come in yet how about we stay here and play for a while?"

I frown, but I look around and see a fat guy staring at me. To avoid suspicion I nod and smile back, "That's fine, I'll play with you guys for a while!"

"Then we'll roll a dice and whoever loses will drink a glass alright?"

"Mm, okay!"

The dice rolls around in the bowl and the girl loses. She immediately drinks a glass of wine. Quickly after that I lose, so I also lean my head backwards and drink a glass as well. Damn I wonder if it's because they saw my coat, they called me "handsome"..

After drinking a few wines, the girl starts to become attached to me. Her body waves around with the music. She's drunk.

I push her shoulder away and smile, "Excuse me for a second, I need to go to the washroom!"

"Ohh, quickly go and quickly return..."

"....."

I turn around and enter the washroom. An uncle holding a towel is wiping the mirror and I ask him, "Uncle, do you know where Wen Tai Lai is?"

He looks at me shocked, "What do you need him for?"

"Oh, I'm his cousin."

Hatred flashes through his eyes. It seems like Wen Tai Lai is indeed notorious. He points upstairs and says, "Second floor, in the security branch chief office."

"Thanks!"

I spin around and leave and go straight to the second floor. It seems like there's nobody on the second floor. The security is too lax.

I reach the office and I put my ears on the wall and listen. I can hear a girl's laughing voice inside.

Knock knock..

As a well-mannered person I knock.

“Who is it?” A rough voice comes from inside.

I put on my sunglasses and push the door and enter. I see a pretty and flirtatious woman on the desk and Wen Tai Lai is embracing her. Both of his hands is on her thighs and I see calluses on his fists. He is indeed a person who boxes.

I raise my hand and turn off the lights and instantly the room goes dark. Luckily the outside light comes into the room through the window allowing some basic vision.

“Who are you?”

Wen Tai Lai angrily glares at me, “Why’d you turn off the lights?”

I lightly say, “Oh, I heard about you, so I wanted to check out your ‘Thunder Hands’..The woman can leave first, it’ll be done quickly...”

Wen Tai Lai couldn’t help but laugh coldy, “What’s this? You want to mess with me on my territory? Dear, you go out first and close the door. 3 minutes later get security and be ready to see a half-dead corpse!”

The woman nods and walks past me.

.....

“Come!”

Tai Lai yells and prepares his fists. He kicks away the office desk and a few hundred kilograms heavy office desk falls just like that. With that kind of strength no wonder he can do whatever he wants here.

I raise my hands and clench my right fist and smile, “It’ll be decided in one move!”

“Ha! I’ll slaughter you today!”

Tai Lai bellows and runs forward and punches!

I leap forward and gather energy in my right fist. The speed suddenly increases and I punch at him.. A shapeless air circles my fist and with a

bang I blow open Tai Lai's heavy punch. With a violent force it dislocates his shoulder!

Crack!

The sound of his bone breaking can be heard and Tai Lai stumbles towards the corner of the wall. With that, the bones in his arms broke. With his face full of cold sweat he looks at me, "You..Who are you?!"

"Don't you want to deal with Liu Hua University's Li Xiao Yao?"

"That..So what? If I beat him up, what does it matter to you? Who the hell are you?"

I turn around and leave a sentence——

"Don't you dare do anything in Liu Hua University or else I will cripple you. Also, I am the brother of Li Xiao Yao, Li Xiao Sa!"

(T/N: "Xiao Sa" means "elegant" in Chinese)

.....

I exit the door. Although I defeated him in one strike, I don't need to be too arrogant. I take off my sun glasses and pull up my sleeve. I enter the washroom to wash my hands and on my pure white shirt I splash a trace of water. So it will seem like I'm a student that mixed into this place and it won't raise any suspicions.

Under the fluorescent light the blue shirt girl is looking left and right for me.

I bend over and secretly leave through a crowd of people. After getting outside I take a breath of relief, "That was dangerous, but at least I got it done!"

.....

After returning to Liu Hua University it's already 2 o'clock at night. I take my key and open the door, then immediately go to sleep!

Chapter 64: Don't Attack

Early in the morning, with a cup of soy bean milk in my hands, I read the newspaper laid upon the table while sipping on the soy milk.

Beside me Ling Wan Er was also grabbing onto a cup of soy bean milk while nibbling on a piece of bread. The bright sunlight scattered upon her beautiful shoulders, extruding a charming glow. Dong Cheng Yue, with a stack of books in her arms asked, "Are you both really planning to skip Programming class this afternoon?"

Ling Wan Er nodded her head and smiled radiantly, "I have already achieved a grade 3 in that subject. Furthermore I have heard rumors that the professor is a kind old man that never takes attendance. I'm planning to take a walk in the valleys of Fan Shu City and see whether if I can seal any upper tier pets; hopefully I get a pet that has an Excellence above 90%."

Dong Cheng Yue clenched her fist and said, "Hmph so our school idol is actually a delinquent. Li Xiao Yao, what about you? Are you going to the Programming class with me?"

I couldn't help but smile, "I think I'll pass as well. I just reached level 32. I am planning to rush to level 35 today. Yan Zhao Warrior, Q Sword, and Jian Feng Han those bunch of people are about to reach 40 aren't they? If I were to lag behind I would surely be bullied... Oh right, is there anything in the school news today?"

Dong Yue Cheng blinks her eyes, "Nothing special, why?"

"Oh, it's nothing."

I lowered my head and continued reading the paper. Looks like my attack on Wen Tai Lai yesterday has yet to spread. This is good in a way for me as well. But, Wen Tai Lai is associated with the underground world; this kind of news would never see daylight. The university is filled with the people who are filled with hopes and dreams. Who would really bother themselves with the fights in the underground world? This is for the best. I can peacefully spend my time in the game.

... ..

Finally Dong Cheng Yue gave in and decided to skip classes as well to accompany Ling Wan Er in her quest to find her pet. As for me, I decided to go online and continue on my path as the Scavenger of Dragon City. Today is a brand new day and I wonder if the Dragon City has any new quests for me.

Returning to the dormitory, I went to the toilet for a moment before going online.

“Swoosh”

I appeared in the game dressed in brand new armor while holding my Jade City Sword. Not far from my location I see the tent of Beast Tamer Dalin. The holes in the roof of his tent are as numerous as the stars in the night sky. However Dalin comes from primitives tribes so he would pay no heed to little details such as this. I only hope that he does not bring back an Orc wife...

Looking at my skill tree, my trip yesterday to Ba Huang City wasn't in vain. First, I have earned 15000 RMB. Second, I've also learned several new skills from the Swordsman Instructor. Just as I expected, the Scavenger of Dragon City job is recognized by the Swordsman Instructor. The 2 skills I learned appears in my skill tree –

【Haste LV-1】: Mana cost: 10, Increase attack speed by 2% and movement speed

1% Duration: 15 seconds.

【Defense LV-1】: Mana cost: 50, Increase defense by 1%

.....

On the surface these skills only augment my basic stats, but they are essential skills. Haste increases my attack speed and movement speed. A LV 10 **【Haste】** could increase my attack speed by 20% and movement speed by 10%, making it an important tool for chasing and escaping. As for **【Defense】**, it is a skill that works only when I am standing still. If LV 1 **【Defense】** increases my defense by 1%, then LV 10 **【Defense】** would

increase my defense by 10%. At higher levels, the effects of these skills would become more apparent. Thus making these skills essential for survival.

These 2 skills are ranked C.

On a side note the Swordsman has another basic skill, Heavy Strike. But I am unable to learn that skill. This is due to the fact that one of the requirements in learning **【Wind Blade】** was to forgo the chance of learning **【Heavy Strike】**. Fortunately, **【Wind Blade】** has 3 times the damage output of **【Heavy Strike】**, thus alleviating my disappointment.

Today I am going to grind **【Haste】** and **【Defense】** to LV 4, so that my overall prowess is greatly boosted.

.....

Carrying the Jade City Sword I steadily walk towards Beast Tamer Dalin and respectfully say, "Teacher, are there any quests for me today?"

Dalin was using a tree branch to floss his teeth and with a "pui" spits out a monster bone with a radius of 5 cm. Then with a "hehe" laughter, he says, "Lad, you are improving swiftly. Since this is the case, help me chase away the orcs from the southern forest of Dragon City. These indescribably dirty Tigermen are simply too vile. They have already consecutively robbed us of our supplies three times. Go there and find the camp of the Tigermen and destroy their entire camp. Kill at least 1000 of these Tigermen and afterwards I will bestow upon you great rewards and honor!"

I nodded my head and said, "Yes, teacher!"

"Ding!"

System Notice: Received quest **【Exterminating Tigermen】** ! (Quest Grade: A)

Quest Description: Head towards the southern forests and look for the orcs' brethren -Tigermen's camp and kill 1000 Tigermen before reporting back to Beast Tamer Dalin. When executing the mission, do exercise great caution as the Tigermen are incomparably vicious and possess great

might; a misstep could cost you your life. Hundreds of adventurers had already lost their lives from their sharp claws.

.....

A quest grade of A, this would surely prove to be difficult. This also means that the level and abilities of the Tigermen are above mine. Fortunately my skills and equipment are sturdy. Let's go!

Baby Bobo shook his stinger and flew gracefully towards me, landing on my shoulders. Together with my big yellow bee, we head off!

Heading south through the verdant greens protected forests of Dragon City for around 10 minutes, another new field appeared before me and the system notice warned –

“Ding!”

System Notification: The area ahead is classified as a danger zone. In recent times, the orc tribe began a large scale migration from the wilderness and a large group of orcs are currently resting at the forest ahead!

Raising my head, I unsheathe the Jade City Sword and with the shake of my arms Baby Bobo flew up and entered battle mode.

“Roar!”

Before I got a chance to get close, the leaves of the forest shook and a large shadow lunged out. Not only me, but even Baby Bobo was frightened and squealed in fear. It was a male beast crawling on the ground, weighing at least half a ton. His body was covered with thick black fur and his head was hideously distorted. On his hands were claws and on his butt was a round hairy ball. Actually that would be his tail –

【Merciless Bear】(Normal Monster)

Level: 39

Attack: ???

Defense: ???

Life: ? ? ?

Skills: ? ? ?

Description: A brethren of the orcs, the Merciless Bear harnesses strength equal to that of wild bears and yet retain a portion of their human intelligence. It's rumored that their ancestors were humans living in the wild mountains and jungles. These intelligent humans were able to understand the art of changing one's form and were able to transmogrify into wild beasts, one of them became the founder of the bear tribe.

.....

“Kid!”

The Bearman lowers his head and looks down towards me with some kind of sticky substance trickling down from the edges of his mouth. He laughs ferociously, “Such smooth skin and tender meat. You would do fine as my meal. That small wasp, what is it?”

I lift my sword and slide my feet, drawing a semicircle in front of me with my blade. At the same time, appearing beneath my legs were the markings of an Eight-Trigram formation. In a split moment, I activate **【Defense】** and raise my defensive abilities by 1%. At the same time, I shake my arms and a flash of dazzling light envelops me activating **【Haste】**, increasing my attack speed by 2% and movement speed by 1%. Time to start attacking!

I run forward with my blade slightly lifted. A golden hexagram starts shining on it and along with whizzing sound of the wind, I used a 4 combo strike to hit the Bearman squarely on its head.

“334!”

“319!”

“297!”

Tsk tsk, the defensive ability of the Bearman surely isn't something to laugh about. It's comparable to that of Jian Feng Han...

Suffering from the pain of the blows, the Bearman howls angrily at me.

Raising its sharp claws, he swipes towards me.

“Pah!”

“412!”

Sharp pain immediately gushes to my arms, giving me a big shock. It's a fatal(better than critical) blow against me. Despite the pain, I don't retreat. Instead I roll forward and a white aura starts to emanate from beneath my feet, I activate the skill **【Strength of a Thousand Men】**!

I start a torrent of strikes against the Bearman coupled with a solid body slam. Finally I finished the charge up for the most destructive strike, **【Wind Blade】** and a single, powerful strike slashes at the neck of the Bearman. With the sound of its neck breaking, fresh blood gushes forward from the wound. That last cut was too vicious, it removed a staggering 700+ health from the Bearman. Together with Baby Bobo the level 39 monster was severely wounded.

“Roarrrr!”

Upon the second claw swipe from the Bearman, I consciously predicted the angle and speed of the swipe. At the last instant, when the swipe was about to land on my shoulders, I sidestepped, dodging the attack.

“Miss!”

Splendid, it was a lot simpler than I thought. With the Swordsman class' 0.9 growth in agility, I have a greater range of possible movements, especially when dodging and attacking; even within the 9 main classes, the swordsmen's movements are unrivaled. That's why most gamers choose to play as a Swordsman. Even if its health and defense are beneath that of the Knight and its attacking power is unable to equal that of a Berserker's, with its unparalleled movements, the Swordsman class is the true path to kingship!

.....

“Ka Cha!”

After dodging, I maneuver myself to the back of the Bearman and with a

slash of my sword, I decapitate the Bearman and its remaining 5% health disappears. Judging by the ease on how the huge head of the Bearman could be cut off by me; this shows that my offensive power is beyond ordinary. At the same time, with a “Pa ta” sound, an item dropped from the first Bearman I killed. It is a level 33 Wild Bow, green tiered. Although its stats weren’t bad, I don’t have any use for it. So I drop it inside my bag.

Picking up the sole silver coin dropped from the Bearman, I step over its corpse and move on. Prying open the bushes, I find the land in front me filled with Bearmen, indicating that this must be the Bearmen camp. Looking at the map again, I realize that the Tigermen camp was at another area not too far off from my current position. Moving stealthily towards the location indicated on the map, I pass through a grove of maple trees and finally hear the roars of tigers.

Under the scorching sun, I find a half-man, half-beast monster prowling around the grasslands. On its body was a head resembling that of a young man. However growing on its face were golden facial hairs, together with a great golden mane. But on its forehead was long flowing blood-colored hair. The monster was equipped with light leather armor and as for its hands, it was morphing between one of a normal human’s and sharp claws. Together with its war boots, the monster shows an incredibly arrogant look–

【Tigerman】(Normal Monster)

Level: 40

Attack: ? ? ?

Defense: ? ? ?

Health: ? ? ?

Skills: ? ? ?

Description: A brethren of the orcs, these beastmen possesses the overwhelming strength of a tiger and retain a portion of their human intelligence. It’s rumored that their ancestors are humans living in the wild mountains and jungles. These intelligent humans were able to

understand the art of changing one's form and were able to transmogrify into wild beasts, one of them being the founder of the tigermen tribe.

Chapter 65: Addicted to Money

“Time to go...”

I take a deep breath and hold onto my sword. A level 40 Tigerman. The only thing I'm afraid of is that its attack is higher than the Bearman's. On a side note, the Tigerman's form is a lot cooler than the Bearman's. The Bearman is just a huge bear crawling on the ground while the Tigerman is a human form warrior with the face of a tiger!

“If I kill him then my mission will be 0.1% finished!”

I activate[Haste] and [Defense] and then grasp my sword and dash towards it. Killing monsters doesn't require extensive body control, so this guy shouldn't be a problem. Before I even get close to the Tigerman, a golden hexagram starts to appear on my sword, level 4 [Combo]!

Bang bang bang...

With the attacks of the [Combo], all 3 sword strikes land, but the attacks weren't as effective as I had hoped—

“247!”

“229!”

“221!”

Damn! Even after 3 strikes, I only did 700 or so damage. Is my sword falling apart? No, it's still at 100% Durability!

The Tigerman suddenly stands up and reveals a sinister smile. It raises its claws and laughs, “Ignorant human! You are looking to die if you invade my territory!”

Whoosh!

The claws magically extend 2-3 yards out. This is the monster's attack?!

I have no way of dodging it and I feel a pain blossom on my shoulder; I lost a huge chunk of HP—

Tick!

Battle Notification: You've been struck by the Tigerman's 【Violent Sweep】 and lost 311 HP!

.....

I almost fainted from the pain. Although I didn't get killed instantly, I lost 311 of my HP with only one strike. What kind of attack damage is that?

My body trembles slightly and Bobo repositions himself. I rush towards the other side of the Beastman and with a whoosh a ray of light appears under me. I start my custom combo, [Strength of a Thousand Men]!

“78!”

“98!”

“82!”

“117!”

“614!”

.....

A series of attack damage numbers fly up and I regain some confidence. [Strength of a Thousand Men]'s [Wind Blade] is still a reliable attack. Even though the Tigerman has such a high defense, it still can't go against my [Wind Blade]!

At the same time I feel a wave of pain on my shoulder. The Tigerman's attacks are extremely fast and it finished two strikes in an instant. It even bellowed loudly, trying to scare me!

Whoosh!

“+600”

I cast [Heal] to recover 600 HP and return to a safe HP range where I'm not in danger of dying. Unless the Beastman has another trick that can instantly kill me, I can live if I have good control over my pet and myself!

Using the 12 pet-man tactics that Wan Er gave me, I slowly step deeper and deeper into understanding how the game works and the differences

between it and reality. It goes without saying that as I understand more and more, my power in game becomes stronger and stronger.

At the same time as I was using [Strength of a Thousand Men], my mind lingered on something else. How was Jian Feng Han able to break my combo, making my 4th strike miss? Now that I think of it, the biggest weakness in my combo was my pause between strikes. Although I learned the combo, it doesn't mean that it's omnipotent. In fact every combo will have some imperfection and since Feng Han's insight and control are both top-class, it's fairly normal for him to break my combo.

Whoosh!

My sword slices through the air as soon as I finish my 3rd strike of [Strength of a Thousand Men] on the Tigerman, I rush next to the Tigerman. Thus, when the 4th strike, my ram, lands, the Tigerman has no time to react and he gets stunned for at least 1 second. As I thought, by rushing towards my target, the time between the 3rd and 4th strike got shortened. At the same time I hear a ring next to my ear—

Ding!

System Notification: Player has successfully realized secret arts, harmony with your combo 【Strength of a Thousand Men】 has increased by 0.9%!

.....

Oh? Harmony?!

I've finally understood! After creating a custom combo, there's still this thing called harmony. Now I'm even more certain that the programmers who participated in creating <<Destiny>> were skilled in real life; or else they would not have possibly been able to make these small details. Mm, this game is getting more and more interesting!

.....

Growl!

Yet another Tigerman falls dead in front of me and I pick up the silver

coins and throw them into my bag. I look at my mission progress: 14/1000. It looks like that I need to spend the entire morning here. But, from fighting so many Tigerman, I've figured out a couple knacks. The behavior of the Tigermen are indeed very violent, not only do they have strong skills such as [Violent Sweep], they also have another one called [Mountain Sink], which raises defense 10 times; which is why I can't seem to be able to scratch these Tigerman.

Well I continue anyways, kill kill kill!

I keep on going until 10 o'clock in the morning and finally with a clang, after I killed off the 419th Tigerman, besides the black-iron and green equipment, it dropped a shiny item. An Illustration card, a blood-red illustration card. It's the Tigerman's illustration! As I hold the card in my palm, my face is full of tears. Ahh, thank you God...

Whoosh!

The seal disappears in my palm and it enters as one in my seal window. From now I can seal Tigermen whenever I want!

【Tigerman】

Attack: ★★★★★☆

Defense: ★★★★★☆

HP: ★★★★★☆

Agility: ★★★★★☆

Magic Power: ★★☆☆

Skills: 【Violent Sweep】【Mountain Sink】

.....

I look at the seal once again and double check, the Tigerman's stats are really nice. In addition, the path that these pets take is very obvious, strength + defense, 5 points in strength to maintain a strong attack and 5 points in defense to maintain the strong front. With its 4.5 stars in attack and defense, it's enough to guarantee good basic stats for the pet. So this is a good all-around pet!

At the current stage, people like Yan Zhao Warrior and Jian Feng Han have attack oriented pets. They all have extremely strong attack damage but don't have enough defense. When they meet the high attack, high defense Tigerman, those pets are pretty much already dead. The Tigerman has [Mountain Sink], which can increase its defense by several hundred points; even my Baby Bobo may not be able to damage it by much, so obviously the pets such as Hellhound have no chance!

Hehe, Tigerman, how OP!

Of course the biggest counter to these attack + defense pets are magic pets such as Yue Qing Qian's Bulldozer. [Mountain Sink] can resist physical attacks, but it doesn't do anything against magical attacks.

As I happily continue killing Tigerman for the mission, I need to be more vigilant. Before killing any Tigerman I need to carefully check their level. A level 1 Tigerman is as good as cold, hard cash!

.....

I kill until 11 o'clock AM and almost 600 Tigerman have been killed by me. The entire forest of Tigermen have almost been annihilated by me and there aren't many almost left. In a ray of golden light I leveled up to 33. After killing 400 more and then handing in my mission, I should be able to reach level 34 without any problems.

At this time with a tick, a message came from the beauty Cang Tang (Previous Wizen Vision), "Li Xiao Yao, disconnect and come for lunch. Remember to bring money. This lunch is your treat since you lost to Jian Feng Han..."

I have nothing to say. As per the bet, I lost and Wan Er even treated me to Song Helou before, so I should keep my promise.

"Okay I'll disconnect right now. You guys are leaving right now right?"

"Yep."

The Tigerman's respawn time is about 3 hours or so, so that's good. I'll disconnect for lunch and when I come back they should have respawned and then I'll continue killing them!

I immediately disconnect in the forest, grab a coat and start to leave!

With a bang my hands get grasped by a fat hand. I raise my head and it's Glasses Tang Gu!

"Xiao Yao, are you eating with the two beauties Ling Wan Er and Dong Cheng Yue everyday?"

"Yeah what about it?"

His face is full of jealousy and admiration, "Damn, give it to me straight. What's your relationship with those two? Why does Ling Wan Er refuse so many different invitations for a meal and yet she sticks with a guy like you? How are you better than us?"

I look at him then point at the mirror next to him, "Hey, look at yourself in the mirror. If you can tell me how you're better than me in any area, then I'll bring you too..."

He looks and then scratches his head, "I don't think I am..."

"Okay I'm going out for lunch. I still need to grind when I come back!"

"Wait!"

"What now?"

Tang Gu quickly brings a pile of disks from his bed and with a red face he says, "Help out a brother. This is Ling Wan Er's <Heart of Time> album, all genuine. Help me...get her signature. Just have her write her name on the title pages of all of them. If you help me then you will forever be my brother! Thank You. Thank You."

I glare at him with incomparable contempt, "Shameless!"

Tang Gu's face goes completely red, "Can't be helped. I only like a few girls in my lifetime and Wan Er is one of them. I need to give these disks to quite a few friends..."

"Fine, I got it. Every signature costs 100 Yuan (~\$16) or else no deal..."

"You...you're evil!"

"Do you want the signatures or not?"

“I want it! I want it!”

Tang Gu takes out 10 bills and I hold onto them and smile, “Easy money...”

“Get me the 10 signatures or else I’ll kill you!”

“Don’t worry!”

.....

I carry the disks and run on the school yard pathway. Beneath the girl’s dorm are two beauties wearing skirts, waiting for me. From afar Wan Er sees me carrying some discs and she shows her surprise, “You..this...”

Cheng Yue is also surprised as well, “Oh? Heart of Time? Isn’t this the album that you released a few years ago, Wan Er?”

“.....”

.....

In the dining room, while waiting for food I lay out the disks, take out a pen, and with a smile I look at Wan Er and say, “Oh beautiful and kind Miss, can you sign each disk for me?”

“I know that you are not my fan!”

I nod, “Mm!”

“How much money are you getting for these signatures?”

I’m shocked, “You...you’ve misunderstood, I’m not that kind of a person!”

Wan Er smiles, “You’re addicted to money, do you think that I don’t know how you’re like? I’ll take 50% of what you received. No, that’s not right. I’ll take 70%. Take it or leave it!”

My face goes completely white. The demons of this world; they get more and more evil!

Chapter 66: 100% Superiority

After lunch, the three of us walk side by side along a small, maple leaves paved street. The lingering refreshing fragrance of Osmanthus flowers filled the air.

“Oh right m'lady, this morning you mentioned that you were going to catch some pets, have you succeeded yet?” I ask.

Lin Wan Er purses her red lips and replies, “Currently, not yet.”

I ask, “Then, have you chosen the pet you want to focus on capturing?”

“Hmm, a type of Firefox, its magic offensive abilities are extremely powerful. On top of that, I like its cute appearance...”

“Oh, so how are you progressing along? Have you met a level 1 Firefox yet?”

“Not yet, I haven't found its illustration yet...”

“Pfffffffffffff...” I accidentally spit out the coke I was drinking.

“You!”

Lin Wan Er looks at me with an enraged look on her face, “You still owe me a favor... you haven't returned the favor from that time yet...”

I ask, “What favor?”

Dong Cheng Yue reminds me, “That time in the classroom, you were surrounded by Liu Ying and Xu Yue. It was Wan Er that grabbed onto your arms and pretended to be your girlfriend so that you were able to keep the final shreds of your dignity...”

“...”

Dong Cheng Yue looks at us as if we were performing an interesting show and giggles, “So, how do you intend to repay that favor?”

... ..

Under the shade of the tree, as groups and groups of students walked by, the eyes of every single male student were affixed intensely upon Lin Wan

Er. It was a shock to them to think that there would still be a beautiful lady existing here.

As for how I would repay the favor to Ling Wan Er...

I placed the discs on top the cap of the rubbish trash bin beside me and walk firmly to Ling Wan Er's side. Stretching out, I hook my arm through the tender white arms of Ling Wan Er. From my arms, I could feel her soft and tender arm. The top beauty of Liu Hua university sure does let men go crazy.

"Does this consider as returning the favor?" I ask.

Ling Wan Er opens her charming mouth and stands there in a daze, like a beautiful doll, and stares blankly for a few seconds. Her dazed look causes the surrounding students to stop in their tracks and focus their attention on her.

... ..

"Li Xiao Yao..." Ling Wan Er says in a gentle voice after a long pause.

"Yes, m'lady?"

Ling Wan Er raised her left hand, her five fingers white as snow. She gradually curls her hand into a fist, looking at me sweetly, she says gently, "Do you know what I feel like doing the most right now?"

I swiftly retract my arm and collect the discs I placed by the side, "M'lady, you should hurry and go online to train your level, I'll be taking my leave..."

I disappear so fast that a trail of smoke could be seen behind me.

Ling Wan Er grits her teeth, her face flushed and speaks under her breath, "Hmph, that bastard. I'll fix him sooner or later!"

Dong Cheng Yue grabs her hand and giggles, "Are you willing to do that?"

"..."

... ..

Under the bright sunlight, I appear in the southern forest. In front of me, two new Tigermen immediately lunge towards me. Damn it, both of them attacking together gives me a lot of stress.

Lifting my hands and unsheathing my Jade City Sword, I swiftly activate **【Turmoil Sword】**, **【Defense】** and **【Haste】**. At the same time, I duck and punch a heavy blow towards the ground. The LV-4 Binding Chains activates and ties up the Tigerman on my right. Next, with my Jade City Sword, I rush towards the other Tigerman while summoning Baby Bobo. With a flash of my sword, I slash at the Tigerman .

The golden light from my combo constantly bursts forth crashing into the leather armor of the Tigerman. The next moment, I receive a horizontal swipe from the Tigerman at my shoulders. I slightly shift my body and with a white aura emanating from beneath my feet, I activate **【Strength of a Thousand Men】**. At the same time, I purposely manipulate the timing between the third strike and the following ram, such that when striking the third blow, the target would be at close proximity to myself and it would be impossible for the opponent to dodge the coming ram. Even with Jian Feng Han's ability to maneuver his character, it would be very hard for him to cause the fourth hit to miss if I did this.

“Pah!”

I knock back the Tigerman with my ram and activate Wind Blade. The cut removed 600+ health from the Tigerman's health bar, the damage output high as usual. At the same time, a system bell rings–

“Ding!”

System Notification: The player has understood the intricacies behind the skill **【Strength of a Thousand Men】**. The harmony with this skill increases by 0.7%

.....

My growth of my harmony to the skill has been growing at a slower and slower pace. However, in one afternoon, I raised it by 14.9%. I wonder what changes would happen to the skill after its harmony reaches 100%. Would my **【Strength of a Thousand Men】** increase in rank? Or would it

allow me to accomplish a 1000 hit combo, such that even a hundred Jian Feng Hans would fall under my 【Strength of a Thousand Men】?

Thinking about this, I couldn't help but smile gleefully. How pitiful is Jian Feng Han, boasting that he has the top battle abilities and yet, ended up beheaded by my hands. He must be regretting that he died to me at Fire Stone Canyon. Although I lost to him once, my win against him boosted my reputation by a lot. Furthermore, it would be hard for him to challenge me again, because he might be seen as narrow-minded if he did so. Thus, all he can do is to keep this grudge to his grave.

.....

Continuing to wander around the forest, as I was killing my 797th Tigerman, Lady Luck finally descends upon me. Deep in the forest, a Tigerman was standing under a tree, roaring softly. Its body was dyed blood red, its armor was razor sharp and on its head was a line of words that almost made my heart stop-

【Tigerman】(Normal Monster)

Level: 1

Description: Sealable

Damn, it finally appeared. A level 1 Tigerman!

Tears were about to fall from my eyes. Putting Baby Bobo in a defensive state, I grab one of my sealing card which I have previously stocked up to exactly 3 stacks totaling 297 sealing cards. Bring it on!

Raising one of my sealing cards, I lock it onto the Tigerman and it reflects the success rate of 7.7%. The success rate is really goddamn low!

“Shuaaa”

The sealing card flies out of my hands, causing a light hexagram to appear at the Tigerman's feet, only for it to flicker and disappear. It failed!

Wait, is that all that it did?

Continuing on, the second card, the third card... I kept throwing the

sealing cards as if they were worthless. At the 19th card, the level 1 Tigerman finally gives up with a roar, turning into a flash of white light which flew towards my pet slot. I immediately open my pet slots to take a look at the stats of the Tigerman.

【Tigerman】

Level: 1

Attack: ★★★★★☆

Defense: ★★★★★☆

Health: ★★★★★☆

Agility: ★★★★★☆

Magic: ★★☆☆

Skills: 【Violent Sweep】【Mountain Sink】

Excellence: 81%

.....

Hm, this Tigerman should be at least worth a hefty sum of 500G!

I must make sure to keep this Tigerman well. Containing my excitement, along with Baby Bobo, we start to kill Tigermen again!

While gradually increasing my harmony with my custom combo, I tried to subconsciously avoid the attacks by my target. This is a necessary skill for survival since if a close range fighter were to allow an enemy to land every single blow on him, it would be difficult to climb to the upper tiers of the ranking. This was similar to how if long range fighters do not understand how to keep their distance from their enemy, they would only end up as cannon fodder.

After killing Tigermen until around 3PM, I finally hit the quota for the quest while my Jade City Sword was about to lose its edge from all the cutting. Furthermore, in my bag there were around 10 or so green-tiered equipment, they could probably be sold for a few dozens gold coins total. The drop rate here isn't bad.

“Di!”

I receive a message from the great beauty m'lady, “Li Xiao Yao, what is your charm level?”

“29, what’s wrong?”

“Seriously? 29? You not lying are you?”

“I’m not lying... why?”

The great beauty m'lady begins to panic, “You... how did you get 29 points? I’m only at 19 myself. Huhu, do you know what charm is used for?”

“No idea...”

“Idiot! Charm is used to determine the intimacy between the player and the NPCs. It also determines the highest amount of damage a player can get. Even more so, it determines the drop rate from killing monsters, other players and your own drop rate. Charm is a factor that is of utmost importance...”

“Ok, I understand it now. Hahaha...”

“Laugh your ass off, I’ll go and continue on with my training...”

“Yeah, see you m'lady!”

After turning off the message box, I start to return to town to claim my rewards for the quest. Looking at my experience bar, I’m currently at 74% in level 33. After finishing this quest, surely I’ll be able to level up. After all, this is a grade A quest, the experience points from its rewards must surely be satisfying. If my luck is good, who knows, I might even be able to get a gold tier equipment, although the chances of that are extremely low.

.....

“Sha sha...”

I had barely walked a few steps on the grasslands with my Silver battle boots, before I hear the ferocious roar of a tiger from behind me. Hm, it’s

probably just another respawned Tigerman.

However, with the breeze lightly blowing, I glance behind me for a moment and for an instant, I am stunned. Praise the omnipotent wind god!

Not far from the grassland, as I expected, a new Tigerman has respawned. Furthermore, it's level 1!

.....

Brimming with excitement, my heart was about to leap out of my throat. I immediately pick up my pace and move towards the Tigerman. At the same time, I reach for my sealing cards. Two level 1 Tigmens in a day, just what kind of good luck am I experiencing today?

“Shua!”

The sealing card disappears under the feet of the Tigerman . Continuing on, the second card!

Before long, I lost 77 sealing cards, wasting an entire 14 minutes of my time.

On the 78th card, cold sweat drips down my back. If this goes on, will I use up all of my sealing cards without a single success? If that happens, won't I regret sealing this Tigerman to the point where I feel like dying? But, from the other precedents, the harder it is to seal the monster, the more likely that the monster that comes is extremely strong. This Tigerman might just as well be the treasure that I had been praying for.

While thinking about this, I threw out the 119th sealing card.

“Shua!”

The Tigerman turned into a ray of white light and entered my pet slot. Opening my pet slots, its Excellence was 81%, the same as before?

Wiping my eyes, I realize that I had the previous one.

Opening the stats of the other Tigerman, with just one look, I felt as if my heart was about to stop.

【Tigerman】

Level:1

Attack:★★★★☆

Defense:★★★★☆

Health:★★★★☆

Agility:★★★★☆

Magic:★★★☆☆

Skills:【Violent Sweep】【Mountain Sink】

Excellence:100%

.....

Fuck! To think it was a Tigerman with 100% excellence. This time, I've struck gold.

Hugging my Jade City Sword, I hurriedly left the forest and went directly to Dalin, completing my quest. Using his big hands, he pats me on my shoulders and says, "Lad, you have done well this time. Take these gold coins, the ** of Ba Huang City's pub have already endured to their utmost limit waiting for you to visit them!"

[TL: In the raws ** was also used]

"Ding!"

System Notice: You have completed the grade A quest 【Exterminating Tigermen】, you have received 19000 experience points, 50 gold coins and your reputation in Dragon City has increased!"

.....

Shrouded in a ray of golden light, I reached level 34. This rate of leveling is really awesome.

At the same time, I send a message to Ling Wan Er, "M'lady, have you caught your pet yet?"

"Not yet..." Ling Wan Er sounds a little depressed.

“Pull me into your party!”

“Oh?”

Almost immediately, the invitation letter arrives and I join the party. Indeed, the party only consists of the 2 beauties Ling Wan Er and Dong Cheng Yue.

Dong Cheng Yue giggles happily, “Oh, why did Xiao Yao come here?”

I didn’t say anything and only sent a picture of the stats of the Tigerman into the group chat. In an instant, both of the beauties were stunned–

“Tigerman ... Excellence 100%, this...”

Chapter 67: Transparent Wrist Guards

*

“Li Xiao Yao, how did you get this level 1 Tigerman? 100% excellence, you’re aren’t deceiving us are you?” Wan Er doesn’t seem to believe that I have such a high-class pet.

Cheng Yue also says, “Yeah, this pet is definitely god-tier...What are those two skills all about?”

I say, “[Violent Sweep], it’s similar to [Heavy Strike], but it is a lot stronger. [Mountain Mass], it adds defense: raises level * 10 defense, which means, a level 40 Tigerman get an extra 400 points in defense. I just got this pet and I also have another 81% Tigerman. You two, do you want them?”

The two beauties go silent for half a minute.

Finally, Wan Er says, “Since you got the pets, I’ll grab some money and buy it...”

“It’s going to be very expensive, and Miss, didn’t you say you could only take 50 thousand Yuan from your bank card every month? This 100% superiority Tigerman, it’s worth at least 1000 gold coins, you know that right...”

Wan Er pauses and says, “Actually, I have another bank card and there’s a few million on that...”

“Then that’s a done deal!” I clap my hands, the time to make money has arrived!

Cheng Yue tries to help her friend, “Wan Er, don’t be so rash. This Tigerman’s attack and defense are 4.5 stars, and it might not be as good as you think. How about..we let Xiao Yao give a discount or something in the name of our friendship...”

Wan Er laughs lightly, “What do you say Li Xiao Yao?”

I think for a while, and say, “Actually, me and the Miss have always been in a employer-employee relationship. Look, Miss doesn’t let me say her name and with Miss here and Miss there, I feel goosebumps everytime I say Miss...”

Wan Er giggles, “That’s fine, just call me like Cheng Yue...”

“Okay, Wan Er...”

“Wait, I still feel that this doesn’t feel right!”

“So you two don’t want these Tigermen?”

“We want them, of course we want them. I’m good now. We’re heading towards Ba Huang City right now!”

“Mm...”

Cheng Yue continues, “How about this, sell the 100% superiority Tigerman to Wan Er, and sell the 81% superiority Tigerman to me. Also, throw in a discount for us, how about it?”

“That’s fine, 40% off then. The 100% excellence will be sold for 600 gold coins, and the 81% will be sold for 300 gold coins.”

“Expensive!” Cheng Yue expresses her discontent, “What’s so good about these Tigermen...”

Wan Er couldn’t help but smile, “Cheng Yue you don’t understand. The value of the Tigerman isn’t in its aid in level grinding, it’s value is prominent in player killing. The current pets of most players all have explosive attacks, every level when the pets gain 10 points, the points are all put into strength, and that guarantees a good leveling speed. Some also put 5 in strength and 5 in defense, to guarantee a good attack and a good survivability. But this Tigerman, if you put 5 in strength and 5 in defense every level, then when it gets to level 40, its defense will have 500 points, and with [Mountain Sink], that’s 900 points of defense. With level 40 players and pets, how many can break through 900 points of defense?”

Cheng Yue is stunned, “So...So that’s how it is! Fine, I’ll spend a bit of money to buy some gold coins. Li Xiao Yao, we’ll get to Ba Huang City in

around 90 minutes or so, so you wait a bit!”

“Mm, that’s fine, I’ll wait for you two!”

“Okay!”

.....

After discussing the prices, I don’t have anything to worry about now since I don’t need this 100% excellence Tigerman. The reason is very simple, what I need is explosive damage, and not survivability. Under my [Heal], Baby Bobo’s HP isn’t any problem unless I meet people like Jian Feng Han, who can instantly kill Bobo. Putting all of his stat points into strength, I can also maintain a good leveling speed, so why would I go for extra survivability when what I really need is a good leveling speed.

Sigh, in this wilderness, I wonder how many people still want to kill me.. If I didn’t have Bobo to help me level grind, I’m afraid that I might still be under level 30 wandering around and who knows how long it might take to rush to level 40 and get promoted the second time? I don’t want to be [Scavenger of Dragon City] for a lifetime, because then all my future holds is “Master Scavenger”, and it doesn’t sound good...

Whatever, the two beauties still have a while until they reach Ba Huang City, no need to rush, I’ll grind a bit more first!

I take my sword, and walk in front of Beast Tamer Dalin, and with a burning gaze he appraises me and laughs, “Boy, you are strong enough now, and I’ve already gave you the mission of collecting food for passing winter in Dragon City. The long winter lasts for 5 months, and if we didn’t have enough rations, we won’t be able to pass through it. But not long ago, I’ve received news. In the fertiles lands at the south-west of Dragon City, there’s a farm called “Ma Ling’s Farm”. Ma Lin is an experienced hunter, but an extremely strong wild boar invaded the farm. Boy, go to Ma Lin’s farm immediately and kill off that wild boar and drag the corpse back, then Dragon City will have 3 more days of food!”

Ding!

System Notification: Do you accept the B-rank mission 【Wild Boar

Hunt】?

I quickly accept it. Now that I have the mission, it's very simple. I'll find Ma Lin's farm, kill that wild boar, and bring back the meat.

I open up the minimap, and the location of Ma Lin's farm is already jot down. It's a trip of around 20 minutes.

I leave immediately and after a 20 minutes walk through a forest, I reach a land of wilderness, and within that wilderness a wisp of smoke rises. There's a small wooden house there and in front of the wooden house there are fences surrounded by a few chunks of farmland, but sadly the vegetables such as lettuce in the farmland have already been trampled over, a huge monster is huffing over there!

Looking at the monster, a pang of panic starts in my heart. What kind of wild boar is this?! This is like the king of all boars!

Rumble...

The ground shakes and a wild boar of at least 5 tons is trampling all the crops. The fences laced with thorns are being thrown left and right, and the boar's body is full of spikes now. Surrounding that boar is a layer of fat and I'm guessing that my sword will have a bit of trouble piercing through that. The boar is at least 2 meters tall, its basically a living tank!

I inch forward, with my sword in my right hand and look from a close distance. The huge boar's stats appear in front of me—

【Prideful Boar Prince – Qiu Fu】 (Elite-rank Monster)

Level: 40

Attack: 420-550

Defense: 700

HP: 10000

Abilities: [Earthquake] [Brutal Combo]

Description: Qiu Fu is an extremely violent boar. He is the leader of a nearby tribe of boars and it has committed countless evils by destroying

farmlands. He is one of the wanted targets of Ba Huang City

.....

Hehe, an elite-rank monster, this is a mess. His 550 attack which isn't too bad but his 700 defense is pretty hard to deal with. With my armor I only have 500 or so defense while this guy already has 700. I don't even know if my sword can piece through that. Whatever, I'll deal with it when it comes!

With a whistle, I summon Bobo. My sword trembles and I use my level 2 [Defense] which increases 2% defense, and level 3 [Haste] which increases 6% attack speed and 3% movement speed. Time to go!

Whoosh!

I leap over the fallen fences in one jump and from a distance, I flick my wrist making a golden hexagram appears on my sword. I start with [Combo], and with bangbangbang I attack the boar prince's rock-hard butt. It even created sparks! I have no words...

"138!"

"112!"

"117!"

Indeed, it doesn't come even close to breaking his defense. My 800 attack can't break past his 700 defense, unless my attack is 20% higher than my opponent's defense, my attacks can't reach their full potential!

Huff huff...

The boar turns around, and with its sharp ivory horns, it suddenly stabs towards me. It's the [Brutal Combo]!

I raise my sword, but I wasn't able to block it. My 505 defense can't go against it's 550 attack. With a level difference of 6 levels, this pressure is too high!

Bang bang bang...

A wave of pain enters my chest and after being stabbed by his horns, it

really hurts. A chain of damage numbers fly up—

“312!”

“297!”

“224!”

What a brutal attack!

I get Bobo to attack it and I cast [Heal] on myself with a wave of my hand. Luckily I have 966 HP or else I would have been killed by the first attack. A B-rank mission? No way!

I keep slashing with my sword and strike countless times at the boar, but the max damage I do is only 200 points of damage. How long will it take to kill off this 10000 HP boar?

Wait, that’s not right. The system wouldn’t be that biased, the monster has to have a weak point, such as the eyes, and attacking at that point, I should be able to ignore a certain amount of defense!

Growl!

The boar continues to rush towards me, but this time I’m prepared. The instant before it reaches me, I dash right, and slash at the eyes of the boar!

“478!”

Indeed, I guessed correctly. I can ignore a large portion of defense by attacking vital spots!

Now that I have something to rely upon, my sword starts to dance. I cast [Heal] on Baby Bobo and then circle around the boar, stabbing at him with my sword. The boar’s body is very strong and durable but his speed is too low, so his turning speed is also very slow. Even if I didn’t have Bobo to divert aggro, I can keep on circling around this elite-rank monster and kill him off.

I raise my head, hm? A short tail flutters around, and under it is some pink tender skin....this spot...it counts as a weak spot right?

Thinking that, I get excited, and I prepare my sword. With a whoosh, the bottom of my feet starts to glow. At the next instant, I use [Strength of a Thousand Men] and keep on striking, straight at the prince's weak spot!

Growl...

This guy cries out, and at the same time 5 damage number flies up—

“179!”

“201!”

“221!”

“198!”

“779!”

.....

That last hit was really fierce. Nice!

In the end, after a few combos, the boar's HP reached its end. Following a desperate cry, my experience bar rose by a huge chunk. Damn, that was nearly 40% of my total experience bar, elite monsters are the real deal!

Whoosh!

The boar falls and also drops an equipment. It's a shining equipment and even has a trace of a faint gold glow. I immediately rush forward and pick it up. As I saw the stats, I couldn't help but laugh, is this because of my 29 charm? This is quite the drop—

【Transparent Wrist Guards】(Gold-rank Equipment)

Type: Leather Armor

Defense: 45

Agility: +25

Endurance: +23

Others: Increases attack damage by 30 points

Level Requirement: 35

.....

Holding the wrist guard, my heart shakes from the excitement.

Chapter 68: A Huge Deal

TL: Trans Change: Ling Wan Er -> Lin Wan Er.

This pair of wrist guards adds agility by 20, making it a somewhat god-level equipment for agility-based classes. Furthermore, it adds 30 attack which makes it a dream equip for those in the assassin, gunner and archer class. After all, agility-based classes aim to boost their attack speed and critical strike chance, thus most of them choose to pump their stats into agility. On top of that, their damage growths from boosting the strength stat is rather low, making it unwise to waste their points on the strength stat. Although adding agility would also boost their damage, their class' damage tends to the lower end. This increase in 30 attack is at least equivalent to 42 stat points, thus making the total stat boost from this wrist guard come up to a staggering 90.

.....

From the gamers I know, Yue Qing Qian, Yue Wei Liang and Lin Wan Er are assassins, making the equip ideal for them. Although I have a good relationship with Yue Qing Qian, she is a member of the Prague. Furthermore, Lin Wan Er is the one whom I spend my days going to class with, leaving class with and having meals with. To add to it, she is my employer. If I were to give this pair of wrist guards to Yue Qing Qian, and if Lin Wan Er finds out afterwards, I'll probably get killed?

However, if I were to give this directly to Lin Wan Er, wouldn't that be too shallow? Given my relationship with her, if I were to just simply give her a gold-rank equip, people would suspect that I have feelings for her. After much deliberation, I decide that the best method for me is to sell this pair of wrist guards to Lin Wan Er, thus getting rid of it easily and sparing her from owing me one.

As to whether I should bring the wrist guards to sell at the Ba Huang market, currently I won't consider this option. The only ones who have the means to purchase these wrist guards would only be those from Prague, Wrath of the Heroes or Vanguard; none of which I consider as my

friend. As for the General Family, given how poor they are, I doubt they have enough to buy it. Selling this wrist guard in the market would probably just lead to the bolstering of my rival's forces. This absolutely must not happen as my current strength does not allow me the confidence that I could defeat them even after I strengthen their forces.

.....

After making up my mind, I place the wrist guards into my inventory, pick up the 1 gold coin on the ground and grab the tail of the boar prince. Lets bring you back with me to the Dragon City to make some smoked pork!

“Pah!”

However, due to my excessive force, the tail of the boar snaps apart. I have sinned, I have sinned...

After thinking for awhile, I turn around, head towards the fence and pull out several long strands of vines. Based on my past experience in the wild, these vines should be exceptionally flexible; learning how to braid vines was indeed a smart move. Furthermore, here in the game, my strength is much stronger than in reality, making it an easy feat to tie the vines into 2 long ropes. Tying both of the ropes firmly to the front canines of the boar, I started tugging on them, using all of my strength.

Using great strength to pull, OH YEAH! Bring on the music!

Little miss sitting at the front of the ship while I walk along the shore.

Loving tenderly, both of us connected together by a string while walking leisurely.

(纤夫的爱 <-Song name)

.....

A mysterious sight appears in the forests at the frontier of Ba Huang City. A little swordsman is using all of his efforts to pull along a gigantic wild boar, step by step he goes forward but his speed is unbelievably slow. The size of the wild boar behind him is seriously beyond huge.

Fortunately, my 350+ strength isn't just for show, at least I can inch forward.

After dragging the boar prince for an excruciating long period of time, I've only just covered 60% of the distance. At this moment, in the party chat, Lin Wan Er's sweet and refreshing voice sounds, "Hi, Li Xiao Yao, where's your pet? Dong Cheng and I have reached Ba Huang City!"

I groan, "Wan Er, I won't be heading back to town yet. I accepted a quest and now I am currently dragging back my quest item. I'll require... around 30 minutes. Wait for me for a moment!"

Lin Wan Er replies with a tinge of displeasure in her voice, "Hmph, you idiot. You knew that we were coming and yet you went ahead to accept a quest. Are you purposely putting us both up on display in Ba Huang City for others to see?"

I couldn't help but laugh. To be honest, Lin Wan Er and Dong Cheng Yue could be considered gorgeous even among beauties. The appearance of them both at Ba Huang City would surely cause a big uproar. In fact, it's high probable that the 2 girls are being surrounded and stared at by countless players at this point, especially at Lin Wan Er. A beautiful assassin in leather design does especially well to ignite the passion within the hearts of men, and the slender thighs and slim waist together with her well-filled 34D, who knows how many people have fallen under her feet...

Thinking about this, I began to put in more effort to pull the boar prince. Damn it, I cannot allow my beautiful employer to be ogled at by those bastards in Ba Huang City.

In order to soothe the 2 lonely and bored girls, I take a screenshot of the wrist guard's stats, convert it into a picture and send it to them via the party chat, saying, "Wan Er, what do you think about these wrist guards?"

Lin Wan Er stays silent for a moment and then says excitedly, "Wow, its stats are really exceptional, wonderful! Li Xiao Yao, from which boss did you hunt this equipment from? Going solo, you killed a gold-rank boss? Unbelievable..."

I couldn't find the words to reply for a moment, "Of course I can't defeat a gold-rank boss, this was dropped from an elite monster..."

"What kind of luck is that..." Lin Wan Er was speechless.

Dong Cheng Yue chuckles, "Li Xiao Yao, hurry up and return, don't make us wait too long. Judging from your actions, you probably intend to gift this wrist guards to Lin Wan Er hm?"

I quickly reply, "No, I don't have that kind of intention..."

Lin Wan Er laughs, yet her laugh seemed to have a profound meaning to it, "So... you intend to sell it to me?"

"Yeah, that is possible!"

"I am not buying!" Lin Wan Er firmly rejects my offer.

Whoosh, in an instant my heart plummeted, "Wan Er, you're not buying? These wrist guards add so many stats and yet... you really don't want it, not even a single bit?"

Lin Wan Er, after seeing me panicking, starts to smile brightly. After a long pause, she sends the picture of another equipment into the party chat. Opening it, I almost fainted –

【Dawn Breastplate】(Gold-rank Equipment)

Type: Heavy Armor

Defense: 125

Strength: +29

Endurance: +25

Others: Increases defense by 40 points

Level requirement: 35

.....

Heavy armor hmm, armor-type equipment. Damn it, 125 defense points, must be really sturdy. On top of adding 25 endurance, it adds a bonus 40 defense, it's the kind of equipment that I really need. This Dawn

Breastplate is totally a cheat code.

“Um...” I mutter to myself, not knowing what to say. I end up standing at the same spot staring blankly.

Lin Wan Er, with an accomplished look on her face, chuckles, “So, how is it, you darned Li Xiao Yao, I’ll trade this Dawn Breastplate of mine for your Transparent Wristguards, it should be a fair trade right? Gold-tiered equipment for another gold-tiered equipment, you aren’t losing out...”

I swiftly went to check the ranking of the equip on the equipment ranking board, locating the ranking of Dawn Breastplate amongst other gold-rank equipments... In the multi-purpose equipment rank board, it is ranked in the 9th place whereas the Transparent Wristguards is ranked 24. Truthfully speaking, if the trading were to occur, the one that benefits from the trade would be me... However, am I the type of person to try to profit off beautiful ladies? Of course not!

Thus, I say, “The Dawn Breastplate’s ranking is much higher than that of my Transparent Wristguards. How about this, lets trade equipments but on top of that, I’ll pay you an additional 100 gold coin. So, for your Tigerman, you only have to pay me 500 gold coins...”

Dong Cheng Yue giggles, “Well, that isn’t too bad, Wan Er gets to save some money...”

Lin Wan Er says, “Alright then, I shall fully respect your decision!”

“Hmm, Wan Er, where did you find this Dawn Breastplate?”

“It is a long story, Yue Er and I went joined a party with a few other healers and archers to fight a level 40 boss. After killing the boss, I happened to roll it...”

“Why not party with a berserker or a monk?”

“Stupid, if I formed a party with them, would I still have the right to roll this breastplate for you?!”

“Yup, m’lady is the wisest and the strongest!”

“ ... ”

.....

After a long time, I finally arrived at the Dragon City. Standing in front of Beast Tamer Dalin, I was ready to collapse. I refuse all quests he had for me and say, "Teacher, I have already completed your request and brought back the boar prince's corpse to you. May I request that when you make smoked meat or bacon, a portion of it could be given to me..."

Dalin roars with laughter and says, "No problem, lad. You really don't disappoint me. Come, this is the rewards for your hard work!"

"Ding!"

System Notice: You have completed 【Wild Boar Hunt】, you have received 14000 experience point, 10 gold coins and your reputation in Dragon City has improved!

...

"Shua!"

Shrouded in golden light, I level up to level 35. Good, now I can equip the Dawn Breastplate. Taking out the return scroll, I crush it and smiling to Dalin, I say, "Teacher, see you later!"

Dalin waves his hands towards the spot where I just disappeared.

Immediately after arriving at the teleportation circle, I can see 2 small orange circle indicating the location of my party members, Lin Wan Er and Dong Cheng Yue.

Swiftly making my way towards them, I spotted the two charmers leaning against the city walls carrying a bored expression. All of the players that walked past them, whether intentionally or not, carefully slipped secret glances towards them, afraid that they would be despised if the two goddess realized their furtive glances.

Walking straight to them, I raise my hands and wave to them, "Hi, guess I made both of you wait..."

Dong Cheng Yue looks up with a startled expression and then laughs, "Xiao Yao, your new style looks not bad. Dressed in a whole body of metal

armor, you have converted to the heavy armor class right? Hehe, actually Xiao Yao really looks handsome dressed in war armors. Wan Er, what do you think? Don't he really look like a handsome wandering swordsman?"

Lin Wan Er glances at me then avoids looking at me, lowering her eyes to the stone ground, the edges of her mouth move up to form a smile. Then, she raises her face with a solemn poker face and says, "Hmph, let's start the deal. Trade me!"

I open the trade menu and start to trade with Lin Wan Er. Then, I place into the trade window the Tigerman with 100% Excellence and the Transparent Wrist Guards into the trade menu, while Lin Wan Er moved her Dawn Breastplate together with 500 gold coins into the trade. Pata, the trade was successful!

.....

Afterwards, I immediately place the 500 gold coins into the Treasure House to sell. The real money value of the gold coin has been falling steadily recently. The sooner that I sell these gold coins of mine, the less profit I'll lose. At the same time, I take out the Dawn Breastplate from my inventory and put it on. Hua, and in an instant, the dull-looking Armor of the Earth turns into the Dawn Breastplate which emits a light golden glow. I instantly feel refreshed and a sense of security envelops me, this must be the feeling of a surge in my defense stats—

【Xiao Yao Zi Zai】(Scavenger of Dragon City)

Level : 35

Attack : 610-816

Defense : 601

Health : 1176

Magic : 430

Charm : 29

.....

My defense has finally reached 600 points. Whether I'm fighting other

players or monsters, my ability to resist their offense attacks should have been raised by quite a fair bit. Furthermore, what stands out the most is my health, which has reached 1100+; the result of the 25 endurance from the Dawn Breastplate. Together with the swordsman class' 0.8 endurance growth per level, I have a total of a 200 point boost to my health. With more health, I have better tanking ability such that I won't be defeated a few seconds into the battle!

Chapter 69: A Meter of Sunshine

Whoosh!

A golden hexagon starts to glow, shining radiantly on Lin Wan Er's snow-white face. She anxiously stood looking at the emerging Tigerman within the hexagram. Slowly, the Tigerman stood up, he had tough leather armor, bulging muscles and a ferocious face. As soon as he was summoned, he knelt down on one knee next to Lin Wan Er.

The players around us all gave shocked glances at the Tigerman because none of them have ever seen half-beast half-human pets. Even though the intelligence of this Tigerman isn't too high, his strength is incredible, his tenacity is decent and his defense is high, a perfectly balanced pet.

Lin Wan Er happily stood next to her new pet. As the wind blew, her cloak started to drift in the wind, revealing a pair of long and slender legs. Stepping on a pair of leather boots, her beauty attracts the stares that were meant for her pet.

I turn around and quickly give the 81% Tigerman to Dong Cheng Yue. Little did I know that Cheng Yue would immediately call out her pet too and the result was that there were two of the same pet standing there, creating a huge disturbance!

.....

"You guys should leave Ba Huang City, before more people notice you guys..." I lean on the City Wall and remind them.

Lin Wan Er nods. "Yue Er, lets go back and get the levels of our Tigermen up to par. How are you going to add your stat points?"

"My pet's excellence is quite low and I need a defensive pet so I'll add 4 points to Strength and 6 points to Endurance. That way, my pet's defense won't be too different from yours. Right?"

Lin Wan Er lightly smiles, "Then I'll go 6 Strength and 4 Endurance, keeping a high defense and not sacrificing too much attack."

“Okay, the owners of 100% Excellence pets are really shameful...”

“You! Let’s go!”

“Okay!”

The two beauties turn around and smile at me, “Li Xiao Yao, it’s getting late so me and Yue Er are going back to Fan Shu City and leveling our Tigermen to level 15. So in about an hour can you come to our dorm since we need to go out?”

“Go where?”

“We want to go the Mall to buy some things, like clothes...”

“Wan Er, isn’t your card locked so you can’t spend any money?”

“That’s because I can’t use it to buy in game gold, I can use it to buy clothes...”

“Ohh...Okay. I’ll be waiting for you under your dorm. Are we going to eat dinner first?”

“We’ll eat dinner in the mall!”

“Alright!”

.....

According to my employment contract, I need to follow Lin Wan Er wherever she goes. So, I’m definitely not going to get the chance level tonight. All I can do is accompany the two to the mall, but its not too bad, staying in the game all the time is taking a toll on me.

The Xihu District’s Mall is near Wen Yi Xi street and I’ve been there before but Wan Er obviously is more familiar with the place than me; her Audi TT quickly flashes through the city. Dong Cheng Yue is sitting in the back, “The Tigerman’s growth is really good. My level 15 Tigerman already has about 400 defense, if I get him to level 40 he’ll have about 1000 defense...”

I turn around, “Take it slowly. Don’t add so many points into defense, you might not be able break the defense of heavy-armor players or

monsters if you keep adding points into defense.”

“Yeahhh, I’ll be careful. Wait, Xiao Yao, why aren’t you driving and making your employer drive?”

I stiffen.

Lin Wan Er, focused on the road, smiles, “His IQ is too low to drive...”

I curl my hands, “From now on, I’ll be the one to drive...”

....

30 minutes later, at the cafeteria in third floor of the mall.

A bowl of spicy Kabobs is in front of me. With my chopsticks, I hold up a Needle Mushroom and ask, “This meal is being paid for by Wan Er, right?”

“Yup”

“Owner, we want another 10 Beef Kabobs!”

“You!”

Spicy Kabobs with sweet yogurt; a god-like pairing, it heals souls!

After finishing the meal, Wan Er and Cheng Yue bought some clothes. Afterwards, we went to the fourth floor. Cheng Yue clamored about watching a movie. But there weren’t many new films and the girls had already watched Transformers 5 so in the end we randomly picked a movie called <<Love me Again>>.

Since it was a love themed movie, in the theater, there are many couples already there. Dong Cheng Yue and Wan Er both got a huge bucket of popcorn and sat next to me. Dong Cheng Yue was quite familiar with me and easily starts to talk with me, she even started leaning on me! Lin Wan Er was a bit more reserved. Twirling her hair, she says, “Li Xiao Yao, where are you training your level, where you got the gold-tiered wrist guard?”

I think about it for a moment, “Professional Quest!”

“Oh? Who’s your profession’s instructor?”

“Sorry, I can’t tell you. I might get killed by those bounty hunters...”

“YOU....”

Lin Wan Er stomps her foot in anger. She’s quite cute when she gets angry and the guys next to us, waiting to enter the theater, started looking at their own girlfriends. In comparison, Wan Er was a lot better than the lot of them combined and as a result, I attracted a lot of aggro.

One is fine but two? Who is this guy!

Even though I knew that this would happen, I couldn’t have done anything about it. This is probably the Legendary Lying Gun where the two girls beside me are actually just my friends. If not for the air conditioned bed, I wouldn’t even be here right now...

.....

After a short while, the movie started playing. The start of the movie was about a couple meeting and after another 100 minutes, the ending of the movie finally came. The male MC was sitting in a cave by himself, waiting to die. At that point, he saw a meter of sunshine coming from the cave’s entrance and was entranced by it. Because of it, he walked out of his cave and suicided by jumping off a cliff. And then... then the movie explained the origin of the meter of sunshine...

Beside me, Dong Cheng Yue starts to wipe away tears...

When the lights finally came back on in the theater, I see Lin Wan Er’s also red but she quickly put on her sunglasses. She asks, “Li Xiao Yao, what do you think of the movie?”

I pause, “I don’t have any thoughts!”

“Do you believe in the meter of sunshine love? For each other, they were willing to give up their lives! Do you want to have a girlfriend like that?”

“Hmph, life in the modern age is very tough, everyone is busy trying to make money. Who has the time to talk about love? There’s still evil and the flag of justice hasn’t been lifted! I don’t have time to think about love!”

“Is it because there aren’t any girls that like you?”

I clench my teeth, how did she know?

Dong Cheng Yue is giggling, “It’s already past 10, lets go back, before the school closes.”

“Yup!”

.....

This time, I drove the car. When we reached the school, the school gates were just about to close. With my foot on the gas, we did a 100 meter sprint and narrowly entered the school. The guards that were in charge of closing the gate looks at our car with hate.

After sending the two girls back to their dorm, while walking on the paths in the school, I dialed Shen Bing’s number –

“Hello, Li Xiao Yao!”

“Yup, sister Shen Bing, are there any special situations, especially about Lightning Hands?”

“Nope, how are you? Yesterday, nothing happened right?”

“Uhh...” I thought for a moment before continuing, “Last night, I went to No Returns Bar and broke the arms of Wen Tai. Looks like Wen Tai kept the thing down low and hasn’t said anything about it yet.”

“Oh, it’s probably like that. He probably wouldn’t intentional destroy his reputation by saying that someone defeated him. Oh, are you alright?”

“At that kind of level, its impossible for him to hurt me. Oh right, Shen Bing, our custom line needs to have some more security or else someone might eavesdrop.”

“Mm, I got it. I already secured the line before calling you for the first time. Don’t worry!”

“Good, is there anything else? Leader Wang hasn’t contacted me recently.”

“There’s nothing, just relax and guard Lin Wan Er! Oh right, Lin Wan

Er...is she as beautiful as they say she is?"

"Umm, I don't know..."

"Looks like she's pretty; to be able to make Li Xiao Yao stutter, she isn't simple. Alright, I won't tease you but you should be careful. We're quite close to Lin Tian Nan so that Wan Er is safe."

"Got it..."

....

Ending the call, I realize that I've already been on the job for an entire week. But during the entire time, there hasn't been anything big but I still feel some danger; the real danger hasn't come yet but when it does come, I need to be ready.

Back in my room, I sit in front of my desk. Randomly looking through the recent material from class, I feel like I could die from boredom. What Four Treasures, Old Saying, I can't understand any of it. So, I open <<Destiny>>'s official website and look at Ba Huang City. At the top is a red post –

[Sticky] Vanguard vs. Prague, Ba Huang City's King's fight is near?

.....

The general contents within the post was that for the past few days, Vanguard and Prague players have been fighting a lot, to the point where there were two 100 player parties battling. The two guilds are both top 10 in the entire chinese sever and because there's only 1 first place in Ba Huang, sooner or later they will have a huge fight.

I sip on my cup of tea, smiling. If they want to fight, then fight! It doesn't matter to me but hopefully Yue Qing Qian and Yue Wei Liang aren't involved in the fights, all I care about within the two guilds are those two girls.

There were also a lot of random events in Ba Huang City. For example, someone found a level 50 Boss but when a couple hundred players went to kill it, they got annihilated. Someone also found level 7 herbs but

within the entire city, there weren't any players that reached level 7 in herb picking so they could look at the herbs. The most ridiculous event is probably the new Ba Huang City's top ten beauties list. When I looked at it, I didn't know any of them! I thought that within Ba Huang City, Yue Qing Qian and Yue Wei Liang were the prettiest, even if they were a bit young...

.....

While thinking about it, on the other bed, Tang Gu suddenly sits up, "Li, why aren't you sleeping? There are classes tomorrow morning..."

"Okay."

Crawling onto my own bed and pulling up the blankets, I quickly close my eyes. There's going to be a lot of things that I need to do tomorrow. Rushing to level 35 isn't much, I need to rush to level 40! According to rumors, every class' second promotion is very essential where players get their second power spike.

Chapter 70: Dark Dwarves

In the morning at the General Studies of Chinese Characters class.

The professor held an extremely thick book in his hands, reciting the contents from the book with modulated cadence.

“Sha sha sha...”

Beside me, the sound of continuous scribbling of pencils drifts over and outside the window, the birds chirp joyously. Leaning by the window sill, my head gradually nods off into a nap. After a while, someone shook me and I almost knocked my head on the table. Turning around, I see Lin Wan Er staring angrily at me, “Yesterday, what did you do?”

“I didn’t do anything. Didn’t I go with you guys to the movies?”

“Oh...”

Glancing around her table, I saw Lin Wan Er’s scribbling on her workbook, drawing a portrait resembling her Pet. It was the Tigerman in game, drawn vividly with its domineering look. Tsk tsk, the beautiful m’lady really does have a wide range of talents!

.....

“It really does look like the real one!” I tilt my head and laugh.

Lin Wan Er gently smiles, “Its okay, I’m just doodling...”

Dong Cheng Yue is by Wan Er’s side, toying with her phone. After fiddling with it for a moment, she says, “Guys, big news! Just ten minutes ago, the first level 40 player appeared.”

Lin Wan Er and I say with a mysterious harmony, “Who?”

“Not telling you two...”

“ ... ”

“Fine, its Q Sword of Fan Shu City, and our future guild leader.” Dong Cheng Yue chuckles, “I really didn’t expect Q Sword, a swordsman, to level at a faster pace than me, a mage.”

I asks, "Yue Er, what level are you at?"

"Level 38."

"What about Wan Er?" I ask once more.

Wan Er opens her pair of charming eyes widely and stares at me. After a long time, Wan Er realized that I was referring to her. She, while looking a little uncomfortable with how I addressed her, says, "I'm currently level 39, with my experience bar at 17%. There are no classes this afternoon, so I should be able to hit level 40. But we are students, how can we compare with Q Sword..."

"Hm, Q Sword seems to be in a rush to reach level 40, I wonder what is he planning..."

Dong Cheng Yue says, "Taking the top spot in the player ranking board naturally comes with many benefits. Firstly, it spreads the player's name far and wide. Next, it allows him to garner popularity from the other gamers, such that when he creates his own guild in the future, he doesn't have to worry about being unable to recruit top level gamers."

Lin Wan Er, also browsing the internet through her phone, says, "Actually, the most important thing is that at level 40, after job change, the new techniques are far stronger than our current ones. Let me see, for swordsman, after reaching level 40, you can learn **【Swordsmanship Specialization】**, which increases sword-type damage by 25%. On top of that, you can learn either **【Flame Blade】** or **【Ice Blade】**; Level 1 **【Flame Blade】** increases damage by 3% whereas level 1 **【Ice Blade】** increases damage by 2% and reduces the enemy's speed.

While speaking, Lin Wan Er looked at me, "Li Xiaoyao, your job could also be considered as a swordsman, which one of the two skills are you planning on training?"

I replied immediately, "The effects of **【Ice Blade】** could reduce the enemy's speed and could be considered as a control technique, one of the ideal skills for PK. Although **【Flame Blade】** has a high offensive power, but I do not lack offensive ability. My Wind Blade can also increase by attacking power by 3%, thus offsetting the setbacks from not learning

【Flame Blade】.”

Dong Cheng Yue rubs her hands together and giggles sinisterly, “Hee hee, today I shall also strive to reach level 40, and I shall start going on the offense!”

Lin Wan Er couldn’t help but smiles, “A level 40 mage isn’t just as simple as being able to go on the offensive. There is still the 【Pillars of Ice & Fire】 which blasts away all monsters in a 5 meters radius. Only after learning 【Pillars of Ice & Fire】 can one proclaim themselves as a true qualified mage!”

“Yup, yup!” Dong Cheng Yue eyes glittered with hope.

.....

After lunch, the two beauties, eager to rush their levels, excitedly run back to their dormitory. As for me, I walk leisurely back to my sleeping room. There’s no need to hurry, after all I am only at level 35, there’s still quite a long way off from level 40. Today, I could probably reach level 37-38, but reaching level 40 is still an impossible task.

“Shua!”

Appearing by the side of the Dragon City, I find Beast Tamer Dalin roasting a python over a bonfire. The python was as thick as a bowl, with scales that were gray in colour and it belonged under the category of Desert Snakes. Pi Pi Pa Pa, the crackling sound of the fire could be heard from where I stand. The persistent python was clinging onto its life and continuously writhing its body around. Apparently, the python did not understand what kind of person the Dalin is. Dalin, with one hand seasoning the python with pepper, was smacking the snake on its head with his other palm and shouts angrily, “Show some respect to your elders and stay still, if you continue to squirm around I’ll deep-fry you!”

I tremble at the sight. My master is really not an ordinary person.

Carrying the Jade City Sword, I walk up to him and ask, “Teacher, I have come again. Are there any quests for me?”

Dalin looks up and replies, “Oh, kid, you finally appeared! This morning,

Captain Frost passed by our campsite and told me that in the Fire Stone Canyon, east of Dragon City, they sighted a group of Dark Dwarves. These detestable dark dwarves originally resided underground. However, due to their greedy nature, they are extremely passionate about seeking gold. Apparently, some rumor spread amongst them, saying that underneath the Dragon City, countless gold bars and precious stones can be found. Hmph, those Dark Dwarves have gathered in thousands of troops in the Fire Stone Canyon, they are definitely aiming to invade us!"

While saying this, Dalin suddenly stands up and pats my shoulder, "Kid, there is no room for complaints, you are to immediately head forth to Fire Stone Canyon and punish the bunch of greedy Dark Dwarves!"

A piece of golden sheepskin appears in front of me and on top of it, written in a large font is the word "Bounty". Dalin looks at me with great expectations and says, "Lad, go to the Fire Stone Canyon, kill at least 2000 Dark Dwarves, and their names will be recorded on this magical scroll. On top of that, you have to kill at least one of the leaders of the Dark Dwarves, only then can the quest be considered complete!"

"Ding!"

System Notice: Received quest **【Hunting Dark Dwarves】**! (Quest Grade A)

Quest Description: Head forth to Fire Stone Canyon and kill at least 2000 Dark Dwarves. On top of that, you must exterminate one or more dark dwarf leader. Great caution should be exercised since Dark Dwarves are blessed with innate magical talent and they are incomparably greedy and savage. Once caught by them, even if you possess thousands of lives, you will end up getting killed by them. Thus, just before they grab hold of you, it would be best to free your worries by stabbing yourself.

.....

"Damn..."

I unconsciously grin. I got the quest just like that, a grade A storyline quest! Given that is a storyline quest, the rewards are bound to be shockingly bountiful and also, without doubt, the difficulty of the quest

will also be unthinkably difficult. No matter, let's slaughter our way in and then think about it later!

After fixing my equipments at the quartermaster and retrieving Indigo Sea Pills from my storage, I'm ready to head off!

Walking along a familiar road, I pass through the Desolate Cloud Swamp and head directly toward the Fire Stone Canyon. Unlike before, the levels of the players now are already considerably higher compared to a few days ago. In fact, when I was passing by the Desolate Cloud Swamp, there were quite a few parties training there. Also, at the edge of the forest, there was a new space created just for the players. It was a temporary campsite created by the Ba Huang City's NPC scouts. Blacksmiths, pharmacists, whatever basic needs a player requires could be found there. By adjusting according to the players, the NPCs of Ba Huang City are extremely intelligent and this is one of the plusses in the game.

"Hi, that level 35 big brother dressed in heavy armor? Do you want to come with us to fight the Cloud Water Snake? We only require a heavy armor class!"

A distance away, a party was extending their hands and inviting me to join them. Such a pity that the Cloud Water Snakes no longer catch my eye, my target is the Dark Dwarves in the Fire Stone Canyon!

Shaking my head while smiling, I step into the shallow waters and reject their offer, "Thanks, but I am currently on a quest and I'm heading towards another map. So, have fun and good luck!"

That guy shakes his head and hehe laughs, "Yeah, good luck to you too. The monsters in front have extremely high levels, don't die!"

"Of course!"

With the blessings from those strangers, I step on the road to leveling. On my way, I find that the levels of the monsters are higher than before. Last time I came, the monsters were level 37 but now, they've been replaced with level 39 monsters. Obviously, this showcases the capabilities of the CPU of Destiny; the levels of the monsters would

follow the majority of the gamers. As most of the gamers level up, the levels of the monsters change accordingly.

Reaching the entrance to the Fire Stone Canyon, shoosh shoosh sounds became apparent, as the harsh wind blew against me, I glanced around but there was no other players to be found. On a rock far away, there were a few level 40 small devils. Given that most of the players are around the 32~34 level range, killing these monsters would be difficult for them.

Standing on the cliff, I leap and slide into the area of the Fire Stone Canyon together with Baby Bobo. Opening my map to take a look, I realize that I've already passed by the Deep Cold Forest and can't expect another Ice Rat to appear for me, I guess I better just proceed on with the quest. After all, leveling is the most important thing right now! On the map, towards my east, the whole region was dyed blood red and on top of that, there was a quest mark. That would probably be where the temporary camp of the Dark Dwarves is, I guess?

.....

Carrying my Jade City Sword, I move carefully towards the location indicated on the map. After walking for around 10 minutes, the land in front of me starts going downwards and looking downwards, in the middle of the valley below, there's a large basin – Slayer's Basin.

Yet another map within a map! Standing at the edge of the basin, I look towards the horizon. I could see thick black smoke rising up and at least tens of thousands simple and crude tents spreading out sporadically within the basin. Each and every dark dwarves, all possessing a beard, is busy doing something. Some were busy crafting some kind of weapon and some were stripping the skins of their hunts. More importantly, all of their names were red, indicating that they were the monsters I needed to hunt to complete my quest!

“Sha...”

My Battle Boots begin to move and I slide down along the edges of the basin. At the same time, my Dawn Breastplate shines with an untainted

glow. With this Dawn Breastplate from Lin Wan Er, I look like a high level warrior.

Reaching the ground, I regain my balance and look around, not far away from me, there's a small tent, within it resides four dark dwarves. Two of them are surrounding a soup cauldron, one's stripping a wild goat of its skin and the last one is sharpening the edge of a war axe. Hu chi hu chi, the dark dwarf who was stripping the goat's skin wheezes as he does the chore, commenting, "Damn it, these goat meats comes with a nasty stench, making me feel like vomiting. I prefer the taste of human girls. Last night, when we were raiding the human village, we killed all of the women after playing with them. I feel like... the prince's way of doing things is way too violent, why can't we bring those human girls here?"

Ga ga, the dark dwarf who was sharpening the war axe laughs and says, "Suo An , shut up. Don't you dare question the prince's way of doing things; you are too arrogant. If you don't shut your mouth, this elder shall remove your head from your body with a swing of my axe, making you end up just like those humans!"

.....

While carrying my sword, I confirm the distance between me and the dark dwarves. The distance which monsters would be aggro-ed would be around 20 meters, whereas the dark dwarf who is removing the goat's skin was just around 20 meters away from him. Hm, I shall start with him, otherwise a 1V4 would be too stressful!

Chapter 71: The Prince of Dark Dwarves

Three golden hexagons appear on my Jade City Sword, allowing me to confirm that the combo this time would consist of three attacks – the number of hexagonal stars appearing indicates the number of attacks the combo will do, a rule which I have understood with practice.

“Hua!”

“311!”

“327!”

“334!”

.....

The damage efficiency is still not too bad, with just a combo, I have already removed almost a thousand of his health points. The level 40 dark dwarf, originally possessing over 2000 health points plummets after getting violently stung by Baby Bobo who was dancing at his sides. Then, with a direct stab from my sword, the job is done!

Hmm, the effectiveness of a surprise attack is quite good, the level 40 Dark Dwarf didn't even get a chance to retaliate and was wiped out in just a few seconds.

By ending the battle fast, my health potion and mana potion consumption was reduced. Bringing Baby Bobo along, I rushed towards the Dark Dwarf that's sharpening the edges of the war axe. Unfortunately, at the moment when I closed the distance between him and me, the other two Dark Dwarves immediately got aggro-ed by my actions. 1V3, I guess I'll have to go all out, otherwise I don't a chance completing this quest!

“Shua!”

As usual, the combo has a short cooldown time of 6 seconds. I sent a second combo attack towards the second dwarf as soon as the cooldown came off. At the same moment, I lower my body and my iron fist crashes into the ground. Pah, 【Binding Chains】 was immediately evoked and rose

from the ground, chaining the feet of the third dwarf. At the same time, Baby Bobo went on the offense. I try to finish him off but I was slightly late, the Dark Dwarf had already begun his attack. His battle axe floated with crimson red flames, its the level 40 close-range skill – **【Flame Blade】**

“Boom!”

“397!”

There was a loud ringing sound on the Dawn Breastplate and I felt a surge of pain. the offensive capability of **【Flame Blade】** was definitely not just for show. Now I understand why this quest is ranked A.

Immediately retreating back a step, I send Baby Bobo up to attack, dealing the coup de grâce on the second Dark Dwarf. The next moment, weng weng, it flew towards the the third Dark Dwarf to intercept it but got attacked by **【Flame Blade】**. Ka cha, the war axe immediately tries to decapitate the head of the Overlord Bee, displaying a damage amount of 474.

Controlling both my pet and myself, while Baby Bobo retreated, I immediately rush forward to take his place and positioning my sword, I lower my body position and in an instant, a flash of white light surges from my feet, activating my chain combo attack, **【Strength of a Thousand Men】**!

A flurry of furious attacks lands on the body of the fourth Dark Dwarf, bringing out a whole string of damage numbers-

“231!”

“244!”

“217!”

“274!”

“809!”

.....

As expected, the Dark Dwarves are overwhelmingly powerful in their offensive power. However, their defense is extremely weak. With a 5 hit

combo, I was able to remove a big chunk of his health. With another attack from me and Baby Bobo, done! However, at that point, the third Dark Dwarf managed to free himself of my 【Binding Chains】 and charges towards me with yet another 【Flame Blade】.

“778!”

It was a critical hit!

I was stunned for an instant, I had 1 point of Hp left! I had 1176 Hp, how can this be!?

I immediately set my hands moving, 【Heal】!

“+600!”

That was alarmingly dangerous. I definitely should not underestimate the monsters here, the attack power of 【Flame Blade】 is pretty powerful and not something most players can endure. Next time, I must make sure to block it or dodge it. If I were to keep taking these attacks, I could be KO-ed within two hits.

While still in a panic, I coordinate with Baby Bobo to get rid of the last Dark Dwarf. Only when all of the dwarves are lying on the floor did I realize that my heart was thumping out of my chest. However, my experience bar brought me some comfort. After killing 4 of these Dark Dwarves, my experience points immediately increased by 1%. By my calculations, killing 400 of them would allow me to level up once. Looks like if I were to complete the quest by today, getting to level 38 wouldn't be impossible!

.....

Picking up the silver coins from the floor, I note that level 40 human-like monsters were actually quite rich. On average, each of these Dark Dwarves drops 3 silver coins each. After killing 2000 dwarves, I would have 60 gold coins. To be honest, even if I were here only to farm for money, it would be quite profitable!

While killing these Dark Dwarves, I browse through the forums and find many guilds or studios, whether big or small, recruiting new

members –

【Recruiting(Posted by: Mischievous Rock)】: Mischievous Rock studio is currently recruiting new personnel, only limited to mages, swordsman and players with strong solo-ing abilities. We provide lodging and food and only request for players to farm at least 5 gold coins each day. Wages are up for discussion!

【Recruiting(Posted by: Black Flame)】: In Ba Huang City, the Black Flame Guild is currently recruiting expert players that are above level 32. We will be organizing a hundred-man party to hunt down a level 50 gold-rank boss seven days later to obtain a gold-tier equipment as well as our guild's Guild Creation Card!

【Recruiting(Posted by: Wandering Wolf Spirit)】: The Victorious studio is currently recruiting new players. We require a high level healer possessing at least 30+ heal boosts. The job of the healer would be for treating the wounded and preparing the meals. The wage every month would be at least 5000RMB. We would prefer a female healer and if she has good looks, we can add in bonuses.

.....

I frowned, I can tell that this wasn't a poster to recruit new players, it was a poster to recruit a girlfriend. Quite creative...

“Pa ta!”

While deep in thoughts, suddenly, as a Dark Dwarf was killed, a round metal helmet drops. Picking it up from the grass, it was a green-rank equipment and had decent defense stats. It increases the equipper's strength by 14 but it doesn't have any additional effects. It could be considered as a middle-tier equip. In the 3 main cities in the China server, everyone seems to be more concerned with leveling speed and the top players in each of the main cities are going mad from training. When everyone is of high level, there would naturally be more good equipment. Currently, just counting Ba Huang city, there are already at least 20+ gold-rank equipment, 500+ silver-rank equipment and needless to say, the green-tier equipment would be countless. Especially more so, these

equipment are not actual end-game equipment, smart gamers would know not to spend too much capital on these equipment. Of course, this is excluding people who are remarkably rich like Tyrant of Western Chu who would guard my corpse for an entire night for a black iron equipment; that isn't what most people are able to do.

After killing for a while, I look at my current quest progress, it was already at 87/2000. In general, the Dark Dwarves gather in fours, thus the killing speed is actually quite fast, though it could prove to be quite dangerous as well. Fortunately, I possess a LV-4【Heal】, which is equivalent to having a high level healer by my side. Also, the damage output from Baby Bobo is also quite high, otherwise I really wouldn't be able to complete this quest.

Time passes quickly and soon, it's already 4PM. My quest progress was at 741/2000 and I have already reached level 36 with 74% experience. My leveling pace was quite rapid, far beyond my calculations. I estimate that by the end of today, I can probably reach level 38 or perhaps, if Dalin was generous and gave me good rewards, I can reach level 39!

In my bag, there are 10+ black iron equipment, seven to eight green-tier equipment and five bronze equipment. My 29 charm provided me with rather abundant loots and this mission on the frontlines will definitely reward me with even more charm. I could already imagine, after completing this mission, my strength will rise rapidly! But of course, what I still value most now is still reaching level 40, the two new skills 【Ice Blade】 and 【Swordsmanship Specialization】 are simply too powerful!

.....

Accompanying the two beauties for dinner, I didn't even bother to chat with them, I rushed through my meal and went back online!

All the way until 10PM at night, I kept hammering away at my quest and finally I reached my target of 2000/2000. My level is at 38 with 52% experience, it's still a long way from reaching level 39 but, what was most exciting is that for the first time, in a very rare case, I'm the top 10 players list in Ba Huang City!

- 1、Yan Zhao Warrior Level 40 Job: Swordsman
- 2、Jian Feng Han Level 39 Job: Swordsman
- 3、General Li Mu Level 39 Job: Swordsman
- 4、Yue Qing Qian Level 39 Job: Assassin
- 5、General Bai Qi Level 39 Job: Berserker
- 6、Yue Wei Liang Level 39 Job: Assassin
- 7、Soaring Dragon Level 38 Job: Mage
- 8、General Wang Jian Level 38 Job: Swordsman
- 9、Fierce Tiger Level 38 Job: Berserker
- 10、Xiao Yao Zi Zai Level 38 Job: Scavenger of Dragon City

.....

On the top players rank board in Ba Huang City, the most magnificent person has finally appeared. Although he's currently lagging behind in the tenth place, at least he is now on the board and on top of that, my popularity in Ba Huang City is not too bad. In any case, I'm the man became famous a few days ago after being hunted down by the Wrath of Heroes and yet still coming out alive. A person who's able to achieve that must be exceptional!

Tightly clinging onto my Jade City Sword, I looked towards the front, the Dark Dwarves' camp that has been largely cleared by me. Moving forward anymore would bring me a blood-red coloured tent on top of a large rock. By the side of the tent, there are two dwarves who are holding metal swords. There's no doubt that the person in the tent must be one of the leaders behind the Dark Dwarves!

Yup, the quest requires me to kill him!

Bringing Baby Bobo along, I step on the green rock with my Silver Locked Battle Boots and rush forward. After getting my health back to full, Baby Bobo lures the two guards towards me. Both of them were level 42 guards, but currently, I've already reached level 38, the difference in

our levels is a mere 4, thus I don't feel much pressure facing them both. Furthermore, Baby Bobo is also level 38, and his stings are sharper than ever!

In a dizzying confusion, the two guards fell to the ground dead and looking at the faint light in the tent, I grabbed my long sword tightly. Hehe. it's time for a one-on-one!

.....

“Shua!”

My blade fiercely cuts through the cloth of the tent. In the night, the interiors of the tent felt warm but the scene that appeared before left me shocked –

On the bed, there were two female, both in their twenties, being bounded there with their arms tied behind their backs. Their arms were filled with blood red wounds. Both of them are wearing blouses and by their side, there are two magic staffs, indicating that they are probably either mages or healers. Their mouths were stuffed with cotton and upon seeing me, they began to shout agitatedly.

.....

My heart sunk for a moment, I was completely speechless. Why are there human women in this tent, could they be captured?

Moving forward, I stretch my hand and remove the cotton from the two female NPC's mouth, and surprisingly, they kept their cool. Looking at the signet on my arm, one of them says, “I really didn't expect it, to think that there would actually be brave souls coming from Ba Huang City to save us!”

I ask, “Who are you?”

The other lady replies, “We are rangers from Ba Huang City and we were under orders to impart magical skills and healing techniques to the children from the surrounding villages. However, we didn't expect that we would get lost and ended up getting captured by this bunch of despicable Dark Dwarves in the Fire Stone Canyon.”

“Hurry...” The woman on the left perks her ears and says with an anxious tone, “That demon is coming back. You... you better leave quickly, otherwise he would slaughter you!”

“What demon?”

I hold my sword in front my chest and while looking outside, laugh, “Watch as I get rid of that demon...”

Chapter 72: Killing His Highness

“Shua!”

With a flash of the Jade City Sword, the ropes binding the two ladies are severed and fall to the ground. In the game, my perception of distance is pretty accurate.

The two ladies immediately go into action, each of them grabbing their staffs. When one of the ladies grabs her staff, the tip of her staff morphs into a shape of a medicine pot. Indeed, she’s a healer, there is finally hope!

.....

“Hua!”

The curtains of the tent are forcefully pulled apart. A man with a black skin tone, carrying a war axe, walks in. Jie jie, without even looking, he laughs and says, “And here I was wondering who it was that dared to enter my tent, and it turns out to be nothing more than a timid little mouse! You two beauties over there; your boss has finally returned. Now we can finally get started...”

I look at the two beautiful NPCs, the clothes on their body are torn apart and their skin is bruised. Then I count with my fingers. I’ve been grinding here for ten hours, and in ten hours, he was actually unable to dominate two women, what kind of efficiency is this!?

Holding my sword in front of my chest, while Baby Bobo dances around my shoulders, I take a closer look. The burly dwarf leader who just walked in is indeed different from the rest. He is fully dressed in shining golden armor and his long beard, perhaps afraid that it might shed, is held in place by gold band. In short, the dwarf in front of me must be some kind of royalty within the Dark Dwarves tribe. Looking at his name, it is indeed as I expected –

【Prince of Dark Dwarves – Ming Jie】(Gold-rank Boss)

Level: 43

Attack: 750-880

Defense: 700

HP: 400000

Abilities: **【Heavy Strike】【Flame Blade】【Night Dance of the Axes】**

Description: Ming Jie, a prince of the Dark Dwarves in the Far East, is the absolute king of the Dark Dwarves. Ming Jie is brutal and lustful nature and has a special interest towards female humans and night elves. According to legend, in the mountain caves of Prince Ming Jie, there are more than 100 beautiful moon elves hidden...

.....

Looking at the description, I shout with indignation, "You beast!"

Ming Jie also starts roaring. Holding war axes in both of his hands, he shouts, "Gah! Damn brat, where did you pop up from? To actually dare to steal away my women, prepare to go to hell!"

With a flick of my arms, the Jade City Sword carves out a flower in the air and at the same time, the golden signet on my arm emits a faint light, and on my shoulders, a line of clear words can be seen – 10th Rank in Ba Huang City!

Behind me, the beautiful healer NPC looks at my back and says, "Youngster, you can put your heart at ease and focus on the fight, I will use recovery magic to soothe your wounded body..."

From the looks of it, I will be able to get healed by the NPC. Good, now my odds of beating him are much higher!

"Shua..."

Stepping out, I make a preemptive strike. With a flash of my blade, the mark of a flower appears at the boss's neck with fresh blood gushing out from the wound. The attack reduces the boss of 247 of his health points; the defense of this boss is really pretty impressive. Just a little less offensive power and I wouldn't be able to break his defense to deal significant damage. In the next instant, I get into the position of a sword

stance and three rays of hexagram light appear on my blade. Pah pah pah, light emits from my sword as I do a combo slash on the boss.

“221!”

“198!”

“207!”

My attacks completely enrage the prince of the Dark Dwarves. He roars and brandishes his war axes, cutting downwards. Crimson red flames appear after his axes, indicating the usage of his level 40 skill – **【Flame Blade】**!

I hastily retreat and try to dodge by moving out of the axe’s trajectory. But, due to my agility being much lower than the boss, there is an intense pain on the back of my shoulders and with the downward cut of the axe, I am almost beheaded–

“679!”

Looking at those damage numbers, my soul goes into a frenzy, I can feel my heart breaking apart. If the boss attacks me once more, I would most certainly be KO-ed. Waving my arms around, the light of recovery appears on my sword and with a glow of light on me, I recover 600 health points. At the same time, I punch the ground.

“Peng!”

A long metal chain emerges from the ground and entangles around the feet of Ming Jie. A LV-4 Binding Chain lasts for only 2.1 seconds against Ming Jie due to the natural resistance of boss-tier monsters; otherwise it would last for at least 3 seconds.

Baby Bobo begins an attacking frenzy and continuously stings the boss. At the same time, I swiftly move to the right side of the boss. A white aura emanates from beneath from my feet, and I activate**【Strength of a Thousand Men】**. A flurry of a five combo hit slashes at the boss in a timeframe of 1.2 seconds. However, the fourth hit doesn’t manage to break the boss’s defense. As for the final strike, **【Wind Blade】**, it only deals 409 damage. But it can’t be considered too bad, because no matter

what, the monster in front of me is a gold-tier boss.

After 2.1 seconds pass, Prince Ming Jie roars and once again, lifts his war axe and does a 【Heavy Strike】 against Baby Bobo!

“709!”

Baby Bobo trembles. Fortunately, Baby Bobo is already at level 38 and his health has risen considerably. Otherwise, it would probably be a one hit KO!

I start to panic and immediately move Baby Bobo backwards while I move myself up to take its place. Pah pah, with a stab and a slash from the Jade City Sword, I remove 400 health points from the boss, angering the Dark Dwarf once again. Holding the war axe, he does a horizontal sweep, causing my health to drop rapidly. Fortunately, the beautiful healer behind me is continuously waving her staff and casting one 【Heal】 after another, recovering my health points by 750 each time.

However, the boss’s attacks continue furiously, and in the blink of an eye, I am still unable to hold my ground.

“Peng!”

The light on the war axe shines brightly and in an instant, the small tent breaks apart. The moonlight scatters on all of our bodies.

“Go to hell!”

Prince Ming Jie, stomping on the rock, continues his flurry of attacks!

“Keng!”

“398!”

With his blows, he knocks back my Jade City Sword and at the same time, deals out high damage. I also notice that whenever the boss does a horizontal sweep, his war axe always glows with a crimson red aura, it seems like his main method of attacking is a horizontal sweep. Maybe that’s the reason why he keeps dealing out horizontal sweeps, causing my health to barely upkeep with his damage output.

What’s worse is that I have been paying attention to the mana bar of

the healer and the longest she can sustain the healings is around 5 minutes or so. If this goes on, once her mana bar drops to zero, I will surely be killed.

As for the mage, she has been consistently casting 【Icicle Spell】s to control Ming Jie's attacking speed and movement speed; otherwise I would probably have been dead long ago.

“Shua!”

“+600!”

After self-healing myself for 600 health points, I look around at my surroundings and while holding my sword, I retreat quickly. Behind me is a narrow pass between the mountains which is about a meter wide. Baiting him there, I decide that it was there that I shall exterminate this level 43 gold-tier boss!

“Darn brat, I shall break all your tendons and skin you alive, and you will feel what hell on earth means!”

Prince Ming Jie, carrying his war axe, rushes into the corridor and carries on with his usual horizontal sweeping attack pattern. However, the one meter long war axe immediately clashes into the mountains at both sides causing sparks to fly everywhere. Due to the lack of space, the war axe is unable to showcase its true prowess, causing his offensive power to take a huge dip, dishing out damage less than 200 with each strike. His methods of attacking with the war axe are either a vertically downwards cut or a horizontal sweep whereas with my Jade City Sword, my greatest expertise lies in stabbing, which also happens to deal the most damage. With the tides turning, my healing gradually starts keeping up with the rate I was losing my health points. To add on, Baby Bobo is flying around and from time to time and deals an excruciating blow to Ming Jie!

Very soon, I begin to see hope in killing this level 43 boss. Behind the corridor, the two NPC ladies also catch up and the pretty healer begins to heal me using 【Therapy】. It is the situation I want to see, her being able to control her mana output.

“Damn it. Go to hell, all of you!”

When Ming Jie’s life has only around 10% of his health left, he suddenly lowers his body posture, and his body begins to be surrounded by a dense and dark smoke. He is about to use his final technique – 【Night Dance of the Axes】

“Peng peng peng...”

The edge of his axe brakes apart the mountain rocks at the side. Prince Ming Jie looks like a black rock rolling towards me.

I don’t dare to let down my guard and immediately place the long sword horizontally in front my chest, entering a defensive state!

“Keng keng keng...”

As the edge of the axe clashes with the blade, it sparks off a series of sparks. It is a way of fighting that places one’s life on the line. The damage numbers continuously appear, giving me no chance to heal myself –

“298!”

“301!”

“297!”

“344!”

.....

In an instant, my health reaches rock bottom and in the next moment, I appear in a nearby grave as a wandering soul. Damn it, I was actually killed like that?!

But within the second that I am killed, a system notice appears in front of my eyes –

“Di!”

Battle Notice: Healer Katarina used 【Revive】, would you like to revive now?

.....

Revive?! A level 40 healer skill!

I immediately choose to revive and in a flash of light, I appear at the spot where I died with 50% health and mana. Raising my hands, I use **【Heal】** and at the next moment, I am at full health once again. At the same, a white aura emanates from beneath my feet and I immediately activate **【Strength of a Thousand Men】** and do a combo hit on the back of the boss!

With only 10% health remaining, the boss has already entered a dying state, its roar gradually get softer and softer. At the same time, being stuck in this corridor, it is unable to use its full power. On top of that, the **【Night Dance of the Axes】** has a cooldown time of at least 5 minutes and 5 minutes is sufficient for me to remove that remaining 10% health from him!

The boss's life bar gradually gets shorter and shorter, my heart is about to leap out of my throat. Looking at my arm, the "10th Rank in Ba Huang City" signet on my arm has already disappeared. Damn it, losing one level has caused me to go out of the ranking.

With one slash after another, a sense of satisfaction builds up within my heart. A 43 gold-tier boss, I wonder what treasures this Dark Dwarf Prince would drop for me.

The mystery is unraveled in two minutes. Along with a fierce blow from my **【Wind Blade】**, Prince Ming Jie cries in agony, keng, the war axe in his hands brakes into two parts and he kneels on the floor, his eyes filling with indignation, "Brat, if you kill me, my father will definitely lead his great army to seek revenge for me. Just wait and see..."

"Hua la la..."

At the moment at the boss dies, a few pieces of equipment drop. At the same time, I level back up to level 38, the "10th Rank in Ba Huang City" signet reappears on my shoulders. How magnificent!

Silently moving forward to see the items that Ming Jie drops, I see a crimson red necklace which resembles the movements of a burning flame and a shield that seems to be molded by cold metal. He also drops 10+

gold coins together with a mysterious gemstone. The gemstone is clear without any flaws and shines brightly. Although I have no idea what type of item it is, an item dropped by a gold-tier boss can't possibly be anything bad!

Chapter 73: Shield of the Broken Army

I hold the necklace in my hand; its end was shaped like a battle axe. The necklace has a blood-red glow and killing intent saturates the air. At the same time scorching energy seeps into my palm. Mm, this necklace isn't a bad item or else it wouldn't have such a dense feeling!

I wave my hand and the stats of the necklace appear in front of me. Indeed they don't disappoint—

【Necklace of the Broken Army】(Gold-Tier Equipment)

Strength: +27

Endurance: +25

Additional: Increases defense by 70 points

Level Requirement: 38

.....

Holding this Necklace of the Broken Army I stare at it blankly for 10 seconds. Finally, I remember to breathe. 27 strength and 25 endurance, these are all stats that a swordsman needs! Those 70 points of defense are also very valuable. It can raise my defense to a whole new level! More importantly, 70 points of defense would take at least 60 points in toughness (defense) to reach that. So the real value in this necklace is much more than the 27 strength and 25 endurance!

With a pop the necklace appears on my neck and replaces the original Necklace of Bravery. The equipment that the General Family “gifted” me has reached its end...

【Xiao Yao Zi Zai】(Scavenger of Dragon City)

Level: 38

Attack: 639-852

Defense: 675

HP: 1356

MP: 470

Charm: 29

.....

The original necklace increased maximum HP by 50 points, but the new Necklace of the Broken Army increases 25 endurance, which means that my maximum HP increased by 200 points, so obviously it's way superior. In addition to those 70 points of defense, my tenacity has increased significantly! With my 675 points of defense I can match the average monks and knights.

Why? First of all my defense equipment is fairly good. My Elite Steel Wrist Guards and Silver Locked Battle Boots are both silver-rank equipment and Dawn's Chestplate is a gold-rank equipment. With this Necklace of the Broken Army, all my defensive equipment are quite high class. With my strong attack and healing skills, my entire combat ability is at least in the top 10 in Ba Huang City. Of course if you add battle tactics, control, etc., I might not reach the top 100. I am very clear about that. I'm fairly new to these VR games and if I meet anyone on the leaderboard, killing any of them will take quite a bit of work.

I continue going through my loot. Besides the necklace, the dark prince also dropped a shield for me. I struggle to raise the huge black shield. With a shake of my arms the stats appear in front of my eyes. Damn, nice!

【Shield of the Broken Army】 (Gold-rank Equipment)

Defense: 170

Strength: +25

Endurance: +20

Additional: Increases defense by 0.9%

Level Requirement: 38

.....

The moment I laid my eyes on the stats of this shield, I froze. 170 points

of defense! Damn, who in this world can take more hits than knights or monks? Out of the 9 main classes, only monks and knights can equip this shield and the defenses on a shield are way more than chest plates of the same level! By this alone, the meat tank positions of the two classes are untouchable.

I put away the shield and I say no more. Time to get rich. None of my close friends need this shield, so I should sell it. A gold-rank shield will undoubtedly fetch a high price!

I continue and gather up the gold coins on the ground before finally looking at that faint purple gem. I pick it up and go silent—

【Soul Gem】: Strengthens weapons or defensive equipment to improve the quality of the equipment!

.....

Soul Gem?!

I pick up this purple rock and think for a while. Then I open the strengthening window and decide to put my sword in it along with the warm Soul Gem. Indeed the percentage of strengthening appeared — 90%!

Whatever, I'll strengthen it first and then figure it out later. I don't have any good defensive equipment to strengthen anyways!

After pressing "Yes" and with a ding...

System Notification: Congratulations! Your item [Jade City Sword] has been strengthened! Also, since you are the first player to successfully strengthen an equipment, charm +2!

.....

Good, I have 31 points of charm now, but that's not the important part. What does my sword look like after it has been strengthened?!

I quickly open up my bag and hold the sword. I re-equip it and scan over it. The stats really did change—

【Jade City Sword +1】(Gold-rank Equipment)

Attack: 210-300(+21-30)

.....

Hehe, looking at the stats with +1, it raises 10% of the attack damage?!

Looking at the stats it really did add 21-30 attack damage. Hehe, looking at the effects of strengthening, soul gems seem pretty good. But I'm the first player to strengthen an equipment, so perhaps it was a waste to use it on my sword...

Whatever, I'll return first and hand in the mission!

I say my goodbyes to the two NPCs and sadly I don't have any method of communication or else I would leave my Skype or something with them. The two are almost in tears while watching me leave and seem to not want to separate. I almost feel like they want to say something like, "I'm afraid that we won't be able to meet again. So I have no other request, but only beg that I can sleep with you for one night, so I can understand and ease your pain and suffering..."

Seeing as those two almost want to cry I quickly take my sword and leave. In the desolate basin I have the prince's head in one hand. This is proof of my work!

I rush straight to the Dragon City and find Beast Tamer Dalin carving away at a huge log with a small knife to create a fence to block out deer. This really moves my heart because on one side he needs to hunt and collect food for the winter and on the other side he needs to collect manure. Even the defense work for Dragon City is done by him!

I walk up to him and say, "Instructor, you work way too hard. Let other people do these small tasks..."

"Other people?"

He sneers at me, pats my shoulders, and says, "Boy, you don't understand. Although there are plenty of talented people in Dragon City, there aren't many useful ones. There are 100 soldiers, 200 servants, and adding up the supply teams, there are less than 1000 people stationed in Dragon City! If I don't do these tasks then I'm afraid no one else would."

I nod and take out the bounty post, “Instructor, I already finished the mission and defeated the Dark Dwarves. Also I brought you this...”

With a bang the head of the prince rolls to Dalin’s feet. Dalin seems like he got electrocuted and looks at me with a shocked expression, “This...This is the Dark Dwarves’ highness...Ming Jie! Gods! What have you done boy? You killed Ming Jie?!”

“Mm, is there a problem?”

“No, nothing. Perhaps this is better. Maybe killing Ming Jie is a good thing. It’ll allow the Dark Dwarves to continue hiding in some faraway place and not invade our borders. Or maybe it’s a bad thing...Whatever, it doesn’t matter. Boy, you completed a near impossible mission. Come, this fame and rewards belong to you...”

Ding!

System Notification: Congratulations! You finished an A-rank mission【Hunting Dark Dwarves】, and receive 50000 experience points, 100 gold coins, and 3 charm. Your fame in Dragon City has also increased. Also you receive reward item 【Ice Fire Cloak】!

With a ding, I level up to 39!

.....

My luck is pretty good and I got an equipment reward! I immediately open my bag and see the cloak lying in the corner of the bag. It has an icy color on one side and a fiery color on the other.

【Ice Fire Cloak】 (Gold-rank Equipment)

Defense: 150

Strength: +28

Endurance: +24

Additional: Increases defense by 50 points

Level Requirement: 39

.....

Looking at the stats I almost faint. This is godly! This is absolutely godly! As a cloak it brings 150 points of defense to the table! Not only that, it still increases defense by another 50 points and even adds an extra 52 points of strength and endurance!

Without hesitation, I take out the cloak and immediately wear it. Instantly I feel both warm and cold but it feels really nice as they seep into my body. My defense increased explosively once again—

【Xiao Yao Zi Zai】 (Scavenger of Dragon City)

Level: 39

Attack: 689-916

Defense: 845

HP: 1558

MP: 480

Charm: 34

.....

My attack, defense, and HP are all insanely strong. I am absolutely sure that my stats have at least surpassed Yan Zhao and maybe it even reached Feng Han's level. Of course I'm just talking about stats. Let's not talk about the other things...

Looking at these stats happily. I look at the Necklace of Bravery and the Shield of the Broken Army in my bag. I think it's time to return to Ba Huang City. I'll sell these two equipment and convert them into gold coins. Then I'll convert the gold coins into cash. In the early stages of the game, if I can earn money then I'll earn them!

I take out a city return scroll and use it.

Whoosh!

I appear in the northern entrance of Ba Huang City because my city return scroll is bought from the stores in the northern plaza.

I immediately set up shop at the first available space I find. I put Shield

of the Broken Army and Necklace of Bravery up and yell at the top of my lungs, “Selling high-class equipment!! Level 38 gold-ranked shield, 170 points of defense and adds strength on top of that. Don’t miss out on this sale! There’s also a necklace that adds 20 strength. Anyone who wants it, come and give me a price!”

Good items don’t have a bad market! Quickly, my stall fills with players. The Necklace of Bravery was sold for 11 gold coins. That item is already past its prime and there aren’t a lot of players who are willing to buy that. But the stats on the Shield of the Broken Army are incredible and under the short amount of time since I set up shop, no one gave me a fair price that I wanted.

After a good 10 minutes, finally an extremely well equipped player steps into my view. I know him! Guild master of [Vanguard]—Jian Feng Han!

“Xiao Yao Zi Zai?!”

Feng Han saw my ID and my golden leaderboard crest on my shoulder. He frowns, “I never would have thought that you would be the one selling the #1 shield in Ba Huang City!”

I smile, “Are you interested in the shield?”

He nods, “Yep! How much?”

“Give me a price!”

“That’s...”

Behind Feng Han I see a chain-mail wearing player. ID: Fushen Moren, level 38 monk. He’s holding a bronze-tier shield and says, “Boss, that’s too wasteful. I don’t need that high-leveled shield...”

Feng Han shakes his head and laughs, “Say no more, I’ll buy it!”

After saying that Feng Han looks towards me, “Brother Zi Zai, how about this. I’ll give 500 gold coins for this shield.”

“500 gold?” I frown, “That’s too little isn’t it?”

“It’s not worth a lot of money for equipment like that...” Feng Han tries to start a psychological war.

I smile and spread my arms, “We know each other well, so don’t try any tricks. When everyone rises to level 40 and enter high leveled areas on the map this is pretty much essential. Especially, if you want to go and kill level 50 gold-rank and above bosses to get the Guild Creation Tablet. This shield is one of the best to have. Also if [Vanguard] doesn’t want it, then I’m sure [Flying Dragons] or [Prague] would be very interested in it. I’m sure that you don’t want [Prague] to be first to get the tablet right?”

Fang Han widens his eyes, clenches his fists, and says, “1000 gold coins!”

“Deal!”

Chapter 74: Duels in the Dueling Ring

I knew that Feng Han is determined to buy this shield because anyone knows that whoever has the shield can create a top-class tank and have a much easier time against a level 50+ gold-tier boss. In a boss fight, strong monks and knights are irreplaceable. So whoever can create a strong meat shield will have a greater chance at getting the Guild Creation Tablet!

To be able to create the first guild, the guild won't possibly be weak. With a wave and a shout the top-class players of Ba Huang City would rush to join them. Feng Han knows this very clearly in his heart.

.....

"Xiao Yao Zi Zai, wait a few minutes for me." Feng Han shoots a smile at me, "I'm going to go and collect the gold coins. As you know 1000 gold isn't a small number. Wait a few minutes for me please..."

I nod, "Mm, no problem."

Before long, a total of 7 players came and traded with Feng Han. After finishing the trades, Feng Han turns around and sends me a trade request. I accept and open the trading window. He put in 1000 gold coins, and I put the Shield of the Broken Army in. Both of us confirm the trade and it's a done deal!

Pop!

A heavy bag of coins lands in my hand, 1000 gold coins!

I couldn't help but be excited and I immediately put the 1000 gold coins in the online trading center. With a ratio of 1:10 I can earn a good 10 thousand Yuan (~\$1600). I'll just sell all the gold in one go. Currently most guilds are collecting high-level potions, equipment, skill books, etc. and the amount of money they spend on those things is unaccountable. So it is not rare for players to buy 1000 gold in one go.

"Okay, thanks..."

After receiving the shield, Feng Han smiles at me and says, "Xiao Yao Zi

Zai, you are a pretty interesting person. Would you like to join [Vanguard]?”

I shake my head, “Thanks for the offer, but I prefer going solo.”

“That’s alright; I’ll see you soon then!”

Feng Han spins around and gives the shield to the monk called “Fushen Moren”. He couldn’t contain his excitement as he equipped the shield and says, “Thank you boss!”

“We’re family! Just keep on grinding while we prepare to attack a level 50+ boss. You can repay me with hard work!”

“Understood!”

.....

Tick!

A message comes from Qing Qian, “Xiao Yao, you sold off the Shield of the Broken Army?”

“Mm, Feng Han bought it. Your information network is quite effective...”

“We have scouts reporting in.” Qing Qing opens up a call and laughs, “Yan Zhao saw that the shield was sold to [Vanguard] and he’s hitting his leg in anger. He says that you should have contacted [Prague] first and given priority to [Prague].”

I purse my lips and ask, “He really said that? He kicked you out of [Prague] because of me, and then later on he killed me. Doing all those things, does he really think I would give priority to [Prague]? Qing Qian, you can tell Yan Zhao clearly, that I swear, sooner or later, I will defeat him personally!”

“Eh, Xiao Yao, are you sure about that?”

“Mm, yep.”

“That’s fine, but why?”

“Because Yan Zhao caused trouble for you and you’re my friend. So I gotta return the favour.”

“But I really don’t want you and Yan Zhao to fight...”

“Don’t worry, I only want to win in a fight and not to eliminate [Prague] ...And I only have myself, it would be impossible for me to go against a huge guild like [Prague].”

“Okay, then Xiao Yao, keep on level grinding, I...”

In the chat box Qing Qian’s face suddenly goes red, “I will...wait for you...”

I smile, “Wait for me for what?”

Qing Qian bites down on her lips and seemingly made a huge decision and says, “I’ll wait until you get stronger and take me away from [Prague] ...”

I go silent for a few seconds and smile, “Mm, I’ll try my best!”

.....

I sold a few other items and got rid of the bronze and green equipment and earned a few more gold coins. I suddenly feel like a skilled player because of the high-leveled equipment I was selling? Of course it’s related to my 30+ charm; the higher the charm, the better my luck is.

I kept the stall going until 10 o’clock at night and hear anything from Wan Er. Since I have nothing more to do, I open my friend’s list and see Cang Tong’s face. I click on it and I find out she’s already level 41, so I send a message, “Wan Er, have you gone insane with level grinding? Don’t you want to have dinner?”

Wan Er replies after a few seconds, “I’m killing a boss with Cheng Yue. Talk to me in 10 minutes!”

“Okay...”

.....

After selling all my items I take my sword and wander around the plaza. While wandering, I see a huge crowd rush towards an entrance. It seems they’re not leaving to level grind, but rather there’s something interesting there. So I follow the crowd as well.

Outside of the Ba Huang City's entrance in the forest plains, there are players crowded. Even the Vampire Bats were annihilated and in the middle of the plains a player is standing there in full chainmail armor holding a battle axe. He seems like he's around 27 years or so and his face is full of killing intent. On his shoulder there's an emblem that says "Ba Huang City's #7 player" and hovering over his head is a line of words—

ID: Fierce Tiger LV-40 Silver Berserker

.....

Damn it's a berserker that has been promoted two times!

Fierce Tiger stands in the middle of the crowd and puts his battle axe on his shoulder laughing, "My friends in Ba Huang City. I am Fierce Tiger, a core member of the [Flying Dragons] guild. Today I set up a small dueling ring here, so we can have a friendly duel and form friendships. Anyone can try this out and you are all welcome to join [Flying Dragons]. I will give 100 gold coins to whoever can defeat me. That's all, anyone who wants to try this out just speak up!"

Instantly the crowd bursts like a frying pan—

"Ah, this is the Fierce Tiger of the leaderboard. Damn setting up a dueling ring here. Isn't it a bit crazy?"

"Obviously this is for recruiting new members in [Flying Dragon]!"

"If he loses then that's 100 gold coins right there!"

"Gods...100 gold coins is 1000 Yuan! That's a week's worth of wages! Even if you lose there's no need to be ashamed since the opponent is a player on the leaderboard!"

.....

Before long a mage walks up while holding a staff. It's a level 37 mage and he says, "Then I'll give it a try. If I win you will really give me 100 gold coins right?"

Fierce Tiger thumps his chest and says, "Don't worry, a man keeps his promises!"

“Good!”

The battle starts. The mage starts waving his staff and he starts moving back while casting [Icicle]. Tiger raises his axe and he plows through the icicles. The mage has good control. He casts [Chilling Wind] and [Rock Spikes]. Before half a minute, Tiger’s HP is near empty and he quickly drinks a health potion.

When everyone thought that Tiger was going to die, he raises his axe and uses [Fire Axe] and with a whoosh he sweeps over the mage’s body! He sacrificed nearly his entire HP for a chance to attack!

“864!”

Everyone stares at it blankly, an instant kill!

.....

The mage revives with full HP without any losses and looks a bit ashamed, “The leaderboard players really are different, very strong very strong...”

Fierce Tiger raises his battle axe and laughs, “Anyone else?”

Within the crowd a level 36 swordsman holds his longsword and walks out smiling, “Let me try!”

Berserker VS Swordsman, a battle between two heavy armored classes!

.....

Ding!

With the sharp sound of casting [Combo], sparks appear on Tiger’s chest. LV 4 [Combo], showing off his ability—

“174!”

“149!”

“167!”

Sadly the attack of this level 36 swordsman is way too low and he can’t break through Tiger’s defense!

“Hehe, my turn!”

Tiger bellows and uses LV 4 [Rage] which increases attack by 8%. At the same time he raises his arms and violently strikes the chest of the little swordsman. Then he uses another ability, LV 4 [Penetration]: the next strike will ignore 20% of the target’s defense!

Whoosh...

Flames fly and it’s [Flame Axe], the skill you get from the second promotion of a Berserker!

Clang!

The axe sweeps by and the swordsman’s armor breaks along with a huge damage number—

“918!”

Quickly afterwards Tiger keeps up his momentum and uses another [Fire Axe], dealing 400 damage and killing the little swordsman!

.....

After two continuous rounds, Tiger holds his axe and stands there smiling, “Who else?”

Everyone is shocked and no one else volunteers.

At that time a clear voice rings, “A full-strength berserker is indeed strong and the weapon you’re holding is the level 32 gold-tier axe right? I’ll play with you...”

In the crowd, a player walks out and it’s no other then the monk holding the Shield of the Broken Army—Fushen Moren!

I’m confused. Although monks have high HP and defense, but they don’t have a lot of attack damage. How can he go against a full-strength berserker? Isn’t he disadvantaged?

.....

Fierce Tiger squints his eyes, looks at Fushen, and laughs, “Oh, it’s the chief monk of [Vanguard]! Good good, I’ll duel with you!”

Fushen raises his hands along with his staff smiling, “Then, excuse me...”

Tiger rapidly rushes towards him while raising his axe.

The corner of Fushen’s mouth rise and he rapidly backs away. At the same time he raises his arms and casts level 4 [Taunt]!

Instantly Tiger’s attack damage is lowered by 8%. At the moment before his axe falls on the monk’s head, Fushen casts other buffs like [Regen], [Golden Defense]. The effect of [Golden Defense] is to raises defense by 12%! It’s not something that you can overlook!

Clang!

The battle axe falls on his helmet and the clang between gold and stone can be heard. A damage number of 117 appears. [Fire Axe] only did that much damage!

“Impossible!” Tiger seems shocked and with a wave of his hand he calls out his pet. In the hexagram an Ice Rat appears next to him. Mm smart, magic-based pets can ignore heavy armor defense. It’s the arch nemesis of heavy armor classes!

Chapter 75: Battle of the Gold Coins

Inside the dueling ring were core players from [Vanguard] and [Flying Dragon]. Although it was said to be just a sparring match, tensions from the two guilds could still be felt by the audience.

Whoosh!

An ice spear stabs directly into Fushen Moren's shoulders, dealing 448 damage. Although the defense of those in the monk class is exceptional, their resistance against magic is slightly lacking. Fortunately, Fushen Moren added 5 stat points into endurance every level, causing his health points to reach a staggering 2500, making it impossible for him to be killed in an instant.

"Damn..."

Looking at the powerful attacks from the Ice Rat, Fushen Moren began to feel anxious and charges forward with his staff. Raising his staff up high, with a pah, he smashes his staff onto the head of the Ice Rat, dealing 229 damage. That wasn't all, with a flick of his hand, a Killer Bee flies out with incredible speed. At the same time, a golden hexagram appears on its stinger and with a 4 hit combo, it stings the Ice Rat!

Squeal...

The Ice Rat cries in pain and slumps to the ground, dying just like that. The Ice Rat has high magic growth, enabling it to dish out high damage, but in exchange for that, its defense and health were way below average!

Fierce Tiger looks at the carnage of his pet for a moment, then grabbing his battle axe; he makes use of the opportunity to launch an attack. Traversing along the movement of the blade were crimson red flames. [Burning Axe], his level 40, second promotion skill!

Bang!

"1278!"

It was a fatal blow and the killer bee was seemingly cut into two halves. Despite being a level 38 pet, it was unable to take a single hit from Fierce

Tiger. It wasn't too surprising though, as berserkers had the title of possessing the greatest brute strength and damage amongst the 9 main classes!

.....

Fushen Moren panicked. Losing his pet, he could only attack with his staff now. What makes things worse was that with each smash of his staff, he could only deal 100+ damage on his opponents.

“Die!”

Fierce Tiger seemed to have gone into a frenzy and bashes his axe consecutively on Fushen Moren's Shield of the Broken Army. Damage numbers were popping up left and right—

“109!”

“97!”

“114!”

Fierce Tiger looks in shock and couldn't help but mumble under his breath, “Damn it, just how much defense does he have? I have an attack of 872, and yet I'm unable to break his defense?”

Fushen Moren retreats a few steps and propping up his Shield of the Broken Army, he smiles, “1045 defense. I'm very sorry but I am a monk who adds 5 defense each level, with that mere 872 attack of yours, you can just go and take a break!”

Fierce Tiger clenched his teeth and continued to his flurry of attacks with his battle axe. Once the 6 seconds cooldown time is over, he immediately roars and activates his other level 40 skill, [Burning Axe]!

Bang!

“317!”

As expected, with [Burning Axe]'s greater offensive ability, he was able to break Fushen Moren's defense.

“Sha sha sha...”

Fushen Moren took a couple of steps back, and his face flashed with confusion, “Damn it, are the second advancement skills really that much more powerful?!”

Following right after, he continues to attack Fierce Tiger with his staff. When the health points of Fierce Tiger dropped to around 400 points, he drank a health potion and his health immediately recovered by 400 points. Once again, his axe began to flash with crimson flames.

Clang!

“588!”

Fushen Moren’s health bar immediately drops to near bottom and he unconsciously retreats, “Damn it, the monk class really has no offensive abilities, how am I supposed to fight like this...”

“Hah, then just obediently die here!”

Fierce Tiger was merciless; he raises his axe and cuts down on the head of the monk!

.....

Whoosh!

Light rose from the spot where Fushen Moren respawned. Even though he was weakly kneeling on the floor, his health points were back to full. He had indeed lost in that sparring match. Looking at the Shield of the Broken Army in his hands, he was unable to understand what just happened and mumbles, “Ha, so I really just lost like that...”

Fierce Tiger, holding his battle axe, stood arrogantly in the center of the battlefield. Hehe, he laughs, “Looks like the top monk in [Vanguard] has a pretty good defense, but he isn’t able to fight over a long period of time. I heard that your shield was bought not long ago by Jian Feng Han at an exorbitant price of 1000 gold coins. I wonder if this golden equipment is being wasted...”

In an instant, Fushen Moren’s face turned purple, but as his abilities were beneath Fierce Tiger’s, he could only clench his teeth and remain

quiet.

Fierce Tiger raises his eyebrows and continues to laugh, “My friends from Ba Huang City, is there still anyone who wants to pit their abilities against mine?”

The crowd fell silent. Everyone has seen the abilities of this Berserker who has been promoted, and who would be willing to lose their dignity in front of such a crowd? Probably even Fushen Moren regrets his actions, challenging Fierce Tiger by himself and losing, causing the reputation of [Vanguard] to take a blow.

.....

Right at this moment, a man carrying a sword stood out from the crowd and walked leisurely in front of Fierce Tiger, smiling, “Then, let me try sparring with you...”

Fierce Tiger shots a chilling look, “You... you are... Xiao Yao Zi Zai?!”

Of course, under this kind of situation, if I don’t fight him then who else would still be willing to fight him...

Looking at Fierce Tiger’s battle axe, I smile faintly, “Yup, that’s me. See, isn’t this proof?”

Pointing to my head, there was a line of small golden words below my name, showing the words “10th Rank in Ba Huang City”, identical to the golden mark above of Fierce Tiger.

Fierce Tiger grinned and says, “Fine. Actually I would also like to understand the prowess of the legendary number 1 close combat healer. Oh, I see you have changed your job. Hmph, that’s also fine, at least strangers won’t say that I am bullying others now. Xiao Yao Zi Zai, I didn’t challenge you, it’s you who challenged me of your own accord. If you are to lose, don’t say that I am taking advantage of my strength to bully others.”

I was stunned, “What do you mean by bullying others? I am only here to claim the 100 gold coins for myself. Do you think I would feel any accomplishment from beating you? You’re wrong; in fact, I don’t even

know you...”

“Screw you!”

Fierce Tiger clenches his fist and bubbles with unquenchable anger.

I secretly laugh. Getting taunted so easily, he indeed lives up to his title as the [Flying Dragon]’s most fierce and most simple-minded player!

I slowly remove my Jade City Sword from its sheath, and the crisp sound of the sword catches the attention of the crowd. At the same time, Turmoil Sword activates, boosting my attack damage by 10%. Going by my current attacking damage standards, my actual current upper limit of my attacking damage should be 1007!

“I heard that you have an extremely powerful pet, having 5 stars in its attack growth and an excellence rating of 97%?” Fierce Tiger looks arrogantly at me, his face filled with disdain.

I calmly laugh, “Fine, then let’s not use our pets and do a lv1 battle between players!”

“Just what I wanted!” Fierce Tiger smirks delightedly.

I then ask, “So, how should we fight? Should we do a Technique Fight or a Brute Fight?”

“What is a Technique Fight, and what is a Brute Fight?” Fierce Tiger asks with widened eyes.

I slowly explain, “Technique Fight is a fight in which within the time of one skill’s cooldown, you can attack me with three blows and I won’t retaliate. If I were to die, then I would admit defeat. After that, I would deal you three blows and if you die, then you will have to admit defeat. As for Brute Fight, it would be just like an ordinary fight; whoever stands in the end is the winner.”

Fierce Tiger takes a deep breath and says, “Fine, then let’s do a Technique Fight. But, who will go first?”

I smiled and extended my arms, gesturing him to go first, “You can go on the offensive first. I will give you the opportunity to attack me three

times. I can dodge and defend and we'll see whether you are able to cut me down."

"Fine!"

Fierce Tiger shakes his head proudly and carrying his war axes, laughs, "Xiao Yao Zi Zai, here I come!"

"Feel free!"

.....

Holding my sword vertically in front of my chest, I hold my ground. I slowly swung the Jade City Sword down to my side. Just my standing posture alone exudes power.

Fierce Tiger, holding his battle axe, rushes straight towards me. He suddenly twists his arms and did a sweeping attack with his battle axe. Rationally speaking, this attack is much harder to dodge as the range of attack is in the shape of a fan.

"Pah..."

With my left palm gently resting on the blade of the sword, I raise the Jade City Sword vertically on my right and used all the strength in my body to block my opponent's attack. To make things worse, this blow of Fierce Tiger's was a [Fire Axe]!

Clang!

Sparks flew and a large damage number appeared-

"279!"

This guy, his attacking abilities are really extraordinary!

A look of consternation appears briefly in Fierce Tiger's eyes, "What strong defensive capabilities!"

Stepping hard on the grass, he leaps to my right and did an uppercut with his axe; it was a [Penetration] attack!

However, I was looking at everything clearly and I slide my leg backwards!

“Miss!”

The Swordsman class has a high agility growth rate and this advantage was very apparent, shown by how easily I dodged his attack. However, the defense ignoring effect was still applied and with his next attack, he would be able to ignore 20% of my defense, making the next blow an extremely painful one!

Coming right after the second strike was the third strike, [Burning Axe], the most powerful killing technique after the 2nd job advancement!

I wasn't so presumptuous as to think that I would live through that easily, I raise my hands and using [Heal], I got myself to full health while at the same time, tried to avoid his attack. But, the enemy's battle axe, as though creating an invisible force field, suddenly made my movements very slow. This was a game restraint due to my level and techniques; I was unable to dodge the next attack!

Clang!

My shoulders felt a pain that seemed to dig into my heart. A large damage number appeared—

“1348!”

I stared in shock, [Penetration]+[Burning Axe]. It was indeed an ultimate chain combo killing technique of the Berserkers. That fatal blow almost got one hit KO-ed me. Fortunately, I obtained some equipment before and my total Health jumped to 1558, or else I might really end up kneeling there dead!

“Sha sha sha...”

My Silver Boots glided along the grass. I was knocked back almost a full 5 meters by the last [Burning Axe]. Looking embarrassed, Fierce Tiger opened his eyes widely, flabbergasted, “Damn it, you still won't die with this. I'll slaughter you!”

It's over, this guy was enraged, so he decided to ignore the rules and just kill me first...

.....

“Hua!”

Although it was a normal attack, the axe moved with great speed.

Slightly tilting my body, I dodged his attack. With another twist of my body, I managed to move behind him. Using the opportunity when he was dazed for a moment, I activate my combo!

Bangbangbang!

“357!”

“371!”

“328!”

In an instant, the Berserker who was at full force was dealt a heavy damage. Fierce Tiger’s face turns black, “Damn! What kind of attack power is that, the individual hits of [Combo] are dealing above 300?!”

Quickly gulping down a health potion, Fierce Tiger does a backwards sweep towards me.

Following his attack angle, I slid to his back once again and laughed beneath my breath. At the same time, a surge of white aura came from beneath my feet!

Looking at the animation of my attack, the crowd surrounding us was surprised; some of the pretty ladies even covered their small mouth and widened their round eyes, “God, that is... Isn’t that the starting animation for custom combo attacks? Xiao Yao Zi Zai possesses his own combo attack!”

[Strength of a Thousand Men]!

Pah pah pah, I began on a series of attacks, each landing on Fierce Tiger’s shoulders!

“279!”

“300!”

“264!”

Lowering my body posture, I ram into Fierce Tiger, knocking him back. Although his health points have already reached zero, his body was still there. Before dying, he still has to eat my final [Wind Blade]!

“Ka cha...”

The sword's edge tore apart his armor, and a large damage number burst out–

“877!”

The attack wasn't a fatal one so it was lower compared to attacks from Fierce Tiger. Fierce Tiger slumps to the floor, blood flowing non-stop from his body. He has lost the sparring match.

.....

Reappearing outside the dueling ring, Fierce Tiger lowers his battle axe and his original arrogant attitude disappeared. Staring dumbfoundedly at me, he lowers his voice and mummurs, “You... Just who are you?!”

Chapter 76: An Invitation from Vanguard

Looking at Fierce Tiger's stunned expression, I sheathed my sword and say lightly, "I am the man who is going to take away 100 gold coins from you!"

Stretching out my hand, I stare at him, "You said it yourself, the man who defeats you would get 100 gold coins as reward from you. Don't tell me that you intend to go back on your words, hurry up and give me the money..."

Fierce Tiger's face went dark. He probably never expected that the person who was able to defeat him would fuss so much over the 100 gold coins.

.....

Around 5 seconds later, Fierce Tiger stretches his hands into his inventory and takes out 100 gold coins, and throws them in my direction.

Cling!

Once I felt the heavy weight of the money reaching my hands, I was satisfied and turned around to leave.

Yet, at this moment, a man carrying a long sword stepped forth from the crowd and stretches his arms to block my way. With a smile on his face, he says, "Xiao Yao Zi Zai, I have something I would like to discuss with you!"

I look at him. It wasn't anyone else, but the leader of Vanguard – Jian Feng Han. Fushen Moren was beside him. Looks like after he lost, he went to find his leader so that they could regain back Vanguard's reputation, yet unexpectedly, I beat him to it and defeated Fierce Tiger.

Licking my lips which were dry due to the intense heat from the [Burning Axe], I laugh, "For Guild Leader Jian Feng Han to find me, what do you want to discuss with me?"

Jian Feng Han, crossing his arm in front of his chest, says, "This isn't a place for us to talk, come along with me..."

“Okay!”

In the Ba Huang City, there is not a single place which I dare not enter. Following Jian Feng Han, a crowd of stunned and speechless Ba Huang City gamers were left behind standing there. The fight they had just seen was exceedingly exciting, with the victor being decided in a split second!

.....

Five minutes later, 3 kilometers away from Ba Huang City, we arrived at the Pear Blossom Forest. It was a peaceful area filled with the chirping of the birds and the fragrance of the flowers. Its main resources are herbs and Killer Bees. Currently, as the Killer Bees are the lowest level yet highest damaging pet, most players gather here waiting for Killer Bees to respawn. Once a level 1 Killer Bee appears, it means that a fortune was about to be struck. A Killer Bee with an Excellence rating above 50% was worth at least 10 gold coins.

With pears all over the ground, I follow behind Jian Feng Han. Moving forward, quite a few players appeared in the Pear Blossom Forest, most of them have the title “Vanguard” in front of their names, making it evident that they were players under the Vanguard guild. Jian Feng Han, carrying his long sword, while laughing walks into the crowd and calls out loudly, “Brothers, I have brought the guy here!”

Looking around, there were at least 200 players in the Vanguard guild, were they planning to surround me and get rid of me? Surely not, actually, Jian Feng Han and Fushen Moren were already sufficient to get rid of me...

Lifting my hand, pah, I grab onto the hilt of my sword, keng, I unsheathe my Jade City Sword and [Turmoil Sword] activates. A green ripple appears beneath my feet. I ask, “What is this...?”

Jian Feng Han turns to face me, couldn’t help but laugh, “Brother Xiao Yao, calm down. We mean you no harm... This is only a temporary meeting place for us members of Vanguard.”

I nod and sheath my blade. Looking around the map, I laugh, “Quite a few days ago, this Pear Blossom Forest was one of the hotspots of Ba Huang City and PKs often occurred while people competing for level 1

Killer Bees. Looking at the current situation, this map has already come under the control of Vanguard, hasn't it?"

Jian Feng Han awkwardly smiles, "Killer Bees are currently one of the best pet resources, and thus I took control of this area. Of course, I rarely expel others players from this map using force, we only use persuasion."

"I don't intend to poke in your business, let's get back to the main topic. What did you want to ask me here?"

Jian Feng Han nods, "Actually, I want to conduct business with you!"

"Oh, what kind of business?" I was a little surprised.

Hehe, Jian Feng Han laughed, spreading his hands out, said, "Actually, it is nothing much. We only would like to invite you to temporarily join our guild and help us create the first Guild!"

"Hm?"

I couldn't help but burst into laughter. I leaned against one of the pear trees, crossing my arms and say, "Surely not? Vanguard is one of the top ten guilds of China. For something like killing bosses, I don't think that you would require an insignificant Swordsman such as myself?"

From behind Jian Feng Han, a beautiful mage walks towards us. She had fiery figure with two large mountains, as though threatening to burst out of her robes. She carries a gold-tier staff and on her head floated a line of words—

ID: Simple LV-38 Mage

.....

I know this woman. I once checked the records of Vanguard and there was always a guild vice-leader called Simple, but I didn't expect that Simple would be a woman, and I would grade her at least 8 points!

Her real name was Murong Yun and she is Jian Feng Han's older sister in real life, this is the only news that I knew.

I look at her while she stares back at me, her eyes devoid of any emotions.

A few seconds later, Simple faintly laughs, “Xiao Yao Zi Zai, I know you. I have watched your battle videos several times, but I always feel as though I don’t understand you sufficiently. Just as you said, our Vanguard is filled with many talents and we would definitely not lack another DPS or MT (Main Tank). But Jian Feng Han and I still felt that we should try to pull you into our guild, do you know why?”

I smile, “Why?”

“Because...” She purses her lips, muses for a moment and then looks up at me, “The reason is quite simple. You aren’t the top healer from Ba Huang City, neither are you the best tank. Even more so, you aren’t the best damage dealer. However, you are the best combination of a healer, a tank and a damage dealer. If I didn’t guess wrongly, after you changed your job, you retained one of the skills of a healer, and furthermore it is the strongest healing technique [Heal]!”

Saying this, she nods and faintly smiles, “We want to try to defeat gold-tier bosses that are level 50 and above, but the main problem is that our MT would be unable to cope with its damage. Even if we could continuously heal him, the healers would then attract a large amount of aggro, causing the boss to change targets and destroying our whole formation. Thus, one of the solutions we came up with is having you, Xiao Yao Zi Zai, as a tank. You are able to deal good damage and at the same time heal yourself, allowing you to pull at least 50% of the boss’s aggro onto yourself, thus reducing the aggro towards the rest of the healers. To add on, you have superb defensive abilities. In the whole Ba Huang City, there is not a single person who is more suited to be a Tank than you!”

I was relieved and losing control of myself, laughed, “So this is the case. Now that you said it, I suddenly feel that I’m more important than I thought myself to be.”

I thought for a moment, “However...”

“However what?” Jian Feng Han sounds a little nervous, as though afraid that I would reject his offer.

Thinking for a moment, I say, “I liked the freedom of going solo, and

dislike being subjected to other people's restrictions and even more so, hate being used by other people."

Simple chuckles, "Actually, that isn't a big problem. We won't impose any restrictions upon you and in fact, we will welcome you as a VIP in Vanguard. Also, for the boss's drops, as long as you are able to use it, we are willing to give it you. All we are hoping to accomplish is to create the first Guild."

I cough and speak more directly, "I will not be joining Vanguard, this is the first point. Secondly, I refuse to do favours for free nor will I accept empty promises. So, unless we put ourselves in the relationship as an employer and an employee, I refuse to join in in your battles."

Clang!

Fushen Moren takes out his staff and angrily scolds, "Screw you, you arrogant brat! Our leader is already speaking politely to you; do you think that you are some hotshot? Still saying words like you will absolutely not join Vanguard, what do you take our Vanguard for? Do you think it's something you can join just because you want to?"

I glance at him and laugh, "Put back your weapons, you sore loser. I don't want to argue with you over anything. Anyways, I have already stated my position clearly, it is up to Jian Feng Han to decide whether to accept or not."

Simple was about to open her mouth, then hesitantly shut it and turns around to look at Jian Feng Han. After all, the Guild Leader was her little brother, Jian Feng Han, and not her.

Jian Feng Han clenches his fist and after thinking for a moment, says, "Let's do it this way, we shall follow your wishes and employ you. Every time you help us fight a boss, we will pay you a certain amount. As for the potions and other goods, we will provide them. After killing the boss, we will give you priority in choosing which equipment you want. Now, what I want to confirm is how much do you want every time you fight a boss for us?"

I laughed while raising a finger.

“1000 gold?”

“No, 1000 Yuan... I am not that bad of a person...”

Jian Feng Han clapped his hands and smiled, “Sure, 1000 Yuan per fight, I understand. However, we are still not done preparing and currently, we are collecting information on bosses. We need around 24 hours to prepare, so let’s do this, Zi Zai. I’ll give you 24 hours to level up to level 40 so that after your class promotion, you will have an additional 10% stat boost and you would be entitled to learn [Flame Blade] or whatever to boost your damage output.”

I nod my head, “Yes, I understand.”

.....

Turning around, I leave the Pear Blossom Forest.

Standing at the borders of Ba Huang City, I felt a little conflicted. Being employed for 1000 Yuan each battle, it should have been a good thing but why do I feel uneasy? Forget it; it is the fault of the 100 gold coins. If I didn’t challenge Fierce Tiger, Jian Feng Han also wouldn’t know about my defensive capabilities and my offensive capabilities and naturally, he also wouldn’t invite me. However, what is done is done; I will just help them fight the bosses. Anyway, this isn’t anything bad to me.

Ding!

There was message coming from the charming assassin Ling Wan Er, “Li Xiao Yao, are you joining Vanguard?”

I was shocked, “Why? Wan Er how did you know about this, who said it?”

“Hehe, Jian Feng Han just posted a Heroes’ Notice on China’s server platform, saying [Vanguard] is currently preparing to challenge bosses that were level 50 and above and had invited the supposedly strongest Healer, Xiao Yao Zi Zai to join the alliance...”

“Oh...” I tried to explain, “I was only helping him to fight the bosses, I didn’t agree to join [Vanguard].”

Ling Wan Er giggles, “Okay, I am not concerned on whether you choose to join Vanguard or not, my only concerned is that Dong Cheng and I are hungry now. Come, treat us to supper?”

“Okay, wait for me downstairs!”

“Okay...”

Chapter 77: Promotion Preparation

We were eating congee late at night outside of the school on a snack street.

Stirring the congee with her spoon, it seems like Wan Er doesn't have much of an appetite. She raises her head, looks at me, and asks, "Have you really decided to join [Vanguard]?"

I couldn't help but laugh, "This is the fourth time I'm saying this. I'm not joining them, but rather I'm being employed and helping [Vanguard] to kill a boss. Feng Han is quite greedy, so I think he wants to get the Guild Creation Tablet as soon as possible."

On the side, Cheng Yue purses her lips and says, "To get the tablet you need to kill a boss that's over level 50 and over gold-ranked, moreover the drop rate isn't high, and it's not something you can do quickly. I think Feng Han is thinking too wishful, and if Xiao Yao helps [Vanguard] like this, it's not too appropriate..."

"Why?"

Wan Er squints her eyes and says, "Because Cheng Yue and I have decided to join [Hero's Mound]. The guild master of [Hero Mound] Q-sword has been said to be the #1 fighter, clashing with Feng Han, so those two don't get along too well. I just hope that we don't need to clash swords, that wouldn't be too fun..."

I purse my lips and say, "Don't worry. I'm only helping [Vanguard] to kill this boss; anything else has nothing to do with me."

"Mm, that's good. Oh yeah, you accepted the employment of [Vanguard], what's the salary?"

"Killing one boss will get me 1000 Yuan (~\$160), transferred directly into my bank account. Also, if it drops any equipment that can be used by heavy armored classes, then I take priority on it. Those are my conditions."

"Those conditions are very attractive, what do they see in you..."

“ ... ”

.....

Cheng Yue smiles on the side, “Don’t tease him any more Wan Er... That’s right. Xiao Yao, your class right now is Scavenger of Dragon City, and it seems like it’s a swordsman-based hidden class right? You can equip heavy armor and you can also heal. That’s the reason why they employed you right?”

I nod, “Mm. Outside of Ba Huang City, Fierce Tiger from [Flying Dragons] had a dueling ring arranged, and he said whoever can beat him gets 100 gold, so I took the duel. I used my combo to kill him, and coincidentally Feng Han saw it, so that was the start of this mess.”

“What?!”

Wan Er suddenly stands up with her skirt fluttering around, and she stares at me in a daze. She seems to have a hard time believing what I said, “You...You already made your own combo?”

“That’s right...” I smile, “Use your cellphone to look online, and check all the players that have their own combos. You should be able to find my name...”

“Oh?”

She sits down, looking shocked. She takes out her cellphone and searches around, then she opens her small mouth and says, “Eh... [Strength of a Thousand Men], S-rank combo, 5 strikes, total time consumed 1.2 seconds... Such a strong combo...”

I raise my bowl; finish off the congee in my bowl, and smile, “Yeah!”

Wan Er raises her head, looks at me and asks, “Are you really good at swordsmanship?”

“What do you think?”

On the side, Cheng Yue speaks up, “Oh I know. At the beginning of school Xiao Yao had a longsword covered in black cloth on his back, and I thought that he was only carrying around a sword in school to impress

the women, but I never would have thought that you actually knew any swordsmanship...This...To make an S-rank combo, you need to be either proficient in reality, or you would have to have some perfect talent in the game to do that..."

I think for a bit and say, "Actually, making your own combo isn't as hard as you might think it is. The important thing is beginning from the first strike; every attack must not allow any resistance from the opponent and force the opponent to be unable to control themselves. With that, the chain of attacks won't be interrupted. The last strike is the killing strike, and any skills that help with increasing damage would increase the strength of that strike."

After saying that, I look towards Wan Er and smile, "Wan Er, you're an outstanding, nimble assassin with fast attack speed. If you make a combo, then you can do at least 7 strikes within 2 seconds. Remember to properly find the attacking rhythm. If you can control the rhythm, then you can control the battle!"

Wan Er widens her eyes, stares at me with those deep, black gem-like eyes, and nods her head, "Mm, I understand..."

I smile, "That's good..."

Wan Er lowers her head to eat the congee, and doesn't look at me anymore. Cheng Yue though is smiling on the side, "It looks like even our genius young lady has times where she needs to ask for guidance... How rare..."

"That's right Xiao Yao!" Cheng Yue asks again, "When is [Vanguard] planning to kill the boss?"

"24 hours later, so they're requesting me to get to level 40 within 24 hours. After getting skills for the second promotion, then we'll go and challenge the level 50+ boss..."

"Which means you're not free tomorrow?"

"Why? You guys are planning to do something?"

"Wan Er and I were planning to go to Xixi Brook to have a stroll, but

since you're busy, then next time?"

I put down my spoon, "It's fine, I'll go with you two to Xixi Brook tomorrow. I'm Wan Er's bodyguard, so where she goes I need go as well, this is the requirement for my job. I'll just rush to level 40 tonight and it'll be fine."

"Then that's good... We'll meet at 9 o'clock tomorrow morning, and we'll eat lunch there."

"Okay!"

.....

Late at night, I return to the dorms. I need to work hard and rise straight to level 40 this night, so I can go to Xixi Book tomorrow.

Whoosh!

I appear in the middle of Ba Huang City, and I look at my experience bar. 11% in level 39. I'm neither close nor far until level 40, so after some thinking, I decide that it's better to level up around Dragon City. Because, the instant I level up, I can go and ask for a promotion from my instructor. I don't even know what the second promotion of a Scavenger of Dragon City will bring; I just hope it'll be a good skill...

I prepare equipment, refill potions, and after some bits and bobs, I leave!

After 1 hour of travelling, I reach Dragon City. From afar, I see smoke rising, and find Beast Tamer Dalin starting a barbeque. This guy, he eats every day, but I don't see him getting fat, and rather his muscles are really admirable. This barbarian's physique is not something you can easily compare to.

I take my sword, walk up, and ask respectfully, "Instructor, is there anything I can do for you?"

The tamer points towards the east and says, "One mile out, there's a forest, and in there some hot red peppers are grown. Boy, if you gather some of those peppers within 20 minutes, and sprinkle them on my

lunch, I would be very thankful for your help...”

This guy, he wants me to help me with his barbeque?!

I immediately nod with respect, “As you wish instructor!”

My left foot steps on the ground, and a hexagram appears. My level 39 Baby Bobo flies out, and circles around my shoulders while flapping his wings. Although his 768 attack damage isn’t as high as mine, there’s still possible growth. Besides, pets are for assisting players, and after players gains a certain amount of levels and equipment, pets are naturally unable to catch up. But, Bobo’s stinger is still here. In the current stage, with the exception of heavy armored monks and knights, he will do quite a bit against others.

The season around Dragon City is autumn, and I can feel the withering of the living things in the wild. I walk around for a minute, and in front of me, I can see dots of red in the forest ahead. It’s the peppers that Dalin wanted.

As I was walking up to pick them, suddenly I hear some rustling around me, something’s here!

Bang!

The dirt explodes in front of me, and a porcupine that weighs at least 100 kg appears in front of me. A level 42 monster and the spikes around its body returns 20% of all damage dealt to it!

I step on the soft dirt and attack. A golden hexagram starts to appear on my sword, and I use [Combo] on the porcupine. A chain of damage numbers fly up—

“401!”

“397!”

“408!”

At the same time, I receive the damage from the spikes, and my HP drops as well—

“80!”

“79!”

“82!”

.....

Bobo also starts his attack, and I take the chance to rush up. I stand behind the huge porcupine, and I find its most vulnerable and defenseless area, the butt! Using my combo attack here has the best chance of success. This game’s design is so similar to reality and very logical, so every small detail can determine whether you lose or win. As I’m killing monsters, I won’t easily put down my guard. Even if I’m killing a chicken, I will use my full power to kill it!

The 5 strikes go out screaming, and the porcupine cries out while being attacked. I sweep my feet, and after the 3 strikes, I start my 4th, ram!

Bang!

The porcupine wails and screams, but I also wail and scream. My face and chest have holes in them now, and it hurts quite a bit. I can’t ram these kinds of monsters...But, with that one ram I stun the porcupine for a short while, and I use the strongest strike out of the 5—[Wind Blade]!

“878!”

Looking at the damage, I get some satisfaction. The damage from [Strength of a Thousand Men] is extremely strong, and it should be the strongest combo at this point, or else Wan Er wouldn’t be that surprised. She is, after all, one of Fan Shu City’s top 3 players, and has seen quite a few battles.

Blood splashes out, and the huge porcupine is killed and the porcupine drops a few silver coins.

I kneel and pick up the silver coins. After that, I start picking the peppers, and before long I collected a huge pile. After walking for a bit, another huge porcupine appears, and I quickly kill it off. The 20% return damage doesn’t do much to me, plus I have [Heal]. The current me can both attack and heal, and my dueling strength is top class!

After collecting quite a bit of peppers, I stand up, and hold one porcupine in one hand and the other porcupine in the other, and drag their corpses back. Porcupine meat is actually pretty tasty, back in my mission days I ate quite a bit of it. Even when we ran out of canned food, me and my 7 other comrades relied on porcupines and mountain chickens to fill our stomachs. After equipping the AWSM gun with silencers, we sniped the pheasants from afar, and the accuracy is way sharper than a hunting rifle. Thinking back, I do miss those flavours...

.....

Rustle...

The porcupines' corpse carves a deep ditch along the dirt and sand as I walk back to camp. I arrive at the camp, throw the porcupine on the side, and say, "Instructor, I brought the items back, and two fresh porcupines."

Dalin's eyes flashes, and smiles, "Boy, your growth is something that is worth noticing; perhaps I was wrong when I first saw you. You are not the shame of Dragon City, but rather our fresh blood. Captain Frost has good insight, and your growth has proved this. How about this, peel the skin of the porcupine and cook it. I brought some wine here, and since you are my student, will you drink a cup with me?"

Chapter 78: Exactly the Same

My heart drops. What does this old guy want? Usually he would tell me to go hunt, drag poop around, find people, but today, today he wants to have a drink with me? Perhaps he also knows that I'm nearing level 40 and going for a promotion soon, so "Scavenger" is no longer the appropriate job for me?

Whoosh!

"Experience +7000"

Immediately after I put down the two porcupines, a ray of light appears, and I gained a decent amount of experience. I also take out the peppers from my bag, throw them in the sky, and unsheathe my sword. With a flash of the sword, the peppers get shattered, and the smell of the spicy peppers flood the air as they fall with other spices onto Dalin's barbeque pig. The flavor gets absorbed, and without a doubt, the pig must be very tasty.

Whoosh!

"Experience +5000"

Another ray of light and my experience rises by another chunk. Hehe, leveling up like this, it's really a method that is to be liked!

I give a porcupine to the army officer, and I get another thousand of experience points in return. I drag the other one to a nearby river to skin and discard the dissolving fur. After that, I find some green onions and stick it through the porcupine and return to the camp. I start another campfire and before long, the juices from the porcupine start seeping out. They crack as they fall into the fire and a pleasant aroma starts to spread as well.

I sit across to Dalin, and respectfully grasp my sword.

"Come boy..."

Dalin throws something at me and a water bag made out of a wild goat's stomach lands on me. Good wine is filled inside it but inside the

game drinking wine doesn't add any stats, and it's just for taste. Just some virtual stuff.

I open the cap, and raise my head to take a drink. The sweet taste of the wine spreads around in my mouth. It is indeed good.

"How's the taste?" Dalin laughs.

I nod, "Mm, very strong taste, good wine..."

Dalin strokes his beard, and smiles, "That's natural, this is the fine wine brewed by the palace wine masters, and not a lot of people in the world can even drink it. Hmph, if I didn't have to rush last time, I would have grabbed more from Fire Cloud City's palace!"

I'm shocked, "You stole this?"

"Cough cough, just borrowing!"

"Okay..." I raise my head to drink some more, then stand up with my sword in hand and say, "Instructor, give some more missions to me, I want to do some more things for you!"

Dalin bends over, stretches, grabs a pig leg, and takes a huge bite. Drinking the wine, he laughs, "Boy, my [Binding Chains] is an original skill; I hope you won't put it to waste. I've traveled around the continent for my life, but I haven't learned a huge bunch. I'm most proficient in [Binding Chains], so I can only teach you this..."

"I understand. Instructor, give me the mission..."

"Okay!"

Dalin stands up, looks at me, and says, "First mission, a prehistoric huge bird has taken a crap 5 miles south-west of Dragon City. The poop has a radius of 7 meters, bring it back. Second mission, there's a small town called "Bysickle" straight south of Dragon City. In the small town, there's a woman called Heisha that sells tofu. She lost her pet white cat, so you help her find it. Third mission, at the bottom of Dragon City there's a blind old soldier who has a broken leg and is going to die soon from sickness. He has always been single and his only death wish is to touch a

woman's breast. You are to help him to find a woman. Fourth mission..."

I quickly hold my hand out, "Wait wait, hold on instructor. 3 missions is enough, let me finish them first..."

"Okay boy, I'll be expecting good things..."

"I got it..."

"....."

.....

After 10 minutes, I arrive at the south-west of Dragon City. It literally looks like a catastrophe happened here. The small trees are burning with flames and the ignition point is a huge pile of bird poop. It's really huge, having a diameter of around 15 meters or so. It looks just like a meteorite...This bird poop has an abundant of fire attributes in it. Also, the bird seems like it ate something wrong, I see an over 50kg huge pea within the poop, apparently the bird was unable to digest that.

I walk up and a wave of intense nastiness attacks my nose. It's so smelly! I wave my sword around, and cut into the feces. My determination doesn't waver and cutting it like a pizza, I cut it into ten or so pieces and drag piece by piece back. This time the pile is a bit large and trying to bring it all back in one go wouldn't be a smart idea.

I drag a piece of the bird poop, excitedly return to the camp and hand the feces to the army officer. I get plenty of experience and I joyfully run back, continuing to pick up the rest of the poop.

After an hour or so, I'm finally at the last piece. This piece is especially heavy; it's the section that had the pea!

After dragging it for a while, I turn around, and unsheathe my sword. Screw it; I'll just cut the peas off. So annoying and so tiring!

Clang!

When my sword contacts with the pea, sparks appear, and my arm also goes numb. Sigh, what is this. What kind of hard object can't be cut by my sword?

I go closer, and use my hand to wipe away the poop on the “pea”. But this isn’t a pea! I scratch away the feces around it, and use my sword to chisel it a bit, and I find out that this is a 1 meter long stone tablet! On it there’s even small words written on it, but sadly they’re words from ancient times, and I can’t read it!

“Hup!”

I hold the tablet, and it’s at least 50 kg. Luckily I am a full-strength warrior, and carrying it doesn’t cause me too many problems. Also, under normal circumstances, I can easily carry 50kg in real life. I wave my hand, and try to get information on this stone tablet, but I only get a vague description—

【Ancient Tablet】: This is a tablet that recorded old martial secrets and it’ll collect experience with the player. When it collects enough experience, it will fuse with the player and become a skill. You must sign the contract to bring this around.

.....

Looking at these words, I don’t even know what to think. This luck. Even when I’m picking up poop I get treasure. What is this madness...?

Whatever, I’ll sign the contract first!

Whoosh!

I slide my finger on the edge of the sword, and drip my blood from my finger onto the tablet. Instantly the area around me shimmers and the tablet suddenly shines and glows. Countless words surround me, and quickly afterwards, a ray of light stabs into my body and a system notification shows, saying that I’ve signed a contract with the tablet and it’s impossible to drop or leave behind.

With a clang, a heavy, dark stone appears on my back and if you look at it, it’s looks like a stone carving of a Chinese piano. It actually makes me look refined and gentlemanly. Next to the stone is the sheath of my sword, so it wouldn’t affect my movements in battle. Although I can feel the weight of it, my moving speed won’t change by much.

I continue and drag the last piece of bird feces to the army officer and hand in the mission. Instantly experience points comes in with a glow of light—

“Experience +5000!”

“[Ancient Tablet] experience +5000”

Indeed, the tablet gets as much experience as I do. Sadly, I can't see how much experience points the tablet needs in order for it to be completed, but there's no rush, I can take it slow.

.....

I finished the first mission and my experience bar lands on 49% at level 39. Following that, it's the second mission; help that tofu woman find her cat.

After two hours, at the west part of the small town, I found a barb traveling around with the small cat. I retrieve the cat and also give the barb two knocks on the head. He knows his wrongs, and reflected on it, so I let him go. I carry the white cat back to finish my mission, and happily collect the experience points.

The third mission is kind of difficult. The crippled old soldier under Dragon City wants to touch a woman's chest and such a shameless request became my mission.

I sit in the forest and I'm almost tearing my hair off.

Should I ask for help? That's not too great. Although I do know quite a few good women in the game, Wan Er and Cheng Yue etc. If I asked them to let the old soldier touch them, I would probably instantly get killed... As for Qing Qian and Wei Liang those two, I don't even know if they're adults or not, how can I bear to do that to them...

Finally, I make a painful decision; I'll make a woman myself!

I go into the forest, and kill some soft-skinned wild rabbit. I cut off their fur and they're very soft. After that, I sew together a human-shaped thing, and I use some grasses and such to fill it up. After that, I took some mud

from the riverside and drew a face. Actually, I wanted to draw the face of a Lin Zi Ling, but sadly I didn't draw well enough. Whatever, I'll just use it.

TL: 林志玲 If you want to Google it. For the fur, it's probably because the rabbit isn't a monster.

Finally, in the Ba Huang City stores I bought two steaming buns, and stuffed them in the chest location. After doing that, I bring this "woman" back out. Ahh...I am just too talented... On the road, countless amounts of players shoot shocked glances at me—

"Brother, your girlfriend is leaking air, run slower!"

.....

Under Dragon City, the old soldier's eyes can barely be opened. Sleeping in the small wooden house and looking at the woman made by Li Xiao Yao, his old tears start to drop. He reaches and touches these two steaming buns, says to me emotionally, "Oh righteous, young warrior. You are the pride of Dragon City, letting me fill in one of my life's regrets. This woman, it is really as beautiful as you say she is?!"

I nod, "That I don't know, who is the most beautiful woman you have ever seen?"

The old soldier says while crying, "When my eyes were still clear, the most beautiful woman I've seen is the Leader of the Dragon City Knights — Captain Frost. Her beauty is just like moonshine, always glowing in my heart..."

I say, "Mm, this woman, she is exactly the same as Frost, trust me..."

"Okay. Thank you!"

Whoosh!

The glow of experience falls on me, and at the same time, golden light shines over me, and I finally rose to level 40!

.....

Finally! As I was carrying my "girlfriend" and preparing to leave, I find

Frost behind me; both of her eyes are filled with killing intent while she glares at me, seemingly being able to see through everything. She knows!

I'm done, now I can't even stay in Dragon City.....

Chapter 79: Fierce Ice Blade

“F...Frost...”

My tongue gets all twisted up, “Why are you here? It’s so warm in Dragon City, why’d you come down here...”

“Dragon City is way colder than here.”

Frost coldly glares at me and says, “Follow me.”

“Okay...”

.....

I follow Frost out of the small house and we go into the nearby forest.

Frost turns around, looks up and says, “Your growth in strength is indeed very frightening; Dalin was right when he said that you are a person that has potential, but...”

She looks at the “woman” that I’m holding and a bit of pink shows up on her solemn face, “But can you just throw away the fake person that you’re holding?”

I quickly dispose of it into a nearby ditch, and feel extremely embarrassed, “This...This was just a temporary tactic...”

Frost lightly hmphs, “So I look exactly that that huh?”

“No no, you’re a lot more beautiful than that Frost...”

“Is that so?”

“It is...”

“Hmph!”

She then says no more about it and instead deeply stares at me, “Dragon City’s strength has to be constantly refilled. Now that you’re already strong enough, so you don’t need to follow Dalin anymore. I hereby decide that I will raise your rank to a member of Dragon City, and I’ve also arranged a new instructor for you...”

“Oh? Who is it?”

“Just follow me...”

Frost’s body flashes, and in the next instant she appears close enough to touch me. Her beautiful face is right in front of me. She smiles, grabs my shoulders, and raises me up. Just like that I’m being hauled while facing the sky, and she quickly starts rock climbing. Damn, when can I do this?

Whoosh!

Suddenly we pass through the Ice Spine’s peak and the freezing wind pounds mercilessly on me. Snowflakes as big as feathers float in the air and we can see Dragon City’s interior. But we’re not going to Dragon City; rather she’s heading towards the middle of the Ice Spine! There’s a huge cave, and on the map, the area is blood-red. Frost is still hauling me during all this and with a bang, we drop thousands of meters.

Tick!

System Notification: You have entered the area—【Dragon Tomb】!

.....

I’m pretty surprised and when I raise my head... right in front of me is an upside down enormously bony skeleton sitting in the middle of nowhere. The ribs are at least 10 meters long, and the bones are slightly glowing. The head is lying down on the ground sinisterly, separated from the body. This is the corpse of a huge dragon and an ancient one at that. Looking at the erosion of the bones, it’s at least a thousand years old...

“Frost, this is...” I say in a shocked voice.

Frost glances at me and smiles, “You probably guessed correctly. This is a dragon’s tomb, the place where an ancient dragon clan died. Most dragons that are near death will come here, and silently wait for their end. This area is still under our jurisdiction, so whether or not the dragons can return to here depends on us.”

“Okay, what do I need to do?”

Frost smiles, “It’s simple. From now on, you are one of the guardians of this dragon tomb. You need to guard these precious dragon bones and

protect them from bandits or monsters that want to cause trouble. Also..."

Frost's smile seemingly brings some ulterior motive, "After every dragon dies, they will leave behind their soul. In dragon's tomb, we have no lack of dragons' souls and they are dream-like items that every warrior wants. So, you must guarantee the safety of this dragon's tomb and guard this tomb well to allow the elder dragons to have peace. If anyone intrudes this tomb, you must immediately kill them!"

I nod, "I understand...Also..."

Frost appears as if she can read minds and smiles, "Follow me. I'll show you your new instructor. He will teach new skills to you and also promote you..."

"Okay! I'll follow you!"

.....

A chilling wind passes through the dragon's tomb and within the piles of dragon bones, I notice a glow. In the skull of the huge dragon, I see a round and dense colourful spirit. Without a doubt, that's the soul of a dragon. I wonder if you can eat it.

"What are you thinking...?"

Frost suddenly clenches her fists and glares at me.

I'm faintly startled; does this woman know what I'm thinking?

.....

"Hmph, we're here..."

In front of me, there's a house shaped like an oval and carved in rock. It seems very cold and quiet. Next to the house, there's a martial arts practicing area. With weapons all over the place, this place emits a strong aura. It must be a skilled person!

"Karl, we're here. Come see your new disciple!" Frost says.

"Ouch..."

Stone doors open, and an old geezer comes out. He's sitting on a

wheelchair since both of his legs have been cut off. A longsword is held behind the wheelchair—

【Guardian of the Dragon Tomb – Karl】

Level: ???

Description: Karl. An extremely talented swordmaster that has travelled throughout the continent defeating enemies but in one large battle he lost both his legs. Losing his movement he could only research deeper into swords and after becoming dragon's tomb's guardian, his strength has increased significantly.

.....

“Ah Frost, long time no see...”

The wrinkles on Karl's face look like they could fold a person to death... He smiles, “I never would have thought that after all these years, Dragon City would still remember a half-person like me.”

Frost gives him a huge smile, “Karl, how could Dragon City forget you? Look, we found a talented young person to be your disciple and also join you as a guardian.”

I walk up, and cup my fists, “Good evening instructor...”

Karl stares at me for a while then says, “This little guy doesn't look like anyone special. Frost, you randomly gave me some trash bronze, and want me to turn him into some gold?”

Frost covers her mouth while laughing, “Not at all, you just haven't seen what he can do. How about this...You! Show us some moves!”

I nod, unsheathed my sword, and perform a few moves. It's a style where you attack while defending, and you can go forward or retreat. As long as my sword is unsheathed I will be invincible. This is a nameless style that I made myself, and under the stare of Karl I feel that my skills are shameful compared to his....

“Oh?”

Karl thinks for a while and says, “Looks like...It's not bad. You aren't too

bad. Boy, from now on you are my disciple...”

I proudly say, “I would like to experience your skill, or else how can I call you my master?”

“Fine!”

Karl smiles, raises his hand and unsheathes his sword behind him. With a bang it penetrates a huge rock! Damn, using qi to drive the sword, this old guy...That’s a stage that I could never reach, also, even about the qi, I have never seen anyone in reality that can use qi with a sword. That’s really incredible.

I step up; put one knee on the ground with my sword, and say, “Instructor...”

Karl puts his dried up old fingers on my shoulder and smiles, “Okay, hand over 100 gold coins, then you’ll become my disciple. Also, in the future you will be a silver-rank warrior!”

“Okay...”

I confirm and hand over 100 gold coins to him, and immediately after, I hear a ring—

Ding!

System Notification: Congratulations! You’ve been successfully promoted to the next rank and receive the title of “Tomb Guardian of Dragon City”. All skills can go beyond the previous maximum level 4 and now the highest they can go up to is level 7. Hidden resistance +10%, hidden attack damage +5%, new skill **【Fencing Specialization】**!

.....

Very nice, I got the second promotion. It was pretty easy, but that promotion fee of 100 gold coins is too high! What a ripoff!

“Okay, my mission is complete now; I’ll be taking my leave.”

Frost lightly laughs and disappears elegantly out of the dragon’s tomb. Karl looks at Frost’s shadow and sends a cold glare, muttering, “Luo Lin’s dog, hmph...”

I'm shocked but I still walk up and ask, "Instructor, do you have any new skills you can teach me?"

All coldness in Karl's eyes disappears and he smiles, "Of course, but it'll be a bit expensive..."

"Sure..."

With a whoosh, a window appears, and 3 skills are available for me to learn—

【Fierce Ice Blade LV-1】(A-rank): Condenses ice on the sword to attack the target, causing large damage and also slows the target down. Level 1 raises attack damage by 2%, ignores target's defense by 1%, and slows for 1 second. Consumes 30 MP. To learn this you must pay 300 gold coins and 3 points of charm. Cannot be learnt together with Ice Blade.

【Flame Blade LV-1】(B-rank): Condenses fire on the sword to attack the target. Level 1 raises attack by 3%. To learn this you must pay 10 gold coins. Cannot be learnt together with Ice Blade or Fierce Ice Blade.

【Ice Blade】(B-rank): Condenses ice on the sword to attack the target. Level 1 raises attack damage by 2%, and slows the target for a short amount of time. To learn this you must pay 10 gold coins. Cannot be learnt together with Flame Blade.

.....

I think for a while. Even though there seems to be a chance I can learn two of the skills, in reality I can only learn one out of these three skills. [Flame Blade] and [Ice Blade] are both normal skills, you need to pay 10 gold if you want to learn them, but this [Fierce Ice Blade] should be an original by Karl, and the attack effects are quite a bit stronger than [Ice Blade] because of the defense ignorement. It is indeed good...but just a bit expensive!

I look in my bag; I still have 400+ gold coins. It's enough, so I'll learn it. With good skills you can win anything!

Whoosh!

After spending 300 gold coins and 3 charm, [Fierce Ice Blade] appears in my skill window. It even consumed charm... Which means that whoever doesn't have charm won't be able to learn this skill.

My sword trembles, and I silently cast [Fierce Ice Blade]. Instantly, ice starts gushing out of my sword, and I stab out. A simple attack but it has plenty of killing power. A level 10 [Fierce Ice Blade] would raise my attack damage by 20%, and ignore 10% defense, so it shouldn't be too far from the level 10 [Wind Blade] which increases damage by 30%. With this, I have two attacking skills, nice!

.....

I wanted to chat a bit more with Karl, but he says no more and goes back into his small house on his wheelchair. Damn, this instructor is so cold!

Whatever, I'll find some monsters, and raise [Fierce Ice Blade] to level 4 first!

Outside of Ba Huang City, Vampire Bats fall one after another under my attack, it seems like with [Fierce Ice Blade], I can instantly kills them... The skill bar slowly fills, because it has a 6 second cooldown. I have plenty of patience, and I'll slowly grind....

Chapter 80: Putting Away Differences

I stay up until 7am in the morning, and with a ringing sound, [Fierce Ice Blade] reaches level 3. The attack damage buff for [Fierce Ice Blade] increases to an 6%. The defense ignored increases to 3% and the Freeze debuff which slows the enemy down reaches 3 seconds. This is such a divine skill!

.....

When the task was completed, I look over at the time and decide that I should head out now.

In the sunny campus morning, my body aches with each step as a result of staying up so late. After I called the two girls, I walk to their dorm where we proceed to go eat porridge together.

“Beep

While eating, my phone started ringing. It is an unknown number. After connecting, a very deep voice appears on the other end--

“Is this Xiao Yao Zi Zai?”

“Ah, yes and you are?”

“My name is Liu Ren, part of the Vanguard Guild, my gamer ID is Fushen Moren, you should know me.”

“Oh it’s Vanguard’s number one monk.....”

Fushen Moren chuckles: “Yes, that’s me, we tried everything to find your phone number.”

“What’s the emergency?”

“Well, it’s like this. Both Fan Shu City and Jiu Lu City are currently very chaotic, so our leader, Jian Feng Han, decided that we should try to fight the Boss today. Being that you are our primary tank, you are required to participate. This phone call is to inform you that we will be meeting at 12 o’clock [noon] today. The boss fight will start at 1 o’clock exactly, so you should start preparing.....”

I frown: “Didn’t we agree that the Boss fight would be tomorrow? I’m sorry. I am busy today, so I can’t come.”

”You....”

Fushen Moren says in a cold voice: “ What do you mean? Are you going back on your word? We pay you 1000 RMB for every fight you join. Other people would try desperately to find these kinds of opportunities. We at Vanguard are extending you such a courtesy, do you think what you are doing is right?”

I shake my head: “This schedule doesn’t really work for me. I’m not trying to be discourteous or anything, but I actually have something to do today....”

.....

Just then, Lin Wan Er’s phone rings. She listens to the call, blinks a bit, and whispers in my ear: “Li Xiao Yao, today’s plans on going to XiXi Wetland have been canceled.”

I nod. Then on the phone, I say: “Never mind, the meeting time is 12 o’clock noon right? I’ll be sure to be there on time.”

”Humm, alright then, ha ha.....”

Foshen Moren says with a sigh of relief: “We will prepare potions for you. Also, how are you progressing with the skills you learned from your second promotion?”

I say after a bit of thought: “Attack Specialization is a passive skill, so I don’t need to level that. But I already trained my active skill to level three, so it should help quite a bit.”

“Alright, then we will see you at noon!”

“Okay!”

.....

Hanging up the phone, I see Lin Wan Er. She smiles at me apologetically and says: “That was Hero Mound suddenly deciding to assault a level 55 gold tiered boss, so we have to cancel our trip to XiXi

Wetland and change it to tomorrow.”

I answer with a nod: “Okay, I understand.”

Dong Cheng Yue, a little disappointed, says: “Originally, I had thought we could relax at XiXi Wetland. I didn’t think that our guild events would cause us to cancel it. We are both DPSs classes; we shouldn’t even have to be there. What type of boss can’t Hero Mound kill when they should have about 2000 players online daily?”

Lin Wan Er nods: “Maybe they are afraid that their losses will be too big, so they are asking the elite players to come? On the phone, he said to gather all the players with a second promotion and try to fighting the level 55 boss with 20 people first....”

Dong Cheng Ye looks at me: “Xiao Yao, at noon you’ll also be fighting a boss right?”

I smiled: “Presumably, Jian Feng Han found out that Q Sword is planning on killing a boss, so he moved the Boss fight up. Also Q Sword must have heard that Vanguard will also be moving out. It looks like the fight between Hero Mound and Vanguard is about to get interesting. Let us see who acquires the guild tablet first.”

As Lin Wan Er’s pair of beautiful eyes swept across me, she chuckles: “I am confident that with your bad luck, Vanguard won’t be able to get a Guild Creation Tablet.”

“Wait and see.....”

“Alright.....”

.....

After breakfast, the two beauties run back to the dorms to prepare. Since Jian Feng Han will have prepared everything for me and I don’t have anything else to do, I decide to take a nap. I set up my phone alarm for 11 o’clock, and proceeded to fall into a deep slumber.

At 11 o’clock, I immediately wake up.

After I put on my clothes, I run outside of the school gates, to where a

dining truck was parked. I pull out 10 RMB. After looking at the menu, I decided: "Tofu with Cabbage, Seaweed Stipes, Garlic along with beef ribs. Three vegetables and one meat, 10 yuan (2 USD)!"

The boss packages my food, smiles and says: "Young man, there's free hot water over there. Help yourself to some."

Holding the fast food, I sit down on a bench. I put my disposable cup of water aside, proceed to rip my chopsticks apart, and start to have a feast. Sometimes fast food really tastes better than five-star restaurants, especially when one is hungry.

Finishing the food, I look at the time and see it is 11:30 AM. Time to get back online!

The dorm was filled with the smell of food, looking again, Tang Gu sat at the desk with a dish of pickled fish, and two other dishes, he was also holding a bottle of beer, seeing me come in, he laughs: "Brat, where did you go? I wanted to drink with you!"

"It's not too late now..."

I sat next to him, click off the cap of a beer bottle, grab the chopsticks and start eating with him. The 10 yuan lunchbox from before was far from enough and it's still quite a bit before the 12 PM gathering time. Even if I went online, I wouldn't have anything to do.

Tang Gu is self-employed, his life is pretty well off. Whereas someone like me, earning money from the game, would not give me enough to spend. The reorganization of the studio is going to cost quite a bit and I can't expect the others to find the money, so I can only rely on myself.

.....

Quickly, the time approached 12 PM and I put down my chopsticks and tell Tang Gu that I'm going online.

Shua!

As soon as I appeared in Ba Huang City, a system message pops up: Please pay attention, Player "Jian Feng Han" has requested to be your

friend!

After saying yes, Jian Feng Han appeared in my friend's list.

Ti!

Jian Feng Han quickly sends a message: "Brother Xiao Yao, come to the place (12282, 98773) outside of the North Gate. We're all gathered here, come quickly!"

"Alright!"

Carrying the ancient tablet and my jade city sword, I run with Baby Bobo to his position. The coordinations that he gave me leads me towards the Pear Blossom Forest. When I got there, I see a lot of players. Looks like Vanguard is going all out today.

"Xiao Yao Zi Zai's coming!"

Simple holds her staff and smiles: "Then we're all set. All we need to do is just distribute some potions and other things. Oh... someone give Xiao Yao Zi Zai his share of potions."

"Yes, Vice-guild leader."

A twenty year old beauty walks up to me and requests to trade. Quickly, the trade window includes 100 Indigo Sea Pills and 50 level 5 health potions, which recovers 600 health instantly. These potions are selling for 1 gold each in Ba Huang City! For this boss, Vanguard is paying a huge price.

After taking the potions, I look at everyone and smile: "How many players are going? Where do we find the boss?"

Jian Feng Han sneakily smiles: "200 players. We can't let the killing of a boss affect the leveling speed of others. These 200 players are our elite and the lowest leveled player here is level 38. As for the boss' location, you'll know when you get there. Oh right, sister, why aren't the people from the General's family here yet?"

Simple smiles: "15 seconds!"

With the rustling of a nearby bush, four players suddenly appear within

the Li Hua Forest. Its General Li Mu, General Wang Jian, General Lian Po and General Bai Chi! They're all people on Ba Huang City's leaderboard. What are they doing at a Vanguard event?

.....

Zheng!

I raise my hand and pull out Jade City Sword. Baby Bobo also sticks out his stinger and goes into attack mode.

"Xiao Yao Zi Zai!"

General Wang Jian instinctively jumps back half a step and pulls out his sword: "What do you want?!"

General Li Mu furrows his brow: "It's a small world..."

Jian Feng Han quickly walks up and stands between me and the four from the Generals Family, saying: "Since we're all here to kill the boss, we're all friends right now. Let's put away our differences temporarily. Think of it as a favor for me. After we kill the boss and a Guild Creation Tablet drops, you guys can go back to killing each other and I won't stop you guys."

Since Jian Feng Han says it so clearly, the Generals Family could not argue.

I stick the Jade City Sword into the ground and lightly smile: "Actually, killing me twice is a thing in the past. All I want to do right now is to emphasize that even if a Guild Creation Tablet doesn't drop with this boss, I'll be taking any strength adding armor or sword type weapons. As for the other equipments, I won't be needing them. If you don't agree, then I'll be leaving right now!"

Jian Feng Han nods: "Sure, no problem!"

The generals family faces turn sullen at the mention of my arrangement. Li Mu says: "This... that's not too fair. After all, our general family is also helping out with this, so why do swords go to Xiao Yao? If we die and a sword drops, we would have died for nothing?"

Feng Hans smiles and says: “Brother Li Mu, I don’t think that you understand. I am only paying Xiao Yao 1000 yuan (160 USD) whereas for the generals family, each one of you requested 3000 yuan (480 USD) for your services. Therefore, equipment goes to Xiao Yao first...”

Li Mu pauses: “What? Only 1000 yuan?”

I nods: “Mm, was that stupid?”

“Pretty stupid...”

“Screw you!”

“Haha...”

.....

And thus, we noisily started on our journey. There were a total of 200 players, grouping up into 20, 10 player groups. All that was left was to see if we could defeat the legendary high-level boss.

My goal isn’t the Guild Creation Tablet , whether or not it drops doesn’t matter to me. But if a Warrior class equipment or skill books drops, it would be great! I can’t work for free!

Chapter 81: Challenging a Purple Rank

Our group of 200 passes through forests, and after about an hour, we finally reach a blood-red area on the map. But what made me light up is that I had been to this area before. This is to the east of The Dragon City, an extremely vast area with high-level monsters – Fire Stone Canyon!

According to official sources, the Fire Stone Canyon has monsters from Level 39 to Level 90, and the deeper you venture, the higher the monster's level is. This will be the number one leveling area for players from Ba Huang City in 2 to 3 months. This vast area can accommodate 100,000 players leveling since the monsters have a fast respawn rate at about 20 minutes per respawn, so the players won't run out of monsters to kill.

.....

Standing at the edge of the Fire Stone Canyon, I muse to myself.

Beside me, Jian Feng Han carries his blade and smiles: "Hey, Xiao Yao does this area feel familiar?"

I nod: "Of course, I was PK-ed by you here before."

Jian Feng Han: "I got killed by you too....."

General Li Mu holding onto his longsword says: "Both of you can stop the reminiscing, let us know where the Boss is, I'm sure you can tell us now?"

Jian Feng Han: "Yeah, the Boss's location was found by our assassin. The Level 55 Purple Rank Boss is just up ahead after we pass over a small hill. It's in a place called "Valley of the Everlasting Wind", and the Boss is called "General of the Everlasting Wind". It's said to be the spirit of an ancient general. As long as we can kill him, our chances of getting the Guild Creation Tablet are at least 25%!"

General Li Mu trembles and with confusion in his eyes: "Jian Feng Han, when you told me that we're going to kill a Boss, I thought it was a Gold Rank one, you... you actually choose to fight against a Purple Rank Boss. Are you trying to lead 200 people to their death?"

Jian Feng Han chuckles with a domineering look in his eyes: “Hero Mound’s Q Sword has chosen to fight a Level 55 Gold Rank Boss. As such, I, Jian Feng Han, will take on an even stronger Boss. I believe that if we all work together, even a Purple Rank Boss can be killed. What’s more, a Purple Rank Boss can drop extremely rare Purple Tier equipment that surpasses Gold Tier equipment. Don’t you all think that this is a huge opportunity? Relax, if there are weapon loots, swords belong to Xiao Yao, axes to Bai Qi, you and Wang Jian get priority on spears, and longbows go to Lian Po. What do you think?”

Li Mu takes a deep breath and with a deep hunger for war in his eyes, he says: “Alright, let’s do it.....”

Jian Feng Han draws his blade, and points straight and true towards Fire Stone Canyon: “Brothers, forward! We will reach the Boss in 10 minutes!”

.....

As the mass of players swarm over the hill, a Level 45 monster gets in the way and is focus-killed by a group of mages and musketeers. Flying above in groups, there are at least 30 Wind Elves who are mages, archers and musketeers. Even a Level 55 Purple Rank Boss shouldn’t stand for long if all of us attack it together.

“Rustle.....”

My Silver Locked Battle Boots tread lightly on the sandy ground as I reach the top edge of the valley first. Leaning over, I see a valley about 50 metres deep; it’s the Valley of Everlasting Wind. All around, there are many soldiers carrying long halberds; Level 49 monsters with pretty normal attack and defense. Looks like we will have to clear these monsters before we can approach the Boss!

“Healers, add buffs to Xiao Yao Zi Zai !” Jian Feng Han commands.

Immediately, a ray of white light descends, it’s Level 4 [Encourage], and it raises my attack by 4%. Jian Feng Han looks at me and chuckles: “Xiao Yao will you go ahead and kill one Level 49 Soldier of the Everlasting Wind first? Show us the power of your DPS and defense!”

“Sure!”

I lift my sword and rush down the slope. A golden hexagram appears underneath my boots as rocks concurrently explode due to my speed down the slope. Three consecutive strikes leap from the edge of my blade as I launch a Level 4 Combo and loudly strike the shoulder of a Soldier of the Everlasting Wind, bringing out a string of damage numbers –

“398!”

“377!”

“802!”

The third hit was a critical strike. Next, as my blade flashes, an aura surges out from under my feet before I land on the ground. Without waiting for the monster to regain his strength, [Strength of a Thousand Men] gives off a repeated thrashing as it connects with the monster’s rotten face. A stream of damage numbers jump out and [Wind Blade] abruptly hacks it’s arm off, releasing a damage number of 700+. Baby Bobo does a combo and the Soldier of the Everlasting Wind falls to the ground. All settled within 1.5 seconds!

.....

On the hillside, a group of [Vanguard] players are dumbstruck. Jian Feng Han clenches his teeth: “Damn...his firepower.....”

Jian Feng Han looks closely at me and says softly: “This Xiao Yao Zi Zai is indeed not a simple person, a pity he isn’t willing to join my [Vanguard]”

Li Mu grips his longsword tightly, in a low voice: “This guy, his strength has grown so much since the last time we met, it’s scary!”

Wang Jian raises an eyebrow: “Hmph, I’d like to duel with him!”

Lian Po runs his hand down his beard: “Don’t bother, your current equipment is a level below his and he has a combo. You definitely aren’t a match for him. But the most important thing is..... Xiao Yao Zi Zai’s moves are really exquisite, his movements are exceptional even though

his gaming skills are only 70 points max. He must be a rare expert in real life!”

Wang Jian: “.....”

.....

20 minutes later, we kill our way into the depths of Valley of the Everlasting Wind.

In the distance, 12 antique totem pillars stand proudly at the heart of the valley. Every totem is linked at the top by a thick metal chain. The 12 glowing chains are all tied to the center, where a heavily armored war general with disheveled hair kneels, holding the shaft of a long blade. The chains penetrate his chest, as black blood drips along them.

“We have reached the Boss.....”

Jian Feng Han raises an arm: “Let’s not be anxious to start attacking the Boss, take a look at his skills and attributes before we make a move.....”

I take a step forward and realize that my level is too low to see the Boss’s attributes. It’s same for the rest of the players. For a Level 55 Purple Rank Boss, it’s reasonable to say that a minimum of Level 49 is needed to see its stats. The current information is hardly complete, and though we can see the tip of the iceberg, all we can gather is that this Boss won’t be easy to kill —

[General of the Everlasting Wind] (Purple Rank Boss)

Level: 55

Attack: ???

Defense: ???

HP: ???

Skills: ???

Introduction: General of the Everlasting Wind was a general in a distant empire about 2000 years ago. Disagreeing with the cruel and atrocious emperor, he betrayed his country. Later, he was chased by the Imperial

army to the East Coast where he used his long blade to massacre a thousand soldiers. In the end, he was imprisoned by a crafty black magician. His soul was broken into pieces and his body imprisoned within the Valley of the Everlasting Wind. After being imprisoned for such a long time, his natural temperament has changed and has been reduced to that of a murderous devil.

.....

I smile: “We can’t see his attributes and skills, only that he is a Level 55 Purple Rank Boss. How do we fight him?”

Li Mu ponders aloud: “Kill him with brute force? We can use Monks to surround the Boss, then kill him using ranged attacks, this tactic should be feasible and may reduce our losses.”

Everyone looks at Jian Feng Han. After all, he is the Guildmaster of [Vanguard] and also the man behind the plan to take down this Boss.

Jian Feng Han appears to understand what everyone is thinking. He sticks his longsword into the ground and looks towards the Boss: “I think that we should split into 3 squads. Squad 1 will be Xiao Yao Zi Zai, with the General Family assisting him, as well as 20 Healers to focus on keeping their HP up. If Xiao Yao Zi Zai cannot hold up and it leads to Squad 1 to be exterminated, Squad 2 will engage the Boss. Squad 2 will be led by Fushen Moren and assisted by sufficient DPS and Healers. If Squad 2 cannot hold up as well, then Squad 3, led by myself, will attack the Boss. If Squad 3 also perishes, then that means we have failed.”

I frown but do not say anything.

General Li Mu narrows his eyes: “Bad idea?”

Wang Jian grips his longsword: “Yeah, not smart.”

Jian Feng Han looks surprised: “Why not? Is there anything that you all disagree with?”

Li Mu nods: “Doesn’t it seem a bit inappropriate that you invited the 4 of us from the General Family and Xiao Yao to assist and are now placing us in the main battle force; Asking us to engage the boss first? After all,

we have no idea what the Boss's skills, HP, attacks and defense are at the moment. To attack hastily would mean an easy death. I think we should be Squad 2, while you can form Squad 1 and attack the Boss first to test out it's skills."

Jian Feng Han licks his lips and raises the corner of his mouth: "Alright, Brother Li Mu has a point. Let's do as he suggested! [Vanguard] will organize a squad to attack first, to test the Boss's skills and stats. Who's willing to go first?"

Fushen Moren raises his staff and shield: "I will!"

Jian Feng Han shakes his head: "No, you are [Vanguard]'s main tank, you shouldn't be in the advanced party. How about..... Monk, why don't you go first?"

From the crowd, a Level 39 Monk from [Vanguard] steps forward. In his right hand, he holds an iron rod, in this left, a shield. His bald head shines as he grins: "No blood relations means being relegated to cannon fodder. Just joined the guild and I'm already given a nice errand....."

ID: Goodbye Tears Level 39 Monk

.....

Goodbye Tears quickly chooses 7 healers, more than a dozen mages, archers and musketeers, as well as 2 assassins as the main DPS dealers.

"Guildmaster, shall we start?"

"Yeah!" Jian Feng Han seems to chuckle: "You can only blame yourself for ridiculing me on the forums....."

.....

"Brothers, stay strong, let's roll!"

Goodbye Tears raises his iron rod and roars as he rushes towards the Boss. As he raises his arm, a golden ray shines down, [Put Down Your Sword] reduces the Boss's attack by 10% and draws a large amount of aggro!

"Clang clang clang"

Right after getting hit by [Put Down Your Sword], the General of the Everlasting Wind is immediately agitated and angry. Emitting wrath as he struggles to stand up, he bellows: “Damn it, you lowly adventurers dare to violate my territory, die!”

“Bang bang bang

The irons chains break apart as the General of the Everlasting Wind struggles free from the chains and regains his freedom. Raising his longsword, he rushes toward Goodbye Tears and snarls: “Baldy, your life is mine!”

.....

“Crash!”

Bloody bristles appear on the edge of his blade as it slams into Goodbye Tears’s shield, sending countless sparks flying!

“741!”

“What kind of attack is this.....”

Goodbye Tears retreats several steps and wielding his iron rod he lunges forward, “Bang”,the strike connects straight onto the Boss’s forehead as he shouts: “Healers, focus on me. Mages use Ice Wind and Ice Cones to reduce his attack!”

Author Note: One of <Destiny>’s controls allows the setting of the skill level to be used to be decided by the player. For example, if a players can execute a Level 10 Combo, he or she can choose to use a Level 1 Combo or a Level 7 Combo etc. When activating the skill, the Level of use will appear in the box below.

Chapter 82: Reasonable Tactics

Whooshwhooshwhoosh...

In the glow of the three continuous [Heals], the monk's HP is pulled back up. With tears, he raises his steel rod and aims for the boss, but it barely does anything with an attack damage of under 100.

Lime coloured air swirls around General of the Everlasting Wind and suddenly his sword trembles with 4 golden hexagrams sweeping across his sword. Damn, it's a [Combo] LV-6! 4 strikes!

"690!"

"674!"

"710!"

"704!"

Luckily, the monk's total HP is at least 2000, and with a close heal, he withstood it. He holds his shield, slowly backs away, and yells loudly, "Quickly, use [Hemostasis] and [Heal], get my HP back to full!"

.....

The battle continues ferociously while the Generals and I watch from a distance. I clench my fists and frown, "This isn't too good. The boss's attack is too high. Even if the monk has enough defense, he can't dish out enough damage. Once he receives a large amount of damage, he can't guarantee that the aggro will be on him. The aggro might switch to the higher priority healers."

Li Mu nods and mutters, "Yeah, this isn't going too well..."

.....

Whoooooosh!

Under the ray of healing, his HP returns to full once again. But at the same time, the General gives up on attacking the monk. He raises his sword, spreads his arms, and bellows, "Die!"

With a whoosh, he uses [Biting Cold Blade], and the leaf-like skill lands in the middle of the 4 healers! It's an AOE attack!

The healers let out multiple large cries as a chains of damage numbers fly up. The 4 healers receive over a thousand points of damage. They fall one after another and become the boss's first victims.

I look at the battle and quietly say, "The General's [Combo] is a Level 6 skill so it can strike 3-4 times. The healing has to be very tight, or else I won't be able to tank through it. Also, his [Biting Cold Blade] is an AOE attack, so if there are over 2 players standing together, they can very easily attract the aggro. We will need to be careful as well."

Wang Jian clenches his teeth and asks, "Xiao Yao, is it possible that you can take on a boss like that?"

I smile, "Give me 10 healers that will continuously heal me non stop, then I can!"

"Mm, then that's good...."

.....

In the battlefield, the General already started to ignore Goodbye Tear's aggro control and he was raising his sword and causing destruction everywhere. Each of his attacks are in the form of an arc and spread death everywhere. Mages, musketeers, and archers all fell under the attack range of the General. Our first attacking group is almost annihilated.

"Damn..."

Feng Han clenches his fists and teeth while looking at the boss's direction. He yells, "The first group can't take it anymore. Xiao Yao Zi Zai, Generals, you guys prepare to go, and continue attacking the boss!"

I nod, "Feng Han, I'll be the leader. Give me 9 healers, and concentrate their healing on me. Bring your best healers, and they need to heal one after another, or else I won't be able to take on the boss's attack!"

Feng Han's gaze lands on Simple, "Sister?"

Simple raises her staff and says, “Duck, take 8 healers and join Xiao Yao’s party, concentrate all of the healing on him. I’ll make two mage and archer teams and we will control the boss. This is the second battle, we need to kill the boss in one go. If we leave it to the third group, then we might not have a chance to win!”

Very quickly, a Level 40 healer stands up, ID: Darling Duck. She should be the best healer in [Vanguard]. I’d give her a 7!

Tick!

System Notification: Player Darling Duck wants to join your party!

.....

I immediately accept and very soon, another 8 healers join in the party one after another. They are really some top class healers, the lowest leveled one is already at level 39. Duck is the only healer in my party that’s Level 40 with the second promotion. She has [Healer Advent], [Revive], and [Group Heal], the three second promotion skills. With her, the success rate should increase quite a bit.

“Duck?” I ask.

Duck widens her eyes, “Mm, what’s the matter, Xiao Yao?”

I say, “When the boss uses [Combo], after his first strike, use [Heal] and then use [Hemostasis] to keep me alive. If I ever get killed, then use [Revive] on me as fast as possible, or else I won’t be able to control his aggro.”

Duck smiles and nods, “Mm, I understand!”

On the side, the vice-Guildmaster raises her staff, and organizes a 20-man group. She yells, “Do not stand together, everyone spread apart, or else [Biting Cold Blade] will land on you!”

I look to my right and see General Li Mu raising his longsword. He gathers a 10-man party together with 3 healers and yells, “Xiao Yao is the front line. If he ever gets too low, then we will immediately go take on the boss to buy him some time. Be sharp healers, I might need to tank some

damage. Remember to do some tight healing or else I'm just going to meet the grim reaper..."

The healers look at each other, understanding that the pressure is on them. Tight healing. Easy to say but hard to do. To do tight healing, you need to anticipate the attacking time of the boss, because all healing spells have a bit of lag time. [Hemostasis] has 0.1 seconds of lag time, which is near instant, but [Heal] has a lag time of 0.5 seconds, which is quite a bit confusing.

.....

We finish preparing and Goodbye Tears is already kneeling in front of the General. Feng Han gets agitated and says, "Xiao Yao Zi Zai. If you don't go now, when will you go?!"

I bite my lip, grab my sword and run over there. I need to instantly grab the boss's aggro!

A clear sharp sound comes from the sword and 3 golden hexagrams sweep along the blade. Without any hesitation, I attack the General. The sword cuts through the air and it strikes the General's hip. With 3 clangs, 3 damage numbers also fly up—

"311!"

"287!"

"325!"

Of course, the boss's level is too high, to the point where even with [Turmoil Sword], [Encourage], and other buffs, I can't penetrate its defense by a large amount. However, dealing 900+ damage with a single [Combo] is pretty good.

Growl....

The General glares at 3 mages from afar with his blood-red eyes and seems to be planning to charge at them. My aggro isn't high enough, this won't do!

With a circle of white light, Baby Bobo's [Combo] attacks 3 times. The

boss hesitates for an second before his body tilts slightly. This is the chance that I was waiting for!

Whoosh!

A white-glow appears under my legs, it's the activation of [Strength of a Thousand Men]!

"147!"

"172!"

"155!"

"74!"

With those attacks, it's obvious that my attack damage and strength doesn't match my opponent's. My head became purple from the ramming. Nevertheless, my sword collects the wind and after 0.2 of preparation, I use my strongest attack—[Wind Blade]!

Bang!

The sword's edge sparks blue as it slashes the boss's heavy armor and a huge damage number pops up—

"1544!"

A Critical hit! Not bad!

But the thing that breaks my heart is that I still don't have the boss's aggro. The ranged attacks from behind are way too strong and I immediately chase after the boss who's charging towards the backline. I check my skills' cooldowns and my sword starts to emit a glow. Ice starts to swirl around my sword and I strike powerfully at the General's back—[Fierce Ice Blade]!

"679!"

Indeed, the skills gained from the second promotion are strong. Frost starts to form on the boss's armor and his speed is greatly decreased. The slowing effects from it are stronger than the ice spells from mages!

.....

Growl...

The General finally turns around and with blood-red eyes, he stares at me. The corners of his mouth rise and he says, "Brat, are you looking for death? I'll bring you into the depths of Hell!"

He raises his sword, and a blood-like glow appears on it!

I instinctively step back but my body feels like it's attracted to a magnet and it's hard to move. I feel a wave of pain on my shoulder. The boss's attack landed on me!

"987!"

Of course, I'm no monk. I haven't put any points in endurance, so my defense is a bit weaker!

I had already casted a skill right when the boss was striking and with a flick of my wrist, I heal myself. [Heal] recovered 600 HP, and at the same time,

Ding!

LV+1.

[Heal] rose to level 5 in the middle of a battle! Last night, when I kept on using this skill. I had forgotten to look at the skill proficiency!

The boss' killing intent instantly rose since my [Heal] gathered a large amount of aggro. The guy sweeps his blade and starts a Level 6 [Combo]! 4 strikes!

I see through it instantly and jump to the side to dodge it!

"MISS!"

I successfully dodge the first one, but I can't do the same for the next 3!

"847!"

"+870!"

"821!"

"+614!"

“+434!”

“811!”

.....

A chain of damage numbers and healing numbers blend together. Duck's healing effect is quite good, she has a 750 base heal and with equipment and stat points, the heal effect rises to 870. She also healed me the instant I took damage. There aren't many healers like this and in all of Ba Huang City's healers, her skills are at least in the top 5!

Right when my skill cooldown ends, I immediately use [Wind Blade] and [Fierce Ice Blade]. The two skills provide explosive damage and with the slow from [Fierce Ice Blade], the General bellows in frustration. He tries to kill me but can't. Even though he has a level 6 [Combo], he's a bit slow when it comes to using it and I can usually dodge the first strike. With that, a lot of my pressure is reduced.

In the air, many high-leveled mages including Simple continuously cast freezing spells. On the tip of her staff, a curiously dangerous combination of fire and ice appear. In the next instant, the Level 40 skill [Pillar of Fire and Ice] casts!

“774!”

[Pillar of Fire and Ice] is a 5×5 meter AOE magic spell. Combined with such a high damage, it is really amazing.

“Careful, don't go too close!” Feng Han warns from afar.

Sadly the mages were a bit too slow. With a sweep of the boss's blade, a leaf-like glow appears between two mages and they are instantly killed!

“Damn...”

My heart sinks, but I continue slicing at the boss with my sword. After a few seconds, I use [Strength of a Thousand Men] again. The boss can only keep slashing at me. But with 9 healers healing me continuously and 1558 HP, it'll be hard for me to die, even if I want to!

.....

“Hehe, looks like Xiao Yao can tank everything on his own...” Li Mu smiles.

Wang Jian frowns, “Boss, we need to be careful. If he makes any mistakes then we need to save Xiao Yao instantly...”

Li Mu nods and doesn't say anymore.

Chapter 83: The Proclaimed Fairness

“Keng!”

The long blade strikes my Dawn Breastplate, leaving behind a dent and forcing me to fall back a few meters. My Silver Locked Battle Boots fiercely slide to a stop against the grassy plain. Using both of my legs to send force towards my sword-hand, I activate [Strength of a Thousand Men] and attack the General of the Everlasting Wind’s forehead.

“Keng! Keng! Keng!”

A string of damage numbers fly out.

Behind me, Simple leads the group of archers and musketeers to attack the boss using long range attacks. The Boss’s health drops quickly; a meagre 17% remains after 10 minutes of battle, even though the durability of my items are falling down at an astonishing rate; my Dawn Breastplate already lost 74% of its durability. But, I would’ve already paid the Grim Reaper a visit if not for the 9 healers continuously healing me.

.....

Jian Feng Han stands behind the fight as steady as a mountain, the corner of his mouth slightly raised and with his hand firmly grasping his sword, he smiles: “As expected, it was a good call for Xiao Yao Zi Zai to be the tank, over 97% of the Boss’s aggro has been on him. He has surprisingly high defence even though he belongs to the swordsman class, so his equipment is not bad at all; he can even hold his own against a Level 55 Purple Rank Boss’s attacks.

Fushen Moren stands beside Feng Han while carrying the Broken Army Shield, his eyebrows tense up: “Apparently, I, [Vanguard]’s number 1 tank am not of any use right now. Guild Master, if the Boss drops gold equipment, will you actually give it to Xiao Yao Zi Zai, even though our [Vanguard] provided the potions and healers? The equipment should be rolled to a more deserving person

Jian Feng Han smiles slightly: “No, look at it in the long term, 1 or 2

pieces of equipment aren't anything. If [Vanguard] wishes to sit at the top of Ba Huang City, then we must recruit many talented players. This is the first cooperation between Xiao Yao Zi Zai, the General Family, and us. After this, we should be somewhat familiar with each other, and then we can possibly recruit them to join [Vanguard]. Ahh, these fellows have talent but each and every one of them is not easy to deal with. It requires patience to subdue them.....”

Fushen Moren nods: “Ahh, hopefully this Boss will drop a Guild Creation Tablet. Hehe, once we get the Guild Creation Tablet, we'd be a huge step closer to becoming Ba Huang City's number 1 Guild...”

Simple waves her staff while shouting loudly: “Xiao Yao, pay attention to your mana, without your [Heal] you won't be able to control aggro.....”

I take a quick look at my mana and immediately take out a Chilling Wind Pill to refill it: “Relax, my mana is sufficient, I'm using Level 1 [Wind Blades] and [Fierce Ice Blades], so they only need to consume a little mana, my main mana consumption is [Heal].”

“Ahh, hehe, smart guy!”

“Thanks!”

.....

Countless Ice Cones go straight at the Boss's chest creating different explosions. General of the Everlasting Wind's health is dropping steadily and he howls and brandishes his blade randomly. But against me, he has no chance.

General Li Mu rubs his hands together and says excitedly: “Hehe, the first Purple Rank Boss will soon be overthrown, and I'm here to witness the historic moment. What will it drop?”

Wang Jian replies: “I don't know but I hope it is a golden axe. Bai Qi has been wielding a bronze axe for a long time and it's embarrassing for us.”

“If a breastplate drops, does Xiao Yao Zi Zai get it?” General Bai Qi asks.

I use [Wind Blade] and take the time to reply: “No, if a breast plate drops, we will roll for it. If a sword drops, it’s mine.”

“Alright, such a nice person.....” Ba Qi says with chuckle.

....

Suddenly, the General of the Everlasting Wind lets out a huge roar. He kneels to the ground and pounds the ground with his left hand, angrily shouting: “Spirits from hell, heed my cry, come to me! Let us destroy these enemies in front of us! Let us show them that the General of the Everlasting Wind is indestructible!”

The earth trembles as many dark shadows rise. They fly around the general as he absorbs them into his body; it looks just like black magic.

“Finish him , the boss is evolving!?” Jian Feng Han grips his sword and shouts: “Xiao Yao, be careful! Do not get killed!”

I clench my teeth and say: “Don’t worry, I will not die so easily!”

....

Ding!

System Notification: Please note that the [General of the Everlasting Wind] successfully absorbed nearby souls. The General is now a Level 60 Purple Boss, his attack power increases by 10% and his HP recovers by 15%!

Damn, his health has recovered!

I raise my head and see the Boss’s blade coming down on me!

“1198!”

That really hurts! It feels like I almost died!

I swing my Jade City Sword and stab the Boss’s body with [Fierce Ice Blade]. A huge damage number of 1344 appears. In addition, Darling Duck quickly uses her [Heal] and I recover another 870 HP and I’m almost at full health!

The pressure on the healers and me is huge. All of the attacks of the

Boss are biting into me. I would rather die than keep fighting this Boss. Now I truly understand the pains of a Main Tank. A good Main Tanks resists violent strikes and feels the pains of weapons cutting into his flesh, and I'm starting to walk down that path....

....

"Full power! No mercy!" Jian Feng Han pulls out his sword. With a burning passion in his eyes, he shouts: "As long as we kill it within the next 3 minutes, we will be the first players to have killed a Purple Rank Boss. No more going in as groups! All together now! Full power! Everyone join in!"

"Ok...."

My heart leaps in surprise. I quickly shout: "Jian Feng Han, calm down. Think rationally, don't be impulsive..."

Jian Feng Han replies: "Don't worry!"

As a result, berserkers, swordsmen, assassins flood over to the boss. Soon, I was fighting side by side with them and we were producing an amazing amount of damage!

"Go to hell!"

The General of Everlasting Wind raises his sword and swings it down into the large group. I suffer huge blow and my HP drops by 1100+. Several berserkers and assassins fall to the ground and die immediately!

I reach behind me and grab a health pot. I quickly shout into my party channel: "Darling Duck, focus on healing me and don't pay attention to the others!"

Darling Duck nods: "Ah, Chief ordered everyone to fight together? This is chaos!"

Standing not far in the distance, General Li Mu frowned, "Fuck... it looks like a frenzy trying to get the drops of the boss..."

General Wang Jian clutches his sword: "Be carefully guys."

...

Strike by strike, the General of Everlasting Wind killed over a 100 players, but our damage output is too strong and his hp has reached 1%!

I count 5 seconds and then put my strength into my arms, this is my chance!

“Peng!”

Without stopping for a second, I use [Strength of a Thousand Men].

With my custom combo, the Boss’s HP continues dropping. When the Level 4 [Wind Blade] hits, all of his Hp disappears!

“Ow, ow.....”

With a ringing noise and the death of the Boss, I am bathed in two columns of light. I receive a lot of experience and reach level 42. I finally enter into the ranks of the top 5 in Ba Huang City leader boards!

...

“Pata.....”

As the General of Everlasting Wind kneels forward, a large bounty bursts forth. I look and see at least 100 gold coins laying in the grass. But I don’t pick it up because they are promised to the Vanguard guild. Three other items drop: a golden leather helm, a golden necklace and a double edged blade with a faint purple glow.

A purple-tiered sword!!!!

At that moment, everyone’s heart stopped. Right now, golden equipment is still very rare. For a boss to drop a purple item, this is a super rare drop!

(AU: The tier system: Black → Green → Bronze → Silver → Gold → Purple → Emperor → Sacred → Saint → Divine → God → Epic)...

Nobody makes a sound. A silence falls over the entire area. Floating above the purple tiered sword are enticing purple glowing words— [Heavenly Plan Sword] (Purple Tier) !!!!!

...

Really, a purple-tiered weapon!

I quickly sheathe my sword and reach out for the purple sword.

“Shua!”

All I see is a shadow speed past me. Before I know it, a man reaches the purple sword and looks at me as he picks it up. It’s Jian Feng Han! Who else could it be, others don’t have that kind of sprinting speed.

...

“Unfortunately, the boss did not drop the Guild Creation Tablet.” Jian Feng Han chuckles, as he hold the Heavenly Plan Sword. “But still, this purple blade that dropped isn’t bad. A god-like sword, a purple tier...”

I clutch my Jade City Sword and turning to face him, I whisper, “Jian Feng Han, we already agreed beforehand that all sword type weapons would belong to me. I only had this one requirement. This Heavenly Plan Sword is mine!”

Jian Feng Han looks at me and smiles, “Xiao Yao, I think you’ve misunderstood. I told you before that if it was a gold sword or lower, I’d have no problem just giving it to you, but this is a purple sword. We, [Vanguard], had 100+ brothers sacrifice 1 level in exchange to acquire it. How could I just give it to you? How about this? I’ll pay you... I’ll pay you 1,000 gold. Okay?”

.....

“Ugh...”

My mind goes blank. I have been duped! This time, I really got cheated!

Trembling, I raise my head and stare bloody-eyed at Jian Feng Han. I whisper, “Is this how one of China’s top ten guilds gets its edge? Jian Feng Han, in front of your hundred plus guild members here, you plan to openly steal my loot? How do you hope to face the hundreds of thousands of players in Ba Huang City?”

Jian Feng Han purses his lips: “Xiao Yao, don’t get too excited. You are my friend... I couldn’t possible steal what belongs to you, but following

our previous agreement, this purple sword definitely cannot go to you. How about this? Let's have all the players here roll for it. That way, it's fair."

"Fair my ass!" General Li Mu cries, as he draws his sword and backstabs Jian Feng Han.

Shua!

Likewise, I pierce at Jian Feng Han's neck with my Jade City Sword.

This will be a bloodbath. Even if Feng Han has hundreds of guild members around him, even if I die and lose all my equipment, I will kill him! I'll show them that I am not afraid when I say –

From now on, I am your enemy!

Chapter 84: Honesty

“Pu!”

“384!”

A large damage number appears as the sword glances off Jian Feng Han’s shoulder. I dash forward and use my shoulder to ram straight into Jian Feng Han’s chest.

“Peng!”

He retreats swiftly as my Jade City Sword flashes and 3 golden hexagrams appear on it, unleashing a Level 4 Combo with a bang!

Behind Jian Feng Han, General Li Mu growls as an aura surges from under his feet. This is the custom combo he is proud of – [Wuan Xuanwei]!

“Bang bang bang... ..”

With a concentrated stream of attacks, [Wuan Xuanwei]’s first 4 strikes take out 600+ HP from Jian Feng Han. Then, Li Mu lowers his body and thrusts suddenly. There will be a high probability of hitting Jian Feng Han so hard that he gets knocked off his feet, so that the final revolving strike can deal the most damage. What a pity, Jian Feng Han is too agile and just as [Wuan Xuanwei]’s fourth stroke ends, he quickly moves between some nearby rocks. Lowering his body, he rolls onto the grass behind him and succeeds in escaping from the last 2 strokes of [Wuan Xuanwei] as well as my combo.

.....

“Shua.....”

Rolling into the open several metres away, Jian Feng Han readies his sword in front of his chest as the healers around him heal him and exclaim: “You guys..... what are you trying to do!? We are friends, not enemies!”

I raise my sword and point at Jian Feng Han: “A friend would not steal

equipment, Jian Feng Han; you are our enemy from today and forever more. You must die today!”

Jian Feng Han gazes coldly at me: “With more than 100 [Vanguard] players here, do you guys think you can kill me?”

“Crash!”

General Wang Jian suddenly attacks from the rear, piercing Jian Feng Han’s chest with the tip of his sword as he fumes: “It doesn’t matter what people think, Jian Feng Han, you’re not fit to be our friend!”

“Pa!”

General Lian Po’s arrow lands on Jian Feng Han’s arm. As his white beard floats in the wind, he says: “May the gods be our witness, the Heavenly Plan Sword belongs to Xiao Yao Zi Zai, and everyone knows this to be true! Die! Even if I have to sacrifice myself to get rid of you Jian Feng Han, I will make sure you die and drop the Heavenly Plan Sword so that it can be returned to its rightful owner!”

I’m greatly moved and while holding the Jade City Sword, I yell: “Even if I lose the Heavenly Plan Sword today, I, Li Xiao Yao will have no regrets. To exchange one sword for 4 friends, it’s worth it!”

Nearby, the beauty Simple shivers and has a complicated look in her eyes: “You...you guys please stop this...”

Jian Feng Han draws his sword and shouts: “All [Vanguard] members listen to my command, kill Xiao Yao Zi Zai and the 4 members of the General family. Kill them right this instant!”

...

Ice Cones, Rock Spikes, arrows, musket rounds and other attacks fly through the air at us. Our time to live is numbered with the dozens of long range attacks flying at us. How can we resist when we are pure attack classes? Since death is inevitable, we better take some of them down with us....

“Go, fight!”

General Bai Qi yells, raising his axe, and rushes into the crowd of [Vanguard] members. Swinging his large axe, he kills several mages in an instant. But multiple Rock Spikes appear underneath his feet. In the blink of an eye, he kneels in a pool of blood and dies. The [Vanguard]'s mages are all elite class. Their attack damage is inconceivable!

General Li Mu looks around and quickly adds me to his party. In his party channel, he shouts: "Xiao Yao, Wang Jian and I will cut off his retreat. You focus on killing Jian Feng Han. Don't worry about us, we will fight to our last breath!"

"Okay!"

I quickly nod as Li Mu and Wang Jian part ways and fight through the crowd. General Lian Po continues to fire arrows from afar, but he cannot match the firepower of the [Vanguard] musketeers. The general slowly falls to the grass and dies.

"Ah!"

Wang Jian uses his combo. But Jian Feng Han moves slightly to the right and by kicking a rock he avoids the blade and a large "MISS" appears. At the same time, he retaliates by swinging his blade to cut down Li Mu!

"Keng keng keng...."

A chain of sparks appears on Li Mu's armor. It's Jian Feng Han's Twelve Hammer Combo [1]! Li Mu falls to the ground from the shock of the attack.

"Ohhh...."

I rush forward while summoning Baby Bobo to kill Jian Feng Han's Hellhound. With my Jade City Sword raised, I slash down on Jian Feng Han's back.

"You're dreaming!"

As if Jian Feng Han could see in 360 degrees, he predicts my attack. With a turn of his blade, his sword clashes with the Jade City sword.

However, behind Jian Feng Han, Li Mu lets out a huge roar and uses [Flame Blade] to pierce through Jian Feng Han's arm!

"415!"

At the same time, I activate [Fierce Ice Blade] and stab at Jian Feng Han's neck!

"554!"

Unfortunately, [Heal] and [Homeostasis]'s glow fall from the sky and Jian Feng Han's HP stays above 50%. This is not good. Li Mu sees this, clenches his teeth and says, "We must kill Jian Feng Han with one hit or we will die instead!"

Without any hesitation, I grab Jian Feng Han's throat, lean forward and thrust my Silver Locked Battle Boots into his stomach. At the same time, I feel a burning yet freezing sensation on my back; it's the effect of [Pillar of Fire and Ice]. Finally, Simple decided to help her brother.

"Bang!"

Eating a punch to the face, Jian Feng Han's head flings back. He, then, looks back at me with eyes full of anger, saying: "Xiao Yao Zi Zai! Do you understand what you are doing?!"

"I'm killing you!"

I slide forward. Under my feet, a faint glowing aura appears. I launch my S Level Combo, [Strength of a Thousand Men]!

"211!"

"234!"

"241!"

...

Stamping on to the ground, I ram my shoulder into Jian Feng Han's chest, causing him to lose his balance! Light gathers at my blade for 0.2 seconds as I prepare to launch [Wind Blade]!

"Kacha!"

The Jade City sword almost completely slices open Jian Feng Han's chestplate. A large number appears—

“899!”

Instantly, Jian Feng Han's HP falls very low. At the same time, my Combo comes off its 6 second cooldown!

With a hint of desperation in his eyes, Jian Feng Han shouts, “Darling Duck, [Revive] me immediately after I die ! ”

Not too far away, Darling Duck stands carrying some health potions and her staff. She looks at us with her beautiful eyes and says: “Why did this happen? Why did Guild leader and Xiao Yao have to become enemies?”

...

“Keng Keng Keng...”

Sparks fly as I continue my fast attacks. I don't give Jian Feng Han any time to heal as I hack away at the rest of his health. Meanwhile, Wang Jian kneels over with his chestplate full of arrows, musket fire, and smoke.

The corners of Wang Jian's mouth turn up. As he dies, he smiles and says: “Xiao Yao is amazing. He really got rid of that trash....”

I glance and see that as Jian Feng Han died, a few equipment dropped. In them is a glowing sword, Heavenly Plan Sword!

“Pa!”

I reach out and grab Heavenly Plan Sword. To my side, Li Mu laughs: “Great, you got it!?”

But, at that moment, Darling Duck uses revive and Jian Feng Han's corpse jumps up with 50% of his health and mana. Flames flicker on his sword and [Flame Blade] along with a Combo land on my chest. With dense arrows and spells flying at me, my [Heal] won't be enough!

A violent pain erupts from my chest, I've died!

The instant that I fall, I glance at Li Mu. He has a helpless expression

watching his final 10% of health be destroyed by a barbarian who, using an axe, splits Li Mu's shoulder apart.

....

“Shua!”

I appear in the nearby graveyard. In my soul state, I still clutch my Jade City Sword but because I killed Jian Feng Han, I had a red name and lost two levels. In addition, the glowing ring on my hand also dropped. Finally, my inventory is empty; the just acquired Heavenly Plan Sword also dropped.

General Li Mu looks at me: “Are you okay?”

“Sorry, Heavenly Plan Sword dropped...”

“That's expected...” General Li Mu nods: “It's part of <<Destiny>>'s rules. Newly acquired equipment has a high chance of dropping. But, to be able to kill Jian Feng Han in the middle of over a hundred [Vanguard] players, that's enough.”

On side, Wang Jian furiously clenches his fist: “It can't end like this. Jian Feng Han is trash, complete trash.”

General Lian Po smiles and meaningfully says: “You can't say that Jian Feng Han is trash, it's just that Purple-tier swords are too expensive. Heavenly Plan Sword is a priceless treasure right now. If it were any other weapon, Jian Feng Han might have given it to us, but he also is dreaming for an upgrade on his old sword and Heavenly Plan Sword is perfect. So Jian Feng Han could only sacrifice us.”

Bai Chi holds his axe: “Damn, he's shameless!”

Li Mu pauses: “We lost quite a few levels this time, Xiao Yao, what are your plans?”

I thought about it before saying: “I would like to thank you guys for your support today. I, Li Xiao Yao, will remember this day for the rest of my life. But to attack [Vanguard] right now is kind of dumb. We're only 5 players and can at most kill 20 players. Our opponent is [Vanguard], 20

players is nothing to them, and they have thousands of players. We can't fight that."

Bai Chi nods: "Yup, your right, we can't go and fight them now."

Wang Jian asks: "Then... Then what should we do now?"

Liao Pao asks: "Xiao Yao, do you really want the Heavenly Plan Sword?"

I firmly shake my head: "Of course not. To make you guys lose another level over a single weapon, I'm not that kind of person. But thankfully, [Vanguard] didn't get a Guild Creation Tablet this time, so let's try to get one ourselves. How's that?"

Liao Pao smiles: "Great! I was also thinking that. With Xiao Yao's DPS and survivability, all we need to do is get some good healers and we'll be able to defeat level 50+ gold-tier bosses. If we could get a Guild Creation Tablet before [Vanguard], that'd be the greatest blow to them!"

Li Mu also smiles: "I feel that the most important thing right now is to get the video for the battle just now and our conversations with Jian Feng Han. Jian Feng Han would want to keep his "honorable" appearance and if we don't have any solid evidence, he would definitely say that we're lying!"

I nod: "Yup, I have the videos for the past 24 hours."

"Great!"

.....

TL: Arc End!

Chapter 85: Mind Reading

In the Valley of the Everlasting Wing, a chilling wind sweeps through everything.

Under a huge tree, the General of Everlasting Wind's corpse still hasn't refreshed yet but the [Vanguard] players have already left. On the equipment ranking, a new weapon took the top spot, it was the sole Purple-Tier weapon – Heavenly Plan Sword. It's overall stats are about 4 times the stats of the next best weapon. Most infuriating, the owner of Heavenly Plan Sword has put his name next to the equipment, its Jian Feng Han.

Shua!

I revive and with my Jade City Sword, I appear next to the General of Everlasting Wind's corpse. Li Mu, Wang Jian and the other four also revive. There shouldn't be any danger here anymore; Jian Feng Han is someone who tries to keep up a good appearance so he wouldn't camp or try to kill us. He's a joker, even when I killed him, he had an innocent appearance and it was this innocent appearance that made those [Vanguard] players turn on us.

.....

Sitting on a huge rock, I say: "Let's discuss what we're going to do from now on..."

Li Mu sits in front of me and says: "Xiao Yao, you should probably know this. Me, Wang Jian and Bai Chi were high school and college classmates. We just graduated for two years so we still keep in contact. Lian Po is a friend that I know and he's been involved in virtual reality games for a long time so he decided to join the General family..."

I smile: "I'm envious of you guys!"

Li Mu continues: "Since we've decided to play this game, we might as well do it with a bang. We want to realize a dream, a dream of being respected by everyone. It might seem a little silly but we want to create a

guild, even if it isn't the best guild in the game, it should at least be one of the top guilds. For our four helmets, we saved money for three entire months, our studio's rents are backed up pretty far too...."

Wang Jian: "Boss, stop..."

Li Mu smiles: "It's fine, Xiao Yao is one of us."

"..."

Li Mu: "Therefore, what I want to say....since it's like this, Xiao Yao, why don't you join our Generals family and fight with us, wouldn't that be better for you?"

I pause before raising my head: "For now, I'm not considering in joining any guild."

"Mm, we won't force you." Li Mu laughs: "Let's talk about what going to happen next. I looked at our fight with the General of Everlasting Wind and I feel like with you, Xiao Yao, killing bosses shouldn't be too hard. All we need are some high leveled healers and mages. I plan to fight a boss within the next three days. We'll invite you to be the tank, we'll use an employer-employee system. We only want the Guild Creation Tablet, the other equipment that the Boss drops will go to you."

I couldn't hold back a smile: "It's fine..."

Lian Po sits up, startled: "Xiao Yao, you don't plan to help us?"

I shake my head: "No no no, as long as you guys ask, I'll definitely come. But, I don't need any compensation when I help with the boss. I'll just take the equipments that I need and the rest go to you guys."

"Alright, it's a deal?" Li Mu excitedly says.

I look at his level and smile: "Yup, we should hurry and level. When Wang Jian and Liao Po's level get to 40, we can start fighting the bosses."

"Sure, we'll get there tonight!"

"Alright! Let's friend each other to keep in contact!"

"Sure!"

.....

I watch Li Mu and his group leave and then look at my own equipment and level. I'm at level 40 with 47% experience. It's not bad since even though I lost two levels, I am somewhat close to level 41. All I lost was a Glowing Ring but to trade that for four friends, it's definitely worth it. Equipment, as long as I'm still alive, I can find more equipment."

What should I do next? Continue leveling or....

I pause and think about it for a second before I decide to go to Dragon City.

Out of the Fire Stone Canyon, I head straight to Dragon City. At the edge of Dragon City, I stop by to say hi to Beast Trainer Dalin. Afterwards, when I began to leave, he closes eyes and falls asleep immediately, I wish I could be like him.

Standing at the end of the Ice Spine, I look up and see thousands of miles of snowy mountains and my goal, the Dragon's Tomb, is on the other side of this mountain. This is going to be tough, dammit!

Step by step, I start climbing the mountain. My level 40 strength isn't too shabby so as my Jade City Sword plunges into the side of the mountain, I get to the top of the mountain in 15 minutes.

Standing at the top of the mountain, I look down and find the Dragon's Tomb shrouded in a dull glow. In addition, above the Dragon's Tomb seems to be an invisible dome which prevents snowflakes from falling through and also makes the Dragon's Tomb seem like it's in the fall. Where does this dome come from? Maybe it's the legendary dragon's spirit....

I jump down the mountain and slide down into the dragon's tomb. Far away, the stone door entering into the tomb is shut tightly and my teacher – Dragon Tomb's guardian Karl is resting within the tomb. Even when I knock, no one answers...

.....

At this time, a Ti! sound appears and a message comes from Cang Tong

who is Lin Wan Er: “Li Xiao Yao, how did your Boss fight go?”

“We defeated it...but there wasn’t a Guild Creation Tablet, you guys?”

Looks like Lin Wan Er doesn’t know what happened after we killed the Boss.

“We also defeated the boss, the level 55 Gold Tier Boss isn’t too scary. We finished the job after 40+ players died...”

“Then I’ll congratulate Hero’s Mound...”

“Congratulations? We didn’t get the Guild Creation Tablet....” In Wan Er’s icon, she purses her lips and smiles: “It’s already 3 pm and me and Dong Cheng are both tired after fighting that boss. Let’s go to the school’s cafe and relax. We’ll be having a lot of Boss fights from now on and the atmosphere in the game is so heavy now...”

“Sure, wait for me downstairs.”

“Sure, come quickly...”

“Yup!”

.....

I raise my head and looked at the stone door, dammit ... If that old geezer doesn’t want to see me, then I’ll go to Wan Er. Near Wan Er I can always look at her, which is a pretty good luxury and after Wan Er and I have been together for some time, she’s slowly beginning to become nicer to me instead of being savage like the first time we met. Is her scar of me seeing her in the company slowly disappearing?

After lunch, at about 3 pm, the warm autumn sun shines into the schoolyard and filters through the scattered trees. Stepping through the trees’ shadows, I arrive at the girl’s dorm and find Lin Wan Er and Dong Cheng Yue already waiting for me. The girls are wearing such refreshing clothes. Lin Wan Er is wearing a short skirt and high heeled sandals. Her snow white legs causes the surrounding male student’s imagination to run wild. Even the female students can not help but glance at them.

“Xiao Yao!”

Dong Cheng Yue walks over while laughing and says: "You really are the most famous person in Ba Huang City right now...."

My heart skips a beat. Damn it. I did not know that the news of what happened at the Valley of Everlasting Wind and Jian Feng Han becoming my enemy would spread so quickly. These two girls must already know.

Lin Wan Er's eyes sweeps up and down my body while she smiles and says: "No need to guess. Before Dong Cheng and I went offline, we looked at the forums. It's really a shame. The Purple-Rank Heavenly Plan Sword just brushed by, or else you would've be one of the top combat players in the heavy armor classes in the China server."

I purse my lips: "If I got it, I would be happy, if I don't have it, I wouldn't die. I've gotten over it..."

"Haha, Let's go. I want to go to a cafe"

"Ok"

A few minutes later, we sit down at the newly open cafe. It was relatively quiet with soft music playing.

Lin Wan Er sips her coffee and pushes her phone in front of me. Smiling, she says: "See this? It's Jian Feng Han's post. I feel that you should leave Ba Huang City for a while."

I look at the cell phone. On it was one of Destiny's website forums. In a large red post, it says:

[Ba Huang City] Apologizing to Xiao Yao Zi Zai and the four members of the General's family! (Post Owner: Jian Feng Ha)

Content: Today, in the fight at the Valley of Everlasting Wind, with the help of Xiao Yao Zi Zai and four members from the General's family, we, [Vanguard], defeated a level 55 Purple-Tier Boss. Even though a Guild Creation Tablet did not drop, the first Purple-Tier equipment in the entire server dropped. It was a level 55 Heavenly Plan Sword with an upper attack of 775 and increases attack damage by 4.5%. Maybe it was a misunderstanding but Xiao Yao Zi Zai thought that the sword belonged to him and thus PKed [Vanguard] members. Xiao Yao Zi Zai and the four

generals died after killing dozens of [Vanguard] players. I, Jian Feng Han, am not one to hide things, moreover, I don't like to pick on weaker players, let alone friends. So I'd like to apologize to Xiao Yao Zi Zai and the four generals here. Hopefully you can forgive the [Vanguard] players who retaliated after you killed our [Vanguard] friends. We're still friends and hopefully, after you calm down, we can get together. A cup of wine resolves thousands of grudges, so friends don't leave any scars between each other. Hopefully you guys can contact me and [Vanguard] will always be your friend!

.....

Peng!

I smash the table and Lin Wan Er and Dong Cheng Yue's drinks shake violent. I struggle to keep control my anger. Keeping the corners of my mouth lifted, I smile and say: "Haha, how interesting...."

Actually, in my mind, I've already cursed Jian Feng Han to hell, man, screw you and your whole family...One of these days, I'm going to get my revenge! Just wait and see!

Lin Wan Wan stares at me, as if she had a mysterious power that could make people intoxicated, She laughs and says: "Experienced the vicious side of people? If you want to curse then you should just curse, there's no need to curse his whole family..."

Stunned, I raise my head and look at Lin Wan Er. How did 34D know exactly what I was thinking?

Lin Wan Er sees me looking at her and her cheeks turn a shade of pink. She bit her lip: "What are you thinking?"

"I...."

I didn't know what to say, so I gulp down a big mouthful of coffee. Again, I look over at Lin Er Wan. What a scary girl. Can she really see what I am thinking?

Dong Cheng Yue glares at me with her beautiful eyes, smiles and says: "Xiao Yao, Have you ever heard of a kind of inherent ability called Mind

reading?”

My body trembles. “Wan Er, you couldn’t possibly...?”

....

Lin Wan Er giggles. Her laughter sounds like the spring wind blowing over a frozen pond. Smiling, she says: “I was only guessing. Do you really believe there is such thing as mind reading?”

I stare at her in disbelief.

Lin Wan Er looks at her phone, “You should post your side of things. Or are you not planning to fight back?”

Chapter 86: North Star Style

“You can’t leave this alone, you need to strike back right now...” Cheng Yue clenches her fists and looks at me with a determined gaze.

Wang Er looks at me with hope and also nods.

I think for a while and silently take out my cellphone. I find the two-part video that I had prepared. The first section is Feng Han’s promise to me that I will have priority over the equipment that I can use. The second part is the video where Feng Han kills me and the 4 Generals for that one purple-rank sword. Combined the two, there should be nothing left for Jian Feng Han to say.

.....

Tick!

Cell phone Prompt: Upload this game video?

I quickly confirm and name the video: 【About the Battle of the Sword and its Origin, the TRUTH is in this Video! 】

After that, I also add a description to the video: I am Xiao Yao Zi Zai. Everyone should know the truth of what happened after watching this video. Although Jian Feng Han is the guildmaster of [Vanguard] and a top-class player in the China server, he is a dishonest person. Would an honest person sell out his friends for one purple-rank sword? I don’t want to explain too much because this video will explain it all.

.....

It takes approximately half a minute to upload and the video is on the forums.

Wan Er refreshes her page and smiles, “I’ll bump it up for you...”

Cheng Yue uses her phone, “Mm, me too...”

“Thank you!”

After a few minutes, Cheng Yue raises her head and smiles, “Xiao Yao, look at this, your post is already a sticky post! Hehe, this’ll be interesting,

I would really like to see what Feng Han has to say about this!”

I open the post up and it really is sticky. After just a few minutes, there are over a thousand replies—

【Post 1 (Player Cang Tong)】: First, hello people...

【Post 2 (Player Color Pond)】: Wha, I’m not mistaken, am I? The previous post is by the #1 beauty of Fan Shu City?!!

【Post 3 (Player Color Pond)】: Yep, I’m right! The rumours are true, Cang Tong really knows Xiao Yao in reality...

【Post 4 (Player Cang Yue)】: Support Xiao Yao and defeat Jian Feng Han!

【Post 5 (Player Exiled)】: Look at the video first. This afternoon is so crazy and the truth is finally revealed!

【Post 6 (Player Piggy)】: So that’s where the purple-rank sword came from...

【Post 7 (Player Yue Qing Qian)】: Oh, Xiao Yao’s post...Support Xiao Yao without question!

【Post 8 (Player Vanguard Pioneer Camp)】: Xiao Yao Zi Zai, you can’t trick anyone with that tongue of yours! We saw everything today, you were the person who attacked the guildmaster first and now you’re accusing us?

【Post 9 (Player Feels)】: I want post 1, 4, 7...

.....

The corners of my mouth turn up and I smile, “Posts 1-10, so many beauties....”

Wan Er sips a bit of coffee and smiles, “Of course, Qing Qian has completely fallen for you...Just a beauty saving a bear...”

I glare at her, “Who said that? My relationship with Qing Qian isn’t what you think it is!”

“To explain it is to cover it!”

“Sigh...”

Cheng Yue leans on the table, tilts her head and looks at me, "Xiao Yao, what are you planning to do next? You and the Generals won't have an easy time in Ba Huang City after irritating Feng Han and [Vanguard]. I know that you're not scared of Feng Han, but think clearly. With a small flick of his finger, he can call over 1000 people to go after you to stop you from leveling. He can constantly keep your level below 40. He can even kill you till you reach level 1 if he wants. He can basically do whatever he wishes to you. How about you come to Fan Shu City and join us at [Hero Mounds]. To be completely honest, Q-sword isn't a bad person. He and Feng Han are said to both be the top-class players, but his character is way better than Feng Han..."

I look at her with conflicting thoughts, "I have never thought of joining other people's guilds. I had originally thought of creating my own guild or for you two to create one and we would be fighting against the world or something, but now if I join in other people's guild, that would just be me relying on others..."

Wan Er's delicate shoulders tremble, as she sits there blankly and says nothing.

Cheng Yue, on the other hand, seems to be in deep thought. After a while, she says, "I also want that, but our influence isn't high enough. Also, Wan Er and I have never created a guild before and our friend lists aren't too full either. If we create a guild, then I'm afraid that it'll only be us three. Getting the Guild Creation Tablet by itself is a huge task. We need dozens of top-class healers; where would we get any?"

I nod, "I know this is very difficult, but I won't give up."

Wan Er lowers her head, daydreamingly staring at the desk. After a few seconds, she raises her head, looks at me and says, "You really want to create your own guild?"

I clench my fist, "Mm, when I get the chance, I will reconstruct the Zhan Long team. After gathering my former members, I will create my own guild. Wan Er, will you and Cheng Yue join it?"

"What are the benefits?" Wan Er asks with a smile.

“Benefits...” I pause for a moment, “What if I gave you my heart?”

“You wish...”

Cheng Yue laughs on the side, “I think Wan Er and I would join, but only if your guild is strong enough, right?”

Wan Er goes with the flow and nods and with seriousness in her voice, says, “Li Xiao Yao, I support you in creating a guild. If...Mm, if your guild is on the top 10 in China, then me and Cheng Yue will join it instantly, how about it?”

I clench my fist and say, “Mm, I understand. I will work hard...”

Wan Er laughs lightly, “Mm, you should try to survive in Ba Huang City first... Say, how did you anger so many people? At first, it was Tyrant of Western Chu/Liu Ying chasing you, but now the entire [Vanguard] guild is after you. I don’t even know what to say...”

“.....” I stay silent.

Dong Cheng purses her lips, “It’s very simple; Xiao Yao is probably the strongest healer, he can both heal and deal damage. His battle strength and recovery power are already enough to challenge Jian Feng Han, a top-class player. I’m guessing that Feng Han doesn’t want him in the running for the top seat, so this is jealousy, I think?”

I smile, “I doubt it. I’m not that powerful yet. I think it’s just that I have bad luck. The first Purple-Rank Boss dropped a purple-rank sword when it died. Feng Han may not be that selfish, but he couldn’t resist the temptation of a purple-rank sword. In this case, I can probably understand why he did it...”

“That’s fine. What are your next plans then?” Wan Er smiles.

“Actually, I don’t have any big plans but my class instructor is in the freezing wastelands. The monsters over there have really high levels and the environment is hard to traverse in as well. The distance from there to Ba Huang City is about an hour by foot; most players aren’t willing to venture that far, so leveling around Dragon City is safe. I do plan to help the Generals kill a boss and get the first Guild Creation Tablet. Of course,

my priority right now is to reach level 41 and level my main battle skills, [Combo], [Fierce Ice Blade] and [Wind Blade], to level 5 With that, my strength will increase quite a bit...”

“Mm, good luck!”

“Thanks...”

.....

“That’s right...” Wan Er suddenly pauses and looks at me, “There’s still an hour till the dinner at 6, how about we go to a more interesting place, mm?”

“Huh? Interesting place?” I’m stunned.

“The Swordplay department...”

“Swordplay department?” I’m even more stunned.

Dong Cheng smiles, “I know the Swordplay department. It combines both foreign sword styles and Chinese sword styles together. According to rumours, it’s being controlled by a violent force...”

I purse my lips, “Wan Er, what are we going to the Swordplay department for?”

Wan Er’s dimples indent slightly, “I know a senior at the Swordplay department. Wang Ran, do you know her?”

“Fifth in Liu Hua University’s top 10 beauties...” I smile, “Of course I know her!”

“She invited me to go check out the Swordplay department but I’ve been putting it off for a long time. Now I have time, why don’t we and take a look? We’ll go online and continue to grind our levels after dinner. How about that?”

“That’s fine. Cheng Yue, you’re coming too?”

.....

In the brightly coloured autumn day, we leave the cafe. Stepping on the fallen leaves, we go towards the eastern-section of the school. Around

here, there are gyms, piano rooms, public rooms and other recreational rooms. The basketball court is filled with passion with countless boys' bare arms dribbling while they sweat like it's raining. Of course, there are groups of girls on the side checking out the boys' bodies. Their eyes are drawn towards them; they may even be having dirty thoughts... That rings a bell: If you want to pick up girls, then play a sport. It has to be basketball though, soccer won't do...

In the fencing department, I can hear the clashing of swords from far away. After entering, there are indeed dozens of people facing each other and attacking with bamboo swords. They are all practicing Japanese sword styles. Among the people, a woman wearing white sportswear is holding a bamboo sword. Looking at her, without a doubt she is the legendary Wang Ran.

"Senior~~" Wan Er yells from afar.

Wang Ran quickly spins around and instantly her face is filled with smiles, "Oh, our guest is here! Wan Er, you finally came to visit my department..."

Wan Er smiles, "Mm, but I brought two friends too. Is that okay?"

"It's fine..."

Wang Ran smiles politely. At the same time, she looks at the male students behind her and yells, "Stop staring at the beauties and continue practicing! Get your act together!"

With bangs and clangs, the group of males fight with even more effort as they see the legendary #1 beauty of Liu Hua University. Wan Er comes in wearing the latest fashion and although she is lacking a bit of fighting spirit compared to Wang Ran, she makes up for it with her charm. Wan Er's looks also win by a chunk, so she, of course, grabs quite a bit of attention.

.....

I stand next to Wan Er and say nothing as I look at the male students putting effort into their training.

Bang!

The bamboo sword strikes and it slices through the air in an arc. I couldn't help but exclaim, "Kasaya strike..."

Kasaya strike, one of the 9 battle strikes in Japanese Kendo.

Wang Ran says surprisingly, "This student, you also know swordplay?"

I'm caught off guard, "Uh...I know a bit..."

Cheng Yue looks at me, "I think that Xiao Yao is quite good with a sword..."

Instantly, a male student behind Wang Ran speaks up. He picks up his bamboo sword, walks towards me and arrogantly says, "What are you called?"

"Li Xiao Yao, what do you want..."

That student proudly raises his bamboo sword and says, "I'm called Zhao Mu, Mu with 3 dots. I am the vice leader of the Swordplay department and my style is the North Star Style, how about we spar a bit?!"

I hold my cup of tea and say, "I've only heard of Zhao Mu, with 'herd' as the Mu..."

TL: In Chinese, there can be different words of the same pronunciation. The Mu in Zhao Mu means to cleanse but Mu can also mean to graze or herd and a lot of other meanings.

Chapter 87: Dual Sword Style

How very despicable!

In front of the beauties, this Zhou Mu wants to use me as a stepping stone to show off? This behavior is so despicable. Even if he wanted to attract Lin Wan Er's attention, he did not need to challenge me to a spar. And also.... after the incident at the company, her beautiful arcs keep me up every night. I cannot lose face in front of Lin Wan Er....

At that moment, I glance over at Lin Wan Er. I'm surprised when I see her looking back at me. Her cheeks turn slightly pink as she looks at me with eyes filled with resentment. In a low angry voice, she says: "Xiao Yao, you pervert...."

My heart sinks, as it becomes clearer and clearer; Lin Wan Er seems to be able to sense what people are thinking.... Could this be mind reading?!

...

This won't do. I can't lose face anymore, not in front of Lin Wan Er. To Dong Cheng Yue, I seem strong; Today, I will win!

I stand up and put down my milk tea, smiling: "Okay. Since Zhao Mu invited me so kindly, I will join you in a spar. Let's be careful and not injure each other..."

Zhao Mu laughs: "Don't worry, I won't injure you."

I furrow my brow. These people are really egotistical. No wonder the swordplay club is just one big violent group!

Wang Ran's eyes grow wide: "Li Xiao Yao, can you do it? Zhao Mu's North Star Style is unrivaled among the swordplay club. Even I can't beat him."

I nod: "Don't worry!"

"Then... which weapon would you like? A bamboo sword?"

"Okay, Give me two!"

"Two?"

“Yes, two bamboo swords!”

“Ah, ok...”

...

Wang Ran personally hands me two bamboo swords. Holding them in my hand, they seem so light compared to my Xiao Hei; they're as light as toys.

TL: Xiao Hei is Xiao Yao's sword in real life

Zhao Mu grips his bamboo sword with both hands. His eyes are filled with confusion: “Two swords? Did you think that having another sword will make you stronger?”

I laugh a little: “It is not like that. These bamboo swords are too light. With two, I can control the speed much better. However, it does hit harder.”

“Ba!” Zhao Mu says angrily: “Then I will give you a taste of the North Star Style's most fearsome strike!”

Holding one bamboo sword in each hand, the blades become an extension of myself. With a faint smile, I say: “You only know that North Star Style's most fearsome strike is the strike: Killing Intentions. You probably don't know that the North Star Style came from Japan learning China's Tang dynasty's swordsmanship. You also probably do not know China's Han dynasty's borderland warriors use a dual swords style!

Zhao Mu coldly says: “Dual sword style? Okay, let us see if this Dual sword style is as impressive as it sounds....”

...

At the same time, a loud noise sounds from outside of the swordplay club. Many of the girls that were watching the basketball competition decided to come over. All of them have their eyes wide open like curious little babies.

“Wow, Isn't that guy ‘Maniac Killer’ Zhao Mu? Who is he dueling?”

“A student that I don't know, dual swords though.... wow, he looks very

handsome holding two swords....”

“Its gonna be a good show.”

...

I wrinkle my brow and whisper: “Wang Ran, could you please close the club door?”

Wang Ran nods. She quickly runs to the door but there are so many girls outside that Wan Ran can’t close the door. On the other hand, after they see showdown here, everyone will probably leave.

“Can we start? Come!” I impatiently say.

Zhao Mu takes a deep breathe and charges toward me while roaring loudly. Holding the blade with both hands, he rushes towards me with small steps. Suddenly, he quickly thrusts the blade at a weird angle, aiming at my underarm. This is the North Star Style!

Twisting my wrist, I turn over my right hand. “Pah!” I block his blade with mine. Then I lean forward and strike!

“Pah!”

Zhao Mu retreats a few steps and his complexion turns purple.

On the sidelines, the students stare on with dumbstruck eyes: “Wow, Zhao Mu’s attack was blocked? What kind of reaction speed does he have?”

I spread my two swords. With a slight laugh, I say: “Good, a blitz attack!”

“Pah!”

My sports shoes stamp on the ground and I spring forward as fast as lightning. Afterwards, the dual blades begin to dance!

“Oh....”

Zhao Mu immediately yells out. He carelessly tries to block my attacks by placing his bamboo sword horizontally in front of his chest but he could not block my attacks. The dexterity of dual blades is incomparable

to a single sword and I use almost every skill I know from the Dual sword style to harass Zhao Mu.

“Pah! Pah! Pah!”

I leave behind marks on Zhao Mu’s clothes as I swing my swords. Within 3 seconds, my swords hit him at least 29 times!

...

3 minutes later...

“Pah!”

I throw both swords on the ground and turn around to look at Lin Wan Er. Smiling, I say: “Miss, let’s walk around the garden once and then go to the cafeteria for food. It doesn’t seem like we have time to go to the library.”

Lin Wan Er and Dong Cheng Yue both stare at me with their mouths wide open with amazement. Apparently, this is the first time these two girls have seen me show off my swordsmanship.

Wang Ran is more amazed by me than the two girls. She understands the basics of Dual Sword Style but what I displayed was beyond the basics. Every second, I executed 10 different attacks which is almost at the human limits. It is only natural that I had to train and train until I reached this state.

“Li Xiao Yao....”

Wang Ran runs up and grabs my wrist. A pair of beautiful eyes look up at me: “Would... would you please join the swordplay club?”

“I can’t. I just met you.”

Zhao Mu stands there disappointedly, with a hurt expression.

Slowly pulling out my hand, I give Wang Ran an apologetic look: “Sorry, I am already in a club. That is why I cannot join the swordplay club.”

Wang Ren’s jaw drops: “What club are you in?”

I say forcefully: “Table tennis!”

“Ah?” Many expressions cross Wang Ran’s face: “Such an amazing swordsman. How can you be in the table tennis club?”

Lin Wan Er starts to laugh.

Dong Cheng Yue narrows her eyes. Looks like someone is a rising star in table tennis.

...

As we leave the swordplay club, a fall wind blows through and the two beauties’ short skirts flutter lightly in the wind. I thoughtfully, place my palm on Lin Wan Er’s back.

“Li Xiao Yao, what do you want to do?” Lin Wan Er suddenly turns and looks at me.

“Hiccup..”

I raise my head and smile: “I want to help the Generals get the first Guild Creation tablet. I wonder how they will thank me.”

Lin Wan Er purses her lips. With a small laugh, she says: “You want something too far out of your reach. Level 50+ Gold bosses do not fall so easily. I heard that from all three of the big cities, Niu Lu City, Fan Shu City, and Ba Huang City, teams were sent to kill the boss. More than 100 divisions were wiped out. One guild suffered incredible damages; they sent 500+ people to fight a level 57 purple ranked Boss. After 5 rounds, everyone fell below level 40. While they were trying to gather people to fight the boss again, the Boss just flew away....”

“Pfff...” Dong Cheng Yue stifles a laugh.

I remain silent for a second. “Okay, if the Generals can not find another healer like Darling Duck that will come then it might be hard. I require a 2nd promoted healer to cast a level 5 heals in addition to my own level 5 heal to be able to tank it. Killing a gold rank Boss ought to be a bit more easier but they rarely spawn.”

Lin Wan Er nods: “Ok. As of today, the number of dead Gold level bosses among the three cities have reached 9 but no one has found a Guild

Creation Tablet yet. It is said that Gold level Bosses drop chance is at 0.7% and Purple level Bosses drop chance is around 3%. For Bosses, it seems higher rarity has higher drop chances. However, higher rarity also means tougher bosses; many players have died to them. So, you shouldn't think about it too much."

"Ok, I will burn an incense before confronting the Boss"

TL: In chinese culture, you usually burn incense as an offering to accompany a prayer of good health or luck.

"Huh?...."

"...."

....

After eating dinner, I shoo away a wave of boys from the two girls. After at the girls dorms, I help Lin Wan Er send away a large male student holding a bouquet of roses. I wait until they go upstairs and check that it is clear before I leave. Every boy in Liu Hua University views me as an enemy. I have a bad feeling about this....

At my dormitory, Glasses is wiggling on his bed. I know that he must be doing something intense in Destiny but in reality, he isn't really moving that much in real life. It is the game that is making him move, that is the only way to explain his lack of coordination. I guess this is good for him. For example, lets say Glasses keeps on using his skills in game and in real life, he would wiggle, wiggle and boom he's in the bathroom. Then, he can have an exceptional endurance because he doesn't have to log off to take care of bodily needs.

"Shua!"

I go online and appear within the Dragon Tomb. Beside me is the guardian Karl's house but it seems like he doesn't really welcome me with the stone door shut tight. But I need to get a mission so I will knock until this door opens.

"Pa pa pa....."

As I knock on the stone door, I ask: “KARL?”

“Squeak.....”

The stone door finally opens and Karl comes out in his wooden wheelchair. He raises his head to look at me and with a smile of arrogance he says: “Kid, do you know why that brat Frost left you here?”

I pause: “Why?”

“To make you undergo various hardships. Maybe you can’t take them so you should get out of Dragon City.”

“It’s fine...” I proudly stick out my chest: “Teacher, give me your assignments, I’ll be able to handle them...”

“Alright, then let’s start the first phase of your training in Dragon’s Tomb!”

Karl says: “Within Dragon’s Tomb, every dragon bone has an abundance of residual spiritual power. So, a lot of forces come and try to steal these dragon bones. Even though Dragon City has a few hundred soldiers, they are at least 20 minutes away so we must use our own power to protect Dragon’s Tomb. Recently, a bunch of tomb imps have appeared within Dragon’s Tomb and are stealing small dragon bones. We can’t allow them to disrespect the remains of the dragons so brat, your mission today is to kill 1000 tomb imps!”

“Ding!”

System Notification: You accepted a quest to [Hunting Tomb Imps] (The current quest difficulty: A grade)

Quest Description: Enter the Dragon’s Tomb and kill 1,000 Tomb Imps and bring 100 imp skulls to the tomb’s guardian, Karl. Upon completion, you will gain a huge experience reward. But you must be careful of these cruel and murderous imps. Perhaps, you’ll be one of the corpses stolen by these demons.

.....

Okay, looking at the task, it must be rich in experience. My goal today is

to reach level 42 and help the General family kill high level bosses.

Chapter 88: Dragon's Tomb Shin Guards

“Woosh... ..”

As the chilling wind whistled inside the dragon's tomb, I wrap the [Ice Fire Cloak] tighter around my body. Carrying the Jade City Sword and with Baby Bobo by my side, I slowly advance. Before me, as far as the eye could see, were countless dragon bones. The dragon's skeleton glows with a faint luster. This must be the dragon soul Karl mentioned. Before their deaths, the dragons must have swallowed everything, including gold and gems. Presumably, the bones have inherited some of that wealth.

Growing underneath every dragon bone, tall unknown weeds with black leaves emit a faint aroma.

“Sha sha.....”

Suddenly, the weeds rustle, and a small green dot shows up on the mini-map. Ah, a monster has appeared.

“Baby Bobo!”

Hearing my order, Baby Bobo rushes out, and fires a level 4 combo at the underbrush.

“Shua shua shua... ..”

Before the combo could finish, an ugly hunchbacked demon around half a meter high jumps out. It has six legs, four of which it uses to run. The other two legs it uses as arms. It clutches a dragon's bone between its sole two arms and begins to flee.

I quickly rush after it, firing [Fierce Ice Blade]!

“698!”

After the strike, the monster's attributes appear—

[Tomb Imp] (Elite-rank Monster)

Level: 45

Attack: 450-700

Defense: 400

HP: 3000

Abilities: [Steal bones] [Cut] [Penetrating Strike]

Description: Tomb Imps, small demons that live most of their lives underground. The species is on the fringe of extinction and because of their desire for shiny treasures rich in souls; they will often excavate graves, attracting a lot of hatred.

.....

I blink. Elite ranked?! Great, in addition to normal monsters, elite monsters also appear here. Compared to normal monsters, elite monsters are on a whole new field and of course, their rewards are also on a whole new field.

“Pi pi...”

A layer of frost forms under the Tomb Imp’s feet. With a hit from [Fierce Ice Blade], its movement speed steeply drops. Already unable to escape, it immediately turns to attack me with a [Cut] from its sharp claws.

“272!”

Fortunately, my 845 defense isn’t just for show. This level 45 monster’s attack has a ceiling of 700 points, plus the +20% elite monster bonus. Its attack isn’t even 900 points. It’s not enough to break my defense.

“Ding!”

With a humming sound, the golden hexagram floats on the edge of my sword and I use my combo, hitting the target twice. A lvl 4 Combo hits 2-3 times. So it just got the unlucky end of the stick, hitting twice. I really need to rise it to lvl 5. A lvl 5 Combo hits 3-4 times. Although the chance of 4 hits is relatively low, it will be devastating once it happens.

I look at my skill proficiency—

[Combo LV-4]:764/2000

.....

It's still early. Every time I use my combo, the proficiency raises by 1-2 points. I still need to use my combo 1000+ more times to raise to level 5. Fortunately, inside my bag are a sufficient amount of potions to rush my skills without fear of a lack of mana. While rushing lvl 5 [Combo] is easy, leveling [Wind Blade] and [Fierce Ice Blade] is a pain. Lvl 4 [Wind Blade]s consumes 80 MP and Lvl 4 [Fierce Ice Blade]s consumes 120 MP. It's extremely brutal. Perhaps, that is the reason why most players' melee skills stay at lvl 3. The potions are just too expensive!

"Jie jie....."

Under force of my combo, the Tomb Imp screams and falls to the ground. 7 silver coins burst out. How generous. Elite ranked monsters definitely are special. In addition, with +1 imp exterminated and a imp skull as bonus, this is going well!

Picking up the coins, I continue forward, and more Tomb Imps appear. Sometimes as many as 3 appear together, but fortunately, my defense is so high, it's impossible for them to kill me. I can come back here to milk this place without too much pressure of getting killed. A different class swordsman, even a top fighter like Jian Feng Han, would need to bring several healers into the map. Drinking HP potions alone certainly wouldn't be enough. Drinking a potion has a cooldown of 60 seconds. That is to say, for 60 seconds, the most I can add is 600HP. But since my [Heal] has a cooldown of 6 seconds, my recovery power surpasses potions by as much as 900%.

.....

The experience from these elite monsters is exceptional. For every 5 Tomb Imps killed, my experience bar jumps around 1%. At this pace, ah, after I complete this time-consuming quest, I should have leveled to 42. These Tomb Imps' respawn rate is pretty good, and the silver coins dropped is about 150% greater than what normal monsters drop. Soon, a few green tiered equipment drop too. Practically all of them are leather armors but it's still good.

Before I know it, 5 hours pass by and it's nighttime: 11:00 PM. I've jumped to lvl 41, while [Combo], [Wind Blade], and [Fierce Ice Blade] are all at lvl 5. Inside my bag are considerably fewer potions, but it is worth it. Especially for lvl 5 [Combo]. When I tested it 50 times, the chances of hitting 4 times was around 50%. While the official number given is 30%, out of 50 tries, I got 4 hits 27 times. There could only be one explanation — charm!

Yes, the effects of charm to increase the success rate of skills is starting to show, especially for improving my [Combo]'s probability. My 31 charm is like a treasure.

.....

“Gu gu.....”

My stomach growls. A little hungry, I go offline. But after eating a bowl of noodles, I return back online. Today's mission is to level up to 42.

“Kacha ! ”

[Wind Blade] cleaves off an imp's head while it gives off a horrible death shriek. And at the same time, three things burst out: silver coins, gems, and a ring. Looking at the ring's bright shine, my heart bursts; something amazing just dropped.

Hastily reaching down to pick it up, sure enough, it was an excellent ring. For elite monsters to drop such equipment. Great!

【Green Stem Ring】(Silver-Tiered Equipment)

Strength: +27

Magic Power: +22

Extra: Increases attack by 20 points

Level Requirement: 40

.....

Looking at +27 Strength and +22 Magic Power, these additional attributes makes me smile. While ordinary swordsmen have no use for

extra MP, for me it's extremely important. At lvl 41, I'm capped at 480 mana and my usage is far greater than the amount an Indigo Sea Pill recover. Now adding this +22 Magic Power, along with a swordsman's 0.8 magic power growth, I have a 176 mana bonus. This is like a gift from god!

Immediately equipping the ring, I feel the mana surge. The extra mana means I can use [Fierce Ice Sword] one extra time.

【Xiao Yao Zi Zai】(Tomb Guardian of Dragon City)

Level: 41

Attack: 726-983

Defense: 846

HP: 1473

MP: 656

Charm: 31

.....

I look down at the dropped gem with delight. Ohhh, my luck's too good —

【Soul Gem】: Strengthens weapons or defensive equipment to improve the quality of the equipment!

To my surprise, it's a soul gem! Not saying anything more, I open up the strengthening window and see the 80% success rate in strengthening the Jade City Sword.

“Ding!”

Strengthening successful!

【Jade City Sword +2】(Gold Tier Weapon)

Attack: 210-300(+42-60)

It's peerlessly sharp! Another addition of 21-30 hidden attack points.....

.....

“Di!”

A message from Lin Wan Er: “Yue Er and I are going offline. You should go to sleep too!”

This is the first time Lin Wan Er has taken the initiative of telling me goodnight. I excitedly reply: “Ah, sweet dreams!”

She sends a smiley face emoticon. The name goes dim and she goes offline.

After a few seconds, I hear another “Di” sound. It’s a message from General Li Mu: “Xiao Yao, are you still busy?”

“Ah, I’m in the middle of leveling, shooting for lvl 42 by tonight!” I look at his rank and find General Li Mu at lvl 43. His leveling speed is insane!

Ba Huang City’s golden emblem on my head was already gone, meaning that my rank at lvl 41, dropped to be top 10. Now I’m ranked No. 300+. It’s really depressing.

Li Mu replies: “Ah, you’re nearly lvl 42. Just to let you know, we’ve been busy as well. We’ve already found eleven lvl 37 healers willing to join us. We haven’t been about to find any at lvl 40; healers with second promotion are too scarce. But if we fight 50+ gold tier bosses, we should have no problems. I’m trying to start the operation tomorrow afternoon. Xiao Yao, you need to be online then!”

“I understand. No problem! But my only request is that I have the killing blow on the boss. I want to get more experience, or I won’t be able to re-enter the top ten.”

“Okay, we’ll let you get it.....”

“Okay.....”

.....

Continuing the leveling, I sweep through the Dragon’s Tomb once more. Already 2:00AM at night, practically all of the elite Tomb Imps have been killed off by me but I’ve also killed the 1000 Imps required and found 100 Imp skulls. There’s still 11% until lvl 42. Ah, finishing my quest

should be enough for me to level up. Cherishing every elite monster found, I search through the tomb once again and kill off the dozen or so that slipped through the net the first time. Carrying my Jade City Sword, I walk back, ready to complete my quest.

Inside my bag, there are a heap of black and green tier equipment, but no bronze tiers. The best drop was the Green Stem Ring but a second silver tiered item never turned up.

The small stone house is quiet. I use the hilt of my sword to knock on the stone door, yelling: “Teacher, I’ve finished your quest!”

Rolling out in his wheelchair, Karl looks at the 100 imp skulls and a smile finally shows on his hardened face: “Haha, kid, you really don’t disappoint. Those imps weren’t even slightly difficult for you. Come here, this is your reward!”

“Ding!”

System Notification: Congratulations. You’ve completed the A-level mission [Hunting Tomb Imps], Experience +32,000 points, +10 Gold coins, and your reputation in Dragon City has improved. You’ve acquired the quest item: [Dragon’s Tomb Shin Guards]!

.....

I hastily open my bag. I actually obtained equipment from the quest! ——

【Dragon’s Tomb Shin Guards】 (Silver-Tiered Equipment)

Category: Armor

Defense: 110

Strength: +28

Endurance: +25

Extra: Increases attack damage by 0.7%

Level Requirement: 40

.....

Great. This is just what I need. Replacing the bronze leggings, my

defense and HP both increase considerably; it's just in time for the raid on the boss tomorrow.

【Xiao Yao Zi Zai】(Tomb Guardian of Dragon City)

Level: 42

Attack: 744-1006

Defense: 872

HP: 1683

MP: 656

Charm: 31

.....

I have nearly 1,700 HP and my base attack broke a thousand, with [Turmoil Sword], my actual damage reaches 1100+! It's more than enough to break the defenses of level 50+ bosses.

After tidying up my bag, I return to Ba Huang City to replenish my potions and repair my equipment. Afterwards, I log out and go to sleep in order to save my stamina. Tomorrow, when I go online, I'll go and raid the boss. Before I fall asleep, I think: Just wait till I get that Guild Creation Tablet, [Vanguard]!

Chapter 89: Skeleton General

On the morning of the next day, I painfully sit through the morning classes and accompany Wan Er and Cheng Yue to lunch, then we all hurry up and connect online. All sorts of major guilds are planning to attack bosses, and all of them don't want to fall behind others.

.....

Whoosh!

1 o'clock in the afternoon, I appear in the middle of Ba Huang City. With a tick, General Li Mu sends a message, "Xiao Yao, you've finally came online! Hurry up and prepare, we'll meet up in the northern plaza of Ba Huang City. We've found a boss!"

"Okay!"

I take my sword and get over there. I notice the Generals surrounded by a dozen of players. Including me, there are exactly 20 players in this group and there are ton of healers; There are 9 healers, but without this many to heal me, I probably can't take all the damage up.

"Here comes Xiao Yao Zi Zai!"

Wang Jian smiles, "Damn, already level 42 now. His leveling speed is something!"

I shoot a glance at my shoulder and a golden Ba Huang City emblems appears on it. My ranking is same as usual—Ba Huang City's #10 player. Lowest ranking again... I look towards the ground, smile and ask, "Is everyone ready?"

"Mm!"

General Li Mu nods and says, "I didn't even dare drink any beer today to avoid affecting my game reaction speed. Everyone had already gathered around here at 12:20 and we were waiting on you!"

"Okay..."

I walk up, and I scan over our team—4 mages, all male, the highest is

already level 40, 1 level 39 musketeer, 1 wind spirit assassin, pretty similar to Wan Er in class and race, but this person pales in comparison... As for the the healer group, the healer lowest level is 37, the rest are level 38-39, and sadly there's only one level 40 promoted healer—

ID: Who's Blue LV-40 Silver Healer

.....

Her age is probably less than 20, and beside her, there's a level 39 female healer as well, called "Not Red Yet" and I'm guessing that they're playing together. To get to this level is already pretty good since there aren't many healers in Ba Huang City that have had their second promotion, maybe at most 100 players. To have their second promotion is already very good by itself...

"You should have [Healer Advent] and [Revive] right?" I ask.

Who's Blue nods, "Mm, I have it and I spent a lot of money on it, so I accepted this job...You're that Xiao Yao Zi Zai? Looking at you...you don't seem that powerful...Why are Tyrant of Western Chu and Jian Feng Han so scared of you and hate you?"

I put my sword on my shoulder and smile, "You've got it wrong. They aren't scared at me at all but rather they really want to kill me. Since we're prepared, then let's go. When we are killing the boss, everyone spread their healing times apart. 6 second cooldown, so everyone should heal me every second. You and Red, you two should have pretty good healing control right? Try to do some tight healing, right after the boss attacks me for the first time, heal me, so it will almost nullify the damage."

"Mm, I understand."

"Let's go! Lead the way Li Mu!"

"Okay, let's go!"

.....

Our group majestically leaves Ba Huang City. General Li Mu leads a

group of DPSs and I lead a group of healers. All 9 healers are in my party. Since I am probably the main tank, it'll be better for them to all be in the same party so there won't be anytime when I won't get healed causing the attack group to collapse.

As we walk deeper and deeper, Li Mu carefully looks around us, squints his eyes and smiles, "There aren't any assassins following us right?"

I blink my eyes, "I think you're overestimating yourself guy. [Vanguard], [Prague], [Flying Dragons] and [Wrath of the Heroes] all went and found bosses to kill; where would they find the time to follow us? Also, we are only 20 people here, who do you think we are..."

"Although you are correct, it does hurt our pride a bit..."

"Oh yeah, to create this group, how much did you spend?"

Li Mu coughs, moves closer to me and mutters, "The most expensive ones were those healers, Blue and Red those two. I spent 50 gold coins on them both, buy one get one free type of thing. The rest are the 7 healers, I spend 5 gold for battle costs, and the other mages are 10 gold per day. This is already pretty cheap, and the rest are people I know so they're free."

I'm shocked, "Did you promise them anything?"

"Mm, cloth type armor, or magic type equipment are given to mages, healing type equipment is given to Blue, and the rest we decided within ourselves. So that's how it is..."

I nod, "Yep, that's the best way to prevent any arguments. This time... Even if a purple-rank equipment is dropped, we need to give it to them. We only have one life, and trust is very important."

Li Mu smiles like he understands everything, "Mm, that's how it should be!"

"So who's our target for this afternoon's battle?"

"Level 52 gold-rank boss, [Skeleton General]. It's in a hidden place in the Ba Huang Forest so we should hurry up and get there. It was just

discovered barely an hour ago, so there shouldn't be anyone there yet. According to the Ba Huang City player contract, whoever sees the boss gets rights over the boss. Only until the first group of players get extinguished can the other players follow up and attack. So...we should get there as soon as possible.”

“Mm, but I don't have a good feeling about this. Level 52 gold-rank boss, the drop chance for the Guild Creation Tablet is less than 1%. With our luck, I'm afraid...coughcough”

“Don't jinx it, hurry up”

.....

Ba Huang Forest, the main forest surrounding Ba Huang City, also the main level training area for players. There are countless maps in Ba Huang Forest and over 80% of Ba Huang City's currently online players are scattered in Ba Huang Forest.

“It's ahead, no one's found it out yet!” General Wang Jian yells, “My assassin friends told me its here, hehe...”

The whole group rushes forward and goes through the shrubs. Indeed, in the dark and wet forest, a blood-red named boss stands there with a battle axe in his hand. A full body of red armor with a body of white bones. Also, long white hair extends from his helmet. Perhaps in his previous life, he was some good looking guy...

【Skeleton General – Wang Lin】(Gold-rank Boss)

Level: 52

Attack: ???

Defense: ???

HP: ???

Skills: ???

Description: The death king hidden deep in the forest, he has a battle axe sharpened from a pile of dried up bones...

.....

“Skeleton General...” I mutter.

General Li Mu raises his sword and stands next to me, “Xiao Yao, what’s the plan? You can direct us, against bosses you should be much more familiar than me. ”

I nod and smile, “Hm. This level 52 gold-rank boss wouldn’t be able to instantly kill me with my 1683 HP; this much is certain. But the only thing is the boss’s high cooldown skills. If it uses some explosive damage skill then there’s a chance that I might be killed, so Blue has to prepare the [Revive] skill. If I get killed, then you have to revive me within 2 seconds. If I revive within 2 seconds, then the aggro will still stay on me, or else the boss will rampage all over and everyone will get trampled by it. Remember, reviving me is very important...”

Blue nods, “Mm, Xiao Yao don’t worry, I will remember!”

“Then that’s good...” I grasp my sword and say, “Then I’ll prepare to go now. When my HP reaches 40% then heal me. I’ll do the first heal myself to lock in the boss’s aggro then after that just don’t let me die. Doing all that, we’re pretty much guaranteed that we can finish this boss off.”

Li Mu pats my shoulder, “Mm, you be careful and good luck on getting the Guild Creation Tablet drop!”

“Okay!”

.....

I summon Baby Bobo, take my sword and enter the shrubbery. My sword shines, and with a whoosh I use [Fierce Ice Blade] on the Skeleton General. This although this Skeleton General is a boss, it doesn’t have too good of an AI. It waves its axe and starts to retaliate, but its body is already been stabbed by the [Fierce Ice Blade] and as frost was forming on its body, a huge damage number also pops up—

“651!”

Very good, my attack damage is good enough to break through its

defense. Just as I finished the previous strike, I lean down, and punch the ground with my left fist. With a clang steel chains break through from the ground, and it latches onto the General's ankles. At the same time a glow appears from my feet, my S-rank combo is coming—[Strength of a Thousand Men]!

A chain of damage numbers appear, and the first 3 strikes knocked the boss's battle axe away, and my [Wind Blade] dealt over 800 damage in one strike!

"Die..."

The Skeleton General bellows, and raises its battle axe again with flames on it. Damn, it's the second promotion skill for players, [Flame Axe]!

Clang!

I feel a wave of pain on my shoulder and my entire body feels like it got compressed for half a meter. My body sinks down, and a damage number flies up—

"474!"

That's good, since this is a gold-rank boss, the damage is far less scary than General of the Everlasting Wind, which could easily require thousands. My 872 defense isn't just for show; many top-class monks and knights at this stage also have around this amount of defense.

I eat another axe, and my HP reaches 50%. I immediately wave my hand and cast a level 5 [Heal]!

Whoosh!

"+750!"

The instant the [Heal] was casted, a blood-red glow rose from the Skeleton General. It enters an angered state and the battleaxe focuses on me. Indeed, because of my healing, 90% of all aggro is on me.

.....

Under rays of light, the 9 healers behind me continuously recover my

health. Li Mu also took his longsword and yells, “Start the ranged attacks!”

Mages start to chant their spell and at the same time, I also yell, “Mages watch your MP, don’t use it up!”

The group of people nod.

I also pay attention to my own MP. I need to make sure that I can still use [Heal], so out of all my attacking skills, I only use level 5 [Combo] and only use level 1 skills for the rest of them. My 656 total MP can only allow for 4 level 5 [Fierce Ice Blade]s, so use level 1 [Fierce Ice Blade]s. Although the slowing effect is a bit worse, that’s not a huge problem.

.....

In less than 5 minutes, the Skeleton General’s HP is already 70% gone and cries and whines come from it. My HP hasn’t even gone under 30%, while I fought very safely. Even if the General uses all its skills, I can still hang on.

After 7 minutes, the boss only has less than 5% HP remaining, and we start the final battle!

.....

Blue smiles lightly, “O Aggro changes, O overheals, 27 missed boss attacks, waa, Xiao Yao Zi Zai is strong as the rumours say, the gold-rank boss doesn’t even know what to do...”

General Wang Jian holds his long sword and laughs, “Of course, or how else could Xiao Yao kill the purple-rank boss without dying?”

I look at the boss’s HP bar and don’t say anything. I only hope that when he dies he drops a Guild Creation Tablet, so we can prove that we are not the “losers”!

Chapter 90: Corpse Chief

“Pay attention to your healing. The General is about to die.” Li Mu says it excitedly, with his eyes wide open.

Keng!

“1148!”

A large damage number appears over my head as the Skeleton General’s final desperate attack hits. Fortunately, I have enough health to withstand the attack, I don’t want to think of the other possible outcome...

“Mages, stop your attacks!” General Lian Po yells out: “Xiao Yao gets the last hit on the Boss. We agreed on it before the fight started and we do not go back on our word!”

Immediately, the group of mages and musketeers all stop attacking. I see my MP is only a little over 200 so I eat a Indigo Sea Pill and activate a Level 5 [Strength of a Thousand Men]. The custom combo hits the Skeleton General’s body and a river of blood flows from his chest as he dies. In less than 8 minutes, we took down a level 52 Gold rank Boss!

...

“Woosh!”

My experience bar increased by 40%. Directly killing the Boss really does give a lot of experience. Rumor has it that Jian Feng Han and Yan Zhao keep themselves on the leaderboards by getting the experience from last hitting Bosses. They grind on many silver and bronze ranked Bosses everyday while I have to grind on normal monsters. I guess it’s unavoidable that they’re a higher level than me since they have many followers while I am a solo swordsman.

“Arrrgghhhh.....”

The Skeleton General collapses and items burst forward on the floor. I scan the items once and take a few steps back, pointing to the pile with a smile: “ Li Mu, this was your boss. So, why don’t you distribute the items?”

Li Mu chuckles and nods. Walking up to the pile, a flicker of disappointment runs across his face. The rare Guild Creation Tablet did not drop. Still, Li Mu gathers a large pile of equipment, turns and says with a large smile: “Now, I will divide up the equipment drops.”

【Black Wind Chestplate】:

Level 42 Silver Tier

Defense 117

Attack + 25

Magic Power + 11

Increases defense by 0.5%

【Inked Jade Staff】:

Level 44 Silver Tier

Female mages only

Magic attack 170 – 255

Magic power +27

Strength +18

Increases magic attack by 2%

【Falling Rain Boots】:

Level 42 Silver Tier cloth armor

Defense 49

Magic power +25

Agility +17

Increases magic attacks by 0.7%.

...

“Xiao Yao, would you like the **【Black Wind Chestplate】**? Level 42, silver tier?” Li mu asks.

I stand next to the Boss’ corpse and shake my head: “No, my chestplate

is gold tier.”

Li Mu laughs: “Ok, I should have known. If it wasn’t gold tier, how would you have enough defense to tank the Boss? Then the Generals will take this chest plate. Ba Qi, Wan Jian; You two should discuss it amongst yourselves as to who should get it.”

“Ok.”

Li Mu picks up the **【Inked Jade Staff】**: “This is a female spell casters only Staff. Sadly, we only have male mages. What should we do with it?”

I think for a bit and propose a solution: “Why not let Who’s Blue and Not Red Yet roll for it? I know it’s for mages but the +27 magic power and 18 strength is what healers need too.”

“Ok, you guys roll for it.”

After a few minutes, the **【Inked Jade Staff】** goes to Not Yet Red. She smiles as if she just tasted something sweet.

The last equipment, the **【Falling Rain Boots】**, goes to a level 39 male mage who rolled for it. Sadly, this item seems wasted as he could not even equip it because his level is too low.

...

“And there are 25 gold coins here. Let’s divide it evenly” Li Mu kept a fair sense of equality and justice in this lawless game.

I look at the leader board for Ba Huang City. After killing the Boss, I gained a lot of experience. Although I have not leveled up, I did enter the top 10 but my rank is still far from rank one and two; those two level up at an astonishing speed.

1. Yao Zhao Warrior Level 44 Class: Swordsman
2. Jian Feng Han Level 44 Class: Swordsman
3. General Li Mu Level 43 Class: Swordsman
4. Soaring Dragon Level 43 Class: Mage
5. Yue Qing Qian Level 43 Class: Assassin
6. Simple Level 43 Class: Mage

7. Fierce Tiger Level 42 Class: Berserker
8. Xiao Yao Zi Zai Level 42 Class: Tomb Guardian of Dragon City
9. General Wang Jian Level 42 Class: Swordsman
10. Yue Wei Liang Level 42 Class: Assassin

....

Li Mu stands next to the Boss' dead corpse. He looks at the leaderboard and purses his lip: "Damn it. Jian Feng Han has already reached level 44. If he keeps this pace, he will reach 45 by today. I heard that he didn't go offline last night so he gained thousands of experience from the Fan Shu City buff."

I couldn't help but smile: "This was inevitable. The first purple tier item is in his hands, but his level is too low to use the sword so he must be pretty anxious to level up."

General Wang Jian sees us, comes up and pats my shoulder: "Brother Xiao Yao don't let something like that bring you down. It is only a purple tier sword. Someday, a better one will drop."

I calmly say: "It's not that I didn't get the Heavenly Plan Sword. To think that someone like Jian Feng Han has the sword, just doesn't feel right to me."

General Ba Qi carries his battle axe and also comes over: "Boss, do we go hunt more or go back to the city to rest a bit?"

Who's Blue purses her lips: "Why rest? I haven't even used many health or mana pills. Who would think that with Xiao Yao Zi Zai, a gold ranked Boss didn't even aggro to me once."

Li Mu lifts his hand as his eyebrow tenses up: "Everyone, wait a second!"

"What's up?" Wang Jian asks with surprised expression.

Li Mu doesn't answer us. It seems he is in a private chat with someone.

...

After a few minutes, Li Mu dusts himself off and looks at us with a craze in his eyes: "Brothers, pack everything up. We are leaving

immediately. We are going just north of Ferocious Demon Canyon!”

“Ferocious Demon Canyon?” I tilt my head: “What’s over there?”

Li Mu lowers his voice: “I just heard that [Wrath of the Heroes] sent 400+ players to kill a Boss at Ferocious Demon Canyon. From morning till now, they have all been wiped out 7 times. They were just wiped out again a couple minutes ago. The Tyrant of Western Chu finally decided to give up on fighting this Boss. So, let us give it a go!”

Wang Jian balls his fist: “Crap! Even with 400 players, they couldn’t do it. We only have 20. How can we?”

“What do you think, Xiao Yao?” Li Mu looks at me.

I grip my Jade City Sword tightly and smile: “I will ask one thing, what Level and rank is the Boss?”

“Level 57, Purple Rank....” Li Mu’s voice slowly fades out.

“I’ll go.”

I take a deep breathe to fix my breathing. Suddenly balling my fist, I say: “Let us stop talking and go. I just need the healers to [Heal] me well and we can go fight the Boss. Once we are there, we need to confirm that the boss doesn’t have any special skills and then we can start fighting!”

“Ok!” Li Mu laughs: “You really welcome difficult challenges!”

“It’s not that. I just want a Purple Tier item, that’s all.”

“ ”

....

As we exit Ba Huang forest and quietly arrive at our destination, the mountain’s cold air blows at our faces. I look around and see a triangle entrance to a canyon. The mountain range is unusually rugged; It looks like a ferocious demon face. I guess that is how the canyon got its name.

“Wait...”

I lift my hand to block Li Mu from exiting the forest.

After a minute, a group of players with worn-out armor run out of the

canyon entrance. Clearly, they are [Wrath of Heroes]' players. Tyrant of Western Chu, Piggy, and Ageless Beauty are in the group. Their complexions are pale and ugly. The Tyrant of Western Chu is at level 39. It is obvious that the Boss inside of the canyon is really strong.

....

“Are we going to give up with this? I don’t want to....” Ageless Beauty furrows her brow.

Tyrant of Western Chu grips his sword tightly and faintly says: “Dear, let us not be anxious. Let us reach level 45 first before we try again. This is too hard for us and our guild has suffered too many losses. We will need to regroup and train a bit more first.”

Piggy says in a low voice: “We used 40+ [Heal]s. It wasn’t that the [Heal]s were not effective; it was that our main tank could not tank enough. Dammit, a level 41 monk dies so quickly to the Boss....”

Ageless Beauty says: “1000 defense should have been enough and he was at 1200+ defense.”

“Even if he could tank it....” Tyrant of Western Chu clenches his teeth: “The 1000 attack was not enough. The monk’s [Mountain Strike] only did 100 damage. Controlling aggro was too difficult. The first 5 times that we died was due to our tank’s fault. I don’t know what else to say.”

Ageless Beauty: “.....”

.....

Soon, another group of people leave the canyon.

Li Mu’s group and I crouch behind an underbrush and watch as the procession leaves. Wang Jian grips his sword firmly and whispers: “Already 200 people have passed by, I think the rest will directly resurrect back in the city. Should we go now?”

Li Mu nods: “Let’s see. The strategy is still the same as before. Xiao Yao is the primary tank, the rest are supports! We must quickly dispatch this Boss! I don’t want to spend too much time on this; otherwise someone

else might find this place, Wrath of the Heroes couldn't beat this Boss, but with our strategy, we will!"

"Yes!"

Raising the Jade City Sword out of the forest, I look around one more time and confirm that there are no more stragglers. I hold out my hand and beckon to my team. Our squadron of 20 peoples faces chilling wind of Ferocious Demon Canyon and proceeds. Within minutes, everyone entering the canyon could hear a ferocious demon shriek. The few females in our group turn pale; this map design is rather vicious.

.....

Within Ferocious Demon Canyon, it was a complete mess. All along the walls held the remnants of a fight. Vestiges of dead bodies of players remained scattered on the floor. Inside the stone canyon, the grassy ground was alight with fire from mage spells. The valley was filled with rubble. In the middle, there was a large crouching monster letting out a small roar. Its clothes were in tatters.

"Is that..... a Boss?" General Li Mu's voice shivers.

Looking carefully, I see a large creature. Clearly, it was a type of humanoid monster. Covered everywhere with twigs and steel poles penetrating through rough patches of skin, the monster had 3 heads and 4 arms stitched to his abdomen. A rotten stench comes from its intestines and filled the air. Holy crap, this Boss is emitting an intensely foul odor!

【Corpse Chief】(Purple Rank Boss)

Level: 57

Attack: ? ? ?

Defense: ? ? ?

Health: ? ? ?

Skill: ? ? ?

Description: Corpse Chief is formed by countless evil spirits and doesn't have a heart so it's extremely savage. Even dark mages of the Dark Forest

fear this ferocious monster. It was said that the Corpse Chief is very difficult to kill. In ancient times, even a legions of troops was destroyed when they fought the Corpse Chief.

Chapter 91: Journey Full of Misfortune

“This Boss seems to be a berserker type.” Li Mu takes a deep breath: “A level 57 Purple Tier Boss. This one should be stronger than the General of Everlasting Wind. Xiao Yao, will you be able to tank through this?”

I look at my character panel. My palms begin to sweat: “I don’t know. It depends on how lucky I am. If the Boss lands continuous critical hits then even god would not be able to defend against that, let alone me.”

General Ba Qi lifts up his battle axe: “Doesn’t matter. If you cannot withstand it then I will take your place.”

I shoot him a glance: “You wouldn’t last that long. As a berserker, your defense hasn’t even reached 600.”

Ba Qi scratches his nose: “I know....”

...

Behind me Who’s Blue says: “Xiao Yao Zi Zai, are you ready?”

I mutter: “Ok. I’ll go first as our tank. For the first 30 seconds mages and musketeers do not attack the Boss. Let me go alone and then a healer will heal me back to full. Everyone have your pets summoned to surround the Boss and don’t let it rampage!”

“Okay!”

Hexagons shimmer in the canyon. Only 11 pets were summoned. Most of them were bumblebees, vampire bats and other low end pets. They would not be able to tank the boss but at least they can divert its attention for a bit.

Gripping my Jade City Sword tightly, I am still unsure if this is going to work. As I slowly walk towards the Boss, I say: “Healers follow me and spread out. Don’t get too close. Stay at least 30 yards from the boss. Be careful, the Boss might have a ranged attack!”

As I approach 4 hexagons begin to glow on my Jade City Sword. I activate my LV 5 [Combo] and attack the monster!

“274!”

“301!”

“278!”

“289!”

....

It's defense is pretty high but I was still able to do 1100+ damage. I raise my blade and activate a LV 1 [Fierce Ice Blade]. With a laugh I stab at the Corpse Chief's body. Ice begins to freeze around his body and slows his speed. I then rush forward and start my custom combo [Strength of a Thousand Men]. After three strikes I ram my shoulder into the Corpse Chief's abdomen and stomp hard on the ground. I slash at him with my LV 5 [Wind Blade] and the Boss loses 900+ health. My proudest skill!

“Growl...”

After my blade first touches him, I've already let out a bunch of continuous attacks. The level 57 purple tier Boss even took a few steps back when I rammed into him. Bellowing loudly with a face full of complete hatred, his 4 hands begin swinging randomly. One of the hands is holding a sword and another one is holding a hammer. The two hands smash down at the same time. Dammit, because the boss has many arms, he can strike me with multiple attacks simultaneously!

“Bang Bang”

My Dawn Chestplate trembles. Above my head two damage numbers appear—

“774!”

“801!”

....

Seeing the numbers my heart almost stops. With only two normal attacks I almost died! I quickly use [Heal] and recover 750 health. At the same time Who's Blue and Not Red Yet both use [Heal] on me causing my Hp to fill up.

“Roar!”

As I slowly recover my strength, the Boss quickly moves forward. His abdomen fills up and pushes out. A “Bang” sound appears as he hits me!

“1028!”

My whole body recoils back and for 2 seconds, I am completely disoriented. This must be the Boss’s skill — [Merciless Strike]!

“Quick, treat me. Use [Homeostasis]!” I urge the group.

Fortunately within 1 second of [Merciless Strike] hitting, many healers wave their staffs, and immediately my HP goes back above 1000.

After the disorientation, I quickly summon Baby Bobo and we attack together. My [Combo] comes off its 6 second cooldown so I activate a LV 5 [Combo]. [Combo] doesn’t use much MP: a LV 5 [Combo] only uses 25 MP. So I use the highest Level of [Combo] freely.

As blood splashes forth, an unbearable stench from the blood enters my nose. As the main tank against this monster, I definitely am not an average person, this scent can kill!! The Corpse Chief bellows loudly and swings at me while using [Merciless Strike].

....

General Li Mu tightens his grip on his sword. He stands at the edge of the fight watching us with a stunned expression. He purses his lips: “Dammit! Even Xiao Yao with 872 defense takes that much damage. If it were me,.... I don’t even want to imagine it. This level 57 purple tier Boss indeed surpasses us by a lot. Luckily we brought a lot of healers or else we would have been beaten already!”

General Lian Po raises his longbow and aims at the Boss. With a “woosh” sound he fires an arrow that knocks off a part of one of the Boss’ arms.

“Bang”

Blood starts flowing out of the hole and the Corpse Chief’s attack are delayed by 0.2 seconds. This gives me a chance to recover; this old

veteran isn't bad. The 50+ year old curls his lips downwards: "Don't lower your guard! I just looked at the forums and learned that the Corpse Chief has a special ranged attack. It starts using it when its health falls below 50%. We need to be careful. The special attack wiped out the idiotic group of [Wrath of the Heroes] 3 times. It is its final desperate attack..."

"Ha!"

With one cut I slice off a chunk of flesh from the Corpse Chief's arm. I ask: "Uncle Lian Po what is the attack called? What happens when this thing uses it?"

Lian Po shakes his head: "Umm, the dead [Wrath of the Heroes]' members are not saying. Right now I can't find any information about the Boss' special attack. We can only keep going forwards and hope for the best!"

"Ok. Mages begin your attack! Be careful not to use up all your MP!" I duck down and a Miss appears as the Corpse Chief swings at me with his axe. I twist my sword and say: "Healers also take note of your MP. Do not waste your healings by healing when I am almost full. Make sure I am missing the amount that you are healing."

Not Red Yet pouts: "You speak as if that is easy. Your health falls like a waterfall. If we stopped treatment you would have been dead awhile ago."

I think for a bit and laugh: "Do as you wish. Just limit the usage and remember to use the mana pills. Don't use up all your MP."

"Relax we all have experience in this."

"Ok."

....

Almost 20 minutes have passed since we started this fight. The Boss's health finally reaches 50%. The mages, Baby Bobo and my damage output are all surprisingly high. My damage output was especially high because the Jade City Sword is second on the leaderboard. It might not be able to compare to the Heavenly Plan Sword which is number one but its damage output is good enough for this boss.

“Everyone be careful.” Li Mu raises his long sword. He looks around at the Boss’s surrounding. He was afraid to jump in in fear of breaking my attack rhythm. If my attack rhythm breaks, we could all be dead within minutes.

The Corpse Chief snarls loudly and raises all 4 of his arms. Suddenly inside the sandy canyon, a red marking 30 yards from the Boss appears, his attack range is quite far! I immediately raise my sword and start slashing while activating [Strength of a Thousand Men]. I continuously hack at the Boss as my health slowly falls—

“541!”

“532!”

“499!”

Most of my HP disappears in a flash even though I immediately used [Heal] on myself when my health started dropping. The Boss finally reveals his special attack — [Desert’s Scar]. His special attack’s range is 30×30 yards. Unfortunately, with a cry 3 healers and an assassin fall to the ground. 9 damage numbers spring up and all 4 die!

“Fuck....” Li Mu’s eyes turn red: “Healers quickly [Heal] Xiao Yao!”

Who’s Blue uses [Heal] once more and my health almost goes back to full.

General Wang Jian grips his sword and clenches his teeth: “Fuck. It killed 20% of our group with one special attack. How are we going to do this.....”

General Lian Po says: “Hold your positions. Continue healing Xiao Yao. The rest of us continue attacking. Start measuring the time so we can discern the cooldown of the Boss’s special attack. Pay attention to what will trigger it.”

I raise my eyebrows: “Just now the 3 healers were too close. That was probably what caused the [Desert’s Scar] attack. Everyone, scatter out more!”

“Ok!”

The group of mages and healers spread out even more. This should prevent triggering the Boss’s [Desert’s Scar] attack.

....

After 25 seconds a second [Desert’s Scar] attack comes and a mage dies to it. There was no difference between this attack and the last one. It seems like the spell locks onto a player!

“Bah...” Li Mu’s complexion turns purple: “If it kills one person every time it uses that skill, everyone will be dead within 10 minutes. What can we do? We need to figure out a strategy to react to the Desert’s Scar attack...”

“Keng!”

I clash my sword with the Boss’s battle axe. Taking a few steps back, I avoid the Boss’ [Merciless Strike]. I clench my teeth: “Quickly think of something!”

Li Mu hurriedly says: “I was asking you to think of something. Now you ask me to think of something. It’s up to you...”

I fight while thinking of some strategy: “You think. I told the 13 remaining people in our group to spread out!”

General Lian Po lifts his head and looks at the surrounding. He thinks for a bit and points to the cliff walls: “Destiny is coded so that firing downhill gives a 50% range increase while attacking uphill causes a 50% range decrease. Xiao Yao, lure the Corpse Chief closer to the cliff walls. The range attacker of our group will go up to the mountains and stay 50 yards from the boss. Mages use Icicles now. Healers will also climb up the cliff later”

I nod: “Everyone take turns climbing the mountain. Healers keep healing me.”

Who’s Blue and Not Yet Red says: “Lose health first. We’ve already healed you to full.”

....

With a strategy drawn up, a few archers start climbing up the mountain. I fight while retreating back to the cliff wall. After Who's Blue and Not Yet Red climb the mountain, the Boss finally decides to use [Desert's Scar] for me. The Desert's Scar attack makes a "Keng Keng Keng" sound as it hits the stone tablet on my back. Rays of light blossom from the tablet. It seems like it is satisfied of being hit by the Boss.

Time slowly ticks on. Not long afterwards, the Boss's HP finally falls to 7%. We could hear everyone's heartbeat. A level 57 Purple Tier Boss being brought down with one try; the items that it will drop should not be bad. It is even possible that everyone will get something good.

"Not good...."

On the mountain General Lian Po looks out in the distance. He says: "At least one hundred players are coming. Why are there players coming here? We were hiding ourselves so well!"

....

At the Ferocious Demon Canyon entrance many people stream in. In front of the group stood a 28 year old player with a Gold Tier staff. His face was filled with scars. He smiles and laughs: "How lucky. Our work has been almost done for us.... "

My heart sank glancing at the words above the player's head—

ID: Soaring Dragon Lv 43 Mage

Unique Title: 4th in Ba Huang City

Chapter 92: Good Things in Life

Damn it!

The moment when Soaring Dragon appears, everyone's hearts dropped. Soaring Dragon, a player of the Ba Huang City leaderboard, is better known as Ba Huang City's #1 mage. From level 1, he's been at or near 3rd place on the leaderboard and this player is the guildmaster of [Flying Dragons]. Looking at Ba Huang City, there are basically 3 major guilds battling it out, [Prague], [Vanguard] and [Flying Dragons] and then there's [Wrath of the Heroes] on the side.

But no one would have guessed that [Flying Dragons] would ignore all the boss rules and bring 100+ people to steal our near-death boss.

.....

Whoosh!

General Li Mu's face looks horrible and he angrily says, "We...Xiao Yao and us got it to the verge of death and now...now we just let them take it?!"

General Lian Po draws and fires his bow, looking with a cold expression and says, "Li Mu, you're our boss. Go down and stall [Flying Dragons] for a bit. Xiao Yao and us will work hard to quickly finish off the last 6% of the boss. This'll take around 3 minutes. Get us 3 minutes!"

Li Mu nods, takes his sword and goes down the hill. Facing the large group of [Flying Dragon] players all by himself, he puts his sword on his shoulder and smiles "My friends from [Flying Dragon], what are you trying to do?"

Within the crowd, a berserker comes out. He holds his battle axe and he has the leaderboard emblem for Ba Huang City. Ranked 7th, it's Fierce Tiger. He rushes towards Li Mu and laughs, "Li Mu, we are here because of a friend. They were only halfway through killing the boss and they couldn't kill it anymore. We are here to finish up their job. Please leave this area, we don't want to be troubled by you."

Li Mu frowns, “What friend? They entrusted you to finish this up?”

Soaring Dragon raises his staff and bellows, “We received Tyrant of Western Chu’s invitation to kill the boss and now you’ve taken the boss that was originally ours. I have nothing more to say, leave now or face the consequences.”

He glances at the boss’s HP bar and the killing intent in his eyes burn brighter.

General Ba Qi yells, “Ha! Finish the boss? We fought this boss from 100% HP to now, you [Flying Dragons] are obviously trying to steal the boss! As one of China’s top 10 guilds, you do such underhanded things? Ha!”

Soaring Dragon steps on the ground with one foot and instantly a [Mana Shield]’s golden glow surrounds his body, guaranteeing within a certain amount of time he will take no damage. It’s a skill gained from the second promotion, a mage with [Mana Shield] is pretty much guaranteed to not die for a while. I heard this morning, a level 40 berserker attacked a level 40 mage and after 14 hits, the level 4 [Mana Shield] broke. I cannot imagine how tough the shield is.

He raises the staff and with a whoosh, ice and fire appear and twirl!

Bang!

The glow of fire and ice appear under Li Mu and pushes him back a few steps and also taking away 900+ HP. This is the power of the top class mages. Against warrior type players, they can pretty much kill after 2-3 attacks. When a level 40 mage has [Mana Shield], they are the #1 enemy of heavy armor type classes!

“Damnit...”

Li Mu backs a few steps and a wiff of frost forms on his battle boots; that’s the slowing effect of the [Pillar of Ice and Fire]. Li Mu is ranked 3rd in Ba Huang City while Soaring Dragon is ranked 4th but the difference in strength isn’t too huge.

With eyes full of anger, Li Mu drinks a health potion and says while

grinding his teeth, “You shameless [Flying Dragon] guild, you really don’t know any shame!”

Soaring Dragon’s eyes are cold, “What are you waiting for? Kill all the players that aren’t with our guild. This purple-tier boss is ours!”

Clang!

Li Mu pulls out his heavy sword and raises his head. With a proud tone, he laughs, “Come! I’ll die but I will let you bunch of people know. A game might be a game but a person’s heart is the same. A person who bullies the weak will never be strong and only scum bully. I, Li Mu, hold the most contempt for people like you!”

.....

In the hill, General Wang Jian takes his sword and jumps down. He yells, “Ba Qi, come with me, we’ll go help Li Mu! We’ll leave the boss to Xiao Yao and Lian Po!”

I strike on the boss’s head and nasty blood spurts and splashes everywhere. I say, “You all be careful, try your best not to die. It’s really too hard to train your level these days!”

Wang Jian holds his longsword and laughs, “Xiao Yao Zi Zai, to be able to be friends with you is really a good thing in life. Sadly you can’t come with us and die in battle!”

With a clang, air whooshes from my feet and it also starts to glow, I use [Strength of a Thousand Men] on the boss’s chest. I laugh loudly, “Don’t worry, if you all die then I won’t be able to live either. [Flying Dragon] isn’t merciful at all, but before I die, I will kill a few more scum!”

“Good!”

.....

“Kill Li Mu first!” Soaring Dragon waves his staff around and attacks with [Rock Spikes] at Li Mu’s leg. The chain of damage numbers that pop up are extremely terrifying and in a blink, the #3 Li Mu is in a critical condition!

Whoosh!

“+600!”

A hired healer heals Li Mu from afar and it barely pulls him back.

Ba Qi raises his battleaxe and screams while charging. The axe cuts into a monk's shoulder and with a spin of his body, Ba Qi uses a level 5 [Flame Axe] + [Fire Axe] to attack continuously. The monk cries out and dies like that. It can't be helped, berserkers' explosive damage are extremely strong. Ordinary attacks can do 800+ HP and with [Flame Axe] an attack can do over a thousand!

Soaring Dragon's eyes go cold and says, “Fierce Tiger, hurry and kill General Ba Qi!”

On the side, Fierce Tiger rushes up and rams into Ba Qi. With a clang, both of them get knocked back a few steps and while being knocked back, an [Icicle Spell] hits Ba Qi's chest. He gets slowed significantly and also drops 774 health. Soaring Dragon's magic attacks are powerful and accurate!

“Die!”

Fierce Dragon takes his battleaxe, goes up and uses [Flame Axe]!

Bang!

“874!”

Ba Qi's defense is horrible and after [Flame Axe], he falls with a groan and becomes this battle's first blood!

As soon as Wang Jian sees Ba Qi die, he rushes out and yells, “Boss!”

The sword's edge sticks to the ground as he runs!

Clang!

Wang Jian's attack forces Fierce Tiger off balance and his battleaxe flies wildly. Before allowing Fierce Tiger to stabilize himself, Wang Jian violently strikes at Fierce Tiger. The swordsman's strength is in no way inferior to his opponent and Fierce Tiger staggers back. He panics and

yells, “They’re concentrating their attacks on me, heal me!”

Plenty of healers from [Flying Dragons] heal him and healing numbers appear all over Fierce Tiger.

Whoosh!

A shadow sweeps past and a glow pushes away the small grass. General Li Mu holds his heavy sword and activates B-rank combo—[Absolute Authority]!

Bangbangbang...

Under the continuous attacks, Fierce Tiger’s HP also continuously drop and after being knocked up into the air by Li Mu, he receives a heavy strike as he comes down. At the same time, a golden hexagram also appears on Wang Jian’s sword and with 4 strikes, his attack fit perfectly into Li Mu’s and kill Fierce Tiger!

.....

“Damn...”

Soaring Dragon groans since he could only watch as he sees Fierce Tiger being killed without helping. He can only wave his staff and [Pillar of Fire and Ice] appears under General Wang Jian’s legs. Following quickly after, 7 musketeers fire their guns and shoot at the same time!

“311!”

“287!”

“302!”

.....

As the closely connected damage numbers fly up, Wang Jian falls disappointedly, his chestplate is filled with bullet holes. He dies just like that under the gunfire of the opponent!

Li Mu heart aches again and taking his sword, he decisively goes in. His sword cuts through a musketeer’s neck and combined with the attack of the pet, the musketeer dies instantly. Li Mu doesn’t stop and heads

towards a mage with 40% HP. With the slash of his sword, he stabs through the mage's chest and he kills yet another player.

“Die!”

Soaring Dragon bellows and casts [Rock Spikes]. Li Mu groans, falls and dies. He also drops a leg guard.

“Kill them all and take the boss!”

Under the command of Soaring Dragon, dozens of players suddenly rush forward.

General Lian Po grinds his teeth, “These players are really despicable, do they really not care what others see [Flying Dragons] as?”

I hit the hips of the boss and say, “They only know that the winner rules all and they probably don't care how others look at them. Boss still has 2% HP left, keep this up and use everything!”

General Lian Po mutters, “I can't keep this up. I'll stall them for a bit, I'll hand this to you Xiao Yao!”

After saying that, the old archer rushes out and pulls his bow. With 3 bangs, he uses the second promotion skill [Triple Arrow] to attack and finishes low players in a blink. His movements are also very nice, after shooting he randomly runs so that the musketeers can't do anything to him.

.....

“Damn...” Soaring Dragon blinks and raises his staff, “Focus fire!”

With a whoosh, a [Icicle] flies over and lands on Lian Po's shoulders. Several swordsmen rushes forward and attacks him. The old General is only an archer, how can he take this close-ranged battle? He falls with a cry and all 4 Generals get killed.

Bang!

Cutting the boss, I look at its HP and it's at the last 1%...

Ah...

With two cries, [Flying Dragon]'s dozen of swordsman and berserkers enter and start annihilating our healers and mages. How can ranged classes take these kinds of attack? They die instantly!

.....

“The boss is almost dead! Hurry and kill the boss but focus fire on Xiao Yao Zi Zai!” Soaring Dragon yells and at the same time he waves his staff and casts [Pillar of Ice and Fire] between me and the boss!

“874!”

Ouch. I stiffen at the damage, the top-class mages' attacks are really scary!

Without any hesitation, I command Bobo to start attacking. At the same time, a glow surges under my leg, [Strength of a Thousand Men]. I'll use everything on this and put all my hope in this S-rank combo!

Chapter 93: Fire Beacon Helmet

“Shua!”

[Wind Blade] shoots a blue whirlwind at Corpse Chief’s body. With a violent scream, the Corpse Chief is almost sliced in half. The severed arm’s meaty flesh and bones are crawling with maggots. Truly disgusting. But apparently, such a swift and fierce blow still isn’t enough to kill him. The boss is at 0%, but a sliver of HP still remains. Let’s finish him!

“Take him down!”

[Flying Dragon]’s leader rushed over, once again raising his staff and firing the second promotion spell [Pillars of Fire and Ice] at my feet!

“+600!”

“779!”

By using [Heal] in advance, my HP didn’t plummet. At the same time, on the cliffside, Who’s Blue and Not Yet Red were simultaneously healing me while evading the two knights chasing them. I barely had enough HP to survive.

“Fuck off!”

A lvl 41 Berserker’s axe begins to dance, as [Flame Axe] ignites on the axe’s edge. [Flying Dragon] has quite a few elite players with the second promotion.

With a calm mind, I see clearly. Hearing the sound of the axe falling behind me, a MISS appears. I had successfully dodged the [Flame Axe]! That type of attack is too obvious. It’s no surprise that I was able to dodge it. And yet, by unsuccessfully attempting to attack me, his name changes color. Quickly, the level 41 Berserker runs out of hp under my stream of attacks.

“Rawr!”

The boss’ tomahawk comes whirling over!

I suddenly duck down, so fast that I barely escape the boss’s attack.

Behind me, the tomahawk hacks into a lvl 43 berserker's forehead and 1407 dmg figure appears. Somehow, this didn't kill him. Either his gear is very good or he's put a lot of points into endurance.

My Jade City Sword slashes at his throats, instantly killing him. No red names because his name is already gray.

.....

Turning around, I raise my sword and continue to attack. We need to kill this boss. On the cliffside, the mage and most of the healers that the Generals invited are almost dead. All the pressure is on me.

The Jade City Sword dances as a constant stream of strikes land onto the boss. Finally, on the third normal attack, the Corpse Chief lets out a scream and falls.

“Shua!”

Gold coins spill out and I rise to lvl 44, a sudden 2 level jump. The purple tier Boss are certainly generous.

At the same time, I reach to pick up the loot: a scarlet helmet, an edged axe, and..... there is a blood orange tablet, that's.... damn, the first Guild Creation Tablet!

.....

“Pa!”

Holding the token firmly, the several items are stuffed into my bag. The quest is finished!

Not yet!

An ice blade pierces me through the chest. From behind, a [Flying Dragon] lvl41 swordsman's 1,128 dmg [Ice Blade] is a critical hit. At the same time, their leader yells: “Kill him!”

Again, [Pillars of Fire and Ice] hits. Under my feet is scorching hot, as well as a frigid sensation. The next moment, my whole body loses all feeling and I died?!

Dropping Lvl 43, immediately as my spirit leaves my body and I see the blood orange tablet burst out and fall to the ground. Soaring Dragon picks it up and laughs: “Wow, the first Guild Creation Tablet!! Hahaha, with the first Guild Creation Tablet, my [Flying Dragon] guild will start the journey to become the world’s best!! Wonderful!!!”

In the team chat, I yell, “Who’s Blue, what’re you waiting for? Revive me, now!”

On top the mountain’s barrier, a scream is heard and Not Yet Red falls. Who’s Blue emerges from the cliffside. With a sword piercing her chest and only 17% HP remaining, she uses the last of her strength to cast— [Revive]!

.....

“Shua!”

50% HP/MP. I suddenly appear in my previous spot. My Jade City Sword’s [Combo] explodes on to Soaring Dragon’s Mana Shield with a “bang, bang, bang” and yell: “Bullying scum. Die!”

His shield began to twist; the toughness decreased. Soaring Dragon’s eyes widened and raising his wand to cast another [Pillar of Fire and Ice], he doesn’t retreat. Is this guy so arrogant that he thinks he can kill me?

“Xiao Yao Zi Zai, you’ll either break through my shield and kill me or die here like a dog,” Je laughs.

I swing my sword. After dying once, all my cooldowns are refreshed. Let’s go, [Strength of Thousand Men]!

“Bang bang bang.....”

The heavy sound of the successive hits. Apparently, Soaring Dragon did not take into consideration that skill cooldown disappear after reviving. Under [Strength of Thousand Men], his Mana Shield’s durability sharply drops. How can my attack power be even compared to that of a normal swordsman? “Bang” my ram collides and knocks both him and the shield back, causing a moment of brief dizziness.

“Ugh!”

[Wind Blade], charging up!

Suddenly the impact from [Wind Blade] breaks through his Mana Shield. Under the force of my [Strength of Thousand Men], Soaring Dragon is continuously pushed back, until his back is against the cliffside.

Pa.....”

My Silver Locked boots bursts across the ground. I must kill him. Ice crystals fluttering, I use [Fierce Ice Blade]!

“Puchi!”

Blood spurts out of the huge hole my Jade City Sword makes in his chest and the damage number floats out—

“1009!”

A clean hit. There’s practically no chance for him to heal. This is the strength of a swordsman.

...

“Pa!”

I reach out and grab the blood orange tablet that dropped. Trying to withdraw, I feel a sharp pain and smell gunpowder. The musketeers rain down a round of bullets...

In addition to [Chilling Wind] spells, ice cones are also fired at me. With both my knees hitting the floor, I kneel down and die!

In spirit form, I immediately check my inventory. Damn, my bronze helmet had dropped but none of the items from the boss had dropped. The two pieces of equipment and the tablet were still there. Having high charm is just too nice!

“Shua!”

I appear in the graveyard, in spirit form, with General Li Mu, Wang Jian, and Bai Qi by my side. They stare wide-eyed at me: “Xiao Yao, you were

killed off, too? Falling back down to lvl 42, you've died twice?"

I stretch out my hands, smiling: "This is the standard outcome. I'm used to dying....."

Li Mu tightening a fist, says: "How's the situation?"

I smile, taking out an blood orange token from my bag and wave it in my hand: "Guess what this is?"

"Guild Creation Tablet!" Li Mu's eyes almost burst out. Wang Jian, Bai Qi, and Lian Po all jump up too!

I laugh: " No, this is the Sacred Fire Tablet....."

"Go to hell!"

"Hahaha, it's your turn to pay....."

"Ah, of course!"

.....

"First, we need to resurrect. All of [Flying Dragon] will probably be busy guarding your body" Li Mu whispers.

I nod: "Ah, they'll definitely guard mine, because they know I have the stuff. For now the Sacred Fire Tablet.....Oh no, the Guild Creation Tablet cannot be traded to you. First, we need to find a way to resurrect. Let's look at the situation before we talk further!"

"Ah!"

The group rushes back and the shadow of being completely annihilated by players dissapates with the Guild Creation Tablet.

I appear in the graveyard and sure enough, [Flying Dragon]'s members are now densely clustered around and guarding our bodies. Even Soaring Dragon has revived. Holding his wand, he angrily shouts: "Get in formation! Assassins spread out. Be prepared for them at any time. Do not give them the opportunity to use the City Return Scrolls. We'll stay here guarding their bodies for 24 hours if we have to!"

.....

“Boy, how ruthless, 24 hours.....” Li Mu grins.

I also smile: “Then let them guard us for 24 hours. [Flying Dragon] can’t leave their whole guild here to watch over us. When the guards number less than 30 people. We’ll revive and kill them. Then, we’ll see who should fear whom!”

General Bai Qi laughs: “Yes, who’s afraid? Let’s kill them all!”

“Xiao Yao, just a moment ago, that boss seems to have dropped equipment. What was it?

Looking into my bag, I take both the crimson helmet and the axe out. With a wave of my hand, the helmet’s properties appear above—

【Fire Beacon Helmet】(Purple-Tier Equipment)

Type: Armor

Defense: 180

Strength: +35

Endurance: +32

MP resistance: magic damage reduction by 2%

Extra: Increases attack power by 4%

Level Requirement: 45

.....

One look at its properties and I’m shocked. Damn, just the defense from a mere helmet is higher than the Shield of the Broken Army’s. If a lvl 45 player were to get a set of this kind of purple tiered armor, wouldn’t they be as thick as iron? Nice!

“Damn, a purple-tiered helmet!!!” Li Mu’s eyes widen. laughing: “Congratulations, Xiao Yao. This is godlike quality armor, ah, it also increases your attack power by 4%. Your 1,000 attack now increased by 40 points. Great!”

I am a little embarrassed: “This..... I guess I’ll accept.....”

General Wang Jian sincerely says: “Following our agreement, of course it belongs to you. No worries. Look at the other one!”

“Ah.”

I glance at the axe and smile: “A gold-tiered axe.....”

.....

【Proud Heaven Axe】(Gold-Tier Equipment)

Attack: 340-590

Strength: +27

Endurance: +24

Extra: Increases attack power by 5%

Extra: Ignores 2% of target's defense

Level Requirement: 45

.....

Bai Qi's eyes burn: “Damn, 590 damage!”

I glance at the equipment rankings, and my Jade City Sword has fallen to third place. Surely nothing more can be said about this axe's power.

Carrying the Proud Heavenly Axe, I say: “If we're distributing based on use, since I cannot use axe type weapons, how about I give it to Bai Qi?”

Li Mu decidedly shakes his head: “No. We aren't Jian Feng Han. This kind of weapon definitely doesn't come cheap. From start to finish, it was you, Xiao Yao, who almost single-handedly fought this boss, so Bai Qi does not deserve to wield this Proud Heaven Axe. Xiao Yao, you're not a rich man. Sell the axe and exchange the gold for RMB. You've never been cruel to us, and you're still willing to give the Guild Creation Tablet to us. You know, it wouldn't be an exaggeration for the Guild Creation Tablet to be worth at least a million RMB.”

I purse my lips: “Ok. I'll listen to you. I'll sell it, since right now I'm quite short on money....”

Bai Qi laugh: “Ah, understood!”

Wang Jian looks in the distance at the [Flying Dragon] players, with a twisted brow: “How long are these bastards going to guard our bodies for?”

I ponder: “ Only God knows.....”

.....

A few minutes later, with a “Di”, a message from the beautiful Miss Cang Tong: “Xiao Yao, I hear you and the Generals family’s bodies are being guarded by some pitiful kids from [Flying Dragon]?”

“Oh god, bad news spreads way faster than good new.....”

Lin Wan Er sends a smiley face: “Right now, I am second-in-command of [Hero Mound]. I can immediately mobilize 500 people to come rescue you. Okay?”

I protest: “No. A real man doesn’t take hand outs. I can’t let you come..”

Lin Wan Er keeps silent for a few seconds, then says: “I want to save people. That’s all. Do you expect me to stay on the sidelines and do nothing? Wait and watch [Flying Dragon] get swept away!”

Chapter 94: The God of Battle Arrives

“Fire Beacon Helmet..... Fire Beacon Helmet....”

I gently stroke the red helmet. Saliva dribbles out of my mouth onto the clay floor of the Ferocious Demon Canyon and the pitter patter sound echos throughout. This is the server’s second purple tiered item. On the equipment rankings, this is second only to the purple tiered Heavenly Plan sword. With an additional 4% for attack and a 2% magic resistance, this is such an amazing purple tier equipment.

Li Mu laughs while looking at me: “I’ll say. Xiao Yao has such a greedy expression right now... With one purple tiered item, it seems as if he has forgotten his own last name.”

Lian Po lifts his longbow. In spirit form, he sits on top of a large rock and laughs: “I would do the same. Heroes all start out in poverty. Poverty is what spawns ambition.”

General Wang Jian : “Hey, how long do we have to wait?”

“There isn’t a limit....”

Li Mu licks his lips, sees the [Flying Dragon] guild and laughs: “They are wasting a lot of time. Let’s see how much patience these [Flying Dragon] players have. Fire Beacon Helmet, Guild Creation Tablet and the Proud Heavenly Fire Axe are all in Xiao Yao’s inventory. If we resurrect, there is a high probability that they will drop. Therefore, we can only revive when it is absolutely safe.”

I look far away: “Ok. Let’s be patient. We can always go offline and log back on tomorrow.”

“Let’s wait a bit first.” Li Mu seems anxious. Apparently, he wants to immediately create the first guild in all of the server.

I laugh a bit: “Ok, I will wait with you guys.”

“Ok!”

....

A few hours go by. Suddenly, with a “Ping”, a message comes from [Prague]’s second-in-command, the beautiful Yue Qing Qian: “Brother Xiao Yao, are you being spawn camped at Ferocious Demon Canyon?”

“Yeah!”

“You always get spawn camped. It’s so sad.”

I can’t help but laugh: “There is nothing I can do. I play solo so wherever I go, I get bullied!”

Yue Qing Qian giggles: “Brother Xiao Yao. Why don’t I ask Uncle to lend me a group to go to Ferocious Demon Canyon? What happened last time is in the distant past. His anger towards you probably dissipated. If I ask him, I might be able to persuade him to let me go.”

I quickly say: “Absolutely not! Qing Qian, Yan Zhao is a very steadfast man. Last time, He was unwilling to let [Prague] attack the [Wrath of Heroes guild]. Why would he let you attack [Flying Dragon]? You should go quietly train. Don’t interfere in my affairs; I will take care of it myself. I don’t want to owe [Prague] anything!”

Yue Qing Qian lets out a soft “Hm” and says: “Ok. I won’t come and save you. Watch you lose another level....”

“Ha! Do you think I’m that foolish?”

“Haha, yes you are!”

I think a bit and say: “Qing Qian. Very soon, I will gather my former guild. When we gather together, we will rapidly level up. Once we reach a good level, we will go fight a Boss for the Guild Creation Tablet. When I establish my guild, will you join me?”

Yue Qing Qian says unexpectedly quickly: “Yes!”

Relieved, I say: “Ok, it’s a promise!”

“Ok....”

....

Closing the communication, I find that I have nothing to do. I look onto

the forums and research where to go to find the Level 6 herbs. I am not the first in alchemy anymore. Right now, there are many level 6 alchemists and [Prague] is producing sponsoring many alchemists who look all over for herbs. My aimless wandering cannot compare to their professional seeking. But, there is a way for me to go back on top. I have to level up my fighting strength. Higher level herbs are in more dangerous places so if a person does not have enough strength to fight the monsters around the herbs then they have to give up being the highest alchemist level.

Beside me, Bai Qi looks up administration for guild creation information. Suddenly, he trembles and shows an article to us: “Boss Li Mu, look. We have a big problem. “

With one look, Li Mu’s complexion turns purple—

【Guild Establishment Association】: To establish a guild the following requirements must be met:

1. Founder is required to be above level 30.
2. Have 5 charm points.
3. Has 10000 gold coins.

I scowl: “These requirements are pretty high. Li Mu, do you reach the requirements?”

Li Mu grinds his teeth: ”I do have the 5 points of charm. But where am I going to find 10000 gold coins? Among our General family, we only have 5000 gold coins....”

Wang Jian balls his fist and furrows his brow: “Boss Li Mu, Since it is like this... I I will ask my father to sell my car. Then I will buy 5000 gold from [Treasure Grove].”

“No!”

Li Mu shakes his head: “That Chevrolet helps you pick up girls. Someday when you want to find a wife, wouldn’t you need a car to help? We do need to think of a way but selling your car is not one of them!”

Lian Po narrows his eyes: “Yea. Let’s think of something else. No need to sell the car. Otherwise, it will be very inconvenient for us to go out to eat together as we would need to call a taxi.”

Wang Jian: “.....”

Bai Qi looks at me and a chill runs down my spine. Grinning, he says: “What about you? I am very poor; my wallet doesn’t even surpass 1000 gold.”

Li Mu couldn’t help but laugh: “Stop it. We already relied on Xiao Yao to kill the Boss. We already owe him a lot; I don’t want to owe him even more...”

Bai Qi mutters to himself while holding his axe: “I could sell this silver battle axe for about 400G. We can get weapons again later. We need to be the first to create a guild!”

Li Mu thinks for a bit: “Okay, I will sell my gold tiered boots! Xiao Yao, would you like to buy them?”

My face darkens: “Buying? Do I look like I’m a merchant!?”

“Ahh right.... I forgot that you are poorer than us.”

“.....”

....

In a flash, 4 hours go by. However, the [Flying Dragon] members still haven’t shown any signs of moving. About 300 of them are occupying the canyon and the rest are sitting at the entrance guarding it. A couple of the swordsmen are chopping firewood. They start a bonfire and grab a wild boar’s head to barbecue. Everything appears so joyous.

“Fuck....”

Li Mu lifts his fist: “It seems that there is no limit to [Flying Dragons] patience.”

I narrow my eyes and lean against a large rock: “Dammit! Let me take a nap then we will think about resurrecting later....”

Who's Blue glances at me: "Xiao Yao is still very calm in this situation."

General Wang Jian: "....."

....

As I close my eyes, I hear a "ding" sound. A message arrives from Miss Lin Wan Er: "Li Xiao Yao, where are you?"

"Hmm? I am still at Ferocious Demon Canyon. What's up, Wan Er?"

"[Hero's Mound] will be advancing into Ferocious Demon Canyon in about 3 minutes. Are you guys ready?"

"Wah!" I quickly stand up: "You... you really brought reinforcements?"

"Yea. Did you think I'm a person that likes to joke? I really am coming. You should get ready." The beautiful Miss laughs.

"Wan Er, how many did you bring?"

"Um... " Lin Wan Er pauses: "About 700+ people with more than 30% of them done with their second promotion. I almost brought all of [Hero Mound]'s twice promoted players...."

"Ha!" I clench my teeth: "Are you here to save me or are you here to weaken Ba Huang City's players?"

Lin Wan Er laughs: "Actually, this is nothing. This is like any normal expedition for us. I only said to Q-sword that we should make a name for us in Ba Huang City. So, I asked him to allow me to exact justice upon one of the ten big guilds, [Flying Dragon], and he agreed."

I mutter: "Ok Miss, thank you very much...."

"Don't worry about it. When we go offline, treat me to a meal."

"Ok, no problem."

....

After closing the conversation with Wan Er, I say quietly: "Prepare to revive.... "

Li Mu's eyes grow wide: "Why?"

“Reinforcements are coming!”

“Where are they coming from?”

“We will know in a minute...”

“Ok..”

.....

As everyone finishes speaking, the sound of death comes from the Ferocious Demon Canyon entrance. A group of twice promoted level 40+ berserkers and swordsmen come in and without any explanation, they use level 5 [Combo], [Flame Axe] and [Ice Blade] on the crowd of players. With only one round of attacks, at least ten members of [Flying Dragon] are lying dead on the ground.

“What’s happening?!!”

Soaring Dragon stands up, grabbing his staff, he walks forward: “Who are you?”

Fierce Tiger raises his battle axe: “Ah! They are players from Fan Shu City. As for which guild, I do not know....”

“Shua!”

In the crowd’s center, a fiery colored silhouette appears. He stands with a blood red cloak draped over him. With a laugh, he stabs a blade into Fierce Tiger’s shoulder. Blood blossoms from the wound!

“Kahhhh!”

Fierce Tiger tries to block with his axe but his agility is way too low compared to his attacker. With a wave of his sword, the attacker knocks Fierce Tiger’s axe away. Then the attacker hits Fierce Tiger 4 times square in the chest with his sword. Fierce Tiger dies immediately.

“Fuck!”

Soaring Dragon stands there foolishly and finally sees who he is up against: “You... You are....”

The attacker majestically turns around. He has a very handsome face.

This elegant swordsman smiles and says: “Soaring Dragon, Long time no see.... “

“You You are Q-sword!”

Soaring Dragon’s face shows his shocked expression. Above the elegant gentleman, words begin to appear——

Q-sword LV-46 Silver Swordsman

Title: Fan Shu City’s Number 1

....

“Q-sword! It’s Q-sword...”

“Oh my god! The first person I meet from Fan Shu City is here. Why is it like this? Q-sword, why do you take us [Flying Dragon] for an enemy?”

“Q-sword really is quite handsome. He is worthy of being Fan Shu City’s most ideal man.”

....

[Flying Dragon]’s members make comment after comment as if the PKing had never happened. Outside of the canyon, a big group of [Hero’s Mound] player finish up killing [Flying Dragon] players that are camped at the entrance. It seems so easy like an autumn wind sweeping up leaves. This is the difference between a second place guild and a ninth place guild!

“Bang!”

Soaring Dragon stamps his foot. He tightly holds his staff and yells in anger: “Q-sword! You are a bully! All [Flying Dragon] members gather! They have declared war on us! We will fight this injustice!”

Chapter 95: Jealousy

“Kill the healers first!”

Q-sword flicks his blade and [Hero Mound]’s army springs into action. Groups of twice promoted berserkers, knights, and swordsmans all start pouring at the [Flying Dragon] members, catching them off guard. Large amounts of healers are not prepared for the onslaught of the high damage spells such as [Flame Axe] and are torn to shreds.

....

“Fuck....”

Soaring Dragon roars and lifts his staff. He fires [Pillar of Fire & Ice] at Q-sword!

“Bang! Bang!”

“779!”

Q-Sword’s body trembles as a heavy armor class, he can’t withstand magic attacks too well. Q-sword raises his blade and charges at Soaring Dragon. As long as he closes the distance between him and the mage, the mage does not stand a chance.

His cloth boots quickly moving across the ground, Soaring Dragon sends out an [Icicle] spell. It makes a “Whoosh” sound as it hits Q-sword and greatly slows his movement. This is a classic mage versus swordsman strategy: Hit and Run. If a mage’s magic attack is high enough, he can avoid close combats through sheer range magic damage output. Soaring Dragon obviously understands this and uses it to his advantage.

“Shua! Shua!”

Q-sword’s body glows from multiple [Heal]s. With 10 or so healers, he basically cannot die. The only question is how long it will take for him to kill Soaring Dragon.

“Q-Sword, just you wait!”

Soaring Dragon’s face turns pale: “One day. I will make you regret

attacking [Flying Dragon!]"

....

"Shua!"

The glowing tip of a blade appears out of nowhere. It was an assassin's [Bleed] skill. Immediately, a silhouette of a woman appears behind Soaring Dragon. It is the beautiful Level 44 Cang Tong.

Aiming at Soaring Dragon, Lin Wan Er mercilessly stabs downward. Her dagger rips open a hole of Soaring Dragon's Mana Shield and the poison effect on her dagger is applied to Soaring Dragon. His face turns green as the poison quickly devours his HP.

"You want to die?!"

He waves his staff and casts [Rock Spikes].

"Ha...."

As Lin Wan Er side steps, the dagger in her left hand disappears. She reaches behind her and grabs onto a blood red metal umbrella. With a "Pang!", she opens it and uses it to avoid most of the [Rock Spikes]!

"344!"

Normally, [Rock Spikes] would have done over 500+ damage but because it was partially blocked, the damage changed to 344. Soaring Dragon's complexion continues to grow greener.

"Wan Er, keep up the attacks!"

In the sky, a sweet voice comes through. Dong Cheng Yue unfolds her transparent wings and waves her staff. She casts [Pillars of Fire & Ice] and it tears at Soaring Dragon's Mana Shield. The tenacity of his Mana Shield weakens even more.

....

"Bang!"

Metal boots crush rocks on the ground and a fire red colored silhouette appears atop of Soaring Dragon. In an instant, the silhouette screeches to

a stop and Q-sword slashes at the Mana Shield. Soaring Dragon grits his teeth: “Q-sword, You....!!!!”

“Go die, you bastard!”

Q-sword smiles and suddenly starts a skill. A glowing aura appears on the ground beneath his feet. It is the start of a custom combo!

[Thunder Universe]! S ranked custom combo!

The attacks from [Thunder Universe] are lightning fast. His blade hacks away at the Soaring Dragon’s Mana Shield. The attack is composed of 6 attacks: a horizontal slash + downward slash + downward slash + horizontal slash + horizontal slash + [Flame Blade] upward slash. The [Flame Blade] rips through Soaring Dragon’s Mana Shield like butter and causes a critical hit!.

“1984!”

The critical strike causes Soaring Dragon’s body to fly into the air. When his corpse falls back to the ground, a cloud of dust sprays up. At the same time, two equipments and a large amount of potions burst from his inventory.

....

“Wow”

General Wang Jian grips his blade. Dumbstruck, he says: “Such quick attacks. How does Q-sword do it? 6 attacks in 1.4 seconds...”

General Lian Po narrows his eye and looks at me: “Xiao Yao, what do you think about Q-sword’s custom combo?”

I grip my Jade City Sword and faintly say: “It has an outstanding speed and open. Its very natural, fierce, and free. The custom combo is probably evolved from Formless Fist Style. Actually, Q-sword must be a Formless Fist Style’s expert. Formless Fist Style is part of North Star family of martial arts. When I was in Hebei province, I sparred against a few Formless Fists experts. But the style allows for a lot freedom in variation and his attacks are completely different from what I’ve seen before.”

Lian Po mutters: “Like I thought, you are an expert....”

I laugh: “No. An expert probably wouldn’t be like me. I have already died more than 10 times in this week alone... ”

Li Mu pats my shoulder and smiles: “You keep on fighting despite these setbacks. You have the perseverance of a expert. That ability will help you become the best martial arts expert, don’t you think?”

I’m speechless.

....

Finally, the dust settles from the Ferocious Demon Canyon’s battle. After the final [Flying Dragon] guild member was killed by Dong Cheng Yue, the battle finally finishes. Q-sword raises his sword and points deeper into the mountain: “Don’t bother guarding the bodies! Those who have red names, let us go deeper into Ferocious Demon Canyon and kill some monsters. We will clear our red names before we return to Fan Shu City!”

“Rustle rustle....”

A pair of snow white legs swish within the dry wind. Lin Wan Er twirls her umbrella as she walks over to my corpse; her small boots land lightly on the patches of the ground in the grassland. She laughs as she looks at my corpse: “Li Xiao Yao. You still haven’t resurrected. What are you waiting for?”

Dong Cheng Yue lands on the ground and laughs: “Xiao Yao, come out and greet us!”

“Shua!”

I confirm my resurrection. With one [Heal] my HP fills up. I have to guarantee that I wont die first because there might still be [Flying Dragon] assassins around. I dont want to drop the items that I got from the Boss.

....

“Thank you Wan Er!”

Lin Wan Er waves her hand: "That wasn't sincere enough. Why don't you treat us to dinner?"

I nod: "Okay!"

At that moment Q-sword walks over with a few [Hero Mound] members. The members are composed of a level 44 Berserker named Sword Breath and a level 43 Swordsword named Sword Tears. Sword Breath is Q-sword's uncle. Sword Tears is a beauty and she looks somewhat similar to Q-sword. Not surprisingly, she is Q-sword's real younger sister. Accompanying her older brother to play games. This really is familial love.

Seeing Q-sword I smile and say: "Thank you, [Hero Mound], for lending us a hand!"

Q-sword modestly smiles: "It's nothing. Lin Wan Er is the second-in-command of [Hero Mound]. She is pretty much my right hand. With just one request from Wan Er, [Hero Mound] will mobilize all ten thousand of its brethren. And also you are Wan Er's friend. That means that you are also a friend of [Hero Mound]. You needn't be so polite. He he...."

He looks at me up and down: "Xiao Yao Zi Zai, you make many Ba Huang City guilds anxious and you're the talk of the town. Seems like you are not that simple to understand. If we have a chance, let's spar for a bit. I heard that you once defeated Jian Feng Han. I know Jian Feng Han's skill so you must really be quite capable!"

I calmly say: "That's just a rumor. I'm not worthy enough to be Jian Feng Han's opponent. I know my skills. Anyway many thanks to [Hero Mound] for helping us. If someday you require my assistance, I will be there without a second thought!"

Q-sword nods: "Ok. In exchange for your word, [Hero Mound] has not gathered a thousand players in vain!"

Finished talking, Q-sword turns toward Lin Wan Er: "Wan Er, help me scout ahead. We can't bear a sneak attack right now. The red name penalty is way too high for us to take!"

Lin Wan Er nods: "Ok."

Lin Wan Er turns to me and laughs: "I am going to go scout. You stay out of danger and go back to the city, okay? It's very dangerous here and you look like an appetizer to the monsters...."

My self respect goes down another level: "You underestimate me...."

Lin Wan Er laughs: "Okay. I understand. But you don't want to drop the spoils of war that you obtained from the Corpse Chief right? If you don't want that to happen, you should go back to the city..."

"Ok, Lin Wan Er, you guys...." I look at Lin Wan Er's red name and hesitate.

Lin Wan Er and Dong Cheng Yue follow after Q-sword.

I stand there foolishly watching as they walks away. A disappointed feeling appears in my chest.

"Ding!"

A message appears from the person who was approximately 100 yards from me. Lin Wan Er says: "Idiot, why are you not going back to the city? I'm going to clear my red name. In 1 hour lets go eat...."

"Hmm... Okay"

Closing the messenger I stand there expressionless. Mixed feelings pass over my chest. I don't know why I hesitated.

.....

"Cough cough. A falling flower intentionally follows the flowing water but the flowing water doesn't long for the fallen flower...." Li Mu says in a low voice.

I shoot him a glance: "Get lost! An uneducated fellow like you should not try such an artsy poem...Go to the Guild Creation Association! Go and establish your guild!"

Li Mu takes the Guild Creation Tablet from me and laughs: "Fine then. The jealousy is strong in you, Xiao Yao Zi Zai"

“Go away!”

My face is burning red as I pull out a city return scroll and use it

“Shua!”

Appearing at Ba Huang City, I rush to the warehouse to store my items. I place the Fire Beacon Helmet into the warehouse because I can't wear the level 45 equipment yet. If I die and drop it, I would be sour for a very long time.

With that done I carry my [Proud Heaven Axe] out to the North entrance's market. In a big loud voice, I yell: “Level 45 Berserker Gold tier weapon [Proud Heaven Axe]. It has an attack with an upper bound of 590. This is the server's 2nd ranked weapon. Yell out your bids here. Any bids less than 1000 gold coins will be ignored!”

....

Once I display the 2nd ranked weapon, many people come swarming over. There is no rest between bids. The highest bid quickly goes up to 1300 gold but I don't sell yet. I know I can earn some more from this axe. After all, this opportunity rarely comes. I can't kill a Purple Ranked Boss alone so I don't know where the next amazing drop will come from.

“1500 G!”

A loud voice comes over all the people bidding. In the crowd, a high level player appear. Atop of his head in a line of gold words are —

Title: Ba Huang City's Number 1

....

It's Jian Feng Han. He unexpectedly reached level 45 and temporary surpassed Yan Zhao to occupy the top spot in Ba Huang City's Leaderboard!

Everyone turns to look and sees that Jian Feng Han is not alone. Simple and Fushen Moren of the [Vanguard] guild are there too. They escort Jian Feng Han as if he was the king of Ba Huang City!

Jian Feng Han walks forward. On his back is a glowing purple sword. It

is the Purple ranked Heavenly Plan sword. A smile appears on his face:
“Brother Xiao Yao, long time no see.... ”

I see him and calmly smile: “Didn’t you kill me yesterday? How can you say ‘long time no see’....”

He wrinkles his nose and continues smiling: “This is the [Proud Heaven Axe] right? How much are you selling it?”

I think for a second: “If [Vanguard] wants to buy it. It costs 4000G and not a copper coin less!”

“You....”

Jian Feng Han hesitates as he tries to restrain his anger.

Behind him, Simple walks up while carrying her staff. She laughs and says: “Okay. 4000G it is then. I will go to [Treasure Grove] to buy some gold coins. You wait here for a bit!”

I nod: “Ok!”

Chapter 96: The Brick Wall Ripples

I'm completely shocked. The lvl 45 gold tiered axe actually sold for 4000 gold. At an exchange rate of 1:10, this would be 4W RMB (6700 USD). But if they have the money, I'll sell even if it's [Vanguard]. The rumor is that Jian Feng Han is the director of a real estate company. For real, I'm not exaggerating.

.....

After a few minutes, Simple comes forward, opens the trading interface, and places 4,000G. I check and double check the number before trading the Proud Heaven Axe. Simple says: "Pleasure doing business with you!"

With a "di" sound, the transaction is complete. Simple shows me a smile: "Ah, actually, I feel very sorry for you, Xiao Yao....."

"No problem!"

I return my Jade City Sword into its sheath, and turn to leave. Behind me, Simple gives the Proud Heaven Axe to the Jian Feng Han. He glares coldly at me and says: "Ah, so with this Gray Wolf's attack power will exceed 1200+....."

"Ah....."

.....

I act nonchalantly but am secretly scared. Who's Gray Wolf? With the Proud Heaven Axe, he has 1200+ attack power? I add all my points into strength and combined with top tier equipment, I only have 1,000 damage. So that Gray Wolf's equipment probably isn't inferior to mine.

As I walk in the direction of the warehouse, I pull up the Ba Huang City rankings, and sure enough, within the first 19 positions in the ranking, the most probable player appears --

Gray Wolf LVL 42 Silver Berserker

.....

Barring any surprises, the guy Jian Feng Han talked about is him. He

seems like a real cutting edge talent. Looks like [Vanguard] has more than Jian Feng Han and Simple.

Just then, with a “di” sound, General Li Mu came with news: “Xiao Yao.....”

I reply: “Oh, you want to borrow money!?”

“How’d you know.....”

“I could guess. If the General family’s that poor, where are you going to get 10,000 gold from. That’s like 100,000 RMB worth of gold.”

General Li Mu opens up a chat, his voice full of regret: “Xiao Yao, I know that we shouldn’t bother you with these things, but we have no other choice. We four brothers, in order to buy the helmets, sold practically all our possessions, and now you’ve already help us get the Guild Creation Tablet, but we don’t have the money to establish the guild. This is really...”

I’m speechless: “Well, tell me, how much gold are you still missing?”

Li Mu thinks a bit: “With all our efforts, we’ve gathered 7000G, but that’s our limit. We can’t even get 10 more gold coins. Wang Jian and Lian Po have already sold all their valuable equipment. If we keep going like this, we’ll be fighting monsters naked. Even if we establish the guild, we’ll still be abused ceaselessly by the others.....”

After being deep in thought, I say: “Sure.....I just sold the Proud Heaven Axe for 4000G, but I need to keep 1000G for buying gaming helmets. That’s the only way my brothers can return to reorganize our gaming studio. How about this... I’ll give you 3000G. This is the max I can offer. I can only help you that far...”

Li Mu excitedly says: “Okay, Xiao Yao, with an investment of a mere 3000G, you can become our new guild’s VIP! Ah no, if you join our guild, I’ll make you second-in-command! If that isn’t possible, you can be the boss and I’ll be second.

I couldn’t help but smile: “That’s enough. I don’t want to cause trouble. The guild’s also yours. Besides, I don’t have any thoughts in joining a

guild. Well, at least not temporarily. Li Mu come to Ba Huang City's northern plaza right now. I'll give you the gold. Establish your guild as soon as possible. Don't let anyone else beat us to it!"

"Yes yes ! "

Walking back, it hadn't even been a few minutes before Li Mu excitedly runs around the corner towards me. He's already sold 3 pieces of armor he had be wearing, replaced now with simple green tier equipment. With his green appearance, you'd never know that he was a top 3 expert few days ago!

"Come on ! "

I hand over 3000 gold coins directly to him. Li Mu laughs and nods: "Thank you, Xiao Yao. You will always be our brother, really. I've played games for several years, and never have I seen someone like you with so much loyalty!"

"Loyalty?" I smile: "I'm just stupid..."

"Haha, then be stupid. We are all dumb!"

"Go, hurry and establish your guild!"

"Yup!"

.....

Li Mu eagerly left and I put the leftover 1000G into the [Treasure Trove] to sell. 1G sells for 9 RMB, so they're still relatively easy to sell. Putting a stall in the square, I sell some green and bronze equipment. To lend 3000G to someone in one go, I probably won't get most of it back. I need to make some more money. Even a few G is money!

Quickly, half an hour passes.

Hugging my sword and reclining against the city wall, I wait for some proprietor to show up in my humble booth, but for a long time no one shows up. In the end, two lively girls stand in front of me. A mage and an assassin.

"Ahem, how'd you get into the city? Wan Er, Dong Cheng?" I look at

them.

Lin Wan Er, dressed in fine leather was shouldering a silver pendant. Her pretty face is smiling, arms crossed by her chest. Her curvy 34D's shape slightly changes under the squeeze of her leather outfit. The pair of slender snow-white legs attract wild thoughts. Her red cloak gently sways behind her. Above her head is the eye-catching golden crest, signifying her top 10 rank in Fan Shu City. She grins at me: "What, this native won't allow us travelers to rest in his town?"

I stretch my arms and say: "Well, every time you two come, Ba Huang City goes into an uproar."

"Uh....."Lin Wan Er, in a good mood says: "What's the matter, has the General family established their guild, yet? It looks like they haven't. It couldn't be that they're lacking money, right?"

I remember Li Mu's frantic borrowing of money and can't help but smile: "No. They're all rich. They shouldn't be lacking money."

"I don't believe you..."

Beside her, Dong Cheng Yue smiles and says: "Xiao Yao, you helped the General family get the Guild Creation Tablet, what'd you get in return?"

My head shakes: "Nothing, but I did pick up this piece of equipment that the boss dropped."

"Eh, what equipment?" Lin Wan Er asks.

I open up the armor list in my inventory, and point to the famous #1 ranked purple tier helmet and say: "Ah, it's this, but I need to be lvl 45 to wear it. I'm almost there."

"Eh? Beac.....the Fire Beacon Helmet's in your hands?!" Lin Wan Er looks astonished.

"Yup." I earnestly nod.

"Then you should treat....."

"Alright. Where do we go to eat, you choose!" I glance at the system message saying that my 1000G has already been sold. I have money!

Lin Wan Er, closing her crescent moon-shaped eyes, says: "Sure... we better go to the Pine Crane House, right? I want the somewhat nostalgic taste of squirrel mandarin fish."

"Damn....."

I tighten my fists and say: "Okay, just this once. Because you both went out of your way to rescue me, this'll be my thanks to you."

Dong Cheng Yue giggles: "It's definitely necessary. You don't know this, but Wan Er spent countless hours trying to convince Q sword to deploy their forces to Ba Huang City. For all we know, she might have offered him sexual favors or something....."

"Dong Cheng!"

Lin Wan Er's face reddens, glaring at Dong Cheng Yue: "When have I prostituted myself! Hey, you shouldn't bullshit. I just promised Q sword that we wouldn't leave [Hero Mound] for three months."

I'm quite moved: "Wan Er, for helping me so much.... thank you."

"I don't need your thanks! I only need you to take us out for food!"

"Okay, let's go offline and eat in a few?"

"Yup!"

.....

Just then, a sudden burst of the system noise floats and lingers in the air. Finally, the first player in the entire server has established a guild.

"Ding!"

System Notification: Congratulations, Player "General Li Mu" on being the first to use a Guild Creation Tablet to establish a guild. "General Wang Jian" and "General Lian Po" have been set as second-in-command. Guild name: **【Valiant Bravery】**! Because they are the first to establish a guild, they will be rewarded with +1 lvl, and +7 charm!

.....

"Woah....." Lin Wan Er looks up at the sky. Her slender neck looks

extremely enchanting. She's deeply moved: "The guild name the General family picked sounds formidable.....Valiant Bravery....."

Dong Cheng Yue: "Well, of course. They're extremely formidable..."

Moving my hand through my thin black hair: "Damn, Li Mu, Wang Jian, these guys. They're apparently a group of dumb people..."

(The name of Valiant Bravery – Literal chinese meaning is that everyone dies to protect their clan/guild = Not a good name)

Lin Wan Er: "....."

Dong Cheng Yue giggles: "Well, there's nothing to do here anymore. Let's go get dinner. Xiao Yao, today you you're taking us out to Pine Crane House. I'm really hungry today!"

"Ah, go offline?"

"Okay!"

All three of us go offline.

Taking off the helmet, I put on nice clothes and immediately leave. The two girls were already waiting for me by the time I got to their dorm. With their perfume, boys on the street flung their attention at them enviously.

Lin Wan Er reaches into her purse, and takes out the keys to her Audi TT and with a "Shua", throws them over.

"Pa!"

Catching them in my hands, I ask: "Miss?"

"Today you drive! We agreed last time."

"Alright....."

Bringing the two girls to the school parking lot, I notice that, while Lin Wan Er's TT is not a particularly high end car in Liu Hua University. With Ferraris, Lamborghinis, Porsches, Bentleys and other international cars everywhere in the parking lot, the parking lot looks like an international high end auto show.

.....

30 minutes later, we're seated by a window at Pine Crane House. We could see the starry lights flickering in the night all across the city skyline.

Whatever. I give up. I should have my 23,000 yuan (6,000 USD) in my credit card. I feel that I need to thank Dragon City for giving me the opportunity to make such a big fortune!

The pretty Lin Wan Er and Dong Cheng Yue sit on the other side. I carefully look at the prices on the menu. After ordering a few dishes, it's like my heart's leaking blood. Finally, confirming the order, the total was about 800 yuan (130 USD).

"Li Xiao Yao..." Lin Wan Er says my name pensively.

I look up at her: "Ah, Wan Er. Is there a problem?"

"Ah"

Looking at her cup of barley tea, Lin Wan Er says: "First you got hunted by [Wrath of the Heroes], then you got framed by [Vanguard] and finally you got PKed when [Flying Dragon] tried to steal your loot. Do you just not feel anything?"

I tighten my fist: "How could I not feel I've found that one person cannot make a strong enough foothold in the game. I must recruit....."

"Yup. Yup." Dong Cheng Yue nod her head repeatedly.

"What're you thinking of doing?" Lin Wan Er chuckles.

I answer: "First, I'll reorganize the studio's brothers from three years ago. I'll scrape together the five person team and then we'll grow and develop, until we gain a foothold in Ba Huang City!"

"Those friends of yours. They all don't have gaming helmets, right?" Lin Wan Er asks.

"Ah, No....."

Ms Lin chuckles, raises her phone, and says: "Well, there's still 12 hours.

Tomorrow morning, at 8:00 AM, Destiny's second batch of helmets will be on sale. A total of 500W in outlet stores across multiple cities. I'll give you the information for free..... ”

.....

“Teng!”

I suddenly stood up.

“What are you doing?” Lin Wan Er looks at me stunned.

“I'll wait in line all night to buy the helmets!”

“ ”

.....

Chapter 97: Recruiting Old Pals

“Don’t rush....” Dong Cheng Yue helplessly says: “We’ll make it even if we go after eating get dinner.”

“Okay then...”

.....

Sitting down again, I grab my phone and give Song Han a call.

“Brother Xiao Yao!”

“Little Wolf, the game helmets are on sale tomorrow. How prepared are you?”

Song Han says: “I was fortunate enough to draw a purchase number. So I have one helmet already. But we still haven’t found a reliable source for Old K and Fox’s helmets. After I finish eating, I’ll go stand in line. But I only have enough money to buy one more. We’ll have to wait until the next batch for the other one, should be about one month later!”

“No need. I’ll wait in the line all night to buy the other one!”

“Brother Xiao Yao, you have money?”

“Ah, I’ll contact you tomorrow. Within three days, Zhan Long Studio will be back in business!”

“Ah, okay. Excellent. Hehe!”

The food starts to arrive as I’m hanging up.

Lin Wan Er tilts her head and looks at me: “Do you want me to take you to the outlet store? It’s not far away from here but on foot it’ll take more than an hour. It’s around 5 km.....”

I glance at her: “That’s alright. Walking there’s just fine. Back in the old days, some woman threw me 20 km away from the city at the top of some desolate mountain. I walked back all the same...”

Dong Cheng Yue curiously asks: “Oh, what was the situation? Who dumped you in the mountain 20 km away?”

I don't respond but Lin Wan Er lowers her red cheeks.

Dong Cheng Yue angrily says: "Wow, exactly what have you two done that I don't know about!?"

.....

After eating a sizeable dinner, I swipe my credit card while really regretting it. Leaving soon after, I drive Lin Wan Er and Dong Cheng Yue back to school. Because I need to look over their safety, I leave the campus after I make sure that they've gone upstairs. I ride a taxi over to the outlet store.

Late night 11:00PM. When I arrive at the outlets, with the dismal cold, there's practically nobody in line. Don't tell me, my information is wrong? It can't be that the website's fake!

Doesn't matter. I'll wait!

From the nearby ATM machine, I take out 20,000 RMB and hold them tightly. Standing at the front of the line, I look like a straight figured guard working the night duty. Actually, I've done this multiple times. Although I retired from the army years ago, after so years, it's second-instinct now. Standing there, you must be vigilant at all times and clearly see all of the pedestrians' movements at all times.

During autumn, the night is extremely cold. The highest the temperature goes is around 7 degrees. As the leaves lightly fall down, fewer and fewer pedestrians can be seen in the streets.

Bored that I'm just standing there, I take out my phone and go to Destiny's official website. Maybe there's some useful news. Scanning the page, alarms go off. The homepage has my name on a huge banner article that announces the creation of the first guild.

【Hot】The latest news: Player, General Li Mu, last night at 18:56 created Destiny's first guild,**【Valiant Bravery】**. It is rumored that General Li Mu received the Guild Creation Tablet from Ba Huang City's former number one healer, Xiao Yao Zi Zai. But it's too early to tell what will happen; will Valiant Bravery take the lead as the best guild in Ba Huang City?!

Next, I see a series of posts.

【1 Post (Player Frozen Graveyard) 】: General Li Mu is indeed impressive. Even though he died, he still came out with the Guild Creation Tablet!

【2nd Post (Player Dusty Bones) 】General Li Mu's quite formidable!

【3rd Post (Player Q Sword) 】: Actually, Ba Huang City still has big guilds like Vanguard, Prague, and Flying Dragon. The fact that Valiant Bravery rushed to be the first guild doesn't mean that they're good. The wind cuts down the tallest tree!

TL: Proverb in china saying that the top is will be envied/meet much resistance.

【4th (Player Crying First) 】: Did I see wrong? Q Sword? Damn, it really is Fan Shu City's number one player, Q Sword!

【5th (Player Yue Qing Qian) 】: It's none of my business, but nobody better be bullying my brother Xiao Yao...

【6th (Player Leafy Gentleman) 】: His cute girl's getting lovestruck.....
.....

After reading a while, the gist of the things is that some people think highly of the General family, others don't. Some people were provoked and felt that [Valiant Bravery] should be punished. Like Q Sword said, the lone tree is gets destroyed by the wind. All the pressure's on General Li Mu and Valiant Bravery needs to stand firm in Ba Huang City. If they don't, then it's hard to say what will happen.

Still reading, another post has been added in red as "hot"—

【Hot (Original Poster: General Li Mu) 】: Valiant Bravery is recruiting. Right now, we're only taking lvl 40+ players with second promotion. A first level guild can only have 100 players so spots are limited. We need brothers with battle experience and capable of working in a group, who know when to retreat and when to advance. We do not want help from those who are reckless or timid. With your help, [Valiant Bravery] will be the pioneers of a new age. Add us as your friends if interested. Thank you,

everyone. I promise that within a week, we will get [Valiant Bravery] to a level 2 guild. You'll shed blood for Valiant Bravery but it'll be your most dependable safe haven!

The replies to this post are a little over 10,000. Many players asked to join but from what I see, those players are between lvl 30 and lvl 40. There are only a handful of players who have asked to join and are lvl 40+.

This is understandable. Those that are lvl40+ are considered veterans right now. Most were recruited by Vanguard, Prague, or the other big guilds already. Even if the top guilds don't have a definite guild in the game, they can still recruit players based on their reputation. This is definitely a type of human resource monopoly that we can't do anything about. The big guilds' strength isn't something that solo players can compare to. High level players often seek the strong support. Who would join a fledgling guild like Valiant Bravery?

In my heart, I can only silently pray for General Li Mu. If they get a few more experts, Valiant Bravery might be able to survive when Ba Huang City's streets run red from pks!

.....

A long, cold night, it's already around 2:00 AM. Finally, two men, trembling in the cold, who look like students, appear behind me. Their pockets are bulging and one has thick eyebrows: "Dude, queued up to buy a game helmet?"

I nod without saying anything. The two also stop talking, shivering in the line behind me.

As the night continues, more and more people arrive. By the time the eastern sky brightens, there are nearly 500 people in line. The line zigzags like a dragon. Quite a few are sitting on seats as they play poker.

As the first person in line, the pressures on me to not move. I tighten my grip on my money as I stand there motionless.

"Hey dude ? "

Not long afterwards, a violent-looking man with a buzz cut walks over. He looks at me, saying: “Dude, help me buy some helmets”

I point at the bulletin: “Everyone can only buy two. I want to buy two.”

Buzzcut grins, and from his pockets pulls out 5 red bills: “Here I’ll pay you 500 to buy your spot. Let me just squeeze in here.”

Behind me, two students glare at him but don’t dare say anything.

I stand there smiling and say: “No, everyone got here in the middle of the night. You can’t jump the line.”

“Screw you!”

Buzzcut finally got angry and roll up his sleeves: “Bro, why don’t I give you a taste of me. You still don’t know how many eyes Prince Ma has...”

TL: The last sentence was also a proverb which means that the person is ignorant about the ways of life – aka they are about to get beat up

Finished talking, he swings his fist at me. The two students behind me are shocked: “They’re going to start a fight?”

I can’t resist smiling, as I don’t make the slightest move to dodge. Fortunately my body’s unphased as my chest stops his fist!

“Bang!”

It’s a heavy punch, but to me it doesn’t cause any harm. Rather, Buzzcut screams, as his fist is now covered in a line of blood. Holding his right hand with his left, he grits his teeth, and says: “You cheated!?”

I faintly smile: “Isn’t now the time to run away before I start retaliating?”

As I say this, I suddenly raise my foot and an invisible stream of air blows away the dust on the ground. You’d have to be a Qi master to be able to see the subtle changes and Buzzcut certainly doesn’t get it, so I let out traces of murderous intent that makes him tremble from head to toe. Angrily carrying his hand, he leaves: “Just you wait!”

I’ve been waiting.....

I look at the clock. Only 20 minutes till they start selling!

.....

Not long after, the customer service window finally opens and a beautiful girl appears at the window. Looking at me with a smile, she asks: "Sir, how many game helmets are you buying?"

I raise my forefinger and middle finger: "Two! Miss, I'll buy two....."

"Okay, please wait!"

Throwing away a huge handful of bills, the transaction is complete. I'm instantly handed two blue helmets, delicately packaged and heavy: "Sir, I wish you a pleasant gaming experience!"

"Thanks!"

As I begin to relax, I immediately bid farewell to this place I stayed all night and stuff the two game helmets into the backpack.

.....

"Ring ring....."

Lin Wan Er's cell phone rings: "Li Xiao Yao?"

"Wan Er, good morning!"

"Did you buy the gaming helmets?" She giggles.

"I got them!"

"Now what?" Lin Wan Er asks: "What's the plan for today?"

I think: "Well, originally I wanted to get the group together, but it seems.....Forget it. I'll just return and go to class with you, since that's my real work..."

Lin Wan Er can't help but smile: "Don't. I won't to go to class today either. Where are you? I'll come over immediately. Since I have nothing better to do, I'll drive you to find your band of brothers..."

"Eh, are you fine with this?"

"It's nothing. I don't have anything urgent today...."

“Okay!”

.....

Standing by the outlet, after waiting for ten minutes, a gorgeous Audi TT slowly stops on the side of the street. The windows roll down and a beautiful face with a refreshing smile appears. Who could it be if not Lin Wan Er?

“Get in the car?”

“Sure!”

When I get into the car, a group of boys behind me look on with envy. All their eyes are red and they seem unwilling to accept that such pretty girl is actually leaving with another guy.

.....

9:00 AM, after finishing breakfast, we get back in the car. Lin Wan Er asks: “Who do we go find first?”

“Song Han, he’s our Zhan Long Studio’s ace!”

“Where?”

“Wait a second...”

Grabbing my phone, I give Song Han a call—

“Brother Xiao Yao!”

“Little Wolf, where are you? I’ll come find you!”

“I’m at work!”

“Where do you work?”

“Uh, Tianshui Church in the next district over. At 10:00AM, I’ll be presiding over a wedding..... ”

“Okay, I’ll come over immediately.”

.....

“This Song Han....”

Lin Wan Er shows a weird face: “Didn’t you say in the past he was the studio’s best assassin? A merciless killer, how can he preside over a wedding?”

“Oh, in real life he’s in fact a priest, an apprentice priest.”

“Hee hee, Zhan Long Studio is composed of a bunch of weirdos. Honestly, I’m also looking forward to seeing how a bunch of weirdos can run a studio..... ”

“.....”

“We’re leaving!”

Ms Lin fastens the seat belt and looks at me while I stare at her. She’s extremely beautiful today. If I was that seat belt, wrapping tightly around her 34Ds, my heart would have stopped beating long ago.

Chapter 98: Gathering of Heroes

Tian Shui Church. Under the sound of continuous firecrackers, a long Limo slowly pulls up and parks in front. It's followed by a long convoy full of A8s, M7s, and other luxury cars behind it. In front of the auditorium there are many guests who are waiting for the bride and groom to come out of the Limo.

“Hu.....”

The Audi TT speeds past the church and stops on the side of the road. Lin Wan Er, carrying a white purse, opens the car door: “Let's go. We'll walk there! Hehe, today I get to see exactly what kind of people Zhan Long, a fifth rate gaming studio, has as their top assassin.”

I grin: “You can insult me but you can't insult Zhan Long which is a dream of our youth. I won't tolerate your bad mouthing.....”

“Oh?”

Lin Wan Er stands outside the car putting her head through the window to see me. She grins: “A dream of your youth? Does this mean brother Xiao Yao is admitting he's gotten old? Have you already decided you're no longer young?”

I don't answer her questions and only say: “Compared to you a 19 year old girl, I can't count as a young guy. And the youngest member of Zhan Long Studio is Song Han, 24 years old. The oldest is Fox, 27 years old.....”

“Let's go. We're going to visit Song Han!”

“Sure!”

.....

Getting out of the car, I straighten my collar and discover that what I'm wearing is definitely not suitable for this occasion. In contrast, Lin Wan Er looks like a fashion model. She's wearing a pink T-shirt, white coat, plus a small light blue skirt. Her long hair flutters in the wind and her two slender legs look elegant in those snow white high heels. In her hand is a white purse. That pretty face perpetually bears an alluring smile.

While not losing the charm of a young girl she has the makings of a successful woman. She's a ten. She obviously looks like she should not be by my side.

Walking towards the church, the bride and groom had already stepped out of their car and entered the church's assembly hall in the middle of the colorful firecracker fanfare. While the guests continuously applaud, Lin Wan Er and I slip in but Lin Wan Er attracts the sight of almost all of the male guests. They could not bear to look away. Anyone would give her a ten.

“Ahem.....”

Lin Wan Er coughs and awkwardly grabs my right hand by the sleeve and pulls me forward. She did not directly touch my hand which left me a little disappointed. But just by imagining her taking my hand I could die happy. Oh well, that's just an illusion. I should just focus on being the bodyguard!

Entering the church as guests take their seats, Lin Wan Er and I just stand to the side. As the music softly plays, the guests' eyes follow the bride as she slowly makes her way to the end of the hall where a faintly smiling priest is wearing a black robe and holding a bible. It's Song Han. Believe it or not this kid really does look like a priest.

“In God, the Almighty Father, I trust.....”

Little Wolf (Song Han) begins reading the bible. After reading a long passage he turns and smiles gently at the two soon-to-be newlyweds saying: “Today in the face of God and all those before us bear witness—the groom, the handsome Mr. Zhen, and the beautiful bride, Ms. Hao are here to enter into sacred marriage.....”

.....

Before another word takes place, with a “bang”, the auditorium door flings open. A murderous-looking fat man with sunglasses rushes in with at least a dozen people behind him. Pointing at the bride he yells: “Hao Mei Li, you bitch! You said we'd be together for a lifetime. I bought you a house and a car and now you're actually marrying this pretty boy. I'll kill

you!”

The fat man lunges forward with his fists raised: “And you priest. Do you understand who this woman is? You dare preside over my girl’s wedding with this other man, go die!”

Little Wolf’s hand jerks and the bible lands on the floor: “Crap, what’s happening?!”

Adjusting his robe, Little Wolf backs up half a step. His skills don’t appear to have diminished over the past few years and he lifts his legs to kick the fat man heavily in the stomach. Seeing the groom’s purple face, the bride turns pale: “Zhang Da Long, you you actually found out”

The groom: “Mary, you really had an affair with him! I...I’m going to die.....”

The scene dissolves into chaos.

I reach out and grab Lin Wan Er’s hand and dash forward. With a light bump with my shoulder, I knock over a black suited guy who came following the fat guy to start a fight. He’s out cold on the floor without even knowing what hit him.

.....

“Brother Xiao Yao?!” Song Han’s eyes widens: “Haha, you came!”

I stare: “Still smiling? Hurry up. Are you waiting to get beat? Don’t get us mixed up in this. Walk faster. You got the paycheck right??”

“I got it. I got it. The 1500....”

“Haha, let’s go!”

Leading Song Han with one hand and Lin Wan Er with the other. I push my way through the crowd. While running, Song Han didn’t overlook the girl by my side and couldn’t help but ask: “Damn! Brother Xiao Yao, this beautiful girl is your.....”

“Friend!”

“Girlfriend?”

Lin Wan Er’s face reddens: “No! Don’t misunderstand....”

“Ah, I see it’s still not working out....”

“Little Wolf, keep talking and I’ll kick your ass!”

“Alright, I’ll stop talking.....”

.....

Our trio runs out of the dining hall and stands outside on the grass. Song Han breathes heavily and Lin Wan Er is clutching her stomach, laughing uncontrollably.

“Laughed enough?” A few minutes later, I look at Lin Wan Er.

She seems to notice me and Song Han looking at her and immediately adjusts her skirt: “Hehe, we didn’t come here today for nothing. How amusing..... um, time to go to the next destination, right?”

I nod: “Ah! Little Wolf, next.... let’s go find Old K (Ran Min). You know where he is?”

Song Han still wearing his priest robes and says: “Uh the other day I heard Old K lost his job and has nothing to eat. He told me before the temple provides free porridge and water to pilgrims. So he will probably go to the temple to scrounge for food. If we go directly there, we should be able to find him..... ”

I nod: “Okay!”

Lin Wan Er is petrified like a beautiful sculpture: “A beggar... beggar ... Zhan Long Studio really is full of exotic weirdoes.....”

Song Han grins: Piece of cake

Instantly I feel that I just lost all of my face.

.....

In the Audi TT, we return to the West Lake district. Since the temple’s not too far away, we park the car in a nearby parking lot and walk into the temple.

Since today's not a weekend, there aren't that many tourists. In the distance, at the end of a long line, are large pots from which a few monks are handing out porridge. Even a hundred meters away we can still smell the plain rice porridge aroma.

"Old K's over there!" Song Han points after scoping out the place.

Lin Wan Er and I immediately look over and sure enough standing there in the crowd is a man with short hair, wearing a plaid shirt. He's about 1.85 m with a rough and famished look. While rubbing his hands, he grumbles: "So hungry. No food for three days. Finally, I'll be able to eat a decent meal....."

Before Song Hang can go over to say hello, Lin Wan Er stops him: "Wait, not yet. First, let's observe. I want to see the quality of a member of Zhan Long Studio....."

I want to say something but one look at Lin Wan Er's curious little face and I hold back.

.....

"Sir, give me another bowl please!" The old K said patting his stomach.

That young monk gives him another bowl. After he finishes it in one gulp: "Master of compassion, please another bowl....."

The monk gives him another bowl and Old K finishes it again: "I am a compassionate Buddhist....."

We look from afar as Old K drinks 9 bowls one after the other. I see Lin Wan Er's face looking a little purple from watching this. She looks at me and says: "Originally I thought you ate like a slob, but compared to him, your table manners are reserved..."

I look down at my collar: "Of course, I'm an intellectual....."

"Yeah right....."

.....

After drinking the 9th bowl Old K looked like he wanted to keep eating but he got his bag and went to the back. Inside, several senior monks

were sitting there listening and offering advice to the pilgrims. This is also free today.

“Pa!”

Old K sits down in the chair and begins to cry. The monk smiles invitingly and Old K says: “Monk, I have recently been especially depressed. I’ve had difficulty sleeping soundly every night. Even if I find work I’ll always just get fired and sometimes I even have suicidal thoughts. Sir, what’s the clear path for me?!”

The smiling Buddhist looks at Old K: “Young man, I can understand your feelings. Come take this cup

Old K hesitates but takes the cup from the hands of the monk. The monk then picks up the kettle next to him and begins to pour into the cup while saying: “Your mind is like this glass of water. Seemingly it’s never full. But once the water overflows you will naturally know when to put it down. This is also true in life. If you know how to put it down then you’ll be at ease..... ”

Water overflows down the cup and splashes on Old K’s hands.

“Eh.....”

Old K feels pain and seemingly disillusioned. He jerks his hand and the mug falls to floor: “I understand what you said, but but

Suddenly making a fist Old K starts violently beating the bald monk. As he hits him, Old K curses: “Bastard. You burned my hand. You burned my hand!!”

.....

“Hua!”

I rush to Old K’s side and grab his hand: “Well I’ll be damned. Old K, you bastard!”

“What the heck?! Who dares...”

Old K turns and finds only me. Suddenly the anger in his eyes is swept away. With eyes red with tears, he rushes over and hugs me shouting:

“Damn, Xiao Yao, is that really you!?! I’ve missed you..... ”

I shake myself free from Old K’s tough bear hug. Floating my way back to Lin Wan Er’s side, I sternly say: Old K, the reason why I found you today is because I want to rebuilt Zhan Long Studio and recreate our gaming dream!”

Old K says with a hint of despair: “But the game helmet’s so expensive Wait, isn’t that Song Han over there? Hurry up and come here to give me a hug.....”

Song Han hugs him and with an impressively painless face: “No problem the helmet’s taken care of!”

“Nice! Then I’ll do it. If I can have a bite to eat then I’ll be fine!” Old K is ecstatic.

.....

Chapter 99: The Might of the Boss

“This girl.....”

Finally after the excitement of our reunion settles down, Old K notices the beautiful girl beside me. With shiny eyes, he says: “This girl is..... damn, Xiao Yao, your luck isn’t mine. You even found such an angel-like girl.....”

My mouth twitches: “No, she is not mine... Stop talking.....”

Lin Wan Er: “.....”

Looking at these guys, Lin Wan Er’s face gradually turns green.

.....

“Okay now we’re only missing one: Fox!” I look into the distance.

Song Han says: “Brother Xiao Yao, I have Fox’s contact information. Currently he’s staying near our old middle School in Yu Hang. He’s an accountant at a plastic factory there.....”

“Ah, let’s go get him!”

“Yea!”

Getting back into the Audi TT, Lin Wan Er is driving while I ride shotgun. In the back Old K and Song Han laugh while telling stories about their tumultuous years. Like the time we massacred those people and made a bloodbath in Newbie village. Then getting all chased by a rank 270,000+ player....”

Soon after the Audi TT enters into the town of Yuhang. Looking to the left side I spot an old school standing there, Yuhang High School.

“School.....” Little Wolf smiles and says: “Brother Xiao Yao, do you still remember the days when we skipped class together?”

I nod: “Definitely!”

As Lin Wan Er drives, she turns to look at Yu Hang Middle School. Then turning to look at me, her face was clouded with doubt.

“What’s wrong miss?” I ask surprised.

“You really went to Yu Hang High School?” She asks.

“Yup.” I nod and smile: “But when I was 13 I was expelled because of a fight. After that I travelled around the world.....”

Lin Wan Er became deep in thought and drove very slowly: “Okay, I understand.....”

“Miss, what’s wrong?”

“Nothing.....where’s the plastic factory?”

“Drive straight for 3 km and it’s on the right.....”

“Okay.”

.....

A few minutes later the TT drives up to a near deserted plastic factory. We all get out of the car. Lin Wan Er looks at me and asks: “Xiao Yao, what’s the story behind the last member of Zhan Long Studio?”

“Before he went under the ID of Glass Fox his name was Liu Yong. He was always good at computing and finance so... he is now this place’s accountant, advisor, assistant director....”

“Uh, really extraordinary.....”

“Er, yes.....”

We step inside and find the factory is practically deserted apart from a few workers. It was almost impossible to find the finance office but there was the sound of talking in the factory director’s office. Walking over, we spied at the office through the windows. Inside is a chubby man that was definitely the director and sitting on the other side of him was a dark-toned, honest-looking man. It’s Fox.

.....

“Ah, Liu this is not how accounts are filed!” Director earnestly cries: “Whatever the circumstances, the plastic must be produced within 20 days. Otherwise these production orders are worthless. After 20 days we

will breach our contract. We're not in the position to be throwing away 200,000 yuan's worth in orders.... ”

Fox speaks hesitantly: “Boss, those 3 girls that came to work in the factory.... It hasn't been a few days and you've already taken one. There is also one that went over with a Fujian boss. The last one had only been working for a few days before she got pregnant. Now every day the workers go into an uproar when there aren't any female workers. Because of limited production we cannot complete that order in 20 days.”

The director tightens his fist: “Regardless, settle this business!”

Fox said lightly: “That..... I contacted boss Wang. We'll invite him to dinner and relax at the Song Feng Club and then help him pick up some cute girl. That should delay it by around 10 days. It should be enough.....”

The director bites his lip and says: “How much money will you spend this time?”

“Around 5,000.”

“Damn, that's too much. Get it down to 1,000!”

Fox shivers: “How am I supposed to get it down? Should I pay it?”

The director smiles: “You always have a solution!”

Fox angrily pounds the table: “Even the smartest people can't make something from thin air. This has gone too far. I quit!”

“Liu Yong, your generation has no sense of appreciation. In the first place, wasn't it me who recognized your worth? Look at you now. If you don't work in my factory then what would you have?!”

“I might be killed but I won't be humiliated. I don't need to put up with this anymore!”

.....

Fox suddenly stands up and flips over the director's desk: “Day in and day out, I have to wipe your ass. You find a new girl every three days and you blame the factory's inefficiency on the workers. Bastard!”

He turns to leave. The director is only left with the image of his unrestrained figure.

The moment Fox left the door Song Han, Old K and I rush up to him.

I wave and smile: “Hey Fox, been well?!”

Fox’s face reddens: “Xiao.... Xiao Yao?Ran Min... Song Han.....Damn you guys.....Why are you guys here?”

I said: “Don’t get too excited....The reason we’re here is because we want to reorganize the Zhan Long Studio so that we can fight together in <<Destiny>>. Even we have to sell gold coins to get boxed lunches, it would still fulfill the dreams we had in our youth!”

Fox’s eyes redden: “Yes! I’m in! Done! Wait, did you mean that I’m old.....”

.....

Lin Wan Er squints and says: “Okay..... another expert just joined. Zhan Long studio, hm..... how promising.....”

I glance at her: “Miss, you’re dedicated to ridiculing us aren’t you?”

“Is this everybody? What’re we going to do now?”

“Let’s go. We’ll find a restaurant, have a meal, and then discuss what our next step will be.” I look at Lin Wan Er: “Miss, do you have nothing important to do?”

Lin Wan Er stretches her hands: “Nothing.....”

“Ah!”

.....

20 minutes later in a small restaurant in Yu Hang, Zhan Long Studio’s big four had assembled. With Lin Wan Er, this table was actually very eye-catching.

Fox stares at a glass of white wine and after thinking for a while, asks: “As far as I know a helmet costs 10,000 RMB. Are we prepared?”

I nod: “Ah, my helmet was a gift from Lin Wan Er. Little Wolf’s helmet

is already ordered. Last night I bought two more and they're in the trunk. Everything's ready."

Fox smiles: "Ah, that's good. But..... a studio needs to have a big house at low rent. We're four people so we need at least two bedrooms. The monthly rent would be 2000 RMB. To rent, we need to pay three months of rental fees as a deposit so it's 8,000 RMB. Then.... considering water and electricity costs for the studio, we need to reserve at least 10,000 RMB for rentals. I can't possibly have that much money. I only have 1000+....."

Old K said: "I have 7.50....."

Song Han: "I have 5000+....."

I am speechless: "Alright, my credit card still has 3,000+. If we collect everything then this should be enough. We'll search for a house this afternoon! It needs to be in East Lake District, preferably near Liu Hua University....."

Song Han: "Ah, I'll take charge since I'm familiar with the area....."

"Yup...."

"First let's drink! No resting until we're drunk....."

"Done!"

.....

After finishing the meal and looking at the prices, I realize that this meal is going to cost at least 500+. Feeling into my pocket, my heart sinks. Crap, only a little over 40 yuan. Not enough money!

My eye shifts towards the direction of the restroom.... maybe....

By my side Lin Wan Er sips her tea. She glances over and whispers: "Stop looking at the restroom. Unless you want to jump down from that 3rd floor window, there's no way you can run from this feast....."

I'm, how's she able to know what I'm thinking?

Lin Wan Er whispers: "Stop guessing. I really can read your mind....."

While I look at her with some anger, suddenly I start thinking about some rated M stuff...

“You!”

Lin Wan Er’s face reddens and glares at me: “Xiao Yao, do you want to die?! If you dare think that again, I’ll throw you straight through the door!”

My heart sinks. Lin Wan Er might appear to be a beautiful vase on the outside but she has a hidden ability—mind reading! Dong Cheng Yue didn’t lie. Her insight into other people is exceptional. Well....how terrifying. I need to be careful about what I think when I’m around her.....

.....

From a small white bag Lin Wan Er pulls out 5 red bills and hands them to me: “Well I suppose I’m paying for this meal.....”

I take the money embarrassedly: “I will pay you back.....”

Lin Wan Er: “Really? You are wondering when I will forget that I loaned you 500 yuan, hmph.....”

Someone kill me.

.....

2:00PM in the afternoon, everybody is tipsy. Old K shouts: “For us brothers to reunite is a rare sight. But for this game studio to survive it must have a boss.... or else we’re just dragons without direction. We must decide now. Exactly who is going to be the studio’s boss?”

Fox squints and smiles: “This.... depends on who’s the smartest and most cunning. Since I’m the oldest, my IQ’s the highest and I’m the best at balancing the books, I should be best suited for the boss position.....”

Song Han smiles: “You might be better off as the accountant. As for the boss..... I feel like the strongest person is most fit to lead Zhan Long studios. Since my online battle ranking is the highest, I should be the boss.....”

Old K pounds the table: “You two, who do you guy think you are?”

Because I am the most compassionate it should be me who serves as the leader. As the old saying goes the most virtuous should lead. I....I..."

I glance over at him: "You're virtuous?"

Song Han tightens his fist and says: "If that's the case then the old rule applies right?"

Lin Wan Er is completely clueless: "Uh, what is the old rule?"

Song Han laughs: "We fight it out. Whoever is the victor becomes our leader. This is the old rule!"

I said: "Okay, if this is the only way!"

.....

And the scuffle begins...

Five minutes later Song Han, Old K, and Fox's faces are black and blue and kneeling before me, they say in unison: "Our great leader!"

Chapter 100: Leveling Like Crazy

Hang Zhou, West Lake District: West Stream, a residential district on the road.

Afternoon, 5 o' clock.

.....

"Brother Xiao Yao, how do you feel about this three-room house?" Song Han, holding the receipts, couldn't help but say: "I feel that it's a rip off. For 2500 a month, it's too expensive."

I stand on the balcony and while looking outside, say: "Pretty good. It's the second floor and three rooms for 2500 is actually quite cheap. A convenience store and a row of stall-like small restaurants are located downstairs. Cheap food. This type of a residence is what we need the most. "

"However, there's not enough money left for anything else....." Fox frowns: "Just buying food is going to be a difficulty. We only have 300 yuan among us. What do we do?"

Standing by my side, Lin Wan Er says: "You also need to rent a truck, if you plan to move. That's another expense. Looks like the food that Zhan Long Studio will be eating for the first week are instant noodles...."

Old K clenches his fist: "Instant noodles are so expensive. Two yuan for a pack and I'm still hungry after a pack"

I nod: "Right"

Song Han looks at me: "Brother Xiao Yao, you're Zhan Long's boss. It's your call. How do we solve his food situation?"

I think aloud: "That's simple. Old K go downstairs and buy a bag of rice with a wholesale box of pickled vegetables. At least, that should solve the food situation until next week. Seven days should be enough time for you guys to rise to lvl 40. As soon you guys get to lvl 40, we can begin accumulating gold and equipment to exchange for real world money! "

Old K nods: “Okay, no problem!”

Lin Wan Er looks at me and can’t help but say: “You guys really do know how to get by.....”

I grin: “We endured through rougher times, this is nothing.....”

Song Han, Fox and Old K also waved their hands to express their consent. To achieve ones dream, having a little hardship is nothing. I hear that the combination of white rice + pickled vegetables is actually quite tasty anyway

.....

In the night when the other Zhan Long members return home to prepare, I also go back and pack a bit of luggage, which includes my Han sword “Xiao Hei”. I don’t usually take it out since it is a lethal weapon. Since I am the Boss, I get the room facing the sun. I put “Little Black” under the bed. Song Han and Fox share a room and Old K gets the third.

7 o’clock at night. Liu Hua High School dining hall.

Dong Cheng Yue excitedly looks at me: “Xiao Yao, you’re really rebuild the Zhan Long team. Well, I’ll congratulate you. So does this mean you won’t get bullied everywhere anymore?!”

I nod. With Little Wolf, Ran Min, and Fox, players cannot just come up and kill us. With my present strength, we can take down at least 10 players. No sweat!

Miss Lin eats a mouthful of pudding and then looks up at me: “That..... you’ve been looking at that piece of paper all night. What’s on it?”

I smile: “Our in-game experience and personal information, I plan to go to the Destiny official website to apply for an official studio. That’s why I must have specific information of three or more members registering

“Oh? Let me see.....”

“Sure.”

Passing over the paper, her beautiful eyes scan the pages and laughs a

little while reading: “Xiao Yao. Lives in Hangzhou. 25 years old. Joined [Conquest] in 2014 ID: ‘Xiao Yao Ge Ge Zhan Jiang Hu’. Highest rank: 3,147,789. In [Destiny], ID: ‘Xiao Yao Zi Zai’. Lvl 42. Profession: Swordsman. Excellent handlings, strong skills, haha.....”

I stare at her: “Damn, Wan Er, don’t laugh!”

Ms Lin chuckles and continues reading: “Song Han. 24 years old. Lives in Hangzhou. Joined [Conquest] in 2015. ID: ‘Wolf Totem’. Highest rank: 497. He has yet to enter [Destiny]. Haha, Song Han is ranked quite high! Xiao Yao, are you sure you can lead be the boss of him?”

I cross my arms, and chuckle: “Ever since we were young, Little Wolf has always been my brother. There has never been a time when I couldn’t keep him under control.”

“Sure!”gravitytranslations.com

Lin Wan Er’s beautiful eyes sweeps across the pape, continuing to read: “Ran Min. 26 years old. Lives in Hangzhou. Joined [Conquest] in 2014, ID: ‘Hero Ran Min ‘, Highest rank: 2,141,770. He has yet to enter [Destiny]. Hm this Ran Min is that Old K, right? Seems like his skill level is at your level..... ”

I feel hurt, and I sink my head down, stuffing a mouthful of seafood fried rice. Then while eating, Dong Cheng Yue grins: “Xiao Yao’s current ranking can’t be farther than 3000K.....”

Lin Wan Er chuckles: “Ah, that’s for certain. Right now, there’s at most 1000K total players. If you add the new helmets, there’s still only 6000K total players.

Looking back down at the page, she says: “Liu Yong, 27 years old. Lives in Hangzhou. Joined [Conquest] in 2014. ID: “Glass Fox”. Highest rank: 3479. He has yet to enter [Destiny]. I can’t see how that middle-aged man Fox..... actually ranked 3000+. Yea, the original Zhan Long Studio can be considered a crouching tiger, hidden dragon.....”

TL: Crouching Tiger/Hidden Dragon = lots of potential or power but not well known

I cringe: “How’s he middle-aged? Fox is only 27 years old.”

“He looks like he’s at least 40.....”

“Fine, you win. Lin Wan Er, you aren’t allowed to use your mind reading on me or I’ll fight you

“Okay, okay, do you think I want to go through your wretched inner thoughts?”

“.....”

.....

“Xiao Yao, I heard you didn’t sleep last night. How’re you not tired?” Dong Cheng Yue asks.

Fighting to keep my eyelids up, I say: “How could I not be sleepy....”

“Then go back to bed, and sleep until tomorrow morning” Dong Cheng Yue seems to say be sorry for me and pouts her lips: “Look. Your eyes are already red, ah.....”

Lin Wan Er couldn’t take it anymore. She coughs while standing up and re-adjusts her skirt: “Enough, Dong Cheng, don’t be like that.....”

“Why?” Dong Cheng Yue says with puppy eyes.

Miss Lin bites her lip, and clenches her fist: “Idiot you’re so nice to my bodyguard. How can I endure that!”

Dong Cheng Yue giggles: “Oh, I understand. I’ll show more restraint in the future”

Lin Wan Er looks my way: “Are you going to tomorrow’s class?”

“Can’t.....” I shake my head: “When I go back, I’ll sleep until midnight. Then I’ll get up and level online, until tomorrow noon. I can accompany you to dinner once I go offline...”

“Why live like this?” Lin Wan Er puzzles.

I stretch my hands and grin: “I need to get to lvl 45 as fast as I can, in order to equip the Fire Beacon Helmet. When I get to lvl 45, Song Han and Ran Min will have gotten to lvl 10, left the Novice Village and have made

it to Ba Huang City. When they get there, I'll take them to go power-leveling. Truthfully, I need to equip the Fire Beacon Helmet because I have so many enemies. If I equip it, only the boldest will try to do anything to me.....”

“Alright, sounds exhausting.....”

“It's for the sake of becoming invincible.....”

“What idealistic thoughts. But within the three main cities at least 100 players can crush you.....”

“Ah, even though honesty is a virtue, you could be a little more tactful, Miss..... ”

“Next time, I'll try to.....”

“.....”

.....

Out of the cafeteria, we take a trip to the supermarket, where Lin Wan Er and Dong Cheng Yue buy a bunch of snacks. It seems that they have no intention to go to class tomorrow morning, and like me, plan to level instead.

Returning to my dorm room, my roommate's still fighting. God only knows what level he's at now.

I adjust the alarm on my bed. It's not long until the murky dark night passes into dusk, and the alarm sounds. I must up before the sunrise. Being responsible for Zhan Ling Studio, I need to climb up to lvl 45. Only when I'm strong will I be able to protect Song Han, Ran Min, and Fox while they're getting vital levels.

I enter the game !

“Shua!”

Appearing in Ba Huang City, I repair my equipment and resupply. Then, without saying a word to anyone, I get my Jade City Sword and leave straight to Dragon City. Damn, while Dragon City is my second main city, it doesn't give me any special benefits, I even have to walk about an hour

to get there!

Arriving at Dragon City, at about 1:00AM, I enter the Dragon's Tomb. As expected, Karl happily gives me a lot of quests since I had not been here for a day. The first quest is about chopping through Mystery Beetles that had slipped into the Dragon's Tomb. In general, these lvl 47 insects had high defense and attack. I have to kill 1000, which suited the leveling I needed to do. The second quest is a little more difficult. Deep in the Dragon's Tomb, excavate dragon bones buried underground and then put together the remains to soothe the departed dragon's soul. This feels like work for an archeologist.

After being a scavenger cleaning scraps in Dragon City's territory, I would've thought I'd be doing such high-end work. Who would've thought that I'd go from collecting excrement to hunting down thieves that steal from tombs.

.....

Still, these lvl 47 elite Mystery Beetles give a lot of experience. Although Karl asked me to slay only a 1000 to complete the quest, I relentlessly hunt them until 9 AM in the morning. Honestly, I don't know how many I killed, but my experience bar soared to lvl 43 with 47% filled. On finishing the quest, it jumps to lvl 43 with 79%, and I'm one step closer to hitting lvl 44.

Continuing on, with my Jade City Sword, I cruise through the Dragon's Tomb. Gazing at the gloomy resting ground, I finally find traces of blood red dragon energy seeping through the ground, it means that there may be dragon bone buried beneath. Immediately, I use my Jade City Sword to excavate!

After digging for a full five minutes, finally with a "keng" and sparks, my Jade City Sword hits something. I have a look after I wipe it clean. It's a dragon's skull, laboriously dug up from the earth. A sudden burst of sound comes from the system—

"Ding!"

System Notification: Congratulation on finding a dragon's bone. 4000

experience gained!

.....

As I continued digging, I discover that this quest causes me to gain experience extremely fast. Before 12:00, I already rose to lvl 44 with 67%. Following this pace, I should absolutely be able to rise to lvl 45 today with no problem. Of course, all the players were leveling at an overall fast speed. With the Heavenly Plan Sword, Jian Feng Han already rose to lvl 47. Yan Zhao Warrior was also lvl 47. Everyones leveling like madmen!

“Di ! ”

System Notification: Player [Wolf Totem] wishes to join your friends list. Accept?

.....

I recognize Little Wolf's avatar in my friends list. He seems very excited and laughs: “90%+ virtual reality games are fun, brother Xiao Yao. Fox, Old K, and I have been leveling together. Our IDs have not changed but the Newbie Town is relatively far from you! ”

I nod: “Ah, go go, get to lvl 10 within 10 hours and enter Ba Huang City. Then, I'll take you leveling!”

“Okay!”

Chapter 101: Noobs, Let's Go!

At 11 PM, I had been online for at least 24 hours. At last, a glowing light appears as I reach level 45. The crest on my shoulder also sparkles. Above my head in a faint glimmer are the words: Ba Huang City ranked 7th!

Carrying the Jade City Sword, I enter the ruins inside Fire Stone Canyon. Looking into the distance, I can see a few monsters but I don't have any interest in them. I want to immediately go back to Ba Huang City to equip my Purple tier helmet!

“Shua!”

Using a city return scroll, I appear in Ba Huang City and immediately rush to the warehouse manager. From my 1000 slot warehouse, I withdraw the Purple tier Fire Beacon Helmet. I immediately equip it onto my headgear slot. The red helmet makes me look quite formidable and it matches my Ice Fire cloak; the combination seems to exude a killing intent. Moreover, the Fire Beacon Helmet is a high level helmet that can shroud my face because of the light emanating from it. If people do not look at my ID, they would not notice me. Destiny even has a rule that if a player, excluding a friend, is 10 levels above another, his ID will not be revealed. Looking at the Fire Beacon Helmet's attributes again, I can't help but fawn over it. This purple tier equipment is really handsome on me!

【Fire Beacon Helmet】(Purple Tier)

Type: Armor

Defense: 180

Strength: +35

Endurance: +32

Magic resistance: Reduce magic damage taken by 2%

Extra: Increases attack by 4%

Level Requirement: 45

....

Of course, Fire Beacon Helmet not only changes my appearance but also strengthens my stats

【Xiao Yao Zi Zai】 (Tomb Guardian of Dragon City)

Level: 45

Attack: 796 – 1071

Defense: 1022

Health: 1833

Mana: 696

Charm: 31

.....

My health has reached 1800+. The number of swordsman and berserkers that have reached this amount of health is really small. After all, my equipment surpasses the norm. My health capacity is equivalent to what you probably would see on a knight or a monk. In addition, my attack's upper bound is 1071 but that is without the damage amplification from my equipment. I gain 3% extra attack damage from Jade City Sword, 4% from Fire Beacon Helmet, 3 % from Ba Huang City's BUFF, 0.7% from Dragon Tomb's Shin Guard, 0.7% from Silver Locked Battle Boots and finally 10% from my Turmoil Sword skill. In total, I gain an extra 21.4% attack damage. My upper bound of 1071 attack damage becomes an amazing 1300 with the damage increase factored in!

Even with this, I am still uneasy. The forums say that when Jian Feng Han equipped his Purple tier Heavenly Plan sword, the upper bound of his attack reached 1400+. This is a frightening amount of damage. With just the Heavenly Plan sword, Jian Feng Han is doing about 300 more damage than me. At this very moment, Jian Feng Han is a killing machine. Therefore, it would be best for me to avoid [Vanguard] for a while...

If Jian Feng Han keeps looking for me, then I'd have to say, when two

enemies meet, the more courageous one wins. Even if my equipment isn't as good as his, my will won't be weaker than him!

.....

Opening my friends list, I see that Song Han, Old K and Fox have all reached level 10. Their speed at leveling is pretty fast. I send a message to Song Han: "How long until you guys reach Ba Huang City?"

"10 minutes. Old K, Fox and I are going there together."

"Great!"

gravitytranslations.com

I walk over to the North doorway of Ba Huang City and wait. Within 10 minutes, 3 level 10 players with ragged clothing appear.

Wolf Totem LV 10 Trainee Assassin

Hero Ran Min LV 10 Trainee Berserker

Glass Fox LV 10 Trainee Gunman

.....

"Woosh.... "

As cold wind blows from outside the city, my Ice Fire cloak begins to wave behind me. I look handsome. The Jade City Sword has a golden aura around it and my Dawn Breastplate shines holy rays of light. The Fire Beacon Helmet shrouds my forehead and emanates killing intent. My level 10 friends look at my name and only see a line of "???". They did not even recognize me and continue to walk into the city.

"Ha Ha, Brother Xiao Yao will be at the North gate of the plaza. Tonight, we will reach level 20. Fuck, let's throw caution to the wind!" Song Han laughs while holding his steel dagger.

Old K holds his rusted battle axe and laughs: "Ha Ha. Today, I am in a good mood. We get to work hard playing in a new game!"

Fox narrows his eyes: "Let us catch up to the average level first before talking."

Song Han says: “Within 7 days, we must catch up. Even if we don’t sleep or eat, we must overtake them in levels!”

Fox nods: “ OK. That is right. The average amount of time that players spend online is about 12 hours. We will throw caution to the wind and every day we will stay on for 18 hours. Like this, I believe that we can catch up to them!

“Ok!”

Just then, I slip in and cross my arms in front of the three of them, blocking their path.

“Huh?”

Old K, surprised, immediately circles around. I immediately extend my arm and block his way.

“Damn, you want to die?! I’m not in a good mood today!” Old K roars while preparing to whirl his axe.

.....

I brush off the light from the Fire Beacon Helmet and reveal my face. I snicker: “Old K, you idiot. Who do you think you’re trying to fight?”

“I’ll say. Li Xiao Yao, you brat...” Old K laughs and inspects me: “Damn, what level are you? Your equipment is so cool...”

Song Han hesitates: “Did you really need to say that? If you search Ba Huang City’s rankings, Xiao Yao’s ranked 7th. Lvl 45!”

Fox looks at me and nods: “Ah, Xiao Yao, he’s so high leveled. We Zhan Long Studio have such a bright banner of him. This will help us tremendously.”

Song Han holds his dagger: “Umm. let’s first, go to the skill instructor to learn the skills, then prepare to train, right?”

I put the three in my party and say: “You guys first go and find your job instructor to learn your basic skills. I’ll be in the plaza by the north gate waiting and prepare some things for you. “

“Alright!”

.....

The three go straight to the job training area. I cruise over to the plaza near the North Gate. I need to give them good conditions for their leveling. First of all, they need a pet. A high quality pet is needed to assist in killing monsters. The Killer Bee should be the pet of choice. In Ba Huang City, there are more than a few stalls carrying them.

Going back and forth, finally, I select three level 1 Killer Bee's with 70%+ excellency. Lvl 10 players can carry them. Each of the bees are priced at 10 G, equivalent to 100 RMB. In one breath, I buy three and throw them into my storage. Then, looking everywhere for equipment, I eventually lock onto three pieces —

【Piercing Bone Dagger】: Lvl 20 Silver Dagger, Attack Power 75 – 145, Agility + 21, Endurance + 14, Cost 40 Gold

【Scorching Hot Gun】: Lvl 19 Bronze Gun, Attack Power 37-95, Agility + 18, Cost 40 Gold

【Savage War Axe】: Lvl 22 Silver Axe, Attack Power 90 – 180, Strength + 22, Endurance + 19, Cost 60 Gold

.....

Dammit, for these three weapons, I spent my hard-earned saving. After I exchanged most of my gold in one go, I don't have much leftover. Currently, in my bag, it looks like I have less than 100 gold. I still need money to buy HP pots and to repair equipment. The higher the equipment level, the higher the repair costs. Heavy armor is especially expensive to repair. I need to learn to live with this!

Then, after I bought some less than lvl 30 heavy and leather armors. Basically, I selectively picked those with high defense or add endurance. First, I need to guarantee they survive to ensure high leveling speed. After all, if I can't keep them alive, then there's no use in talking about leveling.

Not long after, all three return. Each with an expectant look. What's so exciting about learning the basic skills...

Opening the trading window, I give each of them a Killer Bee and then say: "This is the deadliest pet in the early game. For now, just bring them with you and they'll level at the same pace as you. Besides that, here are also some equipment you should put in storage. When you level up, you can equip them. After probably within a day of fighting, you'll be able to equip them..."

As I hand over the equipment to them, all three of their faces light up. Song Han fiddles with the [Piercing Bone Dagger], smiling: "Woah. 145 attack power. It's completely better than my 1-2 damage dagger that I have right now.

"Hurry and store it. I'll also give you all 10 gold each. We're preparing to leave the city. Tonight, our goal is to reach lvl 20. Maybe, Little Wolf, tonight you'll be able to equip the Bone Piercing Dagger. With that attack damage, you won't need me to carry you and you can level on your own!"

"Yes!"

.....

Fox mutters to himself: "I thought of a problem..."

"What?" I ask.

"Our group has warriors, an assassin, and a musketeer. All we're missing now is a healer. If the HP pots we bought don't hold up, we might have no way of fighting..."

I couldn't help but smile, as I lift my hand, my [Heal] falls over Fox's head: "What is this?"

Fox shocked, says: "Damn.... this brat's playing nanny to the whole guild..."

Song Han chuckles: "Okay. Let's depart. I can't wait anymore!"

"Yup!"

As I lead the three rookies out Ba Huang City's main gate, I consider for a while, what level monster should they use to level. They're all lvl 10. I can't do most of the damage and I also won't be able to party with them.

Since my level is too high, I'd snatch more than 99% of the experience in the party and they'll practically get none. That method's slower than them killing monster on their own.

After thinking for a while, the only way was for them to start attacking a monster and after each of them took out 5% of the monster's HP, I can come in and provide the killing blow. Because, under Destiny's parameters, in order to obtain experience from a monster, the attacks need to damage at least 5% of the total HP of monster. That way, the entire team can obtain the full 100% of the experience without me taking too much.

After contemplating the plan, I set the target as the lvl 22 grizzly bears in Ba Huang forest. They surpass them by 11 levels, so they might be able to damage it. After all, I already gave them all lvl 10 green tier equipment. This shouldn't be a problem!

TL: Apparently Xiao Yao did that – Not a translation error.

.....

The low leveled monster regions are flooded with players. After the second batch of 500W helmets were sold, another frenzied wave of leveling had begun. As I took the three rookies deeper into a high level monster area, there were fewer and fewer players around. This is what I want.

“Rawr...”

In the distance, a grizzly bear raises his head and roars. Song Han mutters to himself: “Crap. A lvl 22 monster? This isn't a joke, right?”

I smile: “No. I'll agro it first, and you three form a party. That way I won't take your experience. But remember, in a while, I'll let the monster hit me. Then, I'll heal. When I've pulled all the agro onto me, that's when you strike. Understand?”

“Yup.” The three nod.

Chapter 102: As Tired as a Dog

I advance towards the bear with my Jade City Sword sheathed, but the Grizzly Bear immediately bellows and charges at me, brandishing his sharp claws.

“1!”

Ha. My 1022 defense is too high and the bear can only take 1 point off of my health.

Immediately, I unequip my Dawn Breastplate and Fire Beacon Helmet. My defense steeply falls. Now, the Grizzly Bear’s attacks do 10 or more points of health. After it hits me several more times, I use [Heal] to fill my HP back up which attracts a great amount of aggro. I keep an eye on the aggro bar and once it reaches 40%, I yell: “Start attacking now!”

Old K raises his battle axe and uses [Fire Axe] & [Heavy Strike] on the Grizzly Bear’s head. It seems to tickle it—

“31!”

”18!”

Song Han remains silent and brings his dagger up to the Grizzly Bear’s back. He quickly stabs the bear on the back while using the skill [Bleed]. The dagger tip shines and stabs into the back of the grizzly bear. As expected, an assassin’s penetration really does surpass that of a berserker.

“41!”

“49!”

From far away, Fox aims his firearm which is quickly loaded with gunpowder and then is fired. With a “Bang”, a bullet bursts forth. The air fills with the smell of gunpowder as the Grizzly Bear howls in grief. The Bear’s HP falls by 12. It seems that Fox’s attack power is the worst of the team, but nothing can be done as a musketeer’s advantage is in its superiority in range. In the early levels, his attack power is pretty bad.

Looking at the Grizzly Bear, I see his HP falls below 95%!

“Clang!”

I unsheathe my Jade City Sword and behead the bear with a Level 4 [Wind Blade]!

“1217!”

.....

“Wow.....”

They stare at me with a stupefied expression. Song Han asks: “Brother Xiao Yao, what was that attack? That was so strong! What is your upper bound for attack damages?”

“1300!”

“OP!” Old K sticks up his thumb at me.

Fox laughs: “This way of leveling is pretty good. In that one kill, I got 30+% of my Level’s Experience. Let us continue!”

“Ok!”

I step forward, attract the attention of another Grizzly Bear and repeat our strategy from before. This strategy is pretty unusual. First, it requires that I have a high enough attack power. Then, I need a way of substantially attracting aggro while not attacking the monster with any skills. Only two types of skills can fulfill this requirement. One is my [Heal] skill or any healer’s ability; the other is a monk’s [Put Down Your Sword]. With any other skill, it would not attract enough aggro and when the novices attack, they would take aggro and die in an instant.

When the third Grizzly Bear fell, the three got to Level 11. Song Han adds all of his stat points into agility, because the main damage of the assassin class comes from their agility. For assassins and musketeers, the ten stat points in agility not only raises their attack speed and critical strike chance but also increases about 5-8 points in attack which is why they add their points to agility.

Slowly killing our way through the jungle, we made our way up to

monsters that were Level 34...

....

Seven o'clock AM arrives.

“Shua!”

A light glows around them and my three friends reach Level 19. Everyone looks so excited. Song Han laughs: “I would not have expected our levels to rise so rapidly. At first, I had thought we needed 24 hours to reach Level 20 but it only took 10 hours!”

I look at my bruised body. The one who has been taking the brunt of the damage all night was me!

Fox laughs and pats my shoulder: “There is no other way. Since you are [Zhan Long]’s boss, you have to pay the price.....”

I wave my hand: “Let’s keep going. We will strive to raise you guys above Level 22 by this morning. After that, you guys can go back to the city to equip the equipment that I gave you. With the new equipment, you should not need me to help leveling anymore. Oh right! Did you guys get the Ba Huang City crest yet?

“Yes, we all acquired the crest!”

“Very well, lets continue!”

.....

In a flash, it was 10 in the morning. The three of them were all Level 21 and not far from Level 22 but I had fallen into a semi-conscious state. I haven’t slept for a very, very long time and my mental state just cannot stand up to this abuse. This was very much like in the past where I had to wait while not moving a single muscle for 48 hours without moving to ambush drug lords. My body had have been covered in dew and when snakes started to slither in front of my face, it became even more unpleasant. Finally I completed the mission with a ultra long-ranged snipe that killed the drug lord. Just talking about it makes me miss my AWSM Arctic Sniper Rifle; I haven’t touched it in several years, I don’t

know if I'm rusty or not..

Thinking about this, I can't help but laugh. Haven't I given up such a blood drenched life? Moreover, playing with a few brothers in game, conquering the world, this easy life is the life I really want. Not to mention that I also have a beautiful lady by my side. I wouldn't trade this life for anything!

Thinking about Lin Wan Er, I can't stop but smile as I remember our encounter at the company. Thinking about it, it was actually pretty sad that she had never had a boyfriend before and I had already seen her naked. Then she was forced to hold her grudges toward me as I became her bodyguard. I really don't know how she got through that but at least her mood toward me is starting to change, this is a good beginning.

"Hey...."

Fox's voice brought me back to reality, he smiles slightly: "Boss, you've finally finished fantasizing, now you can continue leveling up."

My face turned red: "Leave!"

"Ha Ha Ha...."

.....

After killing only a few more monsters, a message arrives from the beautiful Miss with a "beep": "Li Xiao Yao, did you stay up the entire night?"

"Wan Er, whats wrong?" I ask.

Lin Wan Er reluctantly says: "Are you trying to kill yourself? When was the last time you slept? Go log off and sleep for a bit!"

"Later I need to play an hour more....."

"Are you with, Glass Fox, Ran Min, and Song Han leveling?"

"Yeah, I'm the leader of [Zhan Long], so I have to take responsibility....."

"So, what level are they at?"

“They are at Level 21, I probably don’t need to help them to Level 22, and I gave them some pretty good equipment. Rushing to Level 30 in three days is no problem, and after that, I won’t be of much use helping them.”

“Ah, umm” The beautiful Miss hesitates.

I cannot help but smile: “Wan Er, whats wrong?”

“Well” Lin Wan Er leisurely says: “I made an appointment with Dong Cheng Yue in the afternoon to go to a gym outside of the school to play indoor tennis. We will go by ourselves, you should have a good rest!”

I immediately say: “No, I will go with you. If your Dad found out that I let you go alone out of the school, I wouldn’t be surprised if he tried to kill me, and I don’t want to die young”

Lin Wan Er after a while says: “You’re already as tired as a dog, I don’t want to keep bothering you.....”

“I’m fine, isn’t it a indoor tennis court? I can nap on the sidelines”

“Okay, we’ll meet up at 11 and go eat first, then we will head over!”

“Okay.....”

.....

At exactly 11, Glass Fox, Hero Ran Min, and Wolf Totem all reached Level 22.

“Clang!”

Returning my Jade City Sword to its sheath, I inhale a deep breath of fresh air: “Wan Er was right, I’m tired. Let’s return back to the city to equip the new weapons and armors. You three, with a random healer can Level in decent maps around Ba Huang City unhindered. Keep it up. In three days time try to rush to Level 30. In addition, pay attention to your Skill Proficiency Level. In order to keep up at high levels, you cannot neglect any skills. Since <<Destiny>> made the skill, it certainly must be useful. When you’re Level 30, all the skills need to be at Level 4. This is a necessity!”

Song Han nods: “Yeah, Xiao Yao is indeed tired. We’re going offline to

rest for a while too and we'll continue training in the afternoon. Xiao Yao, have a good sleep!"

"Okay!"

Taking out a [City Return Scroll], the four return back to town together. I immediately go offline. They go to equip their new equipment, each eager to give the new equipment a try. Next, they'll each go their separate ways to level.

.....

I went offline and underneath the girl dorm were two female students, Li Wan Er and Dong Cheng Yue. They were standing alongside under the street light discussing and smiling pleasantly. Combined with the withered maple leaves by the roadside, an extraordinary aesthetic scene forms.

I look at the distance, rooted at the spot and my heart aches. Hopefully this beautiful scene will never be torn apart. Unconsciously clenching my fist, the bottom of my heart secretly reminds myself: Protect this with your life.

"Xiao Yao?" Dong Cheng Yue finds me and waves her hand toward me: "Don't just stand there in a daze, come to lunch with us. I'll pay today..."

I approach: "Well this is rare, I didn't know Dong Cheng's dictionary would actually have the words: I'm paying"

Dong Cheng Yue's cheeks redden: "Of course, I'm getting embarrassed from leeching off you guys. The girls in the girls' dorm call me Leeching Cheng. Hmph, am I that kind of person?"

The corners of Lin Wan Er's mouth raise: "Stop chatting, lets go to lunch already Li Xiao Yao, I asked around and it seems that next to the tennis court there is a resting area which provides blankets, beds, and other things where you should go have a good rest. Dong Cheng Yue and I will play for a long time. "

I nod: "Okay, Wan Er~"

.....

After eating and 1 o'clock in the afternoon, at the tennis court on XiXi Street, Lin Wan Er and Dong Cheng Yue had rented out the VIP area for 4 hours at an extremely expensive price, but the two young ladies apparently did not care so I sleepily follow them.

In the arena, the two ladies were dressed in sportswear. From their white sky blue T-shirt and skirts, to their long hair tied, they revealed a deep sense of youth. Next to the stadium, a curved bed was set out and next to this was a blanket along with other things. I walked over to lie down and pulled up a blanket to cover my body. Looking at the two ladies and hearing them wheezing, what a beautiful sight, but sleep is more important!

TL: Xiao Yao logic – Game > Sleep > Girls

I did not dare to sleep too deeply and retained a bit spiritual sense. If there is any danger I would wake up at the first moment, this is one of the reasons as to why Lin Wan Er's father asked for me to become her bodyguard.

Qi practitioners are above the ordinary population. Most of them don't bother with mundane problems and practitioners like me who sell themselves for a 10 thousand Yuan air conditioned bed are extremely rare...

Lin Tian Nan is also a practitioner and he clearly understands that from the ancient times until now, the spirit realm is divided into: Body, Qi, Blaze, and God realms. According to ancient books, Laozi, Mozi and a few other prominent figures in China have reached the God realm and in the several thousand years, one barely finds any Blaze level practitioners. Till now, various schools fell and became extinct one after another. A Qi level practitioner like me is already very rare and those so called "Martial Arts Masters" are still in the Body realm. Their training is only for the body and they can't even understand nor grasp the three powers of the sky, earth, and people.

Chapter 103: Pulse Severing Hands

“Pah...”

I heard a girlish giggle and felt something knock into me. Stirring, I peer through half-opened eyes and see Lin Wan Er jogging toward me, racquet in hand. She picks the ball up and then cheekily sticks her tongue out at me and says, “Sorry about that, you can go back to sleep.”

Her voice was gentle yet distant at the same time. Looking around, I see Dong Cheng Yue take a drink. Breathing in deeply, Lin Wan Er’s scent tickles my nose. Her beautiful face was speckled with small beads of sweat and her eyes shone with energy. Looks like they are experiencing an adrenaline high from playing tennis.

.....

Closing my eyes, I continue to sleep.

After a while, I dip down lightly, as if someone had sat down beside me. But the nostalgic fragrance calms me; it was the smell of Lin Wan Er and Dong Cheng Yue. The two beauties are probably tired from all the running about and sat beside me to rest for a little while.

“Dong Cheng?” Lin Wan Er’s voice was suppressed, seemingly afraid that she would wake me up.

“Un, what’s wrong, Wan Er?” Dong Cheng Yue replies.

Lin Wan Er smiles and asks, “Umm... what do you think of Li Xiao Yao? My dad arranged for him to be my bodyguard, but I... I don’t know how I should face him. Initially I decided to torture him... But after the welcoming ceremony, I just... I just couldn’t bring up the thoughts to torture him anymore...”

“Uhh... I also don’t know how I should put it but my intuition tells me... Li Xiao Yao’s character isn’t bad. Although he is poor and stingy, brazen and crude... But, but he gives me, kind of a warm feeling, making me feel like if I were to be able to spend the rest of my life with this kind of man and be happy...”

Lin Wan Er was silent for a few seconds, before asking, “It can’t be that you are in love with him, is it?”

“I am...” Dong Cheng Yue chuckles. Lowering her voice, she whispers, “Wan Er, you might think that I’m foolish but I fell in love with him at first sight. At our first meeting, wu... I felt an inexplicable sense of attachment towards him. There was never a single person before him that made me feel the same way, to be able to make my heart waver. I feel an urge to be beside him. Don’t laugh at me...”

Lin Wan Er clenches her fist, “You... you... you! Hmph, last time didn’t the girl staying in the room next to ours say that a popular actor confessed to you, yet ended up getting harshly rejected by you? What is Li Xiao Yao compared to him? Comparing their net worth, the actor is at least a few hundred thousand times richer than him. Comparing looks, that male actor is much more handsome than him. Comparing their knowledge, that actor is a student from Tsinghua University. So, say, how does Li Xiao Yao appeal to you...?”

Dong Cheng Yue stays silent, in a daze for a long moment before speaking softly, “Maybe it was... that day, at the welcoming ceremony, and do you still remember what happened?”

“Yup.”

“Liu Ying poured the wine straight at his face; do you still remember how Li Xiao Yao gazed at Liu Ying? That look of his made my heart beat fast at that instant. I really like that part of Li Xiao Yao. He must have experienced a lot of things in the past but he still keeps that brazen and crude look of his...”

Lin Wan Er was completely silent.

After a few seconds, Dong Cheng Yue grabs Lin Wan Er’s arms and chuckles, “Wan Er, let’s discuss about something. My dad says that he also wants to find a bodyguard for me. How about... you give Li Xiao Yao to me, I will give you a Bentley and that new guy in exchange...”

“What!”

Lin Wan Er suddenly stands up, her pretty face taking on a shade of ghastly white while her beautiful eyes showing the complicated feelings in her heart. Determinedly, she replies, “No!”

“Why, don’t you hate this guy?”

“I... anyway it can’t be done...” Lin Wan Er’s stands there tightly clenching her fists; her face begins to take on a bright shade of red. After a long moment of silence, she finally comes up with a reason, “My contract with him states clearly that he has to be my bodyguard for at least a year. It hasn’t even been a month and to break contracts isn’t my way of doing things. Furthermore... as a human, it is important to be trustworthy, right Yue Er?”

Dong Cheng Yue hugs both of her knees to her chest and looking at Wan Er, giggles, “Yeah right...”

Lin Wan Er, as though exposed, stands there at a loss and looks down towards her sports shoes; yet her sight gets blocked by her 34D. Embarrassed, she says, “Let’s not talk about this, have you rested enough? Let’s continue. I’m going to give it back to you in the court...”

Dong Cheng Yue grabs her racquet and replies, “Come on then, let’s see who’s afraid of who...”

The me who was pretending to be sleeping: “...”

Damn it, meeting these two beautiful ladies, I’m really blessed!

.....

Okay, now I have finished pretending to be sleeping. Time to start sleeping...

When I woke up again, it already 4 in the afternoon. The two ladies were already fatigued from all the playing and were sticking out their tongues while resting on the field. Right at this moment, a few men walked onto the C court. There were a total of 4 people and leading them was the man who was dressed casually in a suit. His eyes were filled with arrogance but upon seeing Lin Wan Er and Dong Cheng Yue, a smile appears on his face. Walking over with his racquet, he asks, “Hey, are you

two beauties playing tennis? How about... a game with me?"

Lin Wan Er politely smiles and says, "I'm sorry, we have just finished playing."

"Oh?"

The young man, roughly around 20 years old, walks forward and taking a name card from him pocket, says, "My name is Li Yong, this court is one of the businesses under my name. Feel free to visit our tennis courts anytime you like! If it is convenient for you, why don't you leave your contact information so that we could do a survey on our services?"

Lin Wan Er picks up her racquet and smiles slightly, "It's okay, shouldn't this kind of job be left to the customer service? There's no need to trouble manager Li over these kinds of things. Furthermore, there is no reason for me to leave my contact details. Yue Er, we are leaving, go and wake up Li Xiao Yao that lazy pig..."

Dong Cheng Yue walks towards me while Lin Wan Er bends down to pick up her backpack.

I had already entered a vigilant state of mind since Li Yong's appeared. Before Dong Cheng Yue closes the distance between us, I sit up and grab my coat, I glance around and stare towards Li Yong, asking, "That person..."

Dong Cheng Yue faintly smiles, "It's nothing, we are leaving!"

"Sure!"

.....

Walking towards the tennis court, I shout from afar, "Miss!"

Lin Wan Er looks towards me, the edges of her mouth arch upwards, "Hmm, you're awake?"

"Yup."

Li Yong turns to look towards me and his eyes are filled with disdain. Turning towards Lin Wan Er, he continues, "Hm... it is already 5 in the afternoon. Seeing that both of you are regular customers, why I don't I

treat you two beauties to a meal? How about the Fragrance House just opposite to us? The Hunan and Sichuan dishes there are renowned in the vicinity. Let's go?"

Lin Wan Er shakes her head and says, "Sorry, we still have things to do, excuse me..."

"Hey, wait..."

Li Yong stretches his arms out to block Wan Er's path. Perhaps it was because of Wan Er's overwhelming charm, but this Li Yong is being out of line.

Raising my eyebrows, I move towards his arms and knock away Li Yong's arms with my shoulders.

"Pah!"

Li Yong's whole arm was knocked back in an instant and he was even forced to take a few steps back. Looking shocked, he says, "You... who are you? What are you trying to do?!"

"I am Li Xiao Yao. Although you might own this facility, please do exercise some self-restraint. My friends are leaving now. Whoever dares to block their way, just come and try!"

The few young men behind Li Yong who were dressed in T-shirts say furiously, "Brother Yong, who the heck is this little brat, and these two girls really don't know what is good for them. It is rare that Brother Yong is welcoming them so passionately yet they don't even give you some face. Looks like they are really asking for it!"

Lin Wan Er stands behind me and clenching her small fists, says blandly, "Li Yong, you should exercise prudence. There are some people in this world that you cannot afford to offend!"

Li Yong rubs his own arms and grinds his teeth. However, he forces out another smile and says, "This pretty lady here, surely there is some misunderstanding here. However, this handsome lad here... just now you touched me, Li Yong, so you should know that you have to pay the price. I have to let you know whose word really counts in this tennis court. Bash

him, my brothers!”

“Ha ha...”

I couldn't help but laugh while my both of my arms hug my chest. After sleeping for 4 hours, I am completely refreshed.

Li Yong says angrily, “What are you laughing at?”

Raising my eyebrows, I say, “Come! The four of you, come together, I'm in a rush. Furthermore, with abilities like yours, if you don't challenge me together I would feel as though I am bullying you all!”

“Die!”

In a rage, Li Yong came rushing at me. Simultaneously, the other three guys come from three other directions, preparing to launch punches and kicks. It was the classical type of group fights.

With a sudden movement of my arms, I slide forward. Pah, I grip Li Yong's arms and pull. At the same moment, I lift my right leg and at a low angle and kick towards the knee area of another young man. Withdrawing my hand from Li Yong's arm, I punch towards the face of another person.

“Peng peng...”

Two slight knocking noise sound. Li Yong and the other young man ended up punching each other. Taking a few steps backwards, Li Yong's face clearly expressed shame and anger, especially when he was ridiculed in front of these two great beauties. If he doesn't turn the situation around, his plan to flirt with these two would fail miserably.

“Hey, Li Xiao Yao...” Lin Wan Er slightly shouts behind me.

I understand what she was trying to say, don't go to extremes with them. We would still meet these kinds of thugs in the future. Just dishing out a small punishment towards them to know our prowess would be sufficient, there is no need to go all out and offend them thoroughly.

I slightly nod my head and reply with an uhuh. At the instant, Li Yong punches towards me, my five fingers stretched to form a palm with my

right hand and strikes swiftly at three spots on his arm. At the same moment, my five fingers gathered to form a fist with my left hand and peng, I strike at Li Yong's chest. Li Yong was forced to consecutively take several steps back then he fell to the floor, his arm spasming and unable to move.

The other three young men were stunned for a moment and then they charged towards me together.

Both of my hands swiftly move around the air, deflecting every blow they make against me while at the same time, attacking them. A few seconds later, the three young men also ended up like Li Yong, lying on the floor groaning miserably, yet afraid to make too loud of a noise for fear of attracting more people to see this shameful sight.

.....

"Shall we go, Wan Er, Dong Cheng?" I look towards the two ladies behind my back. They wake up from their daze and panickedly follow me out of the court.

Dong Cheng Yue seems to be interested in what I just did and asks, "Xiao Yao, those blows of yours just now, what was it? Why did it end up making them seem like they had a severe case of cramps, unable to even stand up? It is quite amazing..."

Looking at my palm, I reply, "Pulse Severing Hands, by striking several important veins and arteries on the human body, it is possible to cause muscles to be unable to expand and contract in the short-term, causing the opponent to lose their ability to retaliate. They should be fine in ten minutes or so. I didn't strike them too hard, so there won't be any aftereffects."

Lin Wan Er smiled, "That's good. Now, shall we go back to have our dinner?"

"Yup, let's go..."

Chapter 104: Green Qilin Valley

TL: RMB = Yuan = 1/6 Dollars.

A black sword flashed across the night sky. Amidst the sound of something breaking, I could feel the warmth of fresh blood flowing at me.

In the darkness of the night, I felt countless eyes staring at me. Even more so, there was a kind of feeling that I was being targeted by some kind of weapon then the realization hit me; I was about to die.

Both my legs were numb from running in the wild. The thorns from brambles left cut after cut on my legs. Although it was raining heavily, even the rain was unable to cool down the heat in my heart. The sword in my arms quivered and on top of it was a trail of blood.

In front of me there were countless dismembered corpses. As a bullet pierced through my head, my vision turned gray. I heard the voices of my family crying and I felt a chill that went straight to the bones and a sense of despair surge through me.

Looking at the impenetrable dark sky I thought to myself. Where is this? How did I end up here?

.....

“Ah!”

Suddenly waking up from my dream, I immediately sit up. Only then did I realize that it was a nightmare. Yet even though, it was a dream it felt very real.

“Li?”

On the side Tang Gu was using his laptop to surf the web. He looks at me and asks, “Why did you suddenly wake up? You are drenched in sweat, did you have a nightmare? Really, you’re already an adult and still having nightmares...”

Breathing raggedly, my heart gradually calms. Using my hands to wipe the sweat on my forehead, I smile and say, “Uhh, it was a nightmare. Now

that I think about it, it is pretty embarrassing... Fortunately, it was just a dream..."

Tang Gu smiles, "You must be tired from all the grinding. To actually have a nightmare? Hm, what is your level now? Oh yeah your ID is Xiao Yao Zi Zai right? I think I checked your information before and if I recall correctly that character was pretty high level. Let me check..."

A few seconds later Tang Gu lets out a voice of surprise. Looking at me as though I'm a ghost he says, "Damn, you are already level 45? Ba Huang City's ranked 37th? So unfair..."

I stay silent, did I fall from the 7th position to the 37th position? Exactly how long have I been sleeping...

"Hey Glasses, how long have I been sleeping?"

"Not too long, you came back around 6PM yesterday and immediately went to sleep and woke up now. It's noon right now. Haha... Oh yeah, do you remember what happened yesterday?"

"No idea..." Standing up I touch my shirt and find that it is completely soaked and wrinkled. Ignoring Tang Gu's nosey words, I say, "I'm going to take a bath."

"Alright!"

.....

Not turning on the heater, I take a cold bath. After retiring from the army four years ago, it has been a long time since I had these kind of nightmares. I never expected that I would trigger my most painful memories now.

After washing up I look at the clock and it was already 12 at noon. I quickly grab my phone and call Lin Wan Er's mobile-

"Miss, are you still in the game?"

"Yup." Lin Wan Er's voice seems to be a little hurried. She laughs and says, "Dong Cheng and I are currently 2v1ing level 50 elite monsters. Why, are you finally awake?"

“Yeah, I even forgot how I got to bed last night...”

Uncomfortably, she says, “Huh, You you you! You actually forgot everything...”

“What’s wrong?” I ask.

Lin Wan Er seems to be stomping her feet in the game and says, “You still dare to ask... While we were eating at the second cafeteria, you bragged that you could drink a thousand cups of liquor without getting drunk. Dong Cheng and I ended up getting you a bottle of white wine. Yet after drinking a few cups you fainted. Dong Cheng and I even had to drag you back to the male dormitory...”

I couldn’t help but laugh, “Surely that’s not true?”

“You still dare to laugh...” Wan Er sounds embarrassed. “Bastard! Do you know how Dong Cheng and I feel to be surrounded and stared at by so many boys like little animals in the zoo?”

With an apologetic voice, I say, “I’m seriously sorry about that. Actually I am really able to hold a thousand cups. But probably due to me staying up last night, my body wasn’t in a good shape. That must be why I got drunk so easily... Oh right, do you all want to come down and eat now?”

“Nah, Dong Cheng and I have already called in a delivery. We are currently rushing to level 50 and won’t be joining you for the meal!”

“Sure then I will go and check out Zhan Long Studio then.”

“Okay.”

.....

Going downstairs I walk straight out of the school campus and directly to Zhan Long’s studio which was just beside the university. I reach the studio in a couple of minutes. After walking up the stairs, I take out my key and open the door. At the same instant, my nose is assaulted by the thick scent coming from pickled vegetables. Wow, these guys are really obedient. They really are eating rice with pickled vegetables!

“Ka cha...”

The kitchen doors opens and Old K carries a huge pan of rice while walking towards me. He was apparently getting ready to steam the rice.

“Old K?”

“Xiao Yao, why did you come back?” Old K smiles. “To abandon your beautiful employer at the school and come to our smelly workplace. Has your head been crushed by a door or something...”

I ask him, “Are Fox and Little Wolf still in the game?”

“Yeah, why?”

“Don’t eat that for lunch. I will go and order some dishes from the restaurant downstairs and they will send the food over in a while. You can go and prepare the rice first and call the other two about 20 minutes later to go offline and eat.”

Old K widens his eyes, “You have money to eat out?”

“I still have around 700RMB in my card and some gold coins in the game. I’ll clear out some useless equips in my storage later on, I should be able to get a few dozen gold coins.”

“Okay, then I will go online first and call them in a while!”

“Yup!”

Turning around and going downstairs, I withdraw the remaining 700RMB from the ATM machine and order a few dishes from the restaurant below: Sour Vegetable Chicken, Fish with Meat Floss, Spicy Fried Chicken Gizzards, and Di San Xian totals up to 115RMB. Then I grabbed 4 bottles of beer and go back to the studio. Not long after, a worker from the restaurant brought the dishes to us. Then the four members of Zhan Long studio gather around a table in the living room after logging off.

“What kind of celebration are we having today?” Fox smiles. “It is quite a spread. Boss, did you strike it rich?”

I take out the 600RMB from my pocket and pass it to him, “Try to change the diet of everyone for a week. Although we may be poor, we

can't starve..... Zhan Long studio should aim to start earning profit within a week!"

Fox, being the treasurer, accepts the money and smiles, "Yes."

I continue asking, "How is your leveling going?"

Song Han says, "I am at level 29 while Old K and Fox are at level 28. The speed isn't too slow, is it?"

"You are at level 29 already?" I was rather shocked. I unconsciously smile and say, "Good, it's really not bad. If you follow this pace of leveling then all of you could possibly reach level 40 within 5 days!"

Fox says, "Yeah, before level 20, what took other people 3 days to complete, we did it within 10 hours. Also you gave us silver-tier and bronze-tier equipment. Coupled together with three killer bees, we basically swept clean any maps with monsters that were of equal level with us."

I deeply think about the matter for a moment while pouring myself a cup of beer and sake, "Just having three damage dealers isn't enough to survive. Fox, have you found any new team members? We must find steady and long-term teammates, especially Healers."

Fox shakes his head, "Currently we haven't found any yet. Yesterday night we formed a party with several Healers but everyone seems to have other friends and are only accompanying us to train temporarily."

Song Han adds, "Pulling a Healer over to our side is a must. Just yesterday Old K almost got killed by monsters several times. Fortunately the stun rate for my Gouge is on the high side..."

I ask once again, "Then are there any earnings?"

Fox shakes his head and says, "Uhh, we managed to find a bronze-tier cloth armor, a level 22 equipment. We sold it for 50 silver and earned 5RMB."

"....."

Fox took out a book from the table below and says, "I have recorded our

daily expenses and earnings onto this book. This is the record for yesterday. Since we have already applied as a studio, we shouldn't be as loose with everything like we were before..."

"Oh?"

I take the notebook from Fox's hand and looking at the accounts, I frown-

Income:

Cloth Armor, 50 silver coins, 5RMB

Expenses:

Rice 30KG, 90RMB

Toothbrushes x3, 6RMB

Family Package Toothpaste, 12RMB

Electronic Rice Cooker, 130RMB

Toilet Paper, 18RMB

Total Income 5MB,

Total Expense 256RM,

Overdraft 251RMB, Negative Earnings.

.....

"For a start this isn't considered too bad..." I say

The edges of Song Han's mouth twitch, "Yeah it isn't too bad..."

Fox says, "We will try to make use of the time tonight to reach level 30. After our skills get to level 4, we'll be able to go to the highlands to kill NPC Bandits. The Bandits there are level 35 and each one of them drop at least 4 silver coins. While training there, we would be able to earn money at the same time and probably be able to at least make a living this way."

I nod, "Okay. While I am not here, I'll leave all the decision making in the studio to Fox. Fox is the most mature and is able to make rational decisions. Song Han is too young and Old K is too impulsive. You all listen

to Fox's instructions."

Little Wolf and Old K start nodding: "Okay, we'll listen to you(Fox)!"

"Oh right..." Old K says. "There is still another problem. My Fire Axe, Penetration and Rage uses up too much mana. After using the Penetration+Fire Axe combo a few times, my mana would be empty. There's no way I can train my skills this way. Boss, help me solve this problem. Otherwise even if I get to higher levels, my skill levels will not rise, and thus my effectiveness is lowered."

I smile and say, "Yeah, as for the problem with mana pills, leave it to me. I can make them."

"Okay!"

.....

In the afternoon I return to the school campus and go back online. My money is totally spent and I really should start thinking about how I can earn money while maintaining the level advantage I have over others. I can't start slacking now or the Zhan Long studio would surely get bullied.

Looking at my storage I take out ten or so equipment. Then I sell them all at a cheap price to earn myself a dozen gold coins. After that I used the money to bulk purchase Seven Star Herbs to refine a few hundred batches of Seven Star Pills. Then I hand over the pills to Song Han and Ran Min. This should suffice for their mana usage in the short-term.

After that... I look for level 6 herbs to prepare to create level 6 pills. At the current stage, there still aren't many people who are able to refine level 6 pills. On top of that, the location for the herb required to craft level 6 pills has not surfaced yet, so its production is nonexistent. As for me, I have already reached level 6 in Alchemy and can read the recipe for refining level 6 pills-

【Green Qilin Pill】: Recovers 700 mana.

Needs 3 blades of Green Qilin grass, 1 blade of Chilling Wind Grass and 2 Alchemy Furnaces

.....

The Chilling Wind Grass could be purchased at a relatively cheap price from other players. Now all that's lacking is the Green Qilin Grass.

Opening the forums to look for information on Green Qilin Grass. There were more than hundred results but all of them were also looking for information on Green Qilin Grass. No one knew where the LV-6 herb could be found.

I guess there is no choice. Opening the world map I looked for maps using Green Qilin as the keyword. In an instant 3 maps appear – Green Qilin Valley, Green Qilin Ocean, and Green Qilin Abyss!

Green Qilin Ocean wasn't a possible option since herbs were unlikely to grow in the deep sea. As for Green Qilin Valley, it was a large map whereas Green Qilin Abyss was a small map in the middle of Green Qilin Valley. Yup, I'll lock on to Green Qilin Valley and search there!

Looking at the map, Green Qilin Valley was at the edge of Ba Huang City and sharing borders with Jiu Li City. It would be another long journey. But for RMB and equipment, let's go!

Chapter 105: Aerial Attack

On the map, Green Qilin Valley is just a giant piece of green in Ba Huang City's north west border. This ought to be the lush forest valley zone; a forest is a suitable environment for the growth of many herbs.

With my Jade City sword sheathed and Baby Bobo next to me, I step outside Ba Huang city. The Ice Fire cloak ripples behind me as I move forward. My face is shrouded by the Fire Beacon Helmet. The players that are 10 levels below me will not be able to perceive my face or my ID. However, my level is not too high and therefore, the number of people that can see my ID are plentiful and can be found everywhere.

"Ding!"

A message comes from Glass Fox: "Boss Xiao Yao, are you going out to train?"

"Yes, what's up?"

"Well...." Fox seems to be searching for the correct words to say: "If you find a high level ore, remember to keep it. I learned metal refining, Small Wolf learned ore mining, and Old K learned metal forging. In my opinion, this game's most precious items are weapons, accessories, and armor. Therefore I will become a top quality blacksmith and create Ba Huang City's strongest weapons...."

I can't help but laugh: "Ok, good luck! When I come back with ore, I will place it in my warehouse for you guys to use. Oh right! Where are you guys?"

"We're leaving Ba Huang City to go to the highlands and level. We are also trying to farm gold. A level 27 healer is with us and he just wants every cloth armor and staff that drops.

"Ok, you guys get busy! Go for it!"

"Okay!"

.....

After encouraging my studio members, I enter Ba Huang forest alone. If one wants to go to Green Qilin Valley, one would have to pass through the vast Ba Huang Forest. Dammit. It takes 90 minutes to get to Green Qilin Valley. Unfortunately, even the highest player level is still too low to trigger the mount system. Otherwise, riding a colt would get me there many times faster.

After a little while of walking, I hear another “Ding!” sound. A message comes from Yue Qing Qian: “Brother Xiao Yao!”

“Hmm? Qing Qian, what’s the matter?”

“Ok!”

Yue Qing Qian opens her calling function and her sweet voice comes through: “Brother Xiao Yao. I control the entirety of Prague’s information system. A few minutes ago, I received news that a 10 man team from [Wrath of the Heroes] have set their sights on you. You need to be careful. No matter where you are going to level, the Tyrant of Western Chu will chase you and try to kill you...”

I raise my eyebrows: “Wow, They really have a lot of dedication to kill me.”

“Where are you going?”

“A very far away place that takes approximately 100 minutes to walk to. There will probably be monsters ranging from level 40 – 70.”

“Hehe!” Yue Qing Qian laughs: “Great! It seems like I was worried for no reason. The [Wrath of the Heroes] guild has over a 1000 members. It is said that the Tyrant of Western Chu gives his members wages every week. However, their average level is only about 39. They shouldn’t be much of a threat to you right now. Furthermore, they probably won’t chase you too far. I estimate that only a few men would even dare to try to follow you. I’m relieved!”

“Haha. Thank you for worrying about me. It’s nothing that I can’t take care of.”

“Ok. Good luck levelling!”

.....

Closing the calling function, I see that Yue Qing Qian has already reached level 47. She levels so fast. I am only level 45 and ranked 45th in Ba Huang City. I must work harder!

“Rustle...”

My Silver Locked Battle Boots step on jungle bushes as I proceed forward. At the same time, I look behind me and see a group of players. Two assassins carrying daggers shadow me while a wind elf archer flies in the sky. The level 41 wind elf can fly up to a height of 20 yards, so finding me was inevitable.

“Ugh....”

I let out a slight groan. Without acknowledging my stalkers, I pick up the pace. My sword waves back and forth as I activate my level 5 [Haste]. I immediately gain 5% movement speed and 10 % attack speed. The assassins notice this and start running after me. Their steps start gaining on me. Their speed is indeed worthy of assassins, the quickest class in 《Destiny》.

I look around and see that there seems to be something inside the forest!

“Bang!”

My Boots land on a fallen tree trunk covered with vegetation then I turn my body and roll into a patch small white flowers. Catapulting forward and kicking up a cloud of dust, I, wisely break from my straight path.

“Huh?”

The two assassins look around confused and rush over to chase me!

“Roar....”

The two assassins pause and one of them gets hit by a level 47 Ash-grey Bear in the head and falls to the ground. It bites the assassin 3 times and the assassin dies.

“Damn!”

The other assassins turn to fight the bear. With a stab, a MISS appears. The Ash-grey bear bites down on the assassin and with a swipe of its sharp claws, the other assassin dies.

Listening to the screams from behind me, I can't help but laugh. This verifies my calculations. Being level 45, I would attract aggro from the monsters 25 meters around me. Unfortunately for them, the assassins have not even reached a 40 yet thus attract aggro within 30 meters. With the help of the level 47 power-type Ash-grey bear, the two block heads are dead. I let someone else do the dirty work for me!

In the sky, the Level 41 wind elf archer flies into a rage. As he readies his bow, he angrily yells out: "Those two blockheads unexpectedly got themselves killed. Dammit. Xiao Yao, where can you escape to? Do you really believe that the [Wrath of the Heroes] will let you stay in Ba Huang City free and undisturbed?"

[TL: This is a pun on his name since his name Xiao Yao also means free and unfettered.]

"Whoosh!"

In the sky, a [Fire Arrow] flies through the air. I am not fast enough to dodge it. As my back warms up, a big number appears—

"174!"

Although unimpressive, the archer's attack couldn't be considered low. He probably pumped all of his stats into agility or otherwise he wouldn't have this kind of attacking power.

Immediately, the archer continues to fire. The bow string's "Twang!" echoes through the air. He uses his 2nd promotion skill — [Triple Arrow]. Each arrow does a different amount of damage, 55%, 65% and 75% damage each. My back receives a series of arrows. It really hurts.

"112!"

"131!"

"152!"

....

Watching my health drop as I endure the attacks, I could not restrain myself. With one [Heal], I gain 750 HP, filling up my health bar.

The archer in the sky is angry enough to almost vomit blood. However, he kept his alertness and continued to fly around at 15 yards above ground. That's the ideal height for Wind Elves to travel at the fastest speed in the skies, any higher and their speed would take a toll.

"Damn it, his defense stats are really high. However, don't expect to survive my attacks just like that!"

I hear the whisk of the wind behind me and the archer began a series of vicious arrow attacks. Simultaneously, a few visible blue dots on the map appear to be coming towards me at a rapid pace. Without doubt, they are the Wind Elf players in [Wrath of the Heroes], the other races are definitely incapable of that kind of speed.

Taking a glance, I finally see the guy's ID-

Willow Shore LV-41 Silver Archer

.....

No, this cannot go on. I must find an opportunity to get rid of this guy as soon as possible. Otherwise, once the other players come his aid, I won't be able to get away easily. Saying that, it would still be difficult for them to kill me with my 1022 defense.

Squinting my eyes, I find a tree, uprooted by the wind, and lying slanted on the slope just in front of me. Immediately, an idea comes to my mind, I could make use of the terrain here!

"Shua!"

Recalling Baby Bobo back into my inventory, I lower both of my knees and slide swiftly towards the tree, leaving a deep trail in the grass behind me. My whole body goes through a gap beneath the big tree, instantly causing the archer above to lose vision of me.

"Trying to run away? I will drag you out and slaughter you even if you

dig a hole in the ground!”

From the sky, Willow Shore shouts furiously and flies over with his longbow, his body positioned in the sky just above the big tree.

.....

“Hua!”

Suddenly, I slide out from beneath the tree. Carrying my Jade City Sword, I step on the tree branches and rush towards him. Pah pah pah, my boots leave scar after scar on the tree branch. Pah! Making use of my great strength and agility, I leap and surge towards him with great speed like an arrow being shot into the sky. I jumped almost an entire 20 yards up. Who says that Human Swordsmen are unable to fly!

“Weng!”

My Jade City Sword quivers, charging for two seconds!

Willow Shore widens his eyes in shock. Seeing me jump up into the sky right in front of him, the longbow in his arms shivers. His face stiffens up as he says, “Crap, I fell into his trap...”

The edges of my mouth arch upwards as my [Wind Blade] tears through in front of me: “Die!”

“Peng!”

Hearing the crisp sound of the blade of the sword tearing through his body, Willow Shore’s body seemingly shreds apart in an instant with a large damage number floating upwards–

“1007!”

It is a fatal blow, the defenses of these cloth classes are unable to withstand my attacks!

“Keng!”

Sheathing my sword, I summon Baby Bobo and dive into the bushes filled with wild flower behind me. Crawling forward a few meters, I enter the forest and thus managing to shake the [Wrath of the Heroes] players

off my trail. Those flies are really annoying.

.....

Indeed, after killing a Wind Elf Archer, the other Wind Elves of [Wrath of the Heroes] dare not be arrogant enough to think that the skies are a completely safe territory for them. Also, the fact holds that I could simply use Baby Bobo's ability to fly to get rid of them but I chose not to and instead, use my Jade City Sword to strike fear into the enemy.

On the big map, the small blue dots gradually disappear. Most of the monsters in the region are around level 45-48 range, considerably high for our current stage. Ordinary players are probably unable to get by in this area. After much consideration, I look around for monsters that are between level 50 and 55, as for me, killing monsters that are around 5-10 levels above my level can be considered relatively safe and the efficiency in which I can earn EXP is also high.

After around an hour, I walk out of Ba Huang Forest.

Standing at the edge of the forest, a large plain appears in front of me. Beyond the plains, slightly further, would be the mountainous regions formed in the ancient times and the Green Qilin Valley lies in the midst of these mountains.

On the plains, there are many wolves that are howling. Level 49, looks like the monsters within the Green Qilin Valley would definitely be over level 50. Damn it, looks like it will be another journey that is filled with danger. However, for the LV-6 Green Qilin Grass and gold coins, everything will be worth it.

Carrying my Jade City Sword, I determinedly surge forward.

Chapter 106: Nature's Aggression

To avoid all the monsters between the levels of 47-49, I took a big detour while traversing over the plains. After an entire half hour, I stood at the borders of a verdant valley. Looking downwards at the valley, which was shrouded in mist, and from afar I could hear the primal cry of birds. I have finally arrived at the Green Qilin Valley, the destination of my trip!

I grab my Jade City Sword tightly as Baby Bobo flies happily around my shoulder. Before entering the mountainous region, I check the area around the valley but there doesn't seem to be a route that leads straight into it. Just a step away is a cliff that is around 200 meters in height. However, the Green Qilin Abyss lies within the valley, if I don't find a way to get down, I won't be able to find my Green Qilin Grass.

"Keng!"

Sheathing my sword, I took a closer look at my surroundings. The cliff is indeed too steep, if I were to try to jump down, I would definitely die.

Looking around again, I suddenly found my ray of hope. There were strand after strand of thick and strong green vines growing in the gaps between the rocks. If I were to tie these green vines together to form a rope, I could slide my way down and not die from the height.

Walking forward, I grab a strand of vines and pull down with great force and confirm that the vines are quite firm. So, I pull up about 10 meters of vine and then sever it before pulling up another strand and continue the entire process until I had roughly 200 meters worth of woven green rope. Tying them together, I hook the end of the vines onto a gigantic rock and start to slide my way down along the cliff. As the green vines shake, I shook along with them. Actually, this was quite a dangerous feat as there is a limit to the strain wild vines can take and they could rip apart quite easily. There have been many adventurers that died in the wild under such circumstances.

"Pah!"

With force, I step away from the face of the cliff using my boots and at

the same moment, my body slides down a few meters. By following the process continuously, I swiftly descend to a height that was 50 meters below water level. At this moment, my body was shrouded by damp mist as I felt a fine moisture settling onto my two legs. Looking upwards, the mist has already obscured my vision of where I originally came from.

“Sssss...”

Suddenly, my instincts told me that there was danger lurking around and at the very next moment, a giant black snake appears from one of the cracks along the face of the cliff. Opening its large mouth, it viciously bites onto my shoulder!

”

“Pu!”

“312!”

It was quite a painful attack, the snake’s level must be quite high!

With my left arm grabbing onto the vines, I unsheath my sword with my right arm to prepare for battle. At the same moment, with a glance of my eyes, the stats of the monster appear in front of my eyes–

【Mysterious Cliff Snake】 (Elite Monster)

Level : 50

Attack : 650-1000

Defense : 700

Life : 5000

Skills : **【Swallow】【Tail Whip】【Toxic Spray】**

Description: Mysterious Cliff Snake, a type of snake possessing deadly poison that lives in the cracks along the face of a cliff. It was said that the snake is a descendant of an ancient beast. Due to countless years of traversing along the mountain, it possesses extraordinary defensive abilities. Also, the Mysterious Cliff Snake is innately greedy and savage, countless have fell under their poison.

.....

It wasn't surprising that with its 1000 base attack power coupled with its high level which suppresses my stats and its hidden properties, its actual attacking power is above 1300, which explains why the snake was able to break my defense of 1000.

A golden hexagram appears on my Jade City Sword, shua shua shua, I continuously strike four times on the body of the Mysterious Cliff Snake. Since my other hand is busy grabbing onto the vine, I was unable to build up power to use **【Strength of a Thousand Men】**, thus I could only dish out a **【Fierce Ice Blade】**. A few damage number pop up-

“375!”

“369!”

“355!”

“371!”

“874!”

.....

Under the series of attacks, the health of the Mysterious Cliff Snake drops by 40%. Along with Baby Bobo's Level 5 **【Combo】** attack, the health of the Mysterious Cliff Snake drops below half and it cries out in agony. Entrenching its body between the cliff, its tail suddenly whips towards me!

“Pah!”

“944!”

I felt a burning pain on my face. Furthermore, it was still a critical hit, excruciating pain!

I hurriedly heal myself and slash the snake several times with my Jade City Sword, averaging around 1.2 attacks per second. Not long afterwards, the monster was at a near death state. Before dying, the Mysterious Cliff Snake opens its wide mouth and sprays out a green fluid towards me!

“Pah...”

With the green fluid splattered all over my face, I feel another burning hot sensation on the skin of my face.

System Notification: You have been poisoned. You will lose 3000 HP within 60 seconds.

.....

“Damn it...”

Losing 50 health every second, this **【Toxic Spray】** is really deadly!

With another **【Fierce Ice Blade】**, I slash through the snake's body and following its ssss cry in agony, the gigantic snake fell motionless between the cracks of the cliff. At the same time, it dropped 7 silver coins. Not bad, it was quite generous!

Stretching my hand to grab the silver coin, I look at my experience bar. The experience I earned from killing the Mysterious Cliff Snake was a whopping 400 points! The experience gained from killing elite monsters is always abundant. Today, I can earn a plentiful sum of experience points here, but that is if I am able to survive. As my level rises higher, I should avoid dying at all costs. Otherwise, my level could end up behind others for a long period of time.

Continuing on my descent, my face remains green and my health continues to drop, making me glad that I have a **【Heal】** skill with a 6 second cooldown. Otherwise, a **【Toxic Spray】** would be enough to kill me from full health. A health potion has a 60 second cooldown time, which means in 60 seconds, one could only heal around 600 health which is completely insufficient to survive the 3000 damage per minute of the Mysterious Cliff Snake's poison. This means that if one doesn't come with a healer, any player at our current stage would probably end up dying. After all, even a monk who adds 5 endurance every Level might not have 3000 health.

After descending for a short while, a second Mysterious Cliff Snake appears and uses **【Toxic Spray】** right from the start in my face. I angrily

retaliate with **【Combo】** and **【Fierce Ice Blade】**. Using myself as a tank, Baby Bobo continues to deal out large amounts of damage. In a mere 10 seconds, we kill this Mysterious Cliff Snake!

“Pata...”

This time, along with 7 silver coins, the snake drops an additional blood red card which looks strangely familiar. Looking at its description, my heart begins to beat faster–

【Pardon Card】: This card prevents the user from gaining any sin points after killing any players for 12 hours.

.....

Silently putting the Pardon Card into my bag, I look towards the sky. Tyrant of Western Chu is the type of person to go all out and after killing his Level 41 archer Willow Shore, the **【Wrath of the Heroes】** is bound to continue to pursue me. Once they lock onto my position, they would definitely not let me off easy. I understand that the one who strikes first lives. So, assuming that Tyrant of Western Chu really comes pursuing me, I shall take the initiative to get rid of him. At that point in time, I would require a card like the **【Pardon Card】**, otherwise I stand to lose a lot while being killed as a Chaotic Player.

As the mountain wind blows, I sway along the cliff face of Green Qilin Valley. After getting rid of nearly a hundred of these Mysterious Cliff Snakes, I could finally see the ground 50 meters below me. Seeing the lush green that hints of spring, this place has a scenery that belongs to a deep mountain. The sight was one to behold and it would be even better if there was pretty lady here to train with me.

Suddenly, the image of Lin Wan Er flashes across my mind and I immediately shake my head to lose that thought. Damn it, why am I thinking of her. I can't afford to flirt with this kind of woman, I better think of others, such as... Tsk, forget it. I don't have any money right now, I can't afford to flirt with any woman. Let's focus on refining my **【Green Qilin Pill】** to earn money before thinking about other matters.

.....

“Pah!”

As my boots steadily land on the ground, I’ve finally reached the bottom of the valley. Holding my Jade City Sword in one hand, and my other hand pulling apart a curtain of vines, I move forward carefully. This Green Qilin Valley is an entirely unexplored map, who knows what could be hidden within it.

“Sha sha...”

There’s something moving in the grass! I immediately heighten my awareness. It’s definitely another monster, yet on my map, it doesn’t indicate that there is a monster!

“Hua!”

A shadow suddenly launches an attack towards me. I hurriedly raise my arms to block it!

“Pah!”

“371!”

I lost quite a lot of health. As the green leaves in front of me parted, I could see what attacked me. It was actually an extremely large “Big Tree”, but maybe it couldn’t really be considered a big tree. It was more like a monster formed by a bundle of vines and in the middle, a pair of savage eyes could be seen. On its sides were two thick and strong arms, and what that just attacked me was one of the vines on its arms–

【Dark Green Vine Monster】 (Elite Monster)

Level: 50

Attack: 670-1020

Defense: 600

Life: 5000

Skills: **【Furious Whip】【Entangle】【Poison Sting】**

Description: Dark Green Vine Monster, a type of monster that once grew in ancient forests. Initially a type of plant, but after it absorbed evil

energy, it gained consciousness. With a brutal innate personality, it likes to feed on the nutrients on animals to nourish itself. Once the Dark Green Vine Monster manages to entangle itself around you, it would suck all your blood dry.

.....

Looking at its skills, I shiver. To dare to latch onto me?! It must be courting death...

Baby Bobo flies forward and launches an offensive while I prepare my stance and cast a **【Fierce Ice Blade】**!

“Pu!”

My **【Fierce Ice Blade】** penetrates the body of the Dark Green Vine Monster, causing ice to form on him. On top of dealing 900+ damage, its speed is also lowered. A skill just isn’t the same as a normal attack. At the same time, I activate **【Combo】** to kill it as fast as possible.

The Dark Green Vine Monster groans in pain and raising both of its arms, pah pah pah, it starts on a flurry of whip attacks against me. In no time, my face reddens and swells up from all the beating. Both the human and the monster looked tattered with the beatings!

“Roar...”

When his health reaches around 40%, the Vine Monster opens both of his arms and countless vines stretch out from his arms. Shua shua, and in an instant, I’m trapped in his vines. Without doubt, this is his **【Entangle】**. Although I try to break free with all my strength, I’m unable to pry away from his grip. At the same moment, the Vine Monster made a ji ji sound and points many small poisonous vines towards me, each stabbing into areas where I was unprotected by my armors, directly piercing my skin. It’s sucking my blood!?

“100!”

“100!”

“100!”

.....

My health dropped steadily. 100 damage every second, dammit!

In a rage, I activate my combo attack – **【Strength of a Thousand Men】**!

“Peng!”

A whirl of air gushes up from my feet, immediately pushing away the vines of the Vine Monster. Swiftly, I deal strike after strike on the vines. With my **【Wind Blade】**, the Vine Monster cries wretchedly and his large body falls apart, leaving behind a pile of broken twigs. As it died, it dropped 9 silver coins. Awesome, the monsters here are seriously generous!

Picking up the silver coins, I continue to venture forward. This time, the Vine Monsters who are hiding below the trees are unable to hide from my sight. I picked them out one after another and got rid of them cleanly. Using a combo skill to free myself from their **【Entangle】** by making use of the surge of air effect before the combo, I’ll be honest here, it was something I would have never thought of. The only thing is that the cooldown time for **【Strength of a Thousand Men】** is rather long, thus I can only depend on Baby Bobo to dish out damage. On average, I could get rid of a Vine Monster in around 18 seconds.

While I was busy slaughtering the Dark Green Vine Monsters, with a ding, I suddenly receive a message coming from Yue Qing Qian, “Brother Xiao Yao!”

“Hm?”

“You are at the Green Qilin Valley north-west of Ba Huang City, right?”

“Yeah, how did you know...”

“How I know about it isn’t important. What is important is that the Tyrant of Western Chu is bringing a 200 men team towards Green Qilin Valley saying that they are going there to hunt. I knew it, your position must have been compromised! What to do now? Shall I bring my men from **【Prague】** to kill them?”

I unconsciously smile, “There’s no need for that. Just wait and see, Qing Qian. They have nothing to earn from coming to Green Qilin Valley.”

“Why?”

I looked up towards the Vine Monsters and the Mysterious Snakes between the cracks of the cliff and laughs, “Because the indigenous population of the Green Qilin Valley is extremely aggressive...”

“Huh...”

”

Yue Qing Qian chuckles and says, “Fine, be careful brother Xiao Yao, I’m going back to train.”

“Okay!”

Chapter 107: Wrath of the Heroes Again

“Ka cha!”

With a slash, I slice apart the body of the Vine Monster, removing the last sliver of his health. Along with 10 silver coins, it drops an Illustration of the Vine Monster that had 4.5 stars in endurance and 3.5 in attack, quite normal stats. Let’s just leave it there; there’s probably no Level 1 Vine Monsters here and also, that kind of stat growth doesn’t interest me at all.

Continue killing!

“Cha...”

The Jade City Sword pierces through the body of the Vine Monster. With a **【Wind Blade】**, it is immediately shredded apart!

“Ding...”

A crisp sound of something dropping could be heard. Turning to see what happened, the Vine Monster seemed to have dropped some kind of equipment, something shiny. Previously, the equipment that have dropped were useless green-tiers or black iron-tier equipment, what could it be this time?

As I stretch out my hand to grab the 10 silver coins, beside them, I see a small shiny ring that silently lies in the grass. As I place it in my palm, heat flows from the ring and sinks into my skin. My heart begins to beat wildly as I look at the properties of the ring, —

【Man Luo’s Ring】 (Silver-Rank Equipment)

Strength: +27

Endurance: +25

Extra: Increases the user’s attack by 40 points

Special Effect: Life steal, converts 1% of damage to the user’s health

Level Requirement: 45

.....

Life steal!!

My eyes widened into two big circles. A ring with 1% life steal, Damn it! I actually got a 1% life steal ring? Awesome!

1% life steal, although it doesn't seem like much, in reality, it helps immensely. Furthermore, life steal effects can be stacked. If a player can obtain around 10% life steal, he would be godlike! This is how the Battle Reflux Style originated, to continuously attack the opponent while recovering one's own health; Jian Feng Han and Q Sword are all grandmasters of this style.

Well, who cares, let me equip it first!

“Pa ta!”

Both of my hands have a ring on them, one of them the Green Stem Ring and the other is the Man Luo's Ring, both of them are silver-rank equipment. A player can equip only 2 rings at a time, so my ring collection is now complete. My attack damage has risen to 1138 and my health has reached the 2000 range, granting me even greater survivability!

.....

Continuing on, I look into my bag as I head deeper into the forest. Elite monsters have a fixed chance of dropping a Pardon Card and I already got 3 of them at this point of time. If nothing surprising happens, it is highly likely that these Pardon Cards will become a popular item in the future. After all, the kind of items that allow one to be able to kill people without accumulating sin points. To battle maniacs such as Jian Feng Han, Yan Zhao Warrior and General Li Mu, this card is a godsend.

In the blink of an eye, three hours have passed; it's already nearing 5 in the afternoon. As I kill another Vine Monster, I look at my experience bar. Level 45 with 97% experience. All I require is just a bit more to reach Level 46. However, I still send a message to Lin Wan Er, “Wan Er, do you want to eat dinner?”

Lin Wan Er replies approximately 7 seconds later, “Hm, Dong Cheng and I are currently clearing out elite monsters. Might take us awhile, we’ll have dinner around 7. I’m on a diet right now”

I say, “You aren’t fat, what are you dieting for?”

“I am still a little plump...” Lin Wan Er confesses.

“Be careful, perhaps your chest will end up shrinking...”

“Okay fine, I won’t go on a diet... So, how are you and the 【Zhan Long】 studio progressing?”

“Song Han and the rest are currently engaging in battles with humanoid monsters to earn money and raise their levels. While I am training at an area near the borders of Ba Huang and Jiu Li City.”

“Okay... Good luck... Don’t PK anymore...”

“Sure...”

.....

As I close my message window, a few human-like shadows appear in the forest. I clench my fist, damn it, they sure have caught up quickly. Even though Lin Wan Er told me not to PK, it looks like I’ll have to betray her expectations!

A total of 20+ people appear in the lush green forest. They were all members of the 《Wrath of the Heroes》. In their midst, I saw the Level 41 Wind Elf Archer, Willow Shore! However, he is only Level 40 now. There’s also the Musketeer, Piggy. Piggy is one of the top players in Wrath of the Heroes as well as the right-hand man of the Tyrant of Western Chu. They really want my head.

“Is Xiao Yao Zi Zai really in this region?” Piggy frowns.

Willow Shore nods his head, “Yeah, he is definitely still here. I’ve investigated and on our way, there were a few players that were picking herbs and saw Li Xiao Yao and his bee coming down the cliff. Also, while climbing down, we also saw the corpse of a Mysterious Cliff Snake in the cracks of the cliff. Without a doubt, he is in this region, just that...”

He looks at the 20+ people behind of him and frowns, "With so few people, we might not be able to kill him."

Piggy positions his rifle on his shoulders and says, "You still have the cheek to say that. The map wasn't accurate. Just from our way down from the cliff, there have already been near a hundred casualties from the vicious attacks by the Mysterious Cliff Snakes. Furthermore, the respawn site is a long way from here, thus they can't revive in the short-term. After that, the Dark Green Vine Monsters also got rid of several of us in an instant, leaving less than 100 of us here in the Green Qilin Valley. Then, since we were also unsure of Xiao Yao Zi Zai's exact location, we split into 5 groups to hunt for him. Although we know that we are scattering our forces, what other choice do we have?"

Willow Shore takes a deep breath and says, "Fortunately, what we have left are the elites. As long as we focus all of our attacks on him, even if it is Xiao Yao Zi Zai with his overpowered defense and health, we still can kill him in an instant. What we have here... is all of our 40+ second time promoted elites!"

Piggy, carrying his gun, blandly says, "Continue advancing forward while remaining in position, be careful of the Vine Monsters' attacks. As for Wind Elf Archers and Mages, be careful of your flying heights. Be at least 15 yards away from the ground or otherwise you might be an easy target for Xiao Yao Zi Zai. Everyone, summon your pets, there is no point in keeping them tucked away."

"Okay!"

.....

The group of 《Wrath of the Heroes》 players slowly march into the forest. They did not dare to be too adventurous as their levels were not as high as mine. This was to my advantage. Piggy's group was moving very slowly and carefully within the forest which showed their lack of understanding of the terrain.

I hide myself in the bushes, completely concealed by a thick level of vegetation. This way, my blue dot on the map wouldn't be easily visible to

them. Furthermore, my level surpasses their's by at least 2 or more, making it harder for them to spot me on the map.

Counting their numbers, they have 22 players there. Among these 22 people, the ones that I fear the most are the Mages and the Archers. The magical attacks by the mages are extremely painful to Swordsmen like me while those 2nd promotion Archers have a new skill – **【Shatter Shot】**. **【Shatter Shot】** has a high probability to stun its target, and once stunned, it would be a simple feat for the Mages to focus their attacks on me. My 2000 health wouldn't be sufficient to take their all of attacks.

First, I shall clear away all the Mages, followed by the Archers and then the Healers. In this group, my main priority would be the two Wind Elf Mages. I must kill them in an instant via a sneak attack, or else it would be difficult for me to continue fighting.

Looking at the surrounding terrain, none of it is really suited for sneak attacks. I am not an Assassin so I don't know **【Sneak】** like them, thus I can only make use of the surrounding objects to hide myself.

Carefully looking around once again, I find a large tree that seems to stretch up to the heavens in front of me. It was slightly bent, the result of the wind in the region, and has dense red leaves growing all over the tree, obscuring vision of its tree branch. Furthermore, this tree is directly in the way of the players from 《Wrath of the Heroes》, it's only 500 meters away from them. Thankfully, they still can't see it because of the forestation.

“Alright...”

I grin. Carrying my Jade City Sword, I stuck closely to the bushes while crawling over to the tree. Reaching the foot of the tree, I bite onto my sword and exerting all my strength in my arms and with “pah pah pah” sounds, I climb up the tree as though I were an ape. Climbing to a height of around 50 meters, I smile in the knowledge that even the Wind Elf players were unable to fly to such a height. Furthermore, my body was under the large tree crown, thus causing my blue dot to not appear on the map.

Carrying my Jade City Sword, I control my breathing and wait silently for the other party to arrive.

A few minutes later, not betraying my expectations, Piggy and his group get here after killing a few more Vine Monsters. The two Wind Elf Mages were flying in the sky, the staves in their hand were glowing with a slight hue. From the ground, Piggy suddenly feels as though something was amiss and says, “Mages, all of you activate your 【Mana Shield】, I feel a little unease...”

Willow Shore frowns and says, “Brother Piggy, isn’t activating our 【Mana Shield】 now a little too early? The mana cost of activating 【Mana Shield】 is pretty high. At this rate, even before we see Xiao Yao Zi Zai, our mages would run out of mana to cast their spells. A Level 5 【Pillar of Ice and Fire】 already costs 500 mana to cast. A mage that pumps all their stats to magic only has around 4100 mana at Level 40, we can’t afford to waste our mana...”

A fierce glint appears in Piggy’s eyes, “Cut the crap, all the Mages activate your 【Mana Shield】, now!”

In the sky, two golden lights appear, forming the 【Mana Shield】s. Furthermore, it is a Level 5 【Mana Shield】, thus its durability would be on the high end, making it hard to break. Of course, with offensive ability like mine, the durability doesn’t make much of a difference to me.

.....

Sure, activate your 【Mana Shield】s, you are still going to die!

I hold my breath and my heart starts beating wildly. 1 Vs 22 was going to be a huge challenge for me. Although, I can ignore the short-range classes for now. After all, my 1022 defense isn’t just for show. I will first get rid of the magic classes and the classes that have crowd control skills first!

(TL: Crowd Control = Slows, stuns etc.)

“Pata... Pata...”

The wings of the Wind Elves flutter rapidly as they approach my

location. One of them, a level 42 Wind Elf Mage girls looks up at the tree crown and laughs, “Piggy, is Xiao Yao Zi Zai really that amazing? To require such an army just to get rid of him? Although, my older sister said that Xiao Yao Zi Zai is quite good looking...”

Piggy replies, “Surely you won’t show him mercy just because he is handsome?”

The lady covers her mouth as she laughs, “Why would I? If it is for Wrath of the Heroes, I would be willing to do anything. If Xiao Yao Zi Zai really appears right in front of me, I’ll send a 【Pillar of Fire and Ice】 to freeze and roast him, just wait and see!”

The Level 43 Mage girl beside her also chuckles, “Yup, an enemy of the 《Wrath of the Heroes》 is an enemy to us. There are no emotions, we’ll just slaughter him!”

.....

“Keng!”

Taking the Jade City Sword out from the sheath, I activate a Pardon Card. With a leap of my battle boots off of the tree branch, I rush towards them. This is the moment. Die!

“Hua hua...”

With my Ice Fire Cloak fluttering behind me, my estimation was extremely accurate. As my body drops down like a sharp blade, I directly freefall towards the Level 43 Mage. Her equipment was decent, thus her 【Mana Shield】 should be more durable!

The flying Wind Elf Mage, hearing the sound from the fluttering of my cloak, looks up and receives a surprise, “Watch out, there’s someone on the tree!”

Together with the sound of my sword’s cry, four golden hexagram stars appear on my Jade City Sword. My heart feels a tinge of happiness. Excellent, with 4 hits I should be able to rip her shield apart. After all, her Ability Power can’t be above that of Soaring Dragon, and naturally her 【Mana Shield】 won’t be as strong as his!

“Peng peng peng...”

With the intense sound of my sword clashing against her shield, sparks flew from her 【Mana Shield】. The Wind Elf Mage was shocked beyond words looking at her rapidly disintegrating shield. After I finished my combo, I send in a fifth strike – 【Fierce Ice Blade】!

“Pu fu!”

“1107!”

My sword slashes through her cloth armor, causing a one hit KO, without a single chance to for her to heal. At the same time, I press down on her shoulders directly before she disappears, leap towards the other Mage. The other Mage was flabbergasted, “She... she... she was killed in an instant! So this is Xiao Yao Zi Zai!!”

Baby Bobo, who was flying around the other Mage, sent a LV-5 Combo stabbing directly to the Mage’s 【Mana Shield】, breaking it in a second. As for me, as my body descended, I swept my sword vertically downward in an arc, sending a slash directed towards the Mage. It was a normal attack, but with a pufu, her robe was cut through in an instant, causing yet another one hit KO.

“Sou!”

As my body fell straight downwards, I grip my sword with my both hands tightly. The figure of Willow Shore who was standing on the ground enlarges in my eyes.

.....

“Gu dong...”

Willow Shore gulps, and with a wail, “Crap, he really is here...”

Chapter 108: Exterminated

“Puchi!”

Taking advantage of Jade City Sword's descending motion, I slash directly into Willow Shore's shoulder and a damage number of 1700+ bursts into the air, causing a one-hit KO. Willow Shore's eyes widen as he drops the longbow that he was wielding. His knees hit the ground weakly and raising his head to look at me, he mutters “Such a fast sword...”

.....

Immediately after killing Willow Shore in a single strike, I roll away into the tall grass as several fireballs flew over my head with a “Huhu” sound. At the same time, fire and ice magic strikes the ground that I was standing on a moment ago. To be precise, they are [Pillar of Fire and Ice]'s! The other party has 7 mages altogether. However, I have only managed to kill two of them!

“Go die!”

A level 41 Berserker roars and charges towards me, his battle axe imbued with the flame aura from [Flame Axe]. It was a straightforward chop attack!

“Sha.....”

Shifting my weight, I retreat half a step. Pah! The head of the battle axe strikes the ground and explodes, burning the surrounding grasses to ash. At the same time, an enormous “MISS” appears in the air. As expected, skills like [Flame Axe] are slow in their wind up, making it especially easy for speed classes to avoid the attack.

Keng, raising my Jade City Sword, I send a vertical slash towards the berserker. He clumsily blocks it with his battle axe. Pressing my attack, I overpower the Berserker, forcing him to retreat 3-4 steps. He stood there dumbfounded, “What the heck, how is this possible? How can the strength of a Swordsman surpass mine?!”

I turn around and move away, disengaging from the Berserker. Raising

my sword, I charge towards a Mage who was busy casting a [Pillar of Fire and Ice], a skill from the second Mage promotion, against me. As I raised my sword to attack the Mage, with a bang, a spark appears on my shoulder and the scent of gunpowder lingers heavily in the air. Piggy started shooting at me! However it isn't much of a problem; My 1000+ defense meant his attack could only deal a damage of 200+.

In addition, a large army of wasps, vampire bats, praying mantises and other pets come rushing towards me. The praying mantises have slow movement speed, and thus, were unable to keep up with me. Although the wasps have high mobility, their attack damage isn't even in the 700 range, and thus, couldn't break through my defenses. Ding ding, each and every of their stings strike my Dawn Breastplate and caused less than 50 damage!

“Shua!”

“+750!”

With a [Heal], my health bar is restored back to full. In a few quick steps, I suddenly appear in front of the Mage. He tries to retreat but it's too late. A surge of air suddenly emanates from my feet and I activate my S-rank combo skill [Strength of a Thousand Men]! One attack follows closely after another, and another and yet another. Pah pah pah pah, the initial 4 strikes shatter the [Mana Shield] of the Mage. Then, with a roar, I charge up my energy and send a [Wind Blade] right at him!

“Bang!”

“1109!”

The Mage whose [Mana Shield] was broken stares blankly as his knees hit the ground. He dies in an instant and even drops several Indigo Sea Pill. Players from Wrath of the Heroes indeed have no lack of money, to be able to use LV-5 pills!

Feeling an intense heat on my back, I turn around to see Piggy crouching some distance away while holding a rifle in his hands, that seemingly like an illusion, became bigger and bigger, with it's aim directed right towards me. It is the skill from the second job promotion

for Musketeers!

“Bang!”

The sky turns fiery-red as the land all around me is hit by explosions from Piggy. It was a 7×7 meter AOE attack, a skill from the second job promotion for Musketeers – Bombardment!

“197!”

A damage number appears in the air and I feel a chill. That was really scary, if seven or eight Musketeers were to use Bombardment on me at the same time, even with my movement speed, it would be impossible for me to dodge their attacks. I would probably just die on the spot. These kinds of AOE attacks are seriously too frightening!

.....

Lowering my sword, I decide to ignore Piggy and pull a LV-5 Health Potion from my bag, recovering 750 health points. In the sky, Baby Bobo flutters around and goes for the same target as me. It's a level 39 Mage who hasn't undergone the second job promotion yet and thus does not possess the [Mana Shield] skill. Forcing him backwards with my Jade City Sword, I direct Baby Bobo to send a deadly sting towards him, killing him in a moment!

“Healers, heal everyone properly!” Piggy's eyes reflected his anger. “Archers, what are you waiting for, use Shatter Shot to lock his movements! Berserkers and Swordsmen, surround him and block his path, we must get rid of Xiao Yao Zi Zai!”

In the sky, three Wind Elf Healers grit their teeth, “Xiao Yao Zi Zai's style of attacking is brutal, all of his skills are one-hit KOs, we don't even get a chance to heal his victims. His attack power is too high!”

From the opposite direction, a level 42 Swordsman swings his sword towards me and laughs, “What's so impressive about him, watch me as I get rid of him!”

.....

“Puchi!”

As the Jade City Sword pierces through the chest of the fifth Mage, I feel a strong wind behind me, the level 42 Swordsman was about to launch a LV-5 [Combo] attack!

“Hu...”

I immediately turned my sword to meet his, dragging the Mage’s corpse along with my sword. Keng, I deflect the Swordsman’s first strike. However, the other three strikes manage to land on the area near my neck, I wasn’t able to avoid them–

“134!”

“147!”

“114!”

.....

“What the heck!” The level 42 Swordsman’s face turns green, “This... What the hell is wrong with your defense? Do you need to be that strong!?”

I smile and order Baby Bobo to kill the Swordsman while I head in another direction to kill off another Mage. Breaking his [Mana Shield] with my [Combo] skill, I follow up with a [Fierce Ice Blade], dropping his health to zero in an instant. At the same time, I finally feel some relief. With only a single Mage remaining, my chances of death are extremely low with my 2000+ health.

Now, it is time to begin the massacre. My first target shall be the mastermind, Piggy!

“Pah...”

My warboots step purposefully on the grass while my Jade City Sword reflects a chilling glow.

Piggy shivers and grabs his rifle while retreating hurriedly. At the same time, he shouts, “Knights, block him, don’t let him get near me!”

A knight with at least 3000 health rushes towards me with his spear. Activating his skill, he launches a [Fire Spear] towards me. I receive his attack on my chest and a damage number of 221 appears in the air. The knight's face went pale. Having pumped so much of his stats into defense and endurance, there simply wasn't any possibility of him to breaking through my defense.

Peng, raising my arm, I knock the knight out of my way. In the same motion, I stoop down and punch the ground. Peng, metal chains burst forth from the ground, trapping Piggy. Awesome, this [Binding Chain] skill is really useful!

Piggy's face turns purple, "Crap, now I'm done for..."

"Weng!"

Leaping forward towards Piggy, I charge my attack for 0.2 seconds while I'm flying through the air and send a LV-5 [Wind Blade] right onto Piggy's shoulders. I follow up immediately with a normal attack, depriving him of any chance to regain his health!

"879!"

"664!"

He dies right away. Piggy, being a Musketeer, added most of his stats to Agility and as a result, his health couldn't be higher than 1100. With such low health, he couldn't possibly take on my attacks.

.....

Kicking Piggy's corpse away, I turn to check on Baby Bobo. Baby Bobo had been bombarded by the sole Mage for a while and was left with barely 10% health. I hurriedly cast [Heal] on him to raise his health.

Up in the air, several elf Healers stare at the scene, shocked, "We... What should we do... We..."

There wasn't any chance for them to slip a heal in between my attacks. At most, they could only cast buffs such as [Encourage]. Amongst them, there was a level 40 Healer with the second job upgrade. Looking at the

players on the ground, he couldn't help but ask, "Should I revive brother Piggy?"

The one remaining Mage immediately replies, "Don't revive him, we have already lost. All our other Mages are already dead and we can't kill Xiao Yao Zi Zai like this. His equipment is simply too good. Inform the others of his coordinates so our guild leader can bring some men over. With over a hundred people, we can definitely kill Xiao Yao Zi Zai in an instant!"

"Keng!"

My blade penetrates a player's chainmail and stabs into flesh, yet another Swordsman has died to my Jade City Sword. However at that very moment, my body quivers, it was a stun! A shadow appears, it is a level 41 Assassin!

I could feel a bone-breaking pain on my back. The Assassin's [Backstab] + [Bleed] skilled attacks were very strong!

"447!"

"301!"

Turning swiftly, I slash my Jade City Sword in a sweeping arc. To my surprise, the Assassin leaps backwards and successfully avoids my slash. He must possess exceptional speed and agility. He looks at me provocatively and says, "Xiao Yao Zi Zai, prepare to die!"

The edges of my mouth curve upwards into a sneer, "The one who should prepare to die is you!"

"Hm?" A look of shock flashes in his eyes. Despite his speed, he could only watch as, my Overlord Bee descends from above and sends a combo of stings into his chest!

"Pu tong..."

The Assassin kneels onto the floor, his eyes showing that he was unable to accept such an outcome, "Dammit, the pet's flying speed, how unfair..."

.....

I move on to my next target. Within 6 seconds, I kill another Berserker while healing myself and ensuring that my health is constantly above 40%. Having lost too many of their Mages and Archers, the surviving players from Wrath of the Heroes had lost their advantage over me. Depending solely on heavy-armor classes isn't sufficient to get rid of me. Furthermore, the abilities of these Swordsmen and Berserkers are simply too limited. If it was Jian Feng Han here in place of them, with his current attack power, my situation would be extremely unfavorable.

“Retreat! Don't sacrifice your levels for a lost cause!” One of the enemy's Berserkers shouts as he holds his battle axe and backs away.

The other 9 remaining players, as though just waiting to hear 'retreat', immediately turn tail and flee, leaving the 12 bodies of their comrades behind.

.....

“Keng!”

I return my Jade City Sword to its sheath and laugh. 1v22, yet the outcome was the enemy retreating after 12 casualties. Although part of the victory has to be attributed to the success of the surprise attack, the crucial factor that led to my victory was my current stats and skills, coupled with the timing and usage of my combo attacks. Despite their large numbers, by taking advantage of every advantage I had, I won the fight.

Bending down, I pick up all the equipment that the enemy dropped. As none of them were red-named chaotic players, the drop rate was really low. Dying once has a 15% probability of dropping 1 piece of equipment, 3% probability of dropping 2 pieces, and no chance of dropping 3 equipment. Thus, even though I killed 12 of their players, they only dropped 3 pieces of equipment, even after taking my high charm into consideration.

Willow Shore dropped a longbow “Sweeping Wind”, a level 37 silver-rank equipment.

Attack 197-275,

Agility +27,

Endurance +25

The stats were not bad, so the bow could probably be sold for a good price. Another piece of equipment was the “Runoff Cloak” that was dropped by one of the Mages, a level 40 bronze-tier equipment. It increases magic attack by 1%, which isn’t too bad either. Finally, a Swordsman dropped his shoes, “Riverbed Boots”, a level 36 bronze-tier equipment which had average stats.

I placed the 3 pieces of equipment into my bag. The Sweeping Wind could probably be sold for quite a bit of money. As for the other two, well, it’s hard to say. Anyway, the price I paid for these was only a single Pardon Card, so I guess it doesn’t really matter.

.....

Checking my own status after the intense battle, I find that although I still have 57% of my health left I only had 31 mana left, which isn’t sufficient to even cast a single [Wind Blade]. Damn it, high level skills really require too much mana. Looks like in the future, on top of pursuing equipment with good Endurance, Strength and Agility stats, I must also look at the Magic stats. Being able to sustain my attacking prowess is the path to be the top!

It would take them at least 20 minutes to get to my current location, so I have no reason to hurry. However, since my position is now known, there’s no reason for the Wrath of the Heroes players to not come and cause trouble for me, I decided to move and not to idle around any longer!

.....

Checking my surroundings, I venture forward. Not long after, I stumble upon a gigantic pitch-black abyss. As I close in on the abyss, I feel a ferocious aura emanating from it. I have finally reached my destination – Green Qilin Abyss!

Chapter 109: Flamed Fan Dance

After walking for a few minutes along the edge of the forest, I arrived at the edge of the Green Qilin Abyss. It really was a bottomless void, with no apparent way to reach the base. The walls of rock were smooth, sleek, and covered with moss. The rock underneath also seemed to be pretty solid; hardly cracking at all when tested with my Jade City Sword. My plan of slowly climbing down into the Abyss by stabbing into it's walls was a bust.

“Bang....”

I sat at the Abyss' edge and peered into its depths. I could make out faint red dots deep inside. These must have been the monsters that spawn in the Green Qilin Abyss. Unfortunately, the distance that separated us was too great. That was fine though. What I had cared about most as of then was finding the Green Qilin Grass. Since the time I entered Green Qilin Valley, I had not seen even a single blade of it. If Green Qilin Grass really does grow in this region, then it must be in the Green Qilin Abyss.

.....

“Ding!”

It was a message from General Li Mu, who I had not talked to for quite some time. “Haha. Brother Xiao Yao. I hear you PKed against players from [Wrath of the Heroes] in a remote region?”

I replied: “Hmm? Your connections are pretty good....”

Li Mu laughed, “Actually... It was a member of [Wrath of the Heroes] who announced the news. There's already a video of the fight on the forums. You youngsters are really popular...”

I paused for a second, speechless, “Hey, don't mock me! I'm being hunted to my wit's end. This is the kind of popularity that I really don't want. Oh right! Your guild has been established for quite some time already. Is it doing well? How's recruitment going?”

Li Mu replied with a hint of pride, “ Over the past few days, we have

organized small parties to level up our guild. We're now level 2, and have almost 300 guild members. We hit our membership limit just this morning. Almost everyone has already received their second promotion. Our only problem is that we don't have many healers. Only 7 have received their second promotion..."

I was amazed, "That's pretty good. With 300 second promoted players, you can seize control of Ba Huang City.... "

Li Mu laughed: "Don't exaggerate so much. The second helmets have already been shipped, it is said that in Ba Huang City the enrollment in [Prague], [Vanguard], and [Flying Dragon] have already recruited 10 thousand. Once a guild war starts, 300 players is far from enough."

I replied: "Then you should continue to work on leveling up your guild. Reach level 5 as soon as possible to raise your membership limit to 10 thousand... If you can reach ten thousand members, [Prague], [Vanguard], and [Flying Dragon] will have some competition!"

"Ok, we'll do our best!" Li Mu's voice suddenly dropped, becoming serious. "Xiao Yao, I'd like to ask you one last time. Would you like to join [Valiant Bravery]? I can make you Vice Guild Master and you'll still be able to do whatever you want."

I shook my head with a smile, "Brother Li Mu. You don't need to worry about me. My character isn't suited for guilds. I really don't like being restricted. I don't think I'll ever join a guild... "

Li Mu nodded: "Alright. We can't force you to join if you don't want to. But, we'll still forever be your friends!"

"Ok!"

He continued: "You'll have to be careful at Green Qilin Valley.... I don't want to reopen my friends list later and suddenly see you below level 40...."

"Alright...."

....

Closing the messenger, I sighed. I still had not found a way to get into the Abyss. Suddenly, the beautiful Miss Wan Er messaged me: “Um... Xiao Yao? Sorry for bothering you but....”

“What’s up, Wan Er? “

“Dong Cheng and I received a timed quest, so we cannot log off anytime soon. When we finish our mission, I will notify you and we can eat then. Is that okay?”

“Um... Ok”

“Hehe. Great! Then I’ll go back to work!”

“Good bye, talk to you later!”

“.....”

.....

Lin Wan Er still has a quest and can’t log off; That isn’t too bad because now I have more time to figure out how to enter the Green Qilin Abyss

“Drip drip drip”

An unexpected spring shower filled the air with the soft pitter-patter of rain. This region’s climate was supposed to be mild and spring-like throughout the year. Typically, the seasons of <<Destiny>> followed those of real life. Currently, it is autumn. However, there were exceptions. Some regions had their own climate, separate from the rest of Destiny. For example, in Dragon City, the climate resembled something like late autumn and early winter. In Ba Huang Forest, it was always summer. In Green Qilin Valley, it was always spring.

Lifting my head, I allowed the light drizzle wash over my face and I pursed my lips. How the hell am I supposed to get down to that damn place? My frustration bordered on insanity.

“Wooosh.....”

A light breeze picked up and flowed through the Abyss, dispersing the dense fog. Almost instantly, I spotted something moving. It— It seems to be a cluster of vines suspended in thin air! The long, green strips of

growth extended deep into the dark Abyss. Where had these vines come from? How had I not noticed them before!

I lifted my head and immediately felt relieved. There was an absolutely gargantuan tree on the other side of the Abyss. Its trunk appeared to reach at least ten meters across and stretched vertically for several hundred meters. Its lush branches and tendrils hung over the Abyss, dropping numerous vines into the dark void. Eh, it appears that I had to use these vines if I want to enter the Green Qilin Abyss.

I made my way around the Abyss until I arrived at the tree. I attempted to climb it, but there was some kind of sap on the trunk, making it extremely slippery. I repeatedly slid back down after each attempt. Climbing the tree with my bare hands was definitely not possible.

Looking over the abyss, the closest vine was still 30 meters out from the edge. It was way past my reach!

....

I was conflicted. Part of me wanted to jump out and try to grab the vine and part of me did not dare to. It was just like when I sat next to Lin Wan Er in class. Seeing her snow white small hands at my side, I wanted to hold them and at the same time, I did not dare to. If I really did hold her hand and Lin Tian Nan had found out, I would be screwed!

Clenching my teeth, I threw caution at the wind. I would only die once from falling. What's the big deal!

Jade City sword's scabbard in hand, I tightened my cloak and secured the ancient stone tablet to my back. After backing up about ten meters, I peered through the rain and locked my sight onto the vine that I needed to grab. I sprinted as fast as I possibly could and used my own momentum to propel myself off the edge of the cliff. It was time to gamble. Go!

“Shuaa!”

My Silver Locked Battle Boots almost broke off a giant rock at the edge of the abyss as I pushed myself off. I extended my body horizontally and opened my hands in the anticipation of grasping at the green vine!

Wait.... My body was falling too fast and the wind was blowing against me.... Damn it! With these factors, the green vine was getting farther and farther away from me. I needed to change my approach!

The wind was blowing right into my face, which made it almost impossible for me to keep my eyes opened. I started to panic, swinging my arms wildly while hoping to grasp onto a life saving vine!

“Bang!”

My palm had somehow grasped onto one of the vines but the spring rain had made it unusually slippery, so I keep on sliding down the vine. The vine’s leaves and thorns were ripping pieces of skin off my palm. A sequence of damage numbers was appearing on top of my head; this was really stupid—

“129!”

“97!”

“111!”

....

With a bang, the vine slipped out of my grasp and I started to free fall once again. I forced open my eyes and grabbed onto another vine. Damnit, I was still falling too fast! Hurriedly, I wrapped the vines around my arm in panic, pulled, and yelled, “My father in heaven, give me power!”

My body bounced and then it stopped in the air. Phew, I finally stopped. My body was waving around in the air and the Ancient Tablet glowed behind my back, as if it had been taunting me!

Slowly releasing my grip, I continued sliding down. The bottom of the abyss turned out to be closer than it seemed. The depth was about 300 meters and the green vine ended about 20 meters before the bottom.

I tightly gripped the vine and furrowed my eyebrows. I could already see monsters at the bottom of the abyss. It was a blood red monster, Flaming Cat Spirit. It looked like an adorable little kitten, but was the same size as that of a tiger. “Meow Meow” Its body was surrounded by a magnificent

and lush fur. However, I knew its appearance was a facade because I could already read the monster's attributes ——

【Flaming Cat Spirit】(Elite Monster)

Level: 52

Attack: ? ? ?

Defense: ? ? ?

Health: ? ? ?

Skills: 【Sweeping Claws】【Flame Fan Dance】

Description: The Flaming Cat Spirit is a mysterious creature with flame attributes. It is said that it is an ancestor of the Felidae family. Its claws are capable of splitting boulders due to its abnormal strength, and it uses its deceptively adorable appearance to lure and confuse prey. The Flaming Cat Spirit is extremely skilled in controlling the fire element. Be careful when dealing with these creatures, or you may find yourself burned to a crisp.

TL: <http://en.wikipedia.org/wiki/Felidae>

.....

“Go! Let's slaughter this Flaming Cat Spirit before doing anything else!”

I ordered myself to move and jump down to fight the kitty. As I fell, I drew my Jade City Sword. On the tip, 4 golden hexagons appeared as I launched a level 5 [Combo] on the Flaming Cat Spirit's body.

“Meow meow....”

Flaming Cat Spirit cried as it recoiled. A big chunk of its health disappeared——

“401!”

“398!”

“412!”

“374!”

The cat's defense was pretty ordinary. I could even say it was lacking. This was going to be easy!

I happily brandished my sword and continued my attacks. The Cat stared at me with watery eyes and suddenly swung its sharp paws. A fierce heat burned my face and four cat claw scratches appeared—

“519!”

Gasp. What was with that attack power?! My jaw dropped!

I swung my blade horizontally and I activated my combo!

“Pak pak” I randomly swung at the cat and the Cat Spirit's health kept falling but I was still in a precarious position. With one hit, my health dropped 25% which was extremely frightening. I retreated and activated [Binding Chains].

“Bang!”

Chains burst out from the floor but the Cat Spirit's movement speed was too fast for the chains to bind!

But, the chains remained in the air and the cat meowed at it; it retaliated to the chains by swinging both its claws and casting a skill.

“Hong!”

Lines of fire appeared in a fan shape. This must have been the [Flame Fan Dance]. Baby Bobo was inside of the attack range!

“1007!”

.....

Looking at the damage number, I was flabbergasted. This was the attack power of a level 52 monster? In a flash, my elite pet was on the verge of death....

Quickly, I rushed forward and used [Fierce Ice Blade] + [Combo]. The Flaming Cat Spirit continued to meow but it quickly fell. 12 silver coins and a bronze leather helmet dropped. The helmet's attributes were pretty good. With the Flaming Spirit Cat's death, my experience bar rose

sharply. One more and I will have reached level 46!

Chapter 110: CBN Leaderboard

After killing a dozen or so Flaming Cat Spirits, I finally got to the mouth of the cave in the Green Qilin Abyss. Here, piles of black limestone were stacked into a precipitous, jagged slope. My heart raced anxiously; I had high expectations and would hate to be disappointed. If I can find some Green Qilin Grass here, there's a good chance that I could make a lot of money. If I go back empty-handed then I will have no way to fund my studio.

.....

Rustle...

As I made my way through the grass, I caught a glimpse of a Flaming Cat Spirit in the distance. It hasn't seen me yet, so I continued on cautiously. I clambered over the pile of black limestone at the edge of the cave and became sorely disappointed. There wasn't even a single blade of Green Qilin Grass. Damn, is it possible that the legendary Green Qilin Grass really doesn't grow in the Green Qilin Valley? Or perhaps my method of searching is flawed?

I reached out with my hands to feel the wet stone walls and let the cool feeling spread in my palm. I clenched my teeth in frustration. I just can't figure it out! Why can I not find the Green Qilin Herb? Even if it is a level 6 herb, I should be far enough in the map for level 6 herbs to spawn. Maybe the system is intentionally preventing players from crafting level 6 pills at this stage of the game?

No, that's not right. The <<Destiny>> system is controlled by the main computer; even the company can't interfere with it. There has to be something I'm missing here.

I silently stood and my eyes wandered over the terrain for a long time. Suddenly, I saw something out of the corner of my eye; something poking out of a piece of limestone. I kicked the rock, cracking its surface to reveal a seed-like object breaking through the rock. My heart sunk. My first impression was that some kind of monkey would jump out at me but of

course that's impossible. With the help of a little poking and prodding, the rock gradually broke open with a few crackling noises, and there, before my eyes, was a dark green seed — the Green Qilin Grass!

TL: The monkey is a reference to Journey to the East, a classic in Chinese literature.

Great!

I am so excited! I was finally able to find the Green Qilin Herb. Although it's extremely small and looked like any other old bean sprout, a dark green light shone from its tiny leaves, a sign of its power. Level 6 herbs are really special!

I needed to collect the Green Qilin Herb without damaging the roots, so I carefully tried to scoop out the top of the limestone using my trowel. However, upon failing to make even a dent to the stone after many attempts with the trowel, I realized that this rock is abnormally strong!

Out of anger, I stabbed at the rock with my sword, breaking it to reveal herb inside. I then used the trowel to collect it—

Ding!

System Notification: You have collected [Green Qilin Herb] x 2, [Herb Collecting] proficiency +5. Since you are the first player to collect the Green Qilin Herb, you received +1 charm!

.....

Not bad, I even got a point in charm...

Continuing my search, I carefully examined each rock for bumps on their surfaces while killing some more Flaming Cat Spirits to clear the area. Not long after, I had 100 Green Qilin Grasses in my inventory. However, having already spent 2 hours or so in the area, I felt a premonition telling me to get moving. Danger is coming. The Tyrant of Western Chu I know would not just leave matters the way they are right now.

I gripped my sword tightly as I scanned the area, seeing that there were

still many Flaming Cat Spirits around me. Although they give a lot of experience, it is tough to take one down, let alone a whole group of them. Their [Flamed Fan Dance] ability is particularly dangerous, since it deals up to 1000 damage, which is more HP than I can afford to lose. They also seem to be very sensitive to my chain skill and can sense where my chains appear from. Once they see my chains, all of the surrounding Flaming Cat Spirits immediately lock on to them and destroy them using the [Flamed Fan Dance] skill. They must hate being restrained.

I cracked open the last black rock and carefully harvested another Green Qilin Herb.

After collecting all of the herbs in the area, I continued searching for more Green Qilin Grasses. As I headed deeper into the Green Qilin Abyss, in search of more grasses, I came across an enormous stone wall, which was carved with the ancient etchings of a mighty beast. It stood, like a totem, towering over everything in the vicinity. This beast must have something to do with the name of the area I'm in, the Green Qilin Abyss. It did, in fact, resemble the figure of the legendary qilin.

I sat down to take a quick breather, contemplating whether or not I should wait and go back to check if the Green Qilin Herbs have respawned. I can only craft 30 Green Qilin Pills with the 100 Green Qilin Herbs I have in my inventory and that is nowhere near enough to make the amount of money I need.

Giving up, I checked my friend list to find that Song Han and his party were already level 30. Those guys are amazing; they grinded to level 30 in only 3 days, an incredible feat.

I sent a message to Song Han, "Little Wolf, how are you guys doing?"

He replied, "Everything is going according to plan. We recently recruited a healer for our party. He runs a small shop selling shoes and hats so he has a lot of free time on his hands. He's been online a lot and grinding is so much easier with a level 33 healer."

"Mm, nice. Don't be afraid to give him any equips that he needs and make sure not to chase him away. It would be extremely beneficial to

have a healer on Zhan Long as well since the four of us isn't going to be enough."

"I understand. Don't worry, with Fox here, he's not going anywhere."

"Ah, okay. How much money did you guys make while grinding?"

"Eh...It's been almost 5 hours and we've since collected a total of 34 gold coins. Convert that into 340 Yuan (~\$55) and dividing among us nets me, Fox, and Old K 110 Yuan per day. That's currently more than enough to pay for our game card and groceries... But don't worry, just wait until we hit the higher levels and get to the high leveled mobs. Coins will literally be dropping from the sky, and making 100 gold coins in a day should be easy as finding them on the ground."

I chuckled. "Don't forget that the gold coins' value is still dropping due to the inflation in game while the number of coins dropped by a mob doesn't change. To keep things short, making money like this can only be a temporary plan, the methods of a noob studio. You need to hurry up and grind to level 40, so we can go and do the higher level missions. Your list of priorities should be helping others, killing bosses, making money, and guaranteeing that the studio functions normally!"

"Got it. Oh yeah, Xiao Yao, don't forget that the server will be down from 3 to 12 AM tomorrow. Although we won't be able to go online for a while, we should be able to get a good 11 hours of sleep, so we can be in good condition for tomorrow."

"Okay, sleep tight, I'll also sleep 11 hours..."

"Haha!"

"Good night!"

.....

With the conversation dying down, I returned to my task of clearing the area of Flaming Cat Spirits. I aggroed them one by one to make it easier and within 2 hours I gained 31% of my experience. If I wiped out the rest of the Flaming Cat Spirits, I should be able to reach level 47 and regain my spot in the Top 10 in the Ba Huang City leaderboards.

The task of killing Flaming Cat Spirits quickly became tedious so I opened up the forum to check the top posts. Surprisingly, one of the posts is about me —

【Video】Xiao Yao Zi Zai is being chased by [Wrath of the Heroes] in Green Qilin Valley!

I clicked on it and watched as my character jumped down from a tree to quickly take out a group of Wind Spirit class players. I remember fighting a total of 22 of them and even making them retreat. Apparently a lot of the players thought that it was an amazing feat and the video already had several thousand replies—

【Post 1 (Player General Li Mu)】: Cough cough, Xiao Yao Zi Zai V5, destroy those [Wrath of the Heroes] members!

TL: V5 is slang for something... probably like OP or great job

【Post 2 (Player Half City)】: It is almost impossible to even fight a 1 v 22, let alone win one! Times are changing quickly; can the [Wrath of the Heroes] really believe that they will be one of China's top 10 guilds? How stupid are they? Keep dreaming...

【Post 3 (Player Yan Zhao Warrior)】: To the above post. It's not that the [Wrath of the Heroes] members are weak, it's just that Xiao Yao Zi Zai is strategically stronger than them. He was able to quickly analyze the terrain and use the tree to ambush his enemies. Not only did he outplay his opponents but his gear is also very good. He also has [Heal] which he learned as a healer so his HP is always high. On top of all that, his pet is god tier and he even created his own combo, which is rumored to be S-ranked. It is a combination of these factors which allowed him to fight 1 v 22 and win.

【Post 4 (Player Cang Tong)】: Li Xiao Yao's pretty stupid...

【Post 5 (Player Cang Yue)】: Love him so much <3 ...

【Post 6 (Demacia)】: The #1 healer pulls out different surprises out of his bag of tricks each time. It's so fun watching Xiao Yao Zi Zai do the unexpected. Haha, I wonder if [Wrath of the Heroes] will continue

chasing him after this defeat. Hopefully they don't all die in the Green Qilin Abyss or else their guild would lose a ton of face LOL!

【Post 7 (Frozen Gravestone)】: Damn, he's so strong! It's hard to imagine that Xiao Yao Zi Zai is a Ba Huang City player like me. He's way out of my league and really scary too...I wonder, in a 1 v 1 between him and Jian Feng Han, who would win?

【Post 8 (Crazy)】: Stop dreaming last post! It doesn't matter how strong Xiao Yao Zi Zai gets, he won't match Jian Feng Han. Don't forget... Jian Feng Han has the strongest sword on the server, the purple-rank Heavenly Plan Sword. Xiao Yao Zi Zai may not even be able to take one round of Jian Feng Han's [Combo]!

.....

There were countless posts on the forums but I stayed calm and didn't bother leaving even one reply.

After that I looked at the website information and discovered new information, it's is called "Hero Chaos: CBN's Destiny Battle Network Leaderboard Officially Opens!"

I clicked on the description and stared blankly at it—

CBN (China-destiny Battle.net) Destiny's leaderboard: Called "China's Destiny's Overall Leaderboard", it will be the most scientific way of judging the strength of the players!

.....

Damn, only one sentence and nothing more. What the hell?

I opened my friends list and just as I was about to chat with someone to find out more, I heard a drop, and found Wan Er's call request. I immediately accepted it and heard a sweet voice—

"Hi, Li Xiao Yao have you seen the new game mode? Don't always pvp other players..."

I nodded, "Mm, I saw it but I didn't understand it."

Wan Er smiled, "In short, just search online for your own ranking

tomorrow and you'll know. I've got the information from a certain place and this CBN leaderboard is reliant on the player's pvp battle achievements in all sorts of games. So, you player killing enthusiasts might even be ranked very high since every time you battle with other players the system will automatically record it. Hehe, from now on if the guilds are looking for players they won't only look at the level, they'll look at the CBN leader board too..."

I smiled, "So that's how it is, I understand now, but as of right now, Q-Sword and Jian Feng Han's rankings will be pretty high..."

Wan Er is speechless, "Don't compare yourself to them, those are the skilled and high-tiered players, people like you.....should compare yourself to Tyrant of Western Chu, that would be wiser..."

I laugh, "Miss, you are too unloving..."

"I'm not joking..." In the calling screen, Wan Er smiled, showing her dimples and acted poutful.

.....

Whoosh!

Suddenly, I heard movements above me. I immediately raised my head and I see several vines swinging back and forth. My heart couldn't help but sink and I said quietly, "Wan Er, I can't chat anymore, I have a bit of a problem!"

Lin Wan Er is smart; she realized what was happening and warned me: "Be careful, and don't die!"

"Ok!"

Chapter 111: Battling a Thousand Men

Looking up at the sky, I watched the drizzling rain fall. Making some rustling sounds, silhouettes began to appear on the vines. All of them were from [Wrath of the Heroes]. There were about 10 players and they were all level 40+ 2nd promotion players. As the group of players slowly slid down, a voice came through the thick fog: "Is Xiao Yao really in this deep dark abyss? We already lost a lot of men. If he isn't here....."

The speaker hadn't finished talking when suddenly a "bang!" echoed through the abyss. It was an assassin that took a wrong step and smashed directly into the bottom of the abyss. Striking the ground after free falling several hundred meters completely emptied the assassin's health. The dead body shattered into tiny pieces of brilliant dust. The dead body will have to resurrect outside of the abyss. Apparently, the Green Qilin Abyss was classified as a high level zone. In this kind of zone, if a player were to die, they would not resurrect locally. Instead, their body will immediately appear in the outer area of the zone.

.....

One after another, people continuously fell through the abyss and perished!

"Rustle....."

I raised my Jade City sword, dumbfounded and stared upwards. Despite the drizzle falling on my face, the sight resembled the feeling of watching a meteor shower. The only difference was that each individual meteorite was caused by a player dying and resurrecting.

In the sky, a familiar voice had come through faintly: "Dammit, where are our wind elves? We brought so many wind elves here. Where are they? They need to fly here and scout!"

Another voice said: "We can't do that, boss. Inside of the Green Qilin abyss there is a falcon type monster. If a wind elf flies in here, they will be met by an attack. We already lost 20+ wind elves like that!"

“Dammit. The first team. Go down there and scout!”

“Ok!”

.....

As the players drew near, I could distinguish three players sliding down: a level 41 barbarian monk, a level 40 human mage and a level 42 undead swordsman. The mage and the swordsman are probably in charge of the damage and the monk will be a meat shield to block my attacks. This time, they didn't send a healer; Liu Ying was probably aware that I was able to immediately kill the healers.

My right hand gripped my Jade City Sword, and I took a deep breath. I'll go and take the initiative since the pardon card is still active. If I sit and wait, I will definitely die miserably. Since Liu Ying was so stubborn against me, I was going to have to kill every last one of them. Today, I will show the [Wrath of the Heroes] guild what I can do. Even if I have to risk everything, I will defend the dignity of a solo player.

Come!

In the sky, one of the shadows dropped down. It was a level 40 mage. I will start with him!

My Silver Locked Battle Boots trod onto the moist grass as I dashed towards the mage. Before the mage even hit the ground, I already had swung my sword. Golden hexagons flickered as I used a level 5 [Combo] into the mage's [Mana Shield]. The mage isn't a top player, and after 3 strikes the shield crumbled. My fourth strike from the combo and another regular strike directly ate into the mage's health.

“457!”

“798!”

The mage's body fell down and slowly fragmented into rays of light. His wide eyes stared at me and before he died, he shouted: “Watch out, he ambushed me!”

“Buzz!”

Another silhouette fell down about ten meters away with a sword in his hand. It was the undead swordsman who had a sinister expression. Before he reached the ground, I waved my hand and Baby Bobo dashed over to the swordsman. Golden hexagons appeared on its stinger as it used a [Combo] + [Sting]. I had to use Baby Bobo to control the DPS of the swordsman or else this would be a hard fight to win!

The undead swordsman cruelly smiled: “Brother, as expected he’s trying to kill me first. When you reach the ground, use [Put Down Your Sword] on him to lower his attack by 10%. Xiao Yao will become a tiger without its fangs. Nothing to fear. I will take care of this bee!”

With a “ding”, the swordsman’s sword started to blossom hexagons. He was going to use a [Combo] to kill Baby Bobo!

In another direction, another silhouette fell. It was the barbarian monk wielding a steel knife. With a large clamor, he yelled: “I am here to kill this Xiao Yao bastard!”

.....

“Pop!”

My boots trod onto the moist grass, splashing droplets everywhere as I charged at the monk. At the same time, I made Baby Bobo retreat. “Shua Shua Shua” Three large MISSES appeared. The undead swordsman said with extreme astonishment: “Crap, this pet is very fast!”

“Bang.....”

Under my feet, a white glow appeared on the ground. Before even approaching the falling monk, I already activated my skill. By the time the monk reached the ground, I already had hit him with 3 attacks. With a stab, a sweep and a chop, I landed three continuous attacks on the monk. Each of my attacks threw the monks body into the air, making him incapable of retaliating. He even lost his balance!

“310!”

“297!”

“334!”

With the fourth strike, I drew on strength from within my body and vigorously rammed forward!

“Bang!”

The monk's body flung into the air a fourth time and he howled as his health falls by another 400+. The monk's complexion was ashen as he looked at me: “Not good brother. My body is thrown off balance. He is going to kill me in the air!”

[Strength of a Thousand Men] took only 1.2 seconds time so before the monk finished talking, the Jade City Sword carried the forest's cold wind on its blade as I struck the monk. As if slicing a ball in the air, I used [Wind Blade] on the monk!

“1089!”

The monk howled as the last of his health disappeared. His body struck the floor and bounced upwards. By the time it fell back onto the floor, his body had already turned into fragments of light and was disintegrating away!

Perfect kill!

.....

Turning around, I used [Heal] on Baby Bobo and raised my sword as I charged at the undead swordsman. Next to him was a small demon who was sending out flames. The swordsman used a health potion and recovered 600 Health which was about 40%. Ok. This meant that his health had an upper bound of about 1500, which isn't that high!

“Not good!”

After seeing me, the swordsman trembled and quickly retreated backwards.

I couldn't help but laugh. I controlled Baby Bobo to block the swordsman's retreat with a [Sting]. Filled with anger, he swung at Baby Bobo, but Bobo was too fast in retreating and a large MISS appeared. I

moved forward and with a “Bang”, I swept my sword over his chestplate. His eyes were filled with astonishment as he was obviously unable to convince himself that this was really happening.

With one more attack, the swordsman died!

Seeing the swordsman burst into rays of light, I calmly bent down to pick up a bronze armor wrist guard. The three dead players only dropped one item; this could be considered regular. At the same time, my mind made a plan. Lin Wan Er’s 12 types of battlefield control in man-pet tactics was very useful. Trying it in battle, it seemed extremely amazing, I could kill beginners with enough to spare.

.....

After killing three players and still at full health, I continued to watch the abyss. Raising my head, I saw silhouettes streaming down the green vines. Their numbers seemed to have had increased to more than 50 people, all members of [Wrath of the Heroes] who were here to hunt me. For a trivial Tomb Guardian of The Dragon City, Liu Ying really moved an army to kill me. It was a pity that having more people does not give any advantage in the Green Qilin Abyss.

“Gasp! The three scouts are already dead....” A voice in the sky said.

I quietly laughed. Apparently, these people did not understand this area. They were about 50 yards from the bottom but with the rain and the fog, it was hard to see the bottom clearly. However, I could look up and see the speakers perfectly fine. The wind even aids in carrying the speaker’s voice to me. Even if I were to talk, they probably wouldn’t even hear me.

Liu Ying’s voice was furious: “What’s happening? How did he kill three players in a flash? Wasn’t one of the three players a level 41 monk?”

Another voice responded: “Boss. Xiao Yao’s attack is too high. Forums say that his attack is about 1400+, second only to Jian Feng Han who is holding the Heavenly Plan sword. Against this kind of opponent, our monk who only has 1100 defense is not able to defend. In addition, Xiao Yao has a high grade pet with him!”

Liu Ying angrily yelled: “Tell them to hurry back here after resurrecting!”

“We can’t do that boss. When they died, their resurrection location moved to the outer area of Green Qilin Valley. The distance from there to here is a 30 minute journey filled with high level monsters. Coming here would only be suicide. I propose that they go back to the city...”

Liu Ying’s voice trembled with anger: “Don’t tell me.... Don’t tell me that we should give up? Don’t forget that we have about 60+ members who are professionals in their class. Why are we afraid of a trivial player like Xiao Yao?”

A girl spoke up. The speaker ought to be Ageless Beauty, she said: “Dear, I recommend that all 60+ members go down together to kill our fellow student Xiao Yao. Hehe. Let’s go down there like angels scattering flowers; what do you think?”

Liu Ying laughed: “Ok, what darling said made a lot of sense.... All men listen up! In 10 seconds, we will slowly release our grip on these vines. Follow me down onto the abyss floor to murder that bastard Li Xiao Yao!”

“Yes, boss!”

.....

I looked at the sky and furrowed my brows. At the same time, I started counting down the seconds. 10 seconds? Come! I will kill every last one of you, in addition....

I looked around and saw Flaming Cat Spirits lazily stretching at the Green Qilin Abyss’ center. On top of the spirits were the dangling green vines. I smiled. This is going to be a massacre. I am not even the main force of this army; the Flaming Cat Spirits are. I will only be assisting the spirits in their attack!

I tightened my grip on my Jade City Sword. I would have been able to remain calm if this were reality, but in the game it’s different. I’ve always had a soft spot for games. So, I couldn’t help but feel a little bit nervous. I still remembered that back in elementary school when the blackboards

had a motto written on them: “Nervous, Unity, Earnest” To be a little nervous isn’t something bad!

.....

“Shua shua Shua!”

It really was like angels scattering flowers. One after another, the shadows arrived at the bottom. Ten of the members started fighting a Flaming Cat Spirits while 7 or 8 members turned in my direction. Under the spring rain, I made out a beautifully familiar face. It was the girl who had taunted me in the middle of Chinese class and one of the top ten beauties of the school with the ingame name of Ageless Beauty — Xue Yue

I bent my body slightly and the hand holding the Jade City Sword shuddered a bit. The blade became surrounded by a stream of cold forest air. [Fierce Ice Blade]!

.....

“Ah!!!”

Xue Yue’s cheeks turned deathly white as she pulled out her dagger:
“Not good!”

Chapter 112: The Right Time at the Right Place

“Ah!”

Xu Yue cried in shock and hurriedly positioned both of her daggers in front of her chest to block my attack. At the same time, the two snow white mountains beneath her leather armor appeared right in front of my eyes. Such an evil angle – My eyes almost exploded from the sight!

Stepping forcefully against the ground, I jumped almost 2 meters up in the sky. “Peng”. Lifting my knees, which were protected by my knee guard, I knocked away Ageless Beauty’s daggers and without mercy, my Jade City Sword struck her shoulder!

“Pu!”

“1107!”

It was a one-hit KO. Ageless Beauty stared at me with a pair of big, round, beautiful eyes; she was unable to believe that she would be killed right at the start.

.....

“Pah...”

Landing on the ground softly, I immediately brought my sword before me to charge towards another Mage. Activating my [Combo], “peng peng peng”, I slashed at his [Mana Shield]. At that moment, his [Mana Shield] was broken. Baby Bobo added in an attack, which brought him down instantly.

“Hong...”

I felt fiery hot air behind me. Turning around, it was the effect of the Berserker’s [Flame Axe] + [Fire Axe] attacks!

Exerting force on both of my feet, I tried to jump, but unexpectedly, my boots sunk into the wet grassland, which stopped my motion. I stared as the Berserker swung his axe down towards me. Yet, his [Flame Axe]

wasn't aimed properly and a big MISS floats in the air. At the same time, using my shoulders, I rammed fiercely into his abdomen!

A sudden surge of air pushed away the wild grass surrounding me as ripples appeared beneath my feet. Activating my combo skill, my five blows crashed one after another into him. The Berserker howled in agony as his body was scattered into light particles, and he was dead.

Instantly killing three people, I suddenly felt an intense pain on my shoulder. Looking at it, it was an arrow. The three archers in [Wrath of the Heroes] were beginning to aim together at me. Now, they were a threat!

Lifting my hand to cast a [Heal] to recover 750 of my health, then I ordered Baby Bobo to advance and get rid of one of the archers. Given Baby Bobo's speed and offensive ability, killing one of them would be a piece of cake. As for me, I carried the Jade City Sword and charged towards another one of the archers!

"Hm, trying to kill me?"

The archer smiled at me condescendingly while leaping backwards. Instantly, two Swordsmen ran up to cover his position and 3 Mages began to cast [Pillars of Ice and Fire]. They understood that once I activated [Haste], and given my movement speed, it would be difficult for them to lock onto me with single target skills such as [Chilling Wind] and [Icicle].

.....

Placing my arms in a defensive position, I suffered attacks from swords and arrows while I rushed forward. As my health dropped, I was gradually approaching the archer. At the same time, I was closely watching the movements of the other two archers!

"Shua!"

It was a [Shatter Shot]. If it were to land on me, I would surely die!

I immediately changed directions, causing a MISS to appear behind me. I rushed towards a Lv-43 Mage with my Jade City Sword and activated [Combo]!

“Peng peng peng...”

After four consecutive attacks, the durability of the Mage's [Mana Shield] immediately reached zero. At that moment the [Mana Shield] broke apart, and I sent in an additional normal attack!

“887!”

What the heck, to think he survived my attack?! This Mage was an odd one out, he must have pumped stats into Endurance, otherwise his health couldn't have possibly been above 800!

“Heal me!”

The Mage roared towards the Healers but to his horror, voices that came from behind him said –

“Screw you, heal yourself, we are getting killed by Flaming Cat Spirits!”

“Take care of yourself, the Cat Spirits have already killed several of our Swordsmen, we can't hold on any longer!”

“Guild leader, our defenses are about to fall!”

.....

Pu, with a light slash, I killed the Mage who was already at low health. A single health potion, which heals only 600 health, wasn't able to pull his health high enough. Furthermore, after a [Mana Shield] is broken, it can't be activated again for a short time. All of this determined his doom.

From afar, the Tyrant of Western Chu struck furiously at a Flaming Cat Spirit while shouting loudly, “Don't panic! Come and gather around me and we'll first kill the Cat Spirits one by one. Protect our Healers properly. After killing around 3-4 Cat Spirits, we should be able to secure a safe zone. There's no need for us to kill Xiao Yao Zi Zai in such a hurry. Archers and Mages, force him to retreat!”

“Shua shua shua...”

As [Pillar of Ice and Fire]'s were cast one after another at me, my health dropped rapidly, leaving me no choice but to retreat. While retreating, I cast a [Heal] on myself and drank a health potion as my mind started to

panic.

The situation wasn't good for me. Although Liu Ying hated my guts and would've liked to get rid of me as soon as possible, his ability to command the situation was somewhat praiseworthy. To be able to remain calm under such a situation, it's a skill rarely found in people.

Facing such a calm commander, if I don't kill him first, it would be difficult for me to survive!

40 meters away, 4 Mages, 7 Archers and 5 Musketeers were staring at me with anger, preparing to kill me if I were to advance towards them. Feeling fear in my heart, I told myself that I mustn't rush towards them head on, otherwise I was bound to die.

Retreating backwards with my sword, I stood silently in one of the corners of the Green Qilin Abyss as I waited patiently to see how things would progress.

.....

The sounds of wailing lingered in the air as the Flaming Cat Spirits were killed one after another. After killing around 5 Flaming Cat Spirits, a small empty land finally appeared. The [Wrath of the Heroes] players have finally found a foothold where they could advance from. However, in the confusion, they have also lost quite a lot of players. Within a few minutes, there were already 30+ people dying, leaving only 37 people in the field. Such a loss, honestly couldn't be considered small.

The Tyrant of Western Chu had a nasty look on his face. While slaughtering the Flaming Cat Spirits, he glanced towards me and mumbled, "That brat... he wouldn't try to escape using the City Return Scroll, would he?!"

Piggy replied, "I doubt it. We have clashed with Xiao Yao Zi Zai many times and although he's a solo player and his overall prowess may be lacking, when have you ever seen him retreat?"

The Tyrant of Western Chu gritted his teeth and remained silent.

Beside Piggy, a lady Healer looked towards me, her eyes were filled with

incomprehension as she asked, “Why... Why do we have to keep hunting down Xiao Yao Zi Zai? I think... he doesn’t look like a bad person and has been always training alone. Such a lonely person, if we were to be able to pull him into our guild, how good would that be...”

The Tyrant of Western Chu laughed bitterly, “Little sister, you have been thinking too much. Xiao Yao Zi Zai’s methods of doing things are totally merciless. He isn’t as good as you think him to be!”

The lady healer blinked her eyes and replied, “We brought 300+ people into the Green Qilin Valley just to gang up against him. Aren’t these tactics considered merciless as well?”

The Tyrant of Western Chu was stunned for a moment before he was silent again.

Piggy added in, “Cough cough, little sister, don’t talk back. A law from ancient times states that people who talk back are destined to die...”

The lady Healer stuck out her tongue and said, “Fine fine, I don’t really care about these things. I am only responsible for healing you all. However, if I were to be killed by Xiao Yao Zi Zai, you have to pay for my loss, guild leader...”

Liu Ying laughed, “Of course!”

.....

After 10 minutes or so, they managed to clear most of the map as dozens of Flaming Cat Spirits fell to the ground, which provided Liu Ying with a path straight towards me. Carrying his shiny broadsword, he smiled at me, “Li Xiao Yao, we can finally speak to each other!? Hehe, prepare to die!”

I stood there silent, the edges of my mouth arching upwards, “Yeah right...”

Piggy and his group of people were seemingly stunned, “This brat, how could he be so calm...”

.....

“Archers, use [Shatter Shot]! Mages, lock on with your [Pillar of Ice and Fire]’s! Musketeers, prepare to cast [Bombardment]! As for Swordsmen, Knights and Assassins, just slowly advance forward for our long-ranged players to get within range!”

Liu Ying flashed a savage smile, “Today, I shall show you, Li Xiao Yao, what a perfect kill means!”

I glanced around, the opponents still had 24 long-ranged players. Honestly, with that numbers, they could kill me perfectly without having to loose a drop of blood. But... how could I allow them to kill me just like that! A fierce tiger in my heart, breathing the scent of roses and leaving home with a big smile everyday, and as a generation of nomad... (and all kinds of crap!)

TL: Not a translation error, he’s literally talking crap, probably going mad.

Carrying my Jade City Sword, I walked along the edges of Green Qilin Abyss to avoid Liu Ying and his men. At the same time, I noticed the distance between the Flaming Spirit Cats and the [Wrath of the Heroes] players and an idea formed in my mind.

“What is this brat trying to do?” Piggy frowned.

Liu Ying, who after losing many times to me learnt to be cautious, said, “Be careful, report our distance from him as we approach him and prepare to kill him!”

The group of long-ranged players nodded their heads.

.....

After an entire 3 minutes, I turned to look towards the players of Wrath of the Heroes and between us, there were a total of 17 Flaming Spirit Cats. Yup, this kind of firepower should be sufficient.

With my mind made up, I started on my plan. After all, the ones who strike first live whereas those who idly defend die.

With a swing of my sword, I activated LV-5 [Defense], adding 5%

defense. At the same time, I stepped lightly on the floor and wind burst forth from my feet, activating LV-5 [Haste], which increased my movement speed by 5% and attack speed by 10% for 15 seconds!

Piggy looked at me from afar and suddenly narrowed his eyes and shouted, “Be careful, the brat has used [Haste], he is about to do something!”

Before Piggy even finished his sentence, I carried my sword and charged forward!

Baby Bobo stood idly on my shoulders while I, carrying my sword, dashed zigzagged across the entire group of Flaming Cat Spirits. While avoiding their attacks, I also attracted the aggro of all 17 of the Flaming Cat Spirits.

.....

“Has he gone mad?” Liu Ying said, shocked. He immediately ordered, “Be careful, kill him immediately once there’s an opportunity!”

“Sha sha...”

My boots stepped across the grassland as I brought a bunch of Flaming Spirit Cats towards them, my mouth giving off a hint of smile.

“This isn’t good!” Piggy shouted out.

.....

Feeling my surroundings heat up, a group of Mages cast [Pillar of Ice and Fire]s towards my location as the ground below me lit up, causing my health bar to drop rapidly. At the same time, archers activated [Triple Shot] and [Shatter Shot], causing countless MISSES to appear in the space behind me. My movement speed was too high, making it difficult for them to lock their attacks onto me.

Meow meow, the Flaming Cat Spirits followed me closely and right when I was rather near to the [Wrath of the Heroes] players, I suddenly sheathed my Jade City Sword and punched Baby Bobo!

“Pah!”

“354!”

Baby Bobo cried in pain and all the aggro value was transferred from me to the [Wrath of the Heroes]’s players!

“Meow meow meow...”

The purring of those cats sounded so pleasant to the ears!

Lowering my body, I calculated the angle and punched right into the ground!

“Pah!”

A long metal chain burst forth from the ground, shackling one of their archers. At the same time, this led to a catastrophe. The 17 Flaming Cat Spirits seemed to have, at the same moment, generated hatred towards the [Binding Chain] and while purring, “meow meow”, activated one of their offensive skills – [Flamed Fan Dance]!

.....

Cries of agony filled the entire field and in an instant, the Green Qilin Abyss seemed to have turned into a field of flames.

Countless white lights rose forth and the 24 long-ranged players died swiftly, leaving behind Piggy who was standing closer to the front lines. The 17 [Flamed Fan Dance]s that aimed directly into the crowd of players seemed to linger for quite a long while before dispersing, leaving behind an entire floor of equipment. Also, many close-ranged players and support-class players were killed under the fierce attacks of the Flaming Cat Spirits. The AOE of [Flamed Fan Dance] was simply too big, making it seem as though a disaster just occurred!

Liu Ying’s face turned pale. Looking at his surroundings, there were still 4 of his players alive – Piggy, a Swordsman and another Healer...

.....

“We’re done for...”

Liu Ying’s sword slumped to his side as he stared at me with intense hatred, “Li Xiao Yao, you win!”

Chapter 113: Green Qilin

Rustle...

I quickly retreated from the field with use of a [Haste] to a more secure location 100 meters back, making sure not to pull any aggro from the surrounding monsters. I was not going to join Lui Ying's fight, lest I wanted to die in the hands of a few mob monsters. I just stood where I was, watching Liu Ying's group get picked off one by one.

.....

“Ah!!!”

One of the healers shrieked. She had fallen, torn by the sharp claws of a Cat Spirit. Even I couldn't afford to take a direct hit from one of the Cat Spirits. Judging by how fragile healers are, it's wasn't hard to guess what had happened to her...

Satisfied with the easy kill, the Spirit Cat meowed and turned towards the next swordsman. It was not long before he fell too.

Liu Ying sheathed his sword quickly and ran for his life with Piggy following closely behind. Using [Haste] to run faster, Liu Ying left Piggy in the dust. Soon, Piggy faced a blast of scorching heat and was rapidly engulfed by the Cat Spirit's [Flamed Fan Dance]!

“Boss! Return to the city when you get the chance!” Piggy yelled with his dying breath.

Liu Ying had barely managed to escape the two Cat Spirits on his tail. His face was purple from exhaustion. He couldn't believe that over 300 of his guild's elites had fallen prey to the Flaming Cat Spirits.

.....

Whoosh!

I cast a quick [Heal] which restored me to full HP. I called Baby Bobo and rushed towards Liu Ying, my sword ready. The sword pulsed with energy, ready to cast [Fierce Ice Blade] at a second's notice. I gave the

Tyrant of the Western Chu a fierce smile on my face. “Guildmaster, allow me to see you off!”

“You!”

The Tyrant of Western Chu’s face turned a nasty shade of purple. He brandished his sword and roared, “Come at me!”

Combo!

I meet my opponent’s charge head on, letting him strike my armor in a shower of sparks. Four damage numbers appeared above my head—

“211!”

“197!”

“189!”

“207!”

.....

Liu Ying’s face turned deathly pale as he watched my HP stay above 50%. He could no longer deny the rumors of my incredible defense.

I unleashed my [Fierce Ice Blade].

“774!”

The Tyrant of Western Chu dropped to his knees, shaking. His HP bar dropped rapidly and settled around 50%. I hollered a battle cry, cast for .2 seconds, and executed the [Wind Blade] skill!

“819!”

Bobo quickly followed with another attack, and Liu Ying was dead!

.....

Whoosh! A light rose from his body, surrounded by loot. A longsword was among the assortment of potions. Holy crap! Did I really manage to seize the weapon of [Wrath of the Heroes]’s guildmaster? Damn, it has been a long time since I felt this good.

I picked up the longsword, placed it in my inventory, and noticed the

two Cat Spirits bounding towards me. Time to leave!

I used [Binding Chains] to hold one of the Cat Spirits, and turned, easily killing the other one. Afterward, I took my time to pick up the loot dropped by the [Wrath of the Heroes]’s players. I cleared the remaining Cat Spirits in my vicinity and searched their bodies for loot. There was a total of 11 bronze and silver equips along with various other one-use items such as arrows, all obtained free of charge. How kind of them to have died and left these to me...

I pulled the longsword that the late Liu Ying had “gifted” me from my inventory —

【Firewood Sword】 (Silver-Tier Equipment)

Attack: 185-280

Strength: +29

Endurance: +24

Extra: Increases attack by 2%

Level Requirement: 40

.....

Not bad. Not bad at all. These stats matched those of my own sword. A quick check of the rankings told me that it was 19th among weapons. Despite being labeled as a silver-tier equip, the high level required to equip it made it superior than many gold-tier equips. My own sword was 7th on the weapon ranking, and everything higher than it were gold-tier weapons.

I had no idea how much Liu Yin spent on this Firewood Sword, but that hardly mattered. I’m going to sell it as soon as I can!

I looked at the clock, and noticed that it was already 11 at night. Neither Wan Er nor Cheng Yue mentioned logging off though, so I assumed they were still busy in game. They always delay their midnight meal; They should be better at keeping track of time!

My stomach growled. I took a look at my level. After clearing all of

those Cat Spirits, I was only 26% away from level 47! I decided to hit 47 before logging off.

I spent another hour clearing the rest of the Cat Spirits. It was not enough to level up though and a glance at my experience bar showed that I still had 5% to go; leveling quickly was nearly impossible for higher leveled players.

.....

Even though my inventory was already filled with loot, I continued to look around the Abyss for any Green Qilin Grass that I might have missed. Unfortunately, there was none. Eventually, I found myself returning to the lifelike statue of the Green Qilin beast. It seemed like today's adventure stopped here.

Growl...

Something was wrong. The distant growl seemed to come from thousands of miles away, yet its source was definitely nearby. I frowned in confusion. Listening carefully, I determined that it was coming from somewhere in front of me. It couldn't be. Was the statue growling?

No, that's impossible!

I reached out and gently touched the ancient statue. It glowed faintly under my left hand. How? This feeling...it was moist. Almost as if the Green Qilin was alive and was breathing into my palm. Whoa! This can't be happening!

Bang! A sharp pain exploded on my nose. Small rocks showered over me as the statue came to life. I looked up and panicked when I saw the statue's head had begun to crack and peel apart.

This can't be right... How can the rock be peeling apart? Impossible!

Bang!

Another rock fell on my head.

Damn, it really is peeling apart!

The entire Abyss trembled. I attempted to brace myself against the

statue only for it to crumble before I could grab a hold of it. As the rumbling grew louder, a growl emerged from inside the statue!

Damn, there really is a beast under the rock!

It was not really a statue— well it was, but it was a living statue!

Ding!

System Notification: You have released the seal on the **【Green Qilin】**!

.....

Rustle...

I quickly retreated about two hundred meters and unsheathed my sword, bracing for an incoming attack. The boss slowly began to emerge from the rock that surrounded it. I should have realized that there would be a boss in a large region like the Green Qilin Valley and Green Qilin Abyss.

It's all over... There's no way I can beat it.

I was going to lose a level.

The Abyss continued to tremble. The floor beneath me groaned, welcoming the arrival of its sacred master!

The rock continued to crumble off of the beast, piling up at its feet. The boss emerged, towering over me. It really was one of those mythical Green Qilins! I could see its glowing red eyes staring at me beneath its helmet. Its body was covered in green armor, and a dark horn protruded from its head. This was not the beautiful beast shown in folklore. In <<Destiny>>, this was a demon that took lives, one that shouldn't be respected.

Growl...

It let out a beastly roar, blasting my face with a fierce wind in a display of its fearsome power. Taking a step forward, it slowly honed in on my position. Damn it! I was the only living thing it could target within the abyss.

My Jade City Sword trembled in my hands. To say that I wasn't scared would be a lie. I could use my City Teleport Scroll right now if I wanted to, but my stubbornness prevented me from acting!

As the Green Qilin drew closer, I was able to read a bit of its stats—

[Green Qilin] (Purple-Tier Boss)

Level: 55

Attack: ???

Defense: ???

Health: ???

Skills: ???

Description: Green Qilin – a mythical beast. It is said that the Green Qilin was the product of an violent natural disaster and has survived from ancient times. Afraid of it causing further damage, the gods of old sealed it away in the hopes of it never reawakening. With its revival, warfare and disaster follows in its wake. The myths foretell that whoever kills the Green Qilin will be blessed by the gods. He will be bestowed with the legendary item which the Green Qilin protects.

.....

I drooled at the mention of this legendary equipment, but looking back at the vicious eyes of the Green Qilin, returning to the city seemed like an extremely good option at the moment. Should I make a run for it, or should I stand my ground?

My grip tightened on my sword. Fuck it, it's not like I haven't died many times before. In fact, I've died quite a few times in my lower levels.

The Green Qilin was a purple tier, level 55 boss monster. That was a whole 9 levels above me, an insurmountable gap! The pressure was incomparable to my earlier battle with the General of Everlasting Wind. The situation was completely different; back then, I had a whole party of healers focused on healing me. I could only rely on my healing now.

A quick survey of the area in search of a more advantageous position

revealed nothing. Damn it, I had to at least try something. If I die, well, at least I will still have plenty of Green Qilin Grass in my inventory, enough to make a minimum of 30 Green Qilin Pills.

.....

“Hou hou....”

The Green Qilin growled a warning, a sign that it was fully aggro-ed to me. It suddenly broke into a charge, its four paws stamping forcefully onto the ground. Its speed was incredible, even faster than when I had [Haste] active.

Let's get the first hit at least!

With that thought, my Jade City Sword began to glow blue and a [Fierce Ice Blade] went straight towards the Green Qilin!

“Peng!”

“598!”

Damn, what a high defense...

With the speed reducing effect of the [Fierce Ice Blade], the Green Qilin held up its front paw and slapped down at me. A searing pain went through my chest as a 907 damage number popped up. Did my ribs break? Looking down, I saw that my armor had a gaping tear. Crap, the boss has some kind of an armor break skill! Once the durability of it goes below 1%, the Dawn Breastplate's defense would disappear. At that point, it'd be a one hit KO for me!

“Shua!”

“+750!”

Waving my hand to give myself a [Heal], I ordered Baby Bobo to go attack the boss. Holding my sword, I quickly ran to the Green Qilin's side and a white glow appeared beneath my feet – [Strength of a Thousand Men]!

After 5 continuous attacks, the health of the Green Qilin fell by 1200+ points. It wasn't bad but the Green Qilin turned around and bit my arm,

dealing 800+ damage. At this pace, my healing wouldn't keep up!
Dammit, what should I do, am I doomed?

Right when I was hesitating about what to do, the Green Qilin rose its paw and swept it towards me!

“Peng!”

My body flew backwards like a kite without its string and landed heavily on the side of the cave. I lost another 700+ health, and my health started touching rock bottom. But after flying out 10 or so meters, I gained myself a precious few seconds. Standing up, I used a [Heal] and then a health potion to recover 1150 health. This should be enough for another few hits!

Slowly backing off, I activated my [Binding Chains]!

“Peng!”

The chains were successful and locked the boss for 2.1 seconds. Great!

With the chains and some running, my [Heal] came back up and I immediately used it, restoring me to almost full health. But as soon as I finished, the Green Qilin rushed in front of me and raised its front paw. Its vicious eyes seemed to taunt me – Bug, go die!

.....

“Peng!”

“1884!”

A critical strike, and I found myself flying painfully through the air again. Crap, the attack on this boss was too much for me!

Chapter 114: A Godly Weapon Has Come

“Bang!”

The sudden sweep from the Green Qilin* sent me flying ten meters above ground. My skull rammed into the rock. Fortunately, my Fire Beacon Helmet protected me, but that did not stop my health from dropping below one hundred points.

Under the rainfall, I glanced behind me to see many green vines swinging in the sky. I cannot fight this Boss; I have to retreat!

Using both legs, I coiled myself against a bit of rock protruding from the wall. With all my strength, I leapt and shot toward the vines like a rubber band.

My aim was perfect. Reaching out, I grabbed one of the vines with a “Pa.” My body was drenched in a cold sweat. When I looked at my health, I discovered that I had only 44 points remaining. The Qilin’s stats completely dominate my own. Without healers, I had no hope of defeating it.

“Shua!”

“+750!”

I used [Heal] and waited for the cool down on my health potion to refresh. Sheathing my Jade City Sword behind me, I began to climb. After about 30 meters, I paused to take a rest.

.....

“Hou Hou.....”

Below me, the Qilin jumped and swiped its sharp claws at me. I could feel the breeze from its swipes as they brushed against my legs. If I can’t fight you, shouldn’t I at least be able to avoid you?

I suddenly feel a tinge of regret for running. Looking down from my position, I could see that the Qilin’s jump and attack range were both less than 30 meters. Apparently, it could not reach till where I hung.

Hmmm. If I used a bow, would I be able to kill this purple tier boss without taking any damage?

As the thought churned in my head, I quickly opened my inventory and saw a bow in the corner. It was my Wind Chaser, a level 37 silver tier bow with an exceptionally high attack of 197-285. I also found a few bundles of steel arrows I had collected, which can add up to 25 more damage. Haha! Here was my chance!

My pulse quickened as I became more excited. Let's try this out!

I knotted the vine and tied my legs to it, securing them in place. Releasing my grip, I flipped upside down, a quiver of arrows appearing on my back as I pulled out my Wind Chaser. Despite my lack of the 25% damage boost for the arrows from not being an archer, my 1.0 growth in strength gave me the attack damage I needed. I did not know any archery skills, of course, so I could only shoot regular shots.

"Sou!"

An arrow flew from my bow and embedded itself in the forehead of the Qilin with a "Pa." A decent damage indicator popped up –

"117!"

As I had expected, the damage I could do with a bow was severely limited. Additionally, the Qilin's defense must have been extremely high. I could tell this battle was going to take a while.

.....

"HouHou....."

The Qilin leapt again and again, its claws missing me by a hair. Heh. It did not know how to fly, which made it almost perfect for me. Wouldn't this mean that Mages, Archers, and Musketeers could've also taken advantage of the bug to safely kill the boss?

The Qilin suddenly growled as if to answer me. He lifted his head, frost collecting in his mouth. It quickly formed into an icicle and shot towards me!

“1527!”

Crap! That was why... I quickly used my [Heal] to recover and thought: This purple tier's bosses magic attacks are much stronger than Soaring Dragon's!

Even though I was surprised, I kept on firing volley after volley of arrows!

After another 15 seconds, the Green Qilin used another Icicle attack. Oh god, please don't be a critical hit or else I would definitely die! Thankfully, the Green Qilin didn't seem to have been able to critical hit...

It looks like this bug couldn't be exploited after all. A normal ranged player would've never been able to withstand these attacks. Even the [Mana Shields] of twice promoted Mages wouldn't last long. And, after their shield died, they would probably die too.

But I, with my high health and recovery rate, was able to take advantage of this exploit. The boss's ranged attack had a 15 second cooldown, and can cause 1400-1600 damage each time. My [Heal] has a 6 second cooldown which is more than enough to return me to full health. However, continuously using [Heal] poses another problem: mana. Using [Heal] after [Heal] for even a minute would consume 500 mana. Thankfully, I had quite a few Indigo Sea Pills in my bag. They were gift from Jian Feng Han from the boss mission last time. Perfect!

.....

It takes an average of 2 seconds to shoot each arrow, which does at least 100 damage each. That would mean at least 3000 damage per minute. With the Qilin's total health being around 100 thousand, and taking into account its recovery rate, an optimistic estimate for defeating it would be about an hour!

After 20 minutes of sinking arrow after arrow into the Qilin, I figured I was probably a little too optimistic. I had only reduced the Qilin's health by 21.5%. At this rate, I would need another 90 minutes to kill it.

No worries. I have plenty of time! I'll take as much time as I need to kill

it!

Another 20 minutes passed in the blink of an eye. Finally, a message arrives from Madam—

“Hi Li Xiao Yao, you busy?”

“Yeah. Did you finish, Wan Er?”

“Yup!”

Wan Er smiled. “We completed the mission. Dong Cheng Yue and I are already level 49. Same as yours... just kidding, it’s still at 46. Pretty good eh? Looks like the [Wrath of the Heroes] players didn’t kill you.”

I laughed. “Did you hope that Liu Ying would kill me?”

Lin Wan Er gave me a sly smile. “Of course not! I feel quite sad whenever you die ...”

“Really? You’re lying!”

“Hee hee, I can’t fool you...”

Lin Wan Er smiled and continued: “Uhh, it’s already one in the morning and Dong Cheng Yue and I are really hungry but don’t want to eat chips or instant ramen. Why don’t we log out and go find someplace with real food?...”

I apologized. “Sorry Wan Er, but not now!”

“Why?”

“I’m in the middle of a breathtaking fight...”

“Oh? What fight?”

When I gave her a quick rundown of my situation, her face paled almost instantaneously. “Whoa. The Green Qilin, a level 55 purple tier boss! You’re pretty lucky, Li Xiao Yao. Are you taking advantage of a bug?”

I nodded. “Yeah, I guess you could call it a bug, but it’s really annoying to exploit...”

“Oh! Watch that icicle!”

The ice smacked into my face with a “Pa,” which caused Lin Wan Er to start laughing. “Ouch...”

“So can you and Dong Cheng Yue wait a little? I’ll join you guys downstairs after I kill the Boss. How’s that?”

“Sure. I’ll set up a stall in Fan Shu City with Dong Cheng Yue while we wait. Message us once you finish. Oh right! Do you know any good places for food?”

I thought for a bit. “There’s not really anything good on campus right now, but there should be plenty of food stalls off-campus. Why don’t we try a few?”

“Great! Now get back to killing the boss!”

“Ok!”

.....

My conversation with Lin Wan Er reinvigorated me. I drew my Wind Chaser back into the shape of the crescent moon and released. I was aiming for the Qilin’s eyes, but the arrow landed in its forehead instead. For some reason, I could not manage to hit its eyes no matter how hard I tried. Archers have passive skills such as Eagle Eye and Archer Mastery, which improves accuracy and damage. I do not. If I had not put the 10 skill points I received every level into strength, I probably would not even be able to penetrate the Green Qilin’s armor.

As the time passed, I took hit after hit from the icicles the Qilin shot at me. It was painful, but what really surprised me was how the Qilin had yet to land a single critical hit. How was that possible? Perhaps it had to do with how the Qilin was a melee monster? Maybe it could not perform critical hits with magic because of that? Glancing at my own stats, I had a 2.1% chance of a critical strike using melee attacks, but none for magic.

I raised my head, worried that [Wrath of the Heroes] might have returned to kill me. I knew that Liu Ying hated my guts, and would not have gave up trying to kill me. But, our battle earlier probably dissuaded him from retaliating anytime soon. I caused the death of nearly 70 twice

promoted players using the Fire Spirit Cats. Liu Ying also saw me use the Pardon Card, so even if he did kill me, I would only lose one level. The cost of killing me now outweighed the benefits, so the chances of [Wrath of the Heroes] giving up on me were about even. I hoped that they decided not to come, since I was busy and wouldn't be able to give them a warm welcome.

After 40 minutes and countless magical baptisms, the Qilin finally activated its fury and bloodlust in an attempt to free itself from the bug I used. But, its efforts were futile. Its only option was death.

“Shua!”

My Wind Chaser screeched as another arrow left it!

“Pa!”

“224!”

A critical hit... How gratifying.

“Roar.....”

The Green Qilin finally fell on its knees and collapsed. It was dead!

“Shua shua!”

Two beams of golden light shone down among my excitement, indicating that I had advanced to level 48!

.....

“Crash!”

Just as the Green Qilin collapsed, a huge number of items dropped. I jumped 2 levels soloing this boss so the drop rate had definitely increased. That was what I found most gratifying!

Leaning back, I used my sword to cut through a vine that I had tied to my legs and landed face first on the ground.

“Peng!”

With a beautiful jump, I stood up and ran to the corpse of the Green Qilin. Glancing over the dropped items, I was slightly disappointed. There

were no guild creation tablets. Whatever, the 3% drop rate is not completely for show. The tablet that had dropped last time was an unexpected surprise.

As the spring rain continued to fall on the field, A sword quietly appeared on the ground. It commanded respect, and glowed a faint purple. I shuddered. Whoa. Was that... a purple tier sword?

My heart nearly stopped. I immediately grabbed the sword's hilt, and a powerful energy surged into my arm. It really was a purple tier!

.....

Tendrils of bitter cold seeped into my arms. Even though the sword was not cold, my body shook uncontrollably. My dream was right in front of me, a pretty line of text floating above it—

【Frost Rain Sword】(Superior-Purple-Tier)

.....

*TL/editor note: <http://en.wikipedia.org/wiki/Qilin>

As was mentioned in the blog post, we've westernized some of the terms that didn't translate. Since those translations were imperfect at best, you'll be seeing more romanization with an accompanying TL note.

Chapter 115: The Superior Sword

【Frost Rain Sword】(Purple Tier – Superior)

Attack: 720-950

Strength: +37

Endurance: +35

Other: User's Attack Power increased by 7%

Unique Passive: 3% probability of a critical hit

Introduction: In ancient times, a land of frost and rain existed in the realm of gods. The gods would enter the Lands of Eternal Frost and Rain to refine their spirit and ascend to a greater pinnacle of power. However, the region was completely destroyed during the great war between gods and demons, turning what was once a land of serenity into a land of ruin. It was in these ruins that heroes of the next generation discovered a legendary weapon. This weapon allowed its wielder to call upon the heavens for strength. It could even control life and death.

Level requirement: 48

....

I clutched the Frost Rain Sword in my hands, barely able to contain my excitement. The Green Qilin's description did not lie. It told of a legendary weapon, and here it was: The Frost Rain Sword! Level 48. Perfect. What was I waiting for? It was about time I replaced my Jade City Sword!

With a "Clang", I equipped my new sword. At the same time, I had erased my name from the weapons leaderboard so that no one would've known that I had the sword. As I held out the sword, frost began to form from the tip, bathing the sword with a purple glow. There was no doubt that this sword was number 1 on the weapons leaderboard, with a score around 50% greater than Jian Fen Han's Heavenly Plan Sword. Finally I felt relief from that unjust deed, now I didn't have to continue to be depressed about that darn sword.

At the same time, my stats had increased by a lot. Especially my attack, which became ridiculously overpowered-

【Xiao Yao Zi Zai】(Tomb Guardian of Dragon City)

Level: 48

Attack: 1398-1830

Defense: 1025

Health: 2183

Mana: 726

Charm: 32

.....

I was dumbfounded! An attack range of 1397 – 1830? With [Turmoil Sword]'s 10% boost, my attack would be above 2000! With these stats, even 10 point endurance monks wouldn't have been able to withstand my attacks.

With excitement, I sheathed the Rain Frost Sword and examined the rest of the drops!

A shield quietly lay in the moist grass. When I picked it up, I realized that it was a Green Tier Item. What the hell?

I continued to look around, but I could not find any more equipment. Instead, I saw a small purple rock – a soul gem! I immediately used it on my sword, which increased its attack by another 72-95. I also found three pardon cards and put them in my inventory. There seemed to be nothing left to loot.

I prodded the corpse of the Qilin, but nothing appeared. Time to go!

I took out my City Return Scroll and activated it. Before it could take effect though, a shiny object in the grass caught my eye. That was a— I immediately canceled the cast and walked out of the now-fading teleportation hexagram. Sifting through the grass, I found a shiny ring, hidden by a bit of dirt. I almost missed that!

I inspected it as I picked it up; it had a small dragon figurine fixed upon it. Its stats were pretty impressive –

[Swift Dragon Ring] (Purple Tier)

Agility: +37

Endurance: +34

Extra: Boosts assassins' skill damage by 3%

Extra: +180 Health

Level Requirement: 48

.....

Whoah! A purple-tier ring? With stats like these, it was definitely the perfect item for assassins!

With the Swift Dragon Ring now in my hands, I didn't have to think twice before using my second City Scroll. Let's go!

No! I couldn't leave yet!

I looked at the rock wall that the Green Qilin had emerged from. Behind it, next to the discarded rubble from the Qilin was a deep cave. Light green sparks floated out from it. I almost drooled when I realized what it was. With my Frost Rain Sword in hand, I wormed into the cave. As I had expected, tufts upon tufts of Green Qilin Grass grew on the cave's moist walls.

I knew it!

There had to have been more than a hundred tufts of this level 6 herb. So this is where they were all hiding!

I almost went crazy!

After about 30 minutes of collecting the herbs in the cave like a maniac, I had more than 1800 tufts of the grass stored in my inventory. This was going to make a huge profit! I was rich!

I took out my third City Return Scroll. This time, nothing could've stop me from returning to city. A player's voice floated in from outside.

“Did Xiao Yao Zi Zai already kill the boss? Holy shit! That’s the corpse of the Purple Tier boss! Don’t tell me he actually soloed it! Wait... Did he get the Frost Rain Sword from this? Quick, find him! Now!”

It was the voice of the Tyrant of Western Chu. As I expected, he was still intent on killing me. He must have rushed over immediately after he saw the Frost Rain Sword appear at the top of the Weapons leaderboard. Unfortunately, he was a little too late!

The light from the City Return Scroll enveloped me, and I appeared back in Ba Huang City. Since the area within the City limits was a protected zone, no one could threaten to take my equipment. With the Frost Rain Sword on my back, I made my way to the northern plaza and joined Song Han’s party, immediately pulling up the purple tier Swift Dragon Ring’s stats and sharing them in the chat.

“Little Wolf, what do you think? Do you want it?”

Song Han gasped in surprise. “Damn! A level 48 purple tier! Brother Xiao Yao, did you win the lottery? Even getting the chance of obtaining such a treasure is the dream of every assassin, and you’re offering to give it to me?! Unfortunately, I am only level 30, which is not even close to the level requirement of 48 in order to equip it.”

Fox spoke up as well. “Yeah. Boss, why don’t you just sell the ring? Raw money is reliable no matter what...”

I laughed. “Alright. I promise that 50% of the profit will be spent on the studio.”

“No no, just 10% is enough.”

Fox laughed. He was in charge of the daily budget. “For all the equipment we find, we take only a 10% share of the profit to help run the studio. I made that rule a long time ago...”

I shook my head. “Don’t. Can’t you see how poor the studio is? Just take 50% for one week. We can change it back once we raise enough money. We’re all brothers here; No one has their own family, so we don’t need too much.”

“Alright then. Who are you planning to sell it to?”

Lin Wan Er’s beautiful face drifted into my consciousness. “I’ll sell it to someone beautiful. Otherwise, I’d be wasting the ring! Fox can you come back to the city? I have some equipment that I need to sell.”

“Sure! Gimme a sec!”

.....

A few minutes later, the level 33 Glass Fox came in sight. Cackling, he told me “Boss Xiao Yan, I just saw the PK vids of the battle in the Abyss. I must say, compared to the Li Xiao Yao two years ago, you’re completely different, and really strong too!”

I remembered the 12 flattery tips that Lin Wan Er gave me, and laughed. “Having an expert by your side is just different. Alright. Here’s some equipment for you to sell. All you need to do is give me 50%.”

“No problem.”

Opening the trade window, I placed the Jade City Sword, Wind Chaser and Firewood Sword in it and accepted. Fox paused before asking me “Woah, so many good equips! Where did they come from? Are you sure you want to sell the Jade City Sword?”

I nodded.

Fox raised his head in surprise, but when his eyes reached my purple-tier Frost Rain Sword, he smiled. “Oh, I see. I’ll get a good price for these!”

“Alright. I’ll be leaving then!”

“Sure...”

.....

I requested to join Cang Tong’s party!

With a “Di”, I joined. Unsurprisingly, the only two members were Cang Tong and Cang Yue.

Dong Cheng Yue giggled. “I’m starving! Xiao Yao, did you finally kill the boss?”

I nodded. “Yeah...”

Lin Wan Er smiled mysteriously. “Uhh... Did you get the Frost Rain Sword?”

“That’s a secret....”

“Pei*, I bet you did get it. Unfair!”

*TL/editor note: A sound of contempt. Kind of like “pah!” or “bah!”

I laughed. “Miss, I have an equip, would you like to have it?”

“Hmm.”

I immediately had placed the stats of the Swift Dragon Ring into the party chat, stunning both of them—

“Woah... a level 48 purple-tier ring. Perfect for assassins...”

Lin Wan Er couldn’t maintain her usually calm composure.

Dong Cheng Yue’s small mouth was open in surprise. “Such strong stats. Xiao Yao, you’re really lucky...”

“Miss, do you want it?”

Lin Wan Er gave me a firm nod. “Yes, I do. You’re dead if you dare sell it to someone else. Just give me a price. I’ll take it as long as it’s not too high...”

“The price I have in mind is pretty high... It might scare you.”

“How about 50k RMB (8,000 USD)? No more than that... It’s a piece level 48 equipment that I would discard once I got to level 100 anyways...”

I clapped my hands together. “OK, since we’re pretty close, I’ll give you 60% off. 20k RMB. Just transfer the money to my account and it’ll be yours!”

Lin Wan Er’s smile was very sweet. “Alright...”

Dong Cheng Yue protested. “That’s unfair. The trash Gold tier Proud Heaven Axe sold for 40k and this purple-tier ring is being sold for for a mere 20k? Xiao Yao, you’re being sexist...”

Lin Wan Er smiled again. "Don't tell him that, Dong Cheng..."

I laughed. "There's no more time for trading today since the system's about to go into maintenance mode. Why don't we log off and get some food?"

"Ok. Are you going to wait for us downstairs? It seems like... the main door to the girls' dorm is already locked. What should we do?"

Lin Wan Er appeared to be distressed: "I don't think we can convince the guard to let us out..."

I thought about it for a moment. "What if we just didn't eat tonight and think of it as a diet?..."

"No! We want to eat!" Both of the girls responded violently.

I raised my hands in defeat, and smiled. "There is a way. Go to the second floor and then jump from there. I'll catch you guys, but careful not to get caught by the patrols..."

"Alright then..."

.....

10 minutes later, at 1:30 AM, under the Girls dorm in Liu Hua University:

I waited quietly. Finally one of the windows opened, and Lin Wan Er's voice drifted from inside. "Thank you very much, heehee..."

The beautiful lady appeared at the window, wearing a pair of skinny jeans that hugged her curves beautifully. She knew that she would be jumping out of a window tonight, so she did not wear one of her usual dresses.

"Li Xiao Yao?" She softly yelled.

I quickly rushed over and quietly replied. "Wan Er, I'm here. Come. Be careful not to get scratched..."

"Hey, are you sure you can catch me??"

"Of course! Don't worry!"

“Fine! If you drop me then you are so dead...”

.....

“Whoosh!”

The beautiful little woman fell from the window above. I watched closely with my arms open, and a shapeless layer of qi gathered in the air. The next second, Lin Wan Er’s delicate body fell into my embrace. Her smell surrounded me, and my hands lingered...

“Alright...”

Under the moonlight, Lin Wan Er’s cheeks flushed red. Jumping down from my arms, she dusted her hands off and said “Get ready to catch Dong Cheng...”

“Ah...”

Once more, another beauty jumped from above. I caught Dong Cheng Yue firmly and put her down next to me. Both girls seemed thrilled by the jump. Lin Wan Er jokingly said: “That was... quite exciting...”

Dong Cheng Yue looked up for a second and asked, “That... was exciting and all, but I have a question. How are we going to get back in?”

“Oh dear...” Lin Wan Er’s smile immediately froze up.

Chapter 116: First Love

“Who cares, we won’t return then...” The corners of Wan Er’s mouth rose as she said a solution that couldn’t have been counted as a solution.

Dong Cheng Yue frowned. “Whatever, I don’t really care either. Xiao Yao, you’re responsible for whatever happens later...”

Still overjoyed with my new sword, I gave no response.

“Li Xiao Yao, what are you thinking?” Wan Er glared at me.

I woke from my dreamy state of happiness and smiled. “No... Nothing, hahaha. So, are we going to eat now?”

“Mhm, you’re treating...”

“No problem! Let’s go!”

.....

Wan Er tightened her lapel behind me as we stood in front of the school gate.

I moved closer to the guard post and asked “Can you open the door please, sir?”

The guard raised his head and looked at me. “What are you guys going out this late for?”

“To eat!”

“Go back to your dorms and make some instant ramen or something. The school rules clearly state that the gate is not to be opened after 1 AM, no matter who it is!”

He looked behind me, noticing Wan Er and Dong Cheng Yue, and smiled. “Oh you’re quite good, taking on two beautiful women at the same time. Can you really handle them?”

Wan Er’s face turned bright red but she said nothing. However, Dong Cheng Yue rolled up her sleeves and replied angrily. “What’d you say? I dare you! Say it again!”

The guard didn't respond and I tug on Dong Cheng Yue's sleeves.
"Alright. don't be mad, Dong Cheng Yue. We'll find another way out."

.....

As we walked along the school path, Dong Cheng Yue asked "There's another way out?"

I extended my arm and pointed to my right. "We'll climb over the wall..."

"What?"

Wan Er's eyes widened as she looked at the smooth surface of the wall.
"You probably can, but how would I or Dong Cheng Yue... Don't forget that we're women.... The height of this wall...."

Dong Cheng Yue smiled. "Then Xiao Yao, you stand against the wall. We'll step on your shoulders to get up. Then you can climb over to catch us on the other side..."

I frowned. "Why make it so complicated? I could just jump over while carrying you two..."

"Damn, are you really that strong?" Dong Cheng Yue's eyes were full of suspicion.

I could not help but laugh and flexed. "Don't underestimate me..."

"Fine. Why don't we try it then?" Wan Er pursed her red lips and smiled.
"Dong Cheng Yue goes first..."

Dong Cheng Yue trembled. "Why do I have to be the lab rat..."

"Are we going to get a midnight snack or not? I'm also hungry. If we wait any longer, I won't have enough strength to jump over the wall!" I said.

Cheng Yue gave in. "Alright. I'll go first then..."

I extended my hand toward her. "Hold on tight and don't fall, Dong Cheng Yue. If you do, it'd be very ugly..."

She nodded, walked up to me and wrapped her arms around my neck. It

was a bit close and Wen Er protested a bit from the side but I did not catch what she said.

I wrapped my own arms around Dong Cheng Yue's slender waist. Tensing myself up, I stepped on the fire hydrant sticking out from the ground and pushed off, soaring to the top of the wall, while slightly unbalanced. I looked outside, away from the school for a second and saw nothing but darkness. But there was just enough light to see that the ground below was not a sewer or something.

I landed softly and tried to put Dong Cheng Yue down. She resisted, whispering in a low voice. "Hug me for a bit longer..."

I glared at her. "Dong Cheng Yue, please don't. Wan Er's still on the other side..."

"Okay..."

.....

Taking a few steps back, I jumped back over. Dong Cheng Yue's small mouth widened. "This... Doesn't this exceed the olympic record? This is really insane..."

Lin Wan Er stood with a charming pose on the other side of the wall. She stared at me, and her eyes were filled with mischief.

I extended my arm, and smiled, "Wan Er, it's your turn".

"Mm."

The beautiful Miss was especially soft. She approached me and hugged me around the neck. I wrapped my arms around her waist and gently tightened my grip. Almost instantly, I felt her soft, tender 34Ds press against my chest. My face reddened in response to this heavenly feeling and I stood there dazed.

Lin Wan Er raised her head to look at me. Her face was red as well. "Don't think of anything dirty. Just jump already.."

For a second, I thought she was reading my mind, which had scrambled my thoughts even more. I tensed up and jumped without a thought.

“Ah!”

I heard Dong Cheng Yue shriek on the other side of the wall and I looked down. Dammit! Why was she standing so close? We were going to crash into her!

With no other options, I twisted myself midair while I maintained my grip on Wan Er, and fell with my back toward the ground, hoping it would take the brunt of the impact. There was not much that could have broken our fall; it was a brick floor that I couldn't avoid.

Bang!

As the dust dispersed, I clenched my teeth and cried out in pain. My lower spine had landed on a loose brick. Fortunately, my body was toughened by years of training. Otherwise my injuries would have been far more severe.

I whimpered.

Wan Er was even more shocked than I was and tightened her embrace. I could feel her 34Ds pressed against my chest. Under the bright moonlight, I had a clear view of her cleavage in front of me. It was a compensation for my troubles. She blushed and hurriedly stood up, brushing herself off. “Are you ok!?”

“I'm fine...” I said, clenching my teeth in pain, “I'm fine, Wan Er. Let's go and eat...”

“Mm...”

I stood up, and still felt a bit of pain in my back. It was not like I was made of gold or anything, so of course it would hurt.

With Wan Er and Dong Cheng Yue supporting me on either side, we had staggered slowly toward the nearest food stall. Taking a seat, I brushed the dust off my clothes and ordered our food. The man working the stall began to cook, handling his spatula like a pro. Soon enough, the first dish arrived with a side of huge steamed buns. My luck must have been incredible, to have been able to eat peacefully on a night like this with a bright moon and two beautiful women at my side.

.....

Two students who seemed to be about 23 years old sat behind us, chatting as they hurriedly ate—

“Songsong, did you see what happened yesterday? Just as I was about to log off, I noticed that someone got a purple-tier sword in Ba Huang City. It was the Frost Rain Sword. Isn’t that awesome!? To think that someone has a level 48 purple-tier sword that’s even better than Jian Feng Han’s Heavenly Plan Sword already... Who do you think it was?”

His friend took a gulp of her beer and smiled. “It was probably Jian Feng Han, Yan Zhao Warrior, General Li Mu, or Wrath of the Heroes. Those types of people. There are only a handful in Ba Huang City who have the strength to kill a purple-tier boss. Without a lot of power, no one would even think of challenging a purple-tier boss.”

Songsong sighed. “I don’t even know when we’ll find a purple-tier sword. If we can just get our hands on one, think about all the players we can convince to join our studio, Blood Contract. Even though we only started our studio 4 days ago, we haven’t even gotten one new recruit. We can’t continue on like this; we need to figure out a way to increase our manpower.”

“Mmm, let’s brainstorm... Why don’t I bring a poster for Blood Contract with me the next time I go to the girls’ dorm at Liu Hua University to advertise makeup and stuff? If they like the makeup, then they might like our guild. If we can get these students to join, we can pull in their fans, which makes up a large portion of Liu Hua University. With that many people, Blood Contract could basically dominate Ba Huang City...”

“I’m starting to drool just thinking about it. Damn, I’m going to go sell some makeup tomorrow. Don’t forget to post some of those advertisements in the nearby hotels, we can’t let go of those couples that are going there to open a room, those people buy one get one free!”

“Mm, let’s do that!”

.....

The 3 of us silently listened as the two finished their meal and left. Lin Wan Er lowered her head and choked with laughter, while I had tried to sit up straight and hold my composure.

Before long, we were finished with our meal, and it was time to leave!

Unfortunately, we were denied entry from the front gate. Getting back in was going to be a lot more difficult than getting out. The three of us stared at the wall blankly—

“What should we do? Even if we get in, the dorm supervisor will probably catch us...”

“Yeah, I remember there was a senior student that tried to enter the dorm at 1:10 am, but she was caught by the supervisor...it was publicly announced to the whole school and they called her parents 3 days later. It was so cruel...”

Wan Er silently stared at me.

I pursed my mouth, “Then let them call your parents, if your dad Lin Tian Nan came, the principle will come out and welcome him...”

“I don’t want that...”

Dong Cheng Yue spun around and looked at the far away lights, “How about...We stay at a hotel? We’ll return tomorrow morning, I don’t want to have my parents called either...”

“What do you say Wan Er?”

Lin Wan Er closed her eyes and said, “Fine...”

.....

After that, I brought the two beauties on a new adventure. At the first express hotel we stopped at, it was found to be completely full. The next 3 hotels, they were all full!

Dong Cheng Yue yawned, “So tired, I forgot today is Friday, all the seniors come out for a room...”

I looked at the time and it was already 3 am. Wan Er held my arms and

was almost completely lying on me. She tried to keep her eyes open and her long eyebrows were like brushes blinking twice, almost unable to keep them open anymore.

I frowned, "To the west here there's a 4 star hotel, let's go there and take a look!"

"Mm..."

.....

We stumbled to the 4th hotel and finally, the receptionist said, "There's only one room left..."

Only...One room!!

What a melodramatic scene, but I couldn't find any excited emotions in my heart. I took out some money, and said, "One room then, we'll take it, hurry up..."

Dong Cheng Yue's leaned on the desk, and with a bang her forehead hit a notebook. She raised her head and looked at me, "Xiao Yao, 3 people for this room?"

"Mm, or you could sleep on the road..."

Dong Cheng Yue immediately shook her head, "No, then 3 people on this room then..."

.....

Entering the room, it was pretty spacious. Wan Er recovered a bit, and while barely opening her eyes she said, "This...3 people in this room, how do we sleep?"

I took the initiative, "I'll sleep on the sofa, you and Dong Cheng Yue sleep on the bed..."

Wan Er nodded, "I need to take a shower, could you go away for a moment?"

I looked around the room, "The room is only so big, where should I go?"

"That's fine, don't peek..."

“Mm” I went the sofa and sleepiness surged on to me.

.....

Dong Cheng Yue and Wan Er both went to take a shower and sweet laughter floated from the shower room—

“Waa, Wan Er your body is so good...So jealous...”

“Dong Cheng Yue, no touching!”

“Wan Er, when can mine be as big as yours...”

“I said don’t touch it, damn girl...”

“Say, after showering, do you think that Li Xiao Yao will be a beast?”

“I don’t know...”

.....

After half an hour, the two beauties walked out in towels, but they saw me sleeping on the couch, with thunder-like snoring.

“Damn! This...guy...”

The corners of Wan Er’s mouth curved and she didn’t even know whether to be angry or disappointed.

Chapter 117: Advice from an Old Friend

In the middle of the night, I suddenly awoke to an awful cold. My whole body was twisted up like a shrimp on the couch and I saw a faint light coming from the windowsill, a sign that it was almost morning. Still, I remained lying in the sofa with my eyes closed. In just less than two hours of sleep, I had recovered more than 70% of my mental energy. I guess this was one of the benefits of being a practitioner.

“Rustle...”

Someone was waking up.

I suddenly detected the faint smell of perfume. This was definitely Wan Er’s fragrance. Looking down, I saw that someone had spread a bath towel over me in my sleep. I could make out the individual strands of hair, shining in the morning light and lightly touching my face.

Staying calm, I kept on pretending to sleep.

“If you’re already awake, then wake up already...” War Er chuckled softly.

I breathed a sigh of disappointment. I was absolutely certain that Wan Er could read my mind. I have to be careful about what I think around them from now on...

However, I continued to lie there calmly and Wan Er did not mention it again. Not long after that, I entered into a state of light sleep. Wan Er returned to her bed and while hugging Dong Cheng she fell asleep. Dong Cheng mumbled, “This is what I like, don’t bother me...”. I couldn’t even fathom what she was dreaming of.

By the time I woke up again, the sun was already up and shining. I rubbed my eyes, looking at the bed next to me. There were two beautiful ladies, that had kicked away part of the blanket with a silky white colored leg. Wan Er was still snuggling the rest of the blanket. While fast asleep, she had a faint smile on her face. What was she dreaming about right now? She looks like a cat that was taking a nap. Dong Cheng was

sleeping in a crooked position, with her face planted on Wan Er's chest, how lucky!

I took my phone and saw that it was already 11 o'clock in the morning, who would've thought we would've slept for so long. Fortunately, today was a weekend with no classes and Destiny servers' were on maintenance until 12 o'clock. Sleeping in wasn't a bad thing.

Giving a loud cough, I cried: "Miss, Dong Cheng, get up and prepare to go back to school!"

While in bed, Lin Wan Er lazily rubbed her eyes, looked at me, and then looked at Dong Cheng Yue in her hug. When she realized that she only had a pink gown that had enchantingly wrapped around her body, she suddenly gasped.

"Li Xiao Yao!" Lin Wan Er was actually calm, and lightly said, "Go away, Dong Cheng and I want to get out of bed."

"Aye..."

After turning around, I pulled out my phone to check information on Destiny's site as well as the server's maintenance schedule. At the forum, the result of a huge battle between two big guilds, [Vanguard] and [Flying Dragon] was posted, it seemed like the outbreak was caused by the rights to a gold-tier boss. In addition, the "hottest" post at the moment was the most powerful sword, the purple-tier level 48 Frost Rain Sword. It can be considered as the God of weapons right now and it even has a superior grade!

In Destiny, only weapons can receive superior grades. These graded weapons can deal fatal strikes, which are similar to a critical strike. However, fatal strikes could be stacked on top of critical strikes. To a certain extent, the burst potential in these weapons can turn the tides of a battle.

In the forum, no one knew who had the Frost Rain Sword, but many believed that it was in the hands of one of the top players from Ba Huang City. This made the players of the other cities wonder why top ranking weapons like the Frost Rain Sword and the Heavenly Plan Sword were

coming from Ba Huang City. It seemed that Ba Huang City was like a treasure trove. Even Q Sword and other high leveled players were puzzled why Ba Huang City, a border city, had such a high drop rate of superb items!

After checking the forums, Lin Wan Er and Dong Cheng Yue had finished washing and came out of the bathroom with brand new clothing. Although there was no make-up applied, they still looked so elegant and refined. These two beauties just didn't need any make-up to showcase their beauty.

"Come on!" Lin Wan Er said.

I looked at the time: "To eat a meal or to go back to school?"

Dong Cheng Yue smirked: "Well, there is a hot pot shop on this street, called Pot of God. Let's go there?"

"All right, I'll pay..." I said while patting my chest.

Lin Wan Er tilted her head and smiled at me: "When did our miser, Xiao Yao, become so generous?"

Dong Cheng Yue whispered to her: "He just got a purple-tier sword yesterday. Don't ask any questions and just say yes!"

"Sure!"

.....

Minutes later, the three of us appeared in the Pot of God restaurant and had ordered a dry chicken with a few stir-fried dishes. When we finally got to eating them, it was already at noon.

Dong Cheng Yue was playing with her phone and suddenly, her tender body trembled, and she shouted: "Oh!"

"What's wrong?" Lin Wan Er asked.

Dong Cheng Yue tightly gripped her phone: "That... CBN Destiny Battle Ladder is out..... "

"Really? Who's first?"

“Fang Ge Que ...”

“Well, it should be him!”

I was surprised and asked: “Who’s Fang Ge Que, is he famous?”

“What did you say?” Lin Wan Er said with a deadpan face, “ In 2015, within a year, he took the first rank in “Overlord” and then started playing “Conquest”, in a mere one and a half years, he became the top player, ranking above Jian Feng Han and Q sword.....Unlike your pitiful 3 Million + ranking, Fang Ge Que was known as the best mage and top player in the world!”

I pulled out my phone, searched for his name, the only result was–

ID: Fang Ge Que LV – 51 Silver Mage

Main city: Jiu Li City

.....

Squinting, I said: “51 Mage, sure enough, he overpowers us in level”

Lin Wan Er smiled: “It’s natural, Jiu Li City’s PK has always been rampant and Fang Ge Que has never tasted defeat. He got placed first place in the grandmaster division with all victories...”

“The grandmaster division?” I was surprised.

Dong Cheng Yue explained: “Well, Battle Ladder’s top 1-100 players are known as grandmasters, players ranking from 101-1000 are known as masters, after which is the expert group, elite group, rookie group and so on.... Xiao Yao, do you want to find yourself?”

My mouth twitched: “My record, it should be... It should not be too low, right?”

Lin Wan Er stood up, sat to my side, entered my ID in the CBN ladder system “Xiao Yao Zi Zai” and then confirmed. The phone began to load while Dong Cheng also went behind me and stood while her hair hung over her shoulders. They stared with their big eyes at the phone screen and eventually, the ranking showed–

Player “Xiao Yao Zi Zai”: Ranked 217th, 117th in the master division.....

“Woah, 217 and in the master group! Very good, it’s much better than your original three million+ ranking” Dong Cheng laughed.

I turned to look at her and asked: “Dong Cheng, what’s your ranking?”

“I don’t really PK ...”

Dong Cheng Yue bit her lips and seemed somewhat nervous while I quickly enter her ID Cang Yue into the phone. The ranking just came out – 51st!

“... This is not high... ..?” I was speechless.

Lin Wan Er at my side, laughed and explained: “CBN Battle Ladder’s rankings are not entirely according to PKs but a combination of the players of existing skills, levels, equipments, pets and then finally your PK record. Li Xiao Yao, you Pked repeatedly in Ba Huang City, killing many but you were also killed quite a few times. Because of your deaths, not entering the grandmaster division is normal.”

“Miss, your ranking...”

“Didn’t you just see it?”

“Nooo.....”

Dong Cheng Yue chuckled: “Fool, didn’t you just see the top ten? Wan Er is ranked Ninth!”

“Damn.....”

I turned to look at Lin Wan Er, a bit scared. How did this chick rank so high?

“What’s wrong” Lin Wan Er looked a little uncomfortable.

“Didn’t think you were so strong... ..” I was perplexed.

Lin Wan Er sighed and a pair of pretty eyes stared at me angrily: “Do I look like a vase? I was ranked third in “Conquest”! Third!”

I sat there quietly and gave a thumbs up: “The mighty Miss!”

.....

After that, we finally started eating.

After lunch and at exactly 12:00, I accompanied the two beauties back to the girls dorm. I watched them go upstairs before heading back to my dorm. Let's go online and try out the Frost Rain Sword!

Just then, the phone rang with a call from a strange number –

“Hey, who's this?”

“Li Xiao Yao, This is Lin Tian Nan!”

My heart beat an extra violent beat: “Mr. Lin , is there anything?”

Lin Tian Nan said lightly: “Last night, you and Wan Er went to a 4 star hotel, right?”

The old guy has eyes everywhere, I secretly sighed and explained: “Yes, but it was for a reason. I didn't do anything out of line either ...”

Lin Tian Nan smiled: “I know. If you really laid a hand on Wan Er last night, you would have already died under a sniper rifle.”

.....

My heart went cold, I said, “Mr. Lin, you sent someone to spy on me?”

“No, it's for protecting you.”

“Is it?” My eyebrows jumped: ” I must warn you that employers should not suspect their employees. Chances are, the one you sent to monitor me will be seen by me as an opponent to kill!”

Lin Tian Nan paused before laughing: “Good boy, I love your fearless personality! However, I must say, since I have the ability to pull you from Wang Xin, I also have the ability to quietly erase you from Wan Er's side. Moreover, if you cross the line then not only will you feel my wrath, but Wang Xin will also feel it!”

“In addition to protecting Lin Wan Er's security, I will not do anything, nor try anything.”

“Well, that's good! Next month, I'm giving you a raise. I know about the

tennis hall matter, next month your salary goes up to 50,000 RMB (8000~ USD per month).”

“Thanks, boss ...”

Lin Tian Nan: “Sure.”

Chapter 118: The First Group Battle

Going online!

“Ding!”

An unexpected window appeared in front of me —

System Notification: Congratulations! You have entered the top 1000 in the CBN Battle Ranking. For the first login of the day, you have been awarded 4123 Experience points and 9 Gold coins.

....

My experience bar increased by 3%, which was not bad at all. To think that the top ranking players on the CBN Leaderboard actually had these kinds of benefits, these rankings were definitely something to fight for. Especially those 9 gold coins obtained daily. Perhaps higher ranking players could obtain even more gold and experience, though it was a bit too far for me to think about right now.

Standing in the middle of Ba Huang City, I drew the Purple Tier Frost Rain Sword from its sheath. Looking down, a lavender colored frost covered the blade as the reflective body was adorned with carved runes. This Purple Tier weapon looked exceptional, and at that moment, I could confidently claim that that my attack power is peerless in Ba Huang City. Not even Jian Fen Han could reach my 2000 point base attack damage.

Blissfully standing around for moment, a ‘Ding’ was followed by Lin Wang Er’s message, “20 thousand RMB has been transferred to your account. I’m coming over to Ba Huang City now, so keep the Speed Dragon Ring safe for me, alrighty?”

Laughingly, I replied, “Got it, the ring is in my storage; even if I die, it won’t be going anywhere. Rest assured, when you are at Ba Huang City just give me a call.”

“Ah, ‘kay!”

....

Checking out my friends list, it looked like Song Han and the others were online. I sent them a message, “Little Wolf, what are you guys doing right now?”

“We were gathering some potions and about to continue leveling. What’s up, Xiao Yao brother?”

“Come to Ba Huang City’s blacksmith, we’re having a temporary meeting about the future of Zhan Long studio in there.”

“Alright!”

Sheathing the Frost Rain Sword, its sheen was hidden once more. But in the few minutes that it was out, many people were looking in my direction and pointing fingers at the sword. They were most likely wondering if the sword was one of the top weapons on the Weapons Leaderboard.

Carrying the Frost Rain Sword and the ancient tablet on my back, my Frost Fire Cape fluttered behind me as I entered the blacksmith shop. This was a stone building housing several furnaces burning with raging flames, with a blacksmith repeatedly beating an anvil with a ‘Keng Keng Keng’ sound. Leaning on the wall with my arms crossed in front of my chest, I waited for a few minutes before Song Han, Ran Min, and Fox showed up in front of the shop.

“Xiao Yao brother!” Song Han smiled slightly while he held a pair of daggers, he was a LV 30+ Assassin now. In just three days, these guys actually somewhat caught up; their speed was very reassuring.

I nodded as the four of us sat around the brazier.

“Xiao Yao brother, what’s up?” Song Han asked.

Me: “Well, actually it’s nothing big, I just want to tell you guys that the CBN Battle Ladder came out. Surely you guys have understood the details about this Battle Ladder. Compared to the previous several games, Destiny is a ruthless game. Once CBN Battle Net is released, power struggles are inevitable. Ba Huang City’s competition is only going to become more intense, so we must start winning people over to our group.

We can't rely on four people to conquer the world."

A slight smile showed on Fox's face: "Boss, what you're saying is...we're creating a Guild?"

Taking a deep breath, I said, "Creating a guild costs 10,000 G, temporarily we can't afford it. We don't even have a Guild Creation Tablet yet. The cost to establish a guild is too expensive. Anyhow, even if we can't officially create a guild, at least we need a temporary team and we have to keep expanding it if we want to compete with guilds like [Wrath of Heroes] and [Vanguard]."

Old K held up his fist in rage, "Oh, I saw the recording of that last fight, Jian Feng Han robbed you of Heavenly Plan Sword. Shameless, people actually call this guy a great master of his time? Shameless bastard!"

Song Han opened up the CBN Battle Net and laughed, "Speaking of Jian Feng Han, he is one of the top 10 players on the CBN Battle Net and the top ten of the Grand Master Group. Right now we still lack strength, so we can't be going around challenging [Vanguard]."

I nodded, "That's why you guys need to quickly level up and get to level 40 in 3 days and learn the skills of your second job promotion. After that, look for some Healers and Mages to start building a temporary Zhan Long team with at least 10 people, and start raiding some moderate level Bosses. Strive to get a Guild Creation Tablet and--"

"Then establish the gang!"

"Then sell it for money..."

"Cough, cough, I thought too far ahead..."

Fox held out a window displaying a bunch of numbers and said, "Boss, these were the equipments you wanted me to sell. They have all been sold. Jade City Sword sold for 500G, Firewood Sword sold for 400G, Wind Chaser sold for 180G, and the rest added together to 1345G. I have already sent it to the auction house, at a 1:8 rate. A few minutes ago, it was sold for a total of 10,760RMB (~1700 USD). The studio is currently still broke, so 50% was extracted for studio funds. Here are 5380 RMB (~900 USD). I

transferred it to you just now.”

A ‘Ding’ sound, signified the completion of the transfer. Since the game account was bound to one’s identity card, and the helmet could take retina data to connect the player’s bank account to the game, these systems were very easy to use.

“Alright, we’re going to go train!” Song Han stood up, holding his daggers, and said with a smile, “Let’s get there quickly today while there aren’t too many people on the highlands. I don’t want it to be like yesterday, getting mobs stolen is one thing, but Old K even dropped a level from the PK.”

Surprised, I asked, “Little Wolf, what did you say? You guys were PKed yesterday?”

“Yeah.” Song Hang nodded: “There were a bunch of guys from a family. Roughly a dozen of players between level 37 to 40. It was a money grinding studio, hm... what was it called again?”

Ran Min quickly grabbed his axe, “They called themselves the Thunder Spirit studio. They looked like they were players from the [Vanguard] guild.”

Raising my brows, I pulled out the Frost Rain Sword and said, “Let’s go. I’ll help you guys take revenge. Didn’t you say they were only a dozen level 37-40 guys? I can clean up that much on my own.”

Fox whispered, “Is this really a good idea? Those guys are from Vanguard. This feels like bringing trouble onto ourselves.”

I couldn’t help but chuckle, “It’s alright. Our little Zhan Long studio is probably a tiny ant for Jian Feng Han. His biggest worry right now is hunting high level bosses for the Guild Creation Tablet. He doesn’t have spare time to take care of us. C’mon. This is Zhan Long’s main principle, to go out with honor and fight for the weak! Right now we are the weak, so we have to fight for ourselves...”

Song Han and Ran Min both smiled, “OK, let’s go! To Frost Maple Highland!”

....

After stocking up on potions and repairing equipment, we walked out in a small group. With one look, anyone can see that Song Han and the other two were rookies who recently caught up; they wore incomplete gear. Conversely, I wore a suit of lean fitted armor, definitely too eye-catching. Thus I toggled my name to hidden mode, this way anyone 5 levels lower than me wouldn't be able to see my ID. Wearing a fancy Ice Fire Cloak on my shoulders, I followed behind Song Han and the gang with a big smile on my face.

Since Lin Wang Er wouldn't be at Ba Huang City for another two hours, I might as well have used this time to find something to do.

About 20 minutes away from Ba Huang City lied the Frost Maple Highlands, which was a medium level training area. All across Frost Maple Highlands are level 41-42 bandits. These bandits often went looting surrounding villages, so they ended up dropping a lot of money when killed. A single kill could drop at least 5 silver. At a 1:8 exchange rate, killing a bandit can earn .40 RMB. That was why gold farmers in the vicinity of Ba Huang City frequently gathered here.

I followed behind Song Han and Old K as my Silver Locked Battle Boots stepped onto the fiery red maple leaves. Fox was at my side, holding up his rifle as he laughed, "It's still early, so there probably isn't anyone here yet. By the time it's nighttime, you can't even stick a foot inside the Frost Maple Highlands, once a bandit spawns, a whole horde of players kills it in seconds."

Me: "Isn't the rule of Frost Maple Highlands basically first come first serve?"

"Yeah. Generally speaking, reasonable parties will discuss the matter and divide up the training grounds. The unreasonable ones will start attacking immediately. Yesterday those Thunder Spirit studio guys were being unreasonable, the type that directly starts fighting. And you know how Old K is, he is extremely short-tempered, which resulted in him dying."

I took out a few Pardon Cards from my bag and handed them out while leaving one for myself. I laughed, “Ah, if those guys from Thunder Spirit show up today, I will show them their place, I’m not joining your party so you guys focus on killing the mobs. I’ll handle the players.”

“Alright!”

Song Han turned around and chuckled impishly, “He he, this time we have brother Xiao Yao taking care of us, it shouldn’t be too embarrassing.”

“Yup!”

....

Not too long after, the four of us climbed up to the highlands. There were actually several parties training here, but they were spread out far enough so that everyone had enough space to farm for money. This was a forested area filled with cruising bandits carrying broadswords. Song Han and the other two started killing some mobs. Old K attracted aggro while Song Han stunned to gain control and Fox sniped from far away. Basically, it was a one-sided fight, which was great for grinding.

“Pata.....”

Jumping onto the top of a red rock at my side, I crossed my arms as I sat beside a 2 meter tall pine tree. Other players couldn’t see me, while I was able to see everything on the Frost Maple Highlands.

There was no movement for an entire hour.

Right as I was about to fall asleep, Ran Min’s voice suddenly said, “Boss, be careful! They are coming. It’s those guys from Thunder Spirit!”

....

A party of players suddenly emerged from the foot of the hill. Before each player’s name was a family’s title. They even had [Vanguard]’s certification emblem. (Certification Emblem: The emblem only serves cosmetic purposes and will not grant a guild buff until the guild is officially established).

Leading them was a level 42 magician, ID: [Thunder Spirit Emperor], the highest level player in the group. Behind him was a swordsman – [Thunder Spirit King], and a berserker – [Thunder Spirit Marquis]; both were level 40 and had undergone their second job promotion. This family had quite an impressive name. Those three were probably the only ones I needed to worry about, the players behind them had not gone through their second job promotion and probably couldn't even break through my defense, therefore I could probably just ignore them.

.....

“Ha, it's those noobs again...” Thunder Spirit Marquis held his battle axe and smiled from a distance away: “Thunder Spirit studio is farming gold here for 5 hours. Unassociated people need to get out, don't stand around here being an eyesore! I'm talking to you, Hero Ran Min, GTFO. If you're not gone in a minute, I'll help you lose another level.”

Old K was trembling with anger as he held his battle axe. Even though his level, equipment, and skills were all shy in comparison to his foes, he ground his teeth and yelled, “You want to kill me? Then come! Let's see if you have even have the ability to do so.”

....

“ShaSha...”

As I sat up from the rock, slowly and silently, I drew out the Frost Rain Sword from its sheath. Joining Song Han's party, I used the team chat and whispered: “Use a Pardon Card. This is our first team battle as Zhan Long studio. Old K, run straight into their group and let loose on Thunder Spirit Marquis. Little Wolf, stun the swordsman. Fox, use your gun to kill Old K's target.”

Song Han whispered, “Brother Xiao Yao, the most dangerous one is that magician, Thunder Spirit Emperor!”

While clutching the Frost Rain Sword, I smirked: “Leave that magician to me!”

Chapter 119: Duel

“Someone needs to teach you a lesson!”

Thunder Spirit Marquis charged forward with his axe glowing, it was the second promotion skill, [Flame Axe]. He went straight for Old K's head. Dammit, I know that Old K can't dodge it; his training and skills are not at that level.

“Klang!”

The axe leaves a long scar on the armor and Old K's body shakes. He had just lost a lot of health.

“774!”

The gap between them is too big, with one blow Old K was almost killed!

“Bang.....”

Before Thunder Spirit Marquis could follow up with a second blow, he took a shot to the face. This was done by Fox and to the side, the swordsman Thunder Spirit King got angry. With a wave of his sword, 3 golden hexagram appeared and he unleashed a level 5 [Combo] aimed towards Old K. He thunders, “Go to hell, you low life.”

.....

Just before the combo was released, Thunder Spirit King's body paused and Wolf, who was carefully hidden, appeared and landed a blow that stunned him. Using quick footwork, Wolf's daggers flashed and 3 continuous blows landed on Thunder Spirit King. Following the three slashes was a [Bleed], which landed right before Thunder Spirit King came out of his stun status. Instantly, the health bar over Thunder Spirit King fell below 50%. In a 1v1 fight, he definitely wasn't Song Han's opponent.

Seeing the situation, Thunder Spirit Emperor went into a fit of rage. Using his staff, he casted [Pillars of Fire and Ice] at Old K! At the same time, he summoned a killer bee pet to attack Little Wolf. He was multi-

tasking quite well!

“To even dare to mess with people from Vanguard, I think you don’t want to stay in Ba Huang City any more!” In Thunder Spirit Emperor’s eyes, Old K was be a corpse once [Pillars of Fire and Ice] landed.

In a flash, I rushed down from above holding the Frost Rain Sword. Holding out my hand, I casted [Heal] on Old K, immediately healing him for 750 health. With Frost Rain Sword flashing out, I attacked Thunder Spirit Emperor. He had cast [Mana Shield] at the start of the fight so killing him wasn’t going to be easy.

.....

“Shit, who the hell is this...I can’t see his level...” Thunder Spirit Emperor roared while retreating to cast [Fireball], “I don’t care who the hell you are, but you going to die!”

“Peng!”

“Frost Rain Sword” broke through his [Mana Shield] and upon seeing that his 100% [Mana Shield] got destroyed by one attack, Thunder Spirit Emperor face ashened. He forgot to retreat and stared at me, “This....what kind of attack...with one attack? This is unreal....”

With a faint smile, I used [Wind Blade] with the Frost Rain Sword” and slashed into Thunder Spirit Emperor’s body. The attack power overwhelmed his defense by a large margin!

“1477!”

.....

When the mage died, the 7-8 players behind him become dumbstruck. “Shit! Boss is dead...one attack, 1 second..., 1477 burst damage. Who is this person, he is way too strong!”

In the air, a wind elf archer lifted his bow: “Whatever, don’t be afraid of this player. Attack together and kill him!”

A few level 37 swordsmen crowd towards me but I went towards the archer flying in the air who is level 40. He has the second promotion skill

“Scatter shot” which might be a threat to me!

Golden light shining in front of me, combo after combo landed onto my chest plate. Each of the attacks inflicted only 20-70 damage; the attack of these level 37 swordsmen shouldn't go past 800 and my 1025 defense is too tough for them!

“Pa!”

Stepping on a stone, I launched myself into midair and locked on to the wind elf archer. The archer, to increase accuracy, flew only 7 meters above ground which was inside my attack range.

“Hua...”

His cape fluttering behind him, the archer's eyes were full of fear. My Frost Rain Sword made a “Klang” sound as it passed through the archer. Normal attacks are just as frightening——

“1292!”

The damage number caused the rest of the members of the Thunder Spirit studio to almost cry. After I landed, I casted [Heal] on Old K who was getting beat up by the swordsmen that I passed by!

“Brother Xiao Yao!”

Little Wolf shouted, “Go finish off the other 2 mages, I will kill the healers!”

“Alright!”

With 3 swordsmen trying to catch up to me, I let Baby Bobo attack them while I attacked with the [Frost Rain Sword] twice and killed 2 of the mages who did not have [Mana Shield]. The battle that started quick, ended even quicker. In the blink of an eye, all 13 members of Thunder Spirit Studio were in spirit form. This was Zhan Long Studio's complete victory.

.....

“Pa!”

Ran Min landed a powerful kick on the corpse of the Berserker that taunted. Clenching his teeth, he said, "Wait till I get to level 40, I will hunt you down every single day. Just you wait and see!"

Little Wolf held his daggers and laughed, "First battle, 4 v 13 and a complete victory, not bad..."

Fox smiled, "That is because our boss is much stronger than them, otherwise it would have been a hard fight. That wind elf archer really had bad luck, if he flew higher it would be hard for us to fight..."

I glanced at him, "How hard could it be, with the gun in your hands. You could have 2 shot him..."

"Ummm, I forgot, I'm also range..."

"Really!"

"Ahem...."

.....

"Should we camp their corpses?" Little Wolf asked.

I looked at the corpses littered on the ground and replied, "No need, you guys continue to level. If they dare to come again, just kill them all again!"

"Alright!"

The 3 continue to level while me and Baby Bobo continue to stand guard. Noticing how quiet the surrounding was, I yelled out, "Members of the Thunder Spirit Studio, we are all here killing monsters to earn gold. Why ruin our peaceful relationship for a leveling location? If you all revive now, I will not attack. The southern part of the area has empty leveling spots. If you go there, we can all be happy."

After a few seconds, a pillar of white light appeared. Right after reviving, the revived assassin quickly hid using [Sneak].

I lowered my Frost Rain Sword and didn't say a word.

Seconds later, one by one the members of Thunder Spirit Studio revived,

even Thunder Spirit Emperor revived. Holding his staff and pointing at me, he said, “You are Xiao Yao? Good, We Thunder Spirit Studio will remember today’s shame. Wait and see, we will pay you back and wash away our shame!”

I held up my hand, “Zhan Long Studio welcomes your “teachings”. However next time don’t have a group fight. Come challenge me to a 1v1, I, Li Xiao Yao, will always accept. No matter how many challengers, I will do all of them without a second thought!”

Thunder Spirit Emperor’s face turned purple and with a heavy tone, he said, “Those are your words. If you have the guts, then don’t move from there. I will find someone with ability to teach you a lesson!”

On the side, Thunder Spirit King whispered, “Boss, this Xiao Yao is rank 200+ on the CBN website. He’s really high rank, we...”

Thunder Spirit Emperor replied with an icy face, “Rest assured. We will go to the south side to level for now. We will defeat Xiao Yao soon!”

.....

Thunder Spirit Studio travelled away and Little Wolf holding his dagger, came over to my side. “Brother Xiao Yao, what do they mean? Asking for help? Let’s leave, fighting with Vanguard is like an egg going against a rock...”

Watching the distant Thunder Spirit Studio members, I sighed and said, “Little Wolf, this time when we reform Zhan Long, I will not make any concessions. We Zhan Long Studio may be few in numbers and fighting strength, but like pawns on a chess game, we may slow but we will definitely move forward. Today will be the first step for Zhan Long. No matter who comes to Frost Maple Heights... they will die!”

Little Wolf smiled, “Alright! That’s the plan and since the three of us haven’t levelled up enough, this battle will be dependent on Brother Xiao Yao!”

Fox: “What if Jian Feng Han shows up? Even though the chances are low....”

I tightened my hold on my Frost Rain Sword and smiled, "If Jian Feng Han really shows up, I will be grateful. The debt from Heavenly Plan Sword has not been settled yet!"

Old K placed his axe on his shoulder, "Boss, you against Jian Feng Han. What are your chances?"

I looked at my sword and the rest of my equipped gear and replied, "Being optimistic, not even 30%..."

"What..."

.....

About 10 minutes later, from the bottom of the mountain came a group of players that had the Vanguard guild emblem. In the front is a player who has a complete suit of armor. In his hands was a shining battle axe. Above his head, a familiar top 10 title on the Ba Huang City's Leaderboard appeared –

Fallen Wolf LV 47 Silver Berserker

.....

Squinting my eyes, I remembered that Jian Feng Han bought the Proud Heaven Axe for this guy.

Little Wolf saw Fallen Wolf and clenched his teeth, "Damn, this person is above brother Xiao Yao in the CBN ranking, he's ranked 117!"

Old K frowned, "Our Xiao Yao boss has the Fire Beacon Helmet and Frost Rain Sword, both of these are purple tier equipment! Why is his CBN ranking below Fallen Wolf?"

Fox lowered down his gun and replied with a smile, "Really simple. From the games we played before, Xiao Yao was only online for a very short time. Thus he had low levels and rankings. Fallen Wolf definitely ranked high in other games."

"Thats why..."

.....

Stepping on fallen leaves, Fallen Wolf increased his pace. From a distance of 20 yards, he grinned, “Xiao Yao, long time no see. Even though it has been a few days since the battle against the Everlasting General, it feels like that had just happened yesterday.”

I replied, “Ahh, Fallen Wolf, you bringing a group of [Vanguard] members to Frost Maple Heights... are you thinking about gold farming?”

Fallen Wolf laughed, “No, I heard that someone was picking on a [Vanguard] group and I was intrigued to see who was so arrogant as to do that. After all, all of them wore the [Vanguard] emblem. If someone killed them then that’s a slap to the face of [Vanguard], so....”

Fallen Wolf’s face chilled and roared, “That’s why I’m here: to restore [Vanguard]’s reputation. No matter who tries to hurt [Vanguard]’s reputation, I will be the first to teach them their place! Moreover, hehe, I will settle the debt with Xiao Yao of killing our guild master, Jian Feng Han, right now!”

I waved my sword, “A duel?”

“Yes, a duel!” Gray Wolf grinned, “Ba Huang City’s number one healer, experience the thrill of fear!”

.....

“Klang!”

Drawing Frost Rain Sword, I faintly replied, “Vanguard is so conceited, it’s time to teach you all a lesson!”

Chapter 120: Ring of Strength

“Arrogant!”

Fallen Wolf clenched his teeth and a crimson flag was planted in front of me, signaling for a duel. This duel wouldn't be recorded in the CBN rankings, meaning that even if I beat Fallen Wolf, I wouldn't get any CBN ranking points.

The Frost Rain Sword glowed with a purple hue and with a wave of my hand, the crimson flag disappeared from the ground. I had rejected the duel. Smiling slightly, I said, “Let's fight for real, why duel?”

Fallen Wolf raised one eyebrow and with a loud voice, he said, “Fine! You sure are arrogant. Xiao Yao! Don't regret this once I kill you. If any equipment drops, I will never return it to you!”

“Hmm!”

.....

Within the party chat, Little Wolf said, “Brother Xiao Yao, I found out Fallen Wolf's equipment details: His axe is the Proud Heaven Axe, Gold tier with nearly 600 attack. His armor, boots, leggings are level 42 Gold tier equipment and his helmet is a level 45 Silver tier. There is an enhancement of 70 defense on the helmet and on his necklace is an enhancement that increases 10% hit chance. It's hard to avoid his attacks, so please be careful. His overall equipment is not much weaker than yours. I can't find any information about his pet either...”

I nodded and lowered my voice, “Hmm, Little Wolf can you watch over me? Old K get ready to fight and Fox aim your gun at their mages in case they get involved. Since Jian Feng Han is not here, Fallen Wolf might not be honorable in a duel. Regardless, everyone should be prepared to die today.”

Old K laughed, “Hmm, it's been years since we were all killed together...”

“Pei! Don't be so negative, I'm going!”

Old K in a singing voice, “Wishing you the best of luck, wishing you a

happy birthday...”

(TL: Chinese birthday song parody, usually in a bad meaning)

The corners of my mouth twitched, “You keeping singing, I’m going!”

.....

“Pa....”

The gold tier boots moved forward among fallen leaves while Fallen wolf lifted his axe. A shining hexagram appeared and a black colored “Spirit Snake” came out of it. This was no ordinary pet, he really was going to be hard to deal with!

“Hua...”

A Level 5 [Heavy Strike], he was testing me!

I feinted a step and parried with the Frost Rain Sword. “Keng” sounded out as my sword hit the axe, but I wasn’t able to stop his strike. Fallen wolf’s strength was really high and the axe cut into my shoulder, causing a pin like pain to blossom on my shoulder.

“401!”

This attack was really strong, at least 1600. Fallen wolf was a barbarian berserker class, which was the class that had the greatest attack in <<Destiny>>. In addition, with all of the gold tier equipment he had, his overall attack was greater than my silver, gold, and purple tier equipment. Of course, I was better in other aspects: my defense was higher than his.

“Peng...”

Air started to circulate around my feet, blowing away the nearby leaves. I activated my S rank combo [Strength of a Thousand Men]. My intentions were clear, a blitz attack. I would break Fallen Wolf’s confidence with one blow.

“Hey!”

Seeing my combo, Fallen wolf immediately reacted. He smashed the axe into the ground, and with a “Bam”, only 50 cm of the axe was showing

above ground. He actually let go of his weapon and dodged with a back flip.

“KengKeng...”

Sparks flew as the first 3 moves of the [Strength of a Thousand Men] landed on the axe. 3 “MISS”s appeared on Fallen wolf’s forehead. As expected, to have been someone valued highly by Jian Feng Han, he was no weakling. Just by going with this move, you could tell that Fallen wolf was a rare expert, paying attention to his equipment and environment.

Even though my first three strikes were dodged, I immediately rammed towards him. Even though I didn’t land the ram, I was right in front of Fallen Wolf and while in mid air, I held up Frost Rain Sword as wind began swirling around it, [Wind Blade]!

“Peng!”

“997!”

Under one strike, Fallen Wolf was forced back and he lost around 50% of his health, now he was at the same health level as me!

“What...”

After retreating a few steps, Fallen Wolf opened his eyes wide open with disbelief, “One blow and 1000 damage! Even Jian Feng Han doesn’t have this attack power, what kind of monster are you!?”

I didn’t reply, instead I kept pushing forward as I slammed my fist into the ground, [Binding Chains].

Fallen wolf rapidly went sideways 2 steps, resulting in a MISS for the chains. He picked up the axe in the ground and with a roar, activating [Rage], which caused a 10% increase in attack, followed by another roar, while he activated [Penetration], his next attack would ignore 25% of my defense. This time he was going all out!

“He!”

Off to the side, Baby Bobo continued to attack his pet. The Spirit Snake cried out and its tail danced madly, trying to attack Baby Bobo. Both pets

were about the same in terms of level and rarity, it was hard to tell which one will win.

In his roar, Fallen wolf came forward, but he was not rushing nor taking his time, and instead advanced at a firm pace. His control and speed were very good and there was no way for me to have dodged his attack. Even if I avoided the first blow, he would've gotten me with the next hit. Fallen Wolf truly understood the mechanics of PKing.

I stayed calm as I watched Fallen Wolf coming. He was one of the Vanguard elders and his ID was quite well known. But this time, Fallen Wolf was full of rage and he wished to kill me more than anything so he was bound to make mistakes!

“Kacha!”

Frost Rain Sword pierced into the rock below and I crouched down. With the sword as a leaping point, I flew out horizontally with incredible speed.

“Shua!”

“MISS!”

The [Penetration] strike had missed. Trying to attack me while in mid air, Fallen wolf cried out, “Humph! Trying to escape!?”

The moments his boots landed, Fallen Wolf sprung outwards, and with a single step, his flame axe landed on my shoulder. Damn! It burned.

“976!”

A berserker that added all of his points into strength was really dangerous.

“Keng!”

My shoulder took another axe hit but I used the chance to pull out the Frost Rain Sword, and using my Silver Locked Battle Boots, I kicked away Fallen Wolf's right leg, which caused him to lose his balance.

“Ding...”

4 Golden hexagrams appeared around the Frost Rain Sword and Fallen Wolf's face changed color and mumbled, "Aah... shit."

Every expert can feel when they are about to be defeated; they understood all the moves and variables, and with one wrong move their whole plan can fall apart!

I attacked with Frost Rain Sword, using a level 5 [Combo].

"410!"

"397!"

"442!"

"378!"

.....

Between the attacks, Fallen Wolf used a level 5 potion to restore 750 health, and barely survived. In a panic, he retreated while the [Vanguard] members behind him said, "Quickly! Protect brother Fallen Wolf."

"No need!"

Rushing forward with my [Haste] buff, I sped past Fallen Wolf!

"Kacha!"

Frost Rain Sword flashed across Fallen Wolf's throat and brought out a spring of blood. Finally, the self-proclaimed number one damage dealer of [Vanguard] was defeated. Behind me, the spirit snake also cried out, dying alongside its master.

"Pata..."

Fallen wolf legs gave out and he kneeled on the ground. With his axe still in his hand, his eyes were filled with anger and confusion, as if he couldn't understand how he had lost to me.

"Crash..."

He died! He dropped quite a few Items: a pile of potions, a few Pardon Cards, and a gold colored ring, it didn't look like a common item.

While holding Frost Rain Sword, I moved forward. Suddenly a level 45 player from [Vanguard] yelled out, “Xiao Yao Zi Zai, stop! Don’t even think about picking up brother Fallen Wolf’s dropped items.”

My brows jumped as I laughed. “OK, if you have the guts, come lvl me. If my equipment drops, I will definitely let you take all of them.”

Before they could respond, I grabbed all the dropped items, especially the pardon cards. For PKing, this item was pretty much a godsend. In addition, the ring also felt quite powerful, and when I took a look at its properties, I smiled –

[Ring of Strength] (Gold-Tier)

Strength: +35

Endurance: +20

Extra: Increases 15 attack damage

Level Requirement: 33

.....

The ring wasn’t bad and was extremely useful for strength based players. It could even compare to the two rings that I already had, the only thing is... one of the rings has 1% life steal, while the other had a strength bonus that wasn’t much lower, so there was no need to change them. The main thing about this Power Ring was that it had decent strength and attack bonus, but a low level requirement of 33.

Looking behind me at Fox and others, I threw the Ring of Strength over.

“Old K, this ring is yours!”

Old K caught the ring and cracked open a smile, “Damn, 35 strength plus 15 attack, good stuff”

The players from [Vanguard] were in a rage and they even unsheathed their weapons! A level 46 swordsman said, “They are going too far. Brothers, lets kill them!”

However, a level 46 mage interjected, “Stop, calm down. Fallen wolf

messed me and told us wait for him. Since we, [Vanguard], have requested a 1v1, we can't start a group fight. We ,[Vanguard], are not like [Flying Dragon] and won't go back on our word and bully others."

While saying that, the mage, with a sneer said, "Xiao Yao Zi Zai, you really are strong, truly admirable. Even Fallen wolf has been defeated by you. So... there is a person that is very interested in dueling you. In 15 minutes, he will be here."

I already knew who the mysterious person was. Holding the Frost Rain Sword, I smiled and said "Sure, i will wait!"

.....

At this time, with a "Ding", a message came from the Miss, Cang Tong, "Uh, ...I'm here, standing under the north gate of Ba Huang City. Where are you..."

I replied, "I can't leave at the moment..."

"Where are you?"

"Frost Maple Heights..."

"PKing?"

"Yeah..."

The beautiful miss smiled, "Oh, is that so. Well... I will come to watch the fun..."

"Okay..."

Chapter 121: SSS-Rank Custom Skill

Whoosh!

10 minutes later, Fallen Wolf revived and scanned the area. When he saw the ring on Old K's hand, he exploded with rage and ground his teeth together: "Nice! Beautifully done!"

I held the Frost Rain Sword in front of me and smiled faintly. Standing like a wall, I planted the long sword into the ground while my Ice Fire Cloak fluttered behind me: "Today, anyone who attempts to touch my team will have to climb over my corpse! I don't care if it's [Vanguard] or [Legends]!"

.....

Another 10 minutes passed.

"Someone should be coming..." Song Han said in the party chat.

I frowned, "Hmm, but why isn't there any movement?"

"Who would come?"

"It's probably Jian Feng Han who will personally come! Damn, [Vanguard] is quite interesting. Are they trying to say that they want to be at the top in Ba Huang City so they want to completely exterminate us?!"

Fox blinked and smiled, "It's very simple, we're going against [Vanguard], so they can't let us go without punishment!"

Ran Min: "Say, Jian Feng Han still isn't here yet, maybe something happened?"

"I don't know!"

.....

Suddenly a [Vanguard] player whispered something into Fallen Wolf's ear. Frowning, Fallen Wolf grabbed his battleaxe and said, "Let's go take a look!"

The group of nearly 100 [Vanguard] players quickly went down the mountain, it looked like something really did happen.

“What’s this?” Old K seemed surprised.

Feeling something was wrong, I clenched my Frost Rain Sword. “You guys continue leveling while I go down and take a look. I feel like something happened...”

Old K raised his dagger, “Xiao Yao, we’ll go with you. If you go, we all go, so at least you have some backup!”

“Okay!”

Running downhill, the 4 members of Zhan Long followed Fallen Wolf and entered the Ba Huang Forest.

After a short 2 minutes, I heard a distant clash of weapons in front of us!

Clang!

We passed through the bushes and saw one person carrying a sword while bringing a black bear with him. It was the level 50 swordsman Jian Feng Han covered in shiny armor while the black bear was a boss-tier pet that was a Bear King, rumored to have hatched from a pet egg. I heard from the forums that Jian Feng Han had gotten it less than 24 hours ago.

Bang...

The leaves rustled, and a shadow flashed by. The shadow belonged to a young female that carried a steel umbrella on her back. She had a beautiful body, white teeth, and a pair of large, beautiful eyes full of anger. She raised her dagger and brought it down towards Jian Feng Han’s back!

“Damn!”

Spinning around, Feng Han knocked the dagger aside and struck back!

The young female grabbed the huge umbrella from her back and with a bang, she knocked Feng Han’s sharp sword aside. The dagger flashed, leaving a scar on his face!

“318!”

Feng Han angrily said, “Don’t always be so unforgiving, Cang Tong, I don’t want to have a battle with [Hero Mound]!”

That’s right, the young Moon Elf fighting Feng Han was none other than the level 50 beautiful assassin Wan Er. Probably only assassins of her level and skill could fight with Jian Feng Han equally.

.....

Bang!

Feng Han grasped his sword with both hands and a rush of air surged from his feet. S-rank combo—[Exposed Sword]!

On the combo Leaderboard, there were 3 S-rank combos: my [Strength of a Thousand Men], Q-Sword’s [Thunder Universe], and Feng Han’s [Exposed Sword]. This combo consisted of “Stab+Stab+Slash+Slash+Grasp+Penetrate”. It attacked accurately and quickly, showing the mysterious 24 styles of arm boxing.

Then, something happened that shocked everyone. The moment that Feng Han’s combo activated, Wan Er quickly dashed to his side, and successfully dodged the two stabs! Taking advantage of the break, Wan Er attacked straight into Feng Han’s chest!

“223!”

A successful stun! Running skillfully around Jian Feng Han, the dagger began to glow as [Bleed] was cast!

“771!”

Realizing his S-rank combo had been interrupted, Feng Han’s face turned purple and his HP was already below 50%. With no options left, he slashed out with his Heavenly Plan Sword, using a [Combo]+Slash, to start attacking 5 times!

Clang!

Wan Er took out both her daggers and blocked it, but lost 300+ HP. Her body flew backwards showing the true difference in their strength.

Shaking her hand, she grabbed the steel umbrella once again and stared at Feng Han. She was going to use a combination of attack and defense!

.....

Rustle...

Stepping out on the maple leaves, I rushed towards Jian Feng Han and drawing the Frost Rain Sword, I yelled, "Jian Feng Han!"

Behind me, Fallen Wolf also yelled, "Be careful Ah Han! Xiao Yao Zi Zai is ambushing you!"

With a bang, I stepped onto a huge rock and leaped up. While in midair, my sword trembled slightly and after the 0.2 second cast time was complete, I brought my sword down with a heavy [Wind Blade]!

Feng Han quickly spun around and used his sword to block my attack!

Clang!

Sparks flew and the birds in the forest flew away sensing the danger. Duels between two strength-based players were very violent!

"What..."

As he let out a cry of surprise, Feng Han got knocked back a few steps. He lowered his sword and stared at me blankly, his eyes filled with disbelief. "I...I got knocked back, I got knocked back..."

He looked at the long sword in my hand and began to panic. "Xiao Yao Zi Zai... You... Your weapon is... the #1 ranked weapon, the Frost Rain Sword, is it not? You wouldn't have been able to knock me back otherwise!!"

I raised my sword and attacked. "It has nothing to do with you whether or not it's the Frost Rain Sword or not! Die!"

Killing intent surged through my body and in this game, the person I wanted to kill the most was Jian Feng Han!

Activating [Haste], Jian Feng Han knocked away one of my sword's attacks, but I bent down and kicked towards him!

Bang!

Feng Han lost his balance and rolled backwards for a dozen meters or so. Tired and exhausted from his fight with Wan Er, he was obviously weakened and had no strength to fight against me.

During this time, Fallen Wolf and his group arrived. They stood around Feng Han protectively and Fallen Wolf asked, "Guildmaster, are you alright? You...Why did you fight with Cang Tong? Isn't she the supposed second-in-command of [Hero's Mound]"

Feng Han climbed onto his feet and shook his head. "I...I don't even know. Cang Tong just suddenly attacked me..."

Seeing that I could attack no more, I sheathed my sword and walked up to Wan Er. Her face was red, full of sweat, and I saw two mountains rise up and down. The armor she was wearing was tailor made for her and a fire-red cloak fluttered behind her in the wind. She looked at me and asked, "What are you looking at?"

I curled my lips, "Wan Er. why did you attack Jian Feng Han?"

Wan Er lowered her head, looked like a young girl who had done something wrong, "Eh...I was walking through the forest and I saw him. I asked what he was doing and he said he was going to challenge someone. I asked him who it was and he replied "That idiot Xiao Yao Zi Zai" so I couldn't help myself and attacked him..."

I was speechless.

Song Han, Ran Min, and Fox came walking over and Song Han nodded and smiled, "Miss Wan Er, long time no see. I would have never thought that you were Cang Tong. Impressive, very impressive..."

Wan Er returned the smile, "You flatter me, you guys are impressive as well. You're level 30, and already fighting [Vanguard]..."

Ran Min looked at Wan Er and his eyes widened, "Eh, this Miss' body is quite something..."

Fox: "Idiot, if you're going to say that, then say it in team chat instead..."

Wan Er stood next to me silent while her face burned red.

.....

Of course, the most surprised person was Jian Feng Han. He took about 20 seconds to recover from his shock. As he walked out of the crowd, he looked at us and said, “Looks like today was a misunderstanding. Since the Zhan Long Studio is grinding for money in Frost Maple Heights, I’ll find a new place for my subordinates...”

I smiled, “Thanks, then I won’t refuse... With Jian Feng Han guildmaster’s word, we shouldn’t have any more problems in Frost Maple Heights.”

Feng Han gave a very unnatural smile, “You’re welcome...”

After saying that, he looked towards Wan Er and said, “Cang Tong, I have something that I really want to ask you...”

“Hmm, what’s that?”

Feng Han planted his sword into the ground, frowned, and then asked, “I don’t understand how you knew about the angle of my combo when I attacked you? I have practiced this combo countless times and it shouldn’t be easily dodged. How did you find out where I would attack from and at what angle? Also, your attacking speed and angle suppressed mine, why’s that?”

Wan Er smiled, “Let’s just say it’s foresight!”

Fallen Wolf said, “This...What’s that? Is it a skill, a custom one?”

On the side, a level 46 mage nudged Fallen Wolf’s shoulder and said, “Fallen Wolf, look at the custom skill leaderboard. There’s a SSS-rank skill. It’s number one. ”

“Ah?!”

Feng Han and Fallen Wolf cried out at the same time and quickly opened the skill Leaderboard and saw the #1 ranked skill—

【Mind Reading (SSS-rank)】: Omniscient, knows the thoughts of the target and finds the most suitable counter. Passive ability, Does not

require any items. Owner: ??

.....

“Mind Reading...”

Feng Han swallowed dryly and raised his head to look at Wan Er, muttering, “Owner: ??, Owner: Cang Tong?! This...This is a bit too strong isn’t it? Knowing the target’s thoughts and movements and being able to prepare for the attacks beforehand! How can you even counter this?!”

Wan Er raised her steel umbrella and said, “I never said that this was my skill!”

I looked towards her with a burning gaze.

Wan Er looked like a young girl who did something wrong. She smiled and lowered her head. She sent a message to me, “Okay, it’s really my skill or else why do you think Q-Sword gave the position of second-in-command to me? Let’s go to Ba Huang City, you still need to give me the Swift Dragon Ring...”

I said nothing, thinking that if she had mind reading in the game, this meant in reality, she really had mind reading. From now on I shouldn’t think any dirty thoughts in front of Wan Er or else things could get ugly.

Wan Er tilted her head and looked at me. Smiling she said, “It’s nothing really, you can think such things about Cheng Yue or Yue Qing Qian and I won’t say anything. But don’t think about anything bad about me, at least...at least not in front of me...”

I nodded, “Wan Er, let’s go to Ba Huang City!”

“Okay...”

.....

Chapter 122: Done it yet?

Back at Ba Huang City, I took the sparkling Swift Dragon Ring out from my storage.

[Swift Dragon Ring] (Purple Tier)

Agility: +37

Endurance: +34

Extra: Increases damage of Assassin class skills by 3%.

Extra: Increases maximum health by 180 points.

Required Level: 48

.....

With 37 Agility and 34 Endurance there were a total of 71 attribute points; on par with leveling up 7 times. One can definitely say that this ring was the epitome of Assassin equipments; it had a 3% damage increase and 180 additional health points. For the assassin players who have low health pools, this was an incredible item that can changes their overall ability.

Holding the Swift Dragon Ring, I turned around to find the beautiful Cang Tong standing behind me. Her cape fluttered in the wind as her beautiful face showed a hint of excitement. Standing there, she immediately drew the gaze of all the male players that had gathered at the north gate. It was as if the air around her drew them in like a vacuum.

“Miss, what... You don’t want it?” The Swift Dragon Ring glistened with a purple luster in my hand. I looked at Lin Wan Er with a tilt of my head, only to find her adorably cute face shocked by the ring’s stats.

“Ehh, I do...”

She held out her hand, grabbed the ring, and immediate equipped it. With a cute smile that showed her dimples, a pair of onyx-like eyes looked at me and asked, “Li Xiao Yao, what kind of boss did you defeat to get this great of a drop from? This and that Purple Tier weapon... the

Frost Rain Sword were probably dropped by that boss right?”

I nodded, “Yep. It was a level 55 Purple Tier Boss, Green Qilin. Maybe it was because I soloed the boss so the drops are all quite exquisite. The Frost Rain Sword is a lot stronger than the Heavenly Plan Sword, even though they are both purple tier equipment.”

Lin Wan Er took a look at the sword on my back and laughed, “That’s not the problem. The problem is that the Frost Rain Sword is not only a purple tier equipment but also a Superior grade equipment. Don’t you know how great that is? I don’t even know how many people on the server wish to be you, lucky bastard!”

I pulled out the Frost Rain Sword and held it in front of Lin Wan Er, “Wan Er, how does it look? Want to try it out?”

Her eyes shone with excitement as she reached out to grab it, only to stop and shake her head as she laughed, “It’s alright. My strength is not high enough to hold it. Compared to your sword, my daggers are easier for me to handle.”

Sheathing the sword, I asked, “Ok, so you got the Swift Dragon Ring now. What are you doing in the afternoon? Any plans?”

“I don’t have any plans as of now...” Taking a glance at the time, Lin Wan Er said. “A few days ago we were planning to go to the Xixi Wetlands to play, but we’ve been busy until now. In the afternoon, I’ll have to go help out with a couple of bosses. [Hero Mound] has been killing at least 10-20 bosses every day. We’ve almost cleared all of the surrounding maps of all the bosses and we still haven’t found a Guild Creation Tablet. Q-Sword is really worried so he had Dong Cheng and I form two teams to kill bosses and it’s so tiring...”

Leaning on the city wall, she looked up and sighed. Meanwhile, I was dazed from staring at her pearl white neck.

“Heehee...”

Lin Wan Er chuckled and looked at me, “Li Xiao Yao, this time Zhan Long really angered [Vanguard], you even got Jian Feng Han to personally

deal with you. From now on, Zhan Long is definitely not going to have an easy time in Ba Huang City. Do you have any plans? It'll be almost impossible to avoid both [Vanguard] and [Wrath of Heroes] while they hunt you down.

I contemplated for a moment and faced her with a smile, "Not a big deal. Even if I die it's only one level, I can always gain it back. Furthermore, Zhan Long is going to expand sooner or later so when Little Wolf, Old K, and the guys get to level 40 for their second job promotion, we'll start to recruit more people. More and more players will join Zhan Long, so most average level bosses will be easily handled.

"Alright."

Lin Wan Er blinked, "If Liu Ying keeps going after you in game, should we give him a warning in real life? Or else it would be tiring for him to keep going after you."

Failing to hold back my laughter, I asked curiously, "What kind of warning?"

"Well, it's like this..." Lin Wan Er looked down at the cobblestone floor as she drew circles with her leather boots, her snow white legs glistened with a charming glow. She continued, "Liu Ying's father is Feng Ling Group's director, but more than 60% of Feng Ling Group's stocks are in the hands of a dozen other stockholders. I can use my connections to get these stockholders to pull out, and bring pressure on Liu Ying's family. This way he will be forced to back off from bothering you both in real life and in-game."

I immediately shook my head, "It's ok, you don't have to do that. If people like Liu Ying didn't exist in the game, it would be far too boring. Plus, if [Wrath of Heroes] is hunting us down, [Vanguard] probably won't send their main force to deal with me. This way I will still have a chance to get back at them when the time comes."

A smile appeared on Lin Wan Er's face. Folding up her arms on her bosom, her 34D perked up as she asked, "Let's hear your plan then."

"Alright."

I stood before her and explained, “As you know, parties in Destiny are limited to 10 players and each party needs at least 5 members to obtain the maximum experience from killing mobs. We only have 4 people in Zhan Long right now, so we really need to find a 5th member, most preferably a healer. If we manage to get together a 5-man group, leveling won’t be a problem anymore. But I won’t stop there, we’ll aim for a 10-man group and once we have the funds, we’ll expand to 100 players. After that, if possible I would like to create an official guild. This way, once Zhan Long becomes a 1000 player guild, we’ll at least be able to face groups like [Soaring Dragon] and [Vanguard].”

Lin Wan Er looked at me with a shocked expression, “Goodness. I didn’t think you were that ambitious. To actually want to face [Vanguard] and [Soaring Dragon] directly?”

I chuckled at her comment, “Of course! I’m not going to let people keep bullying my friends. Plus, I already promised Yue Qian Qing I would invite her once the guild is set up. She can probably get her sister Yue Wei Liang to join as well. After that, both you and Dong Cheng can join us. This way we’ll have a guild filled with skilled players. Why wouldn’t I confront [Vanguard] at that point?”

Lin Wan Er smirked and said, “Fine...I’ll join when your guild reaches China’s top 10.”

“Sure!”

.....

‘Di!’

A message came someone I haven’t heard from in a while, Li Mu. He asked, “Xiao Yao, are you busy right now?”

I replied, “Not at all. I’m in the city right now. Need help?”

General Li Mu opened up voice chat and I heard a low chuckle as he spoke, “Well...there’s something I need your help with. Also, about the money that you loaned to us, we can pay them back now and maybe you can help us while you get the money back.”

“Oh, what happened?”

“Coughcough...” Awkwardly, General Li Mu said. “It’s only been a week since we registered [Valiant Bravery] as an official guild. We got our guild level to 3 and have about 900+ active members. In 24 hours, we got more than 100 Gold tier equipments and sold them for a good amount. Things were going well until today, we’re stuck on a big mission...”

“Oh?” I couldn’t help but laugh, “What kind of quest can hold up a guild leader of a 1000 man guild?”

General Li Mu laughed loudly, “Haha. Boy, you can stop teasing me now. You know full well what I can do. This quest is a hundred man mission in an ancient tomb but there is a huge door made from ancient meteorite blocking the entrance. Bai Qi’s 1621 Attack couldn’t even make it budge. The system notification said an even higher attack is needed to break the inscription, and you were the first person we thought of. Your base attack should have reached the 1700s right? Why don’t you come over and try it?”

I was speechless: “Alright then... Remember to pay me back, 3000G...”

“Not 3000G, it’s 30,000RMB. I said I was going to pay you back...”

“Alright then, where do you want to meet up?”

“I’ll come back to the city to get you. Let’s meet at the north gate.”

“OK!”

.....

Looking up, I found Lin Wan Er staring at me with her glistening eyes, “Left me standing here while you flirted with girls?”

I looked at her with a blank face and said. “You know how to read minds... You should already know who I was talking to.”

Lin Wan Er’s cheeks turned red as she blushed and softly said, “You’re friend...”

I rolled my eyes at her comment, “Geez, you really were eavesdropping...”

“Pshh. It wasn’t like I wanted to. It was by accident...”

“.....”

.....

At that moment, a short distance away, a white light flashed. General Li Mu appeared out of the light, holding a golden long sword and suited in gold and silver armor. Wow, I haven’t seen him in a week and he’s already gone from a broke hobo to wearing a full suit of exquisite equipment. Having a guild backing you is definitely something else.

“Oh? Cang Tong... the beautiful Cang Tong...” General Li Mu shockingly looked at Lin Wan Er and then looked at me. Not knowing what to say, he stood as still as a log for a few second before smiling at Lin Wan Er, “The beauty Cang Tong is actually friends with Xiao Yao...cough cough We at [Valiant Bravery] have a little something that we need Xiao Yao for, do you think you can lend him to us for an hour? Miss Cang Tong?”

Lin Wan Er snappily curled her lips: “Use him however you like. I’m leaving now. Li Xiao Yao, remember to go offline later so we can grab dinner together.”

“Got it. I’ll see you later...”

‘Whoosh’ A white light flashed and Fan Shu City’s prettiest girl vanished from Ba Huang City.

.....

Looking at Lin Wan Er’s afterimage, a sense of loss overcame me. Confused at the feelings I’m having, I held Frost Rain Sword as I grumbled: Am I becoming too sensitive?

General Li Mu patted my shoulder with a laugh, “You can stop gawking, she already left. Now let’s be completely honest here, have you done it yet?”

I glared at him, “I’ve done your sister!”

“Well I actually have a sister, she doesn’t look half bad. She is single, so if you’re interested I can give you her number.”

“Get out! No sister of yours could possibly be good looking!”

“Hey! You don’t have to start personally attacking me.”

.....

Exiting through the gate, I saw 4 level 40+ players standing in wait, each with the emblem of [Valiant Bravery] on their arm. This was the true sign of an established guild, and for now, the only established guild in Ba Huang City.

“Guild Master!” The 4 players nodded together out of respect.

Sword in hand, Li Mu laughed, “Let’s go see if Xiao Yao can do something to that stupid rock.”

Chapter 123: Princess's Tomb

I arrived at the southwest border of Ba Huang City half an hour later. Level 48 to 55 monsters spawned along this entire stretch of mountains. Usually players never come here, but a group of over 100 players had already gathered at the mouth of a mountain pass. Each player's shoulder held an emblem with a spear design. This was the emblem of the guild [Valiant Bravery]. Why did they choose such a dumb-looking guild symbol?

"We're here..."

General Li Mu walked towards the group, to find General Wang Jian and General Bai Qi coming forward with a few other players to welcome us. General Wang Jian held out his hand and said, "Brother Xiao Yao, long time no see!"

I looked at their levels. They were all Lv 47. I could not help but silently admire them, they were as resilient as cockroaches. The more levels they drop, the faster they climb back up. I nodded in response. "Ah, how is everyone? What obstacle could possibly have stopped [Valiant Bravery]?"

General Bai Qi raised his battle axe: "You'll understand when we get there!"

"Okay!"

.....

Upon entering the valley, I received a system message.

System Notification: You have entered the【Princess' Tomb】zone!

I paused and General Li Mu smiled and explained, "This is a guild quest. The Duke of Ba Huang City, gave it to me. It's an A-Tier quest that can be shared with up to 200 players, so the boss must be very powerful. Since you're here already, why don't you help us finish it before heading back?"

"Hmmm, why don't we find a way in first. Then I'll see what it's like."

I did not give a firm answer to their request for help and followed

General Wang Jian into the depths of the ravine by a long corridor. The members of [Valiant Bravery] around me stole glances in my direction. I could hear the younger male and female players whispering to each other —

“Did you see him? It’s the 7th Tier from Ba Huang City’s Leaderboard! Xiao Yao Zi Zai from the rumors, it’s him!” A young red-haired Undead whispered.

A pretty Wind Elf Mage walked beside him. Opening her small mouth, she said “Wow, he really is as handsome as the rumors say. Look at the sword on his back, it has a purple glow! And... and... there’s a large bump in his armor next to the sword... Uh, is that a stone tablet? Weird. Why would he carry a big stone tablet around?”

A middle aged Barbarian answered with a laugh, “I don’t know. Maybe it’s a quest? That doesn’t really matter though. Xiao Yao is legendary. I heard that our guild, [Valiant Bravery]’s Guild Creation Tablet was from him. He’s a very valuable friend to us!”

The Wind Elf narrowed her eyes, “Oh ho! So does he have dibs on dating the girls in our guild?”

The Undead beside her nervously replied, “San Mei, don’t even think about it. I heard Xiao Yao Zi Zai knows Cang Tong, Fan Shu City’s greatest beauty. I heard that they often have lunch together in real life. There’s also Yue Qing Qian in Ba Huang City, who’s second-in-command of [Prague]. She also seems to be rather fond of Xiao Yao Zi Zai. San Mei, let me ask you. Do you really think you can compete with the beautiful Cang Tong with your figure? Do you think you’re as cute as Yue Qing Qian?”

TL: San Mei and Er Ge are basically familiar sayings for brothers/sisters (whether they are related by blood or not)

The Wind Elf pouted, “Er Ge, you’re so vulgar. I really despise you....”

.....

Amidst the discussion, I reached down and lifted my cloak up so that

the cloak covered the Fire Beacon Helmet and appeared as if my face was hidden under a layer of bloody mist. Now everyone can only see the Frost Rain Sword that is on my back.

After a few minutes, we arrived at the end of the valley. Both sides of the path were lined with towering totems. At the end of the valley, embedded into the mountain, was an oversized stone plaque which acted as a set of large doors. "Princess Qiong Hua's Tomb, only those with great strength can enter," was written on the plaque in large print.

Li Mu raised his hand and pointed. "The quest needs us to break this stone tablet in order to enter the Princess's Tomb. Oh! I almost forgot. Let me share the quest with you."

"Sure!"

A few seconds later, I accepted the quest, [Princess' Tomb]. Indeed, it stated that one had to break the tablet in order to start the quest.

.....

Turning around, I asked General Bai Qi, "Bai Qi, what is your actual attacking power? Even with your strength, you were unable to break this door?"

General Bai Qi lifted his battle axe and his face reddened, "Ahem, let's not talk about it. Even after I was buffed with a Lv 5 [Encourage], my attack only reached 1700."

I frowned, "Why don't you give it another try?"

"Sure!"

Holding his battle axe, General Bai Qi moved in front of the stone tablet. With a deep roar, a fiery red aura envelops him as flames shroud his axe. Fiercely, he launched a [Flame Axe] attack!

"Bang!"

The axe struck the stone tablet as sparks flew everywhere. However, the stone tablet didn't budge, even though the ground shook a little.

Bai Qi widened his eyes, "Indeed, it is the same as before, not even

moving. This stone tablet is simply too hard, even my Gold Tier axe can't do anything to it..."

Li Mu said, "Xiao Yao, give it a try. Among all the friends of our guild, [Valiant Bravery], the only person who could possibly destroy this door would only be you..."

I smiled in response while I thought; now that I possess the Frost Rain Sword and coupled with [Turmoil Sword], my actual attack power should surpass 2000+. If I am unable to break apart this door with such attack power, then this mission would probably have to be put on hold for now.

"Keng..."

Raising my arm, I unsheathed my Frost Rain Sword. Everyone behind me was shocked. A female Assassin could not resist blurting out, "Wow, what a beautiful sword! That sword's purple...is it a Purple Tier?!"

A shocking fact was laid in front of their eyes. As of now, there were only 2 Purple Tier weapons. One of them was the Heavenly Plan Sword which Jian Feng Han possesses, whereas the other is the Frost Rain Sword which was in my hands. Thus, it is obvious that the sword in my hands is the one and only Frost Rain Sword. But the members of [Valiant Bravery] were unable to accept such a fact. After all, this kind of god-tier equipment wasn't likely to appear in the hands of a solo player.

.....

I faced the 6-meter tall stone tablet and took a deep breath. According to the basics of Force Application, striking at the bottom of the stone tablet was unlikely to break it. To break it, one should strike around the top of the tablet. But it was natural for General Bai Qi who was a simple-minded barbarian to be unable to comprehend such a simple logic.

TL: Force Application can be thought of as Physics if it helps

"Hu..."

General Li Mu clenched his fist and unconsciously held his breath.

Pah, my war-boots stepped against the stone floor as I dashed towards the stone tablet, leaving a cloud of dust behind me. When I was approximately 5 meters away from the stone tablet, I leapt up, jumping an entire 4 meters. As I activated my [Fierce Ice Blade], ice gathered around my Frost Rain Sword!

“Bang!”

The entire valley seemed to quiver for a moment as golden dust trickled from the stone tablet. Breathing heavily, I landed on the floor and looked up to see the condition of the stone tablet. Although I failed to break it apart, cracks have started to form on the stone tablet. This was a sign that the stone tablet was about to break apart.

Li Mu trembles with excitement as he shakes his fist, “Xiao Yao, give it another strike?”

“Sure!”

Taking a few steps back, I leapt up again. In midair, my cloak fluttered as streaks of wind gathered around my sword. After charging up for 0.2 seconds, I used [Wind Blade]!

“Bang!”

The tremors this time couldn't be compared to the ones before. Instantly, the 6-meter tall stone table actually broke apart, turning into pieces of hard rock that plummeted to the ground. The pitch-black entrance to Princess Qiong Hua's Tomb appeared in front of us!

“Hahaha, this is incredible, Xiao Yao Zi Zai!” General Bai Qi sent me a thumbs up, “Your attack power is at least 1900?”

The edges of my mouth arched upwards, “2000!”

“Oh? After a Lv 5 [Encourage], it reaches 2000? You are seriously overpowered!” Wang Jian smiled.

“Without any buffs...”

“You are definitely lying... I don't believe you...”

“ ... ”

.....

“Xiao Yao, join my party?” Li Mu asked.

“Sure.”

Di, I was invited to join the main party of the [Valiant Bravery]. In the party, there were the 4 members of the General Family, me, 2 Mages, and 3 Healers. Even the lowest leveled member of the party was Lv 45, this is incredible compared to what they had a few days before.

“Sha sha...”

The moment I walked into the Princess Tomb, my boots stepped onto the wet ground, which gave me an eerie feeling. Beside me, General Li Mu, who was also standing at the forefront of the group, frowned, “Smelly... and it is too dark in here!”

Lifting up my Frost Rain Sword, the glow coming from my Purple Tier sword lit up the path ahead. At the same time, ji ji sounds could be heard from the roof of the tunnel . A large group of bats swiftly flew towards us!

“Ah....”

Behind me, the two lady Healers, carrying their staffs, went pale and let out a shriek of fear!

“Damn...”

I whispered silently. Li Mu looked at me and we both came to an understanding without saying a word. We weren't frightened by the bats but rather, we had nearly died from the shrieks made by the 2 ladies.

.....

“There are monsters in front...” General Lian Po prepared his bow while looking out into the distance. Among the 9 main classes, the Archer-class players possess the most acute senses and their sensitivity towards danger surpasses those of any other class.

From the dark depths in the passageway came the sound of footsteps

and in a few seconds, a group of skeleton soldiers came rushing towards us, each of them was carrying a steel blade and a shield. The levels of the soldiers weren't low either!

【Princess' Guard】 (Elite-class Monsters)

Level: 55

Attack: 900-1100

Defense: 700

Health: 5500

Skills: **【Flame Blade】【Combo】【Chaotic Slash】**

Description: Princess' Guard, soldiers that swore loyalty to defend the Princess' Tomb to their deaths. In the thousands of years since Princess Qiong Hua's death, these soldiers have already been reduced to skeletons, but their fealty toward her still caused them to lift their sharp blades against enemies.

.....

"There are way too many!" A chill went down my spine, "There are at least 30+ Lv 55 Elite-class Monsters. We have to remain in our formations, otherwise we will be wiped out!"

While completing quests in the Dragon Tomb, I had killed plenty of Elite Monsters. Thus I am quite knowledgeable on the stats of Elite Monsters. Overall, their stats are much higher than those of normal monsters, thus we must advance forward slowly, otherwise our entire group could be wiped out.

"Hong..."

As flames appeared on Li Mu's blade, General Li Mu lowered his body posture and said, "Heavy armor classes, proceed forward to form a line of defense while long-ranged classes start attacking! Healers, pay attention and heal accordingly!"

"Keng keng keng..."

The group of players unsheathed their swords while General Bai Qi and General Wang Jian stood beside me. Everyone seemed to be holding their breath while waiting for the attack from the monsters!

.....

Right in front of me, a group of Princess' Guards roared and charged towards me. Lifting up their swords, [Flame Blade] after [Flame Blade] landed on our front line while damage numbers appeared–

“577!”

“791!”

“442!”

.....

General Wang Jian lifted his sword and activated **【Combo】**!

I immediately warned him, “Wang Jian, be careful, they still have other skills!”

“What...?”

Chapter 124: Flying Dragon's Revenge

“Ding!”

Right when Wang Jian swung his sword, the two Princess' Guards in front of him activated their skills. A series of golden hexagram stars appeared along their steel swords, Lv 6 [Combo]s!

“Pu pu pu...”

As they slashed at him furiously, damage numbers appeared consecutively above Wang Jian's shoulders—

“412!”

“447!”

“471!”

“396!”

.....

Just 8 strikes were enough to kill him!

“Damn it...” Wang Jian's eyes almost widened to big round circles. The speed at which the monsters launched their attacks surpassed his assumptions, leaving him with no time to drink his Health Potions at all.

Distance-wise, I was the closest to him. With the flick of my wrist, I hurriedly cast a Lv 5 [Heal] on him!

“+750!”

“Attack me!” I shout.

“What?” Wang Jian becomes stunned for a moment.

Quickly, he woke from his daze and stabbed my shoulder, causing 256 damage. This transferred away all of his aggro and the three Princess' Guards immediately rushed towards me with their steel blades.

.....

With another flick on my wrist, I activated a Lv 5 [Defense], increasing

my defense by 5%.Peng, a surge of air surged from my feet and I sent a whole series of frenzied attacks from my [Strength of a Thousand Men] towards the chest of one of the Princess' Guards, dealing a total of 2200+ damage. Then, I immediately followed up with my own [Combo]. With another two attacks from Baby Bobo, the Princess' Guard falls to the ground while screaming in agony.

Li Mu was shocked, "Damn it, just what kind of attack do these monsters have. To think that just two of them together would be enough to kill Wang Jian in a flash, Wang Jian's defense is above 800!"

Gripping my Frost Rain Sword, I shouted, "All of you, be careful. The rank which was given to this quest is slightly too low, the monsters in this map are similar to those of S-rank quests. The strength of the final boss would probably be much stronger than what you all previously expected."

"Okay!"

.....

Swiftly, we cleared away the Princess' Guard in the region and obtained several Black Iron Tier and Green Tier equipments which were, practically speaking, useless. Advancing forward, the passage in front was dark and damp. The Princess' Guards attacked in waves. Initially, there were around 30+ monsters in one wave. However, the number of monsters in each wave increased till there were roughly 100+ Princess' Guards in a single wave. Fortunately, the abilities of the players in Valiant Bravery were above average and the only casualties were 7-8 of the heavy armor players that were in the front-line and they were revived instantly, sparing them of the hassle to run all the way back to their body. The true way to ensure the team's safety is through having a large number of Healers to ensure that the health bars remain at a high level.

"Ka cha!"

Killing another Princess' Guard with my Frost Rain Sword, my experience bar jerked forward a little. I am already at Level 48 with 94% experience, just a little bit off from level 49. Soon, I would be able to

reach level 50. At level 50, my skills could get to Lv 6. With my Lv 6 [Wind Blade], [Fierce Ice Blade], [Combo] and other skills, my offensive capabilities would rise significantly. After all, the most important factor in a fight is the sudden burst of damage one can deal!

“Boss...” General Bai Qi suddenly lowered his voice and said, “The situation isn’t good!”

“What happened?” Li Mu frowned.

Bai Qi gritted his teeth, “The Assassins that we left in the maps nearby have detected large numbers of [Flying Dragon] guild members coming over. They are definitely up to no good. We suspect that they are intending to sabotage our quest.”

Li Mu was shocked, “[Flying Dragon]’s guild members... Are they trying to prevent us from obtaining the Princess’ Soul?”

“Yeah, it seems like that is the case...”

Carrying my Frost Rain Sword, I walked over, “What happened, Soaring Dragon is still trying to bully others?”

“Yeah, after the incident at Ferocious Demon Canyon, Soaring Dragon has been harboring hatred towards us of the General Family...” Li Mu sighed and continued, “The [Flying Dragon] guild has a total of 38,000 players under their name and have over 10,000 players in Ba Huang City. Although we have 1000 guild members in our [Valiant Bravery], in a head-on battle we are at a disadvantage in terms of numbers. Furthermore, the number of players that are actively online for long hours in our guild only numbers to 800 while the number of people who are able to fight against them is 500. We are at too much of a disadvantage.”

“Princess’ Soul, what is that?” I ask.

LI Mu was slightly embarrassed and laughed, “Actually... this quest is separated in two stages. The first stage is A-ranked, which is entering the Princess’ Tomb. As for the second stage of the quest, I hid it from the others. It is about killing the general who guards the Princess’ body and

retrieve the Princess' Soul to bring back to the Ba Huang City's owner. This stage is S-ranked..."

I reply, "So you lied to me so that I could be here as cannon fodder? Liar..."

Li Mu laughed and said, "It's not like that, I simply forgot to mention it to you... Now that things have gotten complicated, if [Flying Dragon] were to send in their full force to suppress us, this mission could be a gone case..."

After pondering over what he said, I smiled and replied, "What are you scared of? Call all of the [Valiant Bravery] members into the Princess's Tomb. The Flying Dragon may have the superiority in numbers but the passageway leading towards us is quite narrow, allowing only 10 people to stand shoulder to shoulder in it, thus we don't really have to fear them. Furthermore, although we may lack the numbers to fight a frontal battle, the average ability of the guild members of [Valiant Bravery] is quite high so we should send half of the players to kill the boss while the other half guard the entrance to the tomb. After killing the boss and retrieving the Princess' Soul, we'll retreat. Soaring Dragon is no fool, he wouldn't fight a battle once he knows that there are no benefits from it."

"Yeah, I guess this is our only option!"

Li Mu continued, "Wang Jian and Bai Qi, both of you stay here to lead a group of players to guard the entrance to the Tomb. Xiao Yao, Lian Po and I will enter to the heart of the Tomb and kill the boss, what do you all think?"

"Great, how many people do we have now?"

"There are 277 people that we can use now. The others are scattered around the surrounding maps and it would be hard to gather them here. Also, I wouldn't want them to die for nothing while making their way here. Thus, we can only depend on these 277 people!"

"Okay, this is enough. Bring all the Healers and Mages you need and go kill the boss!"

“OK!”

.....

Rushing forward with my Frost Rain Sword, what appeared before my eyes were stairs that led to a big hall. The hall was painted blood-red, making the atmosphere exceedingly eerie. The stairs were also floating in mid-air and above them were monsters that were carrying long spears, Lv 57 Elite Monsters – Princess’ Spearman. More monsters to kill!

Without a second to waste, I proceeded forward to the stairs. Li Mu, carrying his sword, laughed, “Tsk tsk, how interesting. It feels just like a competition. Xiao Yao, you shall be the tank while we will support you so that we can kill the boss as fast as possible. The boss this time would probably be a Purple Tier Boss between the levels of 57-60, are you confident in tanking his attacks?”

Looking at my own level, I laughed, “I was able to kill Bosses at that level when I was Lv 42. Now I’m at Lv 48, approaching 49, what do you think? Let me try to reach Lv 49 before killing the boss so that it would be less dangerous!”

“Okay, I’ll pair you up with 9 professional Healers!”

“Thanks!”

.....

Slashing my Frost Rain Sword furiously, I stood with Baby Bobo at the front-lines while Li Mu followed behind with a whole bunch of Mages and Archers who attacked fiercely from behind. In total, we brought 10 teams to a total of 100 players to fight the boss, which was probably more than enough to down the boss. As for the remaining 177 people, they were left under the command of Wang Jian. Whether or not they would be able to stall [Flying Dragon] would be dependent on his abilities.

Stepping on the stone stairs, I glanced downwards. The entire tomb seemed to be almost transparent and the intricate designs were breathtaking. In fact, we were able to see Wang Jian right at the tomb’s entrance setting up formations, placing a group of Knights, Monks,

Swordsmen and Berserkers right at the entrance, forming up 5 walls of defenses whereas all of the players in the back were mainly squishy damage-dealers and support Healers. As rays of light continuously shined on the players, the Healer's [Encourage] buff seemed to have been cast on every single person there.

"Looks like they are here!" Li Mu said coldly.

Standing at the edge of the floating stairs with my sword, I looked into the distance. Light came from the entrance of the tomb as [Pillars of Ice and Fire]s came one after another towards [Valiant Bravery] and exploded upon reaching them. The interval between each [Pillars of Ice and Fire] was too close, leaving no time for Healers to slip in a [Heal] between attacks. 3 Berserkers fell immediately under their offense, dropping a whole floor of potions and equipment.

"Damn it!" Li Mu's face went pale. "Soaring Dragon that damn bastard, he still dares to call himself the guild leader of one of the top ten guilds with that kind of character. Attacking us without even saying anything, I really don't understand just what did our [Valiant Bravery] do to offend him!"

While slashing at one of the Princess' Spearman, I asked, "Did you try to recruit people on the forums to join [Valiant Bravery]?"

"Yeah, but the effects weren't too impressive..." Li Mu said while fighting another Princess's Spearman. Troubled, he continued, "I am also unsure what I did wrong but the number of players that came to [Valiant Bravery] only numbers up to 3000+ right now. Compared to the tens of thousand people that the top ten guilds possess, we are quite lacking..."

Taking in a deep breath, I replied, "Then, there can only be one possibility. You neglected to establish a key figure that a guild should have. You must establish such a person... You see, [Legend] has the number 1 Mage, Fang Ge Que, [Hero Mound] has the number 1 Reflux Battle Style player, Q-Sword, [Vanguard] has the top player of Ba Huang City, Jian Feng Han whereas [Prague] has the twin Assassins, Yue Qing Qian and Yue Wei Liang. What do you guys at [Valiant Bravery] have?"

Li Mu spoke softly, “Do I count as one?”

Glancing at him, I laughed. Li Mu panickly said, “Laugh your ass off! Li Xiao Yao you bastard. I feel so angry right now... How about, you join our [Valiant Bravery]? I mean it, come and create a legend together with us brothers. I can even give you the position of the guild leader, as long as you don’t treat us badly. You, Xiao Yao Zi Zai, can be considered as a well-known figure as the number one sword-wielding Healer. Furthermore, in front of female players, your image has been established as Ba Huang City’s number one hottie. If you were to join [Valiant Bravery] then we would be able to conquer the entire female gaming population of Ba Huang City. Conquering the entire female gaming population would mean that we would also have conquered the entire male gaming population. Then, at that point, we wouldn’t be too far off from conquering the entire Destiny server...”

Carrying my Frost Rain Sword, I replied angrily, “Get lost, do you think I am some pretty boy to help you build your reputation? I am a person who depends on my strength, okay? I, Li Xiao Yao, for my whole life, have only depended on the sword in my hands to make my words count, not my face!”

“So, are you joining [Valiant Bravery] or not?”

“No, my studio is back now. How could I leave when we’re just starting out? If you force me to join [Valiant Bravery] once more, I will return back to town...”

“Haha, don’t be mad. Come, let’s go. I’ll let you have the last hit on the boss...”

“Sure!”

“Get lost, pretending to be angry to get more experience points!”

“.....”

.....

After 30 minutes and countless Princess’s Spearmen dead, Shua, with a ray of golden light falling upon me, I finally reached Lv 49. Now, I am

only a step away from reaching Lv 50!

From afar, Wang Jian's shouting could be heard, "Damn, boss, hurry up and start the boss fight. We are almost at our limit! [Flying Dragon]'s a bunch of mad dogs, their bites are painful! They have brought too many people here!"

I shouted back, "How many people did they bring?"

"At least 2000 people!" General Bai Qi roared furiously.

"Damn..."

.....

Looking towards Li Mu, I see him also looking at me with a heavy expression, "Should we start the boss?"

"Yes!"

Looking into the hall, there is a coffin placed right in the middle of the hall. The person lying in the coffin is Princess Qiong Hua, no doubt about that. To the side of the coffin, a warrior dressed in black armor was kneeling there. As we approached the coffin, he spoke softly, "Qiong Hua, you are the love of my life. I will revive you and make you the happiest woman in the entire world! We shall enjoy the scenery of the night sky together, count the number of ants together, look at the years go by together and rest in the ground together..."

Chapter 125: Tangled battle in the Tomb

“Ugh. Disgusting...” Li Mu frowned.

I looked over at the general which was an Undead Lv 58 Purple Tier Boss. Apparently, he had been dead for a long time and his life had ended full of regrets. Wanting to resurrect Qiong Hua who had been dead for many years, he disturbed her eternal rest, which was pretty wrong.

Tu Lin – Purple Tier Boss

Level 58

Attack: ???

Defense: ???

Health: ???

Abilities: ???

Introduction: Tu Lin was a famous general from an ancient empire. His life was constantly filled with endless battles, but one day, he disappeared without a trace. When people later spoke of his accomplishments, they believed that he had already entered the tomb of his beloved princess to guard it for a lifetime. However, the current Tu Lin had lost all reasoning. Because of that, he became an undead without a soul, and has even attempted to revive Princess Qiong Hua.

.....

“Bang!”

With the Frost Rain Sword in my hand, I slowly walked ahead. I was still outside the aggro range and already had the [Encourage] buff. From afar, I readied my sword, “Tu Lin, Princess Qiong Hua has been buried, why are you trying to break the laws of life and death? To let her relive all the suffering and pain again? Let it go! Let her rest peacefully! Do not disturb her slumber any longer! That is the best way to show her your love!”

“Who are you?!”

Tu Lin turned to look at me. In his hand was a long, shining, crimson

blade. What a scary face! It really was like the face of a skeleton. Inside his eye sockets, a strange soul fire burned and he responded emotionlessly, “You people will never understand my love for Qiong Hua. Since you dared to break into the love nest for me and Qiong Hua, I will let you taste endless suffering!”

Without any emotions, I replied, “A love nest 50 meters underground, aren’t you afraid of the moisture...”

Li Mu said, “He really isn’t afraid...”

A pretty Healer opened her mouth and said, “With Xiao Yao here, even the Guild Master trash talks...”

.....

Lifting the Frost Rain Sword, I lowered my voice: “Okay, let’s get ready to kill the boss. Everyone be careful! Healers remember to keep healing me. As long as I don’t die, we can kill this Lv 58 Purple Tier Boss!”

“Hucha...Hucha....”

I stepped into aggro range and rushed into the hall. Before I even got near him, I prepared to receive a beating. Raising my left arm, my right arm started to cast [Combo]. With a Ding sound, many golden hexagrams appeared on my sword. A Lv 5 [Combo] landed on the boss’ armored shoulder–

“511 ! ”

“489 ! ”

“507 ! ”

“514 ! ”

.....

Under the flurry of attacks, I continued by activating another skill. A rush of air surged around my feet and I instantly landed another series of blows on Tu Lin.

“312 ! ”

“379 ! ”

“411 ! ”

With a ram, I dealt another 371 damage. However Tu Lin’s body barely budged. Following the four strikes came the final move in my [Strength of a Thousand Men] combo – [Wind Blade].

Right before my [Wind Blade] was released, the Frost Rain Sword started to tremble. Surrounding the sword floated ancient runes and a ray of green light descended from the heavens and mixed in with my [Wind Blade].

“Klang!”

With a sharp sound, the sword inflicted a massive wound as it struck Tu Lin in the chest and shocked everyone—

“3448 ! ”

.....

“Damn!” General Li Mu’s jaw almost dropped to the ground, “3448 damage, this isn’t a joke right? Is that really a Lv 58 Purple Tier Boss? Even with a critical hit, it shouldn’t be that high. What’s going on, Xiao Yao!”

General Lian Po squinted, “Hey! I knew it! The sword in Xiao Yao’s hand is the number one Purple Tier weapon, Frost Rain Sword. That attack was not a normal attack, it was a Fatal Strike!”

“Gudong....”

Li Mu swallowed a mouthful of saliva. “You punk. Li Xiao Yao, you are someone that really makes people need to re-evaluate you every time they see you. Good thing we are friends. Ahem, we need to be friends for life...”

.....

At this time, the boss started to fight back. On the long sword, flames started to appear. The boss was activating an ability, [Flame Blade]!

“Klong!”

Under the Dawn Chestplate, I felt a wave of pain. Right away a huge damage number jumped out above my head. How terrifying—

“1047 ! ”

A quick [Heal] from me recovered quite a bit of health and at the same time I yelled, “Okay, all Healers, focus on healing me. I can’t be sure that I can tank all the boss’ attacks!”

Li Mu shouted, “Get a high level Monk to cast [Lay Down Your Blade] on the boss. That will lower it’s attack by 10%. That way it won’t be too painful. Damn, Xiao Yao could be killed by a critical hit. Purple Tier Bosses are such bullshit...”

“Be careful!” shouted General Lian Po after he launched 3 continuous attacks.

Being vigilant, I quickly stepped back but it was too late. Tu Lin raised his sword and walking the path of stairs, he thrust his weapon on the ground as he stamped his boots. “Bang!” a deafening sound thundered as a six-pointed star appeared beneath him. Countless thorns erupted from the earth covering an area of 50×50 meters, inflicting damage to everyone within it. I was the first to receive damage and three damage numbers emerged—

“678!”

“701!”

“666!”

.....

“Damn it!” I quickly retreated, chugging a health potion while casting [Heal] on myself, barely keeping up with the damages. Taking a quick look behind me, a terrifying sight greeted my vision. 14 dead bodies laid on the ground behind me. Many of the Mages, Healers and Archers were killed immediately, even the Lv 46 Monk was foolishly standing there with only 23% health.

“Immediately [Heal] Xiao Yao! Quickly!” Li Mu anxiously ordered,

“[Revive] the fallen Healers, this battle needs them. Xiao Yao, have you confirmed the spell’s area of effect?”

While brandishing my Frost Rain Sword against the Boss alone, I roared: “A radius of 25 meters!”

Li Mu yelled: “All ranged attackers, keep a distance of 25 meters from the Boss and remember to maintain a dispersed formation. Once the Healers resurrect, focus your healing spells on Xiao Yao. Don’t forget to buff him while Monks should use [Lay Down Your Sword] to weaken the boss’ attack, while decreasing his aggro value toward others to avoid an AOE attack! ”

I continued to struggle and looked into the distance: “Cough Uncle Lian Po, use your [Shattered Shot] on the Boss and stun him. That will lessen the pressure on me.....”

Lian Po was speechless then arched his bowstring: “He knows that [Shattered Shot] misses easily. Trying to embarrass me, this brat.....”

“Swoosh” An arrow flew by; it was a gorgeous MISS!

.....

However, the Mages and Archers that attacked helped tremendously. Tu Lin’s HP fell extremely fast compared to me doing it alone. In the short span of 7 minutes, the health of the Boss already fell to 30%. Several Healers chuckled: “Xiao Yao, when Guild Master Li Mu was tanking.....he was almost killed by a Lv 45 Gold Tier Boss....”

Li Mu’s face turns green: “Do not speak trash, respect the Guild Master!”

The Healer pouted and stuck out her tongue, opening a gap of 2 cm between her fingers: “Guild Master, you’re only this long!”

Wow..

My eyes almost popped out. The atmosphere in [Valiant Bravery] was really “good”, members would even ridicule their leaders. Who knows how ashamed Li Mu must feel.

I laughed and said: “Oh, that beauty already knows Li Mu’s size...”

Li Mu looked pale: “No..... It’s not like that.....”

The Healer also responded shyly: “Handsome Xiao Yao, I don’t really know leader’s size. I was speaking nonsense. What I really want to know more is your size; give me a chance.....”

My mouth twitched: “You’d rather not.....”

Li Mu stared at me: “Are you less than 1 cm.....”

“Shameless..”

“Ha ha ha...”

.....

While we were fighting the boss in the main hall of Princess’ Tomb, below us was a violent battle. Members of [Valiant Bravery] under Wang Jian’s leadership, slowly fell back as the opposing guild’s attacks were too violent. Dozens of Mages were using [Pillars of Ice and Fire]s and [Rock Spikes] while having their [Mana Shield] up to bulldoze forward. It was simply brutal.

Sword in hand, Wang Jian looked in the direction of the hall and bellowed: “Boss, Xiao Yao, have you killed the Boss yet? Don’t waste time. We can’t hold anymore, many members have already died a few times. A lot of the equipment has also dropped, everybody will be left naked if this goes on!”

Li Mu answered: “You can now start to withdraw; the Boss will be finished right away. After the Boss dies, I will bring the men fighting the Boss to group up with you!”

“Good!”

.....

30% !

20% !

10% !

As the Boss's health reached 10%, everyone got excited.

I took a glance at my mana, ah, I'll use Lv 5 abilities; there was no need save mana. Oh right, I almost forgot, I still have 1800+ of Green Qilin Grass in the warehouse but I was too busy to refine it. When I go back, I must completely refine them and decide if I want to sell them or leave them for Zhan Long members.

"Slash!"

[Wind Blade] cuts the Boss in the blood-red mist, taking away the final bit of the Boss's health.

"Ugh....."

Falling to his knees with his sword in his hands, Tu Lin stared at the coffin: "Oh, my dear princess Qiong Hua, I hope in my next life I can keep on protecting you. Not seeing your beautiful face open your eyes is the biggest regret of my life....."

"Crash....."

A bunch of equipment, gold coins and cards burst out onto the ground.

Meanwhile, a golden light showered upon me. Great, this Boss helped me reach Lv 50!

The golden words atop my head changed to "Ba Huang City's 4th Player". This was the highest rank I've ever been at, cool!

.....

Standing beside the items, I held out my hand out invitingly: "Hurry up and distribute the loot and let's go help Wang Jian"

"Ok!"

Li Mu walked over, picked up a jade green crystal from the ground, laughing: "Oh, we've found the Princess' Soul. With this, the guild task is completed. We'll be able to get a lot of exp this time!"

He looked at the equipments and said to me: "Xiao Yao, there is a Lv 47 Gold Tier bow, Lv 46 cloth boots and Lv 48 Gold Tier shield. Just pick

anything and we'll give it to you."

I shook my head while holding my sword: "No need. Let's go help Wang Jian!"

"Alright...."

Li Mu chortled, seized the equipment and trailed behind me down the hall: "Everyone, come with us. Let's murder the [Flying Dragon] and divide the spoils of war! Xiao Yao, I'll transfer the money to you....."

.....

"Ding!"

With a notice from my bank account, I received 40,000 RMB from General Li Mu. This was huge. Apparently the General Family wasn't poor anymore.

"40,000 RMB, why?" I asked.

"The extra is the payment for the mission....."

"Ok!"

I did not refuse it and lifting the long sword in my hand, I jumped over Wang Jian's body and activated [Wind Blade].

"1214!"

A Swordsman with only half his health died in just a second. It was immediately followed by a golden hexagram, my Lv 5 [Combo] struck on a Lv 45 Monk; in addition to the Priest's [Encourage], the second target instantaneously died like the first.

.....

"Fuck, where did that Swordsman come from?" someone from [Flying Dragon] cried.

In the crowd, the Lv 50 Mage Soaring Dragon elevated his staff, sneering coldly: "Dammit, it's Xiao Yao Zi Zai again. All Mages, assist me. We'll send him off to hell."

Chapter 126: Face Slap

” Poof ! ”

My Frost Rain Sword pierced an Assassin’s chest, inflicting an incredible damage of more than 1300. This was just a normal attack! At this stage in the game, 2000+ attack was more than the majority of the players could bear. Even a high level Monk with a defense of 1500 would crumble under a single blow from this Superior Lv 48 Purple Tier sword, which was currently the most powerful weapon in existence!

.....

“Bang bang bang

Unceasing rays of light appeared beneath our feet as [Pillars of Ice and Fire] penetrated our bodies. Health points rose and fell as Wang Jian, Bai Chu, and I stood in the frontline withstanding almost all of the attacks.

Behind us, Li Mu shouted, “All healers, focus on healing the three people in front. Magicians, use your spells to suppress our enemies within this limited space. The area is so narrow that even 10,000 people couldn’t take the advantage of surrounding us. We also have Ba Huang city’s best Swordsman Xiao Yao here with us, so why do we need to fear those guys from [Flying Dragon]?”

“Glurg...”

I spit a mouthful of blood; I didn’t know that I had taken the throne of the Ba Huang city’s best Swordsman. In fact, against Jian Feng Han and Yan Zhao Warrior, even using my full strength, I didn’t have more than a 50% chance of defeating them. I know how strong I am, and I’m not that strong!

“Shua, shua, shua

Healing numbers continuously appeared atop my head. The Frost Rain Sword in my hand never stopped moving, unleashing [Combo]s, [Fierce Ice Sword]s and [Strength of a Thousand Men]. All of my skills were used one after another, which made it hard for anyone to stop me.

.....

In less than 5 minutes, more than 40 members of [Flying Dragon] fell prey to my sword. Also, my 2203 HP and 1027 defense made it almost impossible for them to have killed me before healing got to me. Soaring Dragon, with his face red, raised his staff and cried furiously, “No! We can’t just attack blindly. All Mages come to me, heed my commands. Let us use our [Pillars of Ice and Fire] at the same time and not give a chance for the Healers to recover Xiao Yan health!”

I became more vigilant and unconsciously stepped backward. Immediately afterwards, [Pillars of Fire and Ice] sprung underneath me, causing the earth to tremble. The Musketeers in the distance also used their [Bombardment] skill.

“447!”

“428!”

“501!”

“448!”

.....

A series of damage numbers appeared, as if telling me who the true masters of long range attacks in <<Destiny>> were. The magic prowess of Mages was really frightening! I immediately cast [Heal] and drank a potion, replenishing my almost depleted health. I dragged my Frost Rain Sword to retreat. I can’t face their spells head on; otherwise, I might end up dying.

General Wang Jian waved his sword and a group of Berserkers, Swordsmen, and Knights behind him shouted: “Destroy their formation!”

Nearly 20 people rushed forward. Their weapons danced as they wreaked havoc: slaughtering numerous Archers and Mages. But Soaring Dragon was there as well, retaliating against the attacking players. In a mere 30 seconds, Wang Jian returned alone. [Flying Dragon] truly was an established guild with its coordinated users and Mages who were some of the most outstanding Mages in Ba Huang city, far better than those of

[Valiant Bravery] that had just been formed.

Li Mu saw the corpses on the ground, grieving, he tightened his fist: “Damn, what should we do?”

I sheathed my sword and moved toward Li Mu with Healers treating me and frowned: “This endless battle dwindles our numbers quickly; [Flying Dragon] has more than 2000 players, if this continues, we will all perish.”

Li Mu nodded and said: “How about this, I’ll have Wang Jian and 40 people make a final stand here and the rest can teleport back. Alas, since the founding of [Valiant Bravery], this is likely our worst defeat....”

I looked at the distant Soaring Dragon and I can’t help but smile: “No need, the real villain here is Soaring Dragon who must be mercilessly punished. Lend me 50 players; we’ll go past their front lines from the hall above and directly head towards the center, slaying him along with 100+ players. We’ll return to the city after that. That would be a slap on the face for him. What do you think, Li Mu?”

Li Mu revealed excitement in his eyes and smiled: “Okay, let’s do what you said. What kind of players do you want to bring?”

“Give me 10 Monks, 10 Knights, 10 Swordsmen and just anybody on the rest. I want those who have high vitality and are durable, not those vulnerable ones.”

“Ok, I will assemble them right away.”

.....

In less than one minute, a 40-man team gathered in front of me. All of them are wearing heavy armor and many had just revived a level lower. A Berserker, his face full of fury, asked me: “Xiao Yao, what do you want us to do?”

I answered briefly: “Attack [Flying Dragon], kill Soaring Dragon and Fierce Tiger, interested?”

“Haha, of course we are! How do we do that?”

“Come with me!”

I looked at the direction of the Tomb's entrance and said to Li Mu: “Here's what you should do, distract them and don't allow any more members of [Flying Dragon] to come near us. You have to act swiftly and sweep the battlefield since the 40-man team I will bring might collapse. We must leave quickly after killing Soaring Dragon and 100+ players.”

“Alright, be careful!” Li Mu said.

I nod and wave my hand to lead the group of 40 players towards the floating steps. I carefully choose where to step and go through a tunnel. After killing a few respawned monsters, we reach the edge of the floating stairs. The tomb entrance directly below us was about to get really bloody!

The narrow entrance only allowed 5-7 people to pass. With 40 players rushing down and relying on the Monks and Knights' armor to defend for 5-10 minutes, slaying the 100+ members of [Flying Dragon] stuck inside the cave was not impossible.

Standing on the edge of the stairs, a Monk holding a battle knife turned his head towards me and smiled: “Xiao Yao, will we jump? These 40 meter heights can end a man's life.”

I grinned: “I'm afraid too since we're not Wind Elves which can fly, and since we cannot fly, we must jump. Any height less than 100 meters won't kill a man; we won't even lose much health!”

“How should we do it?”

I stared below from the edge and said: “10 Monks and 10 Knights should jump together after 5 seconds and block the entrance, the 10 Swordsmen and I, along with the rest, will follow to kill Soaring Dragon . Remember, use [Combo] to break a Mage's [Mana Shield] and take the opportunity to unleash [Flame Blade] or [Ice Blade]; don't give them a chance to cast [Mana Shield] again.”

“Don't worry, we got it.”

“Go!”

I issued the order and 20 heavy armored troops jumped toward the entrance. Indeed, as expected of General Li Mu, his team was made out of people who weren't afraid of dying nor losing. They were only afraid of dying pitifully ...

After 5 seconds, I raised my Frost Rain Sword and descended. Baby Bobo flew with me, locking onto an aerial target, a Lv 47 Wind Elf Mage who was definitely a top player of the [Flying Dragon]. Aside from Soaring Dragon, they shouldn't have many Mages that high leveled.

“Whish!”

Even going against the wind, Baby Bobo's speed was still fast. Bobo attacked the Wind Elf Mage's [Mana Shield] using [Combo]+[Sting] but it still didn't break. The Mage's power seemed high and the toughness of the [Mana Shield] was admirable!

Following a sharp cry, a golden hexagram appears on my Frost Rain Sword. Slashing through the air, I struck the Wind Elf four times in a row causing his [Mana Shield] to break!

“Miss!”

“Miss!”

“741!”

“827!”

The speed of my strikes were very quick and the Wind Elf Magician fell down and died. Right after I landed and hurriedly executed [Strength of a Thousand Men] and a Lv 46 Berserker was blown back with my [Wind Blade] almost tearing him in half!

Like lightning, Baby Bobo charged at the crowd and specifically attacking the Archers. Archers do not have [Mana Shield], so even after two promotions, an Archer is still vulnerable and is quite easy to kill with a pet.

Behind me, a Swordsman and a Berserker landed and growled at the [Flying Dragon]'s crowd. They threw themselves into the commotion,

using [Combo] to constantly break [Mana Shield]s and let loose a series of [Flame Blade] and [Fire Axe] to massacre their foes.

.....

“This is bad. They attacked from behind!” Soaring Dragon is shocked.

Fierce Tiger raised his axe: “Bu*****t, I’ll lead people to butcher them. Boss resist their attack while I let them taste the full strength of our brothers and break their blockade within 10 minutes!”

Soaring Dragon nodded and continued to swing his staff.

About 50 yards away, General Li Mu pointed his sword at the crowd and brought 120+ members of [Valiant Bravery] to an all-out counter-attack. The momentum was in favor of [Valiant Bravery] as the armored players quickly clashed the opposing Mages, quickly hacking away at their [Mana Shield]s. The tunnel was filled with bright lights from the players’ skills and attacks.

.....

“KaCha!”

The Frost Rain Sword sliced open a Mage’s neck dealing 1300+ damage and at the same time, knocking the staff out of the Mage’s hand. The staff had not yet reached the ground when I calculated the cost of the weapon, a Lv 42 Silver Tier staff. Not bad, it’ll go for a few hundred RMB or a week’s worth of lunch money.

I continued my killing spree and slew a few other Swordsmen whose strength was not enough to stand against me. With me, the 20 [Valiant Bravery] members cut into the crowd easily!

“Die!”

The ground shook as the axe of the Vice-Commander of [Flying Dragon], Fierce Tiger, skimmed a Swordsman’s neck inflicting 778 points of damage. The [Fire Axe] instantly killed him, Fierce Tiger’s attacks were really strong!

Not far away, Li Mu’s eyes turned round: “Zi Zai, Fierce Tiger!”

.....

I understood and charged directly toward Fierce Tiger. I quickly healed myself since my health points were somewhat low. Of the 20 heavy armored troops I brought, 7 have already died. We killed many quickly but we were also quickly killed.

“Xiao Yao, prepare to die!”

Fierce Tiger saw me and his eyes reddened. His axe came swinging over with a [Penetration]! At the same time, I heard a Killer Bee’s buzzing: a double threat!

Chapter 127: Creation of Vanguard

For now, I ignored his pet and focused on killing Fierce Tiger because a pet will naturally disappear if its owner died. Plus, even if his Killer Bee had 100% Excellency, its attack power wouldn't be enough to break my defense.

“Klang!”

[Penetration] landed on my shoulder and a damage number appeared.

“442!”

“442!”

Fierce Tiger was shocked, “Mother F***er, what ridiculously high defense!”

Taking advantage of the opportunity, I swung my body forward as the Frost Rain Sword glowed with the golden hexagrams of [Combo]. If I landed all four hits of my [Combo], then Fierce Tiger's 1800 health would definitely disappear.

Even under pressure, Fierce Tiger remained firm in his tactics. He swung his axe as he aimed a punch at my shoulder. He hoped it would break my balance to increase the chance of my [Combo] missing.

However, even before his attack landed, I kicked Fierce Tiger in the shin with my Silver Locked Boots. With a “Pa” sound, I broke his bone. Glowing with a golden hexagram, I brought the Frost Rain Sword down on my enemy's chest and a string of damage numbers appeared:

“557!”

“512!”

“497!”

“543!”

....

An instant kill in four attacks!

Falling to his knees with a howl, Fierce Tiger dropped a wrist guard which I then picked up. I couldn't be helping [Valiant Bravery] for free! How else was I supposed to face my newly established Zhan Long Studio!

With Fierce Tiger dead, the other 20+ [Flying Dragon] players were stunned and lost their will to fight: "F***! Brotha Fierce Tiger was insta-killed? What in the... Who is this Xiao Yao Zi Zai and why is he so freaking strong? Not even Jian Feng Han could kill Fierce Tiger with one [Combo]!"

I didn't have much to say to these guys, so I slashed my way through the group.

In just 5 minutes, [Flying Dragon]'s 100+ members started to break formation. 60+ had already died and the rest of them were fighting for themselves.

Soaring Dragon stood atop a large rock and loudly commanded, "Our brothers outside have begun their charge. Everyone surround me in a defensive formation. We, [Flying Dragon], must not lose to trash like [Valiant Bravery]."

"Pa!"

An arrow broke through his [Mana Shield] and stunned Soaring Dragon. With a bow in hand, General Lian Po coldly retorted, "Bullshit. If [Valiant Bravery] is a bunch of trash, then you, [Flying Dragon], are a bunch of stupid pigs! Wang Jian, Li Mu, get rid of him!"

"Shasha..."

Holding his sword, Wang Jian rushed forward and leapt from a teammate's shield. As he unleashed his skills onto Soaring Dragon's [Mana Shield], Li Mu killed a Berserker with [Absolute Authority] and struck at Soaring Dragon's [Mana Shield] with [Flame Blade].

"PAA..."

Soaring Dragon's [Mana Shield] instantly broke before he could kill the two armored players. Attempting to flee, he leapt off the rock. Sadly, I was waiting for him.

“Shaaaaa...”

Slicing with a rush of wind, the Frost Rain Sword pierced through Soaring Dragon's cloth armor. Grabbing the blade, I forcefully pulled the Frost Rain Sword through Soaring Dragon's body as blood splattered in the air. A huge damage number popped up as [Fierce Ice Blade] instantly killed a shield-less Soaring Dragon.

“1429!”

Soaring Dragon fell to the ground with a ‘plop’. He didn't drop any equipment but a huge pile of potions fell to the ground. They all seemed to be high level potions too.

Atop the rock, General Li Mu stood with sword in his hand, “Wow, we let Xiao Yao steal a kill again...”

Wang Jian laughed, “No problem, Xiao Yao used a Pardon Card so he's not going to be red-named!”

Looking around, I complained, “Stop taking your sweet time and chatting. Quickly sweep the battlefield for drops and use a return scroll to retreat. The Monks and Knights at the entrance are almost all dead...”

“Sure!”

Sweeping the field in 30 seconds and leaving a few Monks and Healers to cover our backs, the other 100+ players used City Scrolls to go back to the city. This fight was a huge victory for the General Family. Even with the odds against us, we still finished the task, putting [Flying Dragon]'s Guild Master and second-in-command in their graves.

On one hand, [Flying Dragon] really underestimated their foes by thinking that they could defeat the few hundred [Valiant Bravery] members with greater numbers. On the other hand, we knew the structure of the cave and therefore were able to set up an ambush. Otherwise, if [Flying Dragon] kept streaming in players, we would have suffered a terrible loss.

....

“Shua!”

Appearing at the transporter in Ba Huang City’s north square, I cheerfully walked out with Frost Rain Sword on my back. I was finally Lv 50 and Ba Huang City’s 4th ranked player! I’m not a level-grind lunatic but I can at least rest for two days now that I reached this level. Levels weren’t everything in <<Destiny>> since there were the factors of player skills and mechanics. In other words, Destiny was another world where nothing was impossible. Even outside the game’s rules, there are still so many mysteries for players to explore.

I requested to join Song Han’s party—

Old K: “Haha, Boss is back. Saw your level jump 2 levels. What in the world were you doing?”

I smiled: “I killed a Lv 58 Purple Tier Boss, so I got quite a bit of EXP.”

Song Han yelled in surprise, “Brother Xiao Yao is too OP!”

I said: “Oh right, Fox! I have 14 pieces of equipment here that I just picked up from PKing. Most of them are Silver and Green Tier equipment for level 35-45. Take a look at them later and keep anything we can use. Sell the rest for the studio’s funds.”

Fox nodded, “Okay, I got it.”

I suddenly remembered, “Oh right, Li Mu sent 40,000 RMB to my bank account. Holy ****! They’re filthy rich after creating [Valiant Bravery]. I’ll transfer 30,000 RMB to you, Fox, for the studio’s operating funds. We’re going to need money down the road, especially if we recruit new people or enter a competition or something.”

Fox smiled from ear to ear upon hearing these words, “That’s great! That 30,000 RMB will be really useful. Right now there are hundreds of things we need in Zhan Long, we don’t even have a water dispenser at the studio...”

Me: “...”

...

After the funds were transferred, I left the party!

Walking over to the warehouse manager, I took out stacks of Green Qilin Grass and started refining them into Green Qilin Pills.

“Ding!”

System Notification: You have successfully created [Green Qilin Pill] x 2, Alchemy proficiency has risen by 3. Due to being the first to create a Green Qilin Pill, you received +2 Charm!

The long awaited Charm increase! It even created two pills at once! I really profited this time...

One notification after another appeared as stacks of Green Qilin Grass were refined into Green Qilin Pills. After almost 20 minutes of refining, I used up all the materials in my bag which left me with 1245 Green Qilin Pills in my bag. Green Qilin Pills instantly recovered 700 Mana. A Rank 6 Pill! This was arguably the best mana restoration of this level. The only problem was that the materials were too hard to get. Green Qilin Valley and Green Qilin Abyss were places that even I have trouble with, not to mention other alchemy based and non-damaged players. However, there is no doubt that large guilds like [Vanguard] and [Prague] were going to send people to look for Green Qilin Grass. It was just a matter of time.

Checking my friends list, Yue Qing Qian's name was lit up, so I took a screenshot of the Green Qilin Pills and sent it over, “Qing Qian, does [Prague] want to buy these pills?”

A few seconds later, Yue Qing Qian opened up Communicator and sweetly spoke, “Big brother Xiao Yao, you really are the first person to craft Green Qilin Pills. That's awesome! Can you tell me where I can get Green Qilin Grass?”

I laughed at her question, “Is that what Peerless Yan Zhao told you to ask?”

Feeling embarrassed, Yue Qing Qian explained, “Yeah... Uncle has been trying to look for Rank 6 herbs but he hasn't been able to find any. It's almost like there aren't any Green Qilin Grass in the areas around Ba

Huang City. Anyhow, if it's inconvenient to tell me, then you don't have to..."

Me: "It's ok really. I found Green Qilin Grass in Green Qilin Valley's Green Qilin Abyss. It's very rare and very hard to find. Speaking of Green Qilin Pills, do you guys want some?"

"Yeah, we definitely want some. The last few days, we've been going after high level bosses and we really need these Rank 6 pills..."

"Alright then, how much for one?"

"2G for one? How's that? We want as many you have. This is the price that Uncle is offering you."

I pondered for a second. Right now the gold to RMB exchange rate was 1:9, eighteen RMB for one pill was a pretty good deal. Even pickled fish were selling for 25 RMB a bowl. After pondering for a while, I answered, "Ok, I'll sell you 1000 pills and I'll keep the rest. Rank 6 restoratives are a bit hard to find."

Yue Qing Qian nodded, "Alright, then it's 2000G for 1000 Green Qilin Pills. Wait for me at the north square, I'll meet you there in three minutes with the gold."

"Great!"

....

After a few minutes, a pretty, loli Assassin arrived wearing a white cape. She had a delicate figure that lacked the temperament and seductive air that Lin Wan Er had. It was a different kind of beauty.

"Wow..."

Yue Qing Qian looked up at my level and laughed, "Big Brother Xiao Yao, you are leveling so quickly. You're almost within the top 3! You're so fast"

I brushed her compliment aside, "Aren't you also Lv 50? What's so good about it anyways...Come, let's trade."

"Okay."

Opening the trading menu, I gave her 1000 Green Qilin Pills in exchange for 2000G. Immediately afterwards, I threw 2000G into the auction house, selling at a one to eight rate for 16000RMB. I better sell as much as I can while the exchange rate was still high.

....

Storing away the Green Qilin Pills, Yue Qing Qian looked at me and asked cheerfully, “Big Brother Xiao Yao, you’re already really high level now, so when are you going to make your guild? I’m getting uneasy waiting for you...”

Curling my lips, I spoke dejectedly, “Ahem, registering a guild costs 10,000G and I don’t have that much right now. Furthermore, I still don’t have a Guild Creation Tablet. Wait...[Prague] hasn’t registered their guild either...”

“Oh, that’s true...”

....

Right at that moment, a bell sounded in the air.

“Ding!”

System Notification: Attention, player “Jian Feng Han” has successfully used a Guild Creation Tablet to create a guild. Players “Simple” and “Fallen Wolf” are set as second-in-commands. Guild name – [Vanguard]! Due to being the second player to have created a guild, he has received award of 1 level and 5 charm!

Chapter 128: Qi Faction

“Damn, Jian Feng Han established a guild now...”

Standing in the middle of Ba Huang City, I clenched my fists and stood there silently.

On the side, Yue Qing Qian blinked with her large eyes, raised her head and smiled at me, “Xiao Yao, Jian Feng Han has finally established a guild now. For now, [Vanguard] will probably portray themselves as the #1 guild in Ba Huang City to get the other guilds to submit to them. You are a thorn in Jian Feng Han’s eyes, have you thought of what you’re going to do?”

I tightly grasped my sword handle and quietly said, “I’ll move accordingly. If Feng Han uses his guild to try to push me into a corner, then I can only fight to the death. This game is an important part of my life and I, Li Xiao Yao, will never give in!”

Yue Qing Qian smiled and nodded, “Mm, I like that kind of attitude of yours. Don’t worry, if Jian Feng Han really makes a move, then I’ll immediately leave [Prague] to protect you...”

I looked at her and couldn’t help but smile, “Normally, it should be me protecting you, but why is it that now you are the one protecting me?”

“Isn’t it the same...”

“Okay...”

.....

After chatting for a while, I parted ways with Yue Qing Qian. Not too long later, Fox returned to the city to clear all the equipment in my bag. We estimated that it would sell for a few hundred gold coins, which was equivalent to a few thousand Yuan. In the game, you could earn quite a handful if you were able to get the loot in a large guild battle.

Later, at 7:30 that night, di, I received a message from the beautiful m’lady Lin Wan Er, “Li Xiao Yao...”

“Hm?” I opened the chat window, “Wan Er, have you finished leveling? I’ll go down right now and wait for you and Cheng Yue...”

“No need, there’s something up today, so we won’t be eating at school....”

“Oh? What’s up?” I asked, astounded.

Wan Er faintly smiled, “It’s nothing much, but my dad decided on a whim to go out and eat dinner together today and he told me to bring you with us. It’s at First Heaven Restaurant. We’ll leave in 10 minutes, and we’re not bringing Cheng Yue today~”

“Hm, First Heaven Restaurant, that’s the most extravagant restaurant in the West Lake area right?”

“Yeah, he emphasized that...”

“It’s fine, I haven’t been there before anyways...”

“Okay, come down quickly and we’ll head there.”

“Okay!”

.....

I left the game and took a deep breath. Sitting up from the bed, I fixed my lapel. I stood in front of the mirror and saw an upright, young man, wearing an inferior brand of clothes and going to First Heaven Restaurant to eat...

“Li Brat?!”

Glasses called from behind me, “I don’t usually see you looking in the mirror; what are you up to this time? Looking at your usual sloppy self, you don’t look in the mirror even when you go to dinner with Lin Wan Er. What’s the occasion today?”

I smiled, “It’s nothing, what’s your level right now?”

“Level 46, what about you?”

“Level 50....”

“Lies! Shoo!”

“ ... ”

Who cares about him, time to go!

A cooling breeze blew in the schoolyard and below the girl's dorm, Wan Er appeared with a brown woman's suit on top and a small skirt. Her snow-white long legs were as charming as always and she smiled, "Let's go!"

I received the car keys from her and before long an Audi TT rolled out of the school. Within 20 minutes, we arrived at the First Heaven Restaurant in the West Lake area. This was the most famous restaurant at the edge of this scenic area, and I heard that you needed to spend at least 5000 for one meal. Incomparable luxury.

I stopped the car and walked shoulder to shoulder with Lin Wan Er on a small path filled with small red lanterns. There weren't a lot of people eating here since in reality there weren't many people who could afford to spend this much money on food.

A sweet smelling fragrance tickled my nose. This was Wan Er's unique scent. I stole a glance at her, and she was indeed very beautiful with her bright eyes and white teeth. Today, her clothes made her look exceptionally refined, and it added a kind of mature disposition to the usual pure image she exuded. Wan Er had been exposed to the society at a very young age. By the tender age of 16, she had already released her Heart of Time Album, which was a hit in the southern regions. The kind of grace that radiated from her was something you could not find in other ladies, including Dong Cheng Yue.

"Li Xiao Yao, I heard that you got caught up in a group fight today?" Wan Er suddenly spun around and looked at me.

I immediately looked away, afraid she might notice that I was sneaking peeks at her. Wan Er's mouth rose slightly as she tried not to smile. She could read minds, so how would she not know that I was looking at her? So stupid of me...

"Cough..." I scratched my nose and said, "Today I helped the General Family finish a mission, but who would have thought we would be

surrounded by [Flying Dragons] guild. So left without a choice, we could only fight back. Luckily, we had high-class players who allowed us to win despite having a numerical disadvantage...”

Wan Er pursed her red lips and smiled: “Of course, any battle with Xiao Yao Zi Zai will become an instant hot topic on the <<Destiny>> forums. You have a lot of fans right now, especially those naive 15-17 year old girls...They say you’re so handsome, but you...”

She tilted her head and looked at me, smiling, “I can’t see any part of you that’s handsome though?”

I felt embarrassed, “Those are just passing words, nothing important...”

.....

We arrived, and immediately a waitress came and welcomed us, “Excuse me, but are you two Miss Lin Wan Er and Mr. Li Xiao Yao?”

“That’s right,” Wan Er nodded politely.

“Mr. Lin is already waiting, please come this way...”

“Okay, thank you!”

.....

The First Heaven Restaurant was a restaurant that took on the concept of a flower garden. After passing through a flower garden, the main hall was right in front of us. The waitress smiled, “This is the room that you two will be in...”

Opening the door, a 50 years or so old, man was sitting across a huge round table; it was Lin Tian Nan. Full of vigor with unreadable eyes, this was the chairman of the Tian Xin Corporation, an important person. He was also Wan Er’s father and my employer.

“Wan Er, you’re here!”

Lin Tian Nan stood up and pulled out a chair. With a smile, he said, “Come and sit down. I have already ordered some food; we’ll be able to eat soon. Judging by your state, you must have been immersed in Destiny all day? Are you hungry yet?”

Wan Er placed her purse next to her father and sat down while sticking her tongue out, laughing like a child, “Actually I didn’t really spend the whole day on Destiny, just most of the day. Speaking of which, what dishes did you order Dad, is there anything I like?”

Lin Tian Nan couldn’t help but laugh, “Don’t worry, they’re all your favorite dishes....”

“Okay, okay...”

.....

I stood off to the side with both hands behind my back. From the start, Lin Tian Nan didn’t spare a single glance at me. I had to abide by the responsibilities of a bodyguard. While they ate their meals, I could only watch!

With another glance, I saw that there were two more youngsters dressed in black suits opposite of me who were standing with the same amount of discipline that I showed. There was no doubt that these were Lin Tian Nan’s bodyguards. There was no way an important figure like Lin Tian Nan would head out without a bodyguard. Based on their presence, these two youngsters were about to break through the Refined body level and into the realm of the Lian Qi level.

“Li Xiao Yao!”

After a few minutes of Lin Tian Nan’s spoiling his treasured daughter, he finally spared me a glance and said, “You are also playing Destiny right? How strong are you? You aren’t a burden to Wan Er, are you?”

With a low voice, “I am a Lv 50 Swordsman, Mr. Lin!”

Wan Er bent over giggling with a smile, “Father, how can you two talk so seriously like this? Can you please not look so sullen? This isn’t fun at all....”

Lin Tian Nan gave a tiny smile, “Okay. Li Xiao Yao, come over and sit down too. Aside from calling you both out, I also invited a grand master to come and eat together with us today.”

“Oh, who?” Wan Er asked curiously.

“Your uncle Huang.”

“Uncle Huang?” Wan Er’s eyes opened in surprise, “I think I was only 12 the last time I saw him. Where did he go for so many years?”

Lin Tian Nan laughed, “He is carefree like a cloud and flies about the world like a crane. Only the heavens know where he traveled to. This time, he said that he misses his dear niece, and that’s why he came to visit. Otherwise, do you think that I’ll find him?”

I listened with confusion, and sat down in silence.

Wan Er seemed to have seen my doubts, giving a laugh to explain, “Uncle Huang is my father’s close friend for many years. He is called Huang Ning. I got to know him when I was very young, and he is a pretty nice person. However, it has been a long time since I last saw him.”

I nodded my head, “Oh...”

.....

At that moment, the doors suddenly opened with a “squeak” automatically despite having no wind blowing on them. A middle aged man holding a paper fan and wearing a black traditional Chinese jacket entered the room swiftly. Without moving his hands, the two doors once again closed shut.

“Uh...” The two bodyguards look dumbfounded, as if they had seen a ghost.

My eyebrows furrowed as I felt the airflow quicken, indeed, this person was really a master, a Lian Qi Master!

“Uncle Huang!” Wan Er stood up politely

The person that came gave a big laugh, “Oh, how seven years have come and gone! Wan Er has already grown from that little girl into such a beautiful woman! Old friend Lin, ah! What kind of good karma have you accumulated in your previous life to be blessed with such a beautiful daughter!”

Lin Tian Nan stood up laughing, “Oh stop poking fun at me, come here, sit!”

Huang Ning looked at me again and a glint of caution flirted across his eyes: “This brat...”

I stood up and nodded: “Hello, I’m the bodyguard of Lin Wan Er, my name is Li Xiao Yao!”

“Good, good, good!” Huang Ning said three goods before wincing his eyes to look at me; “Your Qi is hidden yet your Qi Paths are strong and powerful. Your strength isn’t bad...”

The edge of my mouth curved upwards, he’s here to test me? I smiled: “It’s nothing, I just exercise a lot.”

“Mm, come sit...”

.....

The restaurant started bringing up the dishes and Lin Tian Nan stood up with a bottle of good wine to personally fill our cups, saying: “It’s rare for old friends to meet, come, let’s drink!”

I didn’t move.

“Li Xiao Yan, why aren’t you drinking?” Lin Tian Nan stared at me.

I shook my head, “The wine is at 57 degrees and will affect my decision making. For Lin Wan Er’s safety, I cannot drink it!”

“It’s alright, today’s a safe day!”

“Uhh... Alright then...”

Without an excuse, I finished the cup of wine in front of me.

.....

After I drank, Huang Ning stared at me: “Li Xiao Yao, your Qi power is very peaceful, unlike others. Could I ask you who’s your teacher?”

I paused while Lin Wan Er besides me nodded, as if urging me to expose my secrets...

I furrowed my brows and replied: “Wu Dang Hou San.”

TL: Wu Tang is a huge martial arts temple in China, rivaling Shaolin
“Oh?”

Huang Ning smiled: “So its Wu Dang. To be training in this new world is quite rare but Wu Dang is split into a Qi faction and Sword faction, which one are you in?”

I paused again: “Qi faction...”

“Then you know Ling Cheng?”

“No, I DON’T know him!”

“Ohh....”

.....

Ling Cheng, that old geezer. I don’t freaking know him at all!

I curled my fists and a scene floated into my mind –

“Brat, how much do you still remember from what I just taught you?”

“I remember a majority of it, teacher!”

“Good, how much do you remember now?”

“I forgot a majority of it!”

“Pretty good, how about now, how much do you remember?”

“I forgot all of it teacher!”

“Great! Great! I taught you the wrong thing so I’ll reteach it right now!”

“F***!”

TL: Forgetting a technique was a scene in Jin Yong’s book and the purpose of the technique was so that the student would forget the technique but retain the meaning behind the technique...

Chapter 129: Imprint

Adult Content!

“Da...”

Placing the wine cup back onto the table, Huang Ning stared at me and smiled, “Li Xiao Yao, Lin Tian Nan is a good friend of mine for many years now. I understand him very well. To this old guy, Wan Er is the pearl of his life: his everything. If someone were to bully Wan Er, he would put his own life on the line to get even with that person. Seeing that he has chosen you to be Wan Er’s bodyguard, it seems he has made a good decision...”

Looking at Huang Ning, I understood that he had more to say and remained silent.

On the other side, Lin Tian Nian gripped his chopsticks and smiled, “Wan Er is still young, I do not wish for her to start dating so soon. It’s not because I’m old-fashioned but rather I don’t wish for her to be hurt. Li Xiao Yao, can you understand my feelings?”

I nodded and replied, “I understand, Mr Lin...”

Lin Wan Er’s face flushed red, “Dad, what are you trying to say?”

Lin Tian Nan: “I thought you have been reading my mind? You should know...”

“Dad!” Lin Wan Er’s voice had hints of displeasure, “I wouldn’t read your mind!”

Lin Tian Nan laughed, “Fine fine, let’s not talk about this today...”

After placating his daughter, Lin Tian Nan continued to stare at me and said, “Wang Xin introduced you to me and he once said that you were trying to redeem yourself from your sins through this job. In order to ensure my daughter’s safety, I can’t take such a risk...”

I frowned, “What do you mean?”

Lin Tian Nan stood up, his hands stroked the table as he looked at me anxiously and softly said, “Li Xiao Yao, you are the final line of defense for Wan Er, so I need to ensure that you are 100% loyal to her. I hope that Wan Er can leave an imprint deep in your heart, so that from now on, you will not betray her, nor will you back down from the mission!”

Shocked, I asked, “That... What do you mean? Imprint, what is that?

.....

Behind me, Huang Ning suddenly stood up as a slight aura gathering around his body. He softly asked, “Li Xiao Yao, do you love Lin Wan Er?”

Surprised by his question, I looked towards Lin Wan Er who was sitting in front of me. Lin Wan Er also looked back at me, flabbergasted. At that moment, time seemed to stop.

“Swoosh!”

Huang Ning’s movements were swift and he suddenly appeared behind me. Afterwards, I felt a numbing sensation in my mind. There was no time for me to react. Staring blankly at Lin Wan Er, my mind gradually blanked out and my eyes gradually closed–

“Ah!”

Suddenly opening my eyes once again, I found myself in the middle of a valley. Hua hua, the sound of a stream flowing could be heard. The entire valley was empty and shrouded in a mist, like a scene in a dream. The mist seems to act like a veil as it wrapped around my feet, preventing me from seeing the ground clearly.

“This... Where am I?” I was confused.

Suddenly, I felt a pair of soft hands hugging me from behind. I also only realized at this moment that I was standing there completely nude. I felt a sense of warmth coming from my back, allowing me to acutely feel the two soft bundles tightly pressing against me.

“Li Xiao Yao...”

The voice behind me sounded strangely familiar... Lin Wan Er?

I turned around and through the mist, I looked at Lin Wan Er's eyes as they stared back at me. Her eyes were filled with love as she opened up her snow white limbs and hugged me tightly from the front, her mouth shouting relentlessly, "I feel hot, I feel hot, what should I do... What should I do..."

Unable to help myself, I hugged her back as I felt my heart beat faster.

Lin Wan Er's body was extremely warm to the touch, her white shoulders seemed strangely mesmerising within the fog. She looks at me with her flushed face. Then, she tiptoed and kissed me. In the next moment, we were kissing each other passionately as our lips interlocked each other, making me lose the final shreds of my rationality

"Ah... Un..."

Lin Wan Er lightly moaned as she grabbed my hands and placed them at her breasts. The 34D which I dreamt of was finally within my grasp, to think that I was unable to fully grasp them in my palms. They were bouncy and filled with power. No matter how I kneaded them, they seem to return back to how they originally were.

"I want..."

Lin Wan Er lifted her head and looked at me, her face completely red. Immediately, she lowers her head once again.

I hugged her, kissed her and pushed her down to the floor. I could feel her scalding body with my grasp. Stretching my hand to stroke her pair of beautiful legs, she immediately splits them apart. A steaming hot sensation grasped hold of me. I looked at Lin Wan Er's flushed face, her eyes were firmly shut and her long eyebrows were trembling. Her mouth opens ever so slightly and she lets out a silent moan. What follows was indescribable happiness.

.....

"Keng..."

Suddenly, the sight in front of me disappeared. My senses returned back to the First Heaven restaurant where I was at.

“Ah...”

I couldn't help but let out a sound of surprise. I widened my eyes, “This... What was that that just happened!? Wan Er, I... Just now I... What happened to me just now?”

”

Lin Wan Er stood in front of me in a daze, her minute mouth opening, “I am also unsure...”

At this moment, Huang Ning moved towards Lin Tian Nan from my back and lifted up his hand to show a small microchip, he smiled, “This is the implant?”

Lin Tian Nan said in a deep tone, “Yes, this is the microchip for the Imprint system. The idea behind it is simple. Through the transplantation of blood, we imprint a memory into your mind, making you unable to even think of betraying Wan Er from this day on. This is the result of Tian Xin Corporation's two years of hard work, the power of technology.

I gritted my teeth, “This memory, can you control it?”

“We can't control it, we can only trigger it but as for the specifics, we are unable to manipulate it. However, this memory is one that you will be unable to forget for your whole life. It is only through this way that it can truly become an Imprint on your soul.”

“This...”

I clenched my fist as I stand there, unmoving.

“Li Xiao Yao, what kind of memory was that?” Lin Wan Er asked me softly.

I shook my head.

Hmph, Lin Wan Er scowled at me and closed her eyes. At the same moment, I could feel a mild, almost undetectable, mental power flowing in the surroundings. I shuddered, knowing that she was currently trying to

read my mind.

At the next moment, Lin Wan Er's face flushed red in an instant. Tightly clenching her small fist, her face was almost as red as an autumn apple. Her eyes were filled with anger as she stared at me, "Hmph, Li Xiao Yao, just you wait and see!"

I sat down, my emotions a mess. This memory was indeed too unforgettable. To think that I, in my dreams, to Lin Wan Er... Cough cough, I wonder what would Lin Tian Nan think if he knew what I saw.

Lowering my head, I continued to eat, not saying anything more. Lin Wan Er also sat there angrily, not speaking a word.

Lin Tian Nan and Huang Ning, feeling as though they have succeeded, toasted to each other and drank happily.

.....

At around 9PM at night, once the dinner was over, Lin Tian Nan sent a chauffeur to drive the TT and to send me and Lin Wan Er home.

Sitting in the back seat, I remained silent.

Lin Wan Er sat by my side and turned to look at me a few times, only to see me depressed.

Finally, Lin Wan Er lightly bumped into my shoulder and whispered, "Sorry, I know that you are also a victim so I can't blame it all on you. Also, regarding the Imprint, I was also left in the dark. I'm really sorry..."

I solemnly nodded my head and continued to remain silent.

Lin Wan Er was furious, "You... you anger me so much. The one who suffered was me, why do I have to apologize?! I... my temper..."

I couldn't help but laugh as I raised my head to say, "Wan Er, the Tian Xin Corporation's new invention, this Imprint microchip seems to have been a failure..."

"That might not be the case..." Lin Wan Er's mood lifted. "Dad is a genius, I believe in each and all of his product!"

“Fine...” I clapped my hands. “Then, let’s just treat it like the Imprint was a success...”

“Fine... Regarding this, you can’t tell it to anyone or you’ll die!”

“Fine...”

.....

“Brat, you must remember that women are the source of trouble. You shouldn’t get close to woman while you live.”

Lin Cheng’s words seemed to linger in my ears for the entire night, “Remember, you must learn to make use of the aura of the sky, earth and men. Otherwise, you will only be stuck at the level of strengthening one’s body for your entire life, then what you would only be training is your body, forever unable to go to the next stage.”

The old man taught me all I knew about harnessing the aura, yet he did not personally witness me as I got to the next stage of my training.

That night, my shirt was drenched from dewdrops as poisonous snakes slithered through the grass to my neck, yet then slithering away silently. After experiencing the boundary between life and death that night, I learnt to harness the aura within one’s body. The aura originates from our subsistence, it spreads through our hearts and lungs, sinking into our skin, nourishing our body, a cycle that never ends. The aura within a human originates from external matter, yet it was available for human use. From ancient times, the number of people who were able to grasp the ability to harness aura from the sky, earth and humans to train oneself are uncountable, and among this group, the number of those who lived to ripe old age was numerous. During Zhuang Zi’s age, harnessing the aura was considered a way of keeping healthy.

.....

“Ah...”

Suddenly waking up, I opened my eyes to see myself sleeping on my bed in my dormitory. My shirt was drenched in sweat. I have no idea how I managed to spend the night but the moment I close my eyes, I could

almost see Lin Wan Er's beautiful body, as well as the pleasurable moans that night. I think I really have been imprinted. Although I am unsure what this may mean in the future, that in a single night, Lin Wan Er seems to have completely taken up my entire soul, making me feel as though she is the most important person to me.

On the bed opposite of me, Glasses slowly sat up and picked up a cup beside his bed, smiling, he asked, "Morning Xiao Yao, waking up at 7, is there some mission you have to do today?"

I smiled, "It's nothing, I'm used to waking up early..."

"I heard that last night, you went with Lin Wan Er to eat at First Heaven Restaurant? There's a photo of the both of you eating on the school's BBS. Tsk tsk

"..."

Not saying anything, I got off the bed and had a cold shower in the bathroom. After changing into a clean shirt, I could finally feel myself living after the Imprint yesterday. Except that, when I touch the wound from the microchip implant at the back of my head, there is a sharp pain. I don't have much knowledge on technology and such stuff, but I knew that the memory that night has been deeply imprinted within my mind.

.....

Chapter 130: Darling Duck

“Swoosh!”

Going online, I spawned in the North Plaza of the city and immediately received a message from Fox: “Boss, you there? ”

“Yup!”

Opening the chat window, I heard the sound of Fox’s laughter: “Boss, good news! Yesterday, we made a pretty good profit, I sold all of the equipment you gave me for 217 gold. In addition, we found a Lv 37 Silver Tier staff which sold for 45 gold. With the rest of our income, yesterday’s work day gained us 320g, which altogether sold at the Treasure Grove for 2500+ RMB! Hehe, what a great performance!”

I was delighted, “Well, that really isn’t too bad. Now we can at least afford a water dispenser. Oh right, have you found any professional players to join us? ”

Fox was embarrassed: “That Among us three, Wolf has the highest level, yet he is still only Lv 37. Ba Huang City’s top players have an average level of at least 45 or above. By our standards, it is rather difficult to recruit people and most of those we recruit are people below Lv 40. Up to now, Old K and I, after using many different means, have added 11 friends, levels ranging between 35-42.

Among them, there are already 7 people who can be developed into Zhan Long’s long-term members. However, their real-life locations are rather scattered; most of the players live in the northern cities of China, so they probably won’t be joining our studio. However, in the future when we establish our guild, they will very likely join our forces.

I nodded: “Fox, for a team, what do you think are the three most important classes? ”

Fox ponders: “Tanks or Monks. They are required to tank the Boss. Also Healers, because their [Heal]s are required to sustain the team. Last but not least, DPS.

Mages' magic-based attacks are stronger compared to those of other classes, am I right?"

"Yeah, you're right. Currently, I am playing the role of the main tank in our team. As for DPS, you and Old K could be considered as pretty good damage dealers. However, what we lack now is a Healer, we must find a high-level Healer with good teamwork."

Fox was slightly troubled: "I'll do my best, but you know, almost all of the high-level Healers at this stage have been solicited by large guilds that provide money to 'raise' them. Also, the cost of hiring a Healer whose level exceeds 45 is quite exorbitant, so it's hard to find a high level Healer who has good skills. This is quite a big problem."

I thought for a moment and comforted him: "Well, strengthening our team isn't something we can do overnight. Let's go about it slowly. As long as the four of us do not give up, Zhan Long will definitely become strong! For now, you guys should concentrate on reaching Lv 40 within 48 hours. Level 40, you hear me?!"

"Ok!"

.....

Turning off the chat window, I opened the Ba Huang City's map and found myself at a loss for what to do next. I was Lv 50 and the hunting grounds for my level range were quite far away from town. As for the Lv 7 herbs, there weren't any leads. Forget it, I'll check the forums to see if there's anything profitable to do. After all, sharpening an axe is the prerequisite for chopping wood.

(TL: He is basically saying that if he sharpens his skills and knowledge, he will still be making progress.)

Opening Ba Huang City's forum, I saw a red post right at the top of the forum page. It was the [Vanguard] Guild's recruitment post –【Top Post】(Posted by: Jian Feng Han): The [Vanguard] Guild has been formed and is currently recruiting members!

Content: Greetings, my friends from Ba Huang City. I am Jian Feng Han,

the guild leader of [Vanguard]. After much hard work, we have finally hunted down a Guild Creation Tablet and after fulfilling the charm requirements, we finally have officially formed the [Vanguard] guild. Although it isn't the first guild to be established, we have the confidence to make [Vanguard] the top guild of Ba Huang City. We are a team, an invincible team! Thus, [Vanguard] is currently recruiting members and we welcome players from any class. There is no limit to our recruitment volume, but our other requirements are that players must be at least Lv45 and possess at least 2 Silver Ranked equipment. The heavy armor classes should have an attacking power beyond 1400 or defense above 1100, whereas Mages should possess a DPS of 500 or above. Healers should be able to, on average, recover 400 HP every second. [Vanguard] is our home and we welcome you to join it!

.....

Although it was only posted 12 hours ago, there were already a staggering 13k+ replies. Most of them were congratulatory or inquiries on how to become a member of [Vanguard]. Scrolling down, Fallen Wolf and Simple were patiently replying to all of the inquiries made. Currently, there were already hundreds of top-notch players who promised to join [Vanguard] online.

Frowning, I sighed. The [Vanguard] name was well-known in many of the other popular games and thus the popularity [Vanguard] enjoys is something a new guild like [Valiant Bravery] would find hard to compete with. Although [Vanguard] was getting stronger and stronger, my heart felt more and more excitement. After all, only a strong rival is able to stir the fighting spirit of another strong person.

After looking through the other posts, since I was bored I looked through the **【Gossip/ Employment/ Trade】**section.

A few minutes later, my eyes lit up, I actually found a familiar name –

【Employment】 (Poster: Darling Duck): Hiring a Main Tank for 10G!

Content: My friend is currently in the midst of doing an A-rank quest and requires a player with a charm value of at least 25 to trigger the boss

and upon triggering the boss, the player would have to suffer a powerful strike from the boss. For players who fit this criteria, please contact in game, I shall pay 10G as commission!

.....

Darling Duck Isn't that [Vanguard]'s top healer?!

I quickly searched for information on Darling Duck and my eyes lit up again. I saw an opportunity– Darling Duck Lv 42 Silver Healer Main City: Ba Huang City Guild: None...

My heart skipped a beat. Why would Darling Duck be only Lv 42? Furthermore, without a guild? Based on logic, a Healer as good as her should have already joined the [Vanguard] guild already, unless... Darling Duck was abandoned by the [Vanguard] guild?!

I immediately sent a friend request to Darling Duck!

“Ding!”

It was approved and Darling Duck appeared on my friends list. Without any hesitation, I sent a chat request to her. She accepted the chat request and I heard the surprise in her voice – “Oh, isn't this Xiao Yao Zi Zai? One of the top players on Ba Huang City rank board, why would you suddenly send me a buddy request...”

Trying to laugh in a natural way, I replied: “Darling Duck, do you still remember me? ”

“Why wouldn't I remember? For a Heavenly Plan Sword, you killed guild leader Jian Feng Han... .. ”

“Uh” It appeared that she was fooled by Jian Feng Han's words. In no hurry to explain the situation then, I said: “Let's not speak of that, I was flipping through the forums and saw your post. Have you found a Main Tank with charm above 25 points yet?

“No...” A sense of helplessness slipped through Darling Duck's tone. “Most of the Main Tanks only have around a charm value of 10+ and those worse off only have 3 or 4 points in charm. Truthfully, the number of

players in Ba Huang City that have 25 charm isn't more than a handful. Well, our guild leader Jian Feng Han does have 25 charm but he is a busy man. Yesterday when I asked him for help, he said that he didn't have the time to help me..."

I laughed: "He just established his [Vanguard] guild, so he is bound to be busy. About that... Can I ask you a question? "

"Sure, what do you want to ask me about? "

"Your level... How come you are only at Lv 42? Did you PK with other people? "

"Of course not..."

Darling Duck stuck out her tongue and laughed: "Actually, a few days ago, I went on a trip with my mother to Korea, thus couldn't find the time to go online. When I finally went online again, I realized that the main Healers in [Vanguard] were already between the level range of 47-48. Now, I can only be a substitute Healer in the [Vanguard] guild. Wuwu, when we went to fight a Boss this afternoon there wasn't even a chance for me to heal....."

[Note: Wuwu is onomatopoeia for crying.]

Sensing an opportunity, I immediately asked: "That... Actually, I have 34 charm currently and just like Jian Feng Han, I can fulfill the requirements of your quest. Why don't I help your friend to finish the quest? "

Darling Duck was stunned for a moment: "To make one of the top players help us with our quest, I would feel bad accepting your help. "

I replied casually, "It's okay, I don't have much to do this afternoon anyways, so I can afford to do you this favor. Furthermore, the quest requires a player with a charm above 25. Honestly, not counting me, I doubt that there are more than five players who can fulfill this requirement. "

Darling Duck nodded: "Sure, I'll wait for you at the North Gate! "

"Okay!"

.....

I quickly walked over to our meeting point and leaned against the wall of the North Gate, awaiting Darling Duck's arrival.

A few minutes later, with a swoosh swoosh, there were 2 rays of light and Darling Duck, together with another female Wind Elf Mage walked over. The Mage was called Rippling Pond, a Lv 41 Mage, with decent looking equipment.

"Xiao Yao Zi Zai!"

Darling Duck quickly noticed me and walked over with light footsteps. Smiling lightly, she said: "Long time no see! "

With a wave of a hand, I smiled and replied, "So, this Rippling Pond beauty here is your friend? "

"Yup!"

Looking at her, she looked similar to Darling Duck. I would give her 7 points, no chest and no butt, the type that uncles would like. Under my request, I joined their party, forming a party of 3.

Rippling Pond blinked her eyes and said, "The destination is the valley deep in Ba Huang Forest. There, we will find a sealed stone. The sealed stone requires a person of at least 25 charm for the seal to be broken to awaken the Boss inside the stone. However, at the moment the seal is lifted, the person who broke the seal would suffer 2000 damage from the boss, following which, the boss which was released would chase after the player. So, you see, it is hard to find players who can complete this quest, it's so difficult that I feel like giving the quest up..."

Saying this, she looked at me with watery eyes, "Brother Zi Zai, I am sure that you have 25 charm, but is your health above 2000?"

I looked at my stats, 2203 HP. Then I looked back at them, smiled, and replied, "Don't worry, just leave this quest to me!"

"Okay! Awesome!!" Rippling Pond cheered as her robe flew up and down, yet what was underneath remained deeply hidden.

.....

After summoning Baby Bobo, the bee immediately came to a rest on my shoulder. This time, bringing these 2 ladies out of town, I felt a lot less pressure. The last time when I brought Lin Wan Er and Dong Cheng Yue around the city, we attracted tons of attention. However, this time only a few people glanced at us; we didn't create a commotion.

Of course, if you looked closely, Darling Duck and Rippling Pond could also be considered decently pretty and were likely to have fans.

.....

Ba Huang Forest was a territory of wild animals. Without walking far, we encountered a Lv 37 Wild Boar in the middle of the road and Rippling Pond immediately gripped her staff and says, "Brother Zi Zai, you tank its attack. I will play the role as the damage dealer..."

"Klang!"

Unsheathing my Frost Rain Sword, I smiled, "It's okay, I can deal with it alone. Both of you hurry along, don't waste your time with this kind of low-leveled monster!"

"Oh?"

Rippling Pond widened her pair of big, watery eyes in disbelief.

Chapter 131: In Big Trouble

Shiing, unsheathing my Frost Rain Sword, which was shrouded in a deep blue aura, I charged at the Wild Boar. With a [Wind Blade] + [Fierce Ice Blade] combo, my sword tore through the Wild Boar. With shouts of agony, the Lv 37 normal monster was dead in an instant leaving no time at all for it to retaliate. Large damage numbers bursted forth from my slashes and the two ladies behind me were shocked–

“1547!”

“1475!”

.....

“So strong... Such a strong attack...”

Rippling Pond widened her eyes and said, “This attack power should be at least above 1700? I heard that guild leader Jian Feng Han’s attack power is extremely powerful, at around 1800. That damage means that Zi Zai shouldn’t be too far behind Feng Han...”

Sheathing my sword, I smiled, “Actually my attack power exceeds 2000...”

“Ah?!”

Rippling Pond was shocked, “Your attack power is higher than our boss Jian Feng Han?”

I nodded and continued, asking her casually, “Rippling Pond, have you seen Jian Feng Han and talked to him?”

“No...”

“Oh, I guess you still don’t really know him.”

“How so, oh handsome bro?”

“Nothing. It’s nothing, let’s just carry on. Let’s head to the quest destination and finish your quest quickly!”

“Sure thing!”

.....

The three of us continued to walk through the dense forest and after 30 minutes we finally arrived at a nameless valley. Here, there were already many players training and at least seven or eight teams scattered throughout the valley.

Rippling Pond's wings began to flutter lightly as she pointed out into the distance. Beside her Darling Duck also began to fly, a staff clutched in her hands. I noticed the image of a medicine pot appear on the edge of her staff: the mark of a Healer.

"There are people training here. Once we trigger the boss..." Darling Duck looked at me with worry in her eyes.

I raised my head and looked at them both, "It's okay, once we trigger the boss I'll tank it. As for you two, just fly as high as you can. Aim for around 25 meters above and just leave everything on the ground to me."

Duck nodded her head while Rippling Pond covered her mouth and laughed, "Sister Duck, I feel so secure with Xiao Yao Zi Zai here..."

Darling Duck couldn't help but laugh, "That's just you. When Xiao Yao Zi Zai ruined his relationship with guild leader Jian Feng Han, I was shocked. I couldn't imagine how an honorable man like him could do something so despicable..."

Although I heard what they said, I didn't bother to explain. I simply smiled, carried my sword and walked in front of them while summoning Baby Bobo. My job is to protect these two Magic-class ladies since their defensive capabilities are too weak. Players with high attack power would only need a moment to kill the girls.

.....

While the three of us were in the midst of silently infiltrating the depths of the valley, a certain blood-red rock came into view. A talisman was placed on top, around which chains fixed it in place. The rock itself was continuously trembling ever so slightly. Even ordinary players would be able to tell that something was queer about the place, but what could

they do? They had no way of investigating the mystery of the blood-red rock.

“We’re here...”

Rippling Pond flew in the sky above the rock and whispered, “Brother Zi Zai, you have 25 charm, so could you please unseal the talisman? Be careful though, because when it’s unsealed you will instantly take 2000 damage. After that the boss will appear from the rock and all the aggro will be focused on you. I am still unsure of what kind of boss it is, so you must be cautious; your health will instantly plummet.”

I nodded, “Got it. Darling Duck, right after I release the seal I will only have around 200 health remaining. You must heal me straightaway so that the boss doesn’t kill me instantly!”

“Yeah, understood!”

Standing in front of the blood-red sealed rock I knitted my eyebrows together. Raising my head I said, “I have one last question.”

Rippling Pond replied, “Yeah, what is it?”

“This A-rank mission, what will you earn from it?”

Rippling Pond seemed to be a little embarrassed and said, “Actually this is a Mage-class quest I received. Once I finish the mission I will probably receive a Lv 40 Gold Tier weapon for my class, most likely a staff...”

“Oh, that’s quite good...”

As most gamers know, the prices of weapons were often much higher than that of other equipment. A Lv 40 Gold Tier staff could be sold for at least 1000G. It’s no wonder that Rippling Pond refused to give up on this mission and since the two ladies have already told me this secret, I should try my best to help them. I quickly unsheathed my Frost Rain Sword and smiled at them, “You don’t have to worry. For this Lv 40 Gold Tier staff I shall risk my life to kill the boss!”

Rippling Pond nodded her head with gratitude, “Thanks. Brother Zi Zai is such a nice person...”

Darling Duck placed her hand on her forehead and said, “Maybe it’s because he likes you and wants to pick you up...”

Rippling Pond: “...”

.....

Walking up without hesitation, I placed my hands on the blood-red stone, and the seal began to unravel. The moment of its unsealing, a lightning bolt struck me–

“2000!”

The strike was without any hesitation at all!

Bang! The large rock burst apart, and from the rock a gray Python appeared: a Lv 42 Gold Tier Boss – Sand Python!

Looking at the boss’s level and tier, I felt relieved. A Lv 42 Gold Tier Boss wouldn’t damage me too much since my level has already far surpassed its. Nevertheless, with a flick of my hand, I used a [Heal] on myself and another [Heal] from Darling Duck fell on me–

“+750!”

“+912!”

.....

Although they were both Lv 5 [Heal]s, the difference in efficiency was quite huge. Refusing to engage in self-depreciation, I used my Frost Rain Sword and activated [Combo], furiously striking the Sand Python’s head, bringing out a whole string of numbers. At the same time Baby Bobo also helped to dish out some damage and from the sky Rippling Pond chanted and cast [Icicle], [Pillars of Ice and Fire], along with other spells to attack the Sand Python.

“Ssss....”

The Sand Python stuck out its long tongue and continually bit my arms and armor causing 200-400 damage total. With this rate of health loss, neither Darling Duck nor I felt any pressure to heal myself. For a Lv 50 Swordsman like me with top equipment, killing a Lv 42 Gold Tier Boss

was easy as pie.

“Wow, he is so strong...” Rippling Pond flashed a smile of happiness.

Darling Duck also smiled, “Congratulations, I guess the Lv 40 Gold Tier staff is destined to be in your hands...”

However, while I was slashing the boss I warned them, “Remain alert and continue to attack with full power. The surrounding players are slowly closing in on us. After all, this is still a Gold Tier Boss. Who wouldn’t be tempted?!”

Darling Duck was astonished, “Then what do we do?”

“Don’t worry, even if PK battle does start, don’t panic. Make sure that neither of you kill any of the players and Duck, continue to heal me. Leave all of the players to me. I will get rid of them... I will personally guarantee that this Gold Tier staff will belong to you, pretty lady!”

[T/L: He’s not really flirting here; the term ‘pretty lady’ is thrown around quite liberally in Chinese.]

Rippling Pond giggled, “Thank you~~”

.....

When the boss’s health dropped to around 20%, the first team had arrived at our location. It was a 10-man team, with the average level being around 41, led by “Forgotten Sirius’, a Lv 43 Berserker. His equipment wasn’t too bad. His battle axe had a golden aura enveloping it: likely a Gold Tier weapon. With him were a few players who hadn’t yet undergone their 2nd Job Promotion.

The 10-man team surrounded me in a fan-shaped formation. They were watching my fight with the boss like a group of curious babies, all wide-eyed. Apparently, they felt that the boss’s health was still too high.

Fighting under these circumstances, I couldn’t help it any longer. With a slash of my sword I knocked the boss backwards while asking, “Huh, are you guys interested in this Sand Python boss?”

Forgotten Sirius hefted his battle axe onto his shoulder and said, “It’s a

Lv 42 Gold Tier Boss. Who knows, if our luck is good it may even drop Lv 40+ Gold Tier equips. I am slightly interested. Why don't you three leave this boss to us?"

In the sky Rippling Pond was slightly angry, "Leave the boss to you all? Who do you think you guys are..."

Forgotten Sirius howled with laughter. The Barbarian Berserker patted his hairy chest and said, "These trees were planted by me; this road was paved by me. If you want to pass you must pay the toll..."

TL: Common Chinese bandit saying

.....

"That's enough..." I was speechless. Unveiling my ID, the golden signet indicator [Ba Huang City's #5 player] appeared while I used a [Pardon Card].

"Ah..."

A skinny Assassin in their midst was shocked and immediately whispered, "Boss, that strong-looking warrior over there is Xiao Yao Zi Zai. He's Ba Huang City's ranked 5, the legendary figure that dared to provoke [Vanguard]!"

Forgotten Sirius replied, "What are you afraid of? Let's charge together and kill him and the boss!"

Just like the saying: greed goes hand in hand with courage. Humans will die for wealth, birds for food. And for a mere Lv 42 Gold Tier Boss, they dare provoke one of the top players of Ba Huang City. This is human nature!

.....

The sharp weapon in my hand let out a slight metallic cry. I whispered in the party chat, "Duck, Rippling Pond, when the boss has only 10% of its health remaining, I will temporarily stop attacking the boss. Duck, you then will heal me while Rippling Pond uses [Icicle] on the three archers furthest away to lower their speed. Then leave the rest to me!"

The two ladies nodded: “Okay!”

12 seconds later the boss’s health dropped to 10%. Commencing the operation!

I stopped attacking the boss and rushed towards their party, bringing the boss along with me. In that moment Forgotten Sirius narrowed his eyes, “Seriously? Counterattacking with 10% of health left on the boss. Xiao Yao Zi Zai really has guts. Archers, use [Shattered Shot] to stun him: the rest of us will attack him. Use your 2nd Job Promotion skills and slaughter him!”

Stepping on the ground, I swiftly changed my path of motion several times and three misses appeared behind me. The charge time for [Shattered Shot] was rather long and since those three Archers were incapable of anticipating my movements, all of the [Shattered Shot]s passed through empty space.

“Hong!”

Flames raged around Forgotten Sirius’ battle axe as he aimed at my right shoulder. His attack brought out a gorgeous number–

“277!”

.....

Forgotten Sirius was like a newborn calf that didn’t know to fear the tiger, oblivious to how fearsome the top ranking players were. — He was in in big trouble. In addition, he clearly didn’t know that when a 7 level gap existed between opponents, a stat reduction of at least 30% applied to the weaker party!

“Crap, I can’t break through his defense? What kind of defense is this!?”

Forgotten Sirius, while holding his battle axe, stood there in a daze, totally forgetting his original objective of attacking me.

.....

“Pu!”

[Fierce Ice Blade] pierced through Forgotten Sirius’ chest and caused

1174 damage and coupled with a normal attack, he fell down immediately!

“Ugh. I still have a family to feed...” Forgotten Sirius mumbled before he died.

TL: Another bandit saying when they are about to die...

Pulling my sword out of his chest, I immediately rushed towards a Monk. A surge of air burst forth from the ground as I activated [Strength of a Thousand Men]. Confronted with a flurry of attacks, the Monk's health began to drop rapidly. Giving a cry of agony, he fell to the floor with his Monk Staff in hand: “ Boss, we're coming...”

Chapter 132: Darling Duck Joins

In 90 seconds, the battle ended. 10 opponents now lay on the ground. Several parties backed up once I showed my Ba Huang City top ten ranking. They watched from afar, not daring to act rashly.

I turned around and continued to attack the Sand Python with Baby Bobo.

With a “hissing” sound, the Sand Python’s body slumped. Its body disintegrated into a pile of fine sand. A staff sat shining through the pile of sand. With excitement, Rippling Pond immediately flew down and picked up the staff. Her face was full of happiness: “WOW, a Lv 40 Gold Tier staff. Great, it even adds a lot of Ability Power!”

Darling Duck’s wings disappeared as she landed on the ground. With a smile she said, “Dummy Rippling Pond, quickly thank Xiao Yao. Without him, you wouldn’t have been able to finish this quest!”

Rippling Pond lifted her head and responded with a smile, “Thank you!”

I shook my head and replied, “You’re welcome. It was a piece of cake!”

.....

The teams that had surrounded us left once the boss was defeated. While I protected them, the two Wind Elves could fly around in the air. With the ability to heal myself, it wasn’t an easy task to kill me. The 10 player parties didn’t stand a chance.

Sheathing the Frost Rain Sword, I sat on a green rock off to the side. Darling Duck adjusted her skirt and sat down in front of me. She looked at me with a smile.

Rippling Pond, full of love and adoration, gently caressed her new staff.

“What, haven’t you seen enough?” I asked.

Darling Duck’s face reddened as she jokingly asked, “Xiao Yao, there is something that has been bothering me for a while now. Instead of leveling, you spent your valuable time and energy helping a complete

stranger, and you gave it your all when helping the Generals. Yet you went from being friends with [Vanguard] to becoming enemies for a single Purple Tier weapon.”

I pursed my lips and looked deeply into her eyes, “Darling Duck, Jian Feng Han holds a really important spot in your heart, am I right?”

“Yes, he has been my idol for 3 years now!”

“Alright then, pretend that I didn’t say anything..... ”

“Why?”

“A brainwashed fan will not understand what I’m saying...”

“No way...” Darling Duck chuckled. Holding onto her staff, she replied, “I only feel respect towards Jian Feng Han. He’s very skilled in combat, plus he’s very handsome. A large portion of why I joined [Vanguard] was for those reasons, but that doesn’t mean I’ve lost my rationality. Xiao Yao, do you think that I am one of those dumb fan girls?”

I opened my hand, “Let me show you a video clip.”

“Okay....”

With a wave of my hand, the conversation between Jian Feng Han and I that happened in the Pear Blossom Forest appeared in front of Darling Duck. This video was certified by Destiny, so there was no possibility of fraud. In the video, Jian Feng Han said with conviction that as long as it’s something that I could use, he would give it to me. No need for a roll and nothing about the weapons being Gold Tier rank or lower was never mentioned.

After watching this, Darling Duck knitted her eyebrows. She murmured, “Could there be some sort of misunderstanding?”

I leaned on the mountain rock behind me, casually smiled and said, “What is there to be misunderstood? The Purple Tier weapon, Heavenly Plan Sword, is a treasure in every Swordsman’s eyes. Jian Feng Han was willing to kill me for it. Maybe in his eyes, my value is less than the Heavenly Plan Sword....”

I grabbed a loose rock and using my strength, I crushed it into fine powder while the dust slipped through my fingers. I looked at Darling Duck and said, "Jian Feng Han is your idol. I will not force you to accept my opinion but I can't tolerate that kind of injustice. Defeating Jian Feng Han has already become one of my goals!"

Darling Duck's shoulders shook slightly. She gave me an entranced sort-of look, and then for some reason lowered her head.

Rippling Pond stood off to the side: "This is...getting out of hand?"

After 2 minutes passed, Darling Duck lifted her head and with eyes full of confidence said, "Xiao Yao, I believe your words. Videos with official certification can't be fake. Boss Jian Feng Han swindled you out of a Purple Tier sword. Sorry, at that time I.....at that time I revived him and he killed you. Otherwise, you wouldn't have had to suffer such an injustice"

I smiled slightly, "Not a problem. Life is a dangerous thing. Besides, I'm used to this kind of thing. I was only swindled out of a piece of equipment, but what worries me is that no one will know the truth. The main reason why everyone is willing to believe Jian Feng Han is because of his strength. Therefore, I wish to become strong. By becoming stronger and stronger, I could solve the injustices of this world with a sword!"

Darling Duck gently nodded her head, "Okay. I understand..... Xiao Yao, you caused me to decide on something."

"Oh, what kind of decision?"

"I will leave the [Vanguard] guild. From now on, Jian Feng Han is no longer my boss....."

Off to the side, Rippling Pond was slightly shocked. "Darling Duck, are you joking? You promised sister Simple that you will try hard to raise your level to 45. Then you would rejoin [Vanguard]..... "

Darling Duck shook her head. "Nope, I changed my mind. I made that promise because I trusted them. But this video showed me that, like many others, I was lied to. I have no way to change others, however I can

change myself. I will not lend my strength to such a person. Otherwise I won't be able to live with myself.....”

Rippling Pond knitted her eyebrows: “Then what about me?”

Darling Duck laughed lightly, “You could follow me and leave [Vanguard]. Dummy.....”

“But our promise.....”

Off to the side I responded, “Your promise was too naive. Since you are still young, it was easy to believe others. Why keep a promise given to an untrustworthy person?”

Rippling Pond pouted, “But I.....”

Darling Duck laughed, “Whatever. Rippling Pond, you can continue to stay in [Vanguard], but I will definitely leave. I will message sister Simple that I want to leave [Vanguard]. Afterward...”

“What happens afterwards?” I lowered my head and looked at her.

Darling Duck laughed gently. “Xiao Yao, do you have a group? If you do, does the group need a Lv 42 noob Healer?”

My heart was bursting with joy as I clapped my hands together: “Yes! Why wouldn't I want a Healer like you? Hehee, Lv 42 is no longer a noob. In my group, you will be the highest level!”

“Oh?” With a big smile Darling Duck replied. “My Lv 42 is considered the highest? What kind of group...oh...why do I feel like I was cheated?”

“No way, they have a very strong drive!” Raising my fist, “Zhan Long Studio is comprised of 4 people in total. Aside from me, there is an Assassin, a Berserker, and a Musketeer. We were sorely missing a Healer. Darling Duck, do you know that you joining my team is like a coal delivery during a snowstorm?”

TL: Chinese saying = a great gift

“What are their current levels? Don't lie to me...” Darling Duck chuckled.

I let out a loud sigh, “Don’t worry. Within 24 hours, they will all be Lv 40. Once they reach your level, you guys can level together. These brothers of mine might not have any skills, but they are hot-blooded and have a passion for leveling. They won’t disappoint you!”

“Okay then.....”

Holding her healing staff, Darling Duck stood up. Bowing to me, she asked with a smile, “Then this little girl will be officially joining Zhan Long Studio today. Do I call you brother Xiao Yao or Boss from now on?”

Without thinking, I answered, “Boss, the same as them.”

“Hm hmmm, Boss, you are so handsome!”

“You just realized that now...”

“That was a joke, don’t take it so seriously...”

To the side, Rippling Pond could no longer keep watching. Lifting her staff she said, “I’m going back to the Pear Blossom Forest. Darling Duck, are you really going to leave [Vanguard]?”

Darling Duck nodded seriously, “Yes. I will join Boss Xiao Yao’s group. [Vanguard] and I will no longer have any relationship!”

“Okay, I will return first...”

“Rippling Pond, if you are bullied by [Vanguard] then come to Zhan Long...” I added quickly. “Honestly, we really need a high level DPS Mage as well...”

Rippling Pond laughed: “Ah, I knew that handsome Xiao Yao was a good person. If I was really bullied, I would join you without any hesitation but at that time please don’t abandon me.....”

“How could I? Don’t you have somewhere you need to be? Go ahead!”

“Okay.....”

.....

With her magic boots, Rippling Pond pushed off the ground. Her wings started to flutter, and she flew away, leaving the two of us behind, sitting

in the valley.

“Boss, what are we going to do now?” Darling Duck looked at me.

“How about we meet up with the 3 other members of the Zhan Long Studio, become good friends, level together and slowly expand our group? We can’t compete with [Vanguard] in terms of numbers and levels. Don’t hold it against Zhan Long for not being extraordinary.....”

“Hm hmm, no way, I joined for Boss Xiao Yao. I believe that with Big Brother Xiao Yao as the boss, this group will not disappoint me!”

“Hm, let’s go!”

“Okay!”

.....

I sent Little Wolf a message—

“Little Wolf, where are you guys leveling right now? Still at Frost Maple Heights?”

“Yes, Brother Xiao Yao, do you need something?”

“Yup. Something big: I will introduce the Healer that will join our Zhan Long!”

“Oh, cool! Who? What level? What is the healing output?”

“Darling Duck, a Lv 42 Healer. Her Lv 5 [Heal] recovers more than 900 health; I’m estimating that her equipment boosts her healing by at least 20%!”

“Good good! Oh yeah, that name sounds really familiar.....isn’t she.....a former [Vanguard] Healer? Not to mention, she is pretty well known. Adding her to the operation would make everything so much easier.....”

“Yeah, that’s her. What about it?”

“That’s really great. Are you going to bring her here, or do you want us to head over to you?”

“We will head over to Frost Maple Heights now!”

“Okay, we will wait for you guys!”

.....

I brought Darling Duck through the dense forest and 20 minutes later, we arrived at Frost Maple Heights. This zone was really big and wasn't meant for people to run through. Good thing the game doesn't have a stamina stat, otherwise it would have been tiring to run continuously for 20 minutes.

One by one, I invited Old K, Fox, and Little Wolf into the party. 3 small orange dots appeared on the Frost Maple Heights map. After walking a couple more steps, the 3 bodies appeared in front of us: Lv 38 Assassin, Lv 37 Berserker, and Lv 37 Musketeer. Their leveling speeds were really, really quick.

“Let's introduce ourselves!”

I walked forward with my sword. Laughing I said, “This is Darling Duck, these 3 are the noobs of Zhan Long Studio.....”

Old K clapped: “I welcome the beautiful Darling Duck to our group!”

Fox squinted: “A high quality girl.....”

Darling Duck's face reddened. “Everyone, please don't tease me. Are you guys leveling here? This is for both gold farming and leveling right?”

“Yup!” Little Wolf lifted his dagger, in a deep voice. “But now that Brother Xiao Yao has come, we could go attempt the A-rank quest that Old K received.....”

“Oh? An A-rank quest?” This sparked my interest. Perfect timing. Darling Duck just joined us, so doing a quest together would be good for the group's teamwork.

Chapter 133: The Dark Tome

“What kind of A-rank quest is it?” I asked.

Little Wolf smiled as he held his dagger, “Late last night, Old K and Fox killed a Lv 41 Elite Monster and it dropped a dark tome, which triggered an A-rank quest. We haven’t started it yet. At most, only 5 people can share it. Coincidentally, you and Darling Duck just joined us which makes a total of 5 people in our group. We should be able to finish the quest today. How about it?”

I nodded, “Sure, Darling Duck?”

Darling Duck lifted her staff and smiled gently, “It’s just what I need! My level is still too low. So as long as it gives me experience, I’ll happily do it. ”

“Okay, then let’s get going. We have to give this dark tome to an old priest in Ba Huang City to activate the quest.”

“Okay, then let’s return to the city, take a break and then meet up at the north gate?”

“Sure!”

.....

5 beams of light flashed, signaling our return to the city. Immediately, I brought Baby Bobo to the blacksmith and repaired my equipped equipment. Afterwards, I withdrew 100 Green Qilin pills and 200 Indigo Sea Pills from the warehouse. For killing low leveled monsters, using Lv 5 pills should suffice but we needed Lv 6 Green Qilin pills for killing bosses. After all, there was a huge difference between recovering 700 mana and 500 mana. After I reached Lv 50, my mana jumped to 746, thus allowing me to use the Green Qilin Pills without any waste.

Afterwards, I bought 50 Lv 6 healing potions from a player. These were made by players; each potion cost 1 gold, but they were worth it since they could restore 1000 health each. I also bought 100 Lv 5 healing potions which would restore 700 health each. The healing was slightly less, but

when killing low leveled monsters, they were nice to have on hand. It was essential to always be prepared for anything.

After getting everything ready, I returned to the North Gate market area. Everyone was ready to go.

“Boss, let’s go!” Darling Duck was excited.

I nodded, glanced at her and asked, “Darling Duck, how much mana do you have?”

“Over 2200. Why did you ask, Boss?”

“Oh..... “

As I walked ahead, I opened up trade and placed 50 Green Qilin Pills and 100 Indigo Sea Pills to trade with her.

Darling Duck opened her mouth in shock, “Boss..... how do you have Green Qilin Pills? I heard that only members of [Prague] have them and they cost 3 gold a pill. You just gave me 50 pills at once. That’s like giving me 150 gold.....and you gave me Indigo Sea Pills too, oh.....”

Looking at how flustered she was, I couldn’t help but smile, “Don’t worry, I didn’t spend any gold. These Green Qilin Pills were made by me when I found some Green Qilin Grass in a secret location. [Prague]’s pills are supplied by me as well and I kept some for myself. Only when we are killing monsters should you use the pills and be sure conserve your mana. If we’re not killing a boss, then only use Indigo Sea Pills, alright?”

Darling Duck nodded and with a smile said, “Hehee, such a generous boss.....”

I turned around to look at the city outskirts and smiled: “You’re one of us now; I must be a bit generous. Anyway, pills are meant to be used. Just don’t use them too fast, otherwise I won’t be able to keep us supplied.”

“Okay, understood.....”

“Let’s go, Old K will lead the way. Let’s go find the old priest Liu Fu.....”

Old K nodded and lifted his battle axe: “Okay, let’s go. My battle axe craves fresh blood..... “

I couldn't hold back and started trash talking, "Don't make us all throw up with such disgusting phrases..."

Old K: "....."

.....

Following Old K, our group of 5 people left the city's market. Going through an alleyway, we arrived at the inner part of Ba Huang City while a group of NPC cavalry riders thundered past us. Ba Huang City was like this every day. The NPC army was always on alert. This caused the atmosphere of the city to be extremely tense, as if a battle could start at any moment. However, this was the reality of being located near the border and far away from Tian Ling City, there were many nearby monsters of various savage races. There were also devils that hid in the dark while watching the city. That was why Ba Huang City had to be on alert.

10 minutes later, in a small quiet alley near a pond inside the city.

Old K held the dark toom and stood there in a daze: "M***** F*****", the quest stated that the old priest would be right here, yet there is not even a shadow!"

I pointed towards a man dressed in rags and said, "How about him?"

Little Wolf lightly laughed, "Brother Xiao Yao. That person is wearing rags and looks like a minstrel. How can he be the old priest?"

"You never know..... "

My hand balled in a fist while I stepped forward. Squatting down next to the minstrel, I took a glance at him; he looked like a skeleton. On his back was a zither. He looked at me with darkened eyes and extended his hand, "Kindhearted person, please give me some food?"

I asked in a hushed voice, "Elder, do you know where the old priest Liu Fu is?"

The minstrel looked like he was about to wither away: "Youngster, if you find a Crispy Roast Duck for me, I will tell you where Liu Fu is. That

old geezer, hehee, only I know where he is

I narrowed my eyes: "Crispy Roast Duck?"

"Yes, the hotel located at the head of East Road has it. If you could buy me this delicious, otherworldly dish"

"Okay!"

I stood up. With a smile plastered across my face, I looked at my group members, "I got a lead."

Darling Duck's pretty eyes widened, "I know this Crispy Roast Duck dish. From what I heard, it's 10 gold for one dish. How come I feel like we didn't find a lead, but instead we are being taken advantage of"

My whole body shivered, "No way, that minstrel looks so innocent....."

Fox's mouth twitched and remarked sarcastically: "Damn. With which eye of yours were you able to tell that he is innocent....."

"Whatever. You guys wait here for me. I will go buy the Crispy Roast Duck!"

"Sure!"

.....

I darted toward my destination, the end of East Road. An expensive looking hotel appeared in front of me and even the city's lord's own mansion wouldn't have such a wealthy appearance. Inside, a few adventurers were there playing a drinking game while a waiter from the hotel rushed up to welcome me, "Dear guest, what is your reason for coming to this hotel? Staying for the night or to have a meal?"

I didn't beat around the bush, "None of those, I just want to buy a Crispy Roast Duck!"

"Sure, 10 gold, have a safe trip!"

After paying the 10 gold, I quickly returned!

When I got there, Little Wolf and the rest were looking at the scenery and Darling Duck stepped up to welcome me: "Boss, did you buy the

Crispy Roast Duck? How much was it? Was there inflation?"

"No. 10 gold, let me go ask....."

"Good, good"

Everyone followed me over as I held the delicious smelling Crispy Roast Duck in front of the minstrel and said, "The Crispy Roast Duck you asked for has arrived. Okay, now can you tell me where old priest Liu Fu is?"

Who would have thought that the minstrel would snatch the roasted duck and finish off the duck in 2-3 mouthfuls– even eating the mountain sparrow meat stuffed in the duck's stomach. There was not a single bite left. Both of his hands were covered in grease as his eyes sparkled with energy. He looked at me, smiled and said, "Youngster, I have finished eating the Crispy Roast Duck. This old man is going home to take a nap. Once I wake up from my nap, I will tell you where Liu Fu is!"

"Scram!"

Feeling like I had been deceived, I grabbed the minstrel's collar: "If you don't tell me where Liu Fu is right now, I will kill you!"

"Clatter....."

He suddenly faded from my hand and transformed into a newly grown willow branch. What the hell, what kind of illusion was this?

Several meters away, the minstrel appeared again. He dusted himself off while holding onto his zither. With a playful look on his face, he said, "Youngster, when I was younger, I was called priest Liu Fu. I forgot about it. So, what do you need from me?"

Old K waved the dark tome and said, "Do you know what this is?"

The old priest's face drained of color, "This.....where did this tome come from? Damn it, that vile guy didn't die. This is an outrage!"

My heart quickened. The Crispy Roast Duck was not a waste; the quest had progressed!

I took the dark tome from Old K's hands and asked, "So, where will this dark notebook lead us to?"

The old priest's face was really ugly as he responded in a trembling voice, "This tome's owner.....is an extremely evil undead archmage. Long ago, we studied together under the archmage Li Wen. However, his mind was full of the dark arts and one day, he finally decided to walk down the path of evil. He killed our teacher, Li Wen, took this extremely evil dark notebook and escaped from Ba Huang City. This won't do....."

He excitedly picked up his zither, "We must defeat him by using this tome as a seal. Only by doing that will we be able to remove that evil from its roots. Otherwise, the whole continent will be plunged into a crisis!

Saying that, he looked in our direction. A hint of hope appeared in his eyes, "Young warriors, are you willing to accept such a difficult quest?"

I nodded, "We are willing....."

"Ding!"

System Message: Congratulations! Your quest [The Dark Tome] has advanced. It is now an S-Tier quest!

Details: Head southeast toward the sea region there and search for the "Cave of Despair". After passing through that long cave, you will arrive at the "Shrine of Despair". In the innermost part of the Shrine of Despair, you will find the undead archmage "Locus". Use the dark tome to seal Locus to receive the "Ring of Locus". Only people with the "Ring of Locus" can enter the secret chamber within the Shrine of Despair. In the secret chamber you will be able to learn the A-rank skill [Reflect]!

.....

I raised my fist and the edge of my mouth curved up: "Good. Now the quest has changed to an S-Tier quest, and the final reward changed to an A-rank skill. This is definitely worth it!"

Darling Duck blinked, "However, this is an S-Tier quest. Can we handle it?"

"Don't worry. As long as we have good teamwork, there is still hope!"

“Okay!”

“Also.....” I emphasized this, “Do you guys have enough gold on you? The fee to learn an A-rank skill is not small. Don’t get there and not have enough to learn it.....”

Old K, “20 gold!”

Little Wolf, “57 gold!”

Darling Duck, “14 gold.....”

I looked at my bags in silence. “Okay. I still have 527 gold. Even if it costs 100 gold per person, there should be enough. Let’s head out first. We’ll go toward the sea region southeast of Ba Huang City. Let’s talk about it again once we find the Cave of Despair!”

.....

After traveling for more than an hour, the forest in front of our eyes ended. In front of us was an endless sea with a mountain range jutting out from it. According to the quest, the Cave of Despair should be here.

“Ding!”

A message from Lin Wan Er, “Li Xiao Yao, you want go offline to get lunch?”

“I’m in the middle of an S-rank quest.....”

“Okay. Dong Cheng Yue and I will order take out. We won’t leave the building.....”

“Miss’ heart is gentle, considerate, and peerless”

“Get lost.....”

Chapter 134: Entering the Cave

“According to the quest, the [Cave of Despair] is about 50 meters ahead.....”

Faced with the endless open ocean, I despaired. “There is only ocean water in front of us, where is the cave?”

Little Wolf replied, “Maybe the cave is underneath the ocean water and the tide covered it?”

Darling Duck smiled, “It looks like that’s the only logical reason.”

Old K carried his axe, “Could we dive underwater and look for the cave entrance?”

“Sure!”

I nodded, “Inside the game, players have about 3 minutes worth of air. Factoring in our levels, even if we stay underwater for 10 minutes, it shouldn’t be a problem. Use the time to look for the cave entrance and enter it once it’s located. Follow me, I’ll scout ahead!”

“Okay.....”

I drew the Frost Rain Sword but I didn’t summon Baby Bobo. He was an flying insect and thus there was a possibility that he would drown to death, which wouldn’t be good.

With a “splash,” I jumped into the ocean. Instantly, the ocean water soaked through my clothes. I squinted my eyes and looked underwater. Besides some algae, there were only a few crustaceans. This shouldn’t be too dangerous.

While I was slowly swimming, Little Wolf asked me through party chat, “Brother Xiao Yao, any problems?”

“You guys can come down!”

“Alright!”

Behind me, continuous splashes sounded while our party of 5 was now in the ocean. Fox lifted his gun and surveyed the surroundings. Suddenly,

he pointed towards his right, “Boss, take a look. Isn’t that the entrance to the [Cave of Despair]?”

I looked in the direction that his finger was pointing to. Suddenly, I saw it. Where the ocean met the mountain, there appeared to be a black tunnel through which water flowed through and a string of bubbles could be seen.

“That’s great. If there are bubbles then that means there is supply of air and thus the inside of the cave is not completely filled with ocean water. Let’s go!”

Holding my sword, I swam toward it. I moved at a very slow speed because of the resistance given by the surrounding ocean water. Just as we got near the cave entrance, Little Wolf whispered in an alarmed tone, “Brother Xiao Yao, be careful, there is a monster!”

Sure enough, a big fish about 1 meter long dashed out from inside the cave. A row of sharp teeth bit into my shoulder with tremendous strength. Fresh blood started to spread into the ocean water—

“274!”

Such a ruthless attack!

I glanced at it: [Deep Water Piranha], Lv 51, Elite Monster!

Old K lifted his battle axe: “Uhhh, what level is the monster? I can’t see the level.....”

Darling Duck nodded, “I can’t see it either.”

I swung the Frost Rain Sword to dish out a combo and answered offhandedly, “Level 51 Elite Monster, be careful. The levels of the monsters inside the cave will exceed your levels by far. No wonder this is an S-Rank quest!”

I struck at the Piranha with a [Fierce Ice Blade] and with a “puchi” sound, the Deep Water Piranha’s belly was penetrated through—displaying a damage number of “1104”.

Behind me, Old K swung his battle axe and when his [Flame Axe] skill

landed on the back of the Piranha, the fish scales shone from the light of the flames, and showed a damage number that was less than expected.

“151!”

“The f**k.....” Old K opened his mouth in shock. “What kind defense is that? I even have over 1300+ attack; such a big disparity compared to Boss Xiao Yao.....”

Little Wolf’s eyebrows furrowed, “Old K, be careful and don’t get one shotted. Let Brother Xiao Yao be the main attacker for this quest. We should stay in the back. There is a difference of 10 levels; our stats are being suppressed and your attack has been reduced by more than 20%, so how could you break its defense?”

TL: Oh crap, forgot about the level suppression – Uhh it’s a huge element in MMO games and is about constant over all of the games, what is it? Uhh, can some huge Chinese MMO gamer help me out here?

“Sure!” Old K swam toward the back with his battle axe.

Fox aimed his gun, and a “plop” emanated out. Nothing left the barrel—a misfire.....

“Nothing I can do; the gunpowder is wet. There is no way to use guns underwater!”

I couldn’t help but laugh, “This is normal. Your gun is not a modern waterproof gun.”

Saying that, my blade made a “keng” sound as it impaled the fish. As the fish died, it dropped 11 silver and a Pardon Card. Elite monsters are so generous; it actually dropped a Pardon Card.

I grabbed all the loot and looked inside the cave. I said, “We must hurry, the time for underwater breathing is about to run out. Let’s quickly find the [Cave of Despair]!”

Darling Duck answered, “Boss, it is very dark inside the cave. If you take out your Purple Tier equipment, there will be some light. Otherwise, we will be fighting the monsters in the dark.....”

“Sure!”

“Swoosh,” light burst out. The light came from the Frost Rain Sword in my hand and the Fire Beacon Helmet on my head. Gold Tier items can’t compare to Purple Tier items’ luster. . . Holding the Frost Rain Sword, I swam into the cave. Suddenly a message appeared: You have entered a dangerous zone, [Cave of Despair]!

But we weren’t in the actual [Cave of Despair] yet, the entrance to the cave was quite a way ahead and the oxygen that we saw came from there. In addition, there were some Deep Water Piranha monsters ahead that had to be killed by us. Old K’s attack damage wasn’t enough so I couldn’t count on him. Little Wolf’s [Bleed] + [Gouge] are of some help. Besides, it doesn’t really matter; I could easily take care of the Lv 51 Elite Monsters by myself!

After killing 7 Deep Water Piranhas, we finally arrived at the entrance of the zone. As we continued to swim forward, there appeared to be a light shining from the top of the cave. I held onto my sword and quickly swam upwards; the bar indicating my air supply was close to being depleted. If we didn’t get some fresh air, then we would die. It would be extremely embarrassing to die like this.

“Huff.....”

I got a sudden chill as I broke through the surface of the water. My forehead was covered in ocean water. The map showed that this place really was the [Cave of Despair]. Swimming ashore, I shook the ocean water off my body before turning to extend my hand to grab Darling Duck’s arm to help her get ashore. Taking a quick glance, I saw that she was soaked entirely. The way her sopping wet clothes clung to her still-developing body had a certain allure.

“Oh.....”

Darling Duck took a look at herself and her face instantly turned red. She stood there, with her staff, feeling at a loss.

I pursed my lips and said, “Okay, Old K and Little Wolf stop staring and let’s go further into the cave. The quest just started, and the Deep Water

Piranhas were just the beginning.”

Little Wolf nodded, “Sure. Even though we aren’t really helping out, the experience is still great. These Elite Monsters are fantastic.....”

“Haha, of course! The reason why I could reach Lv 45 so fast is because I was killing Elite Monsters. Otherwise, how could I level so fast? Let’s go!”

.....

I marched to the front of our group. The map for [Cave of Despair] was huge. In the distance, the path branched out into 7 different directions. No one knew which path would lead us to the [Shrine of Despair] and there was nothing we could do but search each path one by one.

Our footsteps echoed in the cave but we had not traveled for long when a monster appeared in front of us. It was a hunchbacked, humanoid monster with a shield and sword in its hands and it looked a lot like a standing seal with really buff arms. On top of its head was a helmet decorated with chicken feathers. It let out a muffled roar—

[Ocean Wolf Clan Warrior] (Elite Monster)

Level: 54

Attack: 800-1200

Defense: 700

Health: 5900

Abilities: [Combo], [Ice Blade], [Deep Ocean Mark]

Introduction: Ocean Wolf Clan is a wolf clan that has always lived in the deep ocean. They have gills to breath underwater and lungs to breath on land. These amphibious creatures have high intelligence and have started to equip themselves. Because the ocean wasn’t enough to satisfy them, they are now expanding outwards relentlessly. In Destiny, the Ocean Wolf Clan is wanted in all the empires located on the continents. You could get a lot of experience if you cash in their jewelry at a major city.

.....

“Careful.....” With a smile, I continued “No one come any closer. Don’t aggro the monster. This Lv 54 Elite Monster’s attack is very high and it has a Lv 6 [Combo]. You guys will not be able to handle it, so let me go alone. Fox, shoot at it from afar and Darling Duck, remember to keep healing me.....”

As they nodded their heads, I had already rushed out. I attacked with Frost Rain Sword, and the Ocean Wolf Clan Warrior’s neck was pierced by my [Fierce Ice Blade] which resulted in a large damage number—

“1074!”

I followed it up with a Lv 5 [Combo]! 3 golden hexagrams flew out, signalling 3 attacks. This was the difference between a Lv 5 and a Lv 6 [Combo]. A Lv 6 [Combo] has 4 attacks, and every attack was stronger than the Lv 5 counterpart. Thus, the advantage of skill levels was obvious.

I hadn’t finished attacking when the Ocean Wolf Clan Warrior counter-attacked with his long sword. At the same time, golden hexagrams appeared: “Pa, pa, pa,” the blows landed on my chest—

“317!”

“332!”

“628!”

“297!”

There was actually a critical hit; I quickly waved my hand and cast [Heal]. Some distance away, Darling Duck buffed me with Lv 5 [Encourage], increasing my attack by 5%. With a [Strength of A Thousand Men], the fight was over!

“Ow, oww.” With a pitiful cry, the Lv 54 Elite Monster died. He dropped 14 silver and a blood red token. Picking it up, I started to laugh---

[Ocean Wolf Clan Token]: This item can be exchanged in any major city for a large amount of experience!

.....

“Swoosh!”

I threw the token into the air and Wolf caught it in his hands, stunned, “Brother Xiao Yao, What is this?”

“It’s an item that can be exchanged for experience. I don’t need it. You 4 take it all; they will drop again. There are plenty of Ocean Wolf Clan monsters. I estimate we will get quite a few while struggling to finish the quest. Let’s try to get all of you guys to Lv 40!”

“Okay!” Little Wolf, Old K and the rest were quite excited. Darling Duck smiled sweetly. It seemed like she had already blended in with the group.

We continued to push forward. Elite Monsters’ drop rates were not high but at least Pardon Cards dropped, which I deemed extremely valuable. Having many Pardon Cards is a good thing for PK battle maniacs like me.

Pardon Cards were especially valuable for those who have been hunted year round. Upon login, they would use one, allowing them to PK whenever and keep their non-red name status. In Ba Huang City’s marketplace, the cost of a Pardon Card is around 20 gold. That’s 180 RMB, which is quite expensive and thus I am reluctant to buy them, so I farm them from monsters. This way I am more willing to use them.

.....

“Pa cha!”

The seventeenth Ocean Wolf Warrior dropped a piece of equipment: a pair of sparkling leather bracers when it was slain.

[Wolf Clan Bracers] (Silver Tier)

Type: Leather Gear

Defense: 65

Agility: +27

Endurance: +19

Required Level: 45

.....

Chapter 135: Kiss of the Flame

“Little Wolf, Fox—which one of you wants this bracer?”

I raised the spoil in my hand. It was a Lv 45 Silver Tier equipment that had great stats; maybe it could even be comparable to Lv 40 Gold Tier equipment.

Fox held up the smoking gun and said, “My Lv is not as high as Little Wolf’s, so give it to him! He is a melee class, so he will need equipments that give him both endurance and agility. I am ranged, so I prefer agility and strength equipments; that way my attack damage can reach another level and even match a Berserker’s.”

I nodded. Fox clearly analyzed the situation and realized that ranged classes don’t really need endurance. For example, Musketeers are an agility-type class. If you add agility, it will raise attack damage, and if you raise strength, it will raise attack damage as well. Thus, they have a greater need for equipment that gives both strength and agility.

I gave the wrist guard to Little Wolf, but he couldn’t equip it yet since everyone’s Lvs, including his, were still too low.

...

I kept on killing the monsters in front. After I killed a large amount of Ocean Wolf Warriors, I heard a gasp from Old K: “Ah, damn, isn’t that... isn’t that the Red Flamed Ore?”

“Red Flamed Ore?” I was surprised.

Old K couldn’t contain his excitement and he pulled out a pickaxe and started crazily mining at the wall. Before long, he got a cluster of minerals. Red Flamed Ore: Lv 5 ore. It’s a necessity for creating armor and forging.

While picking up the coins the monsters dropped, I asked, “Fox, what Lv is your forging skill?”

“Lv 4, and there’s still 15% left before I can reach Lv 5. The materials are too hard to get.” Fox smiled apologetically: “I won’t deny it; I used 300

gold coins from the studio to buy all sorts of raw material to train my forging skill. But when I reach Lv 5, I can create Lv 40 Silver Tier weapons!”

I’m astonished: “It’s that good?”

“Mm, if the quality of the raw materials are high enough and if I can find some precious gems to add on then creating a Lv 40+ Gold Tier weapon is possible...” Fox blinked his eyes and started dreaming, “According to rumors, the highest tier of weapons that players can create is Saint Tier. In the future, if I can get good enough raw materials, and get the most precious gems, then perhaps I can even create Divine or even God Tier equipment”

Wolf pursed his lips: “Don’t daydream about that. From the beginning until now, the best equipment that you’ve ever created is a Green Tier knife, and the rest are Black Iron and White equipment. I don’t even want to start on how much money you’ve wasted...”

Darling Duck laughed: “Then, in the future, when Glass Fox’s forging Lv is higher can you forge a high Lv Healer-type Saint Tier staff...”

Fox raised his gun: “Of course...”

“Of course what? Help me kill the monsters!” I yelled as I slashed my sword around.

...

3 hours later: in the final part of a branch path within the cave.

Standing next to the pattering river, I held my sword and knelt down next to the 5 dead Wolf Warriors’ corpses. I stretched out and picked up the drop from the ground, a magic-type boots and the stats were not bad either—

【Focus Ice Boots】 (Silver Tier equipment)

Type: Cloth Gear

Defense: 50

Ability Power: +29

Endurance: +24

Extra: Increases healing effects by 55 points

Lv Requirement: 45

...

I quickly threw the boots to Duck and said, “Here, these are boots that boost healing—they’re for you. Our luck isn’t bad to find such good equipment!”

Duck received the boots and happily smiled: “Thank you Boss, you’re so nice!”

Wolf raised his dagger and said, “Xiao Yao, it’s been 3 hours, and I’m already Lv 39. These monsters give so much experience, hehe. At this rate, I can almost reach Lv 43 when we finish this mission, but that is, of course, if we completely annihilate all the monsters in this cave.”

I nodded and smiled, “Mm, we’ll try our best to kill them all. After all, this is such a good chance to Lv up. After 7 more hours, I could probably rise to Lv 51 as well...”

Fox raised his smoking barrel and said, “Boss, in 3 hours, we gained a total of 7 Silver Tier equipment, 19 Bronze Tier equipment and countless Black Iron and Green equipment. Isn’t this a bit of a cheat?”

“That’s only because our boss has high charm...” Duck lightly smiled, “Pretty much over 70% of the monsters that we killed were killed by him. He has 34 charm, so the drop rate is increased by 34%...”

I paused, “Let’s continue. We didn’t get too many drops from this branch, so we’ll go down another. We’ll kill monsters for another 3 hours, and by then we can probably clear yet another path. Then at 7 o’clock, everyone disconnect and eat, or go to the washroom. Return by 8, we’ll continue straight through the night and by tomorrow we can probably finish this Rank S mission.”

Old K raised his battle axe, “Okay, we’ll continue. Next path!”

...

We continued killing along the path while the edge of my sword started to dull; the durability became worn down!

Almost 3 hours later: at the end of the 2nd branch.

Another Ocean Wolf Clan Warrior fell, signalling the completion of the branch. There weren't many good drops on this path either, which made me feel slightly disappointed, but at least Wolf had risen to Lv 40. There was no rush to go and get his 2nd Job Promotion; it would be best to wait until the mission is finished first, but my sword only had 10% durability left. Looking at the crippled sword, I said, "It looks like I need to return to Ba Huang City to repair some equipment and it's almost time as well right?"

Wolf checked the time: "Mm, 18:30, should we disconnect now?"

"Okay, then I'll go back to the city!"

I took out a City Return Scroll, and as I was about to use it, Duck pulled on my arm: "Boss, wait!"

"What's wrong?" I stopped the City Return Scroll.

"There..."

Duck pointed to a pile of mud at the end of the tunnel and said, "I feel like there's something moving over there..."

"What..."

I frowned. Holding the only 10% durability sword, I strode over there. It really looked like the mud was moving; maybe there was something there?

As I approached the mud, Wolf yelled out, "Xiao Yao, careful, there's a monster there!"

Before he finished his sentence, a tentacle stretched out from the mud, tightly grasped onto my sword arm and tried to pull me into the mud!

"Damn, it wants to eat our boss?" Fox was shocked.

Old K was already a Lv 39 Berserker. In a rage he put away his battleaxe

and rushed forward with huge steps. He grabbed onto the other tentacle of the monster and yelled, “Boss, let’s pull this guy out from the mud and see what kind of thing is here trying to scare people!”

“Okay!”

I couldn’t help but smile. I grasped the tentacle wrapped around and pulled on it while Old K pulled on the other one. Instantly, the mud gurgled. Suddenly, a huge squid-like thing was pulled out. It had a total of 8 tentacles and all of them were wriggled around. The monster was as tall as a person and its face looked like a honeycomb. With sharp grumbles, this guy also appeared surprised!

It was still a Boss Tier monster, so I quickly read the stats of the monster and shared them in the party channel—

【Mud Monster】(Gold Tier Boss)

Lv: 51

Attack: 1000-1420

Defense: 600

HP: 80000

Skills: [Bind] [Excessive Blows] [Mud Trap]

Description: Mud Monster—an evil demon hiding in the [Cave of Despair]. According to legends, it can twist and kill an ancient elephant. Extremely terrifying.

...

“Hehe, a Lv 51 Gold Tier boss! Its Lv is lower than the normal monsters’...” Fox laughed and shot at the monster with a bang, making it cry out and dealing 400+ damage. This Mud Monster’s defense was pretty bad.

I tightly clenched my long sword, quickly rushed up and yelled, “I’ll control the aggro. Little Wolf and Old K, back off. Fox, support with ranged fire. And Duck, keep me healed. We’ll finish this within 5 minutes!”

My sword started to glow, indicating the Lv 5 [Combo], and with several bangs, 4 damage numbers appeared on the boss—

“587!”

“601!”

“599!”

“627!”

...

Indeed, the stats of this Gold Tier Boss couldn't be compared to those of Purple Tier Bosses, and its Lv was very close to mine. I could probably solo this boss.

With a whoosh, air surged from underneath my legs, which marked the activation of the combo. How rare, my harmony with [Strength of a Thousand Men] increased by another 0.9% and was now at 67.9%. I heard that the skill would Lv up if the harmony reached 100%, but who knows? After all, it hasn't been done before.

Grumble...

The Mud Monster tried to resist: It opened all 8 tentacles and tried to twist them around me. But with the slash of my Frost Rain Sword, they all got knocked away—there was even a Fatal Strike! The boss whined and its tentacles only did 300-500 damage to me which couldn't cause any life threatening attacks. With my own heals and a top-class Healer behind me, I could pretty much kill this Lv 51 Gold Tier boss with no trouble.

At the end, within 5 minutes, or rather a bit over 3 minutes, the Mud Monster cried out and died— dropping plenty of items!

With a crash, all sorts of equipment and shiny gold coins dropped and piled on the floor. The five people in the party were all excited and with a ray of light, Fox rose to Lv 40, and finally started looking like a true Musketeer.

“Boss, go look at the drops!” Old K said with his axe raised.

I nodded and looked at the Boss' drops. There were 2 pieces of

equipment: a ring and the other was a shiny gun. If all went well, it would become Fox's weapon. First, I looked at the ring. As, I held it in my hand, a collection of light formed a window in front of me—

【Ring of the Worthy】 (Gold Tier Equipment)

Ability Power: +28

Endurance: +25

Extra: When healers use healing abilities, they have a 10% chance of having 100 extra healing points

Lv Requirement: 41

...

Holding the ring, I tossed it over to Duck and smiled: "Your luck is really good; you got 2 equipments in succession. This ring is pretty good. It adds 50+ stats and has a chance of healing an extra 100 health!"

Duck gave a sweet smile: "Thanks boss, hehe, I feel like I'm going to become extra strong! I'm already Lv 44..."

I laughed and held up the gun the boss had dropped. The gun barrel had a glass color and Dwarf glyphs were engraved on the gun. With a wave, the stats appeared and instantly Fox started to drool—

【Kiss of the Black Flame】 (Gold Tier Equipment)

Attack: 360-575

Strength: +28

Agility: +26

Extra: Increases 4% attack damage

Extra: Increases 35 attack damage

Lv Requirement: 40

...

Chapter 136: Innate Super Strength

“That...That weapon’s for me...”

Fox’s eyes stared fixedly at the gun. After swallowing a mouthful of saliva, he said, “28 strength, 26 agility and an extra 35 damage; guys, this is a godly weapon for Musketeers...”

With a flick of my hand, the Gold Tier gun flew toward Fox.

With a “pa” sound, Fox caught the weapon. Having already met the Lv requirement, he immediately replaced his original gear. “Good...This is good....”

Little Wolf asked with a smile, “Brother Fox, how much attack do you now have?”

Fox, “1287 attack; hehe, this is too strong for a ranged attacker!”

Me, “Your Lv 5 [Aimed Shot] boosts your attack by 10%, plus Darling Duck’s [Encourage] increases it further by 5%. With this, there’s a total damage increase of 15%. Your actual damage would be around 1480 and unless the target’s defense is more than 1200 or if your attack doesn’t hit, you would be able to penetrate through their armor. Now you’re one of the main attackers as well.”

Fox then nodded with a big smile, “With this powerful weapon, I absolutely will not disappoint the team!”

Darling Duck checked and then teased Fox, “This Kiss of the Black Flame ranks 47th in the weapons ranking. Hehe, it is indeed powerful...”

Facing such a beauty, Fox scratched his nose, “Joining the game with the 2nd batch of helmets and still able to rise to Lv 40 within 7 days along with owning an amazing weapon; I feel really satisfied.”

I checked the time and said, “Ok, I have to go offline first and accompany Lin Wan Er to eat. Everyone else should go rest and resupply. I also have to return to the city and have the Frost Rain Sword repaired; it only has 7% durability remaining. After finishing those things, let’s meet here again...”

“Ok!”

...

I took out a City Return Scroll, crumpled it and then a ray of light surrounded me. I was teleported back to Ba Huang City!

I hurriedly visited the equipment repair shop, took out 8 gold coins and had my weapon fixed. After finding my Purple Tier Frost Rain Sword, my repair costs have really gone up by a lot, almost to the point where I can't afford it anymore.

I opened my friends list and searched for Lin Wan Er's name, sending a message, “Wan Er, I'm ready. Shall I wait for you downstairs?”

“Ok! Dong Cheng and I will log off now.”

“Ok...”

...

I left Ba Huang City, heading directly towards the southwestern sea area. After entering the Ba Huang forest, I logged out, removed my helmet, tidied my wrinkled clothes and then went out!

At 7 pm, many boys were standing outside the females' dormitory, waiting to meet their girlfriends.

I emitted an imposing aura as I stood downstairs, surveying the area with my Qi. After several minutes, Lin Wan Er and Dong Cheng Yue arrived and I immediately moved forward to greet them: “What shall we eat tonight? Our young miss has not treated us to a meal for a long time. You should be the host...”

Wan Er glanced at me. “Humph, this freeloader...Relax, we will have a feast tonight and you don't need to pay anything. We'll go to First Heaven Restaurant today...”

I was startled. “First Heaven Restaurant again, do you think you have too much money or ?”

Wan Er chuckled: “It's Dong Cheng's treat today...”

“Dong Cheng?”

I turned my head and asked Dong Cheng, “Dong Cheng, don’t you always scrounge for food? How come you are treating today? Moreover, you’re bringing us to First Heaven Restaurant...”

Dong Cheng smiled at me and said, “Not really, it’s not me who is paying but rather my Dad who has not seen me in a long time. I asked him to invite all three of us to dinner... I frequently mention you and Wan Er to my father. Don’t worry, my father is a very warm and amiable person...”

“Oh....”

...

In the parking lot, I sat in the driver’s seat while Wan Er placed herself beside me and Dong Cheng took the back seat. While driving the Audi TT to leave the campus, I asked Dong Cheng, “By the way, I don’t really know you that much, Dong Cheng. I know that your way of speaking is different from most people’s. Tell me, what does your family do? You never mentioned it...”

Dong Cheng smiled. “It’s confidential, I can’t tell you...”

Lin Wan Er then flashed her phone, on which a line of text could be seen. Smiling, she read out: “The Dong Cheng group: one of South and East China’s largest real estate developers. The Southern Water and Sky Imperial Seal, Blue Lake Rhyme and other famous real estates are some of the projects of the Dong Cheng group. The current chief executive officer, CEO, is Dong Cheng Feng, 52 years old. He has a daughter named Dong Cheng Yue and an adopted son named Dong Cheng Lei. How about that, detailed enough?”

I took a deep breath, “Another wealthy second generation, damn it....”

TL: The wealthy second generation also refers to the kids of rich people in China. Unlike other countries, a lot of them like to show off their wealth – Buying a Ferrari when they’re 10 etc.

Dong Cheng Yue leaned behind my chair, chuckled and said, “Don’t

hate on the rich; I don't live an extravagant and luxurious life."

I agreed, "That is something I truly understand. If you led a lavish life, you would not follow me and Wan Er to eat every day. But Dong Cheng, is your dad, Dong Cheng Feng, very strict like Wan Er's father?"

Lin Wan Er laughed cutely, "What? My father isn't ..."

Without emotion on my face: "Every time I meet your father, his aura alone makes it hard for me to breathe. I'm even afraid to look at you. Don't you dare say that your father isn't severe.... "

Dong Cheng giggled: "That is because Uncle Lin is worried that you, a shameless guy, might steal the pearl of his eye. His desire to protect his family isn't something you could understand..."

(TL: Basically means Lin Tian Nan is overprotective.)

"Protect family?" Astonished, I replied, "Protect family? Which character for family is that? Isn't that the one in f*** off as well?"

TL: The second character for protecting family, 护犊, is the same as the second character for f*** off, 滚犊子. 犊's literal translations is calf and is meant to show a father/mother's desire to protect their offspring.

Lin Wan Er's face darkened: "F*** off... You meanie..."

Me: "Goddesses should never curse... .."

Lin Wan Er: "..."

...

After 20 minutes, we finally arrived at the First Heaven Restaurant.

We headed directly to a private room on the second floor. Near the door, clad in a very stylish Chinese tunic suit was a middle-aged man. Next to him stood a tall and muscular young man, who looked silly while wearing a T-shirt. It was not hard to guess that these men were father and son, Dong Cheng Feng and Dong Cheng Lei.

"Father..."

Dong Cheng Yue, while carrying her purse, ran towards Dong Cheng

Feng and intimately hugged his arm. She smiled and said, “Father, you have not invited me even once to eat dinner! If that continues, your daughter will starve to death in Liu Hua University!!”

Dong Cheng Feng fondly looked at his daughter and said: “Well, aren’t you exaggerating? And you’re still impulsive, why don’t you introduce me to your two best friends?”

Dong Cheng Yue nodded, returned and took Lin Wan Er’s hand: “This is Lin Wan Er, Uncle Lin’s daughter. Dad, you should have already seen her.”

“Oh, so this is Lin Tian Nan’s daughter....” Dong Cheng Feng seemed surprised: “I didn’t know that the average looking Lin Tian Nan has such a beautiful looking daughter. This is incredible....”

Dong Cheng Yue then patted my shoulder and leaned on me. She laughingly said, “Father, this is my good friend — Li Xiao Yao. He is Wan Er’s bodyguard, but he’s an interesting fellow... ”

“Oh, this is Li Xiao Yao?”

Dong Cheng Feng narrowed his eyes while looking at me, “Since Lin Tian Nan trusts you, allowing you to watch over his precious daughter, Li Xiao Yao, you must have some amazing skills, right?”

I humbly smiled: “No, I just practice several fighting styles...”

“Young people are really modest. Sit...”

“Thanks!”

At this time, the silly-looking Dong Cheng Lei came over and laughingly asked Dong Cheng Yue, “Dong Cheng Yue, have you brought me any delicious treats?”

Dong Cheng Yue paused, “I forgot, but Brother, let me introduce you to a big-shot!”

“Ah?” Dong Cheng Lei was stunned.

Dong Cheng Yue then immediately dragged Dong Cheng Lei by the arm and stood in front of me as she said, “This is Li Xiao Yao, you can call him Big Brother. It should be fine, right?”

Dong Cheng was quite ecstatic and pulled my arm, “Brother Xiao Yao? Haha, I have a brother! Xiao Yao, you are my brother, right? Father, you’ve always lied to me, saying that I do not have a brother!”

Dong Cheng Feng was flabbergasted: “Dumb kid, let go of Li Xiao Yao quickly ...”

TL: Kid is meant in a friendly way

I couldn’t help but laugh: “It’s okay Uncle, let him sit beside me!”

“Hmm...Okay...” Dong Cheng Feng said helplessly, “I won’t hide it from you guys. Lei’s parents are already deceased. When he was 7 years old, he lost both his mother and father. Since then, I have treated him as my own son. Unfortunately, his intelligence is less than that of an average person, so please do not be surprised. If he makes any mistakes, I ask that you do not blame him...”

I nodded. “Don’t worry.”

“That’s good... Yue, what do you want to eat?”

Dong Cheng Yue looked at the menu and chose expensive dishes, not caring about how much they costed. Her father had the money anyway.

...

At 8:30 in the evening, my phone rang with a “beep” sound. It was Song Han’s number. After I picked it up, I spoke in a low voice —

“Little Wolf, I have some matters to attend to, so I temporarily cannot speak with you right now. You guys just kill the Elite Monsters one by one. I’ll be back after an hour!”

Song Han: “I know, so I told Old K and Darling Duck to do that and gradually kill monsters. We’ll be waiting for you to return.”

“Good!”

.....

Beside me, Dong Cheng Lei laid down his chicken and said, “Brother Xiao Yao, you also play <<Destiny>>, right? I heard you saying Elite

Monsters; I have also killed Elite Monsters...”

I nodded: “Does Lei also play <<Destiny>>?”

“Yes, I’m a Lv 44 Berserker...I named it Cang Lei... ”

“Oh, the same kind of name as Wan Er and Yue Er... ..”

Dong Cheng Lei then asked me, “Brother Xiao Yao, do you have a team? I want to join your team...”

I was startled and slowly looked at Dong Cheng Yue.

Dong Cheng Yue was speechless: “Ah, well, my brother has not joined any guild or studio so far. Joining the Zhan Long Studio will have its own benefits as well. His Berserker is quite powerful; he already had an SS Tier skill at Lv 17...”

“Ah?” My mouth hung open. “What skill?”

“[Super Strength]... He gets Lv * 2 strength ...”

“Damn...”

I stared at Dong Cheng Lei: “Lei, how did you get such a skill?”

Dong Cheng Lei gave me a silly smile: “Brother Xiao Yao, I don’t know, I just accidentally learned it...”

.....

Dong Cheng Feng narrowed his eyes, “Li Xiao Yao, Ah Lei is born with extraordinary strength. Why not try to take a punch from him? His punches are heavier than those of boxing champions. Think it over a bit and don’t hurt yourself... ”

I felt excited, and smiled, “Lei, hit me using 100% of your strength. Do not hold back...”

Dong Cheng Lei: “Brother, I’m afraid I might hurt you...”

“Don’t worry and just fight!”

“Okay!”

I had just finished talking when Dong Cheng Lei suddenly left his chair

and threw a swift and powerful punch directly at my chest. This stupid kid, I hadn't even said to begin and he caught me off guard! You don't greet someone with a punch!

...

I hurriedly raised both of my arms in front of my chest to resist!

“Bang!”

Lei's fist landed, numbing both of my arms as I was pushed backwards in my chair. With a “bang!” sound, I crashed into the wall behind me as dust fell off it, making a rustling noise.

“Li Xiao Yao, are you alright?” Lin Wan Er rushed to my side.

I took a glance at my arms, then looked at Dong Cheng Lei and laughed loudly: “Great, supernatural strength... Very good, my team would love to have you!”

Dong Cheng Lei was overjoyed.

Chapter 137: Super RMB Warrior

Dong Cheng Feng smiled: “It seems like Lei will now settle down in the game. Li Xiao Yao, please take care of this little fool...”

I nodded: “Don’t worry, Uncle Dong Cheng.”

Dong Cheng Feng inspected me with his eyes and said with a smile, “To be able to take a blow from Lei and still remain calm. It looks like what Yue said about you being strong was not a lie.”

I simply smiled and then looked at Dong Cheng Lei: “Your <<Destiny>> ID is called Cang Lei, right?”

“Yes, Brother!”

That silly boy, Dong Cheng Lei, really considered me as a brother now ...

“Alright, after we get back to the game, I will add you to my friends list and introduce you to everyone. I’d also like to let you know that starting today, you can LV up together with the rest of us.”

“Great, that’s great!” Dong Cheng Lei said, excitement pouring out of him. He grasped Dong Cheng Yue’s small hands and exclaimed, “Yue, now I have a team! Did you see! Somebody already wants me...”

Dong Cheng Yue was astonished, and then chuckled: “OK Brother, just don’t cause any trouble there in Zhan Long. You wouldn’t want to put Xiao Yao in a tight spot, now would you?”

“Yes, I know!”

.....

The banquet finished around 10 in the evening. Dong Cheng Feng and Dong Cheng Lei, accompanied by 4 bodyguards, took a Mercedes Benz and left. Meanwhile, I escorted Lin Wan Er and Dong Cheng Yue back to school. In general, the meal was very good. I felt like I was going to die from being too bloated...

The two ladies went upstairs and I immediately returned back to the male dorm to online to find Song Han—

“Ding!”

I appeared in Ba Huang Forest with the Frost Rain Sword in my hand and the Ancient Tablet on my back. I joined Wolf’s party and quickly rushed towards the direction of the four of them. The team channel opened up as Darling Duck’s voice reverberated—

“Boss, you’re finally online. Hmm, we almost died waiting...”

“What’s the problem, can’t you four take out a LV 54 elite monster?”

“Actually, we can, but it takes time. It’s also exceptionally dangerous. Just now, the monster stormed Old K with critical hits and almost caused him to die. His health is way too low...”

Old K’s face was red with shame: “This is, this is the consequence of pursuing high damage...”

“Your damage is not high...” Darling Duck teased, “Big Boss’ attacks do over a thousand already; yet your axes only do 200-500 damage. Is that the result of pursuing high damage...”

Old K couldn’t find anything to say, so Wolf defended him: “Although Old K added all his points to strength, he is still poorly equipped. Also, Xiao Yao is 11 LVs higher than him. Brother Xiao Yao has the Purple Tier Frost Rain Sword and Purple Tier Fire Beacon Helmet and the rest are basically Gold Tier equipments. The difference is too great to compare...”

I glanced down at my own equipment and laughed: “You think too highly of me. My bracers, boots, leg guards, and rings are all Silver Tier. Only my chest plate is Gold Tier. Unlike Jian Feng Han and Soaring Dragon, who have the backing of their respective guilds, I cannot make use of your efforts to my own advantage.”

Darling Duck replied, “Boss, come here quickly. We are waiting for you!”

“Wait a sec, one more thing. Earlier this evening, I went out to dinner and recruited another strong player for Zhan Long. Wait a minute, and I’ll invite this fierce fighter into the party.”

Darling Ducky: “Boss is really amazing...”

Old K sighed: “Dang, you just had a meal and suddenly recruited a player for the studio. Maybe, I can also recruit one after using a toilet...”

I squinted my eyes: “Making fun of your boss? Old K you should know the consequences for that...”

Old K shivered: “Big Boss is the strongest under the heaven!”

.....

I stopped chatting with my team and then used my friend finder to search for Cang Lei, the LV 44 Berserker. He was online. I sent him a friend request along with a message saying, “I am Li Xiao Yao. Lei, add me!”

After a few seconds, he confirmed my friend request and called me with a smile: “Brother Xiao Yao, you have such a high LV and are one of Ba Huang city’s top players. Good job!”

I answered, “Yeah. Lei, you’re pretty far away, but I’ll invite you to the party. We’ll chat with everybody!”

“Okay!”

I invited him to the party from my friends list and after several seconds, we became a 6-man team. It was quite unfortunate that Dong Cheng Lei couldn’t share the quest with us. With me and Dong Cheng Lei finally in, the team chat channel exploded—

Wolf: “Eh... A LV 44 Berserker? Holy Cow!”

Dong Cheng Lei: “Hey, hello everybody! I’m Li Xiao Yao’s brother. My name is Dong Cheng Lei, but call me Cang Lei online...”

Old K: “Cang Lei? Sounds familiar. Oh yeah, is he part of the Cang Tong, Cang Yue family?”

I replied, “Yeah, Cang Lei is Cang Yue’s brother. She’s the one you know as Dong Cheng Yue. Lei’s ID and Dong Cheng Yue’s ID are almost the same, everyone can see it. Let’s add everyone to our friends lists since we are all a team!”

Darling Duck said with a smile, “Brother Cang Lei!”

东城雷愣了愣：“这位水姐姐，你的名字，另外三个字怎么读啊，老爹没有教过我...”

Dong Cheng Lei answered back: “Sister Water, I don’t know how to say the other three characters in your name, father hasn’t taught me how to read them...”

TL: There are 4 characters in Darling Duck’s name – 晃水囡囡 and the second one is water

Darling Duck: “...”

I followed up, “Lei, tomorrow you should come to Ba Huang City from Jiu Li City. Zhan Long’s base is in Ba Huang City;we’ll be staying here for now.”

Dong Cheng Lei: “Okay, Brother Xiao Yao!”

“Oh right...” Then I said, “What are your equipment and skills? Remember to share it with us so Fox can record it. Everyone must understand each other’s capabilities.”

Cheng Lei smiled and quickly shared his equipment and skill data in the team chat—

SS Skill [Super Strength]: Receives level * 2 base points of strength

[Fire Axe], [Flame Axe], [Penetration], [Rage], [Heavy Strike] are all LV-5.

Weapon: Garnet Axe, LV 42 Gold Tier

Armor: Spirit Helmet, LV 40 Gold Tier

Nine Practice Chest Plate, LV 43 Gold Tier

Mountain String Wristband, LV 37 Gold Tier

Famous Shin Guard, LV 41 Gold Tier

Blue Lightning Boots, LV 44 Gold Tier

Rhodospirillum Ring, LV 43 Gold Tier

Beast Weed Necklace, LV 41 Gold Tier

Overall attributes——

Attack Damage: 1279-1675

Defense: 1104

Health: 2470

Mana: 878

Charm Value: 17

...

“I.....Damn!!!!”

Wolf cried out in surprise: “What is this? Is this what the overall stats of a LV 44 Berserker looks like? This kind of strength completely overpowers most of Ba Huang City’s top players!”

Old K shivered, “His equipment is really high-end... Ah, even his attack has almost reached 1900. Cang Lei’s gear is really too powerful. If I had just one Gold Tier equipment, I could die peacefully.”

Darling Duck’s lips trembled: “Geez, his defense and health points are higher than Boss’. Is this really a Berserker?”

I said helplessly, “Cang Lei is fully equipped with Gold Tier gear. If you account for my Fire Beacon Helmet and replace my Silver Tier equipment with Gold Tier equipment, my defense should be better than Cang Lei’s...”

Song Han asked, “Lei, are you procuring your own equipment, or?”

Dong Cheng Lei gave a silly smile: “No, I bought these at the Auction House in Fan Shu City. My father gave me a lot of money to buy good equips, saying “As long as you’re happy.” Sister Yue also helped me pick a few equips, like the Blue Lightning Boots and the Rhodospirillum Ring, which she bought for me. Ha ha ha, aren’t these equips pretty good?”

I agreed: “Yes, this whole set would cost about 100k RMB at the present stage. How much money did your father provide for you to spend that leisurely...”

Dong Cheng Lei, “I don’t know how to count. Brother Xiao Yao, help me have a look...”

“Ding!”

Dong Cheng Lei’s bank account balance was shared in the team chat, terrifying the poor Zhan Long studio——

Account Balance: 52,478,994.00 Yuan

....

“This is cheating....” Wolf’s face was pale with shock: “This is just Lei’s pocket money? It’s 5000W+! My father only gave me 200 Yuan a month for school expenses. As for the rest, I had to work for it. This is ridiculous! This is injustice!”

Old K laughed: “He can leech off his dad more than you can, Wolf. You lose. Make sure you get along with him in the future! Lei’s leaving Fan Shu City tomorrow and coming to Ba Huang City. Our team’s DPS is gonna spike! Before all this it was Little Wolf and I who held the team on our backs; Fox’s gunshots might as well not have existed. Tomorrow with Lei here, we’ll be finishing off similar-LV monsters within 3 Axe hacks. It’s going to be so beautiful!”

Dong Cheng Lei was somewhat surprised: “Brother Xiao Yao, do you guys have bad equipment?”

I responded, “Well, we’re starting from scratch. We have no money to buy equipment, so everything we have, we found by ourselves. With such equipment, our total damage and defense capabilities are slightly lower.”

Dong Cheng Lei laughed: “That’s not a problem. Tomorrow, I’ll buy equipment for everyone to make you guys stronger! Brother Xiao Yao’s brothers are my brothers too!”

Wolf: “...”

Old K: “...”

I strongly opposed, “Don’t mention that again. Lei, you don’t need to buy us equipment nor provide us with game items. You can purchase things

for yourself, but not for us. We are a team because we want to protect each other, not to take any items from you, okay?”

Dong Cheng Lei panicked: “That, I won’t say that again, don’t be angry Brother Xiao Yao. I won’t say it again...”

Both Wolf and Old K laughed, while Fox smilingly said, “This silly boy, he really treats Li Xiao Yao as his brother...”

Me: “Well, you are now on my friends list. Lei, you should go to Ba Huang City tomorrow to exchange your Jiu Li city emblem and then we’ll train together after that. I think that should be all for now and let’s stop chatting. We will continue LVing here first, so you should do the same.”

“Okay, I’ll go now Brother Xiao Yao!”

“Go ahead~”

....

Dong Cheng Lei left while everyone was still talking in the team chat——

Wolf: “Brother Xiao Yao, about Dong Cheng Lei... What about him?”

I smiled: “Dong Cheng Yue’s father is Dong Cheng Feng and Dong Cheng Lei is his adopted son and Yue’s adopted elder brother. Dong Cheng Lei’s thinking is very simple, so please do not bully him later on, or else I’ll hold it against you...”

Old K said, “To give an adopted child so much money, Dong Cheng Feng really dotes on him....”

I nodded: “He really treats him as his own. Even Dong Cheng Yue is quite good to him. By the way, what is everyone’s opinion about Dong Cheng Lei joining us? ”

Wolf answered, “A super RMB warrior joined our group; this is definitely a good thing for our Zhan Long studio. Hey, this will also help us become more popular!”

Fox agreed and said with a smile, “A hundred advantages but no harm!”

Me: “Well then, so be it. You guys wait for me, and we will continue to

sweep the Cave of Despair in 20 minutes! ”

“Okay!”

Chapter 138: Requirements for Establishing a Guild

At 4:00 AM –

“Klang!”

The Frost Rain Sword met the shield of the Ocean Wolf Warrior, creating countless sparks and also taking out the last of its health while loot burst out everywhere. Aside from 11 silver coins, it dropped another Pardon Card and an Ocean Wolf Warrior Illustration. Additionally, there was a Token, which could be converted into experience. I instantly gave the Token to Little Wolf. After returning from this mission, they should all be at Lv 42. This Rank S mission truly did give quite a bit of experience.

.....

Holding the Frost Rain Sword, I stood there and let out a big breath. Looking at everyone, I asked, “Eh, are you guys tired yet?”

Little Wolf nodded, “Drop-dead tired...”

Darling Duck’s eyes were red, “Boss, even though we’re quickly leveling, we...we still have to go offline to rest for a while. Out of the 7 paths that the Cave of Despair has, we have already eliminated 6 of them and we only have one more road left. Tomorrow, we can raid the Boss of the Shrine of Despair to finish the mission in one go.”

I smiled and nodded, “Okay, then it’s time to go offline and rest. Ahem, I still have to return to the city one more time to repair my equipment. Because I have been the only one taking damage from the monsters, the durability of my equipment is quite low.”

Fox carried his rifle and said, “After you complete the mission, give me your Frost Rain Sword so I can take it to a blacksmith shop to enhance it. After it is strengthened, your weapon’s durability will depreciate at a slower rate than before.”

“Eh? It can be strengthened in that way?”

“Ah, since you don’t have the blacksmith profession, it is natural that this is unknown to you.”

“All right, I’ll be returning to the city then, you all go offline and get some rest!”

Fox looked into his bag and said, “Then I’ll return to the city once as well, I have too much equipment in my inventory. There’s 11 Silver Tier equips and if any of them are lost, it’ll be a great shame. I’ll return to the city and store them in the warehouse and sell it on the market later!”

“Okay!”

.....

Fox and I returned to the city. I went to repair my equipment while he went to store the loot we earned. Afterwards, in order not to waste everyone’s time, we spent nearly an hour returning to the Cave of Despair and logged off at the entrance. Tomorrow when we got online, we would be ready to fight. We agreed to meet at 12 PM noon tomorrow to get online and complete this mission as soon as possible.

“Wow...”

Removing the game helmet, I took a deep breath and felt the Qi around me. Like how the spring rain nourishes all living things, Qi can help me recover the energy that I have lost. Sitting on the bed, I closed my eyes and let the Qi flow into my blood vessels and embrace me. My limbs instantly felt strong and limber once more, and clenching my fist, I felt my power return at full capacity. This was the benefit of using Qi, one can use Qi to release clogged arteries!

Recovering one’s strength this way was many times faster than the average person’s recovery rate.

I slept until 7 in the morning and after I heard the bell, I hastily got out of bed. After donning my clothes and buying breakfast, I waited for the girls outside their dormitory. Not too much time had passed when Wan Er and Dong Cheng Yue came downstairs and together we walked towards

our class. I did not dare to skip Monday classes, for the professor did not have any mercy. You were toast if you had not shown up by the time he called roll!

.....

I slept with my head down on the desk until the end of class bell rang, waking me up. I opened my eyes and shook myself awake, only to discover a pair of beautiful eyes staring back at me.

“Miss...” I stared at her, “What are you looking at?”

Wan Er turned her face away, the corners of her mouth slightly rising, “Li Xiao Yao, did you play all of last night? Tell me where were you training at. To have stayed up all night again and you leveled up to Lv 51 as well...”

I thought for a moment before saying, “Zhan Long received a Rank S mission, but they were not strong enough to finish it, so I helped them complete it. Why?”

“It’s nothing, it’s already time for the third class. You can go back to sleep for another lesson...”

“Okay...”

On the side, Dong Cheng Yue smiled while looking at me, “Li Xiao Yao, my older brother didn’t give you any problems right?”

“Of course not, how could he...”

Dong Cheng Yue smiled, nodded and then said, “Yesterday when I was browsing the forums, I saw the [Vanguard] Guild with a post against you.”

“Oh? Against me? I don’t think I’ve provoked them these past few days, have I?”

“You have! Who says you didn’t? I’ve heard your guild stole away a high-Lved Healer named Darling Duck. Is this true or not true?”

I looked at her, dumbfounded, “That’s not it, Darling Duck wasn’t strong to be a main player in [Vanguard]. Saying that we stole her, this is

becoming too much...”

Wan Er chuckled, “Besides that, there were two other events that happened yesterday: In the three cities, two more Guild Creation Tablets were obtained, and two guilds were officially established ...”

“Oh? Which guilds?”

“[Legend] of Jiu Li City and [Hero’s Mound] of Fan Shu City...”

Dong Cheng Yue was shocked, “Wan Er, are you saying... that when we weren’t online, Q-Sword and the others established the guild?”

“Yeah,” Wan Er nodded, “Not even 3 hours after we logged off, Sighing Sword led 50+ people south of Fan Shu City and killed a Lv 54 Purple Tier Tiger Lord Boss. It dropped a Guild Creation Tablet and as well as a Purple Tier Leather Leg Guard . Wuwu, when we were online, nothing dropped. That Purple Tier Leather Leg Guard isn’t mine now...”

Dong Cheng Yue couldn’t help but laugh, patting Wan Er’s shoulder, “Don’t worry Wan Er, as long as we continue to hold onto our level superiority and stuff like that will be found by us sooner or later. Don’t worry...”

“Yea...”

Wan Er looked at me with a sudden smile, “Li Xiao Yao, recently, Liu Ying and Xue Yue haven’t harassed you, have they? It feels quite quiet, so quiet that I feel tense. What is happening in Ba Huang City at the moment?”

I frowned and said, “The last time they tried to kill me was in the Green Qilin Valley. [Wrath of the Heroes] had 300+ people chase me, and when they caught up to me, they all died in the Green Qilin Abyss. I’m guessing Liu Ying was scared, so they stopped trying to kill me. Who cares whether or not he has some big plan brewing? Although I’m merely the boss of a gold farming studio, he has no way to wreck havoc upon us. As far as the situation in Ba Huang City is concerned...[Vanguard] was just officially established as a guild. Jian Feng Han will for sure have his members train hard for the next 24 hours in order to gain guild experience and aim for a

Lv 4 guild to be able to take in 2000 people. This will surely be the start of a new era. Other than that, the [Flying Dragon] guild was destroyed at the Princess' Tomb, although Soaring Dragon will not give up so easily. They will continue to try and fight against [Valiant Bravery]. Like water and fire, those two are very incompatible.

“Ha...” Wan Er gave a light laugh, “Ba Huang City's situation seems to be really unclear since so many people are involved in such a large power struggle; it seems to be bustling with excitement. Compared to Ba Huang City, Fan Shu City and Jiu Li City seem to be quite cheerful since there are no guilds that can compete with either [Legends] or [Hero Mound] within their respective cities...”

I held the textbook in both hands and looked at it briefly, figuring out that I was holding it upside down, “Both are too far away from me, right now, my only goal is to quickly recruit 10 people into Zhan Long...”

Wan Er sighed, a pair of beautiful eyes looked at me, “How many people are there as of right now?”

“Including me, 6 people...”

Dong Cheng Yue chuckled, clenching her fist, “Brother Xiao Yao, you can do it!”

“...” I gave no answer.

Wan Er then asked, “When are you going to establish Zhan Long?”

I gave it some thought, then said, “There are three conditions that must be met before I will establish a guild.”

“Oh? What conditions?”

“First off, Zhan Long has to have at least 50 people. Secondly, the Gold to RMB exchange rate must be lower than 1:5, or else 10,000 gold would be too costly. Thirdly, the studio's average Lv has to be at least Lv 45, and we need to get the Guild Creation Table by ourselves otherwise, it would be too expensive to buy one even if we sold ourselves off...”

Wan Er listened to my conditions attentively and with a sweet smile, she

said, “Okay then, I’ll just have to cheer for you in spirit, work hard okay? Dong Cheng and I are waiting for you to enter China’s top 10 guilds before we will join. Then, we will leave [Hero Mound] without a trace of hesitation and become a part of Zhan Long, okay?”

“That’s good! Let’s eat an early lunch since I have to go finish a mission in the afternoon...”

“Okay!”

...

Afternoon 12:30: I get online, even though it’s a little late!

“Slash!”

Appearing not too far away from the Cave of Despair, I saw that Little Wolf, Little K and Darling Duck are fighting a Lv 54 Elite Monster which was giving them some trouble.

“Keng!”

I unsheathed the Frost Rain Sword while Bobo shot forth to lend a hand. But since I was not in their party yet, all of the experience was given to them.

“Brother Xiao Yao!”

Little Wolf looked happy, “We earned a lot today! Almost all of the equipment we earned yesterday at the Cave of Despair was sold. We already earned a profit of 372 Gold. If we continue at this rate, Zhan Long will make 100,000 Yuan per month and be a top end studio!”

I nodded, “Okay, then let’s continue to work hard and begin the final path and start killing; we will most likely finish the mission at the end of the cave.”

“Okay!”

...

After almost 2 hours, around 3:30 PM, a pair of black steel gates appeared at the end of the path embedded into the cave-side, appeared in

our vision. On the steel gate was an iron ring, as if it was inviting us to knock on the gates.

“The Shrine of Despair is on the other side...” Little Wolf clenched his dagger, “Brother Xiao Yao, are you going to knock on the gates or should I?”

“Be careful of traps...” I cautiously held my sword while I took a step forward, “I’ll knock, but be ready to fight, who knows what is inside the Shrine of Despair!”

“Okay, be careful!”

I stepped forward and gripping the ring, I struck the gate with it!

“Bang!”

The entire gate trembled with the sudden vibrations and slowly opened. All of a sudden, an extremely foul smell came wafting in from the shrine—

Blood dripped all over the floor while the decapitated corpse of a Cyclops lay inside of the shrine, trembling. What a powerful creature, to have this much vitality even after having its head cut off! It was truly amazing!

...

In the center of the shrine, the head of the Cyclops was impaled on a sturdy totem pole. Just below, a man wearing a black robe looked up, and with a “Flap” of his robes, some of the leftover blood splattered onto the floor while he drank the rest of what dripped from the severed head. Laughing cruelly, he said, “With the addition of this powerful life force, it is possible to break the Bloodseeker’s seal! Haha! Wait until I lead the Bloodseeker’s army and massacre those fools in Ba Huang City!”

Chapter 139: Spirit Practitioner

“Hum....”

I walked to the front with the Frost Rain Sword trembling slightly in my hand. I read the information about the Mage. He was a very powerful character, but he was also the main boss that we had to kill in order to complete the quest.

[Spirit Practitioner – Locus] (Purple-Tier Boss)

Level: 56

Attack: 1400-1850

Defense: 1020

Health: 200000

Abilities: [Hell Fire] [Shaking the Nine Heavens] [Skill Steal]

Introduction: Once Locus was a very famous Mage in Ba Huang City. However, he went down the wrong path in pursuit of the dark arts. He murdered his own teacher and destroyed half the magic school. Eventually, he wandered into the wild, to live with demons and the dead. To hunt this undead Mage, Ba Huang City put out wanted posters everywhere, but nobody knew where to find Locus. Even if they had located Locus, the poor adventurers were not strong enough to resist his dark arts.

.....

“Uhhh.....”

I took a deep breath. For the first time, I read all the stats on a Purple-Tier Boss. Even so, the attack was so f*****g high. 1850 attack and plus an additional 20% for being a Purple-Tier Boss, the actual attack would be 2200+; what a terrifying boss. God knew how much health I would lose in one hit!

“Be careful.....” I swallowed a mouthful of saliva as the palms of my hands were covered in cold sweat. “This is not going to be an easy

fight.....”

Little Wolf held his dagger and said, “Brother Xiao Yao, I really don’t understand. If this boss is a Mage, why does it display physical damage? What is the reason for it?”

“Maybe it casts magic in combination with melee attacks?” I gave a reason that was not likely.

Darling Duck quietly said, “Boss, what do you need me to do?”

I lowered my voice, “The battle plan will stay the same; I will be the main tank. Remember to be on point with the healing. This is a Lv 56 Purple-Tier Boss so it’s only 5 levels higher than me so my stats shouldn’t be suppressed too much. Plus, he doesn’t have the ability to continuously chain combos. The chances of him killing me with a critical strike is low, so with your [Heal] and mine combined, we should be able to handle it. Old K and Little Wolf attack when there is an opportunity, Fox DPS from out of range. Everyone be careful, this boss might know a killing blow. Summon all your pets, they will help attack. They can deal some of the damage.”

Everyone nodded their head, “Yes!”

.....

Lifting the Frost Rain Sword, I stepped onto a damp rock as I charged forward. I stomped on the ground, and in the distance, a chain appeared below the boss’s feet!

“BANG!”

“MISS!”

Unfortunately, the Lv 5 [Binding chains] resulted in a MISS but this move angered Locus. He stared at me with eyes full of hatred, “You deserve to die! All the adventurers from Ba Huang City are like pesky little bugs. How many people do I need to kill before Duke Luo Lei knows that I, the King of Darkness Locus, can’t be killed?”

The Frost Rain Sword quivered and golden hexagrams started to flow

around the sword. I attacked diagonally with a Lv 6 [Combo]. All 4 attacks of the [Combo] landed on Locus' neck. The damage dealt appeared one by one.

“479 ! ”

“501 ! ”

“497 ! ”

“521 ! ”

The attack damage was not too bad and with a flick of my wrist I attacked one more time. This dealt another 700+ damage. At the same time, the ground below me started to get hotter. I was surrounded with hot flames. Locus had cast [Hell Fire] on me!

“1009 ! ”

Such a powerful [Hell Fire] spell!

I quickly cast a Lv 6 [Heal] and 900 health was restored. Simultaneously, I started my [Strength of Thousand Men] combo.

A series of intensive hits could be heard while the boss roared constantly. Both of Locus' claws started to dance and a frightening glow appeared around them. “Bang...bang...” two hits, each hit did 800+ damage. It was like he had entered an “enraged” mode. Even his attack speed was abnormally fast!

“Duck, quick! Heal Boss!” Old K shouted.

As I continued to attack, Darling healed me. With a swing of my sword, I released a [Fierce Ice Blade]. This would slow down the boss' speed a bit!

“Bang,” the sound of a gunshot rung and the smell of gunpowder spread. 379 damage appeared above Locus' head. Tsk, Tsk, Fox's attack was finally at a decent level. Meanwhile Little Wolf appeared behind the boss and used [Bleed] + [Backstab] at the same time. Once he landed his attacks, he retreated in a flash, not giving the boss a chance to get close to him!

“I'm attacking as well!”

Old K lifted his battle axe and swiftly closed the distance. Facing the boss with a snarl, [Rage] + [Penetration] was activated. This attack would ignore the boss' defense significantly and Ran Min lashed out with a [Flame Axe].

“875 ! ”

At the same time [Flame Axe] hit, the boss landed a blow on Old K's chest during the maelstrom of attacks.

“1523 ! ”

Old K looked surprised and with an almost empty health bar, he left in a rush while dragging his axe, “I will retreat, boss, tank his hits for a bit!”

“Worthless.....” I mumbled as I withstood the boss's onslaught of attacks.

.....

About 10 minutes later, the boss' health had dropped to around 45%. Even if he was 5 levels higher than me, the fight was not that hard. However Locus was not your average boss. With a roar, he launched his second skill – [Shaking the Nine Heavens]!

“Hummmmmm!”

Runes started to appear around everyone's feet, I quickly yelled out. “Quick, avoid the runes!”

Everyone dodged, but in the end, Old K's reaction was too slow. He was still inside of the runes, and immediately lost 1400+ health. Fortunately, he had a health pot ready and with Duck's [Heal], he was able to survive.

But before long, the boss's health had only 15% left. The third skill was finally activated!

“Swoosh!”

A bloody claw swept across my chest. The next moment, strands of green swirling air started to form around the boss's body. Suddenly an eight divine trigrams attack appeared. It was unmistakable- [Wind Blade].

“1872 ! ”

My entire body shivered while I quickly cast [Heal] on myself and used a Lv 6 healing potion!

“+900 ! ”

“+1000 ! ”

Duck opened her small mouth. “Wow, how does that boss know Xiao Yao’s unique skill? Shameless!”

Old K held the battle axe and said in a low voice. “An ability that steals other people’s skills? Damn, I wish I had that ability.....”

I whispered, “Luckily, he only stole my [Wind Blade]. If he copied [Combo], then it’s not going to be fun!”

Little Wolf quickly replied, “Brother Xiao Yao, be careful. The stealing skill has a 12 second cooldown. He will steal your skill again soon.....”

Duck said, “Boss, don’t die, otherwise we are going to be wiped out.....”

Little Wolf didn’t say anything and held onto his dagger not too far behind me, ready to support me with his skills at any moment. He was more experienced than Old K and Fox in terms of battle strategies.

.....

With a familiar sharp “Ding” sound, golden hexagrams started to appear on the boss’s claw. My heart quickly turned cold, it’s a [Combo], and the boss stole my Lv 6 [Combo]!

Just before the boss lowered his claw to attack, I shifted sideways. I timed it very well and successfully caused a MISS on the first move. The second move couldn’t be avoided, so I countered with my Frost Rain Sword. Swiftly moving resulted in a lucky MISS for the third strike, but at the same time, I received the fourth strike. A chain of damages & MISSes appeared –

“MISS ! ”

“847 ! ”

“MISS ! ”

“792 ! ”

Behind me, the experienced Duck cast [Heal] + [Hemostasis] which filled my health up again. Damn, luckily it was Duck, if it was another Healer; I most likely would be kneeling on the ground right now!

“So dangerous, luckily there were 2 MISSES, otherwise you would have been killed.....” Fox held his gun and commented.

Old K lifted his battle axe with a laugh. “You should say, lucky our Boss’ reaction is quick enough. Besides, the boss stole [Combo], not [Strength of a Thousand Men]. Otherwise with 5 continuous hits, Brother Xiao Yao is guaranteed to die.....”

Little Wolf stared coldly. “You pessimistic loud mouth, how could that boss steal a custom combo?”

Duck nodded, “Yeah! If that boss steals that custom combo, then we really are done for.....”

I was secretly crying, “You bunch of idiots, are you guys looking forward to being wiped out?”

.....

At this time, the thing that everyone was expecting appeared!

“Bang!”

Wind started to swirl around Locus’ feet; his pair of claws danced, he laughed loudly, “A special skill. Come, have a taste of my might!”

[Strength of a Thousand Man]!

Little Wolf, “Brother Xiao Yao be careful!”

Duck, “Boss!!”

Old K, “We’re finished!”

Fox, “Damn.....”

.....

[Strength of a Thousand Man] was an S-Rank combo, with its specialty being its uninterruptible attacks. There is no way to counter it, this I understood too well!

“Ha Ha Haaa.....”

I took 3 continuous hits to the chest!

“597 ! ”

“625 ! ”

“701 ! ”

Stab + Sweep + Cleave + Ram + [Wind Blade] are the 5 moves, I understood this too well. Just after Locus finished the third move, I had already started to retreat away from the angle of his ram. I lowered my body and with a “peng,” I pierced the ground with the Frost Rain Sword. My left palm pressed against the ground, I used the leverage and instantly completed a backflip. The Ice Fire Cloak waved in the air and the ram ended with a beautiful MISS!

“MISS ! ”

第五次翼风斩一样是MISS, 果然, 这一招是从剑锋寒那里学来的, 居然对付自己的招数那么有效, 有句老话没错, 最了解你的永远是你的敌人, 一骑当千的弱点, 除了我之外恐怕就只有剑锋寒最为了解了。

The fifth move [Wind Blade] was also a MISS. Of course, I learned this move from Jian Feng Han. It worked well when countering my own moves. As the old saying goes, the person who understands you the most is always your enemy. I'm afraid that besides me, only Jian Feng Han understands the weakness of [Strength of a Thousand Man] the best.

The people behind me let out a shout of surprise--

Little Wolf, “Damn, Brother Xiao Yao, beautifully done!”

Old K, “That was some real shit, he broke his own combo.....”

Duck opened her little mouth, “Boss, you are so powerful.....”

.....

“Sha Sha.....”

Little Wolf swept forward, slashed his dagger. Locus entered a brief “stunned” state. [Gouge] was successful; this brought me 2 valuable seconds to recover.

Under the healing lights, I grabbed the Frost Rain Sword and began to fight the boss again. Meanwhile in a low voice, “Duck remember to heal well.....this boss is already dead!”

Everyone was pretty excited. Old K clenched his fist, “Haha. We, Zhang Long Studio, have leveled together. Are we going to receive our first Purple-Tier equipment?”

Fox narrowed his eyes, “Stop dreaming. According to statistics, [Legend], [Hero’s Mound], [Vanguard] of the top 10 guilds have only received 3 Purple-Tier equipment from 19 Purple-Tier bosses within a 72 hour timeframe. How could we be that lucky?”

“Not necessarily.....” Wielding the Frost Rain Sword, I laughed out loud, “You never know, a Guild Creation Tablet might drop.....”

Duck rubbed her head, “Let’s stop bragging and concentrate on killing the boss.....”

.....

“Klang!”

After a few minutes, the sword pierced Locus’ black robe around his shoulder blade taking away the last bit of his health. Finally, the Lv 56 Purple-Tier boss kneeled down!

“Ahahh.....I resent this, I want to try again. With my pets.....”

With a “Pata” sound, Locus knelt on the ground, but his body didn’t fall. And there were no item drops either.

.....

“Why? Why did nothing drop?” Old K’s eyes were wide open.

In a deep tone, I shouted, “Old K, you dummy. Use the dark tome to seal

him or else we can't kill him!"

"Uhh.....I forgot....."

Old K quickly pulled the dark tome out of his bag!

Chapter 140: Purple Dawn Boots

“How do you use this thing to seal it?” Old K stared wide-eyed at me while holding the Dark Tome.

I thought then said, “It’s probably similar to how you use a pokéball. You scream Pikachu and throw the Dark Tome at him. Smashing Locus’ head with the tome ought to count as completing the seal.”

Duck holds her head as if her head hurts.

Not doubting me, Old K walked over and smashed the Dark Tome into Locus on the forehead. With a “peng” sound, the tome’s cover broke into pieces and its pages transformed into rays of black light. This light, similar to black cables, tightly bound Locus.

“Ahhhhgh...”

Locus started screaming non-stop under the pain of the black cable’s binding. His started to creak and he started to curl into a ball. Finally, with a “swoosh”, everything became silent, signalling that he had completely departed this place.

.....

“Crash!”

The moment Locus was sealed, gold lights appeared. At last, the drops burst out, and a pile of equipment crashed down along with 10+ gold coins, gems, and other items. Looking at their gorgeous radiance, my heartbeat started racing. I clenched my fist and smiled, “Brothers, seems like this boss dropped a lot of items, prepare to be rich!”

Old K excitedly said, “Hehe, yes!”

Little Wolf glanced at me, “Brother Xiao Yao, you should go look!”

“Yup!”

My Silver Lock Battle Boots treaded across the damp ground and stepping forward, I knelt down in front of the equipment pile. There were 4 pieces of equipment and a light-purple Skill Book. Also, there were 2

Spirit Gems and 7 Pardon Cards. First, I separated and identified the equipment: a glittering dagger, a golden breastplate, a purple ring, and a pair of multicolored boots. Instinctively, my heartbeat raced even faster. Two of the pieces gave off a purple luster. Could it be possible that we got 2 Purple Tiered items at once? What kind of luck is this!

Picking up the dagger, I brushed it a little and it's attributes appeared before us —

【Stardust Blade 】(Gold Tier)

Attack Power: 410-645

Agility: +30

Endurance: +26

Extra: Increases [Backstab]'s damage by 10%

Level Requirement: 47

.....

Picking it up, I threw the Stardust Blade to Little Wolf: "Little Wolf, keep leveling. At Lv 47, you can equip this dagger. With 645 max attack power, this Gold Tier is really good!"

Little Wolf chuckled, unable to contain his happiness: "Hehe, alright. I'll take the Gold Tier main dagger!"

I continued looking. Next was the gold-colored breastplate. As I reach out to touch it, a dense cloud of smoke emanated out. It seemed remarkable—

【Stardust Breastplate】(Gold Tier)

Type: Armor

Defense: 85

Agility: +27

Ability Power: +24

Extra: Increases user's ranged attack damage by 5%

Extra: Increases user's max HP by 200 points

Level Requirement: 48

.....

“Uh, a breastplate that adds ranged attack and also adds 200 HP. What an exceptional piece of armor!” I shot a glance at Fox and smiled: “Fox, this adds agility and magic. Do you want it?”

Fox practically drooled, “Yeah, how could I not! The musketeer's ranged attack abilities, like the high level [Bombardment]s, all consume large quantities of mana. +24 Magic is just what I need!”

“Great!”

I took the Stardust Breastplate and put it aside for Fox. Soon after, I held up the third piece of equipment, a scarlet ring, surrounded by a faint purple luster. Clasped in the palm of my hand, it resembled a lump of raging flames, so much so that it somewhat burned my hand. Damn, putting this thing on won't burn my hand into a roasted chicken claw, right?

I confirmed the ring's attributes and shared them in the team chat. Immediately, Little Wolf, Old K, Fox and Darling Duck were dumbstruck. Only the sound of drool could be heard—

【Scarlet Demon Ring】(Purple Tier)

Strength: +37

Endurance: +35

Extra: Increases HP by 300

Extra: Increases physical attack damages by 6%

Level Requirement: 49

.....

“Well, damn...” Old K ground his teeth: “It's Purple Tier. Could this be the number 1 ranked Purple Tier ring?”

I quickly searched online for the equipment rankings and then shook

my head: “No, this is ranked second. However, the number 1 ranked Purple Tier ring only has a level requirement of 42. Its attributes compared to this Scarlet Demon Ring are much lower. This ring’s stat points are approximately 40% higher!”

Little Wolf smirked, “Congratulations, Brother Xiao Yao. To obtain a Purple Tier ring. Hehe, Scarlet Demon Ring. The name is rather aggressive. It really fits you. Our Zhan Long’s leader should possess this kind of equipment!”

I pondered for a second, “Not really. It isn’t justified that I hog everything for myself. Old K, let’s roll for it. These are attributes that we both need...”

Old K shook his head, “From start to finish, how many times did I even touch Locus? If those kind of scratches allow me to roll for a Purple Tier equip, how could I, Ran Min, show my face in the studio after that? Boss, no more talking. This Scarlet Demon Ring goes to you. I only ask that if you come across a Berserker’s ring, you gift it to me. I’d feel no shame in using it...”

Fox nodded, “Yeah, Boss, enough modesty. Anything more would be unreasonable.”

I laughed, “Okay!”

Immediately, I equipped the Scarlet Demon Ring and gifted my Lv 40 Silver Tier Green Stem Ring to Old K. The Green Stem Ring’s attributes are in fact pretty good. With an additional increase of 20 attack points, it happens to be corresponding to Ran Min’s primary attribute path.

The Scarlet Demon Ring radiated a faint warmth to my surrounding fingers. Not only did the ring increase my survivability by a great deal, it also increased my other attributes. But at the moment, I was in no hurry to examine it further, as I might also be able to use the last piece of equipment. It was a pair of multicolored warboots with a faint purple hue. The boots were surrounded by a proud marble-like veined pattern, as if a mythical beast slept within them. A sharp gust of wind passed through the shrine and made the air in the cave somewhat chilly. I

brushed my hand against the boots and its attributes were displayed. Once again, the studio members were stunned. They were so shocked by its stats that everyone thought that they had died in the battle and gone to heaven.

【Purple Dawn Boots】(Purple Tier)

Type: Armor

Defense: 225

Strength: +38

Endurance: +32

Extra: Increases defense by 4%

Extra: Increases magic resistance by 11%

Extra: Increases movement speed by 3%

Level Requirement: 50

.....

“Damn, I’ve definitely gone to heaven...” Old K’s eyes widened until they were perfectly round: “Another Purple Tier item. And a heavy armor type at that. Boots with 225 defense, using those, can’t you mix in with those Monks and Knights?”

Little Wolf whispered, “It can’t be helped. Xiao Yao’s charm is too high. But still, the attributes on these boots indeed are exceptional. Not only a 4% increase to defense, but also an additional 11% magic resistance. If any Mage hit Xiao Yao, they would not be able to deal any damage at all.”

Fox nodded, “In <<Destiny>>, there’s practically no magic resistance. Or at least, in the Chinese servers there are no such things. 11% magic resistance would basically lower the magic damage that Boss receives by 3%. Even more, if you were wearing a set of magic resistant armor as well, then I bet you would barely feel a scratch from Soaring Dragon’s [Pillar of Fire and Ice].”

I held the Purple Dawn Boots and softly said, “This is too much for me,

to take the Purple Tier boots...”

Old K slapped me across the shoulder and laughed: “Everything is yours, Brother. Why are we still talking about this? The one who did the majority of the work on the boss was you! If you don’t take these Purple Dawn Boots, who will? In any case, I’m not rolling for it with you. I’m only Lv 41. That is a Lv 50 equip; it’ll be a long time before I could even hope to equip it. Putting it in my hands would be a waste.”

I nodded and changed into the Purple Dawn Boots. Afterwards, I gave my Silver Locked Boots to Fox since even Old K was wearing Lv 37 Silver Tier boots. If I didn’t change out of my Lv 30 Silver Tier items, obviously I’d feel embarrassed being be the studio’s boss.

.....

After putting on the Purple Dawn Boots, I felt a surge of power spread through my legs. It was the feeling of my attributes suddenly increasing. Looking at my attributes again, I let out a crooked laugh—

【 Xiao Yao Zi Zai】 (Tomb Guardian of Dragon City)

Level: 51

Attack : 1429-1863

Defense: 1178

Health: 2711

Mana: 756

Charm: 34

.....

My defense increased to nearly 1200. This was already on level with a Monk’s or a Knight’s defense. Furthermore, my HP is exceptionally outstanding. At 2711 HP, during fights I’d be able to endure even more than before. The additional properties which add 6% physical damage and 11% magic resistance were going to be my trump cards for PKing.

We split the Pardon Cards amongst ourselves. Afterwards, I inspected

the purple skill book. With a brush, the skill book's system prompt appeared—

【Double Shot】 (A-ranked Skill) : Continuously shoot two bullets in a row, inflicting 70% of your damage twice on the target. The percentage increases as the skill is leveled. Requires player to be a musketeer and LV 40.

.....

I handed the Skill Book over to Fox and said, "This skill is excellent, you should learn it!"

Fox gladly nodded. In his hand, the Skill Book shined brilliantly and disappeared. Immediately afterwards, he raised his gun, aimed at the giant boulder in the distance and fired. "Bang Bang". The smell of gunpowder was strong but the attacks were extremely rapid. This attack wouldn't be too shabby if used for PKing.

With two Spirit Gems in my hand, I asked, "Fox, how much are Spirit Gems selling for in the marketplace?"

"Around...500 gold coins?" Fox muttered.

I nodded. From my bag, I took out 1000 gold coins and handed out 200 gold coins to each of them: "I'll buy these two Spirit Gems. I cannot be unfair with the price!"

Little Wolf insisted, "Not possible. If Xiao Yao needs the Spirit Gems, I cannot take money for them!"

I smiled, "No. This is a question of principle. Spirit Gems are necessary for strengthening, and everyone can use them. I want to fortify my Frost Rain Sword, so I want to buy them. No more discussion, this is decided!"

.....

Opening up the strengthening interface, I placed one Spirit Gem on the Frost Rain Sword, and it showed 85% success rate. With a "Ding", the strengthening was successful. The Frost Rain Sword now displayed a +2 next to it. I continued, placing the next Spirit Gem on the sword, it

showed a success rate of 60%.

“Ding!”

Strengthening failed. The Frost Rain Sword was still +2. Even if I only upgraded the sword by one level, my attack power was now 720-950 (+144-190). I was already satisfied with an additional 144-190 damage. Presently, most players were still searching for Silver Tier weapons. How could I not be satisfied with this?

.....

Exploring a bit further into the Shrine of Despair, we found a magic boundary. After wearing one of Locus's rings, which was in our inventory since god knows when, we could pass through the magic boundary.

“Swoosh!”

I was the first to pass through the magic boundary and transported to a study, which I assumed was Locus's. I started inspecting the bookshelves. On the lone bookshelf was a Skill Book. Suddenly, a system prompt appeared: Do you wish to learn **【Reflect】**, an A-ranked Skill?

It requires 10 gold coins to learn.

.....

I confirmed and the skill was learned successfully.

Chapter 141: Fox's Business Plan

[Reflect] (A Tier): The target's first physical attack will be rebounded onto them, resulting in a 100% damage reflection. Consumes 50 MP, with a cooldown of 30 seconds. Required level: 40, Any class can learn this skill.

.....

This is a skill that requires a high amount of skill to use, nonetheless, it will be really useful to learn, being able to steal the enemies own attack and rebound it back against them. It will be especially useful against something like a Berserker's axe, rebounding that damage back would result in a serious injury!

Old K finished learning the skill. Clicking his tongue, he said, "This [Reflect] skill, it doesn't seem to be very useful, such a pity."

Little Wolf laughed, "You are wrong Old K, this should be considered a godly PK skill. Think, for example when a caster used [Reflect], all he has to do is wait for the warrior to attack him, which will then cause all the damage to reflect back to the warrior. Combine that with [Chilling Wind], and it'll pretty much be the end for the warrior."

Darling Duck learned the skill quickly and said, "The Locus Ring didn't disappear yet, do you think we would be able to learn the skill again later?"

Fox's voice grew heavy, "No, I don't believe so..."

I looked back at him, "Why do you think that, Fox?"

Fox squinted his eyes, "Look at the details of the ring, it'll disappear in 24 hours, but in the meanwhile, the player who possesses the Locus Ring will be able to bring one other player into the area during that time, this is a tremendous business opportunity!"

My eyes lit up, "Do you mean that...we can exploit the Locus Ring to earn money by bringing players into the Shrine to learn [Reflect]?"

"That is exactly what I mean!"

“True...”

Little Wolf piped up from the side, “The main problem is how do we make people trust us to help them learn [Reflect]?”

I thought about a plan and then said, “Record someone learning the skill... As for getting people to know about [Reflect], leave that to me!”

“How do you plan to do that?” Asked Fox.

I waved my hand, “I’ve already learned [Reflect], so I’ll go outside the city and challenge other strong players to a duel. If I use [Reflect] to kill people and take the opportunity of posting a recording of it to the forums, people will be interested, so don’t worry about people not coming to the Cave of Despair. We will charge people 10G to learn [Reflect], how does that sound?”

Little Wolf let out a big laugh, “Well this is an unusual way to earn money, but it’s also relatively simple too!”

“Then I’ll return to the city first, you all wait here to take the money! This will be Zhan Long’s first huge income, we’ll be depending on the Locus Ring!”

“Yea!”

.....

Crushing the City Return Scroll, with a “shua”, I returned to Ba Huang City. Since it was the afternoon, Ba Huang City was extremely populated with players everywhere selling equipment and other materials.

After repairing my equipment, I rushed to the city gates. Outside the gates a crowd of players were clustered around. Some players were calling out for people to come train together, others were comparing PK strategies with each others. Nearby a total of 7 players had a private duel stage. Without thinking, I barged into the stage with the most players while carrying my sword.

Within that crowd, a Lv 49 Swordsman stood proudly in the center of the area. His arms were crossed in front of him and his double-edged

sword flashed with a golden sheen. He looked around 25 years old, but his face had a cruel look. He laughed out loud, “Is there anyone else that can challenge me? 1G for a chance? Heaven’s Hero of [Prague] stands here, ready to accept any challenge! However, I will not take repeat challengers, neither from those who beat me, nor from those who lost to me, I will only fight against a challenger once! Once the time hits 7 PM in the evening, I will be drinking with my brothers, so hurry up and come at me!”

My eyes looked at him, he really was from [Prague]. I didn’t know when [Prague] became an official guild. However, its still a Lv1 guild at the moment, but it seems this player is an Elder for [Prague]–

Heaven’s Hero Lv-49 Silver Swordsman

Guild: Prague

Position: Elder

.....

Ba Huang City’s 17th ranked player, and also an expert player of [Prague], this Heaven’s Hero must be the next in command after Yan Zhao, Yue Qing Qian, and Yue Wei Liang. Looking at his level and equipment, he must at least be close to Fierce Tiger’s level. Eh, before this, I had noticed that he was often the topic of conversations on the forums. His fame isn’t too low, this guy will work well as a guinea pig for my new skill [Reflect].

Separating from the crowd, I walked up with a gold coin in my fingers. Smiling slightly, I said, “I’ll have a go!”

Heaven’s Hero stared blankly at me, “Xiao Yao Zi Zai? This is great! Finally an expert has shown up today! Level 51 Tomb Guardian of Dragon City, haha...”

I extended my hand and flipped the gold coin towards him. Then crouching down and pulling out the Frost Rain Sword, I said, “Please teach me well, [Prague] Elder.”

Heaven’s Hero nodded, “It won’t be a problem, Come on!”

“Pa ta!”

插旗了，一张血红色战旗在我前方落下，确认接受挑战，这是无损切磋模式，不伤和气，赢了输了其实也都没有什么损失。

A blood-red war flag, meaning nothing would be gained or lost from the fight, dropped in front of me and I accepted the challenge.

.....

My gaze lowered as the countdown timer began. Once the timer hit 1 second, I was already dashing forward. The Frost Rain Sword's [Fierce Ice Blade] was ready to be cast. I aimed it at Heaven's Hero's shoulder, and while I swung ruthlessly at him, I simultaneously released Baby Bobo to fight Heaven's Hero's own pet.

“Ha!”

Heaven's Hero smiled faintly, sliding his feet back to retreat from my skills. A MISS appeared above him as my [Ice Blade] failed to connect, “It looks like the 4th ranked player isn't anything special...”

I did not speak, but the corners of my mouth twitched up a hair. I just wanted Heaven's Hero to get underestimate me. The [Fierce Ice Blade] just now was too slow to land a hit, giving him at least half a second to respond. If he can't even avoid this with a MISS, then he has no right to being the elder of [Prague].

“Ding!”

Heaven's Hero started his counterattack, his golden blade drew four hexagrams in the air, signifying a Level 5 [Combo] skill, a proud achievement for any Swordsman!

“Huah...”

Appearing underneath my foot was a [Haste] buff as I tried to retreat while holding my sword in front of me, but it was not enough to block all of the blows. Three of Heaven's Hero's strikes managed to connect—

“311 ! ”

“287 ! ”

“310 ! ”

Damn! His attacks were not half bad but I had 2700 health, so this much was only a third of my health.

“Shing...”

Seeing me lose only one third of my health, Heaven’s Hero paused before continuing to attack me with his sword and a normal attack!

“410 ! ”

I took in the sight in front of me and without giving it a second thought, I swung the Frost Rain Sword. It was a normal attack, and struck him on his chestplate. While continuing the sword’s trajectory, a cyan colored ray of light crashed down upon me at the same time! The Frost Rain Sword trembled, it was the fatal strike!

“1174 ! ”

A huge of damage number floated up and Heaven’s Hero was dumbstruck. Hastily, Heaven’s Hero downed a health potion, a “Klang” was heard as he knocked back my sword while hitting me one more time. Finally, I only had 1000 health left, this was the moment Heaven’s Hero was also waiting for to use a high level skill. If it connected, it would no doubt kill me. If he didn’t use a high level skill, then he would have no hope in killing me because there was no doubt that he was aware of my [Heal] skill.

“Hua!”

Flames emerged from his blade as Heaven’s Hero’s face grew ashen. A Lv 5 [Flame Blade] skill!

Secretly happy about this, as I’ve been waiting for my health to drop below 1000 for this moment. This way, Heaven’s Hero will attack with full force, otherwise, I would not be able to show off the superiority of the [Reflect] skill!

“Swish...”

Dodging to the side to escape, I was inwardly anxious and immediately

a golden beam of light appeared beneath my foot, [Reflect] was successfully activated! It's a shame that Heaven's Hero was too focused on trying to kill me and didn't read battle records. He had been tricked!

"You still plan to run in this situation!?"

He raised his blade and leaned to one side. Then he skillfully dashed forward and used his [Flame Blade] to suddenly crush my shoulder!

.....

"Deng!"

Suddenly a sound broke out, and right in front of my body a giant, transparent, and circular shield appeared. The entire [Flame Blade] skill was rebounded straight back at him. As Heaven's Hero stood motionless in shock, a huge number floated straight above him as his own skill connected-

"1174 ! "

The so-called [Reflect] skill had completely ignored all of Heaven's Hero's defense. To be able to reflect the entire move back onto the other person, this skill was truly terrifying!

"Huh?!"

Heaven's Hero stood still in silence, he only had around 1800 health to begin with, so [Reflect] nearly took out all of his health!

I smiled and lazily stabbed my sword through his chest, I won!

Gold Coins +1 !

.....

Happily, I took the gold coin and with a grin, I posted a video of the fight directly to the forums. I added some comments:"[Reflect] Skill, costs 10 G to learn and must be Lv 40. Any class can learn this skill, however, you must have a player that has the Locus Ring accompany you to the Shrine of Despair. As of right now, there are 4 Zhan Long members at the innermost of the Cave of Despair waiting to take someone inside to learn it. There is an additional fee of 10G for them to take you inside. You have

24 hours left until this deal is over, so don't miss out on this skill! Hurry over to the southwest direction of Ba Huang City, the coordinates are (157721, 012873) to enter the Cave of Despair!"

I felt a great deal of satisfaction once I finished posting in the forums..

Right when I was about to leave, Heaven's Hero grabbed my arm, "Xiao Yao, that [Reflect] skill book, from where did you buy it?"

"I didn't buy it, find out more on the forums!"

I sent him a link to the forums, and Heaven's Hero, dumbstruck, was rooted to where he stood. With a gloomy look, he said, "Well f***, this [Reflect] skill of yours is a major discovery! I have to report this to the boss right away, we need to have our second promoted players learn this skill right away! We cannot have anyone tarry behind and not learn this!"

"Di!"

I received a message from Miss Wan Er, "That...Li Xiao Yao, I just now saw the video you uploaded, is that really the way you learned [Reflect]?"

"It might be?" I laughed, "Wan Er, Do you want to learn it as well?"

"Yea, Dong Cheng and I will rush to Ba Huang City immediately. Wuwu, these past few days it has been difficult to level, why are all the good items coming from Ba Huang City?"

"Probably because Ba Huang City has all the handsome people in it... By the way, I only just uploaded the video, how did you see it so quickly, and why are you idling away all day on the forums anyway?"

In the chat box, Wan Er's cheeks suddenly turned bright red, "Idiot, don't tell me you don't know about the function on the forums that immediately notifies people. As long as you post something, I'll be notified of it through my phone."

I shivered, "I am indebted to Miss' affection. I'll wait for you in Ba Huang City, and personally take you to learn the skill, free of charge..."

"Okay okay, in that case, I'll bring along some people!"

"Only you and Dong Cheng can learn this for free, everyone else has to

pay for it...”

“If you say so...”

“Yes!”

Chapter 142: Start-Up Funds

Past 7 PM, North gate of Ba Huang City.

Two beauties emerged from the distant Ba Huang Forest. Lin Wan Er held a blood red iron umbrella in her hand and tread lightly. Streaks of leaves nestled in her hair and her eyelashes seemed to carry misty dew. Her pointy ears, were hidden beneath countless strands. With her delicate leather armor; she truly radiated beauty and elegance.

“Li Xiao Yao!”

Smiling, Lin Wan Er walked towards me while carrying her umbrella. On her shoulder was the emblem of [Hero Mound]’s vice leader. After [Hero Mound] was founded, Lin Wan Er was promoted to the position of vice leader in accordance with her agreement with the guild.

I stepped forward and invited Lin Wan Er and Dong Cheng Yue to the party while, giving a curious smile and asking, “Lin Wan Er, since you’re the vice leader of [Hero Mound], what are your main responsibilities?”

Lin Wan Er blinked: “Er, well, I’m not really good at management. Aside from consulting the elite players of our guild for Boss battle strategies, I do not have any other duties.”

Dong Cheng Yue clutched her staff and said with a smile, “It is actually very simple. The reason why Q-Sword wants Wan Er to stay in [Hero Mound] is for the guild to have Fan Shu City’s most beautiful woman to help raise the influence of the guild. So as long as we stay, many of Wan Er’s followers will be willing to join our guild. That’s the simple truth...”

While rubbing my nose, I said, “Then, once Zhan Long establishes its guild, Wan Er and Dong Cheng must come over and help attract talent, okay?”

Lin Wan Er smirked, “Oh, sure. But you have to treat us to meal three times a day for each day we do that for Zhan Long.”

I was speechless: “Are you looking for a guild or a long term meal-ticket?”

“A long term meal-ticket would be lovely....” Lin Wan Er replied while flipping her dagger. Suddenly, she looked down as if she suddenly remembered something. Her blushing, pretty face really looked so adorable.

On the side, Dong Cheng Yue giggled, “Hey, will Xiao Yao really provide a long term meal-ticket? Oh... Looks like there’s nothing for me anymore, I’ll go now....”

Lin Wan Er recovered and said laughingly, “Okay, stop doing that. Li Xiao Yao, let’s go to the Cave of Despair and learn [Reflect], otherwise we will be too disadvantaged when we’re PKing.

Dong Cheng Yue agreed: “Yes, [Reflect] functions as a shield. Moreover, it costs only 10G which is kind of cheap for an A-rank skill.”

“Alright, let’s go!”

The two beauties followed me as I led them towards the Cave of Despair.

.....

After nearly 40 minutes of walking, we arrived at our destination at almost 8 p.m. Unexpectedly, the Cave of Despair was filled with people at that moment. It would appear that my charisma was really high. The post I left in the forum attracted many people to come, but, of course, what was really alluring was not me, but the [Reflect] skill. This skill was too tempting.

Passing through the crowd, I brought the two beauties along to the seventh path. All the monsters that had just respawned had been mercilessly slaughtered by the players. How cruel.

Light appeared as we squeezed towards the Shrine of Despair. The entrance to the secret chamber was so congested that even moving forward was difficult. Old K, Little Wolf and Fox were happily collecting fees from the masses. Little Wolf raised his arms and shouted: “Just pay 10G to Hero Ran Min, Glass Fox or Darling Duck to learn the skill. If you’ve paid and have not learned the skill, please be patient. Those that

have already learned the skill please return to your city so that you don't take up too much space!"

"Keng!"

I unsheathed my Frost Rain Sword and pressed through the mob; using force made it easier for us to cross. With my other hand, I grabbed Lin Wan Er's hand and led her forward. Wan Er was an Assassin, so pulling her was not at all difficult for me. She didn't even resist. I didn't look back at her, but I felt her hand warm up. She followed me to the secret chamber with her face flushed in embarrassment.

"Ding!"

There were already quite a number of people inside the chamber. I pointed to a book in a shelf and said: "Wan Er, that is the [Reflect] skill. Just pay 10G to learn the skill!"

"Ok!"

She stepped forward and quickly learned the skill, then she turned her head and said: "Get me out of here and let Dong Cheng Yue come and learn the skill!"

"Alright."

With a flash, Lin Wan Er and I left the room. Afterwards, I led Dong Cheng Yue to the secret chamber. She was slightly stunned after she finished learning the skill and asked me, "Li Xiao Yao, why does it say that there is a learning limit of 3479/5000?"

"Learning limit?" I was dumbfounded.

"Yes!"

I brought Dong Cheng Yue outside and while frowning and muttered: "Is there a limit to the number of times the skill can be learned?"

As I asked, I looked towards Little Wolf and he discovered me staring at him. The corners of his mouth rose as he said, "It is true, the skill can only be learned by 5000 players, or else we would become filthy rich."

Lin Wan Er blinked: "Is this a system BUG that you have taken

advantage of?”

I smirked: “Well, if it is a BUG, it is <<Destiny>>’s company’s responsibility and has nothing to do with the players. All of our actions are consistent with the rules of the game.”

“Well!” The beautiful Miss nodded and smiled: “It is definitely the company’s responsibility, so if they try to punish you then you can just sue them!”

“Yeah, what Wan Er said is absolutely right.”

.....

While we were still chatting, a distant voice loudly bellowed: “People in the front, make way for us. The Zhan Long studio is taking advantage of a system BUG, why do so many people support this activity? What in the world is happening here?!”

The crowd dispersed as a group of high level players came forward with their weapons out. The person leading them was a player named ‘Mu Tian’. Wait, I recognized this man, I killed him once in Fire Stone Canyon. But this time, he was with Soaring Dragon, the guild leader of [Flying Dragons]. Behind Soaring Dragon were 30 extremely high level members of his [Flying Dragons] guild, ranging from Lv 45 to 50.

Obviously, Mu Tian was recruited by the [Flying Dragons] guild.

Carrying his axe, Mu Tian stepped forward and uttered: “Brothers, prepare to kill these people from Zhan Long Studio and have their Locus Rings drop!”

Soaring Dragon gently waved his staff and smirked as he said: “Last time, Li Xiao Yao helped [Valiant Bravery] kill me and my brothers from [Flying Dragons]. But this time we shall have our sweet revenge!”

Exposing his dagger, Little Wolf angrily marched forward and said: “Soaring Dragon, Mu Tian, Fierce Tiger and Black Tortoise. Some of you already learned the [Reflect] skill an hour ago, so now you want to ruin us? ”

Soaring Dragon grumbled with a cold expression: “Useless talk. Brothers, help me, let’s trample them here!”

.....

“Wait a minute!”

A sweet but firm voice echoed beside me. Lin Wan Er carried her umbrella as she stepped forward and stared daggers at Soaring Dragon: “[Flying Dragon]’s style really is shameless, wanting to humiliate Zhan Long in front of thousands of people just to deter the chance of others to learn [Reflect]? Resources in the game are to be shared with everyone. I don’t think what Zhan Long is doing is wrong. But since [Flying Dragon] is too selfish, after acquiring [Reflect], you want to prevent others from learning it!

Lin Wan Er stood proudly, the Fan Shu city emblem on her shoulder was eye-catching. Over her head, the title of Fan Shu city’s 4th best player appeared with her mesmerizing face adding to the truth of this revelation. She was recognized by everyone as they felt overwhelmed.

“Isn’t she, isn’t she the finest Assassin and the most beautiful woman in Fan Shu City, Cang Tong?”

“Yeah, it looks like it’s her. She is really gorgeous!”

“And look, next to her is the Mage Cang Yue. These two beauties, Cang Tong and Cang Yue, are [Hero Mound]’s top ranking players. Hahaha, what a blunder these people from [Flying Dragon] have committed, suddenly offending [Hero Mound]’s elites. Let’s see what happens to Soaring Dragon.”

.....

Soaring Dragon’s mouth twitched violently while Fierce Tiger, holding his axe, whispered to him: “Boss, what should we do? My [Flame Axe] is already prepared.”

Behind him, Black Tortoise strode to the front with his gun in hand and murmured: “Boss, please think twice. If this gets out of hand, we’ll be making [Hero Mound] as well as Fan Shu City our enemies. In addition to

that, Ba Huang City's players will be dissatisfied too. To get a foothold in Ba Huang city, we will need to be on the good side of everyone. If we fight now then we'll be hated by everyone. Before we truly establish our guild, we must avoid things like this or else our guild will fall."

Soaring Dragon gave a nod and in a low voice said: "Well said, that makes sense Black Tortoise."

Raising his head, Soaring Dragon looked at us with a stern expression and said loudly: "Hmm, taking into consideration that many have not yet learned the [Reflect] skill, we'll stop for now. But Li Xiao Yao, bear this in mind, we [Flying Dragons] will settle the score with you someday. Just wait, sooner or later, you will regret helping [Valiant Bravery] in attacking [Flying Dragons]."

I stepped forward, turned my wrist and waved my Frost Rain Sword in the air: "I, Li Xiao Yao, await [Flying Dragon]'s vengeance. But in order to avenge yourselves, look for me and don't involve anyone else. I believe [Flying Dragon] is not despicable to that degree. I will be in the Ba Huang Forest to train. [Flying Dragon], feel free to come anytime, but it will not be easy to finish me off!"

Soaring Dragon bit his lip, took out a City Return Scroll and left for the city.

.....

I let out a sigh of relief: "Thank you, Lin Wan Er. If not for you, we would have been in trouble."

Lin Wan Er gave a mocking smile: "Are you afraid of [Flying Dragon]?"

I shook my head: "No, I'm not afraid of the [Flying Dragon]. What I'm afraid of is that they might spoil Zhan Long Studio's business. It's not easy to have a chance to be rich in an instant, and for it to be wrecked is not good."

.....

Next to me, Little Wolf laughed and said: "Brother Xiao Yao, our Zhan Long is now really rich. With just the earnings from the skill, we've

already accumulated 500000G. In accordance with today's exchange rate of 1:8, that would be 400,000 RMB. Also, others have killed Elite Monsters out by the entrance of the cave. Those monsters dropped tokens that allow a player to enter the secret chamber, but it is a one-time-only deal. We need to take advantage of this and make some money one last time.

I nodded: "Yeah, just make put it into the funds for the Studio, now we have the start up funds of Zhan Long!"

"Yes!"

Chapter 143: Wait For My Return

The Locus Rings finally expired around 9 pm. Once the learning limit had been reached, the skill book in the secret chamber started to crumble. This signified that the skill could no longer be learned. Also, the map indicated that Elite Monsters had started to drop the one-time pass to access the study more often. With it, one could also learn the skill and so, our way of earning money had come to an end.

After Lin Wan Er and Dong Cheng Yue left, the members of Zhan Long had a meeting – – – –

Little Wolf asked, “Such a large sum of money, how do we split it?”

I replied, “Since Darling Duck cannot join our Zhan Long Studio right now, we can’t let her efforts go unrewarded, so I suggest that we give her 1000G. The cost of living for women is quite hefty; they have to spend a lot for their cosmetics. A silk stocking is about 10 yuan while nightly skin repair are even more expensive. Being a girl is not easy. Then there is the period thing, give her a little more.....”

Darling Duck was standing, her cheeks blushed red: “Boss, you really know everything, you’re really worthy of being my boss.”

Little Wolf, flustered, took out 1000G from his inventory and traded with Darling Duck while saying, “We will do as the Boss said. This 1000G will be a gift for meeting the beautiful Darling Duck. By the way, do you really not want to come over to Zhan Long’s studio?”

Smiling, Darling Duck shook her head and said, “Truth be told, I want to meet all of you but I am in school right now, therefore I cannot join the studio. Furthermore, my mom is really strict. If she were to find out that I was living together with a group of men, she might kill me, even though she loves me.”

Me: “.....”

Little Wolf: “.....”

Old K: “We’d better start discussing how to spend all the money.”

I nodded: "Don't worry about that. Fox needs to have the gold converted before the exchange rate drops again. While we must put aside at least 50000 RMB so that we can get the 10000G for the creation of our guild."

Little Wolf suggested, "Well, as we are no longer low-leveled, how about we go on a Boss hunt?"

"Not yet, we still need more members. With at least 10 people, we'll get the highest possible experience."

"Then we'll recruit more members tomorrow!"

Fox coughed as he said, "Boss, the studio also needs to be improved..."

"Why?" I wondered.

Tightly clenching his fist, Fox said, "We need someone to sweep the floor, wash the clothes and prepare the food since we cannot eat at a restaurant daily; it's too extravagant and wasteful. Moreover, Old K's unwashed socks really smell. There were times when I woke up at noon and was almost killed by the smell"

I replied, "I see, then we must hire someone. Do you want the person to be a female?"

"Right, the best would be a woman who is really good at cooking. We don't need her to be very strong in the game,... As long as she can take care of others, keep the studio clean and free from dusts and messes."

"Alright," I agreed. "However, we should first settle her monthly salary."

"Hmm, shouldn't you come to the studio this evening to discuss the details?"

"Okay!"

.....

I went offline and accompanied Lin Wan Er and Dong Cheng Yue for dinner. Afterward, I went to Zhan Long's studio.

By the time I arrived, around 11 pm but the studio was fully lit.

Little Wolf, Old K and Fox sat, encircling the table, working on the

recruitment details. I stepped forward, glanced at what they had so far and was shocked—

Recruitment notice: Zhan Long studio of the game <<Destiny>> is currently looking for a female, around 17-29 years old. Must have a solemn yet gentle look and a sexy body. Must have a good understanding of game equipment data. Should be able to record equipment data, cook, clean and wash clothes. Must have some general knowledge about medicine. Must have long and slender legs. Monthly salary is 3000 Yuan. Can be negotiated through the phone number: 150XXXXXXXX

.....

My hands shook while holding the paper, my mouth jerked as I said, “You must have some serious guts, to write such a notice, aren’t you demanding far too much? Can cook, clean and wash, how about adding must know how to warm the bed, won’t it sound better? Bah, this is not for hiring house help. What you’re looking for is a girlfriend!”

Little Wolf grinned: “Relax Brother Xiao Yao, it is Old K who wrote this.”

Old K was silent for a moment: “I wrote it for everyone’s benefit. Won’t we all be unhappy if someone ugly joined us? Instead of raising the studio’s morale, she might just end up frightening us.”

I agreed with him, but: “What you said makes sense, however, did a PE teacher teach you Chinese? Idiot, watch me...”

Old K tightened his fist: “I understand, your turn....”

I quickly sat down and wrote some lines—

Notice: Since <<Destiny>> was launched, Zhan Long Studio has wanted to shake the world, but we currently do not have enough strength. We are looking for talent who are not afraid of hard work. Calling all heroes in country. Right now, we are specifically looking for a female, in her twenties, who is well educated, well mannered, and good looking: well-endowed, long legs. Should be knowledgeable in Destiny battle strategy, highly intelligent, and must know how to clean and cook. Salary is 3000.

If interested, call: 150xxxxxxxxx

TL: Okay, so it might sound much different but Xiao Yao used a lot of ancient sayings in his version

.....

After completing of the hiring notice, I set down the pen and took a sip of water.

Fox picked up the paper and his hands trembled as his eyes started to become moist: "Damn! Boss is really the Boss, you've pretty much threw up a bunch of ancient works..."

Little Wolf took a look and tilted his head: "It really is well written."

Old K still had some doubts, "Little Li, I don't think you've written it quite right? Doesn't she need to have long legs? And here you.....what do you mean, "Gu Chang Ke Ren". Ass too long?"

I don't know what to say to him, "That is an ancient saying, "Gu Chang Ke Ren". It means: long legs that will make people drool....."

"Woah, ancient literature is really deep..." Old K folded his arms in front of his chest. "Then we will use this announcement to recruit new people?"

"Sure!" Fox nodded his head, "Let's make 100 hand copies right away. Then throughout the night, we will put them on street light poles around the West Lake District. It would be best if we could hire a local Hangzhou person. That way it will be easier for them to move into to the studio....."

(TL note: Studio members live in the studio, wake up, game, eat, game, sleep, repeat)

"Good!"

Everyone was excited and quickly started copying the recruitment notice by hand.

The night was hazy at midnight and on the cold road 4 shadows appeared on the main boulevard in the West Lake District

.....

“Pa!”

The notice was to be placed on the electrical pole but Old K took a look and said in a low voice, “Not good, someone beat us to it...”

“What happened?”

“You guys take a look?”

Under the moonlight, everyone leaned in. There was already a flyer asking for a new member for a studio on the electric pole. The other studio had definitely spent some money on their flyer. It was machine copied and much more professional than our hand written ones.

Hiring a new studio member for Crimson Contract Studio for <<Destiny>>. GuildMaster Han Bei Song is already close to Lv 50. He has unfathomable strength, is a very affable person (only with pretty girls). Crimson Contract Studio is located on West Lake District’s Wen Third Road. Looking for all kinds of talented people: DPS, MT, and Healer are very much needed. Salary starts at 4000. If interested, contact [Avoiding Rain] in game. Phone number: 134xxxxxxxx

.....

Wolf’s voice trembled, “High investment has high returns, they are using cardstock type A4 paper. And it is color print, damn it! We are using a \$1.50 notebook paper so we can’t even compete. What should we do, we have been suppressed by them.....”

I ponder out aloud, “No problem, ours are hand written which shows more sincerity, which is our advantage. Continue to put them out, we will be able to hire new people! ”

“Okay, let’s hope it is as Brother Xiao Yao says.....”

.....

We worked straight until 3am, running around West Lake District’s main and side streets, to put out all 100 hiring notices. So begins a battle between Zhan Long Studio and Crimson Contract Studio to hire new people, the world is full of mysteries!

When I returned to Liu Hua University, I only had 4 precious hours to sleep. Early in the morning, I went to class. I seized this opportunity to talk with Wan Er all morning about different battle strategies by class in <<Destiny>>. For example: melee vs magic, melee vs assassin, melee vs melee, and melee vs ranged. Wan Er's in game fighting skills were top notch, and she was also a great battle tactician. Her understanding of tactics far exceeded mine. There was nothing I could do, she was a natural-born genius. No matter what tactic, she understood it. But I would not admit defeat, I won in terms of experience.....

Almost noontime, 11am, the 3rd class had just ended.

I gave Wolf a call, ring ring, and it finally connected –

“Brother Xiao Yao!”

“What is the situation with the hiring process? Anyone come for an interview?”

“So far, there are no applicants.....”

“Damn, no way.....”

“Is it because we are asking for too much?”

“That is a possibility, we should lower the requirements.....”

“Oh, Old K wrote up a new one, it is posted downstairs. I don't remember the details, shall I take a photo and send it over?”

“Sure!”

Few minutes later, I received a photo message on my cell phone. The photo showed “Looking for cooking auntie, females only!” written on a plain white paper.

.....

My entire body is trembling, I called Wolf again, “Wolf, this was written by Old K?”

“Yea.....”

“I understand. Besides him, no one else could be so strange.....”

“Brother Xiao Yao, just now someone called me. She will come to visit our studio in the afternoon at 12:20. She wants a face to face meeting, do you want to come back to take a look?”

“No need, I have to accompany Wan Er to lunch.”

“Okay, then I will make the decision?”

“Sure!”

.....

Afternoon, Liu Hua University's second cafeteria. Wan Er treated us to a meal.

Wan Er asked, “Did Zhan Long studio make quite a bit of money last night?”

I nodded, “Yeah, not too bad. 50,000 gold, enough to stop being poor.”

“You're an upstart now?” she chuckled.

I was speechless and said, “A mere 400,000 RMB is enough to do what? If we create a guild, it is going to cost a lot of money. Besides, in the future when establishing a guild, you must have the initial funds to operate. I suspect 40,000 RMB is simply not enough. If I buy some equipment, or if I give some bonuses, then that money, would be all gone.....”

“Ah, yes” Wan Er smiled and nodded, “In [Hero's Mound] guild, there is a reward every week for the top experts, like me and Yue Er. We can go to the guild storage and receive 3000 RMB as a weekly reward. Running a guild is a science.....”

I shuddered: “Damn, that much”

“Yup!”

While lost in thought, I fiddled with the rice in my bowl. What path will Zhan Long take in the future, maybe I should search for investors?

.....

At this time, my cell phone started ringing. It was Wolf's number –

“Brother Xiao Yao, a girl came. She is currently at the studio, do you want to come take a look?”

“No need, I’m currently with the Misses.”

“Uh, a pretty girl came.....a developing pretty girl, so beautiful.....”

“Damn!”

I suddenly stood up, every word sonorous, “Wait for my return !!”

Chapter 144: Strawberry Matcha

Holding her chopsticks, Lin Wang Er stared at me with a look of disdain and asked, “Really?”

“Everything is for the future of the studio...” I spoke righteously.

“You tool...”

“...”

.....

Quickly finishing my meal, I sent a grumpy Lin Wan Er upstairs. Then I ran from the campus to the studio. Finally, we had found some new blood. If she was both adorable and pleasing to the eyes, then we would keep her, regardless of her gaming ability. Good men shouldn't be picky eaters.

Since I sprinted the whole way to the studio, I was panting like a dog when I pushed open the door.

“Huaa!”

Entering with the wind, I saw Wolf quietly sitting in the studio's parlor. Sitting in front of him was a girl wearing a milk-white dress suit, a matching beige skirt, a head of long hair, and a graceful disposition. Was this the cute girl that Song Han was talking about?

Since her back was facing me, neither of us could see each others face. When Wolf saw me, he immediately stood: “Our studio's boss is back!”

“Ah?”

The girl exclaimed in surprise and slowly turned around to face me. All of a sudden, a pretty face which possessed an ethereal beauty was in front of me. With one glance, I had already thought up her scores. A 10/10 face, 9/10 grace, 9/10 figure and what looked to be a 34C, which was quite fitting for her stature. Her gorgeous eyes were luminous and clear, as if dust had never fallen upon them, and sparkled as she looked up at me, part surprised, part excited.

“You...You're the Xiao Yao Zi Zai of Ba Huang City?”

Strangely enough, I became quite nervous. Although I had been around Lin Wan Er, who was a beauty herself, this is still the first time I was meeting this girl. Her rating definitely wouldn't be too far from Lin Wan Er's. Deep down inside I was thanking the heavens above. I didn't know why the gods gave our Zhan Long Studio this kind of luck, but to have this adorable girl work here? We would absolutely keep her...

Sitting a short distance away, Wolf was about to start drooling at the sight of her. Even Fox, who was normally strong willed, kept sneaking glimpses while computing the studio's accounts.

"You're...Xiao Yao Zi Zai?" She asked once more.

I walked up and held out my hand with smile: "My name is Li Xiao Yao and my ID in Destiny is Xiao Yao Zi Zai. Hello!"

The girl smiled back, reaching out to give me a handshake. Her hand was soft. "Hello...I'm Xue Rou...My Destiny ID is Strawberry Matcha, and, erm, right now I am a Lv 27 Wind Elf Swordsman..."

Nodding my head, I looked at her and said, "Hey, have you looked at our studio's hiring requirements?"

"Yeah, I understood about 40% of it." She nodded her head in affirmation.

I laughed as I pointed at a chair: "Why don't we sit down to chat?"

"Ah, okay. Thank you..."

Looking at her slowly and carefully sitting down, with a cautious grace, I couldn't help but praise her. What a great girl, why was she applying to work here at Zhan Long Studio? What has the world become...

"Alright, let's talk..." I contemplated for a moment and then spoke, "What do you hope to gain from our Zhan Long Studio, Matcha, and what do you think you can offer this studio?"

Looking at me with a pair of big eyes, Matcha looked both silly and adorable. A small blush appeared on her cheeks as she said: "I came for the 3000RMB starting pay. My only request is that the studio can pay me

on time each month. As for what I can offer to the studio...erm, I can cook, do laundry, and clean. My in-game level isn't high, but I will try very hard to improve that..."

Looking at her, it was clear to me that she lacked confidence in her gaming abilities, but I laughed and asked: "What is your own understanding of a Wind Elf Swordsmen?"

Matcha was stunned for a second, her long lashes blinked together a few times before she said, "Wind Elves can fly; if it is possible to group together more than 10 Wind Elf Swordsmen, Mages, Healers and so on, it would be possible to cover greater distances and fly over large obstacles to quickly attack. In a battle, Wind Elves are a highly mobile force. They may even be comparable to the mounted Knights that appear later in the game. Even though early on they may be hard pressed by Mages and Archers, later in the game, they will definitely be the main attacking force."

I could not help but nod in admiration, "Hm ... not bad. So Matcha ... have you PK'ed before in game? And what is your win rate?"

Matcha's face blushed furiously once more, "On record, I've only PK'ed 7 times. My win rate is 0 kills to 7 deaths ... My control isn't that great; I can never find north and I'm really bad at dodging..."

Wolf Totem became green-faced, "Brother Xiao Yao...This?"

I nodded and laughed, "It's alright. People can be trained to learn game mechanics. Matcha is very knowledgeable in tactics, and ...Matcha, how old are you now?"

"23 years old..."

"Uh..."

I glanced over at Wolf and Old K and said, "From now on, you guys call her Big Sis Matcha, don't forget it. Matcha's level is a bit low, so think of ways to help her level to a minimum of Lv 40 within the next 3 days. Also, Fox, prepare a few pieces of equipment for Matcha. I want her to at least be wearing a full suit of Silver Tier gear, or else she's going to die too

easily while leveling.”

Fox and the rest nodded to my commands, “Got it!”

Matcha got a little excited and abruptly stood as she cheerfully asked, “Boss, does this mean... you’re agreeing to let me join Zhan Long Studio?”

I smiled at her and nodded, “Yep!”

As I spoke, I stood up and held out my hand. Matcha was confused for a second before giving me a handshake. Her hand was as soft as before. I smiled and said, “Matcha, Miss Xue Rou, I welcome you to the Zhan Long Studio. From now on, we’re family, so let’s work hard together, build Zhan Long into the best gaming studio in the country, and let the whole continent of Destiny shake upon hearing Zhan Long’s name!”

Matcha nodded earnestly, “Yep, I’m going to work hard. And, erm...Boss, you’re really cool! Give me a signature later, I want to give it to my little sister, she really likes you!”

Me: “...”

.....

I opened the China Gaming Teams’ official website and added a new member to the Zhan Long Studio: Xue Rou, 23 years old, ID “Strawberry Matcha”, Lv 27 Wind Elf Swordsman. From now on, Zhan Long Studio would officially be a 5-man team, and at a moments notice, we would be able to gather the minimum 5 people required for a world tournament or championship.

As I sat by the window holding a cup of water in hand, Matcha stood at my side hesitating slightly. She asked, “Boss, is there anything else you need?”

I shook my head, “I don’t think so ...oh right, where do you live Matcha? You should come live at the studio from now on; is there any problem with that?”

Matcha quickly nodded in confirmation, “Okiedoke, no problem. I live at Wen 2nd Street which is pretty close to here. I don’t have a lot of

belongings either. But Boss, which room will I be staying in?"

I glanced at her and said, "Since I normally don't stay at the studio, I guess you can sleep in my room."

"This..." Matcha grasped her hand into a little fist. She turned her head around to look at Song Han and the guys, and a slight wariness appeared in her eyes.

I couldn't help but laugh and gave her a pat on the shoulder, "Don't worry, even though Ran Min looks really scary, he is really a wolf wearing a sheep's skin... Wait no, a sheep wearing a wolf's skin. He is very docile and definitely won't bully you. Plus, you're sleeping in my room, and Song Han's room is right in between you two, and Song Han's character is definitely trustworthy."

As I spoke, I looked at Song Han and softly said, "Little Wolf, from now on you're in charge of Matcha's safety. If I hear that she ever gets bullied by anyone, I'll rush here within 10 minutes and end you..."

Song Han laughed aloud saying, "Don't worry Xiao Yao, even though the three of us are single, we absolutely won't make a move on one of our own people, not to mention Big Sis Matcha. We'll definitely take good care of her."

"Hm, if that's so, then good!"

Putting down my cup, I asked, "It's about time to go back to leveling, what are you guys planning to do in the afternoon?"

Ran Min responded, "We have it all planned out. This afternoon, we're going to Wild Plains to kill Lv 47 Wild Wolves. Leveling this way should be quite fast. Why don't we bring Matcha with us?"

Song Han frowned, "We have a lot of people, and the monsters' levels aren't that much higher than ours. If we bring her, I'm afraid she won't get too much experience."

Matcha looked at me and dejectedly said, "Boss, I'll come back in an hour with my belongings and the game helmet. You guys don't have to help me level, I should be fine on my own..."

I pondered for a second, "Alright. Little Wolf, go with Matcha and help her move her belongings back to the studio. Fox, draft up a contract for Matcha, let's temporarily sign for one year?"

Matcha cutely nodded, "Mhm. Sounds good."

Me: "Go online in an hour. I'll add you to my friends list. Song Han and the guys are busy at the moment, so I'll just bring you with me to train for an afternoon. Let's first try to get to Lv 30 because Lv 27 really is too low now."

Matcha excitedly spoke, "Oh Oh, Boss is going to personally help me level up. This is even better! Alright, I'm going to go get my belongings!"

"Okay!"

.....

After sending Matcha and Song Han downstairs, I immediately rushed back to Liu Hua University. I'll have to remain near Lin Wan Er or else Lin Tian Nan will notice my absences. I was especially cautious since I would be getting a raise to 50K per month next month. Honestly, this would really help supplement the studio's meager income. Just thinking about a monthly salary of 50K made me smile with glee. In the near future I could be a man who is tall, rich, and handsome (in other words, a winner).

3 PM sharp: Went online.

I was Lv 51 with 94% Exp, but temporarily I wouldn't focus on leveling up. Taking out a bunch of equipment from storage, I set up a stall for half an hour as I waited for Matcha to come online. The first thing we need to do when she comes online is to bring her up to Lv 30. Right now she is a member of Zhan Long, and thus her level can't be too low, or else she won't be able to become a part of the main force in the future.

I looked up the ID Strawberry Matcha, but was notified that the player was not online. Thus I returned to selling equipment.

Finally, at almost 4 PM, I looked up the ID again. A "DING!" sounded as the system notified me that the player was online. I immediately sent a

friend request, and a few seconds later, a female Wind Elf's portrait appeared on my friends list. It was the Lv 27 Wind Elf Swordsman, Strawberry Matcha. With a head of long, dark-green hair, and a pair of big eyes, she looked almost exactly like she did in real life. The only difference was that she changed her hair color in-game. As a whole, she still looked refreshing and cute.

"Boss! Good afternoon~" She took the initiative to send me a message.

I immediately replied, "Matcha, where are you right now in Ba Huang City? Come over to the north gate square, I'll be waiting here. Let's bring you up to Lv 30 before anything else."

"Okay, I'm coming right now!"

"Ok, I'll wait for you..."

.....

After waiting for almost 5 minutes, a pretty Lv 27 Swordsman came out of the bushes outside the city gate. Holding a green colored Green Tier long sword, she ran with her hair swaying out behind her. A pair of stunningly gorgeous legs showed as her gown fluttered from her sprinting. Such a beautiful Wind Elf Swordsman, who else could it be but Strawberry Matcha?

Chapter 145: Godlike Performance

“Boss!”

Strawberry Matcha excitedly jumped and flew up from the bushes, landing after about 10 meters with a smug look. After landing, her 34C chest slightly shook, and the nearby newbies' hearts almost stopped.

“Thank you boss for coming here to welcome me.....” Strawberry Matcha laughed.

I asked, “Matcha, could you tell me your current equipment?”

“Sure.....”

She smiled while reporting her equipment, “I have a level 20 Green Tier weapon, my helmet and chest plate are level 23 Bronze Tier, and everything else is Black Iron tier. Boss, is my equipment really bad?”

“Yeah, it is pretty bad. Let's go, follow me into the city!”

“Oh.....”

I turned around and my Icy Fire Cloak flapped in the wind. I brought Matcha into Ba Huang City and, at the same time, mentioned, “Matcha, I will help you prepare a set of level 30 equipment so that it won't be too difficult for you to solo level.”

“Ah.....” She lightly nodded her head and suddenly laughed, “Boss, why do Wolf, Old K, and them call me Big Sister Matcha, yet you just call me Matcha? Why don't you call me the same name they do?”

I turned around to look at her and couldn't help but smile, “You are 23 years old, while I'm 25 years old, so you are not older than me.....”

“But still!” She pouted while stomping her feet, “On the road, Song Han said I was a newbie, so I can't let you guys look down on me. From today on, every member of Zhan Long Studio must call me Big Sister Matcha. I want to be the biggest 'big sister' in Zhan Long, so, Boss, the same goes for you!”

I was speechless and simply said: “Good afternoon Big Sister Matcha

.....”

“Hehee, thats right!”

.....

We shopped around in circles in Ba Huang City’s North Gate market area. Finally, we bought some items: level 30 Silver Tier sword, chest plate, greaves, and boots. We couldn’t find a Silver Tier helmet, so we had to make do with bronze tier. The necklace and rings are also Bronze Tier, since Silver Tier is just too expensive. We shouldn’t have spend too much on temporary equipment, but we still spent a total of 120 gold. It was so heart wrenching I could’ve died. All the equipment was given to Matcha.

“Well, let’s replenish our potions supply and get ready to move out!”

“Okay.....”

Strawberry Matcha blinked her eyes and suddenly asked, “Boss, where are we going to level? What types of monster will we be killing?”

I invited her to a party and said, “Let’s go far out into the map? I was planning to kill a level 53-57 elite monster. You could fly around in the air and be an “experience baby”. With me power leveling you, you should be at level 30 within 3 hours, then you can equip the items we just bought. From then on, you can level however you want to since there won’t be too much pressure.”

(TL: experience baby, someone who just does nothing but get experience. Power leveling)

“Ah, Okay!”

Opening up the map, I quickly locked onto our leveling spot, Fire Stone Canyon, which was quite far away from Ba Huang City. Most players won’t go there which is why I wanted to bring Strawberry Matcha there. There should be enough monster spawns. Besides, Fire Stone Canyon is close to Dragon City, so I could get some quests from my teachers.

Outside the city, the grass was bowing down to the spring breeze.

Strawberry Matcha didn’t fly, she instead stayed on the ground and

walked with me. Holding her Green Tier longsword, she secretly tilted her head to sneak a look at me, then quickly moved her head back in fear of me finding out.

I was speechless, “Actually, you can change your perspective in the game. How many more times are you going to slyly look at me until you are satisfied?”

Strawberry Matcha’s face reddened and she said, “Boss, did you know that I actually joined Zhan Long for you?”

I nodded, “Yeah, I could more or less guess, but why?”

“That...” Strawberry Matcha started to giggle, “I saw boss in reality and since you were truly quite handsome, you didn’t let me down. Did you know? A lot of my female friends like you, saying that you solo fought vs. [Wrath of the Heroes]... and then there is that video of the battle in Green Qilin Abyss, where you single handedly overwhelmed more than half of Wrath of the Heroes with both intelligence and strength. One of my friends even said that she wants to have your child...”

My face was green, “I do not want to have kids for now

Matcha chuckled: “Okay, since boss’s face is all red, I will stop talking about you. And for me, since I’m a Zhan Long member from now on, what should I do if I encounter a [Wrath of Heroes] member and they PK me?”

I drew Frost Rain Sword, and laughed, “What about it? Tell me or Song Han and we will come help you. When your level is high enough, you could seek revenge yourself!”

“Ah, okay, I will definitely be super strong!”

“Good, wait.....”

“Why.....”

In the middle of speaking, a “Bang” sounded out. Strawberry Matcha’s delicate soft body crashed into a maple tree. Almost crying, she looked at me with large watery eyes, “I.....I crashed into a tree.....”

I rubbed my forehead, “Silly girl, what kind of intelligence do you have.

To be a wind elf and actually crash into a tree.....”

.....

“Roar!”

A level 29 wild boar was ahead; it is considered to be one of the lowest level monsters in the area. I really wanted to test Matcha’s abilities, so I chuckled, “Big Sister Matcha, go attack it. I will leave this wild boar to you, so kill it within 12 seconds. Do you have any problems?”

“Ah, okay!”

Strawberry Matcha drew her sword and with a delicate cry, she rushed to attack it. Upon her sword a level 3 combo shined, and 2 golden hexagram passed through the wind!

The wild boar charged at a slant angle and thus two big MISSES appeared; the combo hit did nothing!

I clenched my hands into a fist and whispered, “Don’t keep hacking at it, you need to determine the orientation of the target. This is common sense; adjust the angle of your attack, since the monster’s attacks are not set in stone...”

“Ah.....”

Strawberry Matcha gasped because her belly received a hit from the wild boar and she lost 134 healthpoints. She quickly started to wave her longsword and delivered a [Heavy Strike]!

“Peng!”

With another MISS, the sword directly pierced the ground. She quickly pulled it out, bringing grass and spring soil along. In a complete panic, she delivered a heavy kick to the wild boar’s forehead.

“81 ! ”

The wild boar is nothing more than a normal monster but today he finally met a noob player, so he felt good. He attacked Matcha with his forehead, using the strategy of striking and retreating. He kept calling out, his pointy tusks full of saliva. It seemed like he was loving the chance to

trample over this noob swordsman.

“Huff huff.....”

Matcha grabbed a level 4 healing potion and drank it in one gulp, then she lifted her sword and retreated. Her beautiful face filled with helplessness and she cried out, “Boss, help me.....”

I felt like dying inside and my scalp was tingling. With a swing of Frost Rain Sword, [Wind Blade] was launched!

“1727 ! ”

The wild boar let out a wretched cry and fell down. It was killed with one strike. Strawberry Matcha hid behind me and while he held my arm, half of her face peeked out. In a voice still filled with panic, “I.....I.....I have never encountered such a savage wild boar, boss.....”

I moved away and pointed to the wild boar’s carcass, “This is nothing more than a dumb wild boar.....”

Matcha looked at me with a pitiful face, “Boss, my in game fighting skills might be a little lacking. When I turn my body, I immediately start to feel dizzy and my sword speed is not very coordinated, but I will try hard...”

I nodded my head and supported her by her shoulder and said, “Big Sister Matcha, as a newbie, getting dizzy from turning and a lack of coordination in sword fighting is a normal thing. But I’m very surprised.....how did your sword pierce into the ground?”

Matcha’s face reddened completely, “Boss, I.....”

“Fine, let’s not talk about it until after we level up. Don’t worry, Song Han and I will teach you about close combat and if you put in the effort to study, there is nothing you can’t learn. Big Sister Matcha, just keep flying and leave all the monsters on the ground to me. Concentrate and be a good experience baby.”

“Ah, ah, boss, you are so nice!”

.....

Almost 40 minutes later, we arrived at Fire Stone Canyon while I stood at the canyon's edge and looked down into the layer of fog. The zone seemed to have been redone since it looked very different compared to my last visit. This new version had some similarities to Green Qilin Abyss, full of mysterious dangers and challenges.

Matcha flapped her wings and flew midair, holding her longsword while smiling, "Boss, are we are going to level here?"

I nodded my head, "Yeah, we will train here. I want to level you quickly, so try to raise your level past 40 within 3 days. Go all out....."

"What about Song Han and them?"

"They are leveling in another place. Thankfully, Cang Lei got here so their leveling speed will not be shabby with a super spending RMB person helping. When our levels are pretty close, we will level by doing quests together."

"Alright!"

.....

I jumped down into the canyon and stabbed my Frost Rain Sword into the cliff surface, creating a long streak of sparks and slid the whole way down. Strawberry Matcha was behind me and flew down at the same time. This time, the strengths of the different races were revealed; in this terrain, there was no doubt that the wind elf's flying ability was a huge superiority for them.

"Hua!"

With a gush of wind, Strawberry Matcha passed me overhead. She landed one step ahead of me, raised her sword and smiled, "Boss, you are so slow....."

With a straight face, "Light green....."

Strawberry Matcha's face instantly turned red, "Boss, you!"

"It's your fault, let's go level....."

.....

Bringing out Baby Bobo, I rushed ahead and after about 10 minutes, before me were monsters that I was looking for. They were green colored butterflies that were lightly flying through the air as they danced above the grassland. But unlike normal butterflies, they were at least the size of a washbasin; their beautiful appearance hid a strong, lethal nature-

[Illusionary Butterfly] (Elite monster)

Level: 55

Magic Attack: 1100-1250

Defense: 650

Health: 4500

Abilities: [Fierce Wind] [Vines of the Dancing Butterfly]

Introduction: The Illusionary Butterfly is a type of insect monster that lives in an ancient forest. Rumors say that it is very powerful in manipulating natural forces and can even control the plants on the ground.

.....

Placing the stats of the Illusionary Butterfly into the party chat. I said, "Big Sister Matcha, don't get within 30 yards of the Illusory Butterfly or else it will aggro to you automatically and one [Fierce Wind] could kill you. You should fly as high as you can in the air and let me kill the monsters. You just need to get the experience!"

TL: Alright so I'm guessing the Matcha wouldn't get the full experience like Song Han and them did when the partied with Xiao Yao before

"Yes, I understand. The monster's level is too high. Boss, you be careful as well!"

"Yup!"

With a "Pa," my Purple Dawn Boots lifted off the grass while I charged forward. "Peng!" Frost started to swirl around Frost Rain Sword as [Fierce Ice Blade] was launched. The sword pierced through the small body of the Illusory Butterfly.

“1298 ! ”

Sure enough, a magic creature’s defense was really weak.

Chapter 146: Too Small

“Flap Flap”

Recoiling slightly from my attack, the Illusionary Butterfly groaned and flapped its wings. Both of its wings trembled as the glow of fiery flames flickered into sight. In the next second, a magic skill was cast, and a powerful [Fierce Wind] blew from under my foot, engulfing my body. A sharp pain wracked my body as a large number floated above my head—

“547 ! ”

I frowned, this magical skill was capable of doing way too much damage. This monster had to die quickly!

Turning the tip of the sword over, a golden hexagram appeared, signifying a Lv 6 [Combo]. 4 consecutive moves struck, causing damages totaling to almost 3200! Unsurprisingly, the Illusionary Butterfly's health nearly dropped to 0!

“Hong!”

The second gust of [Fierce Wind] took over 500 of my health, but a Lv 6 [Heal] recovered 900 of my health back to me!

“Creak...”

The Illusionary Butterfly gave a shrill scream; its wings glowed green while it furiously danced in the light. The second skill was coming—[Vines of the Dancing Butterfly]!

“Shua!”

Countless of green vines rose from the ground, wrapping around me and binding my feet to the ground. It was a crowd control ability that would stop all movement for 3 seconds. Thus it would be possible to both attack and defend during this duration. Tsk, this skill is not bad, combined with an Archer's [Shattered Shot], it would be quite amazing. This would be a great PK move; after binding, two [Flame Blade]s would be able to take care of anyone caught in it!

Taking advantage of my closeness, I didn't let Baby Bobo attack. Instead, I used the Frost Rain Sword. Cyan colored wind started to pick up as the [Wind Blade] got ready to let loose.

“1774 ! ”

The sword beheaded the Illusionary Butterfly, and two words rose above my head – LEVEL +1!

.....

OK, the [Wind Blade] finally grew to Lv 6 on my journey to Lv 52, totaling an additional 18% damage! With my attack strength, the [Wind Blade] was enough to carve the soul out of someone's body with ease!

From behind, Strawberry Matcha chuckled, “Wow Boss, your attack is so high. I've met many people in Ba Huang Forest but no one has more attack than you do.”

Carrying the Frost Rain Sword, “Hehe, it's decent. If I didn't have this strength, how could I protect everyone?”

“Yea! When I follow Boss, I feel safe and protected!”

Strawberry Matcha stuck out her tongue and raised her sword into the air while flying, “Boss, I checked the skill list, and the S Ranked [Strength of a Thousand Men] skill is yours right...”

I nodded, “Yea, what about it?”

“Why didn't you use [Strength of a Thousand men] on the Illusionary Butterfly? The butterfly's defense would not have been high enough to protect itself from it. We could have saved a lot of time and leveled some more.”

I gave it a thought, “Ah, that's true. Strawberry Matcha, when we killed that Illusionary Butterfly, how much experience did you get?”

“Well... 0.9% of the total experience needed for this level...”

“Not bad, 110 of these Illusionary Butterflies would get you a level up. Let's continue!”

“Okay!”

This time, I used the proposal Strawberry Matcha had given when I spotted an Illusionary Butterfly. Not yet close enough for the auto-aggro to happen, but close enough to quickly get into range with a dash, I struck with multiple blows! “Pa pa pa!”

“679 ! ”

“771 ! ”

“667 ! ”

With the fourth hit, I deliberately let the sword rub against the Illusionary Butterfly closely, and then abruptly smashed into it!

“1102 ! ”

The final blow, [Wind Blade], had its attack increased!

“2108 ! ”

I didn’t get a Fatal Blow with [Wind Blade], but this Illusionary Butterfly was already long gone without it!

Carrying the Frost Rain Sword, I picked up the silver coin that dropped from the Illusionary Butterfly. I laughed and asked, “Strawberry Matcha, Boss’ combo is incredibly graceful isn’t it?”

Strawberry Matcha chuckled, “Yes, super cool! Boss’ combo is the coolest combo of them all, but ... the delay between the third and fourth hit was a little long. Boss, I heard people on the forum say that while in the middle of a battle, if you repeatedly think of the attack pattern, you can increase the speed of your attacks so your fourth hit quicker and more violent~”

I stared blankly, “Eh, is there such a trick?”

“Yea, when I was leveling up a few days ago, another noob player said so!”

“Then let’s see!”

I was skeptical. While killing two more Illusionary Butterflies with the

Frost Rain Sword, the third butterfly came into place. The cooldown was over. It was time to unleash [Strength of a Thousand Men] once more!

“Pa pa pa...”

After three consecutive hits, I immediately thought of the attack pattern once again. And just like Strawberry Matcha had said, the speed of my body increased and the attack speed increased slightly as well. The fourth hit struck even faster than before. By the time I was done with the fourth strike, [Wind Blade], already brought the combo to the end!

“Ding!”

Notification: Player has successfully learned more about the combo skill [Strength of a Thousand Men] and the harmony has gone up by 1.6%!

.....

I stood there stupefied. [Strength of a Thousand Men] had finally gone up in harmony. After 60% it had gotten extremely hard to gain any more harmony with it, but it had finally increased once more! Tsk, truly, even the person of mere happenstance can be a teacher for a moment! Strawberry Matcha had noticed this by accident, but to have this type of effect was truly unexpected!

TL Note: Chinese Idiom: “You can always learn from someone.”

“Boss? Boss, what’s wrong?” Strawberry Matcha stared at me as I stood there in a daze.

I raised my head and gave her a bright smile, “It’s nothing. Big Sis Matcha, you were right! If I think of my attack in my head, it will increase the attack speed of my attacks!”

“Ah, it was just a rumor I heard. I didn’t know if it was true or not, and I didn’t have a combo to try it out with either...”

“Ah!”

Continuing on with the Frost Rain Sword in hand, I stabbed a Illusionary Butterfly’s body while thinking of my attacks before hand. With this small technique, I was capable of increasing the attack speed of

combos, but not ordinary attacks. The most important aspect of this technique was that it could increase the attack speed of combos by around 15%!

Ordinary people usually have a 0.2-0.3 second delay in their brains, but expert players could minimize this to a 0.1-0.2 range. So many things can happen in a second and so the faster the technique finishes, the more valuable it is in PKing! If I cut down [Strength of a Thousand Men]’s time to complete then I basically improve the chances of this skill landing!

This was extremely important. If I killed a noob like Tyrant of the Western Chu, then 1.2 seconds would be enough. But against Jiang Fen Han, Q-Sword, and other top ranked players, 1.2 seconds would be too long to risk trying to use a combo. I needed to master this!

.....

In less than 30 minutes, a golden light dropped from the heavens with a “Shua!”, and I reached Lv 52. Strawberry Matcha was also able to reach Lv 28 as well. The Illusionary Butterflies before me fell to the ground. “Huahua” noises came from it as 14 coins dropped, as well as a green illustrated handbook. Picking it up to inspect it, it was an Illusionary Butterfly card!

[Illusionary Butterfly]

Attack: ★★☆☆

Defense: ★★★★★

Health: ★★★★★

Agility: ★★☆☆

Magic: ★★★★★☆

Skills: [Fierce Wind] [Vines of the Dancing Butterfly]

.....

With a flashing light, the Illusionary Butterfly card faded away from my hand. That meant with luck, I would be able to seal an Illusionary Butterfly away as a pet, but it had to be a Lv 1 butterfly which wasn’t so

easy to find. Hmph, 4.5 stars in magic growth, that's even higher than Yue Qing Qian's Ice Rat. This is definitely a good magic pet and it can fly! Adding all the points in ability power would allow it to kill heavy armor classes like garlic on vampires!

Bringing my head up to look at Strawberry Matcha, I said, "Big Sis Strawberry Matcha, I just learned the Illusionary Butterfly Illustration. Be on the lookout for any Lv 1 Illusionary Butterflies, and tell me when you see one. Don't let it go to waste!"

"Okay! Got it Boss!"

"Hold on, you don't have a pet yet right?"

Strawberry Matcha's face turned red, "Ah, I don't have any money to buy one and I never came across a Lv 1 monster to seal..."

"Alright, come on then. If we can't find you a pet here, then I'll buy you a Killer Bee to take after we finish leveling."

"Okay, thanks Boss!"

"No problem..."

.....

And so, with a beautiful Wind Elf Swordsman, we traveled into Flint Canyon. In the blink of an eye, 3 hours had already passed. Strawberry Matcha had already reached Lv 30, and she was already wearing the equipment I had bought for her—like the Silver Tier breastplate, boots, and sword. She was finally exuding the attitude of an expert.

Noticing me stare at her, Strawberry Matcha's face turned even more red, "Boss, don't you dare look again!"

I coughed, and then turned to look at a distant Illusionary Butterfly.

Strawberry Matcha went silent for a few seconds and then opened her mouth, "Boss, I've heard that ... you know Fan Shu City's number one beauty, Cang Tong, very well. So well that you even know her in real life, is that true?"

I nodded my head, "I do..."

Strawberry Matcha's small face turned even more red, "Oh ... Cang Tong's body is so good looking ... would Boss think that ... think that mine is a little small?"

I looked at her as her face flushed, breaking into laughter, I said, "Big Sis Matcha, what are you thinking about? You are one of Zhan Long's members! We depend on you to help provide for us, and not on anyone else! Let me tell you, don't compare yourself to Cang Tong. You'll feel inferior. To say that... what about Yue Qing Qian ..."

Strawberry Matcha continued to blush, "Oh, okay. Boss doesn't mind me, that's good..."

I said nothing.

.....

At this moment, in another one of Ba Huang Forest's training area.

"Achoo!"

A beautiful female figure emerged from behind a werewolf, holding a dagger out and ready to kill. She trembled abruptly as she stared into the empty sky, "Wuu, What's this? Why do I feel as if someone is talking badly about me?"

TL: Superstition that you sneeze when someone talks ill of you"

Another beautiful girl held her dagger out, "Elder sister, hurry up and run, the werewolf leader is about to bite you!"

"Wa! Archer, use [Shattered Shot] to save me!! Ah ... idiot, I want you to stun the werewolf, not hit me! You won't be getting paid this week!"

"Deputy Chef please forgive me! I have a 25 year old wife, and a 19 year old mistress! If I can't get any money, I won't be able to live!"

"....."

.....

The moon shone above the canyon, revealing everything with its glow. Shining onto the grasses, the branches overhead, and even the stream, it

was truly a beautiful sight.

“Rustle...”

Strawberry Matcha landed gently as I stood by the side of the edge of the jungle. Her mouth was opened slightly as she reached out and touched my back, “Boss, why do you always carry around a large black stone? Don’t you get tired?”

I smiled slightly, “The mysteries of heaven cannot be revealed, this is something good!”

TL: Idiom for saying that they can’t tell you/no one but heaven knows.

“Ah, is that so...” Strawberry Matcha giggled, “Boss, let’s continue, that valley still has many Illusionary Butterflies right? You said you’d stay with me for the entire day, don’t you back out of your promise! Otherwise, I won’t ever know how I would be able to train together with you all!”

I nodded, “Yea, by the end of today you will be Lv 35, so fight on!”

“Okay, okay, let’s go Boss!”

.....

All of a sudden, Strawberry Matcha stood rooted to her spot and pointed towards the inside of the ravine, “Boss...look over there, there’s an extremely large butterfly, is...is that a BOSS?!”

Chapter 147: Illusionary Butterfly Queen

“It doesn’t look like a butterfly, but rather a gigantic, beautiful kite...”

Strawberry Matcha looked hesitant.

With the Frost Rain Sword in hand, I looked around. Far off in the valley, there was a giant butterfly floating under a giant maple tree. With its four splendid wings spread wide open, its ornate patterns looked just like a beautiful picture, making it seem more and more like a huge kite. However, at the center of the picture was without a doubt a body and a pink skull attached to it. There was no doubt that it was a butterfly!

Squinting, I smiled, “We’re in luck! Strawberry Matcha, let’s hurry over there, I can’t see properly because we’re too far away, so I can’t say for certain it’s a boss!

“Okay!”

Sword in hand, I plunged towards the depths of the valley with Strawberry Matcha flying down with her own weapon.

Not daring to get any closer in fear of alerting this special butterfly, I stared at it from 70 yards away to try and see its stats. I was not wrong in my guess, this really was a boss, and even better, it was magic oriented, so I could easily fight it–

[Illusionary Butterfly Queen] (Purple Tiered Boss)

Level: 57

Magical Attack: 1400-1850

Defense: 740

Health: 220000

Skills: [Fierce Fire Wind] [Abyssal Flames] [Vines of the Dancing Butterfly]

Description: After the Illusionary Butterfly Queen was abandoned by the Illusionary Butterfly King in the forest, its magical powers increased in potency. It has become extremely sensitive to the powers of nature, so

be careful not to be buried alive in the vines of the Illusionary Butterfly Queen's.

.....

"It really is a boss, and a Lv 57 Purple Tiered one too! "I pumped my fist with a laugh.

Strawberry Matcha was a little worried by this, "Boss, aren't you afraid that the two of us won't be enough to beat it? Even...even though you have [Heal], you can only cast it once every 6 seconds. The Illusionary Butterfly Queen has a magical power of 1850, it is enough to overpower your healing rate, I'm worried that you'd be killed...."

I waved the Frost Rain Sword with a small chuckle, "How do you know if you haven't tried yet?"

Pursing her lips, Strawberry Matcha nodded slowly, "If you say so then. I just saw that [Vines of the Dancing Butterfly] has a cool down of 50 seconds, and your [Strength of a Thousand Men] has a cool down of 60 seconds. If you get caught in [Vines of the Dancing Butterfly], then [Abyssal Flames] will kill you for sure. So be ready to dodge at all costs, and also, [Fierce Fire Wind] has a cast time of 0.5 seconds. Boss, you don't have a huge amount of time to dodge [Fierce Fire Wind], but if you do, then you'll have a higher chance to win. What should I do in the meanwhile?"

I gave her level a glance, "Well, you should stand some distance away and observe, or else you might risk getting killed by [Abyssal Flames]"

"Okay then, good luck Boss!"

"Yea!"

Strawberry Matcha flew back a good length and I grasped the Frost Rain Sword in preparation with Baby Bobo at my side. This boss only had 220,000 health, I'll win for sure!

"Shua!"

The Purple Dawn Boots swept over the rocks as I flew from the air

downwards. “Pa!” Pushing off from the cliff side, I brought my Frost Rain Sword over my head, the sword shone with the misty glow of [Fierce Ice Blade] as I struck with a sneak attack!

“1521 ! ”

The sword had practically impaled the Illusionary Butterfly Queen’s body while simultaneously slowing her down!

“Boss, your fighting stance is so beautiful...” From behind, Strawberry Matcha clapped her hands. This silly little sister really didn’t know the meaning of fear.

Underneath the strong [Fierce Ice Blade], the Illusionary Butterfly Queen flapped her wings as she tried and take off. With shouts of “Jiji”, her entire body was suddenly surrounded by intense fire and immediately sent a [Fierce Fire Wind]!

I tried to move aside, but my foot didn’t react in time, and because I didn’t see the 0.5 second activation glow of her skill, my whole body was set aflame, and my health instantly dropped by a huge amount!

“1014 ! ”

Sure enough, this was an extremely strong magic attack; I couldn’t stand to take another one of these!

Turning around, I rushed to the side of the boss and tried to use my movements to slow down the Boss’ attacks. At the same time, golden stars appeared on Frost Rain Sword and a 4 hit [Combo] landed on the boss. It caused nearly 2200 damage!

“Shua!”

Quickly taking a few steps back, the [Fierce Fire Wind] sent by the Queen hit the ground where I was previously standing resulting in the words floating above my head, MISS.

Strawberry Matcha floated about in the air, and could not help but to clap, “You dodged that in style, boss! I wanted to help out, so I decided to keep track of the timing! Looking at the boss, [Fierce Fire Wind] has

another 1.5 seconds until the cooldown is over, so including the activation sequence there's still 2 seconds left! Boss, it looks like with your agility, you can easily predict the skills. I'd say that [Fierce Fire Wind] would have at least a 50% MISS rate, this will be an easy fight for you!"

I moved sideways, using a [Wind Blade] on the body of the Illusionary Butterfly Queen and a regular attack to hurt her for at least 2500 damage. Baby Bobo successfully launched multiple attacks while I was gathering my thoughts about what to do next. If the boss sent out a [Fierce Fire Wind], both me and Baby Bobo would need to dodge avoid anymore health loss, if we both get hit then, I would need to use a bunch of [Heal]s to recover the health lost.

"Pop!"

Thrusting the Frost Rain Sword into the BOSS' abdomen, a cyan colored ray of light fell from the sky onto my sword all of a sudden, signifying a fatal strike! This fatal strike dealt 2000 damage to the Illusionary Butterfly Queen, surprising even me. With this strength, it seemed like my attacks would be enough to kill any player or monster efficiently.

"Creak..."

The Illusionary Butterfly Queen screamed shrilly as it's four wings bursting open with anger. It was another skill-[Abyssal Flames]!

"Hong!"

The skill had a 4 by 4 meter attack range which was impossible to dodge. Immediately, my foot caught on fire, taking away more than 900 health. Fortunately, it was not all that deadly, and with my level being so high, getting hurt with an attack like this wasn't a big deal anymore. In a flash, [Vines of the Dancing Butterfly] came at me, but I was prepared for this with my own skill. Using [Strength of a Thousand Men], I cleared all of the vines. Having a combo was an incredible advantage!

In less than a minute, the BOSS had already lost more than 15% of its health!

Strawberry Matcha stood far away, calculating the data with a chuckle,

“I’m speechless with your damage, boss. Within a minute, you have done 57,542 damage total, but the BOSS has been regenerating its health quickly, in fact, only 33,000 damage has been done. Keep up the good work, in 7 minutes you’ll be able to kill this big butterfly, and get a huge amount of experience~~”

With a MISS, I dodged the [Fierce Fire Wind] while saying, “Ah, I won’t be talking, or else the pressure is a bit big but be careful Strawberry Matcha. There might be other players around the area that want the boss. We need to be careful someone doesn’t last hit the BOSS and snatch it away from us.”

“Okay!”

.....

I continued to concentrate on killing the boss and realized the pressure of trying to kill this boss wasn’t all that bad. My equipment was constantly upgraded so why did I think that I would not be able to fight this boss? Despite it being a Level 57 Purple Tiered Boss, it was an undeniable fact that the Illusionary Butterfly Queen was slowly being dominated by my attacks, and was retreating backwards. It couldn’t even hope to one-shot me.

Strawberry Matcha was flying around carefully with a sword, looking out for other players and acting as a sentry.

The Illusionary Butterfly Queen’s stats did not beat any of my 5 stats, so it was easy enough to kill. For anyone concentrating on killing a boss, a dodge rate of at least 65% was needed for [Fierce Fire Wind], otherwise the amount of damage taken would be unsustainable without the use of a skill like [Heal]. Because the boss was focusing solely on me, it had forgotten about Baby Bobo, but unfortunately, Baby Bobo had been caught in the [Abyssal Flames] and [Fierce Fire Wind] combo by accident, and was killed.

In 6 minutes, the boss only had 10% health left and was not much of a threat. My heart rate began to calm once again, while circling around the

boss slowly with my sword in hand, I called out to Strawberry Matcha, “Do you see anything out of the ordinary?”

Strawberry Matcha has been sitting on top of a tree branch, with her green hair flying and long legs swinging. Laughing, she said “No, no players are nearby, we are too far into the valley, boss. But still, you are high leveled so be careful to look and see if there are any Assassins around. To have the final hit on the BOSS be stolen from us will be the most annoying thing ever!”

“Got it!”

A “Hua” was heard as Strawberry Matcha jumped down from the tree branch with her sword in hand. Her body floated above the ground and her pointy ears listened carefully. A pair of beautiful eyes stared tensely at the situation around us, she had already been consciously looking around to detect any close by Assassins!

I was secretly delighted, although Strawberry Matcha was concentrating heavily, <<Destiny>> did not have such a difficult system of learning and a little more training would help in adding another strong player to Zhan Long’s main power. Ah, what a reliable person!

.....

Finally, the moment of truth!

“Creak...”

Using [Strength of a Thousand Men] to land the killing blow, the Illusionary Butterfly Queen dropped to the ground with a cry. Behind me, Strawberry Matcha leveled up twice with a “Shua shua” sound, and I myself went from 2% at level 52 to 47%. The experience from a Purple Tiered Boss was quite generous, but it was the equipment that dropped I was looking forward to!

Taking a stride forward, I put all of the things the boss dropped into my inventory and with a closer look, I saw a total of three equipment: A verdant green staff, a shiny necklace that shone like the moonlight, and a fire, red wrist guard. They all looked pretty decent in aesthetics

department.

Waving a hand over it, the details of the staff appeared in the party chat–

[Jade Pot Staff] (Purple Tier)

Magic Damage: 440-720

Endurance: +39

Ability Power: +37

Extra: Increases the effectiveness of healing skills by 10%.

Extra: Increases maximum health by 300.

Required Level: 47

.....

Putting the Twisted Jade Staff into my inventory, I said, “We’ll give this staff to Zhan Long’s Healer, Darling Duck okay?”

Strawberry Matcha gave a wink, “Of course, I obey the boss!”

I continued to look at the second item, the necklace that was moon shaped–

[Red Rain Chain] (Gold Tier)

Agility: +40

Endurance: +32

Extra: Increase the damage of all Musketeer skills by 7%

Required level: 48

.....

My mouth twitched, it was stereotypical musketeer equipment, I looked back at Strawberry Matcha, “Strawberry Matcha, this is best for Fox, so let’s return and give this to him.”

Strawberry Matcha looked confused, “Boss, which one is Fox?”

“The one that looks quite old...:”

“You mean the one that looks like a 45 year old uncle?”

I almost vomited blood, “Damn! Strawberry Matcha, you cannot say this to him, he’ll get angry with you, In reality, he is only 27 years old, he didn’t age well though...”

Strawberry Matcha stuck out her tongue, “I know that boss!”

Chapter 148: The Desire to Protect

Finally the third item and also the most valuable piece of equipment for me was a flame-colored, glowing wrist guard. My current wrist guard was only Lv 30 and Silver Tiered so if this new wrist guard was decent enough, I could switch it out.

“Shua!”

The details of the wrist guard materialized and Strawberry Matcha could not help but have jaw drop. “Boss...this...this is incredible luck! Ah! This boss dropped not one, but two purple items!”

[Heaven’s Peak Wristguard] (Purple Tier)

Category: Armor

Defense: 220

Strength: +40

Ability Power: +38

Extra: Increases precision of attacks by 17%

Extra: Increases magical resistance by 15%

Required level: 49

.....

Holding the Heaven’s Peak Wristguard, I happily equipped the item, and saw a huge improvement in my stats—

[Xiao Yao Zi Zai] (Tomb Guardian of Dragon City)

Level: 52

Attack: 1448-1888

Defense: 1309

Health: 2721

Mana: 910

Charm: 34

.....

The biggest change was in my defense and mana. My defense was definitely unique. No Swordsman would have over 1000 defense. Also, my 910 mana would let me fight for a longer time in battles. At the very least, I would not run out of mana with only 2 or 3 level 6 skills. Running out of mana is embarrassing to say the least, and no Swordsman would ever want to be in that position in a life and death situation.

With the addition of the Heaven's Peak Wristguard, my attack precision was boosted by 17% and my magical resistance by 15%. These two effects were pretty straightforward and useful in PK situations, even if the opponent can dodge spectacularly enough, with a high enough precision, one's blade could follow them. For the magic resistance, that's the only way to go against mages which makes it very sought after.

Looking at all of the loot that dropped out of the BOSS, the results were somewhat disappointing, no Guild Creation Tablet dropped, and neither did any Pardon Card or Soul Spirit Stones. All that was left were a pile of filthy mucus eggs. It felt greasy to the hand when I touched it, and there were 7 eggs altogether—

[Insect Eggs]: Ingredients, you can use this in cooking.

.....

It seemed to be useless, so I threw it into my inventory, turning to Strawberry Matcha, I asked her, "Did you want to continue leveling, or go offline and rest? Dinner time is coming soon..."

Strawberry Matcha nodded her head, "Let's take a break, I'll go make dinner!"

"Okay then..."

Seeing how the girl was so diligently working even offline, I shook my head. I sent a message to Wan Er, "Miss, are we going out to dinner soon?"

Wan Er replied quickly, "Yea, come wait underneath the girl's dormitory."

“I’m on my way!”

.....

I put on some clothes, and in a few minutes I arrive downstairs of the girl dormitories where Wan Er and Dong Cheng Yue’s beautiful figures appeared. Even though I had seen them many times, whenever I see such beautiful women like these two my heart can’t help but throb.

“Ahem...”

Coughing into my fist, clearing ripples within my mind and taking a look at Wan Er, I asked, “Wan Er, where will we be eating today?”

“Today we will be treated out...” Wan Er said.

“By whom?”

“Wang Ren, the pretty girl you saw last time at the kendo club.”

“Okay then, did she say to invite me?”

“She did. Let’s go, to the school of Korean Cuisine...”

“Okay.”

.....

7:00 PM, Korean Restaurant.

The smell of steaming barbeque filled the air in the hall.

Wang Ran sat there with her cheek resting on her hand, looking at me. A pair of beautiful eyes blinked a few times as she said, “Li Xiao Yao, are you really not willing to join our Kendo club? A talent like yours doesn’t come by often, I really don’t want to miss out on an opportunity like this. So, give me your conditions, as long as you join the Kendo club, I’ll do my best to satisfy you.”

Dong Cheng tilted her head and gave a small laugh, “Wang Ran, if Li Xiao Yao were to want you to be his girlfriend, would you still be willing?”

Wang Ran’s face turned red, “Other than that, I already have a boy that I like...”

Wan Er smiled, "Okay then, could you stop trying to poach him away with my presence? No matter what you say, Li Xiao Yao is mine. If you want to try and take him away, you'll have to go through me, is that clear?"

Wang Ran looked astonished, "Wan Er, why do you say that Li Xiao Yao is yours?"

"Uh..." Wan Er looked shocked at her own words for a second, stammering for several seconds, as if she did not know what to say.

I knew she was worried about accidentally exposing me as her bodyguard, so I picked up a pair of chopsticks and said, "Let's first eat some food and forget about this, it's quite the boring topic..."

"Okay okay, let's eat!"

.....

Halfway through the meal, a group of people suddenly entered the restaurant. A person gave a surprised look as he spotted us, "Damn, what a coincidence, isn't that Wan Er, Wang Ran and Li Xiao Yao?"

Our group looked over at the commotion, it seemed like the people that just came in were Liu Ying, Piggy and them who all were the school's ***. The general student population wouldn't dare to provoke them.

Liu Ying came walking straight over to us with a bright smile, and asked Wang Ran, "Wang Ran, yesterday I...yesterday I sent you a platinum collectible star card, did you get it yet?"

Wang Ran's eyes stared down at the barbeque plate, "I haven't."

Liu Ying bit his lip, reaching into his pocket with a "Hua", he took out two tickets, "Well, these are the front seat tickets to Jay Chou's concert in Hangzhou two days from now. It was with great difficulty that I managed to buy these tickets, I know you like Jay Chou, and so do I, so why don't we both go see his concert together?"

Wang Ran raised her head, her beautiful eyes staring at him without a single trace of emotion. Laughing suddenly, she asked, "You like Jay

Chou?”

Liu Ying nodded his head furiously, “Ah, I do!”

Wang Ran smiled, “Then I don’t like Jay Chou.”

Liu Ying stood silently.

.....

After suppressing a choke, a boy to Liu Ying’s side could not contain himself anymore. Clenching his fist, he mumbled to himself tensely, “Hmph, what kind of goddess does Wang Ran think she is?! Pah, she isn’t anything more than a bimbo with big boobs!”

“Bang!”

Wang Ran’s hand pounded the table as she abruptly stood up with a glare, “What did you say?”

Liu Ying hurriedly gave a glare to the student that had spoken and giving an apology to Wang Ran, he said, “Wang Ran, he is an idiot, please don’t bother with someone like him.”

Wang Ran closed her eyes, “Liu Ying, I advise you to save your breath, there is no need for you to spare any thoughts for me, aren’t you still with Xue Yue? To chase after so many girls, are you able to afford this hobby of yours for long?”

Liu Ying was embarrassed, “Actually...Xue Yue and I....there is nothing between us...”

“There is nothing between what?”

Wang Ran laughed, “There was something, a *** type of relationship, don’t say there isn’t anything between you two...”

Liu Ying’s face went purple, it was clear to see this was the first time he realized that Wang Ran was not easy to please.

.....

Even though I have a grudge against Liu Ying, I still found it hard to intervene between the two. However, there was food to be eaten, so I

bowed my head once more to eat the various barbeque, Enoki Mushrooms, squid, sea hare, pacific saury, I will be eating everything!

“Li Xiao Yao!” Liu Ying suddenly shouted,

My heart skipped a beat, for fuck’s sake, did you want to be beaten?!

As expected, Liu Ying’s next sentence was, “How are you Xiao Yao? Everyday you have a beautiful woman treat you out, today Wan Er, tomorrow Dong Cheng Yue, then the day after it’s Wang Ran. Liu Hua Academy is full of beautiful women, Xiao Yao, everyday you swap out for a new girl, how does it feel to be wanted?!”

“Plump!”

Swallowing a piece of barbeque into my mouth, I slowly stood up. Rolling my sleeves up a bit while I looked at Liu Ying, I said, “I’m not trying to be some type of hero to beautiful women, so stop bothering me. Liu Ying, you should know this, so why did you bring so many people here if they’re not enemies to me?”

Liu Ying grinded his teeth bitterly, “That is true, we are not your opponents, but in <<Destiny>>, we could easily be your superior! Haven’t you realized? Five minutes ago, one of my friends had already killed some servant girl named Strawberry Matcha at Flint Valley! Haha, LaShou Cui Hua had killed her with ease, I’ve heard that Strawberry Matcha is a member from Zhan Long, and we also know that you are the founder of Zhan Long, isn’t that right?”

“Screw you!”

My heart sank, how could Strawberry Matcha be online so early?

I gave Liu Ying a cold stare and turned around and started to leave.

Wan Er quickly pulled me aside, “Xiao Yao...what’s wrong?”

Biting my lip, I explained to her, “Strawberry Matcha is a new recruit of Zhan Long. She just joined us recently, so to already have a target placed on her back is worrying. I took her to Fire Stone Valley today to grind and we both got offline less than an hour ago. To see that she went online

again so soon, I don't know what happened... but I have to get online right away or else she will be left alone to fight against [Wrath of the Heroes]!”

Wan Er took my hand and stood up, her beautiful face seemed to have been covered by a layer of frost. Looking at Liu Ying, she spoke with a clipped tone, “Liu Ying, do you have to be so ruthless? What kind of hatred do you have against Li Xiao Yao? To try and overwhelm another studio, hmph, seems like [Wrath of the Heroes] is only a second rate guild. This type of strategy really is despicable!”

Liu Ying looked gloomy, “What? Does the chief of [Hero Mound] disagree with our actions? Are you going to bring all of [Hero Mound] to Ba Huang City to prevent another guild from doing what it wants again?”

Dong Cheng stood up as well, “There is no need for [Hero Mound] to wipe out a trash guild like [Wrath of the Heroes], we only need 20% of our guild to deal with you!”

Raising an eyebrow, Liu Ying replied, “If you say so, however, I don't believe you. Brothers, let's not fight here and return back to <<Destiny>>, today we will wait for [Hero Mound] to come to Ba Huang City and massacre [Wrath of the Heroes]!”

In a short amount of time, Liu Ying and his group of people were all gone.

Wan Er and Dong Cheng Yue were both fuming with anger and wanted to head back too, but I pulled them both back by their hands.

“What on earth do you want?” Wan Er asked while looking at me.

I was speechless, “I'm begging you guys to not be impulsive, this is something that has nothing to do with [Hero Mound], I do not wish to be cursed as a pushover, or a lamb to be protected under the wing of [Hero Mound]. As of today, this is the business of Zhan Long, I will take care of this myself. There'll be a day where Zhan Long and [Hero Mound] will meet head to head, so as of right now, we will not rely on the strength of others!”

“That's...okay then...” Wan Er pouted.

I sat down once more and said, “Let’s finish eating within 10 minutes, and then return!”

Wan Er held up her hand, “Waiter, take out boxes please! I can’t let Xiao Yao endure 10 minutes of torture like this!”

Dong Cheng Yue: “...”

.....

Hurrying back to the dormitories, I quickly logged back online!

“Shua!”

Appearing in Flint Valley, far away, a few members from [Wrath of the Heroes] stood standing guard by the body of Strawberry Matcha. Her shin guards had been dropped, and her level had dropped back down to level 32 as well, it looks like she was killed more than once.

A tomahawk carrying Lv 47 Berserker laughed, “Ha, this chick’s face is decent looking, and her skin is soft as well! What a shame she joined Zhan Long, it seems that she isn’t your average stupid person! Haha ha, I’m dying of laughter here...”

The other person was a Lv 46 dagger carrying Assassin. “Hehe, this chick is just my type! Once she revives, don’t interfere, I want to get her phone number first...”

Chapter 149: Foolish Matcha

“Ding!”

Matcha’s voice echoed as she messaged me. “Boss, I can see you. Please don’t be careless. Retreat behind the bushes. Hurry up or else they’ll find you!”

I scampered towards the bushes with a whoosh. After inviting Matcha to the team, I saw her body in the distance. I then said to the team channel: “Matcha, what is the situation?”

Matcha replied: “When I was offline, Little Wolf had already bought dinner and finished it in 40 minutes. I was bored after that, so I signed back in to take a look, but ended up getting ambushed by members of [Wrath of the Heroes].”

I called Baby Bobo over and narrowed my eyes: “Look.... They only have a few people. A bit more than 12 including the Healers. They don’t have any Mages or Archers, and most of them are between Lv 42 and 48. Not much of a threat!”

“Boss!”

Matcha raised her voice in response: “Don’t underestimate them! See the slopes on your right? There are at least 20 Archers and Mages concealed in the bushes there. They’re trying to lure you into an ambush! Don’t be surprised that they’re sending reinforcements here right now. This is to avenge their humiliation from the skirmish at Green Qilin Abyss.”

My eyebrow knit: “This....Then we must make our way to the North, bypassing remote areas.”

“That would be one option.” Matcha said in a soft voice: “But there are three or four Assassins sneaking around. It is not safe, so don’t do anything reckless. Let me revive first!”

“What?” I retorted: “Don’t, you will just be thrashed to death by a Berserker upon your resurrection. I don’t want to see you die again, if

that'll happen, I'd rather be hacked to death with you!"

Matcha replied in a sweet voice: "Boss, rest assured that I will only revive after having a distance of 10 meters away from them. After that, I'll quickly fly towards the North of the forest and have them follow me there. The forest will restrict their vision. At that time, you enter and finish them off one by one. I will fly them in the air to attract their attention while reporting their coordinates to you, how about that?"

I hesitated: "Are you sure about this tactic Matcha?"

Matcha chuckled: "Boss! You still don't trust me. You think my control is too weak and thus my tactics are also weak right? Hmph, although my physical cells aren't too well developed, my... My IQ is superior, understand?"

"I always thought you were just our adorable little sister."

"Boss, I really want to bite you!"

"Revive first and follow that plan. We must not delay or else more people will arrive like Tyrant of Western Chu, Piggy and Ageless Beauty, those people will certainly be troublesome!"

"Well, I'll count to 3 before I resurrect!"

"Okay!"

.....

I tightly held my Frost Rain Sword while my heart trembled. 1v12 + 20 players was going to be somewhat difficult.

Looking closely, among the 12 people there are 2 Wind Elves, one is a Lv 44 Swordsman while the other is a Lv 47 Healer. Killing the Healer is not a priority; I should go for the Swordsman first. Otherwise, Matcha will be easily killed. Like all stats, the movement speed grows by a set amount every level so the higher the Lv of a player is, the higher the speed. And Matcha's Lv 32 is definitely inadequate to outfly the Swordsman.

"Ding!"

Suddenly, Matcha's body disappeared. Just 10 meters away to the North,

her feminine figure slowly flew off the ground as the wings on her back started fluttering. Flying at a 17 meter height, a pair of snow white legs could be seen beneath the moonlight. She is indeed an adorable girl.

“Damn it! She revived, catch her!”

A Berserker hurriedly raised his axe and rushed towards Matcha while the Wind Elf Swordsman opened his wings and soared to reach her.

Without faltering, I hurriedly took a Pardon Card and triggered it. I also activated [Haste], giving me a 6% boost to movement speed which stacked with my Purple Dawn Boots 3% movement speed. I now have a total increase of 9% movement speed! I quickly charged forward, brushing past the bushes and set my sight on the Lv 44 Wind Elf Swordsman.

Unsheathing the sword, I leapt almost 7 yards off the ground while the edge of the sword beamed golden stars!

“This is bad, Li Xiao Yao is coming!” The Swordsman turned around as his terrified face was reflected on my sword. Before he could react, he already ate 4 continuous strikes from my [Combo], bringing forth enormous damage numbers—

“578 ! ”

“547 ! ”

“601 ! ”

“522 ! ”

.....

My 4th attack cut through the Wind Elf Swordsman’s body. I glanced back and saw his figure rapidly falling, however, a little of his health still remained. Surely, this Swordsman added some points to his vitality, or else he would have already succumbed to my attacks.

“Buzz....”

Baby Bobo swiftly left my shoulder and headed for the sky. “Snap!” Baby Bobo performed his [Sting] skill and a 700+ damage number emerged atop the head of the injured Swordsman that had just been quickly treated by

the Wind Elf Healer, and he plummeted to the ground!

“Pa!” The Purple Dawn Boots trampled the grass as I took advantage of my descent and wildly escaped from the pursuing Berserkers, Swordsmen and Knights and quickly entered the forest yet. After passing through them, I gazed upwards and saw Matcha’s snow white legs up ahead. In these critical moments, she still had the time to stick her tongue out and laugh: “Boss, you really look handsome when you’re fighting. No wonder many female players from Ba Huang City want to bear your child.”

I said with a deadpan face: “Just focus on PKing.”

“Well, ok.”

.....

“Crackle, crackle, crackle.”

Unceasing noises of rustling leaves could be heard as over 10 players entered the forest. Thankfully, Strawberry Matcha was still airborne and could carefully observe the situation from above. In her hand was a sharp glossy blade; she seemed to be prepared to battle at a moment’s notice, though she was not really in the mood to fight. In fact, she was a little nervous and scared. Her hand gripping the sword trembled and her face was a bit tight. This scene made me want to laugh.

“Boss!”

In the team channel, Matcha said in a low voice: “There is an Assassin using [Stealth] close to you. 25 degrees North West, 7 yards away!”

I promptly took action as I raised my Frost Rain Sword and rushed to the said location. Then I suddenly slashed at empty space!

“Clang! Keng!”

The sword cut through a plant as sparks flew from colliding weapons. A Lv 46 Assassin was forced out of his [Stealth] and a look of horror appeared on his face behind his dagger.

I used my [Fierce Ice Blade] to thrust at him!

“Puchi!”

“1423 ! ”

The Assassin whined at the pierced sword on his chest. An undisguised panic surfaced in his eyes. Gradually, he knelt down and dropped a leather wristband!

“Peng!”

I leisurely picked it up and placed it in my inventory, no need to check it. Afterwards, I went in the flying Strawberry Matcha’s direction with the Frost Rain Sword in hand.

Strawberry Matcha continued to fly with her pair of beautiful eyes closely watching the movements on the ground. All of a sudden, she whispered: “Boss, 30 degrees in front of you to the right. Just 7 yards away, there’s a dense broad-leaved tree, rush directly there and unleash your [Combo].”

“Sure!”

Without doubting her, I speedily headed towards the direction Matcha mentioned, breaking through the thickets ahead of me. “Ding!” Four golden hexagrams appeared on the edge of the sword. Two Lv 46 Archers were now in sight as one of them lifted his longbow and aimed at Matcha, preparing to let loose his [Shattered Shot]. If it hits, Matcha will surely be injured or even killed!

Fortunately, I released my [Combo] first. The first two strikes annihilated the first Archer while the next two hits already found their way to the second Archer, slaying him. Four 700+ damage numbers simultaneously arises as the 2 Archers fell to the ground, not even knowing how they died.

Not pausing, I reached down to scoop up a Silver Ring and kept running. I now trusted from the bottom of my heart Matcha’s excellent tactics in the game!

I cannot help but ask: “Matcha, who are you really? Why is it that your judgment is so accurate?”

Strawberry Matcha narrowed her pair of beautiful eyes as she flew and

laughed: “I loved playing <<Destiny>>’s simulation battle system during the vacation and my scores were very high, I’m actually one of nation’s top ten. My understanding of the game’s system is naturally high; however, upon entering the game, I realized that my body’s reaction speed cannot keep up with my thoughts. I was dumbfounded. Boss, I’ll continue practicing my body’s reaction speed so please don’t throw me away. ”

I snickered: “Don’t worry. Since you entered the studio, you’re already one of Zhan Long. It will not change in this lifetime. You are our friend. Once a friend, always a friend!”

Strawberry Matcha gawked at me, as if very affected by my words: “Boss, you’re making me cry.”

“Cry after we escape.”

“Uh.”

.....

Even though the dense forest green hindered my vision, Strawberry Matcha acted as my eyes while I was her sword. In just 10 minutes, we eliminated 20 players while I managed to loot at least 8 dropped equipment, most were Bronze Tier and above.

Further north, the broad-leaved forest ended and a vast, snow covered region appeared instead. We were close to the Ice Spine where Dragon City was at and the area ahead of us was definitely full of danger. If possible, I would avoid traversing it.

“Shooo.”

The bone-piercingly cold wind stirred the snowflakes in the air as I turned back to look in the direction of the forest and saw several [Wrath of the Heroes] Swordsmen glaring at us in the distance, not daring to chase us. Apparently, they were afraid that I might end up crushing them all.

“They are waiting for reinforcements!” Matcha said while narrowing her eyes.

I sheathed the Frost Rain Sword back to into its scabbard and nodded: “This is indeed Tyrant of Western Chu’s game style, he won’t engage with less than 20 players.”

“Boss, shall we leave now?”

“Back to the city?”

“Anywhere, just say the word.”

I looked to the North and smiled: “Then let’s take a look at that snow area and figure out ways to ambush them there. Let’s kill several [Wrath of the Heroes] again!”

“Okay!”

Chapter 150: Battle at the Ice Valley

Marching forward into the Icy Forest, Strawberry Matcha was no longer flying. Instead, she hugged her battle gown tightly alongside me. A row of white teeth greeted me as she chattered, “Boss, are you not cold at all?”

I threw a glance behind me to see a row of footprints about 90 meters. Laughing, I replied to her, “Only one who does not fear a death of one thousand cuts will be the one who dares to unseat the emperor”

TL: Proverb meaning to be fearless.

“They already have an Assassin following us!”

“Ah, in a moment we’ll deal with him.”

“Okay!”

.....

We continued forward for another 10 minutes. It was as if we were in another ice age; there was frost everywhere. When I raised my head, a towering cliff hung over our heads, and when I looked below the cliff, a chandelier of icicles dangled overhead. A simple gust of wind shook the extraordinarily sharp icicles, and they began to sway slightly with the wind.

Strawberry Matcha stopped suddenly. Her beautiful eyes looked at me while I looked straight back at her’s. Together, we smiled suddenly as we both came up with the same plan, “Borrow a knife to kill a person...” I whispered cruelly.

TL: Idiom meaning to rely on someone else to do the dirty work.

“Boss, you’re so mean...” Strawberry Matcha laughed while covering her mouth with her hands.

Deadpan, I said, “Did you not want to see this trick happen? Let’s go, don’t let them see the surprise. I’ll have Baby Bobo take care of this then.”

“Okay....”

.....

I quietly waved my wrist and Baby Bobo starting crawling on the ground, leaving my field of vision before flying up into the air. Settling on the underside of the ice cliff, Baby Bobo waited to spring the trap.

I walked forward while opening the 360 degree view to help me locate where the Assassin was lurking.

It was almost time!

I gave a remote signal and Baby Bobo started its attack!

“Bzzt!”

Baby Bobo suddenly flew forward, his stinger shining gold. A Lv 6 [Combo] struck an icicle hanging from the roof of the cliff, “Pop pop pop pop!” Four consecutive sounds rang through the surroundings as an icicle that was at least 5 meters in diameter shook and fell!

Out in the open space, the footprints of the Assassin suddenly stopped. The Assassin swore loudly as he realized what was happening, “Damnit, shameless!”

“Bang!”

The icicles came crashing down causing snow and dust to fly everywhere along with strands of blood. The dead corpse of a Lv 48 Assassin was revealed to be impaled to death by the icicle.

“Hehe, the strategy was a success!” Strawberry Matcha cried out as she held my hand excitedly in triumph.

Walking forward, I unsheathed my sword and kicked apart the ice to get to the body of the Assassin. I expected items, and sure enough, there was a glowing white dagger; a Lv 41 Gold Tier with decent attack – I’d be able to sell this for a good price. After stashing the item into my bag, I turned to leave immediately. I didn’t want any more trouble to come chasing after us!

.....

Smiling as she followed me, Strawberry was quite cheerful as she spoke,

“Boss, now I finally know the reason why you are so adamant on fighting [Wrath of the Heroes]....”

“What’s the reason?” I replied.

She laughed, “Because these people are really stupid, they’re so stupid it’s almost cute. To have this kind of rival makes me happy.”

I nodded furiously, “That’s right! That’s why I’m so satisfied fighting against [Wrath of the Heroes], but not so willing to provoke members of [Vanguard]. Jian Feng Han is quite meticulous, the day he wants to kill me is the day I will lose a level.”

“Ah, I also heard that Jian Feng Han’s personality is exceptionally cautious. When he strikes, he strikes to kill, so he won’t send a small group. He would send out 10 groups of 50 people to spread out around the map to guard each and every exit. There would be no chance of survival!”

That bit of news astounded me, “Strawberry Matcha, how do you know so much about him?”

“Do you not read the archives?”

Strawberry Matcha held up a finger, “When it comes to conquering, [Vanguard] takes the spotlight. In the battle against another super guild named [Hui Huang] at the map called.. Dragon Valley. Yeah, it’s Dragon Valley. Jian Feng Han personally stood on top and conducted the battle breaking 30,000 members into 6 divisions of 5000; two groups charged in head on, two others flanked the sides to surprise them, and the last two ambushed them from the rear. In one move, they destroyed the strong 70,000 member guild. The leader of [Hui Huang] was so embarrassed by this defeat that he disbanded the guild and deleted his character thus wiping out the guild from the Guild Rankings List!”

I winced in astonishment, “Huh, Jian Feng Han is that ruthless?”

“He is!”

Strawberry Matcha nodded again, “So Boss, Zhan Long’s wings cannot fly with so little people. It is not time for us to fight against [Vanguard] at the moment, instead, let’s play around with [Wrath of the Heroes] for

now. We have to establish the guild first with at least 5000 elite players before we try fighting against [Vanguard] ”

Letting out a breath of air, I sighed, “Ah...that is to be expected.”

At the same time, I looked deeply at Strawberry Matcha while holding onto her delicate shoulders, “Strawberry Matcha, you are far smarter than you appear to be; you joining Zhan Long is like God’s gift to me. Haha, wait until Zhan Long becomes an official guild, you’ll at least be a deputy chief in Zhan Long and my right hand man!”

Bowing slightly to me, Strawberry Matcha gave an authentic smile, “Thank you for your appreciation Boss. It is a great honor to be recognized by you for my devotion, guess I’ll have to give “extra” payment...”

I twitched slightly, “Let’s go, [Wrath of the Heroes] will be here any minute now!”

“Okay!”

.....

We continued to march forward. But off in the distance, I could see a bottomless ravine a kilometer away. Beyond that was a mountain of ice, marking the end of the Fire Stone Valley’s mountain range. I felt a chill in my heart as I realized that meant we had no way of moving forward; we would have to face the few hundred players of [Wrath of the Heroes] that were rapidly moving in from the rear.

“Damn it...”

Pulling my sword from my sheath, I was resigned to my faith, “Will this be the day we die then?”

I had not even finished speaking when all of a sudden, the ground beneath my foot crumbled away!

“Boss, watch out!”

A hole in the ice?!

My mind momentarily went blank, but I quickly regained my senses and

swung the Frost Rain Sword!"

"Keng!"

My blade struck the rocks, delaying my descent into death. Strawberry Matcha came flying over, her wings flapping heavily as her hand clung to mine. Her face was full of panic as she asked, "Boss, are you okay?"

I stopped to look around before answering. The ground around us was full of ice and snow; it looked like this area was the result of an avalanche, but the snow had managed to make the ground appear to be level.

"I'm fine, don't worry Strawberry Matcha..."

Patting her on the shoulder, I gave her another smile, "A good idea just came to me...."

Strawberry Matcha face turned red, "Boss, you're so evil..."

I knew it; Strawberry Matcha was smart enough to figure out my plan right away.

.....

Climbing up from the snow again, I leaned against the Frost Rain Sword to take a breather. Afterwards, I opened up the system tools and drew the outlines of the rocks and sent them to Strawberry Matcha. "Remember to stay 40 yards away from them to be absolutely safe. Then bring all of the players down, hehe, let's give [Wrath of the Heroes] a present....."

Strawberry Matcha's hands clasped in front of her excited face, "Boss, this is so exciting!"

"It is but remember, you have to be careful. I'm going to hide!"

"Okay, don't worry..."

.....

Sheathing my Frost Rain Sword, I went straight for the pile of snow in the back, hiding within it. A good 40 centimeters of my snow was above me head, and thankfully, my coordinates would not be shown. Luckily, I

was able to come across a hole in the snow, where I could stare at the situation Strawberry Matcha would be in.

In the party chat, Strawberry Matcha whispered “Here they come Boss, there’s a lot of people! I count at least 200!”

“Uh, try to kill a few dozen, then we’ll look for a chance to leave!”

“Okay!”

The next moment, a distant cry was heard, there was no mistaking this voice. It was the Tyrant of Western Chu, Liu Ying. “It’s that wench Strawberry Matcha! With me comrades, let’s kill her!”

Piggy was confused, “Where’s Xiao Yao?”

“Who cares? Kill Strawberry Matcha first and guard the body! Xiao Yao Zi Zai will come around for sure!”

“Okay!”

.....

Strawberry Matcha’s hurried voice was heard in the party chat once more, “Boss, they’re coming, I hope you did a good job of hiding!”

“Strawberry Matcha, let’s see how well you can fight now! Be careful of their long range attacks, or else you’ll be caught in the crowd control and won’t be able to move!”

“I will!”

Within my vision, Strawberry Matcha’s silver boots flew on the deep snow with snow sticking to her long legs. Behind her, a group of Berserkers, Swordsmen, Monks, and Knights started to chase her while Liu Ying led them with a snarl, “Don’t go easy on her, I doubt Xiao Yao would leave her alone!”

My heart leapt to my throat while both of my hands clasped onto the Frost Rain Sword. Strawberry Matcha had to survive this!

The result, Strawberry Matcha was smart enough to activate her flight mode; a pair of transparent wings came extending out of her back. She

was in a half-flying mode but in order to keep the [Wrath of the Heroes] members on her, her greaves still left a messy line of footprints in the snow as she skimmed over it.

“Kill her!” Liu Ying roared. He was sprinting ahead of the others in a crazed state while the other players, taking inspiration from their boss, also crazily rushed forward. It was just as Strawberry Matcha had said, players from [Wrath of the Heroes] were just too easy to trick.

.....

I looked over the edge of where I was hiding, clenching my fist, I prayed for Strawberry Matcha’s survival.

Tyrant of Western Chu came rushing forward with his sword. In less than 3 seconds, he was the first to fall, hopefully to his death. Two more fell with him, then another, and a few more after. In the heavy snow, no one could see what was happening and only see the “running” figure of Strawberry Matcha.”

“Not good, not good!”

After over 40 people had fallen down the ravine, Piggy’s eyes widened in realization of what just happened, “Stop! Wind Elves to the front and shoot down Strawberry Matcha! Mother fucker, the Boss fell for a trap and fell down the ravine!”

.....

“Shua shua shua...”

More than a dozen Wind Elves came soaring into the air. While many of them were Archers, some Mages were among them. These were [Wrath of the Heroes]’s elite group of players!

My heart sank at the sight of this, immediately opening up the party chat, I shouted for Strawberry Matcha, “Fly towards me, I’ll protect the both of us! Don’t bother trying to go towards the ravine anymore, you’ll be shot down into it!”

“Ah, got it Boss...”

Strawberry Matcha broke off from her original path and flew off in a random direction. Her vision was horribly handicapped by the chilling winds and snow, causing her to cry out for me, “I can’t see where I’m going...”

“Fuck!”

Without hesitation, I broke my cover and ran out from behind the snow.

Chapter 151: Purple Tier Pet

Matcha's feminine body floated aimlessly in the wind as she held her longsword. She narrowed her eyes to look at me and whispered, "Boss, what is the adjustment degree/angle, where do I go to find it?"

As I sprinted across the frost and snow covered ground, I yelled out, "Never mind the controls, remember to turn your body at the right time. Fly northeast at 45 degrees; I will meet up with you half way to help cover you!"

"Oh..."

I drew my Frost Rain Sword and I threw Baby Bobo. With the speed boost from my throw, Baby Bobo charged ahead like lighting. A continuous 4 hit combo damage appeared on top of a Lv 47 mage's [Mana shield]. It didn't break the mage's [Mana shield], but the damage exceeded his maximum health by 20%. This caused the wind elf mage to lose his flight ability,, making him fall directly downwards.

"Ka Cha!"

My body flew towards him as my sword pierced through the mage's neck. I broke through Mana Shield and dealt 1138 damage, killing him instantly. At the same, I stomped on the ground, jumping to a height of almost 6 meters. With both of my hands holding the sword,. I delivered a heavy cut to a wind elf swordsman's shoulder in mid air.

"783 ! "

In one blow, I took out his flying advantage and used a [Wind Blade] to insta-kill him!

.....

"Pa Cha!"

I extended my hand to catch the bracers that the swordsman just dropped. I quickly ordered Baby Bobo to attack another wind elf archer. With a single hit, his flying advantage was taken care of which allowed me to easily bring them to their deaths.

“Peng!”

A gunshot sounded as my back suddenly started burning and I lost 400+ health. From behind me I heard Piggy say in an angry yell, “The three in the front hunt down Strawberry Matcha. The rest focus on Xiao Yao. Kill him first, Strawberry Matcha is nothing!”

In the air, 10 plus wind elf players turned around at the same time. In an instant, [Shattered Shot], [Pillar of Fire & Ice], and [Aimed Shot] all landed after me one after another. My body had the sensation of intense burning and chilling cold while my health almost dropped to zero.

“Go to hell!”

A wind elf swordsman rushed down while his sword was surrounded with flames!

I stuck out my palm and activated [Reflect] as the spell’s effect started to swirl under my feet!

“Dong!”

“1387 ! ”

The skill reflected 100% of the damage back to him. With a swing of the Frost Rain Sword, I finished off the rest of his health under his panicked gaze. The moment I landed, I started to roll onto the snow covered ground. One health potion and a [Heal] recovered my health to over 80%. But my right arm suddenly felt a chill, and I took 2 [Icicle] spells. The opponent’s high level mages appeared across the snowy field; this time was going to be very dangerous!

.....

As I sprinted, I counter attacked with my sword. At the same time, I kept an eye out for any updates from Matcha.

“Ahh!”

In the air, Matcha let out a shocked cry; she had taken a hit from a [Scatter Shot] which destroyed her wings. Her body fell down and with a loud “thump” and landed in the snowy field!

“Oww ow, it hurts...”

She stood up and rubbed her arms.

My heart in my throat, I yelled out, “Matcha, don’t move backwards, the abyss is behind you!”

“Ah? Boss...”

Matcha stood there dumbstruck. Then, realizing what I just said, she instinctively took a step back and started falling!

I thought of killing myself, to have gone through all that and yet... this dumb girl!

“Slash!”

Purple Dawn Boots stepping on snow, I got there within a couple of strides. With no hesitation I rushed over to the spot where Matcha fell and immediately jumped down. Finding Matcha, I quickly grabbed Matcha’s arm and held onto it tightly!

“Boss....”

Matcha lifted her head and looked at me, her eyes were all red, “I’m useless...”

I flashed a sunny smile, “How could you say that, you’ve proved your worth!”

“I...”

Without waiting for Matcha to finish talking, I pierced the mountain side with my sword. I needed to slow our falling speed to have even a chance of survival. Otherwise we would fall to our death like Liu Ying and the rest. We wouldn’t even get our dropped equipment back!

“Clang Clang Clang...”

The sword made an ear-piercing sound as it carved into the rock surface. I hugged Matcha as we slipped further down. Suddenly, we moved away from the cliff and our bodies were in the air as we rapidly descended 100 meters!

“Boss, there is a dried vine!” Matcha shouted out.

I quickly yelled back, “Hold onto me!”

Matcha extended her arms and quickly hugged me. At the same time, I reached out and grabbed onto the dried vine. As we slid down we heard a loud, “bang”, and the vine snapped. It could not support our weight since it had been dry for too long. In a panic I tried to wildly grab something. “Peng” Our fall suddenly stopped. Lifting my head to take a look, I saw that I grabbed a protruding rock. However, it was very sharp and my palm was pierced by it.

“Drip...Drip...”

Drops of fresh red blood fell from my palm onto Matcha’s nose. She looked at me and then at the rock. With red eyes that were on the verge of tears she asked, “Boss, does it hurt?”

I clenched my teeth, “Nope, piece of cake....”

“Boss....”

I looked ahead and said, “Matcha, the dried vine did not grow from the rock surface. It extends out from the cliff. Look for the roots of the vines, that can be our hiding spot.”

“Yes...”

Matcha looked around with her pair of pretty eyes. Suddenly she pointed with a finger, “Boss, quickly look, the dried vines are coming out from a cave. It’s about 3 meters away from us.”

“Okay, let’s climb up!”

I used the dagger that was dropped by an assassin to stab into the protruding rock. Then I slowly climbed towards the cave as I used all my strength, and then some, to carry Matcha into the cave. The cave was very shallow, only a few meters across. But we were out of combat, which was good news because we could use a Scroll of Recall to return to the city now.

“Boss...”

Matcha knelt in front of me. Holding my hand with hers, she looked over the wound on it, “This wound doesn’t look like it will heal easily. You need a healer to cast [Therapy] right?”

I nodded, “No problem, this is a light wound. It won’t affect my stats.”

“Okay, does it hurt?”

“It doesn’t!”

“Hehe...”

“What does your “Hehe” mean....”

“.....”

.....

Matcha’s pair of pointy ears perked up; wind elves’ senses were very keen. She smiled slightly, “The players from [Wrath of Heroes] are still hunting for us, what do we do? Do we return to the city or wait here for a bit?”

“Your choice.” I returned the Frost Rain Sword back to its sheath.

“Okay, let us play around here for a bit. Hehee, let us accompany those dummies...”

“Sure.”

Matcha stood up, and from within the cave she picked up some dried twigs. Standing in front of me, she said, “It is cold here, how about we start a fire to keep warm!”

“Too bad there is no lighter.”

“No problem, we can learn from the caveman. The hand-drill method!”

“Fine, drill away!”

.....

Matcha stood up as she started to look for two pieces of wood. Soon afterwards, she knelt down next to me. Using strength to drill, her fragrant perspiration filled the cave. After 10 minutes of trying, there was

finally some smoke. “Hua” the pile of wood lit up. In front of my eyes, the fire gave off a feeling of comfort. The fire jumped and brought the smoke outside of the cave. If the [Wrath of Heroes] players at the edge of the cliff saw it, they would be angered to death since, in the end, they weren’t able to kill us.

Matcha hugged her knees while she sat next to me. She looked so gentle that she might melt away, laughing as she looked at me, “Boss, if only we had some chicken wings to grill. It would be perfect for the situation...”

I laughed, “No problem, we have something else!”

“Oh, what else?” Matcha opened her little mouth.

I stuck my hand into my bag and grabbed a bunch of butterfly eggs. These were dropped by the Illusory Butterfly Queen. They were considered food ingredients, but I wasn’t sure how to cook them. So we will grill and eat them....and move on. Actually in the past, I ate grilled spiders while I was on a task in the mountain. They tasted alright.....

“Hey, do these have good flavor...” Matcha squinted her eyes.

I laughed out aloud, extended my hand, and threw all 7 eggs into the fire pit. They made a “crackling” sound in the fire as a scent similar to grilled eggs wafted over. Hmm, the taste might not be bad...

“Pa Cha....”

The 7 eggs bursted open, the insides full of white pulp, except for the last egg. When it burst, a golden light appeared from within. Suddenly my heart started to race and I yelled out, “Shit! Not good....”

I quickly stepped onto the fire pit making the embers fly everywhere. The egg rolled on the ground briefly. Inside of it was a young, pretty golden butterfly! It slowly stretched its wings out and above its head were words that could give someone an heart attack..

[Illusory Butterfly Queen] (Purple Tier pet)

Level: 1

Status: No owner

.....

“Boss, this....” Matcha’s mouth dropped open.

I quickly drew the Frost Rain Sword and pulled over Matcha’s small hands, “Matcha, do you want this purple tier pet?”

“This...what is going on, Boss?” Matcha was completely senseless.

“Bizz....”

With a prick from my sword, fresh blood started to flow from Matcha’s fingertip. I grabbed her finger and placed it on top of the larva’s body. Suddenly golden light filled every part of the cave, followed by the notification sound-

“Ding!”

System notice: Player [Strawberry Matcha] and purple tier pet [Illusory Butterfly Queen] have sealed the ownership contract. The pet was the server’s first purple tier pet! Player rewarded: Level +4, Charm +5!

.....

Reading the system notice, I grinned, “Good, Level +4, Charm +5, that’s quite the bonus.....”

Matcha stood there dumbstruck and bit her lips. She asked, “Boss.....this is a purple tier pet. Why didn’t you take it for yourself and instead give it to me?”

Without thinking I responded, “I like physical pets, besides.....Matcha you are part of Zhan Long now. Why be so calculating? With the Illusory Butterfly Queen in your hands, it is like Zhan Long is growing stronger! Quick, let me see the purple tier pet Illusory Butterfly Queen’s pet panel, what is so special about it”

“Okay....”

Matcha waved her hand and summoned the skills panel.

My face darkened, “Not this....I want the pet panel....”

Matcha continued to summon, but this time it was the character panel.

I was almost petrified.

Finally she got it right after 5 summons. Pet panel, Illusory Butterfly Queen's properties-

[Illusory Butterfly]

Attack: ★★★★★

Defense: ★★★★★★

Health: ★★★★★★

Agility: ★★★★★

Magic: ★★★★★★

Abilities: [Fierce Fire Wind] [Vines of Dancing Butterfly] [Abyssal Flames]

Excellence: 89%

.....

Damn, 6.5 star magic growth. Sure enough, this destroys the other magic pets!

Chapter 152: Super Energy

Slowly sitting back on the rock with the Frost Rain Sword in hand, I smiled and said, "Great, now Zhan Long no longer lacks with DPS. After raising this Illusionary Butterfly Queen, we will have a super mage-like pet that can wipe out crowds with its [Abyssal Flames]."

Matcha's pretty face said with a smile, "Thank you, Boss...But, this pet is so good, wouldn't it be wasted in my hands?"

"How can it be wasted in your hands?"

I checked the time and said, "Well, we should return to the city now. You're now LV 36 and can barely follow Little Wolf, Old K and Darling Duck to level with them."

"Okay Boss!"

I took out a City Return Scroll, crumpled it and with a bright flash appeared, I completely left the cave.

.....

"Shua!"

It was already past 8 p.m., the time when the number of players is at its peak, and Ba Huang City was filled with liveliness.

Several minutes later, the Zhan Long members gathered near a Blacksmith shop's forging furnace.

Little Wolf, LV 45, was the fastest to rise in LV within the entire Zhan Long studio. Old K is LV 44, Fox is LV 43 while Darling Duck is LV 44. We also had the recently recruited Gold Tier geared Berserker, Cang Lei, who is Dong Cheng Yue's brother; although he hadn't joined us in the studio, he was already one of us.

"Big Brother Li Xiao Yao!" Little Wolf and Cang Lei shouted simultaneously. Then they looked at each other and smiled.

The scene made me smile too. Little Wolf was the only one who usually called me Big Brother, but with the addition of Dong Cheng Lei, it felt like

I had two little brothers.

Carrying the Frost Rain Sword and the Ancient Tablet on my back, I walked forward and asked, “Looks like everyone’s levels are rising quickly, it shows that you guys really worked hard. You must have been certainly tired these past few days just to level. As of now, Zhan Long’s average LV is 44. It means we’re catching up to the 1st batch’s standard level. So what we will be doing now is discussing our future endeavors, so can everybody please take your seat?”

“Yes!”

With his dagger in hand, Little Wolf jumped back to sit down nearby Darling Duck. Cang Lei grabbed the seat next to Fox while Old K continued to stand after thrusting his axe into the ground. He then grinned: “I won’t sit because I can focus better when I’m standing.”

Darling Duck laid down her staff and placed herself beside Little Wolf. With a LV 1 Illusionary Butterfly Queen hovering above Matcha’s shoulder, Matcha stood by my side as her cape waved with the wind and whimpered, “Boss, I’ll be here near you. It makes me feel much safer.”

I was speechless but still nodded, “Oh, Okay.”

“Zhan Long’s meeting shall begin, what’s first on the agenda?” Fox asked.

I opened the meeting: “Recently, I was very busy with either accompanying the young Miss in reality or running here and there in the game. Thus, I don’t know much about the current situation in-game. Fox, since you are Zhan Long’s ears and intelligence personnel, can you tell us what the present developments of <> are?”

Fox bobbed his head and said, “The first topic would be about the major guilds in Ba Huang City. After the establishment of [Valiant Bravery], three major guilds also rose in the city, namely: [Vanguard], [Prague], and [Flying Dragons]. Secondly, the last mentioned guild was established when Soaring Dragon bought a Guild Creation Tablet for 1,700,000 RMB from Fang Ge Que of Jiu Li City’s [Legend].”

Little Wolf was surprised: “Fang Ge Que got more than 1 Guild Creation Tablet?”

Fox replied as he raised three of his fingers, “Three, Fang Ge Que’s charm is said to be past 40 points which resulted in him getting three Guild Creation Tablets. One was used for establishing [Legend], the other one was given to his ally guild while the last one was sold to Soaring Dragon.”

I sighed: “So now, Ba Huang City will be divided into four powers. [Valiant Bravery], [Vanguard], [Prague] and [Flying Dragon] are now regarded as giants.”

Strawberry Matcha smiled: “Boss, [Valiant Bravery] shouldn’t be counted, right? As far as I know, they only have a total of 3000 members which include their temporary members. As for the rest of the three guilds, [Flying Dragon] has the lowest registered members with 380,000 players.”

Fox agreed, “Ah, according to my observation. [Valiant Bravery], among the four guilds in Ba Huang City, is in the toughest spot.”

Little Wolf waved his dagger, “Brother Xiao Yao, this will be a bad thing for us.”

Agreeing, I said, “That’s true, among the four major guilds of Ba Huang City, only [Valiant Bravery] can be considered our friend. [Vanguard] is our mortal enemy while [Flying Dragon] holds a grudge against Zhan Long. As for [Prague], Yan Zhao Warrior’s impression of me is not really good. If we suddenly establish our guild here and get Yue Qing Qian and Yue Wei Liang, Yan Zhao Warrior might be offended. Hmm, founding our guild here in Ba Huang City will be quite difficult.”

Old K grasped his axe’s handle as his lips formed an upward curve, “Boss, shouldn’t you just go ahead and tell us what we should do? I’m tired of hearing blabberings...”

I hesitantly said, “Then, in my own opinion, you 5 should take Strawberry Matcha to train. Once she gets to LV 40, we will start scouring the respawn points of bosses here in the entire area of Ba Huang

City. We will hunt bosses and acquire a Guild Creation Tablet as soon as possible and form our guild. In addition, Fox, how many temporary members do we have?”

Fox, somewhat embarrassed, started to laugh, “There aren’t many. The studio, including you, only amounts to 5 people. Our main members non-studio members include Darling Duck and Cang Lei. I’ve added many good friends who have promised to join Zhan Long. In total, we currently have a 47-man team.”

My mouth twitched and formed an awkward smile, “Though few, it’s quite decent. If properly led, a 47-man team can take care of 200 players. If we have 100 members, we can probably start a war with [Wrath of the Heroes].”

Responding with an urging tone, Fox answered, “Rest assured Boss Xiao Yao. I will be on lookout for more members. In addition, I will carefully calculate the respawn time of bosses.”

“Well then, I am a little exhausted today, so take Matcha to a good leveling ground and raise her to LV 40 within 24 hrs.”

“Sure, just leave things like that to us.”

“Good!”

.....

At that moment, my cellphone rang and reached me through the game. It’s Wang Xin’s number!

“Hey, Team Leader?”

Wang Xin gave a pleasant response, “Hey, Li Xiao Yao. It’s me!”

“You came to find me, what’s the matter?”

“I need your assistance.”

“Assistance? I’m no longer a part of the police, what do you need me for?”

His voice emitted a joyous tone as he said, “Li Xiao Yao, I’ll just ask you

one thing. Are you willing to go back to the police? Remember, you've once given your oath under the flag."

My heart shook. I shockingly said, "Team Leader, I don't want to be subject to any form of restraint. I just want to live the rest of my life in comfort."

With a deep breath, Wang Xin replied, "I know you felt very oppressed and helpless back then, but I can no longer do anything about it. However starting today, under my direct supervision, I assure you that I will risk my life to protect you from any injustices. Therefore, Li Xiao Yao, I invite you once again to join the Hang Zhou Police. Even just temporarily, I beg you!"

I clenched my fist and whispered, "Team Leader, I know you're telling the truth. Are my police brothers facing a difficult opponent?"

Wang Xin said while grinding his teeth, "Well, the Blood Alliance, one of the three biggest gangs here in Hang Zhou. Have you ever heard of them?"

"I did. Is there something new about them?"

"Yup." Wang Xin lightly remarked, "The Blood Alliance's main business deals with drugs and smuggling as well as *** places. Recently, they just took a batch of drugs from the border but we were able to catch wind of their activities with our Narcotic Eradication Group. Yesterday, we went to one of their transaction locations to ambush them. Things were happening smoothly, but suddenly went out of hand with some violent beast. One of our brothers even had his arm ripped off."

TL: *** was in the original text!!!

I was astonished upon hearing it, "A brother had his arm ripped off? Who would be capable of such a feat and what kind of strength does he have?"

Wang Xin replied, "That's why I called you; perhaps you can stop that thing."

"That thing? What does it look like?"

“It was a wolf-like beast with dark fur. Bullets cannot penetrate its skin. We fired at least 17 bullets but not even a trace of blood could be seen. It also possessed sharp teeth that were capable of instantly crushing the bones of a strong man’s arm.”

I frowned, “It doesn’t sound like a human. Why is there such a thing in Hang Zhou?”

Wang Xin shook his head, “I don’t know, but we must stop the transaction that will happen tonight. Otherwise a huge batch of drugs will flow to Hang Zhou’s jurisdiction area. This will be a huge threat that I cannot shoulder.”

With sincerity in his voice, Wang Xin asked again, “Li Xiao Yao, come back, we need you! Shen Bing used one of her new devices to learn more about the beast and detected 14 ultra-energy points in its body. This is not something that the normal police can handle.”

My eyes turned round: “Damn! 14 ultra-energy points?”

“Yes.”

At that moment, my heart went cold. Ultra-energy test is a kind of spiritual energy fluctuation test. Generally, normal people do not emit any excess energy, unless they’re a practitioner. Still, even a practitioner can exert Ultra-energy when they’ve passed the Body Strengthening realm. To release this much of ultra-energy in combat, would that beast actually be at the Royal Air realm?

.....

I inhaled a deep breath and said, “Ok, Team Leader. I am willing to return to the Hang Zhou police station but I won’t wear a uniform. Giving me a badge is enough. I’ll go there soon so please wait for me at the West Lake District office!”

“Good! Bring your weapon! Your files are already recovered and are fully encrypted. There will be no problem at all unless a ministerial-level official questions your data.”

“Ok!”

Turning off the phone, I said my farewells to Little Wolf, Strawberry Matcha and the others and went offline. It was already 8 p.m. Lin Wan Er and Dong Cheng Yue should be in the Girls Dormitory, so there was no need to worry.

.....

Flying back to the studio, I hurriedly went towards my room and gently opened the door. I saw Strawberry Matcha lying in the bed, still playing <>. I approached the bed, opened a box beneath it, took out Xiao Hei and hung it on my back. Afterwards, I shut the door and quietly headed to the Police Bureau of Hang Zhou Lake District.

TL: Xiao Hei is his sword if you've forgotten

I was puzzled!

Dark fur, impenetrable skin and strong. What the hell is that beast?

Chapter 153: On the National Flag

Late at night in the police hall, Wang Xin sat alone at his desk with a forlorn look.

Stealthily carrying my sword, I was dressed completely in black to blend harmoniously into the night.

“Wang Xin!”

It was only when I walked up to him that Wang Xin finally realized I was there. This was the difference between the ordinary people and practitioners. Looking at my appearance, Wang Xin smiled nostalgically, “The last time I saw something similar to this was 3 years ago...”

Waving my hand, I gave a sheepish smile, “Wang Xin, we have aged, haven’t we?”

With some exasperation, Wang Xin gave his answer, “I’ve grown old, you haven’t.”

I responded, “Let’s go!”

“Alright!”

He stood up to escort me deeper inside the administrative building but remained silent during the walk. Finally, Wang Xin pushed open a gate, causing the lighting to grow dimmer. However, I was able to make out the golden glow that came a police badge clearly.

.....

“Captain, this is?” I was flabbergasted.

Wang Xin gave a self-deprecating smile, “You have been deprived of your identity as a police officer for a very long time and now, I want you to swear an oath once again. Consider this as your compensation, and this time, we both will swear this oath. Starting from today, I, Wang Xin, and you, Li Xiao Zi Zai are comrades, comrades who are not afraid of the strong or the deceitful!”

Shocked, I gave a nod as I walked forward to take my police officer

badge with a trembling hand. My mouth spoke softly with words that I had almost forgotten–

“I swear upon the National Flag, with my words and every actions, I will never tarnish the Golden Shield!

I swear upon the Constitution, with my thoughts and ideas, I will never offend the honor of the law!

I swear upon the People, with all of my life, I will never betray the expectations of the People!”

.....

Then, hot tears flowed down my face and I could no longer stop them once they started. Slowly, I fell onto my knees in front of the national emblem and my hands clenched as the tears dripped down onto the ground. It took me a few moments to compose myself before I choked out the words, “Captain, I am loyal to the People, I am loyal to Justice, I, Li Xiao Yao want to fight for those who are weak! I am once more a part of the Police Force, I will never give into any circumstances, even if it should mean me giving my life! I will not let any bastards tarnish the integrity of the police badge. I swear it on my name! Should I break, I would no longer be able to face that girl’s face, nor the blood of the innocent, I would not be capable of looking myself in the eye with pride!”

Patting me on the shoulder, Wang Xin could barely keep his voice from trembling either, “This time, this time I’ll be with you until the bitter end. For Justice!”

Nodding my head in gratitude, I stared at Wang Xin, “You should stop crying,” I laughed. “Crying only makes you look uglier.”

Wang Xin gave a snort, “Che, what a brat, come with me!”

“Okay!”

.....

Wang Xin and I walked on, eventually ending up in the armory.

“Crash...”

Pulling on the latch bar to release the weaponry, there was nearly every type of weapon you could ever want. I was a bit shocked,, “Damn...you even have all of the heavy weaponry...this RPG? Is this what you’re going to use to fight against the gangs?”

Shaking his head, Wang Xin smiled, “Recently, the 3 gangs have been exceptionally rampant, we could only combat them with heavy explosives. Why don’t you pick up your preferred choice of weapon. Over there is where we keep all the sniper rifles, you want one?”

“No thanks, that monster wouldn’t be harmed at all by bullets. Besides, if I bring any of those guns it’ll be inconvenient to carry, so I’ll use this one instead!”

Picking up a pistol, I glanced at the model. M9C1 model, this type of gun was only produced in the United States for close combat use. It was best used at a range of 50 meters or less and was highly lethal.

“Just that gun?” Wang Xin asked with a skeptical look.

“Yea,” I said, holstering it on my waist while I stashed two ammo clips in my pockets. “I’ll only use it for self defense in close combat. If I want to kill that animal, it must be Xiao Hei!”

“Alright, that’s settled then. I’ll go register this gun under your file and get you a gun permit as fast as I can. As of now though, this gun belongs to you, so remember to keep it on you.”

“Got it!”

.....

Inspecting my appearance, Wang Xin suggested to me, “If you don’t like your current set of clothing, I could have the clothing department design you a new set of clothing.”

Nodding my head in thanks, I responded, “In that case, make it black. It has the lowest reflective properties at night. I’ll also need a sword sheath to be attached to the back, gun holsters on the waist, and some knife slots on the legs.”

Wang Xin smiled, “Ah, I got it. Let’s go for now, there’s still 4 hours until the business deal, we should head over there early.”

“Yes Captain!”

Arriving at the operation lounge, there were already plenty of officers waiting with their rifles ready for an emergency. As expected, each and every officer’s face looked pretty serious; evidently the failure of the last operation had caused a great deal of damage to them. A total of 15 people were working on this operation and their police badges were each shining brightly in the light.

With ease, I stuck my police badge onto my arm and with Wang Xin, we stood on top of the platform, “I have brought back Li Xiao Yao, so I hope today’s operation will go as planned, is everyone ready?” Wang Xin called out in a commanding tone.

“We’re ready!” The crowd chanted.

“Then let’s move out!”

.....

Three police cars full of people quickly spread through the town in three different directions. It was 10 PM, so no sirens and no lights were on to ensure stealth. Hiding our cars in the woods as we arrived, a group of people prepared for battle by lying low in a pile of weeds. Observing a jade blue brook from a distance, we waited for our targets to arrive.

Wang Xin’s voice came in low as he explained the details, “Based on our information, the transaction will take place by the riverside over there. Both sides will bring a lot of people, so when the transaction occurs, we will pretend to attack so they will send out that monster against us. Li Xiao Yao, you will try to ambush it so the other officers don’t get hurt. Kill that animal, but leave the corpses behind for us, we’ll want to send it back to the lab for testing later.”

Nodding my head, “Yea, I understand!”

“Good, be prepared!”

.....

Both of my legs were getting dirty with mud and I had been waiting for so long, the moon had already reach the peak of its cycle when at last, I saw movement in the distance. A car came and, stopping at the location, illuminated the field around it with light while people piled out!

Before long, both groups of people came to the rendezvous point. From where I was at, I could even see them holding submachine guns. I shuddered from the bottom of my heart, these groups of people were the type of people who'd do anything for profit.

Wang Xin gently raised his hand to signify the start of the operation, "Snipers, be ready to shoot the gunmen in 10 seconds, the rest charge in for 100 meters to lure the beast out!"

Tensing up, I awaited with narrowed eyes for the gunfire to start.

"Pew pew!"

Although the sniper rifles were equipped with a silencer, the two men who had the light machine guns and were shot down were close to the group, causing instant pandemonium amongst the group.

"Charge!"

Wang Xin cried out for the officers to charge, each one of them rushing in one after the other.

.....

"Fuck! We've been betrayed! Liu San Er wasn't the traitor, it was someone else. We've killed the wrong person!" Someone yelled out, "Che, take the money and not the stuff! Release the secret weapon and slaughter the cops!"

"Hou hou..."

While the roar came from a distance, its voice rattled some of the people. A huge being covered completely in black fur had come. Its speed was far beyond what regular humans were capable of!

"Shoot!"

The squadron of police that had been squatting in the weeds began to shoot at the target with bullets. However, the beast's skin was far too strong, and the bullets only bounced off of it.

"Come on!" Wang Xin's face was red with anger, "Li Xiao Yao!"

"Pa..."

Stamping into the paddy fields as I rushed forward, a stream of air came bursting under my feet as I sped myself up, "Keng!" came the sound as I unsheathed Xiao Hei. Concentrating on focusing my Qi, I met head on with the beast, and I swung my blade to try and cleave it in two!

"Kacha!"

A hand of black claws blocked my sword, and the claws were accompanied by the monster's hideous eyes glaring at me under the moonlight. To add to the fright, its mouth began to open, showing off the sharp teeth that were attempting to take a bite of my arm.

Hardening my heart, I delivered an uppercut with an iron fist!

"Peng!" A heavy punch closed his mouth as I weaved around and sent a kick at him. Grasping my sword hilt firmly, I grunted as I slashed at it with an arc, aiming for the brain of the monster!

"Ca!"

A howl was suddenly cut short as the bloody head of the monster came tumbling through the air. Its giant body came crashing down to the earth with a great tremble!

I swiped my blade clean in silence, although, as I watched the corpse over a matter of seconds, something strange was happening. The black fur receded into the body, revealing the corpse of a 28 year old man. The head was obviously cut off but there were numerous pinholes that marked the entirety of the neck, showing off the results of an experiment.

.....

Wang Xin wasted no time, and waved his arm, "Charge, chase down the stragglers!"

Then he came running over to me, and frowned at the sight of the decapitated young man. “So this is what it was in the end...why would a man turn into a beast, did...did we kill the wrong person?”

My expression clearly told Wang Xin what I thought about his question, “This was no mistake, bring him back for testing, Captain. This thing is definitely a complex being, you’ll have to dig out as much information as you can about the Underworld or else Hang Zhou will no longer be a safe city.”

Wang Xin nodded, “Ah, I know, I’ll contact the lab over in Beijing.”

“Then I’ll be taking my leave.”

“You’re leaving?”

“Why not?”

“How about you write the report for me!”

“I won’t write a single detail, do it yourself! It’s not like you didn’t see what happened here.”

“What a brat you are...”

.....

Within 15 minutes of the end of the clash, all of Wang Xin’s men came back. This was definitely the cream of the crop, men who were capable of actual combat! They could even compete with the higher levels of the police force but of course, having been a part of the special ops team, I could say that these people were still below them in quality.

The sounds of the sirens came blaring as the general police came and arrested the people connected to the drug trade. 17 people in total were arrested, and 12 of them were associated with the Bloods. With the skull and crossbones on their arm, it was rather obvious.

I sat in the police car as we were being driven back to the city and as I leaned against the armrest, a policewoman with a round face turned to talk to me, “You’re...the legendary Li Xiao Zi Zai?”

Opening and closing my eyes, I nodded, “I am, why do you ask?”

“Why was it that our bullets couldn’t even penetrate the beast, but he was split in two with your sword?” She asked, eyeing the hilt of my sword.

I gave a profound laugh, “Because my sword is legendary!”

“Ah?”

Taking a closer look at my sword, she began to stroke the hilt, observing the engraved writing on it, “Ah, there’s words on here...Gan Jiang?! Ah! Could this be the legendary sword Gan Jiang from ancient legends?”

TL Note: The story of Gan Jiang and Mo Ye

I gave a serious nod, “Correct, do you have any other questions?”

Wang Xin gave an amused look as the police woman gave a nervous laugh and looked away.

.....

It was already 3 AM when I got back to the studio. I crept inside my room at the studio. It seemed that Strawberry Matcha had fallen asleep but failed to lock the doors, she probably forgot about it.

Dragging out the box from under the bed, I placed my sword and M9 pistol inside and pushed the box back underneath.

When I looked up, a pair of big eyes stared back at me, followed by a flurry of hits from the pillow onto my head while Strawberry Matcha shouted, “There’s an invader in my room! A predator, ah, someone come quick!”

Quickly grabbing onto her arm, I whispered sharply to her “Strawberry Matcha, it’s me, Li Xiao Yao!”

“Ah? Boss?”

Strawberry Matcha closed her mouth and looked at me. A light went off in her head as her face flushed slightly, “Boss, what are you doing here...”

.....

The door slammed open at that moment as Song Han, Ran Min, and Fox came running in, “Where’s the pervert!? Ah? Boss?!”

Song Han looked at me with a great big smile on his face, “Hehe, brother Xiao Yao, how...how will you explain this?”

Chapter 154: Ran Wei's Provision Order

"Explain what?!"

Clapping my hands together as I stood up, I answered, "I was actually just sleepwalking, so just go back to sleep everyone. You all need to get Strawberry Matcha to Lv 40 tomorrow anyways."

Strawberry Matcha covered herself with a quilt on the bed, "Boss, did you really sleep walk over to my room?"

Ran Min's mouth twitched at the sound of that, "Do you really believe that Matcha? Obviously he came here because of his lust for a beautiful woman...Hmph, it was all an elaborate scheme. Setting you up in his room, there is no other reason!"

I curled my lips, "Say whatever you want... go back to sleep all of you..."

Tilting his head, Song Han stared at the corner of the box that was still sticking out from under the bed, "Ah, you should go to sleep early too. Also, your shoes are muddy, what were you doing for half of the night?"

Not bothering to hide anything from them, I pointed out the badge pinned to my arm, "Had a task to perform, that's all."

Fox was shocked to see it, "Xiao Yao, you've joined the police again?"

I nodded, "Yea, it seems that I was destined to do so. However, don't tell this to anyone, I can't let anyone know. That means you too Matcha by the way, this must be our secret."

Matcha's eyes blinked rapidly as she processed the information, then she made a grab for my wrist, "Boss, are you really a part of the police? Then if I'm being bullied in the future, will you...will you protect me?"

I couldn't help but laugh, gently patting her shoulder, I answered, "Don't worry, you are a member of Zhan Long. No matter who is bullying you, I will endeavor to protect your life. Now go back to sleep, you'll be waking up early tomorrow at 7 to level. I may wake up late, so I'll check up on you by noon, you better be Lv 38 by then!"

She nodded her head repeatedly, "Got it!"

Fox smiled, "Don't worry, we got Cang Lei the RMB warrior helping out. Her fast leveling speed won't a problem. That guy on the other hand, is quite barbaric. He charged into a group of monsters without thinking. Thankfully, Darling Duck was there to provide back up healing, Wolf and I feel pretty weak in DPS compared to him though, it's quite frustrating to see that actually."

Swiping the mud off my feet, I thanked Fox, "Understood, then go back to sleep, I'll be heading out now."

"Boss, be safe on the road." Matcha smiled at me.

Song Han rubbed my nose, "Hmph, we live in the same building everyday but I never see Matcha this worried for any of us, only brother Xiao Yao..."

Old K sobbed endlessly, "Don't even bring that up anymore, why is our sex appeal so damn low? Xiao Yao, you tell us, how is it that you can talk to so many pretty girls?! Dong Cheng Yue, Yue Qing Qian and even our Strawberry Matcha, three beautiful women hold you in high respect... what the hell is your secret?"

Putting a deep and profound look on my face, I looked at Old K's shohorn face, "The secret is only 8 words- If you are handsome, the girls will come! I'm sorry to say Old K, but with a face like yours, you have no chance. Even South Korea's plastic surgeons would throw their hands up..."

Old K started waving his fist, "F**k off!"

Strawberry Matcha laughed loudly as I fled from the studio.

Shortly after, I found myself jumping over the wall to get into Liu Hua Academy. Although the male dormitories were locked for the night, that posed no problem for me. Climbing a tree onto the second floor of the dorms, I entered through the doorway. Throwing off my clothes for a more comfortable wear, I climbed into bed and closed my eyes to sleep.

.....

I awoke with the warmth of the sun shining onto my cheek. Squinting as I picked up the phone, I immediately shook off the remaining dregs of sleep. Damn it, it was already 12:20! Without realizing I had slept for so long, was it possible the “werewolf” from yesterday had zapped away that much energy from me? It couldn’t be...

“Beep beep...”

My phone started to ring, breaking me away from my thoughts; It was Wan Er’s number–

“Hello, Misses...” I was feeling a bit guilty.

Wan Er’s voice remain light and sweet as she talked, “So...why did you not come to class today?”

“I overslept, there were a few issues I had to take care of last night...”

“You were called by the professor today, he said that you should forget about passing the class...”

“Haaa?” My face grew purple in terror.

Wan Er’s laughter came in clear through the phone, “Haha, I’m only joking. I had another male student substitute in for you, so it’s all fine now. Dong Cheng and I are really hungry, so come on over and eat lunch with us okay?”

“Ah, I’ll be on my way, just hold on!”

“Okay!”

.....

Throwing myself off of the bed, I quickly washed up and grabbed a fresh set of clothes before running out the door.

When I arrived downstairs of the girl dormitories, both Wan Er and Dong Cheng Yue were anxiously waiting for me. Their elegant clothing and attractive looks illuminated the entire campus with their beauty. Dong Cheng Yue began to pout as she saw me, “Xiao Yao, you’re so slow today,”

My voice still full of regret answered her, "I'm sorry, I was busy, hehe. What would the young Misses like to eat for lunch?"

"How about Hunan Cuisine?"

TL Note: Cuisine from the Hunan province of China

"Alright, let's go then. Who's going to be paying this time?"

Dong Cheng Yue answered, "The prim and proper Miss Wan Er of course!"

I replied, "That's great..."

Wan Er, "..."

.....

Hunan Restaurant; after ordering four dishes and one bowl of soup, the three of us sat down.

After ordering, I looked up and stared at Wan Er's delicate face. As if she noticed me staring at her, she turned her head to look back at me and immediately looked back down. Her fingers tapped onto the tablecloth, not knowing what to think or say.

"Wan Er, whats up?" I asked.

Wan Er, "Nothing really, why?"

I didn't have the opportunity to inquire more, instead, I asked, "These past two days, what are your situations in <Destiny>?"

Giving a rather surprised expression to my question, she answered, "Dong Cheng and I are still heading out to different maps. Then...we are getting random GoldTiered equipment occasionally, Fan Shu City seems to be having a boom in guilds being established I suppose. [Hero Mound] has found 5 Purple Tier items in a span of 2 days, quite the good luck so far. Other than that, another guild has found only one Purple Tier weapon in those same 48 hours, hehe~~"

My eyebrows raised as I listened to her, "5 Purple Tiered items, what are they?"

Wan Er began to describe them to me, “There’s a Lv 50 Purple Leather Leggings that was given to me. The Lv 48 Purple Armored Boots were given to Q-Sword and a Lv 49 Purple Necklace as well. A Lv 46 Purple Axe was given to the number 1 Berserker of [Hero Mound]. Finally, a Lv 50 Purple Cloak was rolled away by a Mage.”

Dong Cheng Yue stuck out her mouth, “What a shame, I strategized most of the BOSSes, and got nothing in return. Calling me the number 1 Mage of [Hero Mound], hmph!”

I waved both hands to them, “Then come to Zhan Long with me there are a lot of Mage equipments that already has your name on it!”

Dong Cheng was ecstatic to hear that and rubbed her hands in glee, “Is that okay? Can I join Zhan Long now?”

Wan Er whispered to Dong Cheng loudly, “Dong Cheng, don’t be like this, I can’t put up with this any longer...”

Dong Cheng giggled, “Well Xiao Yao, I won’t join Zhan Long just yet, because of my contract with Q-Sword. I won’t be able to leave [Hero Mound] for another month at the least, but rest assured–Wan Er and I belong to you!” She said while patting my hand in reassurance.

It was my turn to blush, “What do you mean you guys belong to me?”

Wan Er’s face went red at the same time as mine, “Dong Cheng, could... could you be a little more tactful with your words?”

Dong Cheng gave a wink, “Why hasn’t our food come yet?”

Wan Er said, “It has only been 3 minutes since we ordered...”

.....

Finding this topic boring, I started looking around at the place, but mostly at the two Misses. Both of Wan Er’s hands were propping her chin up and black gemstone like eyes looked back at me. I couldn’t help but be attracted to her beautiful eyes while she wore a white lattice jacket and blouse. The sight of it had nearly made my heart burst! Quickly checking my nose, I was fortunate enough to not have a nosebleed after this

heavenly sight.

Wan Er saw my sudden movement with a slight smile on her face, though she did not comment on it and instead continued to stare at me.

It seemed like forever before the food came. We quickly finished up the food and parted ways as the two girls wanted to continue leveling. It was about time for me to go online too and look at the progress of everyone.

.....

“Shua!”

Getting online, I returned to the city to repair my equipment and to remove some of the garbage that was stored in my inventory. I stashed the items I wanted to sell in a stall and decided to sell since I wasn't in a hurry to raise my level.

20 minutes hadn't even passed when I received a message from Wan Er, “Li Xiao Yao, I have something for you to look at!”

“Oh? What is it?”

In a flash, Wan Er brought out an illustrated handbook, it was for a dark colored sign–

[Ran Wei's Provision Order]: In ancient times, a hero named Ran Min issued these Provision Order, but it has become a story tale that has been forgotten. It is time to bring back the forgotten past! With the token, the owner can start an SS ranked mission; only 10 people can do this mission at once and the owner must be at least Lv 50. It will also consume 5 points of charm!

TL: The story of Ran Min, Heavenly Prince of Ran Wei and yes Old K = Ran Min = Name of hero in ancient China

.....

“Damn, an SS ranked mission?” My eyes popped wide open,”Wan Er, This Ran Wei's Provision Order quest is amazing, how did you come across something like this?”

Wan Er chuckled, “It only took 50 Gold, bought it from the hands of a

child. What's the matter, not interested?"

"How could I not be interested? However..." I trailed off.

I hesitated only momentarily before continuing, "You are one of the deputy chiefs of [Hero Mound], top priority should go to Q-Sword and the other members to complete an SS ranked mission like this right?"

Through the dialogue box, Wan Er revealed her beautiful eyes, a murderous glare staring right at me, "I was looking for you, try and find another reason I dare you!"

I apologized rapidly, "Okay, I agree!"

Wan Er lightly laughed, "That's more like it..."

A question occurred to me, "Still, we need 10 people total to do this, how will we do this? With you, me, and Dong Cheng, that's three people. We would need to find 7 more people, how will you choose the last 7?"

Tapping her mouth, Wan Er said, "I hadn't given this any thought, what would you suggest?"

I felt somewhat nervous in my heart, "Then what about if we brought along the members of Zhan Long? How's that idea..."

Wan Er was a little taken back, smiling, "Sure, who's currently in Zhan Long at the moment? And what level are they?"

"Give me a second, I'll check!"

Looking at my friend's list, I continued, "Wolf is a Lv 46 Assassin, Old K is a Lv 45 Berserker, Fox is a Lv 45 Musketeer, Matcha is a Lv 38 Swordsman, Darling Duck is a Lv 46 Healer, and Cang Lei is a Lv 47 Berserker. In total, there is 6 people, and including us three, we still need 1 more person to make 10..."

"Level 38...wouldn't they drag us down? After all, this is an SS ranked mission..." Wan Er hesitated, before smiling once more, "Whatever, Dong Cheng, you and I are powerful enough by ourselves. Let's find another Lv 50 Healer, then we can go ahead and start this mission!"

"Okay, did you have anyone in mind?"

“Yes, Yuzi Chengshuo, a Lv 53 Healer and Fan Shu City’s strongest Healer. Also the deputy chief of the [Emerald Porcelain]!”

“Alright!”

Chapter 155: Breaking out of the Royal Jail

Lin Wan Er thought for a long time before saying, “Me, you, as well as Dong Cheng Yue. The three of us will start this quest together. Let’s clear all the beginning quests such as entering the quest zone, and then we’ll get the rest of them.”

“Ok then, it’s up to you. Oh yea, what about Yuzi Chengshuo, can we trust her?”

Lin Wan Er couldn’t help but laugh, “Don’t worry about her. She was one of the top Healers in <<Destiny>>, and definitely the strongest Healer right now. So instead of worrying about her, why not just hope that your guild members have enough strength to endure. Hurry up and join my party. We’ll start the quest now.”

“Sure!”

.....

I accepted the invitation and saw that the party was in Fan Shu City. Lin Wan Er and Dong Cheng Yue’s location indicators pointed toward the west which was the direction of Fan Shu City.

“Hehe, I can finally meet Li Xiao Yao again in game.” Dong Cheng Yue was happy as she started moving.

Lin Wan Er was silent as she quickly opened the Ran Wei Provision Order. The next moment, the system prompted: Congratulations, you accepted the SS rank quest [Five Barbarians Barren Hills]!

Quest information: First, in Fan Shu City, look for a man named Ran Lin, one of Ran Min’s descendants. He is one of Fan Shu City’s storytellers. Learn from him the exact location of Hero Ran Min’s crypt, and then search for it in the Five Barbarians Barren Hills. Then, in Ba Huang City, find a blacksmith named Feng Ye. Have him build a giant key using the quest map. This will open the Emperor’s tomb. Only upon finishing these, one can take the true journey. Please bring your friends as death will always be around the corner.

.....

“This quest information.” I muttered loudly, “Five Barbarian’s invasion. Sigh, it’s about this.”

Dong Cheng Yue wondered, “What is Five Barbarian’s invasion?”

Lin Wan Er asked, “Li Xiao Yao, you also know what Five Barbarian’s invasion is?”

I smiled, “Ah, yes. I do know about its history, but it is quite heart-wrenching.”

Dong Cheng Yue asked, “So, what is its history?”

Giving the history an air of mystery, I said, “During the ancient Eastern Jin Dynasty, the Barbarian tribes invaded the Central Plains. They spread bloodshed in the Han’s lands, causing its population to be reduced by 75%. Those Barbarian tribes were very savage; they grabbed tens of thousands of Chinese women. Also, 50,000 innocent Chinese people were cooked in just one winter by those animals for food. That period was one of the most horrible parts of Chinese history.”

Dong Cheng Yue opened her eyes wide, “What ... what happened next?”

I continued, “This was one of Hero Ran Min’s greatest humiliations, hence he created an army to punish the Five Barbarian tribes. Fighting for justice and peace, he was a famous war figure and made a path of blood towards the lands of the Barbarian tribes as he obtained a series of victories against those savages. Even the Five Barbarian tribes trembled upon hearing of his arrival. It is said that his army massacred over 50,000 barbarians, however...”

“However what?” Dong Cheng Yue was somewhat excited.

I said in a low voice, “However, the Five Barbarian tribes combined their forces to strike at Ran Wei’s lands. One day, Ran Min led 10,000 people out of the city to collect grain taxes. But he was suddenly surrounded by 150,000 tribesmen led by Mu Rong Jun of Xian Bei, one of the Five Barbarian tribes. He was eventually captured, but before he died, he said some words to Mu Rong Jun.”

“What did he say?” Dong Cheng Yue was completely hooked.

I said, “Ran Min, before he was killed, he said to Mu Rong Jun: ‘Chaos! You barbarians are beasts that proclaim themselves as Emperors. One day, we will rule over all of you....Over the years, I actually really grew to like this phrase said by a true hero!’”

Dong Cheng Yue’s eyes narrowed, “Ooooh, I like this hero!”

Lin Wan Er smiled slightly, “According to history, Ran Min was killed by Mu Rong Jun, and his body’s burial site is unknown. In <<Destiny>>, the designers chose to imprison Emperor Ran Min’s soul within the territories of the Five Barbarian’s Barren Hills, as the Five Barbarian tribes combined to suppress Ran Min. Thus, our mission is to kill the Five Barbarian tribes and release Ran Min’s soul!”

Dong Cheng Yue eagerly nodded, “Wan Er, Xiao Yao, shall we start the quest?”

In the team channel, I said, “Then, Wan Er, you go look for Ran Lin in Fan Shu City and find out the exact coordinates of the quest map. Meanwhile, I will go look for Feng Ye in Ba Huang City. Let’s divide into two groups and finish this task quickly so that tonight, we will wreak havoc on the Five Barbarian Barren Hills and avenge the innocent souls who died during the Savages attacks on the Central Plains!”

Lin Wan Er faintly smiled, “Well then, come on. I’ll give you the quest items that are required.”

“Ok!”

.....

“Snap.” I unfolded the quest map from my inventory and took a glance at it. It showed how to build the giant key. Many of the details were hard to understand and really looked tricky to implement. Otherwise, a Blacksmith wouldn’t be needed to produce it.

Carrying the Frost Rain Sword, I walked towards the blacksmith.

“Clang...”

Bellows blew as 5 Blacksmiths sweated heavily. One of them was the Old Master Blacksmith while the other 4 were the apprentices. I have no business with the apprentices, so I directly went towards the old master, stared at his strong arms and shouted while smiling, "Master, I want to ask for your help!"

The master, without lifting his head, continued pounding with his iron hammer with a "Clang, clang" sound.

"Kaching!"

I took out 3 gold coins, clinked them back and forth, and finally the master looked up at me and asked, "Boy, is there anything you need?"

"Have you ever heard of a Blacksmith in Ba Huang City named Feng Ye?"

"Feng Ye?!" The master's eyes flashed with surprise and stuttered, "You, what do need him for?"

"Do you know him?"

"Yes!" He peered with contempt at the gold coins in my hand, "However, those gold alone won't make me say a word."

I reached for my pocket and dug out another 7 gold coins, making it 10G, "Can you tell me now?"

"Well, your sincerity has moved me!"

The old master snatched the gold coins in my hand as he took a deep breath and said, "Ba Huang City's Royal Prison cell No. 7. A man named Feng Ye is detained there, that's him!"

I was shocked, "Why is Feng Ye imprisoned?"

"It started when Duke Lou Lei ordered Feng Ye to forge a legendary sword for when he was inspecting the soldiers. Who would have thought that the day before the completion of the sword, it suddenly broke. Feng Ye said the cause was the Demon residing in the gem of the sword handle, so naturally, Duke Lou Lei got furious and threw Feng Ye in prison."

I nodded, "Thank you!"

.....

Afterwards, I headed directly to Ba Huang City's Royal Jail. The Royal Jail was in the palace, surrounded by an elegant environment.

On my shoulder hung Ba Huang City's emblem, showing proof that I was an adventurer from this city, and thus I easily entered the palace and snuck towards the Royal Jail.

"Swoosh!"

After waiting for 10 minutes, hidden behind a rock, I noticed the guard changing for another so I sprinted and jumped into the jail.

I cautiously navigated the jail while checking the cell numbers and prepared my sword just in case. I stopped at the 7th cell. Examining the cell's interior, I was stunned by what I saw: a skinny old man who was about 70 years old or younger. It was hard to imagine how Duke Lou Lei could bear to incarcerate such an old man.

"Peng!"

I smashed the cable holding the cell's door and went inside.

"Who?" He was startled and opened his eyes, "You, who are you? Oh, are you a royal lackey of Ba Huang City? Damn! I will never use my skills in forging for that old dog Lou Lei again. I'll never let him use my work to massacre civilians. Let him dream on!"

I moved closer, got down on one knee and pleaded, "Old man, I am not anyone's lackey, but I do have a request. Please, you must promise me!"

"Oh, what request?" Feng Ye's anger somewhat dissipated.

I took the quest map from my inventory and said, "This is a quest map. I would like you to forge me a giant key so that I can use it to finish my quest. "

A look of astonishment suddenly appeared in Feng Ye's face, "This map? Child, tell me the truth. What do you plan to use the key for?"

I answered honestly, "Emperor Ran Min's soul is trapped at the Five Barbarian Barren Hills as the Five Barbarian's evil spirits still persist. I

want to free Emperor Ran Min's soul, but I need a key that can open the entrance to his tomb."

"Emperor Ran Min's soul." Feng Ye tightened his fist, "Then, young man, if you can take me away from this cell, I'll forge this key for you!"

"Okay!"

I bent down and saddled him across my back as he held tightly onto my armor. Meanwhile, my Cloak of Ice and Fire wrapped around him as I quickly rushed outside, the Frost Rain Sword at the ready.

.....

"Hey!"

A guard roared as I swept out of the prison, "Everyone! Someone broke into the jail and rescued old man Feng Ye! Hunt him down, now!"

I started sprinting as hard as I could, regardless of what was happening around me. Within the palace of Ba Huang City, a group of high level NPCs were chasing me; at least a hundred people!

"S**t!"

I almost panicked as I looked back and dashed even faster while sheltering Feng Ye from attacks.

"Swoosh, swoosh, swoosh." Spears wildly flew. Fortunately, I was fast enough, or else I would have already been impaled!

"Swoooooosh!"

With a "bang" sound, a cone shaped piece of metal fell from the sky and caused 1700+ damage to me. I was jarred and instantly looked upwards. I discovered that it was a huge arrow from a Ballista on the wall. Damn! They're using heavy weapons? Was Feng Ye that important?!

I was able to reach the North Gate Plaza with the help of my Lv 6 [Heal]. Behind me were a bunch of red-named NPCs which caused the players and stalls in North Gate Plaza to be scared silly—

"Isn't he Xiao Yao Zi Zai?"

“That guy’s really crazy.”

.....

At the city gate, 8 guards quickly drew their swords and yelled,
“Intercept that rebellious fellow who is carrying Feng Ye. For the Empire!”

My heart immediately sank. How could I pass through these 8 Lv 64 Elite NPC Swordsmen? Each of their Lv 7 [Combo] was enough to kill me!

Just then, two beautiful figures suddenly walked slowly from the outside. Those alluring figures were wearing the leather armor of Assassins. They were the twin assassins Yue Wei Liang and Yue Qing Qian!

“Isn’t that Xiao Yao Zi Zai? Why are there so many NPCs after him?”
Yue Wei Liang said, surprised.

Yue Qing Qian drew out a dagger from her waist. Her eyes were full of unwavering determination, “Let’s strike the NPCs and open a path for Brother Xiao Yao. Come on! ”

Chapter 156: Singing in Laurel Forest

“Bang!”

Yue Qing Qian’s body suddenly struck out above the guard NPC’s shield, knocking him back. Yue Wei Liang had also suddenly vanished and without saying anything, she appeared behind another NPC guard. Raising her dagger, she stabbed at the back side of the guard’s body, knocking him away.

Because of this, the two Assassins forcibly tore apart a gap at the city’s gate, granting me 3 precious seconds of time to cross over.

“Shua!”

My Purple Dawn Boots barely grazed over the bricks as I stepped over them. “Qing Qian, Wei Liang, thank you both!”

Yue Qing Qian gave a sigh and started to chase in my general direction. She asked questions while she ran, “Brother Xiao Yao, why are you carrying an old man while running? Also, why were those NPCs trying to kill you?”

I dashed forward while answering, “It’s nothing! This old timer is simply a criminal of the court, but ... but I still need his help, so I’m breaking him out of jail!”

“Breaking him out of prison?” Qing Qian playfully stuck out her tongue, “Hehe, brother Xiao Yao just does anything he feels like doing. Keep on running, I’ll get you some time!”

“Ah, thanks.”

I heavily nodded; I was starting to like Yue Qing Qian more and more. She was so considerate!

.....

After a tense 10 minutes, I entered the depths of Ba Huang Forest and the soldiers finally stopped chasing me. I guess this old man wasn’t that big of a felon, so a large task force wasn’t assigned to retrieve him.

In the forest clearing, the white flowers bloomed and the spring wind rippled through the grass. I helped Feng Ye sit down and tried to catch my breath. There was already a giant stone tablet on my back. Adding Feng Ye, who was quite heavy as well, it would have been impossible for me to run if it wasn't for my Swordsman's strength. Otherwise, I would have fainted dead on the road.

The twin Assassins, Yue Qing Qian and Yue Wei Liang, walked up as Yue Qing Qian asked, "Brother Xiao Yao, what's next?"

"Wait for now, I'll ask..."

Turning around, I looked at Feng Ye, "Elder, you promised me that if I helped you, you would create the giant key for me. Shall we go look for a blacksmith shop so you can create it?"

"I refuse!" Feng Ye shook his head, "I am a fugitive of Ba Huang City now, therefore I can't be seen in any region with a huge concentration of people. Take me south of Ba Huang City to Qing He Gu. It's deserted over there, so I can concentrate on casting the key in peace. There should be a thatched hut with the appropriate smelting forge if you can take me there!"

"Understood!"

I carried the old man once more and said to Yue Qing Qian, "Qing Qian, I'm going to bring Feng Ye to make my key. You go on back to the city and focus on leveling. Don't waste your time traveling with me."

Yue Qing Qian shook her head, "I don't want to. Rumors say that there's danger on these roads. If you go alone, I'll be worried! I want to travel with you until you finish your mission!"

On the other side, Yue Wei Liang frowned, "Sister ... didn't you say you'd go to the auction and help buy a Gold Tier dagger for me..."

Yue Qing Qian tilted her head and laughed sweetly, "I'll be traveling with Brother Xiao Yao for a while. You go buy the item yourself at the auction and I'll just give you the money now, so ... Sister, don't be angry. I'll get you a great bear stuffed animal in return..."

“You mean it? The 1.8 meter, big sister’s favorite one?”

“Yea!”

“Okay, great!”

The two sisters completed the transaction as I blankly stared at them from the side. Yue Wei Liang waved goodbye as she used a Return Scroll to head back to the city quickly. Yue Qing Qian stretched her hands behind her back in joy, “Brother Xiao Yao, should we go now?”

“Yea...”

.....

The two of us traveled through the woodlands; the Green Plains were not too far away and only low leveled monsters would be in our way. It was a good thing that Yue Qing Qian was on my side; I didn’t need to raise a single fist as she killed all of the monsters. An Assassin’s power to bring a swift death was the best out of the 9 classes. And to be honest, their attack speed with two daggers was astonishing. With [Gouge] and [Backstab], along with several attacks, she and her Ice Rat could easily wipe out any Lv 40+ monster.

In half an hour, we appeared in front of a clear creek about 20 meters wide. It was far too long for me to see an end, so it seemed this creek would block our way.

“Brother Xiao Yao, what should we do?” She asked while tilting her head again.

“Are you afraid of swimming?”

Behind me, Feng Ye immediately gave a heavy cough. Apparently, his old body might not be able to withstand the cold temperature of the creek’s water.

Yue Qing Qian turned to look at the bamboo forest some distance away, “If we can build a raft, it’ll save us time instead of trying to walk around.”

“Yea!”

Putting down Feng Ye, I pulled out the Frost Rain Sword. “Qing Qian, I’ll

cut the bamboo down, and you'll get the vines to tie it all together. Make sure you bind it tightly, otherwise the raft will fall apart under our weight."

"Okay!"

Cutting my way into the forest, the Frost Rain Sword easily sliced through dozens of bamboos at a time and soon the forest was nearly flat. Bringing them back to the river, I focused on cutting them to the same size while Yue Qing Qian focused on tying them together. While we were two novices on making a raft, the production was going along nicely and the raft was looking pretty decent.

"Yue Qing Qian, would you like to try first?" I smirked, watching the raft float on the creek.

With an enthusiastic nod, she happily jumped onto the raft. Her long hair danced in the wind, as did her cloak. She was looking even cuter in her pretty dress that showed off her long legs. Combined with her eyes that seemed to sparkle in the day, she was a 9.

Carrying Feng Ye onto the raft, we all sat down on it. With a gentle push, the raft was sent offshore.

The water rippled in a beautiful pattern as we used bamboo poles to paddle ourselves across the creek. Smiling serenely at me, Yue Qing Qian asked, "Brother Xiao Yao, the scenery here is so nice. Would you like me to sing a Guilin folk song while we wait?"

TL Note: Guilin is a prefecture in Guangxi, China.

I was excited for this. Clapping my hands for the idea, I replied, "Go on then, sing~~"

"I don't know any songs..."

"....."

.....

A few minutes later, the raft landed near the land of Green Plains. It really was full of wild green and blue grass; the scent of it wafted heavily

through the air. Qing Qian took in a deep breath, her face full of joy, “If there was a place like this in reality, I’d exchange 10 years of my life to live there. Of course, Brother Xiao Yao has to be there too...”

I was startled by her words, “I’d be too busy to live in a place like this. You’d have to make an appointment to take me here.”

“Hehe, I trust that you’d take the time off to travel here with me. Let’s go...”

After traveling through the Green Valley for some time, we found the little cottage that Feng Ye had mentioned. His eyes lit up with nostalgia at the sight of it, “It’s been five years, it’s still here...”

In a flash, he jumped from my back and rushed into the house. I could only stare; the old man was healthier than I was! Why was I his riding mule this whole time if he could move like this?!

“Boy, give me that blueprint of yours!”

“Coming!”

I entered the cottage and handed over the plans to create the key while he prodded at the furnace to start a fire. “Since you have nothing to do, go cut some wood for me and feed it to the furnace!” he boomed.

“Okay!”

Working like slaves once more, Yue Qing Qian and I climbed the mountains to find timber. Stacking enough wood into the stove, we stared quietly at the black curls that floated away from the cottage.

After nearly an hour of talking with Yue Qing Qian about her family situation and preferences, Feng Ye finally yelled out from inside, “Boy, the key is done!”

Turning to look at him, I was momentarily stunned at the size. The key easily reached a monstrous length of 3 meters and was still on fire! Looking at the design of the key, the gigantic model was an exact copy.

I took a step forward to grab the key, and in my shock, I nearly roasted my hand while grabbing the handle. Shouting out for the system to wrap

up the key, I deposited it into my storage.

“Shua,” the keys disappeared in a white light and was deposited into my inventory. Although it occupied an inventory spot, it beats holding it. If I was dragging around a key so large, I might as well go to hell and die there!

.....

“Brother Xiao Yao, is your mission done?” Yue Qing Qian asked, her beautiful eyes blinking at me.

“Yep.”

I nodded, “Well, let’s go back to the city. I can’t thank you enough Qing Qian. Without your company, I would have been bored to death!”

“Hehe, It was my pleasure~ I just wanted to spend more time with Brother Xiao Yao~”

Yue Qing Qian stood there, slowly fishing her Return Scroll slowly, as if trying to extend the time she had with me.

I couldn’t help but laugh at her efforts. I walked towards her and held out my hands, “Would you like a hug before leaving?”

Her face flushed red as she nodded her head, staying silent the whole time.

With one small half step, I hugged Yue Qing Qian’s body for some time. “Alright, let’s return to the city. Wait for me until I get the Guild Creation Tablet. Then I’ll establish Zhan Long, and you can join us. You’ll be one of us!”

Yue Qing Qian nodded excitedly, “I know. Brother, work hard!”

Right after, she activated the Return Scroll and disappeared away from the fertile fields of the Green Plains.

.....

Opening my buddy list, I wrote a quick message to Wan Er, “Miss, I have the Giant key. How are things on your end?”

She replied immediately, “We finished up an hour ago. All that’s left is to wait for you.”

“Alright, will we start the mission when I arrive?”

“Let’s wait...” Wan Er said thoughtfully. “This mission will definitely be time-consuming. You and Zhan Long should all take a break and eat something. Afterwards, come back online and we’ll start. We’ll probably be playing for 12 hours so I’m worried that someone might get sick without the proper amount of rest and food.”

“Ah, understood!”

.....

Another message came, this time from Wolf, “Brother Xiao Yao, are you busy? We’re about to go help Matcha level up a few more times!”

Nodding my head, “Yea, something came up. The Miss has received a SS ranked quest; I managed to convince her to include you guys in the mission. An SS ranked quest will most definitely be hard, but rewarding. It’ll be a lot harder than your usual quests, so tell Matcha that she should raise her level to at least 45. Other than that, you should all go offline, eat something, and take a restroom break if needed. Come back online in an hour, ready to start the mission!”

“Alright! An SS ranked mission... awesome!! Haha!” I could imagine the saliva flowing from Wolf’s mouth already.

Old K popped up into the chat, “What’s the quest, Boss?”

“Save the ancient hero: the Heavenly Prince Ran Min.”

Old K must have blanked out, because he sent another message a few seconds later, “My god, I share the same last name with an ancient monarch?”

“Yes, yes. Now hurry up and go eat!”

“Okay...”

Chapter 157: Godly Strategist

I logged off at around 4 in the afternoon, ate a quick box lunch with Wan Er and Dong Cheng Yue and then returned to the dorm to go online. Everyone was ready to go and wanted to take advantage of the experience of the SS rank quest!

.....

“Swoosh!”

Afternoon, around 5 p.m: I spawned in the Green Grain Valley when I signed online. Feng Hua had already left from the room and I had no reason to stay so I used my Return Scroll to go back to Ba Huang City!

I invited Wolf, Old K, Fox, Matcha and the rest into the party until Zhan Long’s 7 core members were all in the party. We all met up at the Northern Market Area. At the same time, I messaged Wan Er, “Miss, where is the starting point of the quest?”

Wan Er answered, “At the junction of Jiu Li City, Fan Shu City and Ba Huang City. It is called Cruel Leaf Valley. Specific coordinates: Jiu Li City (47882, 90182). The monsters’ levels there are pretty high—at least Lv 60. Be careful and don’t rush. It should be fine if you arrive in about an hour.”

I replied, “Ah, I understand. See you at Cruel Leaf Valley!”

“Yup!”

.....

I turned around and looked at the Zhan Long Studio’s members. I told everyone, “Let’s verify again: all the equipment is repaired, full on potions, pardon cards and sealing cards. We got them all?”

Wolf nodded, “Don’t worry brother Xiao Yao, I already checked.”

Matcha held her sword, walked over to me and smiled, “Boss, could this SS-rank quest raise my level to 45ish?”

I looked at her. She was already Lv 39. While planning ahead, I said, “Definitely possible. Once we enter the zone for the quest, Matcha will

stand in the back. Don't get near any monsters. Your level is the lowest, so be a good 'experience baby' again."

"Ah! Let's go?"

"Let's go!"

The seven of us left the city together. Dong Cheng Lei was up front, opening up a path. In his hands was a battle axe covered in golden flames; his entire body had a golden hue. This set of equipment caused Old K a great deal of jealousy, since both of them were second promotion berserkers. However, Old K's items were completely overwhelmed by Dong Cheng Lei's, but there was nothing he could do about it. We started with nothing. Dong Cheng Yue spent RMB to gear up Dong Cheng Lei. There was no comparison.

"Brother Xiao Yao?"

Dong Cheng Lei smiled in a simple manner, "Is Yue Er, that little brat, coming along with us as well?"

I nodded my head, "Yea. Dong Cheng, Wan Er and Yuzi Chengshuo. Those 3 are together. We will meet at the quest location. What's up Lei? Is there a problem?"

Dong Cheng Lei rubbed his head and smiled, "Nothing. However, my dad told me to protect my younger sister. This time the quest is so dangerous, I will protect her well. She is my only sister; I can't let her suffer any injuries."

I couldn't help but smile, "Good, that's the spirit Lei. Don't worry, we will all protect Dong Cheng Yue. Unless we all die, no monster will even touch a strand of her hair!"

Matcha was flying in the air, with a deadpan expression, "Boss really likes to use figure of speech....."

I didn't respond. Raising my hand, with a sharp sound, I drew Frost Rain Sword. In a lowered voice, I said, "There will be a lot of monsters on the road and we can't suffer any losses. Old K, Ah Lei, Wolf, the 3 of you will follow me to the front. We will open up a path. Matcha and Fox protect

Darling!”

“Yes!”

Inside of the Ba Huang Forest, there were many different types of monsters. On the road, there were Lv 30-55 monsters with some rare Elite Monsters mixed. You could only encounter Elite Monsters in Green Qilin Abyss and Fire Stone Canyon zones. Otherwise, Elite Monsters wouldn't be so valuable in experience and drops.

“Slash!”

A crimson light flew out and dealt 1145 damage. Song Han's dagger danced and as soon as [Bleed] landed, causing the 1145 damage, he swiftly retreated. The wild bear could only swipe at an empty space; a MISS appeared. Song Han kept on attacking and retreating, his daggers continuously stabbing down at the bear. In the blink of an eye, the wild bear's health bar was empty. It let out a sorrowful cry and fell. A Lv 48 monster couldn't compare to Song Han's tyranny.

Matcha narrowed her eyes and lightly laughed, “Little Wolf's fighting ability is not bad. It has a very nice rhythm. Within China's ranking for Assassin players, you ranked at least.....”

Song Han was shocked, “Sister Matcha, what is my ranking at?”

Matcha lifts one finger.

“Top 100?” Song Han was secretly happy.

Matcha shook her head, “Stop dreaming!”

“Top 1000?”

“Yup” Matcha laughed, “Pretty much. Destiny servers, upon opening, took at least 50% of the gaming population. All different kinds of experts started to play Destiny. There were too many experts that play the Assassin class. I often visit websites with expert player rankings, in the Assassin category if the beautiful Cang Tong is not ranked number 1, then she is ranked number 2. Yue Qing Qian is top 10, Yue Wei Liang is top 20. Little Wolf, your level of fighting ability is around 200 in ranking.

That is not too bad. After all, the amount of people on the server that played the Assassin class is over 300,000. Maybe I'm ranking you a bit too high.....”

Song Han's face turned green, “Sister Matcha, I understand. You are messing with me on purpose.....”

“Hehee, really smart!” Matcha flew lower and extended her hand to give Song Han a pat on the shoulders. “Little Wolf, fight on. You are currently Zhan Long's top Assassin. Don't let your Brother, Xiao Yao, down! Put in effort to heighten your own skills. After this, I will look for some battle tactics for you to read. You must persevere. Otherwise, once the guild is established, Yue Qing Qian, Yue Wei Liang and even the beautiful Cang Tong will join Zhan Long. Then within our Zhan Long's professional Assassins, you won't be in the top 3. How embarrassing, you were formerly Zhan Long Studio's top expert.....”

Song Han's face started to turn purple, “Damn, if I can't even be top 3, I won't want to live. In the future, Sister Matcha, please give me many pointers

Darling Duck was astounded, “Sister Matcha's skills are really that good? Then why was it yesterday, when we were leveling together, your hit rate was less than 30%.....and that your DPS was even lower than mine, a Healer using some basic spells.....”

TL: DPS = damage per second

In a flash, Matcha's beautiful face turned red, “I'm a Theoretician. At this moment, I can't sync the game with my brain commands.....”

I nodded my head, “Yea, Matcha is a strategist. Fox has already experienced this in the past?”

Fox smiled, “Yup. Yesterday, after logging offline, I used an official Destiny simulator to test Matcha 7 times. Each time the battle tactics had a success rate of over 97%. Someone with this kind of ability in most games would be called a —— Godly Strategist!”

“Godly Strategist?” Dong Cheng Lei asked.

Old K raised his fist and laughed, “Haha, that’s great. From now on, as long as Zhan Long has the godly strategist Matcha, we don’t have to worry about any kinds of battles or competitions. Haha, that’s really great.....”

Matcha was even more embarrassed, “It’s just that my operating skills are bad.....”

I laughed loudly, “No problem, operating skills can be trained slowly. Once Matcha has a sense of direction in-game, she will be a super refined expert. Even way stronger than me....”

Matcha pursed her lips, “Boss, you are ridiculing me. How could I even begin to compare to a Destiny top 10 expert.....”

Song Han gently laughed, “No problem, in the past 2 days, Brother Xiao Yao hasn’t been leveling. He will soon drop out of the top 10. You have a chance!”

Matcha, “.....”

I took a glance, sure enough since I was idle for 2 days, my Lv 52 had dropped to Ba Huang City’s number 9 spot. This kind of rapid leveling is too frightening. Besides eating, going to the bathroom and sleeping, they are probably always online--

1. Ji Feng Han LV 55 Class: Swordsman
2. Simple LV 55 Class: Mage
3. Yan Zhao Warrior LV 55 Class: Swordsman
4. General Li Mu LV 54 Class: Swordsman
5. Soaring Dragon LV 54 Class: Mage
6. Yue Qing Qian LV 53 Class: Assassin
7. Frozen Gravestone LV 53 Class: Swordsman
8. Drunken Spear LV 53 Class: Nature’s Knight
9. Xiao Yao Zi Zai LV 52 Class: Tomb Guardian of Dragon City
10. General Wang Jian LV 52 Class: Swordsman

.....

In essence, the ranking was a battle between [Vanguard] and [Prague]. Jian Feng Han and his sister, Simple, were the top two. Followed by Yan Zhao Warrior and Yue Qing Qian, who were players from [Prague]. But there were 2 new people as well. One was Frozen Gravestone, who had appeared in top ranking list before and the other was Drunken Spear.

“Drunken Spear?” I frowned. “Have I heard of this person before?”

Fox lightly laughed, “You finally noticed that guy? Drunken Spear is originally from Jiu Li City. He just recently came over.”

“Nature’s Knight, a hidden class?” I asked. “What guild is he a part of?”

“Our rival, [Flying Dragon]!”

“Damn!” I clenched my fist, “Another rival.”

Song Han nodded his head, “Yea, Drunken Spear’s real name is Zhou Ning. From what I heard, he is the [Flying Dragon] deputy chief, Black Tortoise’s cousin. Black Tortoise is called Zhou Xuan. So, this person is destined to be our enemy.”

Dong Cheng Lei lifted his battle axe and said, “Brother Xiao Yao, do you want to kill this Drunken Spear person? Leave it to me. Ah Lei will help you take care of him!”

I couldn’t help but laugh and slapped Dong Cheng Lei’s shoulder, “Don’t, at this moment we don’t know if Drunken Spear has any hostility towards us. Also, we are still in the development stage. Don’t go pick a fight with [Flying Dragon]. Besides, Drunken Spear is an expert. You can’t overpower this enemy, Ah Lei. Save your strength for killing the BOSS!”

Dong Cheng Lei nodded his head, “Okay, Brother Xiao Yao, I’ll listen to you!”

Matcha’s lips twitched, “This younger brother is so well behaved.....”

Dong Cheng Lei laughed in a silly manner, “Because Brother Xiao Yao is my brother!”

Matcha, “.....”

.....

50 minutes later, everyone arrived at the Ba Huang City zone's border area. Further ahead was a barren canyon. Standing on the edge of the canyon, a message appeared: You have entered the [Cruel Leaf Valley] map, you entered the Jiu Li City zone.

.....

Looking at the map, 3 little orange spots were quickly heading toward our location. I immediately stuck out my hand and waved, "We will briefly rest here, wait for Wan Er and Dong Cheng to enter the zone together!"

"Swoosh!"

Far away the forest shook and 2 beautiful bodies emerged from the forest. One was a beautiful Moon Elf girl, Lin Wan Er, the other a pretty Wind Elf girl, Dong Cheng Yue. Behind them was a girl dressed in a magic robe. She had a nice face and her level was pretty high—a Lv 53 Healer. This was Yuzi Chengshuo, Jiu Li City's [Emerald Porcelain] guild's deputy chief!

Chapter 158: Entering Cruel Leaf Valley

“Wan Er, Dong Cheng, you finally came!” Giving a cheerful laugh, I walked over to greet them.

Wan Er gently carried a red iron umbrella on her shoulder and was emanating a nice fragrant aroma. The curves near her mouth lifted upwards in a beautiful way as she spoke, “Yeah, we walked thousands of miles to get here. You’ll have to excuse us for our tardiness~”

Waving my hand, I said, “No worries, I just wanted to congratulate ourselves for this pleasant collaboration. Let’s hope for a smooth time while carving our way through the [Five Barbarian Barren Mountain] and completing the SS ranked mission!

Dong Cheng Yue snickered, holding her staff, “There won’t be any chance of failure. After all, we have Ba Huang City’s number 1 Swordsman, Xiao Yao Zi Zai. This SS ranked mission will be a walk in the park with you, won’t it?”

I was a little apprehensive, “That’s enough Dong Cheng, I’m no longer the 1st ranked Swordsman of Ba Huang City. Jian Feng Han, Yan Zhao Warrior and General Li Mu are now the top 3 Swordsmen. I can no longer compete for the number 1 spot.”

.....

“Oh, what a rare sight. Xiao Yao Zi Zai is being modest, am I hearing things right?”

Finally the beautiful Healer behind Dong Cheng Yue stepped forward to say something but I was too distracted by her beauty to notice her words. Her Healer’s staff moved in her hand as she stepped forward and made herself known. I briefly saw the guild emblem identifying her as the deputy leader of [Emerald Porcelain]. Her beautiful eyes stared into mine as I finally took notice of her words, “I’ve learned long ago about the melee Healer of Ba Huang City called Xiao Yao Zi Zai. I had also heard that Xiao Yao was incredibly handsome and as expected, the rumors are true No wonder you were able to steal away female fans from Jian Feng

Han...”

I was pretty embarrassed, “Miss Yuzi Chengshuo, don’t label me like that! I haven’t stolen any fans from Jian Feng Han. Instead, I’m a lonely Swordsman that been repeatedly chased down by [Wrath of the Heroes], that’s all.”

“Lonely?”

Yuzi Chengshuo laughed, “To be able to gain the attention of two beautiful women like Cang Tong and Cang Yue and then the assistance of Yue Qing Qian and Yue Wei Liang from [Prague]. How could anyone call a person like that lonely? Hmph, spare me that thought, or I’ll look down on you for it!”

Gently waving to hide my embarrassment, “Then, let’s not talk about such a useless topic and prepare ourselves for the Cruel Leaf Valley. Let’s have everyone get familiar with one another; everyone behind me ... are people from my guild, Zhan Long.”

Everyone started to introduce themselves one after another. Darling Duck raised her Healer’s staff and asked the beautiful Yuzi Chengshuo, “Your Lv 6 [Heal], how much does it heal per cast?”

Thinking hard for a moment, Yuzi Chengshuo replied, “Uhm, around 50% of the maximum health, I’d say. It generally heals around 1350 health per cast. Does that answer your question?”

Darling Duck stuck her tongue out in sadness, “Wow...that’s a lot more than what I can heal. My Lv 5 [Heal] doesn’t even reach 1000 health...”

“That’s fine, we’ll make a great Healer team together. Whatever BOSS we fight against will have a hard time killing our tank. After all, our tank is not only just a damage taker but he can also deal high damage and heal himself as well.”

.....

While they talked, Matcha came up to me and whispered, “Boss, both their levels are already really high. Yuzi Chengshuo is Lv 53. She’s really strong...”

“Don’t be too sad about it, Cang Tong and Cang Yue are Fan Shu City’s players. They have a faster level rate than we do so their levels are expected to be much higher than ours. Besides, Yuzi Chengshuo is the deputy leader of [Emerald Porcelain]. She wouldn’t have a hard time finding someone to train with her.”

“I understand.”

“Ah?” Wan Er saw me talking to Matcha, and walked towards us with a complex emotion within her beautiful eyes. “This must be the beautiful Strawberry Matcha. You are the newest member of Xiao Yao’s studio?”

I answered in place of Matcha, “Yea, she’s called Xue Rou, Zhan Long’s newest member! Matcha, this is Cang Tong. In real life, she is my friend Wan Er. Come, get to know her!”

Staring at Wan Er blankly, she held out her hand with a nervous smile, “Hello there, Miss Wan Er...”

Wan Er gripped her hand firmly before leaning close to whisper, “Li Xiao Yao is a pervert, so you must be careful Matcha! Since you’re one of the members of his studio, it’ll be very likely he might try something!”

My face turned violet, “Miss, please don’t insult me in my presence.”

Matcha took no notice of what I said, and instead stared wide eyed at Wan Er, “How...how do you know Boss is a pervert?”

Wan Er eyes twinkled unusually brightly as she gave Matcha a single expression. Looking away into the valley, she waited for a few seconds before saying, “Just the other night, when we went out to eat, it was too late for us to return to the school. So we went off the campus and booked a room in a nearby hotel. I thought I was going to be safe, but I didn’t think that Li Xiao Yao was that type of guy Wuwu, he is a sheep dressed in a wolf skin! Oh wait, that’s not right ... He’s like a wolf wearing a sheep’s skin...”

Matcha was completely overwhelmed by this new source of knowledge. Nervously staring at me, she said, “Boss, are you really this type of person ... Wan Er ... did that really happen...?”

Wan Er's face turned red, "Ah no, I escaped into the night by jumping out the window!"

Matcha stared at her blankly. "..."

"....."

No longer putting up with her, I grabbed Wan Er's arm, "Damn it, you're coming with me to the front to clear the wave. Don't feed false information to my studio members, otherwise how would I appear to them in the future?"

Wan Er giggled as she was being led away by me; lowering her voice, she said, "Hmph, when Zhan Long recruits people, you just have to recruit a girl as pretty and gentle as her; you recruited her on purpose didn't you?!"

Waving my hand, I answered, "That was unintentional. When we were recruiting people, Matcha was the only one who applied. We urgently needed someone to join, so it was only natural that she got the job!"

Wan Er turned and looked at me with a sudden smile. Carrying her umbrella, she cheered, "Come on then. Let's go clear the way!"

.....

In Cruel Leaf Valley, the leaves were quite sparse. This valley is within the borders of Jiu Li City, however it is just as close to Fan Shu City and Ba Huang City. The terrain was a little complicated, as the whole valley's interior was filled with pale plants with sharp leaf blades. Looking out over it, the place looked deathly still.

Unsheathing my Frost Rain Sword, I walked in front of Wan Er while summoning Baby Bobo. I looked into the distance and saw the remains of an ancient chariot that had collapsed in the valley. The wheels had long since rotted, leaving behind rusted nails and the bones of horses and warriors alike were strewn across the place. After tens of millions of years, the scene was still vivid enough that I could faintly hear the drums of war sound and the clashing of swords striking against each other.

"This place was an ancient battlefield!" I exclaimed to myself.

Wan Er looked across at me, “I’m not blind, I can see that...”

Scratching my nose, I said, “Don’t make fun of the dead!”

“Haha...”

Dong Cheng Yue in the air yelled, “Be careful guys, a monster just appeared north of us...”

“Oh?”

Wan Er and I looked over to where Dong Cheng pointed and sure enough, a pile of bones were slowly crawling together. Soon, it became a skeleton soldier with a rusty mace. It seems as if as soon as we got close, the dead begun to rise and fight on this ancient battlefield once more-

[Northern Frontier Undead] (Elite rank monster)

Level: 55

Attack: 780-1110

Defense: 800

Health: 6000

Skills: [Combo] [Iron Blade Sweep]

Description: A Northern Frontier Undead, these elite soldiers were once a part of the Northern Frontier Barbarian Tribes. After being defeated by Ran Min’s army, these soldiers were left to die in foreign lands. Their Undeads refused to depart from the lands and guarded the battlefields for a new enemy to fight for eternity. They are savage and ruthless and always prefer to kill their enemies quickly.

.....

“It’s coming!”

I took out my Frost Rain Sword in front of me and under my foot, a surge of energy rippled through my body, signifying the casting of [Turmoil Sword] and increasing my attack power by 10%. Feeling my whole body warm up from Yuzi Chengshuo’s [Encourage], my attack was increased again by another 6%! Feeling like I was at the peak of my power, I charged

straight at the Northern Frontier Undead. With golden hexagrams signifying a Lv 4 [Combo], I struck at it's shoulder–

“894!”

“871 ! ”

“842 ! ”

“911 ! ”

My wrist turned once more, and the Frost Rain Sword shook as the [Fierce Ice Blade] struck. A bright cyan ray of light pierced down from the clouds and met my blade. It was a fatal strike!

“4484 ! ”

Not only was it a fatal strike, it was also a critical strike and killed the Lv 55 Elite Monster instantaneously!

.....

“Damn...”

Yuzi Chengshuo looked at me astonished, “What ... what kind of attack damage do you have, to have a single attack do 4484 points of damage ... Even if it was a critical blow, this is really too much damage. Xiao Yao, exactly how high is your attack? This is abnormal, even terrifying. I've never seen a fighter from Jiu Li City who can do the same amount of damage as you...”

Wan Er explained the strike in detail, “Chengshuo, his blow triggered a fatal strike, so it's no wonder he did that much damage. Otherwise, it should have only done about 3000 points of damage.”

Chengshuo looked even more frightened upon hearing that, “That was the result of a fatal blow? How splendid ... but <Destiny> doesn't have that many superior swords yet. Only the Frost Rain Sword, the currently number 1 weapon on the list, is a Superior Tier sword... Hold on, are you saying that Xiao Yao is the owner of the Frost Rain Sword?!!”

Wan Er smiled sweetly, “Of course, Chengshuo. Why else would I invite Xiao Yao to come on this SS ranked mission?”

Chengshuo gave a small nervous chuckle, “I had thought that he was a special person to you...”

With a “peng”, Wan Er’s face flushed red, “That ... that wasn’t the reason...”

“Whatever the case is, let’s continue onwards! We’re about to enter the Five Barbarian Barren Hills!”

“Yea...”

.....

As we traveled onwards, we killed hundreds of Northern Frontier Undeads and eventually our team advanced to the depths of the valley. On a side note, Matcha was extremely happy from the voyage; the amount of experience she was getting from all of the monsters was far richer than her usual grinding spots and she quickly became the fastest leveler in our group.

Standing deep within the entrance of the valley, I took a look at the coordinates, “If we move forward 50 meters, we’ll be at the entrance of the Five Barbarian Tomb!”

Wan Er nodded her head in excitement, “Let’s go!”

My Purple Dawn Boots started to glow slightly with the signs of flames, so I took the lead farther into the tomb while my Fire and Ice Cloak billowed behind me. Even the Ancient Tablet on my back started to glow faintly. Walking around the mountain pass, I was immediately stunned by the sight before me–

The primitive forest we had just traveled through suddenly had an ancient building pop out of nowhere! A giant head of a stone wolf appeared alongside it and approximately 5 meters below the stone wolf, a stone statue stood. A sword was propped within its hands but the head had already fallen off. The sword itself, had an engraving, saying “Here lies the Heavenly Prince Ran Min!”

.....

“We’re here!” Wolf clenched his dagger with excitement.

I looked up to see the post, “Where is the entrance?”

Pulling my hand, Wan Er pouted, “Well, there’s a hole under the stone, so it must be the key hole! Come on, put the key in so we can go in!”

“Got it!”

Reaching into my inventory, I pulled out the wrapped key. With a “hua,” the giant key was retrieved and all of the men looked shocked at my package. “My god! What a long and wide key! Where does it go?”

Chapter 159: The Blacksmith Old Man

Carrying the giant key, I walked to the bottom of the wolf's head and slowly placed it into the corresponding place. I heard the sounds of crackling and turning and another "boom" as the mechanisms inside rotated. Holding the heavy steel key in place was almost unbearable; both of my hands were getting numb by the second.

Finally, the key stopped moving but on the outside, nothing seemed to have happened.

"What's the matter?" Dong Cheng asked, her head tilting as she stared at me. "Xiao Yao, are we missing something that is required to open the door? Do we need to shout out some sort of command to magically open it, like 'Open sesame or I have come for the princess'?"

I shook my head, "I don't think that's it."

Wan Er piped up with her two cents, "Do we need to turn the key even more? Who else wants to give the key a try?"

"Oh mighty Miss, please give it a try!"

"How about you give it another try?" Wan Er said, her beautiful eyes staring at me.

Even with my full body weight distributed onto the key, my efforts had gone to waste. The key simply would not budge another inch.

"Goddamnit, I can't move it at all! Cang Lei, Old K, Matcha, come here and help me out!"

Cang Lei immediately rushed over to help me. Matcha and Old K grabbed the handle of the key and tried pulling on it even Wan Er came over and gave her effort.

"Everyone at the same time!" I barked.

"Okay!"

"1, 2, 3, go! 1, 2, 3, go!" I yelled out slowly.

With our combined strength, the key gave a crackling noise, but it still

remained motionless. Wan Er flushed red from the exertion, “Nothing is happening still? The key refuses to move even with this many people? How many LV 40+ people do we need then?”

Dong Cheng picked up her staff, “How are we going to do this then?”

I took a look at the people around us before a sudden thought came to me, “Matcha, what direction were you turning the key?”

She twirled her fingers to show me, “In this direction...”

My face turned green as I realized our mistake, “We have to turn the key clockwise to open the door, not the other way around...Cang Lei, you were making the same mistake as Matcha...”

Cang Lei scratched his head childishly, “Brother Xiao Yao, I don’t know which direction is which...”

Sighing, Dong Cheng Yue explained to her brother, “Brother, you’re so stupid... clockwise is when you turn to the right.”

“Oh...got it...” Dong Cheng Lei nodded his head in understanding.

.....

“One more time!” I cried.

This time in unison, we finally turned the giant key. The “kacha” sounds of the key were followed by the earth suddenly trembling. The stone wolf’s mouth opened and looked as if it could snap shut at any time, with us in it!

“Bang!”

We all rode out the trembles as we waited for the statue to stop shaking, though the key in our hands rapidly crumbled away into a pile of steel fragments, never to be used again. To have a key that long, crumble away that quickly—what a strange sight!

The mouth of the giant stone wolf flickered, showing the number 30 on the screen. This was the start of a countdown!

I snapped out of my shock quickly and shouted for the rest to hear,

“Come into the mouth! It will close after 30 seconds! Hurry, there’s not much time!”

As I spoke, I held the Frost Rain Sword, took the lead and ran ahead, throwing myself inside the wolf’s mouth. Straightaway, I noticed that the inside had a steep slope that slid downwards. The entire group piled in behind me, but only Wan Er, Dong Cheng Yue, and Wolf readily kept their balance on the abrupt slope. Everyone’s armor flashed different colors as they slid everywhere and bumped into each other. It seemed like all 10 of us had made it into the [Five Barbarians Desolate Tomb] at the very least.

.....

“Shashashaaa”

Finally slowing down as we reached the bottom of the slope, we must have traveled at least 100 meters underground from the surface. The map was no longer displaying [Five Barbarian Barren Hill]. Instead, it was showing [Five Barbarians Desolate Tomb – Level 1]!

I stood up and gave myself a pat to clean away all of the excess dirt; the tomb was a pretty large map. The cavern roof tops were all embedded with mysterious soul stones and each emitted a spooky glow as they illuminated the area around us. From where I was standing, the map looked to be in decent condition although there were plants growing everywhere and the stench was almost enough to make me nauseous.

“Sha...”

Wan Er appeared behind me, her Iron umbrella in hand. Raising a single eyebrow, she commented, “Ugh, it’s smelly down here...it’s almost as if there was a tofu shop nearby...”

TL Note: Stinky tofu is a popular dish in both China and Taiwan.

Turning, I smiled and teased her, “Wan Er, are you getting hungry now?”

Wan Er could only stare at me in disbelief, though she didn’t say anything to answer me.

.....

Old K came along dragging his battle-axe, desperately spitting out whatever had gotten caught in his mouth. “Peh! I got some mud in my mouth when we were sliding down, what kind of motherfucking map is this...”

Wolf jumped down onto the ground laughing, “Old K, you need to polish up on your skills...”

From the air, Matcha and Dong Cheng Yue came gliding down gently. Dong Cheng smiled as she looked at us all, “How exciting, this is the first time we’re doing an SS ranked mission~”

I nodded, “Yea, this is probably the server’s first SS ranked mission, so we must be more careful than usual. It’s too late to retreat anyways.”

Wan Er scoffed as she heard what I had said, “If anyone wanted to back out now, none of you guys are allowed to mention it or else we would lose face here.”

Choosing not to comment, Yuzi Chengshuo looked off into the distance, “Ahem, handsome men and pretty girls shouldn’t be having such a light conversation in this atmosphere. If you take a look around us, monsters are already starting to spawn; we need to kill them quickly to find the entrance to the second layer of the tomb. With the starting layer being so large, who knows how long it’ll take for us to find either a second layer, or if there’s actually a BOSS to defeat.”

Pumping up her fist, Wan Er said, “There better be a BOSS at the end of every level or else our 10 man team would be wasting time.

“Yea!”

The Frost Rain Sword stuck to my hand as I walked to the front; it didn’t take long to find red dots on the map, indicating that monsters were nearby. A sword wielding skeleton soldier came running at us as we approached. This monster was wearing animal skin as a hat and its armor had whiffs of animal fur too. It really reminded me of a Turkish soldier, but this monster was a skeleton and not a soldier. Immediately, I took a look at its stats–

[Di Knife Soldier] (Elite Monster)

TL: Di is one of the Five Barbarian Tribes.

http://en.wikipedia.org/wiki/Di_%28Five_Barbarians%29

Level: 57

Attack: 1000-1320

Defense: 850

Health: 7000

Skills: [Moon Slash] [Heavy Chop]

Description: A soldier from the Di Tribe; they came from beyond the Great Wall and possess extraordinary talent with the art of killing. Despite death, they retained their wild nature and reveled in murder. Following Ran Min's death, these soldiers became the guardians of his tomb so that no one would come to free his soul.

.....

"A Lv 57 elite monster with a high attack power of 1300! Combined with its hidden attack, its actual attack power should be at least 1800! Be careful everyone!"

Readying the Frost Rain Sword, I dashed forward with the blade glowing bright. It was time for [Strength of a Thousand Men]!

"672 ! "

"599 ! "

"701 ! "

"821 ! "

"1727 ! "

The chain of hits did a great amount of damage; this Di Knife Soldier was already at less than half health! He howled in great pain as I broke off one of his arm with the combo and the other arm brandished a sword as it used [Heavy Chop] to try and take out my shoulder!

“481 ! ”

The damage it had dealt to me wasn't all that strong, though I retreated backwards just in case. A LV 6 combo took out the rest of his health. I didn't even give a chance for the Di Knife Soldier to show off its [Beheading Moon Arc]!

Yuzi Chengshuo spoke out after I killed the soldier, “Li Xiao Yao's strength really is abnormal. For a LV 57 elite monster to do only 481 points of damage with a skill, eh, the attack and defense of him truly marks him as an expert front line soldier. I'm afraid that Jian Feng Han and Q Sword's would not have much of an edge against Xiao Yao.”

Waving her dagger with a hint of pride, Wan Er smiled cheerfully, “Hehe, Chengshuo, I did tell you that my people wouldn't be too shabby right?”

Yuzi Chengshuo shook her head in disbelief, “Ah, the youth today. You're only in your first year of university, so it's far too early to be dating. Instead, you brag about him...”

Wan Er's face once more flushed red after hearing Chengshuo, “I'm... I'm not dating him...”

“Covering up your secret isn't helping....”

“.....”

.....

In front of us, Di Knife Soldiers quickly spawned as we eagerly took them out.

Dong Cheng carried her staff and suggested, “This isn't working well; let's divide into two teams so we can kill them more efficiently and move forward. It'll be faster. Otherwise, we'll never kill off all of the Di Knife Soldiers!”

“How are we going to split up?” Wolf questioned.

Dong Cheng Yue smirked, “Do whatever you wish as long as Xiao Yao and Wan Er are with me. We are great friends in real life, so we shouldn't

be separated...”

Wan Er and I both stayed silent.

Shrugging it off, Yuzi Chengshuo said, “Well then how about this, Cang Lei, Old K, Wolf, Fox and I will be in one group. The other group will be Xiao Yao, Wan Er, Cang Ye, Darling Duck and Matcha.”

Giving it some thought, I said, “Alright, that sounds reasonable.”

Laughing, Dong Cheng Yue said, “Could it be that I thought too much? To split the team up into groups like this, how evil! Our group has 1 male and four females, while your group has 1 female and 4 males. This is just too cruel...”

Snapping in a playful way, Yuzi Chengshuo said, “In that case, you come to our group, and we’ll give up Glass Fox.”

“No, no, the group arrangements are fine as it is. Let’s go kill before we get killed...”

.....

Following the right hand side of the map to move forward, I killed hundreds of Di Knife Soldiers. The experience I received was simply too rich! While I was the main attacker, Wan Er came in from behind to attack and Dong Cheng Yue used her magic spells from afar. In the blink of an eye, the Di Knife Soldier was killed. Darling Duck barely had a chance to cast [Heal] on any one of us and as a result of that, she would happily chatter away with Matcha while being an experience baby.

TL: Experience baby is a leecher. You let other people do the work and reap the benefits.

“Look over there, do you see something strange?” Matcha suddenly said, pointing ahead of us.

Sure enough, there was a small blue dot on the map, it wasn’t a monster, but rather, an old man. A group of Di Knife Soldiers rushed to attack him while he quietly lay on the ground.

“Let’s carve a way over there to save him!” I cried, holding my Frost Rain

Sword.

Wan Er nodded and began to kill monsters at a faster rate!

.....

After a few minutes, the Di Knife Soldiers that were surrounding the elderly man were wiped out. To our surprise, the old man was rooted to the ground with purple vines trapping his legs. It looked as if the vines came from the old man himself, and fused with the ground and the man.

He laid there motionless as words floated overhead–

[Refining Old Man]

Level: 70

Description: An old man trained in the arts of the forgery. He is a grandmaster for his generation in weaponcrafting.

Chapter 160: Di Emperor Li Xiong

“Old man?”

I got down on one knee and extended my hand to help him up. The old man shivered and slowly raised his head. A hint of color returned to his sunken face as he stared at me in surprise: “Youngster...you...why did you come to a place so full of evil?”

I pointed to the emblem on my shoulder, “I’m from Ba Huang City and here to complete a quest. Old man, why are you here?”

The refined old man started to tear up and replied in a trembling voice, “I was a blacksmith from Jiu Li City and came here in search of some rare ores. Who would have thought that when I slipped off the mountain, I would fall into this damnable place. I don’t even remember how many years I have been here. I thought I would starve to death but plants started to grow on my body. It supplied nutrients to me so I survived by being a monstrosity. I... instead of staying like this, I would rather die! Child, do you have a sharp sword? Could you do a good deed and please send me on my way?”

I clenched my fist and shook my head, “No. Wait for us to kill the monsters, then I will bring you with me so that you can see daylight once again. Old man, you stay here and wait for a bit.”

The old man widened his eyes, “No! Child, you can’t go deeper. I can feel something horrifying deeper inside. I can feel his edge...You must not go, otherwise you will never return.”

I shook my head, “Don’t worry. We came as a large group and we will certainly remove all the filth. Old man, all you have to do is wait here.”

The old blacksmith nodded then looked at me and said, “I can’t help you much. But your weapons and armor, I can repair them. Even with the passing of many years, my skills shouldn’t have left me.”

“Sure!”

My heartbeat quickened; since the entrance to the [Five Barbarians

Desolate Tomb] was sealed, we couldn't get out. Therefore there was no way to repair our damaged equipment which is why the old blacksmith was so useful.

“Shasha...”

A pair of snow-white legs stood on top of the plants as Lin Wan Er held her iron umbrella and walked over in a fashionable manner. She stared at the purple colored plants attached to the feet of the old blacksmith before lifting her head, blinking and asked, “Old man, does it hurt?”

The refined old man nodded his head, “It hurts but I'm used to it.”

“What could lessen your pain?” Looking at the old man, Lin Wan Er felt pain in her heart.

The refined old man quietly said, “The next level is the territory of the Di tribe. All of the Di tribe soldiers carried a [Antidote] when they were still alive. Originally it was to be a safeguard against the poisonous snakes in the grasslands. Can you guys help me find 100 antidotes? I could attempt to use the antidotes to remove the poisonous grass on top of my body. This way, I might be able to start a new life.”

Lin Wan Er nodded her head, “Yes, we will definitely bring you those potions!”

Ding We obtained a new quest; it was an A-rank quest: Kill the Di tribe soldiers to obtain 100 antidotes. Once you give the antidotes to the refined old man, you will receive a generous reward.

.....

We re-embarked on our journey. This time Lin Wan Er took the initiative and holding her dagger, she rushed forward. A random Di tribe soldier charged toward us and yelled, “You shameless intruders deserve to die!”

Lin Wan Er narrowed her pretty eyes, “Intruding upon my China mainland and still daring to tell us that we deserve to die!”

Lifting her dagger, she immediately activated [Gouge] and stunned the

enemy. Lin Wan Er quickly took advantage of the stunned enemy and moved behind the monster, paused to gather her strength before using [Bleed] + [Backstab] together!

“1478 ! ”

“1741 ! ”

The pair of daggers danced continuously, landing more than 4 hits. Each hit was close to 600 damage. The soldier roared as he turned towards Lin Wan Er and used his knife to sweep attack. However, the dagger in Lin Wan Er's left hand suddenly attacked the opponent's wrist and her graceful body stood up as she landed a blow on the monster's leg with her pretty little shoe. This resulted in a knockback effect. Right when the monster was knocked back, her pair of daggers followed relentlessly. She continuously landed attack after attack, plus a charged attack on its vital to finish it off!

“Pa cha.....”

Finishing off the Di tribe soldier, it dropped a small blue bottle. This was the quest item: [Antidote]. I extended my hand to pick it up. Then looking at Lin Wan Er, I said, “Wan Er, the fight was well done, beautiful.....”

Lin Wan Er laughed, “Thanks, that was my self-invented fighting style.....”

I answered, “Ah, very pleasant to watch, continue to work hard!”

“Hehee!”

From behind, Dong Cheng Yue had a helpless face, “You two pay attention to the situation. Me and Matcha are still watching, so quickly go kill monsters. You're not here on a date.....”

Lin Wan Er lowered her bright red face as she lifted her daggers and attacked another Di tribe soldier while I also charged towards another one. There was nothing these monster could do; our party was too strong, even killing 3-5 Di tribe soldiers at the same time wasn't problem.

“Rawr roar.....”

Lin Wan Er and Dong Cheng Yue had both summoned their Tigermen pets, which had really high defense. Their attack was not too bad but they're best used for leveling and taking hits.

“Clang!”

With a sweep of my sword, I knocked back a Di tribe soldier as I continued to retreat backwards. Two other Di tribe soldiers aggroed me as well. I turned and said in a low voice, “Matcha, where is your Illusionary Butterfly? Use [Vines of the Dancing Butterfly] to snare one.”

“Sure!”

Above Matcha's shoulder sat the Illusionary Butterfly Queen which was already a Lv 36 pet. Flapping its wings, its entire body emitted a green light as it danced. Within seconds, many vines started to sprout up, snaring one of the Di tribe soldiers. What a high success rate, a Lv 36 pet had snared a Lv 57 monster. Damn, nothing less from a Purple Tier pet!

“Oh, oh.....” Lin Wan Er opened her mouth and glanced at the Illusionary Butterfly. She said in a laughing manner, “Sister Matcha, this is no ordinary pet. It has a very sharp look.....”

AT: Lin Wan Er is 19 while Matcha is 23

TL: No idea why the author put that note in

Matcha lightly laughed, “Boss and I got this from incubating a pet egg dropped by a BOSS, it's a Purple Tier pet”

Lin Wan Er pursed her lips and whimpered “ I'm so jealous”

I was speechless, “Hey, it is not like you don't have a pet. Quickly help me finish off this soldier!”

“Okay.”

Lin Wan Er brushed my shoulder as she passed me and stunned a Di tribe soldier. It's a great feeling to be fighting along side a pretty girl that has great control and overall fighting skills.

.....

In under an hour, we killed all the nearby Di tribe soldiers. In my bag, there were already 99 antidotes.

“Sha sha sha.....”

Lifting her daggers from her sides, Lin Wan Er lightly jumped over and started to attack a Di tribe soldier with a combo. “Pa cha,” the dagger in her dominant hand cut through the opponent’s chest while the dagger in her left hand continuously attacked at lightning speed and landed two more hits. Angered, the Di tribe soldier charged towards her. At that moment, Lin Wan Er’s left leg kicked out. “Pow,” she landed a blow on the soldier’s calf and beautifully broke the opponent’s ability to advance. Gently lifting her body, she forced down her daggers. Followed by 3 more continuous hits, finally, charged up a [Bleed]!

“Pang!”

“1937 ! ”

An Assassin’s offensive ability was just too frightening. Wan Er was in a situation where she could simply ignore the defense of the monster and in a flurry of attacks, she finished off a Lv 57 Elite Monster that had full health!

“Pa cha”

The 100th antidote dropped to the ground as I extended my hand to pick it up. Looking at Lin Wan Er in surprise, I asked “Wan Er, were you training your own combo?”

Lin Wan Er nodded and said in an aggrieved tone, “Really annoying, almost half a month and I still can’t seem to get it. Speed, power and training should all be enough.....”

I smiled, “Yea, it is really flowing. However on the 4th move, your step could be a little faster. Pay attention to your body control. I feel like it is missing consistency. Otherwise, you could definitely create it”

Lin Wan Er nodded her head, “Hehee, I will try harder. I must create my

own combo. A player that doesn't have a personal combo is not complete

Dong Cheng Yue reluctantly said, "Feel some pity.....combos, why can't I get a magic based combo?"

I said, "You could also create a magic combo. Look at Fang Ge Que, he has one"

"I can't compare to a Grand Master class player"

""

.....

Turning around, we went to cash in the quest!

The old man was excited as he held the 100 antidotes. He poured the potions directly onto his pair of legs. Suddenly, the purple colored plants started to wither as multiple red lines appeared on his legs. He was no longer 'implanted' in the ground.

I drew my sword and helped him cut away the plants and then helped lift him to a dry stone to sit down and said, "Feeling any better?"

"Yea, just hungry" The old man had spirit but no energy.

Lin Wan Er immediately brought out a lamb leg and laughed, "This was roasted by me and Dong Cheng in Fan Shu City. It's been many days....."

I glanced over, "Wan Er, it is not fully cooked"

"No problem, the old man won't mind"

The old man really didn't mind and grabbed the lamb leg with one hand. He ate ravenously and chugged down water. In a few minutes, the entire lamb leg was finished off. This helped him recover his strength and he looked at us, "Young kids, if not for you guys, this old timer would have ended here. Thank you all, and here is your reward"

"Ding!"

System message: Congratulations, you have completed an A-rank quest [Antidote], reward 35000 experience points, 15 gold coins and your fame

in Fan Shu City has risen!

.....

“Swoosh!”

Under a pillar of golden light, I rose to Lv 54. I was once again a top-ranking expert!

After helping the old man settle himself, we continued deeper.

The map showed a concentrated amount of Di tribe soldiers for us to kill. Good thing that it was easy to kill them, but even then, our 2 teams took another 4 hours to complete it. Finally, we arrived at the final spot on the map. It was a triangular shaped throne room. Inside the throne room, there was a monster that was too far away for us to make out.

“Pang

My Purple Dawn Boots stepped onto the stone floor of the throne room as I lifted my head and looked forward. There were a couple of final monsters. One was an emperor sitting on the throne, and the other was a general serving him. The body that was sitting on the throne was burly and he held a battle axe while half his body was rotten with some chest hair poking out. Above his head, the name appeared–

[Di Emperor – Li Xiong] (Purple Tier BOSS)

Level: 57

Attack: 1550-1900

Defense: 1100

Health: 250000

Abilities: [Combo] [Flame Blade] [Wind Blade]

Description: Di Emperor Li Xiong. When the 5 barbarian tribes invaded the Chinese mainland, the Di tribe, led by Li Xiong, invaded first. He was self-crowned a king and was brutal and tyrannical. He allowed the troops under him to kill and pillage as they pleased. He trampled the dignity of the Han people under an iron horse heel, a cruel and brutal emperor.

After his death, he started guarding the spirit of the hero, Ran Min.

Chapter 161: Battle Emperor of Di

Looking at the Boss in the distance, I whispered to the group, “A Lv 57 Purple Tier Boss! Can we even kill him? He has 250,000 health!”

Yuzi Chengshuo asked, “How do we fight him?”

After thinking it over in my head for a few seconds, I came up with an answer, “Let’s go with the usual tactics. I’ll go and attract more than 90% of its aggro while you and Darling Duck will heal me whenever I’m hurt. Wan Er and Dong Cheng Yue will provide assistance in attacking. Matcha, you continue being an experience baby. Wolf and Old K, you guys act when possible but make sure to not get caught in AOE attacks.”

Wolf brandished his dagger readily, “Got it.”

Leaning on his battle-axe, Dong Cheng Lei asked, “Brother Xiao Yao, what about me?”

“Observe for now, but make sure to not die when you’re fighting the boss; raising your level back is really hard.”

“Okay!”

.....

Wan Er walked over and patted my shoulder, “Hey, don’t forget that there’s another Boss besides this one...”

“Damn, I almost forgot...”

With a flick of my wrist, Frost Rain Sword made an outline of a flower as I quickly entered the hall, saying: “Di Emperor Li Xiong has a general besides him, it’s a Lv 57 secondary Boss. I’ll attract the attention of the main Boss and try to drag him away from here. Dong Cheng Lei, Old K, you two aggro the secondary boss while Dong Cheng Yue and Wan Er help out with the DPS. Try to kill the boss within 3 minutes and then concentrate on the main boss.”

After hearing the strategy, Matcha, as the Godly Strategist of Zhan Long, nodded her head in approval.

“Buzz...”

Baby Bobo gently fluttered its wings in the wind as I rushed forward with my sword. The Frost Rain Sword flashed with the golden hexagrams of a Lv 6 [Combo] and started hammering away at the Di Emperor’s breastplate! Even though the boss’s defense stat was 1100, my attack power was far greater than that otherwise this battle would be next to impossible for us to win–

“452 ! ”

“513 ! ”

“447 ! ”

“472 ! ”

.....

The air below my feet surged outwards as [Strength of a Thousand Men] activated. The first three hits didn’t do much damage, but with a cyan colored light encircling me the fourth strike was a fatal hit!

“Bang!”

“1321 ! ”

The final [Wind Blade] struck for a dramatic finish!

“1348 ! ”

.....

After returning to solid ground, I immediately jumped back as a MISS showed up above my head after an iron knife from the secondary boss failed to hit me. Emperor Li Xiong, furious, snarled as he brought his battle-axe to chase me, “There’s no use regretting your actions now. Die!”

“Keng!”

“1237 ! ”

Even with a defense of over 1300, I was completely crushed; that [Flame Blade] was just too strong! Hastily gulping down a health potion and having a [Heal] cast on me, I jumped back into the fight to slash at the

Boss.

By my side Dong Cheng Lei roared with all his might, a [Flame Blade] was cast on his battle-axe as he attacked the secondary boss while Old K joined him in waving his battle-axe around. The two Berserkers quickly aggroed the secondary boss and had all of its attention!

“Army, hear my summons!”

At the secondary boss’ roar, the Di Knife Soldiers perked their heads while starting to batter Old K with their combos. It was a terrifying but astonishing sight to behold.

“734 ! ”

“801 ! ”

“779 ! ”

“813 ! ”

.....

Fortunately, Yuzi Chengshuo had cast [Heal] right in the middle of the barrage with a pale face. “My god, our Old K can’t take this much longer, what do we do?!”

Dong Cheng Lei roared as he stood in front of Old K, brandishing his battle-axe and used [Penetration]. However, as soon as he swung, he also took on the full brunt of the BOSS’s [Fire Blade], causing his health to plummet. Even though his equipment was great, a Berserker’s natural defensive capabilities were lacking quite a bit.

“Shua!”

A blood red light encircled the head of the secondary BOSS as the beautiful figure of Wan Er glided over. A hexagram twinkled as the Lv 55 Tigerman came stampeding out, “The two Berserkers watch out, let my little tiger do the work!” Wan Er cried.

Sure enough, the Tigerman snarled and quickly got into a messy fight with secondary boss. It had 4 points in endurance every level; meaning its defense was at least 1400 points. To my shame, it even beats my defense

but this meant that the secondary Boss would have a hard time fighting it!

Yuzi Chengshuo gave a small smirk, " I see, no wonder Wan Er had always said that a Tigerman's value was exceptionally high. It's because it's potential to be a tank... Its attack power is high enough to even keep the aggro centered!"

Chuckling loudly, Wan Er replied, "Dong Cheng, have your Tigerman also be a Tank. We'll go help Li Xiao Yao before Emperor Di has his head get beaten into that of a pig's..."

.....

A few dozen meters away, I slashed my sword out in anger at the Boss, "Why do you think that? Emperor Li Xiong won't be able to kill me, I'm having fun here!"

Before I finished, Di Emperor Li Xiong shouted loudly as he held his battle-axe parallel to the floor while he spun around like a cyclone. Wind began to warp around him as I realized it was the warning signs of one of his skills: [Whirlwind Slash]!

TL: Whirlwind Slash was called Wind Blade in chapter 160 but is now changed (for chapter 160 too)

"Hong!"

A strong gale started to blow as the edge of the axe began to spin like a spinning top at rapid speed. Emperor Li Xiong's attack engulfed me before I even knew it, [Whirlwind Slash] was a skill that would strike 5 times, and would leave the victim in a world of pain. One hit at a time, the numbers flew out over my head, and even I started to feel despair creeping up-

"874 ! "

"881 ! "

"907 ! "

"+1377 ! "

“885 ! ”

“+1000 ! ”

“904 ! ”

.....

During the 5 hits, Yuzi Chengshuo somehow managed to throw in a [Heal] just before my health ran out! Darling Duck may have been slower by a second but the second [Heal] was vastly appreciated. To be safe though, I tossed a Lv 6 health potion into my mouth and felt another 1000 health come rushing back to me.

The [Whirlwind Slash] had even swept up the bricks strewn all over the ground, what a savage skill. It had even left a deep mark on the ground where it had struck, it's ability to kill was too strong! Yuzi Chengshuo called out, “Xiao Yao Zi Zai! Even with 1311 points of defense, you took that much damage! If he uses that move on someone else here, then that means a guaranteed death! Not even a well timed [Heal] can prevent that!”

Wan Er nodded her head in agreement, “That's why we have to be careful!”

Right after she said that, Wan Er held her daggers out, using [Bleed] and [Gouge] to help bring down the health of the main boss even faster. Off in the distance, Dong Cheng Yue was also casting [Icicle] and [Pillar of Fire & Ice] to weaken the boss!

“Ho ho, Thou art merely mortals, and yet you dare invade the Five Barbarian territories?!”

As Emperor Li Xiong roared, he lifted his arms and axe once more a familiar gesture, he was about to cast [Whirlwind Slash] again!

“Weng!”

[Whirlwind Slash] was about to hit and Wan Er was only a few meters away from me! She would had been hit for sure by it so I scrambled to get in front of her, ” Wan Er, look out!”

Wan Er's eyes both widened in surprise, "I'll be fine, don't worry about me!"

[Whirlwind Slash] devastated the lands in front of us and for a period of time, I felt bursts of pain from the skill as some hits landed on me. Yuzi Chengshuo gave me one of her [Heal]s while the other one went to Wan Er!

Wan Er's eyes stared at the skill while her giant umbrella abruptly opened to take the attack and as a result began to shake uncontrollably. With a "Peng" Wan Er and her umbrella tumbled away while a number floated above Wan Er –

"1102!"

Slightly embarrassed, she said, "The umbrella has a high defensive capability but it wasn't able to withstand the entire force of an attack. Looks like tanking is still the job of fighting classes..."

Yuzi Chengshuo snapped, "Don't joke around like that Wan Er, I nearly had my heart stop after seeing that..."

Wan Er gave a sheepish laugh. "Ah, don't worry too much!"

.....

Not too far away, Matcha stood there quietly, "Boss, [Whirlwind Slash] can only be cast every 17.5 seconds. Cang Tong can resume attacking as usual and I'll notify you to retreat 3 seconds before [Whirlwind Slash] comes back."

Wan Er looked a bit surprised, "The people you recruit...they're not exactly your average players are they?"

I gave a big smile and nodded, "Of course, Zhan Long members are all talented!"

"....."

.....

"Bang!"

A gunshot rang as a bullet was clearly visible in the middle of Emperor Li Xiong's face. As he angrily slashed out with his axe at me, Wan Er laughed out loud, "I didn't think that we'd have a Musketeer with us..."

Fox's face looked helpless, "I didn't want to attract the boss' aggro or get the last hit..."

Dong Cheng chuckled, "Don't worry about that brother Fox. Seeing your damage, it'd be impossible to get a last hit..."

Fox's face went green, "Boss, why is it that the women by your side seem to love ridiculing us?"

I shrugged, "Get used to it..., Cang Lei, Old K, finish the secondary boss quickly!"

"Okay!"

After what had been a few minutes, the secondary boss howled in pain as it crashed to the ground. Dong Cheng Lei stood besides the dead body of the secondary boss and laughed, "Brother Xiao Yao, the General dropped a Gold Tiered Ring, +29 attack, +30 Agility, but with a level requirement of 49. Who wants it?"

"Give it to Wolf, Wan Er's Swift Dragon Ring is better than this one, no point giving her a subpar ring..."

Wan Er laughed, "Yea, I wouldn't want it, I'd only want a ring that's at least a Purple Tier~"

"Well then, I hope that our next few items will be Purple Tier, Emperor Li Xiong better not disappoint..." I commented.

"Dont jinx it..."

"Say that after you kill him!"

"Alright, alright."

.....

After 7 minute of hard battling, I had been hit by [Whirlwind Slash] countless times and it was only thanks to Yuzi Chengshuo and Darling

Duck's great healing capabilities that I had managed to stay alive. No one had thought a Lv 57 Purple Tier boss would be this tough.

"This boss is too tough, even tougher than the normal Purple Tiered bosses!" Yuzi Chengshuo said.

Wan Er chuckled lightheartedly, "The difficulty should correspond to the maps and missions. An SS ranked mission should have bosses that have quite a bit of hidden stats. By the way, this was only the first layer so the next four layers will definitely give us a harder time."

Old K was surprised, "Oh beautiful Cang Tong, how do you know this tomb has 5 layers?"

Blinking her eyes, Wan Er answered, "Well, the first layer has the boss Emperor Li Xiong of the Di tribe and protected by the Di Knife Soldiers, so this layer represents the Di Tribe's territory. It's only natural to assume that the next layer will be another of the Five Barbarian Tribes—Di, Qiang, Huns, Xianbei, and Jie..."

Old K shivered from her knowledge and whispering to me, he said, "Li Xiao Yao, this chick knows stuff. Ah, a woman that reads is said to have a heart of ink and won't be easy to pick up..."

My mouth twitched, "Don't say that..."

Wan Er stunned the main boss before saying, "Old K, Let's go back to the outskirts of Ba Huang City!"

"Why?"

"A battle to the death!"

"NOOO..."

.....

By the time the chatter had settled down, the blood of the BOSS had dropped to a low percentage. Although it had originally 250,000 health, it couldn't withstand our collective strength and merciless bombardments. Dong Cheng Yue's pretty face lit up with excitement, "Waah, do you think there will be a Purple Tiered item in here? Xiao

Yao's charm is high, so there has to be at least one! I want a Purple Tiered staff with 2000 magical attack!"

I was dumbfounded by her, "2000 magical attack? You're talking about a Lv 100 Emperor Tiered staff..."

Before I finished my sentence, I sent a [Wind Blade], and it crashed into the BOSS while a cyan colored light flashed from the sky, it was a fatal strike!

"2471 ! "

.....

"Ah, ow..."

Emperor Li Xiong of the Di Tribe suddenly fell down the ground onto his knees while his battle-axe dropped next to his body. His half-rotten face was full of horror as he realized his impending fate, "I...I don't want to die, I don't want to die...."

I stepped in front of him and pushed my Dawn Boots onto his corpse, "You were already dead from the start..."

Chapter 162: Whirlwind Slash

“Crash!”

When Li Xiong’s body toppled to the ground, a pile of treasure came flooding out. Rubbing my eyes at the sight, I had to admit that these drops were incredible. The floor was packed with gold coins, gems, cards, and most importantly, equipment. Even the group of people behind me were salivating at the drops.

“I’m drooling here. It’s like a huge pile of loot...” Wolf grinned widely.

Yuzi Chengshuo had nearly dropped her staff, “Yet another legend of Xiao Yao Zi Zai that proves to be true. Your charm is not a myth after all...”

Quietly holding her iron umbrella, Wan Er spoke up, “Let’s look at what was dropped before we make any final conclusions!”

Old K pumped his fist, “I see a Purple Tier battle-axe with over 1200 attack! Cang Lei and I will roll for this until the end of time itself, if need be!”

Cang Lei piped up, “Brother Xiao Yao, what does roll mean?”

I said, “.....”

.....

Wan Er took a look at me and said, “There are more of your people. Go ahead and divide up the BOSS’s drops.”

“Okay, thanks.”

I stepped forward onto the loot littered ground where the equipment sat. One by one, the names and stats of the equipment rose up for everyone to see–

[Barbarian King’s Wrist Guard] (Gold Tier Armor): +170 Defense, +34 Attack, +31 Strength, Level Requirement of 50.

[Yun Ming’s Chain] (Gold Tier Necklace): +37 Ability Power, +35 Endurance, +45 Heal points on healing spells, Level Requirement of 49.

[Cloud Surfing Boots] (Gold Tier Armor Boots): 180 Defense, +34 Strength, +32 Endurance, Raises 3% attack damage and 2.2% movement speed. Level Requirement of 50.

[Thunder Night Ring]: (Gold Tier Ring): +38 Ability Power, +34 Endurance, Raises magic damage by 3%. Level Requirement of 50.

.....

Repeatedly looking through the stash, I smacked my forehead: “There isn’t any Purple Tier equipment. Looks like my luck has a bit of a problem today...”

Lin Wan Er giggled as she said: “Hurry up and split the loot. We need to go to the next floor!”

“Sure.”

The Barbarian King’s Wrist Guard was rolled off without me participating. My Heaven’s Peak Wrist Guard was Purple Tier, which was a whole tier above the Barbarian Wrist Guards, so I didn’t have any reason for taking it.

TL: Refresher on roll – You basically flip a virtual dice from 1-100 and the one with the highest takes the equipment

In the end, Old K beat Dong Cheng Lei in the roll and got the high level wrist guard. Unfortunately, his level was too low, and he couldn’t equip it right now.

Yun Ming’s Chain was given to Darling Duck because Yuzi Chengshuo said that she already had a better necklace. The Thunder Night Ring was without a doubt given to Dong Cheng Yue. As for the best equipment within the four drops, the Cloud Surfing Boots, they were rolled away by Dong Cheng Lei; his luck was pretty good.

.....

Taking account of the other drops, there were a total of 2 Soul Gems and quite a few Pardon Cards which were rolled away by Lin Wan Er and Song Han. Finally, there was a crimson red skill book!

“Skill book?!” Yuzi Chengshuo asked.

I nodded.

She smiled, “<Destiny> rarely drops a skill book, looks like it’s a decent skill, a crimson red book. I wonder what rank this skill is?”

I reached over for the book, “Here!”

“Shua!”

A blood red light started to emanate from the book and spread through the air as words began to interweave with each other, forming a coherent description–

[Whirlwind Blades] (S Ranked): Having blades gather the strength of the wind, one can start to spin in a spiral to create a whirlwind that attacks everyone 20 meters within one. This skill can attack up to 5 times and its attack power is affected by the user’s attack power and this skill’s level. There is a Lv 45 requisite to learn this move and can only be learned by Berserkers.

.....

I gave a grim grin, it was unfortunate that this [Whirlwind Blade], although a super strong DPS and crowd control skill, it didn’t have any relation with me! Hell, the first skill book with a physical AOE attack that I find is one I can’t use! Fortunately, there were 2 Berserkers in Zhan Long, so it’ll strengthen us either way!

Holding the [Whirlwind Blade] skill book, I looked at Dong Cheng Lei and Old K, “You two Berserkers, roll for it. Whoever wins gets to own this S-ranked skill, this...this skill book is priceless since there’s not another one like it!”

Old K clenched his fist, “Ah Lei, You should let me win...”

Dong Cheng Lei nodded his head, “Oh, I’ll be the winner!”

At the next moment, the two Berserkers rolled!

“4 ! ”

“2 ! ”

.....

Wan Er and I laughed, “What pitiful numbers...however, Old K got the higher number, so he wins; this skill book now belongs to Old K...”

“Shua!”

The skill book disappeared into Old K’s palms. With excitement, he looked at the skill, and immediately cried out the skill name. A crimson red wind began to encircle Old K as he raised his battle-axe up, and with a “hua!”, he lashed out. A strong gale blew all around us as the high-speed rotational skill was cast. Even though the skill was still fairly new, it was quite capable of causing a world of pain!

“What a cool skill...” Wan Er commented, her fingers running along her lips; I could feel her jealousy.

I nodded, “That’s right-it spins, just like a little dreidel!”

Wan Er only stared at me with disbelief.

Yuzi Chengshuo chuckled, “That’s enough, don’t get cocky. Let’s hurry up and get to the second floor; we’ve already spent 4 hours on the first floor alone; who knows how long we’ll take to clear the second floor? Let’s speed up the pace everyone!”

.....

I carried my Frost Rain Sword forward while the map already indicated that the entrance to the second floor was behind the throne of Emperor Li Xiong. A series of stone steps led to the lower levels, which would be filled with the deep unknowns.

“Rustle...”

The stone steps were covered with stone fragments and my Frost Rain Sword was the only source of light in the dark stairway. In time, we stepped off of the last step and into another cavern with precious stones embedded into the walls and ceiling once more, casting us in a gem like sparkle.

“Damn, there’s a lot here...”

Wan Er followed me down, though she watched from afar with a wide pair of eyes that held a trace of excitement.

Dong Cheng Yue and Wolf stood stunned on the last step as they gazed upon the countless monsters everywhere. Ancient soldiers dressed in scaled armor had long tangled beards still attached to their rotting faces and their guttural voices was howling and growling as they carried around their corroded spears. They didn’t look so tough but they were definitely stronger than what they looked like-

[Late Qin Spear Soldier] (Elite Monster)

Level: 58

Attack: 1040 – 1350

Defense: 870

Health: 7200

Skill: [Heavy Strike] [Ice Lock] [Fierce Ice Blade]

Description: Later Qin Spear Soldiers are soldiers from the late Qin kingdom. These warriors that came from beyond the great wall are extremely deadly and wild to the point that they see killing people as a sport. When Ran Min died in battle, these soldiers became one of the prisoners of his tomb.

.....

“We’re finally fighting the Qiang soldiers” I laughed.

Old K was confused, “Aren’t these the Late Qin spear soldiers? How is the Qiang tribe involved here?”

Turning to explain, I said, “That’s because after the invasion of the Five barbarian Tribes, 16 kingdoms were established. Late Qin was one of the kingdoms and was founded by one of the Qiang tribe leader. That’s why the Late Qin soldiers here are considered a part of the Qiang.

AU: The story isn’t a mocking of either the Qin or the Qiang and I, the

author, remain neutral on this stance

TL: Qiang Tribe:

http://en.wikipedia.org/wiki/Qiang_%28historical_people%29

Late Qin: http://en.wikipedia.org/wiki/Later_Qin

Wolf asked, "Then how do we kill them?"

Wan Er smiled, "We don't have to worry about attracting the attention of too many monsters; leave that to Dong Cheng Yue. She'll attract a crowd towards us and we'll kill the ones that come. Don't take a step closer to them or else we'll attract the attention of too many Lv 58 Elite Monsters. Since this is an SS ranked class, the Elite Monsters here will for sure be unusually strong so we have to systematically wipe them all out one step at a time."

Yuzi Chengshuo nodded in understanding, "Ah, I get it, Cang Yue will be the core of the team and attract monsters while the rest will kill them. Getting too close will alert the Elite Monsters and that will spell out our doom."

"I understand as well, let's begin then!" My Frost Rain Sword was already thirsting for action.

.....

Dong Cheng Yue stood on top of the stone steps, her staff raised high in the air and blasted a far away Late Qin Spear Soldier with an [Chilling Wind]!

"Ho ho..."

The Late Qin Spear Soldier came rushing over, groaning out anger and pain. I then immediately stepped into it's path and executed a [Combo] a good distance away from the other soldiers, "Keng Keng Keng!" The soldiers shrieked miserably as it's body was hacked away at a rapid speed. Quickly recovering, he swung his spear as frost began to gather at the tip of the spear, he was using the same skill as me – [Fierce Ice Blade]!

"795 ! "

Sure enough, the attack was powerful!

My sword slid to knock away the spear and I countered with my own
[Fierce Ice Blade]

Wan Er came flying in from above, “Let me help...”

Before she finished, the Late Qin Spear Soldier approached Wan Er and immediately slashed out with his pike. “Pa!” Ice chains came slipping through the ground and twisted itself around Wan Er’s legs for the next 7 seconds. It was [Ice Lock] which was quite a convenient skill and although it didn’t do any damage, it was great for trapping people for a good amount of time.

The beautiful Miss opened her eyes in mild annoyance, “How did this happen? I wasn’t even close enough to aggro it, so why was I targeted?”

Dong Cheng Yue explained, “The skill may be one of those automatically triggered skills and because Xiao Yao was the main attacker, you moving around him too much would mistake you for a secondary attacker and the skill would be activated then.”

“So it’s like that...”

“I’ll attract the second one, third one?”

“Go ahead...”

.....

Dong Cheng Lei and Old K each took one and didn’t have much pressure when they had healers behind them. Matcha carried her sword and carefully approached the battling monsters, making them mistake her for a secondary attacker. Doing her best to avoid the [Ice Lock]s aimed at her, I could see her strategy – with the monsters focused on using [Ice Lock]s, Wan Er and Wolf would have more opportunities to strike and she herself wouldn’t be a dead weight.

After half an hour of killing, we finally cleared a small spot to rest. The second floor wasn’t much different from the first floor but the monsters were more densely packed and seemed impossible to wipe them all out.

.....

At about 3 AM, everyone was extremely tired from fighting, to the point where we had to go back to the blacksmith old man to repair our equipment for free and then go down again. We were going to finish this second floor by tonight, before we went offline. Of course, the most excited person was Matcha who got to Lv 42 from the two floors and would probably get to Lv 47 after we finished this quest. For Wolf and others, they would be able to get to Lv 50 at the end of the quest. From this quest, the average level of the Zhan Long players shot up to catch up to the players that had got the first batch of helmets!

“Kacha!”

Chopping off a Late Qin Spear Soldier’s head, I quickly moved forward to find a huge palace floor. At the end was a king with a huge beard. He held a huge crescent moon curved blade while his blood red eyes stared at us, as if challenging us!

.....

“Level 58 Purple Tier boss...” Yuzi Chengshuo’s voice wavered: “Looks like we’re only doing Purple Tier bosses today...”

Chapter 163: Countering the Sky Bear Slash

Holding my sword, I inched forward bit by bit and finally received the BOSS's information to share in the party chat –

[Qiang Emperor – Yao Xing] (Purple Tier boss)

Level: 58

Attack: 1570-1950

Defense: 1120

Health: 280000

Abilities: [Penetration] [Flame Blade] [Sky Bear Slash]

Description: Qiang Emperor Yao Xing. When the 5 barbarian tribes invaded mainland China, the Qiang Emperor destroyed Hou Liang. The emperor was a brutal tyrant who allowed the soldiers serving him to kill and pillage. He could be characterized as very militaristic by nature, and his continuous warring caused suffering among many people. Since his death, he stands guard over the soul of the hero Ran Min.

.....

Dong Cheng Yue looked at the far away BOSS and said, “This time there is no secondary boss in this BOSS fight. It should be a little simpler.”

I shook my head, “Maybe, but this BOSS has a new ability – [Sky Bear Slash]. We must be careful since the strength of this ability is unknown. This Lv 58 Purple Tier BOSS is probably the toughest one that I have encountered so far, so let's be careful and not die. Same tactics as before-I will attack first, everyone else stay back. We will discuss the strategy after I find out the boss' fight style. Both Healers, remember to heal me well.”

Yuzi Chengshuo and Darling Duck both nodded their heads, “Don't worry!”

Lifting the Frost Rain Sword, I attacked swiftly together with Baby Bobo. Naturally, Lin Wan Er and Dong Cheng Yue both summoned their Tigermen and had them follow behind me. The two high defense pets could act as off tanks and help me out when I get into a dangerous spot.

Shouts!

I wasn't even 20 meters away when the Qiang Emperor stood up. He lifted a golden colored scimitar that was next to him and yelled out, "My Hou Qin endeavors are not something you small fries could topple. Come and have a taste of my scimitar. I will let you understand that there is always someone above you and there is always a higher limit."

.....

"Hon!"

The raging flames that rushed out as the boss came forward was unlike the previous bosses I encountered; I hadn't even began my attack when he started attacking. The scimitar was surrounded by raging flames, this was the skill [Flame Blade]! The boss' movement was too fast and I couldn't avoid it, so I could only take a step back and bend slightly as I used my shoulder to take the brunt of the attack!

"1542 ! "

The [Flame Blade]'s attack was really overwhelming! Without waiting for the boss' second attack, I launched [Fierce Ice Blade]!

"Pu!"

"1428 ! "

Quickly after, air began surging through me. I used a self [Heal] + [Strength of a Thousand Man] at the same time, recovering my health and getting ready to attack!

With the continuous fighting, my combat log stated that more than 85% of aggro from the boss was on me. Yuzi Chengshuo also saw the message and she said instantly, "Darling, we can start to heal!"

TL: Combat log = how much dmg he does etc – Matcha uses it to

calculate stuff

“Swoosh Swoosh!”

Two [Heal]s later and my health was once again full.

The boss was excited from the fighting, and with his scimitar dancing, he yelled out, “Arghhh, watch me cut you like a hot knife through butter!”

[Penetration]!

“1109 ! ”

Thankfully, this skill was weaker than [Flame Blade].

Retreating a few steps from the boss’ reach, I immediately jumped back and used [Combo]. As golden hexagons flashed on my sword, 4 hits went straight into the forehead of the Qiang Emperor, angering him.

“Arrgghh!”

Suddenly, letting out a roar, the Qiang Emperor became enraged as he suddenly dropped down on all fours. Still roaring, black fur started sprouting from head to toe as he unexpectedly transformed into a warbear. The scimitar in his hand had become even brighter and sharp to a terrifying degree. Crawling and roaring, he charged over. Fully alert, I quickly shouted, “Heal me properly!”

After saying that, I used a health potion to recover myself to full health as my Purple Dawn Boots mapped out a path of retreat. However, I was not fast enough and watched in horror as the transformed bear form of the Qiang Emperor rushed to kill me!

“Roar!”

A vigorous chop led by a blood red blade appeared from above and followed the boss’ attack, bombarding my back. It was heavy enough to make someone die from the pain–

“1672 ! ”

Darling Duck hastily cast [Heal], stubbornly bringing my health back up. Yet this didn’t even matter. The BOSS pursued me relentlessly and his

attack interval had not even reached one second when, with a low shout, he unleashed another [Sky Bear Slash]!

“1794 ! ”

.....

My heart almost stopped cold. Hastily casting [Heal] on myself, I simultaneously turned my sword and used [Wind Blade] to slash the BOSS's shoulder in the hopes of breaking his attack momentum. However, I was met with disappointment, as the Qiang Emperor who had died long ago beckoned like Yama, the King of Hell, and continued on to his third strike!

“1983 ! ”

Each successive attack was stronger than its precursor. It was horrifying!

“+1368 ! ”

“+511 ! ”

Yuzi Chengshuo quickly used both [Heal] and [Hemostasis] to just barely bringing my health back up to a bit over 2000 points.

Here it comes again, the 4th [Sky Bear Slash]

My face was already purple. Isn't the [Sky Bear Slash] skill really unfair – Four continuous hits with each successive hit being more powerful than the previous hit?!

“Peng!”

“1942 ! ”

I was damaged once more and my health nearly disappeared!

Qiang Emperor snarled, the top of his head still exuding a light signalling the continuation of [Sky Bear Slash]. Damn! How was this skill still not over yet?! The Healers' skills were all still cooling down – what to do?!

“I'll get ready to revive Li Xiao Yao! Duck, prepare to recover half his

health!” Yuzi Chengshuo immediately shouted out, thanks to her abundant battle experience, she knew what to do.

Darling Duck quickly nodded. With eyes full of concern she exclaimed, “Boss, don’t die!”

.....

“Shasha.....”

Lin Wan Er raised her hand to bring out her iron umbrella, saying in a low voice, “It’s over, Li Xiao Yao, he can’t block it!”

Dong Cheng Yue hastily remarked, “Wan Er, what are you going over there for! Even Li Xiao Yao can’t even block it, how can you block it?!”

Even so, Lin Wan Er utilized the Assassin’s class [Haste] skill and speedily flew over. Passing me, she gently bumped my shoulder, “Get out of the way first!”

“Pa!”

Although she used little strength, the point of contact was extremely precise. Directly hitting a vulnerable pressure point, she made me tumble out the way about 7 or 8 meters. Holding the umbrella by the handle with her left hand, she abruptly supported the ribs of the umbrella with her right hand, going into defensive mode with the Moon Elf’s unique iron umbrella.

“Peng!”

Crismon light shined everywhere. Under the strike, Lin Wan Er was blown away by the 5th [Sky Bear Slash]. She fell like a kite that had its line snap and over her head appeared a damage number – 1773!

No matter how good her equipment is, her health bar was almost gone.

.....

“Shua shua shua.....”

Getting 3 continuous [Heal]s, my health was almost back to full. In addition, a reassuring thing was that the [Sky Bear Slash] could only be

used 5 times in a row. In addition, after doing the 5 strikes, the boss will briefly enter a weaken state that will persist for 10 seconds and defense will be reduced by half. Which is time for us to attack!

“Wan Er, thank you.....” I said in the party chat.

Lin Wan Er slowly stood up from the ground as she pouted while rubbing her shoulders, “It hurts

Dong Cheng Yue lightly laughed, “Congratulations player Cong Tang, the intimacy with player Xiao Yao increased by 1. An increase of 1% to capturing his heart!”

Suddenly, Lin Wan Er’s beautiful face was dyed red, “Dong Cheng you damn brat, if you talk again, I’m gonna bite you.....”

Dong Cheng Yue, “Come on, bite me, if dare to bite me, I will call ** for you

TL: ** is in the raws

Wan Er: “.....”

Me: “.....”

Everybody: “.....”

.....

Only Yuzi Chengshuo remained calm. Raising the corners of her mouth, she laughed while saying, “Although I envy this unspeakable relationship between you two, could we kill the BOSS first and then speak of this ** matter?”

TL: Once again ** is in raws

Lin Wan Er grabbed her iron umbrella from the ground and stood up, stuck out her tongue and laughed, saying, “It was all Dong Cheng, that brat, wu.....”

Yuzi Chengshuo said, “Xiao Yao, if the boss executes [Sky Bear Slash] again, how will you handle it? Our Healing skills cannot cover it. Furthermore, the boss’ movement speed is too swift for you dodge.”

My heart jolted, I said, “Matcha, when the boss uses [Sky Bear Slash], try using the Illusionary Butterfly Queen’s [Vines of the Dancing Butterfly] to bind him to see whether or not he can break it. Wan Er, Yue Er, you guys use your Tigerman to block him to restrict his movement speed so that his successive hits cannot hit me. This way, there might be a chance.”

The three girls all nodded, “Okay, sure!”

.....

Not even 30 seconds in, sure enough, [Sky Bear Slash] came again. Qiang Emperor Yao Xing transformed into a bear. While wielding his scimitar, he charged toward us and loudly yelled, “Mainlanders, my Hou Qin soldiers will use your blood as paint. The world will be in chaos and my Hou Qin subjects will be your rulers!”

The Frost Rain Sword trembled and bending my body, I swung the blade. With a “Peng!”, it landed on the face of the boss, leaving a scar. Lowering my shoulder, I suffered the first attack while Darling Duck healed me. With the second attack, Yuzi Chengshuo healed me.

The third attack!

“Shua!”

Green vine after green vine shot out from the ground and immediately snared both legs of the boss. I was dumbstruck and stared blankly; the Illusionary Butterfly Queen is so overpowered, to have successfully snared a boss with such a huge level gap!

.....

After getting disrupted by the pet, the last 3 attacks were nullified. Quickly, I let out a breath of relief. The attacks were too brutal, a critical blow in any one of the attacks could kill me. Luckily, the boss’ critical strike chance is not that high; if it’s critical strike chance was as high as some Assassins, I would be dead many times over.

This second boss encounter was progressing pretty smoothly after that little hitch; once we found out the trick, it felt easy to fight against the boss. I could even use [Reflect] to negate one of the boss’ attacks. Dong

Cheng Yue, Lin Wan Er, Fox and the rest's DPS was not too bad either. Within 10 minutes, the Lv 58 Purple Tier boss' health dropped to near zero.

“Peng!”

Sparks flew everywhere as the boss' cheek was punctured. Who would have thought, Fox, with the lowest dps, landed the killing blow, using one [Aimed Shot] to finish off the boss.

“Hou hou....”

Qiang Emperor held his golden scimitar as forced to kneel on the ground. Raising his arm and in an stubborn tone, he yelled, “A real ruler will never submit.....”

Walking forward, I decapitated him while kicking over his corpse; “No one cares if you don't submit!”

.....

“Hualala.....”

Once the boss died, equipment started to drop while gold coins were scattered all over the floor. Song Han clenched his hands and muttered: “I have a bad feeling. Fox's charm is only at 2 points and so I'm guessing that there might not even be Gold Tier or above equipment...”

I was quite scared: “Hopefully that's not the case...”

Walking forward, I picked out the loot which only composed of two equipment. One was a dagger with a green hue while the other was an chest armor with a red hue. Picking up the dagger, my face also became green –

[Barbarian Blade] (Green Tier weapon)

Attack: 320-440

Strength: +25

Level Requirement: 54

.....

Lin Wan Er raised the corners of her mouth to make a dimpled smile, “My equipment.....”

I directly threw it to her, “Here, there’s no need to roll.....”

Wolf laughed uproariously.

Lin Wan Er remained expressionless.

Continuing to look at the other piece of equipment, my vision landed on its attributes and the laughing immediately stopped; everybody’s expressions froze. What is god-tier armor? This was it!

Chapter 164: Thunderbolt Finger

【Nebula Armor】 (Purple Tier Armor)

Category: Armor

Defense: 320

Strength: +40

Endurance: +37

Extra: Increases magic resistance by 21%

Extra: Nebula Rain-Summons the power of the stars to reduce the defense of surrounding hostile targets within 5 meters by 7%

Level Requirement: 54

“Nice...” Said Old K, carrying his battle-axe as he peered at the armor, “This is really a OP armor, with its good defense and the additional effect of reducing the defense of the surrounding enemies...”

Little Wolf nodded, “Yup, the attack and defense attributes are both extremely high.”

Yuzi Chengshuo joked, “The three heavy armors are going to roll for it?”

Old K waved his hand. “No, we are just Lv 40+ compared to the Lv 54 requirement. Give it to boss Xiao Yan since he is able to use it now. It will give us a higher chance of victory against the new bosses to come; giving it to me or Ah Lei will have us leaving it in the warehouse for two weeks.”

Dong Cheng Lei raised his battle-axe with a laugh and said, “Boss did most of the damage on that BOSS, so of course the equipment must go to our boss. We hardly did anything.”

TL: BOSS = monster boss, boss = Xiao Yao for this paragraph only

Then, the both of them simultaneously canceled the ROLL screen.

I smiled helplessly while holding the Nebula Armor, “Okay, I will take it and try to compensate you!”

Old K said, “We are all brothers here. Why are you saying such things?”

.....

I did not say anything as I equipped the Nebula Armor, replacing the Lv 35 Dawn Breastplate Miss Lin Wan Er had given me and was quite a memorable piece of equipment. After wearing the Nebula Armor, I immediately felt a surge in my strength and defense. The defense of a Purple Tier equipment was far above that of a Gold Tier equipment.

【Xiao Yao Zi Zai】(Tomb Guardian of Dragon City)

Level: 54

Attack: 1472-1919

Defense: 1471

Health: 2845

Mana: 930

Charm: 34

.....

Yuzi Chengshuo turned to me and asked, “Xiao Yao Zi Zai, what’s your defense now?”

“1471, why?”

“That’s quite strong! The strongest Monks only have a defense of 1700+ with a shield and you, a Swordsman that puts all of his stat points into strength, already has a defense of 1471 thanks to some frightening equipment.”

Lin Wan Er put away her dagger with a smile. “If his defense was not strong enough, then we would not have invited him to this SS level quest.”

Yuzi Chengshuo chuckled, “Sure, sure. Let’s continue to the third floor.”

“Let’s go!”

After handing out the rest of the gems, cards, coins, and other items, we continued on our journey to the [Five Barbarians Desolate Tomb – Floor 3]. Once again, we didn’t know what awaited us.

.....

“Sha-sha...”

My Purple Dawn Boots glided across the sand and our group followed me down the crumbling stone steps onto the third floor. The ceiling over our head shone with gem stuck in them, lighting up the whole map's floor. I walked in front and took a closer look at the area ahead of us – The third floor seemed tidier but not far away from us, I could see undead Archers holding longbows that were carved from animal bones.

“Sss-sss.....”

With indistinguishable rotting faces, the long-dead Archers made muffled roars with breaths that reeked of decomposed flesh. They wore light leather armor that was covered with maggots while their bows were a deathly white. Those were bows made from the bones of wild animals, so their attack would certainly be powerful.

Lin Wan Er frowned, “Oh, this floor's monsters are disgusting... Can I not fight on this floor?”

I laughed, “If we fight, the maggots would get sent flying.....”

“Don't say that...”

Dong Cheng Yue gently landed on the ground with a smile and shrugged, “It's no problem for a Mage. I just need to cast the long-range [Pillar of Ice and Fire]s and we'll be good. Xiao Yao will tank, right?”

I nodded, “Let's take a look at the monster's stats first.”

“Okay.”

.....

Slowly approaching, I read one of the Archer's properties and shared it in the group chat—

【Jie Tribe Archer】(Elite Monster)

Level: 59

Attack: 1010-1270

Defense: 750

Health: 6200

Skills: 【Rocket Arrow】【Triple Shot】【Scatter Shot】

Description: An Archer from the Jie tribe. These warriors are from beyond the Great Wall and have a strong desire for battle, slaughtering for pleasure. Ever since Ran Min died, they became one of the guardians of his tomb.

.....

“Die!”

I hefted my Frost Rain Sword and charged over but something unexpected happened. When I was about five yards away, the Archer immediately slid away and retreated several steps before drawing his long bow to fire a [Triple Shot]!

“Papapa!”

312!

337!

322!

.....

With my body still trembling from the pain, I rapidly drew near the Archer and brandished my sword for a [Combo]! After a series of continuous hits, the Archer continued to retreat. “Pipipapa!” quite a few arrows caught my arm and my chest went cold, a [Scatter Shot] pierced my body thereby stunning me. Dammit, I attracted the aggro of three other Jie tribe archers.

“Shua!”

“+1378 ! ”

Yuzi Chengshuo’s [Heal] replenished a significant amount of my health.

Wan Er’s beautiful eyes grew large. She said, “Li Xiao Yao, come back.

These monsters will instinctively evade close combat so you'll be lured deeper into enemy territory. Hurry up and return. Dong Cheng, use your spells to kill them!"

As I swiftly retreated, I received another of Darling Duck's [Heal] as four of the Archers chased after me.

Dong Cheng Yue raised her hands to cast [Pillar of Fire and Ice] and [Icicle] to dispatch an Archer who only had half his health left. Lin Wan Er flew off and swept past me with her dagger, killing another Archer with a [Gouge] that stunned the Archer and [Bleed] on top of [Backstab]. It was basically an instant KO. Her attack power was extremely high; that was obvious to everyone.

"Peng peng!"

Fox fired two shots, which were also decent, doing 1000+ damage in one go. Brandishing his dagger, Wolf teamed up with Old K's [Whirlwind Slash] to kill yet another Archer in the blink of an eye.

Finally, I ended the fight by disposing the final Archer with my [Combo].

.....

Picking up the silver coins, I said, "Long-range monsters are difficult for the close combat classes to fight by themselves, so for now, we will have Dong Cheng aggro them one by one. Wan Er, Wolf, and I will intercept them midway and kill them to save time."

Dong Cheng Yue nodded. Aggroing monsters one by one, our killing efficiency continued to increase as we got more and more used to the process. Furthermore, my defense was really high so I could actually stay alive while going against three to five Archers at a time. The two Healers were quite happy too; never before had they seen a player that could attract this much aggro and still bear the damage.

Killing the Archers was far more difficult than clearing the Late Qin Spearmen. By the time we finished clearing the third floor, the sky had already brightened in the real world. We had persisted for six long hours

and at 9 in the morning, we finally cleared the monsters of the third floor. Our group of people stood with weary faces in front of a great hall where the third floor's emperor sat. The emperor this time was an old man with a scepter in his hand and was dressed in a blue gown. He somberly stared at us without a word.

“This time it is a magic type boss”

Dong Cheng Yue raised a hand, revealing the boss information to the whole party–

【Jie Emperor – Shi Le】 (Purple Tier BOSS)

Level: 59

Magic Attack: 1450-1900

Defense: 770

Health: 240,000

Skills: **【Lightning Blast】** **【Thunderbolt Finger】** **【Barbaric Thunder】**

Description: Jie Emperor Shi Le. When the five barbarian tribes invaded the mainland China, Shi Le established the late Zhao regime. He is also the only person among the emperors that used to be a slave. Strong, powerful and an expert in magic, up until his death and even after, he guards Hero Ran Min's spirit.

.....

“It's a Mage, so it's not going to be too difficult to deal with him.” Lin Wan Er swept a glance over me and laughed evilly, saying, “If I remember correctly, Li Xiao Yao – your equipment's added magic resistance is at least 40% or higher, right?”

I nodded, “Yes, it's 47%. But I don't know if it will be enough.”

Yuzi Chengshuo said, “It should be enough. This 47% resistance enhancement should be sufficient for you to be immune to about 20% of magic damage. Taking into account your 2800+ health, it should be quite hard for the Boss to KO you instantly before we get some heals in.”

“Okay, then I’ll get ready to tank the boss. The two of you, heal me properly!”

“Got it!”

Staying online for so long had made everybody dead tired, so I had to defeat this BOSS as fast as possible. I hefted my Frost Rain Sword and dashed over while Shi Le suddenly stood up, his eyebrows were raised while he said, “What scoundrel has had the audacity to enter my domain?!”

After saying that, he raised his scepter high into the air, “Pa!”; a thunderbolt abruptly flashed. It was one of the boss’ skills, [Lightning Blast]!

774!

Trembling from head to toe, I continued to press onward. I let loose [Fierce Ice Blade] onto the Lv 59 Purple Tier BOSS, bringing forth more than 1400 points worth of damage and then felt a surge of air from my feet as I quickly followed up with [Strength of a Thousand Men], dealing close to 3000 points of damage. The boss’ health bar visibly went down a chunk.

“Boy, you really have guts!”

Shi Le looked at me with disdain. The ancient emperor still possessed the aura of a king and he brandished his scepter as the ground shook as lightning emerged from beneath my feet—this time it was [Barbaric Thunder]!

“Hong!”

1482!

.....

Far away, Matcha quickly started calculating, “The attack range is 5×5 meters, so don’t get too close Boss or else you’ll get caught up in it!”

Old K nodded and said while hefting his battle axe, “Right now [Barbaric Thunder] is on cooldown, so we’ll attack for 10 seconds and

then see what happens after that!”

After saying that, Old K, Dong Cheng Lei, Fox, and Lin Wan Er charged forward together, striving to dispatch the boss as quickly as possible.

.....

Red lights flashed everywhere, and the unlucky Shi Le’s health bar suddenly depleted rapidly. Although he was quite irritated, he persisted on casting [Lightning Blast] at me. It was a pity that there were two Healers behind me constantly replenishing my health and the boost from my magic resistance got in his way. There was no way he could kill me.

However, 14 seconds later, Shi Le flew into a rage. He suddenly opened his left hand as bolts of electricity flashed between his fingers. Growing cautious, I quickly yelled, “Wolf, Wan Er, you guys hurry up and retreat!”

“Huh?”

Lin Wan Er looked up and reacted the fastest. She promptly opened her large umbrella, thereby shielding Wolf who was behind her!

.....

“Pa!”

A strand of lightning bolted out, immediately numbing me before becoming refracted and directly bounced onto Old K. Reflecting once more, it hit Dong Cheng Lei and dissipated with a “Pa” sound at Lin Wan Er’s iron umbrella. A continuous list of damage numbers popped up—

1874!

2214!

2137!

1074!

.....

Kneeling onto the floor, Old K let out a miserable groan and was instantly killed. Dong Cheng Lei’s equipment was slightly better, so he still had a tiny bit of health left.

“Ughh...”

Yuzi Chengshuo hastily healed the group while knitting her pretty eyebrows, “This [Thunderbolt Finger] skill’s power is too strong... ..”

Chapter 165: True Soul Spear

Kaa Chaa!

As I heavily slashed the boss' head, I yelled out, "Everyone back off! I'll deal with him alone! His [Thunderbolt Finger] is a lightning attack that can bounce! The single target damage on it is too high! Old K, where's your soul? Can you revive?"

In the party chat, Old K replied, "Yup, my soul is back at the first floor of the Five Barbarians Desolate Tomb. I can revive if I just run here!"

"Ok! We'll keep fighting!"

.....

I was more cautious this time and the others wouldn't even dare to come up and help so I held the boss back by myself. Fox and Dong Cheng Yue were designated as the long range damage dealers.

After 6 minutes, Jie Emperor Shi Le's health was no more than 3%. His 3 main skills: [Barbaric Thunder], [Thunderbolt Finger], and [Lightning Blast] landed on my shoulders and cloak, creating faint traces of smoke. Despite this, he could not kill me. As long as I didn't die, we had this boss in the bag.

Matcha pursed her lips "Just a few more minutes and Boss (Xiao Yao) will be roasted to perfection..."

Wan Er leaned on the rock wall and smiled "Good thing the boss is about to die. Dong Cheng, stop your attacks in a bit and let Li Xiao Yao get the killing blow the boss. He's suffered quite a bit...Such is the life of a main tank. We've already fought 3 bosses and he's almost been beaten into a pig head. Let him taste some sweet victory by killing the boss. Plus he has pretty high charm, so letting him kill the boss will raise the drop rate by a bit. Maybe something surprising will drop too!

Dong Cheng Yue nodded "Uh huh, got it. Don't worry, I will!"

"Ok!"

.....

Not even a minute had passed and the boss' health nearly hit rock bottom. I looked closely and as my Frost Rain Sword trembled, a light appeared beneath my feet signalling the activation of [Strength of a Thousand Men]. I combo-ed the first 3 hits and with a "Peng!" I knocked Shi Le back. Then as the power of the wind suddenly flowed through me, charging for 0.2 seconds before [Wind Blade] blasted through, directly slashing at the boss' head.

"Ka Cha!"

With blood splashing out, Jie Emperor made a piercing scream. As the last of his HP fell, a bright light fell upon me; I rose to Lv 55!

"Hua la...."

A bunch of items exploded out and fell onto the ground! I walked forward, grasped my sword and kicked the boss' corpse to the side. Three pieces of equipment that reflected out different colors of light were laying on the stone floor. Among them, there was a purple robe, a light blue dragon-shaped wrist guard and a shiny spear. Other than that, there was also a violet colored skill book and a few Pardon Cards!

"Wow, looks like there's quite a bit of stuff" Dong Cheng Yue happily exclaimed as she knew that magic type bosses tended to have a much higher drop rate for magic type equipment and the robe was definitely proof of that. If that robe wasn't for a Mage, then it must be for a Healer. And since she is the only Mage currently in the party, the chances of her getting it was quite high.

Picking up the robe and holding it in my hands, it started to quiver as lines of words floated in the space in front of me. Everybody was reading them with great excitement –

【Nine Heavens Robe】 (Purple Tier)

Type: Cloth armor

Defense: 140

Magic: +41

Endurance: +37

Extra: Raises max health by 400

Extra: Raises the user's magic type damage by 7%

Gender Requirement: Female

Level Requirement: 55

TL: We are now calling ability power -> magic.

.....

Dong Cheng Yue smiled sweetly. "Oh, oh! Brother Xiao Yao, that's my equipment...."

Wolf laughed while holding his daggers "Man, just because of one single drop, you're willing to call him 'Brother'. Beautiful Cang Yue, do you still have any sense of pride?"

Dong Cheng Yue gave a "hmph!", proudly raised her 34C bust, and smiled. "I do as I like, and it's none of your business anyway! Even my brother calls him Brother Xiao Yao, so for me to call him Brother Xiao Yao shouldn't be surprising! Right Wan Er? Do you have any problems with me calling him Brother Xiao Yao?"

Wan Er rubbed her arms and said, "Wait a moment, I'm getting goosebumps..."

Dong Cheng Yue "...."

I laughed and threw the Nine Heavens Robe toward Dong Cheng Yue, "Your luck sure is good. A Purple Tier robe adding both health and magic is highly valued. You can't find good equipment like this anywhere, not even on the market. It even requires the wearer to be female... So unfair~"

Dong Cheng Yue cheerfully equipped her new clothes. "Shua!" A dazzling Mage beauty appeared before us. The robe was very elegant, and the white skirt of the robe added a bit of the traditional saintly feeling. Of course, the developers of <Destiny> never disappoint. The bosom area of

the robe was very revealing and as Dong Cheng Yue's breasts were quite large, they were showcased very well before our eyes. What a beautiful sight... one could forget to breathe seeing this. Damn, this game's female Mage equipment was sexy to the max!

.....

Old K licked his lips and laughed, "Leveling in this party sure is blissful...."

Dong Cheng Yue's face flushed a deep red and she covered her chest with her hands "You stinky scum!"

Old K spread his hands. "But Boss Xiao Yao is also looking..."

Dong Cheng Yue looked towards me and smiled. "But I'm willing to let him look though..."

Old K complained in despair. "The difference in treatment is too obvious isn't it?!"

Yuzi Chengshuo facepalmed and said, "Let's not talk about this for now. We should look at the rest of equipment instead, ok?..."

I woke up from my trance and quickly grabbed the 2nd piece of equipment: a floating wrist guard with a dragon pattern. Reaching out to it, the stats jumped out. It was still pretty good.

【Dragon Skull Metal Guards】 (Gold Tier)

Type: Armor

Defense: 170

Strength:+37

Endurance:+36

Extra: Raises user's attack by 40

Level Requirement: 52

.....

Holding the Dragon Skull Metal Guards, I asked, "Old K, Dong Cheng

Lei, which one of you wants this? I don't need it. My Heaven's Peak Wrist guards are Purple Tier and they add a lot of magic which gives me mana to heal and use higher level skills a few more times."

Dong Cheng Lei shook his head, "Brother, mine are already gold tier. I don't need it; the level requirement is too high"

I quickly threw it to Old K. "Take it. Quickly level up to Lv 52 and switch out your Lv 34 Silver wrist guards. They're embarrassing."

Ran Min laughed loudly, "Yes sir! Thanks boss!"

The last equipment was a spear which emitted a light purple color; the chances of it being a Purple Tier weapon were very high. Reaching out and brushing over it, the spear's stats appeared before our eyes. Sure enough, they were pretty good—

【True Soul Spear】 (Purple Tier)

Attack: 670-880

Strength: +39

Endurance: +36

Extra: Raises attack by 6%

Extra: Raises accuracy by 14%

Level Requirement: 53

.....

Wan Er opened her pretty little mouth and cried, "What a high attack! It's enough to rival your Frost Rain Sword!"

I swiftly opened up the weapon rankings and sure enough, the True Soul Spear was ranked at #3. The overall stat points were lower than the Frost Rain Sword by 24% and lower than the 2nd ranked Purple Tier battle axe by 11%, but it could still be considered a godly weapon.

"What do we do with this weapon?" I asked.

Lin Wan Er blinked her big eyes. "We don't currently have any knights, so we don't have anyone that can use this weapon... What should we do?"

Old K, Cang Lei, do one of you guys want to use it?”

Old K carried his battle axe and shook his head “I’m already used to attacking with a battle axe. I can’t imagine changing to a spear now.”

Dong Cheng Lei: “I also like using axes.”

I then suggested, “Then how about this: Let’s sell this spear. We’ll then split the profits 10 ways, how about it?”

Yuzi Cheng Shuo laughed, “This isn’t a bad idea; at least no one draws the short end of the stick.”

“Ok!”

.....

After throwing the spear into my bag, I grabbed the skill book and conveniently, the details of the skill appeared. Immediately Dong Cheng Yue screamed excitedly—

【Thunderbolt Finger】 (S Rank): Charges the power of electricity and releases it at a desired target. [Thunderbolt Finger] will bounce to a secondary target within 10 yards of the target and will continue hitting up to a maximum of 10 targets. Each successive target hit will decrease the damage dealt while damage and the number of targets hit will rise as the skill levels up. Learning this skill requires 1 point of charm. Lv 55 requirement. Class requirement: Mage.

.....

“A S class rank book....” Even I was kind of surprised. “This is a super overpowered spell... [Thunderbolt Finger], this is something else...”

Everyone here had just experienced the pain of the skill [Thunderbolt Finger], so naturally everyone understood how strong this skill was. Old K balled his fist. “Whichever Mage learns this skill would be too OP. A whole field of players would die to a single Thunderbolt Finger if his or her magic power is high enough!”

I lightly laughed, “Don’t worry, this skill book is ours. Whoever learns this would be a close friend! Right, Dong Cheng?”

Dong Cheng Yue nodded excitedly. “Yup, yup! Xiao Yao ... Brother!”

“Damn!”

Feeling a bit creeped out, I gave the skill book to her.

Quickly, Dong Cheng Yue learned [Thunderbolt Finger] and tried the skill out on Dong Cheng Lei. A Lv 1 [Thunderbolt Finger] took out 700+ health from him! If she gets the skill to Lv 6, it might be as strong as the boss! Just thinking about it was scary.

By the time we finished distributing the boss' drops, it was already noon.

.....

“Wu...”

Lin Wan Er stood beside me and yawned gently “So tired.... Let's go offline for a bit and sleep before we tackle floors 4 and 5.”

Yuzi Chengshuo agreed “Yeah, it's really tiring and it's going to affect our performance. The next two floor's bosses will definitely be difficult as well so we should make sure we are at our peak condition before we challenge them.”

I nodded “That's fine. Everyone let's go offline and meet up in 10 hours.... around 7pm. Is that ok?”

Everyone nodded in agreement “Yup!”

.....

After we went offline, I went to the girls' dorms to pick up Lin Wan Er and Dong Cheng Yue as we had to go out to eat, I guess it counted as lunch for now. At the restaurant, we chose to eat rice noodles. When I wolfed down two bowls of noodles, Lin Wan Er looked at me in shock since she had only got around to half a bowl.

“Beep-beep...”

My phone rang and I saw Wang Xin's caller ID. I immediately stood up, nodded towards the two girls then turned around and picked up the

phone.

“Leader Wang, did something happen?”

Wang Xin answered, “Yeah, remember the ‘wolf man’ we killed in our last mission, the autopsy results came in. The research institute has verified that this man’s DNA has been damaged and reformed which basically allowed him to turn into a werewolf. It’s a variation having to do with DNA but our resources are limited and we can’t completely analyze this DNA’s abnormalities.”

I knitted my eyebrows, “It sounds like there is something fishy going on for this case.”

Wang Xin said thickly, “It is, you didn’t guess wrong. There were two incidents of murder and the young master of Ruixin Corporation in the northern district was kidnapped last night. His two bodyguards were killed as well. We analyzed the hair found at the scene of the murder and the results showed that, it was almost identical to that of the werewolf we killed, they both had varied DNA. The other murder case was basically the same; these monsters are committing the crimes. Therefore, I suspect that this is the work of an organization consisting of interconnecting groups. It’s definitely not the work of an individual werewolf, which suggests...”

I stared blankly, “Which suggests... Hangzhou’s residents are no longer as safe as other normal cities, right?”

Wan Xin laughed lightly “You could say that. Today at noon, Central Safety Headquarters are sending some professionals over. Hopefully, they can discover something new from the mutated DNA. They already have a theory that those werewolf are the product of some kind of high tech experiment, a mythical method of genetic implants, humans are able to surpass the limits of DNA, gaining enhanced physique and power.... at the cost of closely resembling a beast’.”

I furrowed my brows, “What do you need me to do?”

“Nothing at the moment! “

Wang Xin added “Protect Lin Wan Er well in the mean time. If we have any more mission, I will contact you beforehand. Train your skills too since the police have no way of fighting against those ‘monsters’. We can only depend on you.”

“Ok, I got it. Contact me immediately if there’s any news.”

Chapter 166: Combat Strength of 5

“Boy, do you know what Yi Hai is?”

TL: Yi Hai literal translation = Ocean of Consciousness... basically a common wuxia term used by JinYong, an extremely famous wuxia author

“I don’t know, master.”

“Yi Hai is a type of force, an invisible power. Mastering both the Qi of Heaven and Earth is considered to be the pinnacle for one’s Yi Hai. With your Yi Hai at its pinnacle, you will be able to use Yi Hai to feel the life-force of all living beings—humans, animals and even nature itself. One would even be able to feel the movements of everything on Earth. Starting from today, you will begin to learn, and you must master Yi Hai within 5 years.”

.....

My mind whirled as I thought of the old man; it had been 7 years since I last saw him. Unfortunately, I still hadn’t reached the pinnacle of Yi Hai as he wanted me to.

As I closed my eyes while lying on the dormitory bed, I started concentrating solely on feeling the Qi around me. The closest concentration of Qi around was Glasses. He was quite weak but somewhat healthy; his health wasn’t anything to worry about. Extending farther away, I felt the boys within the entire dormitory. My Yi Hai finally extended to even further places and picked up a couple of strong Qi sources that were at the pinnacle of the Refined Body stage. I could feel the Qi come from north of the school, probably near the brothels in the west district. The owner of the Qi must be the bodyguard of some underground mob boss, having a physique much different than the average person.

My brows furrowed as the sweat oozed down my face. This time, I was able to extend the Yi Hai 10 kilometers away. This surprised me since I hadn’t been training diligently at all.

As I thought, the old man helped develop <Destiny> for some reason. Could it be that <Destiny> was a game that could actually help develop the brain in order for it to be able to break through the limit most practitioners face? That would mean with <Destiny>, one would be able to learn how to surpass their limits by playing in game!

I kept up with my Yi Hai for some time and then finally I began to feel the exertion kick in. I reduced the circumference back to around 3 kilometers which was just enough to detect Wan Er. If by chance somebody above the Refined Body level or a “Werewolf” with at some unnatural energy level was near Wan Er, then I would be notified immediately.. If the enemy was below the Royal Air level, Wan Er’s regular bodyguards would be able to take care of it instead of me.

.....

Drowsily, I went to sleep without knowing when I’d wake up. Soon enough, the alarm went off and woke me up. Checking the time, it was 6:00 in the evening. In an hour, it would be time for me to log on and finish up the rest of the mission.

“Du-du...”

My phone rang, it was Wolf calling –

“Hey Wolf, what’s going on?”

“Ah, Brother Xiao Yao, do you want to eat dinner together? It’ll be at that Hunan restaurant just outside campus. All of Zhan Long will be there, we’ll all become closer! Haha, actually, we just want to drink a bit.”

I laughed, “Alright, then can I bring Wan Er and Dong Cheng Yue too? I’m quite worried about letting Wan Er eat alone...”

“Go for it!”

.....

Hanging up, I dialed Wan Er’s number–

“Wu...” Wan Er’s voice sounded a bit groggy, even a bit annoyed.

Speechless, I asked, “Miss, did you just wake up?”

“Now I’m awake. What happened?”

“I’ll be going out with Zhan Long to eat together. Do you and Dong Cheng want to come?”

“Are you treating?”

“En, that’s fine.”

“Okay then, Dong Cheng and I will head over when we’re ready. Oh... that brat is still sleeping; let me wake her up...that girl...should we wear makeup?”

I was startled, “Don’t you normally go without makeup?”

“Matcha will be coming...” Wan Er trailed off hesitantly, “It’s not like... It’s not like I’m afraid of being shown up or anything...”

I couldn’t help but laugh, “Don’t worry Miss, even without makeup, there won’t be any pressure. Let Dong Cheng put on some makeup; our Zhan Long’s Matcha is quite the beauty...”

“Okay, then I’ll head over, be downstairs in 20 minutes!”

“Understood!”

.....

After 20 minutes, I arrived at the girl’s dormitory where the two girls were already waiting downstairs. True to her word, Wan Er didn’t put on makeup but she didn’t need any make-up with her natural refined snow white gloss. She was wearing brown clothes contrasting with a purple purse and small heels. Her pale, slender legs practically left people drooling. Combined with her slim waist and tight clothing, her figure alone could kill someone!

I turned to look at Dong Cheng Yue and sure enough, she had on some light makeup; her long eyelashes were curled and traces of eyeliner could be seen. Even as a 19 year old, she was exuding quite a mature womanly charm. Bowing my head to get a better look, Dong Cheng Yue’s face started blushing. Teasingly she asked, “What’s wrong, can you not look at me?”

I shook my head, “Dong Cheng’s sense of danger is too much, it’s not like Matcha will be eating you or anything...”

Dong Cheng Yue stuck out her tongue, “Hmph, this is a war between women. You wouldn’t be able to understand something of this level!”

I waved my hands, “It doesn’t matter if I understand or not, let’s go and eat some food!”

“Okay!”

A few minutes later we got to the Hunan Restaurant outside of the school campus. Inside one of the inner booths, 4 of the Zhan Long members were already waiting for us. Once we entered, Wolf and Old K immediately stared at both Wan Er and Dong Cheng Yue in a trance. The two girls were really top class beauties.

I glanced over at Matcha. She was busy pouring water for Fox and her pretty face held traces of sweat for some reason. She was wearing a lattice sweater with a short skirt, making her look like a diligent but pretty girl.

Sitting down at the table, I asked Matcha, “Hey Matcha, how’s the Zhan Long Studio treating you?”

Wiping her hands, she smiled sweetly, “It’s been nice despite getting less sleep than usual. At 5 I woke up to do the laundry for the studio and wiped down the floors. After that, I have to tack up new wallpaper. The original one is far too old and moldy.”

I nodded my head in satisfaction, “Good job!”

Opening and closing her mouth, Dong Cheng Yue was staring at Matcha, unsure of what to say.

I glanced up at her with a smile, and said, “Diligence is beauty, isn’t it?”

Dong Cheng and Wan Er both grew red in the face, “Yeah...”

.....

We ordered many dishes and a case of beer while Wan Er gave a call to Yuzi Chenghsuo to tell her to meet half an hour after the original time.

Otherwise, we wouldn't be able to finish our dinner in time.

Holding her wine glass, Dong Cheng Yue turned to look at me, "Xiao Yao, why don't you summarize what we have accomplished so far in the Five Barbarian Tomb Mission?"

Smiling, I said, "There's not much to summarize; we've all performed nicely, and we have earned quite a bit. Old K learned [Whirlwind Slash] while Dong Cheng learned [Thunderbolt Finger] and a good amount of Purple Tier equipment dropped as well! These events have most definitely made us stronger. We just need to take down another 2 bosses and Zhan Long's strength will shock the whole of Ba Huang City!"

Wolf laughed, "Brother Xiao Yao, what do you mean 'our Zhan Long'? The beautiful Wan Er and Dong Cheng Yue are not a part of Zhan Long..."

I turned to look at the two girls as their bright, wide eyes looked back at me. Swallowing hard, I said, "Who said that? Wan Er and Dong Cheng Yue will join Zhan Long in the future, so they are one of us!"

Unexpectedly, Wan Er gave a wide smile without saying denying it while Dong Cheng Yue excitedly grinned, "That's right!"

With that, Fox clasped his wine cup with excitement, "It seems like we've already persuaded Fan Shu City's number one and two beauties to join Zhan Long. That's great! If Cang Tong and Cang Yue joins as well, then that will make us even stronger! Come on, a toast, Ganbei!"

TL Note: Ganbei is the Chinese way of giving a toast, like saying Kanpai in Japanese.

We all drained the rest of our cups with joy.

.....

After a few drinks, Wolf and I were far from feeling drunk but the lightweight Wan Er was already turning red in the face. She leaned back on her chair to breathe as her 34D breasts moved up and down with her breaths, making her look somewhat disheveled—not that I minded of course.

“What’s wrong, drank too much?” I asked, whispering into her ear.

Shaking her head in denial, Wan Er replied, “Not at all, how could I give up this early?”

“In that case...” I poured another glass of wine to toast with, “Young mi—Wan Er, why don’t we both have another drink?”

“Sure...”

She gently nodded her head as she drunk the glass of wine, the sides of her lips curling upwards to form a beautiful smile. “Li Xiao Yao sure is careless...”

I stayed quiet.

Dong Cheng Yue was lying on top of the table, trying to watch us secretly when she shook her head, “It’s over, it’s like I don’t even have a chance anymore...”

.....

Not even an hour later, the food was almost all gone.

Matcha was surfing the forums on her phone and then suddenly brought her head up. “Something happened in <Destiny>. Take a guess, what do you think just happened?”

Wolf raised an eyebrow, “Ba Huang City has collapsed?”

“Idiot...” Matcha replied.

“[Vanguard] is fighting with [Prague]?” Fox asked.

“Obviously not...” I commented, “I’m betting that [Flying Dragon] is about to fight with [Valiant Bravery]. The odds are too high for that not to happen...”

Matcha laughed and nodded her head, “Yea that’s exactly what happened, of course Boss is smart enough to guess it! Two hours ago, [Flying Dragon] entered Qilin Valley to look for Lv 6 Qilin herbs but was met with an exploration team led by General Wang Jian of [Valiant Bravery]. They started to fight it out in Qilin Valley with both sides

constantly bringing in reinforcements. Finally, [Flying Dragon] brought over 3000 people to fight against the 1700 people of [Valiant Bravery].”

“What was the end result?” I asked.

“[Valiant Bravery] was defeated, but [Flying Dragon] was left with serious damages. By the end of the battle, [Flying Dragon] was left with around 40 people. I heard that if it wasn’t for the fact that General Bai Qi and General Lian Po were killed by a Knight that came out of nowhere, then [Flying Dragon] would have suffered defeat instead.”

My eyes widened at the news, “That Knight...could it be Drunken Spear the Nature Knight?”

“That’s right, did Boss also take notice of this guy?”

“I have, I’ll have to keep an eye out for this guy in the future...”

“Yea, Drunken Spear is said to be very strong, so if we continue to fight with [Flying Dragon], then we’ll have to confront the Nature Knight, Drunken Spear someday.”

Wan Er looked at her phone, her mouth wide open, “What the...someone is mocking Zhan Long!”

“Who’s mocking us?” Old K asked.

Wan Er replied, “Drunken Spear... he said, ‘Zhan Long only has a combat strength of 5...”

TL: Combat strength of 5 = Dragon Ball reference – Raditz scans a human farmer and sees that his combat power is only 5 which by their standards is very weak – Credit to JohnFox

“Asshole!” Old K thumped the table with his fist, “He should pray that I don’t see him!”

.....

I kept calm, “Don’t let words make you explode in anger. This kind of temper should be avoided at all costs. Zhan Long’s first step will be taking a foothold in Ba Huang City. If Drunken Spear wants to poke fun at us then let him do so. But after we finish the 5 Barbarian Tomb Mission,

we'll go and pay a visit to Drunken Spear!"

"Okay!"

Chapter 167: Mountain of Bones

After paying the restaurant bill, we were on the campus pathway, on our way back to the dorms.

Carrying her purse, Lin Wan Er swayed and wobbled as she walked.

I walked closer and reached out to support her arm, asking, “Are you okay?”

She nodded: “En, no problem. Go help support Dong Cheng, she’s almost kneeling...”

I turned my head to look, and sure enough, Dong Cheng Yue was kneeling on the ground; her shoelaces were untied and she was struggling in vain to tie them.

After sending the two girls back to their dorm, I returned to mine and went online to continue the Five Barbarians Desolate Tomb expedition. Without a doubt, once we finished this SS-rank quest, the rewarded experience would allow all of us to go up a level. Moreover, we would also be rewarded with equipment. With an SS-rank quest’s difficulty, getting rewarded with Purple Tier equipment would be considered normal. Maybe we would even get rewarded with an Emperor Tier equipment which would truly be fortunate!

.....

“Shua!”

Once online, I appeared on the third floor of the Five Barbarians Desolate Tomb. Looking at my equipment, my sword’s durability was at 11% and my breastplate armor was at 72%, with the rest of my equipment’s durability being within 20% to 60%. I ran towards the first floor without any hesitation to find the Blacksmith Old Man and repair my equipment. Upon my return to the third floor, everybody appeared online one by one. In a few minutes, all ten members were together.

Onward to the fourth floor!

The fourth floor’s entrance was a deep pit approximately one meter

wide and this time there were no stone steps. It just led to a straight up fall all the way down, yet there was no doubt that this was the entrance. It looked like the ground of the third floor had a hole poked through it and plunging through this hole would lead directly to the fourth floor.

“Shit!”

I looked around for a moment and finally stood up, saying, “This kind of fall would surely lead us to our deaths. Every floor’s height has brought us down at least 100 meters...”

Yuzi Chengshuo laughed saying, “We will, but you won’t. Don’t forget your defense and health. The only one here who wouldn’t fall to their death is you, don’t you dare back out now...”

I pondered for a moment, nodding, “Okay. Buff me properly and I’ll go down first to confirm when it’s safe then I’ll call you guys!”

“Got it!”

Wan Er laughed lightly, “Be careful!”

“Yup.”

Hoisting my Frost Rain Sword, I turned around and jumped down. I was immediately met with a free fall as my cloak fluttered behind me. It was extremely dark and the sound of wind wrought havoc on my ears!

I could barely open my eyes and my left hand had already undergone preparations to cast [Heal] on myself.

“Huala!”

The wind blasted past and my eyes suddenly lit up so that I could see again. Not good!

Right below, there was an impressive hell made of magma; there were rows and rows of sharply pointed pillars that were a crimson red from the magma. Once a player fell down here, he would most likely get run through by these pillars and become a roasted kebab!

In a moment of desperation, I took up my sword and used my strongest skill, [Wind Blade] to chop at these sharp lava pillars in the hopes of

avoiding any disaster!

“Peng!”

Gravel flew out and the pillar of lava consequently split. Yet I still smashed against a sharp cone with a “Peng!”. Blood burst from my chest as a huge damage number flew out–

“2249 ! ”

My heart almost stopped and I was scared death. Fortunately I wasn’t killed!

Immediately healing myself and brought my health up 900 points, before communicating in the party chat, “It’s not very safe down here. Dong Cheng, Matcha, since you two can fly get down here first.”

With flapping wings, the two girls came flying down. Immediately, Dong Cheng Yue covered her mouth in astonishment saying, “Whoa, so many stalagmites, yet Xiao Yao, you actually survived the fall....”

I was speechless, “Are you looking forward to my death that much? You guys up there, jump down one by one and I’ll catch you. Wolf, how about you come down first?”

“Alright, Brother Xiao Yao!”

Within the empty space a shadow suddenly swept down. Wolf’s agility was really quite high.

I calculated a good point of interception and flew over, reaching out to grab Wolf’s arm and took advantage of my rotation to effortlessly slow him down. Right after, Old K, Dong Cheng Lei, Fox, and Yuzi Chengshuo dropped down one by one. It was risky but not quite dangerous. Lin Wan Er was the last one to leap down. Preparing for her, I spread my arms and waited there for quite a long while, only to discover her floating down with her opened iron umbrella quite casually.

Damn it, my posture and expression were in vain.

.....

Standing still and replenishing ourselves, we prepared to battle!

Not far off, war horses neighed unceasingly. The iron hooves of countless undead war horses trampled wildly across the floor. The Knights seated on the back of each war horse had already died very early on yet their spirits lingered on. Each Knight had a long sword in hand and they exhaled a rotten breath with a stench. They were all fully armored and above their heads floated line after line of words–

【Hun Tribe Horseman】 (Elite Monster)

Level: 60

Attack: 1110-1440

Defense: 900

Health: 9000

Skills: **【Charge】 【Arc Moon Slash】 【Flame Blade】**

Introduction: Hun Horsemen, the Hun tribe's elite fighters, they hail from beyond the Great Wall and have powerful killing capability, therefore accumulating a wild nature to an astonishing degree. Utterly brutal and cruel, they take pleasure in killing others. Once Ran Min died in battle, these Hun tribe horsemen became a part of his tomb's guardsmen.

.....

“Finally, Lv 60 Elite Monsters...” Dong Cheng Yue smiled “These Lv 60 heavy armor horsemen take 50% more magic damage. My favorite type of monsters...”

Lin Wan Er cautioned “Don't underestimate the enemy, they have high defense, high attack and high health. These kind of horsemen are definitely the strongest Elite Monsters we've seen so far. Let's think about how we should deal with them. They have [Charge] which can stun us and once stunned, they follow up with [Arc Moon Slash] and [Flame Blade]... Normal players can't handle that kind of damage.”

Before we even finished talking, Dong Cheng Lei raised his axe and charged ahead, “Haha! I'll fight as the vanguard!”

“My God, Ah Lei!” I quickly shouted, but it was already too late.

Dong Cheng Lei instantly pulled all the aggro and the first Hun Tribe Horseman immediately went berserk, raising his spear and charging after Dong Cheng Lei. Old K, worrying that Dong Cheng Lei couldn't handle it alone, quickly followed behind “Ah Lei! I'm coming to help you!”

“Shua!”

The metal horseman suddenly sped up, leaving after images behind him. This was the effect of [Charge]!

“Peng!”

Dong Cheng Lei was pushed back around ten meters and entered a state of dizziness. At the same time, the Hun Tribe Horseman raised his long sword and delivered an arced blow, hitting both Old K and Dong Cheng Lei with the same strike.

“1472 ! ”

“1621 ! ”

.....

“My God, these two don't fear death...” Yuzi Chengshuo quickly healed them as she commented in an exasperated tone.

I hurriedly rushed over to help. Hitting the ground hard with my fist, I used [Binding Chains] to restrict another Hun Tribe Horseman. At the same time, I lunged at the one in the front, yelling, “Ah Lei! What are you waiting for?! Start the counterattack!!”

“Hua!”

Dong Cheng Lei's reaction wasn't bad as he quickly used the skill [Reflect], resulting in the Hun Horseman tasting his own [Flame Blade]!

“Dun!”

“2187 ! ”

Directly taking his own attack, I bet that horseman felt a lot of sadness and despair.

As six golden hexagrams shone brightly, my Frost Rain Sword activated [Combo]. Baby Bobo also followed up quickly, along with a fireball spell from Dong Cheng Yue. Together we instantly finished off the first horseman!

I then raised up my sword and rushed towards the horseman that I bound earlier, finishing him in an instant as well. Right before dying, this horseman roared his last words, “With an impossible situation upon us, even the lowest people trample over us!”

“Pa Cha!” With one more strike, the horseman and his horse both fell to the ground. He had also dropped a pair of beautiful glittering shoes. My eyes glittered as I grabbed it. Nice! It was a Silver Tier drop, so I stored it away to sell for money later.

Standing beside the horseman’s corpse, Lin Wan Er blinked her big round eyes a few times and laughed “What was that? ‘ With an impossible situation upon us, even the lowest people trample over us!’ What does that even mean? Some kind of Hun tribe dialect?”

TL: That part was spoken with ancient chinese wordings that were quite obscure

I nodded. “Yea, it must be! Don’t worry about it!”

Fox’s mouth twitched a bit before saying, “If I’m not mistaken, I think it’s a cussing term from the Su Bei or Nan Jing region. Right?”

Surprised, I asked, “As expected of the wise brother Fox. What does it mean though?”

Fox quietly translated, “You son of a bi*ch, I’ll punch you so that your eyes start bleeding....”

Everybody instantly fell to their knees after listening to the translation!

TL: Falling to knees = figure of speech = horrible translation

.....

Our group continued onwards. After killing ten or so Hun Tribe Horsemen, Matcha furrowed her brows and said, “Boss, we’re clearing

monsters too slowly. We can't maximize the use of Dong Cheng Yue's [Thunderbolt Finger] like this. Plus my Illusionary Butterfly Queen is already Lv 42 with 1400+ magic attack. Her [Abyssal Flames] will hurt them quite a bit. Let's find a suitable spot to lure a bunch of the Hun Tribe Horsemen and kill them with AoE spells!"

(TL Note: AoE is a term used in games that stands for Area of Effect)

I pondered. "The idea is good...but we need people to guard the outer perimeter to keep them within the AoE. The Hun Tribe Horsemen's [Arc Moon Slash] slash is too painful. Old K and Ah Lei won't be able to handle it unless we have the most ideal and advantageous location."

"But we do, Boss!"

Matcha flew up into the sky and pointed her finger behind us, "Look over there..."

I looked over and my whole body trembled. There was a mountain of bones in addition to piles and piles of decomposing clothes. From its color, it seemed that the clothing ought to have belonged to women. The pile of bones conveniently formed a pathway with the cliff, just enough for one person to push through.

Blinking her eyes, Matcha said, "If everyone can all go through that passage, and you, Boss, remain here to block the way and defend against two to three Hun Tribe Horsemen with the support of the Healers, then Dong Cheng can fully express the power of [Thunderbolt Finger] and [Pillar of Fire & Ice]. It can elevate our leveling speed by at least 70%!"

I nodded, "Sounds reasonable, what do the rest of you think?"

Fox also nodded, "I approve."

Wan Er laughed lightly: "Sure!"

.....

After everyone agreed, we immediately began the operation.

来到白骨山旁边，宋寒、林婉儿等人纷纷进入甬道，东城月在最外围，我堵在她前方，截断外面能进来的通道，抹茶MM则拍打着翅膀飞在空中，轻

笑：“匈奴铁骑无法攻击空中目标，老大我去引怪了哦，你等着我……”

Drawing near to the mountain of bones, Wolf, Lin Wan Er, and the others entered through the passage one by one. Dong Cheng Yue remained closest to the outside, while I remained in front of her to cut off the passageway. Matcha then flew into the air and laughed lightly, “The Hun Tribe Horsemen can’t attack targets in the air. Boss, I’ll go and start aggroing them, so wait for me…”

“Okay, be careful Matcha!”

“Yea!”

Matcha flew out gracefully. Not long after, the ground started shaking, and skulls rolled down the mountain of bones unceasingly. I furrowed my brows without saying anything.

Wan Er’s pretty eyebrows knitted as well, “These bones, could it be……”

I hastily nodded, “Correct. According to history, these remains belong to the Han women that were boiled alive by the Five Barbarian tribes in the past.”

TL: Han is not Hun – Han = mainland chinese, Hun = tribe of the five tribes

“So many, over 10,000……”

“Yeah.”

A hint of hatred flashed across Lin Wan Er’s beautiful eyes, “It’s settled, we definitely have to slaughter this floor’s boss!”

……

In the distance, a dense cluster of the Hun Tribe Horsemen cavalry thundered over with Matcha lying at the very front with her longsword. Her face was full of excitement, “Beauty Dong Cheng Yue, manage your mana. From here on out, it’s up to your magic output!”

Chapter 168: Great Battle with the Hun Emperor

“Don’t worry, Fan Shu City’s number one Mage definitely won’t let you down!”

Dong Cheng Yue was exuding self-confidence.

I grasped my Frost Rain Sword tightly since after Matcha, the next target to be attacked would be me. Preparing to bear the brunt of the assault, I took a defensive stance while holding my sword horizontally in front of my chest. Bring it on punks!

.....

“Shua, shua, shua.....”

One after another, chilly shadows swept past me. The charging Hun Tribe Horsemen no longer targeted the flying Matcha since I had attracted all their aggro; thereby becoming the primary target of the enemy assault. More than ten horsemen jostled each other as they rammed against me. Luckily, my strength stat was high enough to hold them back... especially since I couldn’t retreat even if I wanted to. Gritting my teeth, I faced their continuous assault all by myself and due to [Charge], I was stunned for 1.7 seconds. However, Yuzi Chengshuo and Darling Duck didn’t use [Therapy] to cure my stun status. After all, they were very smart and knew that main danger wasn’t right now but later!

[Arc Moon Slash] and [Flame Blade] were unleashed on me!

“Keng, keng, keng.....”

Sparks and damage numbers flew in every direction as my Nebula Armor took hits repeatedly.... It was truly heart-stopping....

764!

901!

774!

.....

At this time, Darling Duck and Yuzi Chengshuo both started to use their healing skills to bring my health back up to a reasonable level. If they hadn't, [Arc Moon Slash] and [Rapid Flame Scorch] together would have probably insta-killed me!

"They fired the big guns~" Lin Wan Er joked.

I held my Frost Rain sword tightly and started attacking with my [Combo] followed by [Strength of a Thousand Men]. Since the plan required me to take the brunt of the assault, I might as well attack as much as possible. Plus, even though it was not much, I was still wearing Man Luo's Ring which provided me 1% lifesteal. As I attacked, slivers of green light fell on me, showing the particle effects of lifesteal—

+11!

+7!

+12!

+9!

Something was better than nothing... Although, one can imagine that if a player managed to stack 10% or maybe even 20% lifesteal, that would be pretty unbelievable. If that player's attack was high enough and their defense was strong enough, they would be able to tank bosses without needing potions.

Behind me, Dong Cheng Yue raised her staff and cast [Pillar of Fire and Ice], enveloping a 5×5 area with it. Line after line of damage numbers flew out. The amount of damage magic attacks could do to heavy armor type monsters was truly frightening—

1337!

1426!

1481!

.....

Following up quickly, Dong Cheng Yue raised her left hand and bolts of electricity appeared, twisting between her slender fingers with a crackling sound. A moment later, she shot a bolt of electricity at the first horseman in front of me. The skill immediately found a second target, then bounced to a third, and so on. Again, line after line of numbers flew out--

1993!

1921!

1874!

.....

In the blink of an eye, a large chunk of health from a whole section of Hun Tribe Horsemen disappeared. Digging through the system tools, the system damage output application showed that Dong Cheng's recent damage output completely dominated the entirety of our previous damage output.

Wan Er's attractive lips gaped. Stupefied, she said, "Dong Cheng, what level is [Thunderbolt Finger] currently at for it to be so powerful?"

Dong Cheng Yue examined her fingers, saying, "It's only at Lv 2.... Even though it's really strong, it's a shame that it can only be used once every 10 seconds or else it would truly be tyrannical!"

I commented, "Continue using [Rock Spike] and [Pillar of Fire and Ice] to mow them down! Watch your mana usage, and don't ever let it become empty. Fox, stop acting aimlessly. You attack too!"

"Gotcha!"

Laughing, Fox crouched down and took out his gun. In a moment, it transformed into a cannon. This was the musketeer class's second promotion skill, [Bombardment]!

"Peng!"

Accompanying the sound of gunfire, an AOE skill covering an area of 7×7 blasted forth and expelled an intense gunpowder smell. The skill brought about 400 points worth of damage to each monster, which was

not bad.

Matcha summoned her Illusionary Butterfly Queen as well and commanded it to attack. Its wings immediately started flapping and a dense flame started to blaze. [Abyssal Flames] abruptly erupted within the crowd of monsters and dealt damage similar to that of Fox's attack. All the additional attacks helped Dong Cheng Yue a lot.

In this manner, our efficiency in killing monsters escalated quite a bit. Layer after layer of Hun Tribe Horsemen collapsed and died and a sense of pride bubbled up in us involuntarily. I began imagining myself as Emperor Wu's subordinate horseman, capable of fighting on even terms with Hun Tribe Horsemen and emerging victorious after each clash.

(TL: Emperor Wu was the seventh emperor of the Han dynasty and fought against the Huns who were encroaching upon China's western border.)

.....

Half an hour later, the whole stretch of land in front of us lay filled with the corpses of Hun Tribe Horsemen. By then, we had received an innumerable amount of experience. Between the layers and layers of dead bodies there were generous amounts of silver coins and pieces of equipment.

Hefting my Frost Rain Sword, I strode forward, saying, "Everybody randomly choose an area of the battlefield and scour it for items. Whatever equipment you pick up is yours. Don't squabble, maintain some dignity....."

After all the girls dashed out, Wolf and I started laughing. The loot scattered about basically consisted of countless Bronze, Green, and Silver Tier equipment which weren't worth much. It was nice letting the pretty girls gleefully clean the battlefield of equipment.

Wan Er had yet to go and pick up any of the items. Instead, she opened up the map with her dagger still out. She laughed, "In just one round, we wiped out 50% of the monsters. If we keep this up we will be able to clear the rest of this floor easily! Matcha's strategy is honestly pretty good. It

shortened our clear time by quite a bit.”

I nodded my head. “Yeah. Let’s try to hurry up and clear the map by 12 am. I don’t think we can afford to pull any more all nighters... Wan Er, your eyes are starting to become bloodshot during the day....”

Lin Wan Er pouted, “It’s just because I’ve been leveling with you!”

My face turned green “...You’re the one that obviously wants to keep leveling, don’t blame this on me....”

Dong Cheng Yue snickered, “Keep this up, and you’ll be fated to be forever alone....”

I was speechless “....”

.....

Continuing on, we cleared the other half of the Hun tribe Horsemen an hour later. Everybody earned quite a bit of gold coins and equipment. Little Wolf happily walked over to me and whispered, “Hehe, Brother Xiao Yao, guess how much money I made just from picking up coins from the ground since coming to [Five Barbarians Desolate Tomb]?”

Surprised, I guessed “100G?”

“NO!” Little Wolf replied in satisfaction, “I’ve already got 417G! The monsters here have very high drop rates and are really loaded! Compared to the monsters we normally fight outside, we earn so much more here...”

I looked up the conversion rates and said, “Right now the gold selling rate is already down to 1:7. But even so, 417G can probably still nets us around 3000 RMB which is pretty good. I heard Old K picked up no more than 100G.... Little Wolf, did you focus only on gathering gold?”

Little Wolf grinned. “To make the Zhan Long studio prosper, we need an ample amount of gold! After I entered the studio, I stopped putting anything into my personal stash. Instead I’ve put everything I have into the studio’s budget! You have to believe in my character!”

I nodded. “Ok. Everybody is a part of the studio. Whenever the studio gets profits, everybody gets a share!”

“Yea, alright...”

Not far off, Yuzi Chengshuo raised her healing staff and said, “Xiao Yao Zi Zai, Wolf Totem, stop chatting amongst yourselves. We’re going to start the BOSS fight. This time it’s a Hun tribe emperor... one from legends...”

I nodded and walked over. The fourth floor’s boss did not sit on any kind of throne but instead rode on a fully armored horse at the edge of the map. He had a sharp double edged sword in his hand and was looking fiercely out into the distance. Little did he know, his subordinates had all been cleanly killed off. Inching slowly towards the boss, I swiftly read out his stats and skills. Sure enough, being the first Lv 60 Purple Tier boss his stats were truly incomparable--

【Hun Emperor – Liu Yuan】 (Purple Tier BOSS)

Level: 60

Attack: 1620-2050

Defense: 1190

Health: 320000

Skills: **【Combo】 【Savage Jump Slash】 【Sword of Loulan】**

Introduction: The Hun tribe was originally part of the ancient Xia Dynasty. Following the start of Yu the Great’s era, the survivors of the Xia Dynasty unceasingly migrated north and assimilated with the nomadic people of Loulan. They became valiant, local nomads on the outskirts of Mongolia. The Hun Emperor Liu Yuan, although soft hearted, hired soldiers to proclaim himself emperor. Even after his death, he continues to guard the spirit of Hero Ran Min located in the Central Plains.

.....

Seated on the war horse, the Hun Emperor glanced sideways at us, “Weaklings of this fallen world, what are you trying to do?”

Laughing, I slowly drew my sword, “In expelling the Tartar minions, I will restore my country.....”

Lin Wan Er: “.....”

Darling Duck said softly, “Boss, be careful. This BOSS’ attack exceeds 2000. You must not get insta-kill.....”

I nodded, “Don’t worry, he can’t one-shot me unless he lands a critical hit on me. Let’s try our best to control the fight. Dong Cheng, use [Icicle] and target him. Wan Er, don’t be taken by the attacks and promptly use [Gouge] to cover me. Once you use [Gouge], stop and come back. We only have two Healers, and I am afraid they can’t support all of us.

Yuzi Chengshuo laughed and said, “Yea, I worry about that as well. A BOSS with an attack power of 2050 is something I have never seen until now.”

“Attack!”

I hefted my sword and dashed forward with Lin Wan Er at my back. Dong Cheng Yue’s iron defense Tigerman waited for an opportunity, ready to coordinate with us at any time.

.....

“Shasha.....”

My Purple Dawn Boots advanced straight towards the hall. I wasn’t even close to the BOSS, yet I had already leapt high into the air. In that moment, I unleashed a [Fierce Ice Blade], and a layer of frost coated the edge of my sword. Po!”

1215!

The moment I damaged the BOSS, I noticed the slowing effect taking place. But this was after all a Lv 60 Purple Tier BOSS and he immediately hoisted his heavy sword. Golden hexagrams shone, signaling the beginning of a Lv 7 [Combo]: four attacks!

847!

912!

+1411

901!

889!

Fortunately, Darling Duck succeeded in inserting a [Heal] between attacks, or else I would have definitely died.

I lowered my body and activated [Strength of a Thousand Men], repeatedly hitting the BOSS' armored horse. Even though the damage dealt was quite high, it wasn't able to make the BOSS flinch or retreat at all. It looked like I'm at a disadvantage just by comparing strength alone!

"Jie jie, arrogant brat, do you really think that your power can affect me, Liu Yuan, the one who has mastered the skills of the Hun Tribe over these past thousands of years?!" The Hun Emperor laughed loudly.

The blade of the Hun Emperor's sword suddenly swirled with a blood colored light. Here it comes! It was one of his finishing moves -- [Sword of Loulan]!

"Sou!"

His sword exploded with light, I can't block it. Will it pierce through me?!

I slightly swung my Frost Rain Sword and used the momentum to retreat a few steps backwards to gain some time. In a rush, I activated the skill -- [Reflect]!

"Bang!"

The Hun Emperor's sword emitted a few meters of light. Confirming my suspicions, the attack did indeed pierce my body. Luckily, I had already used the skill [Reflect] to send the attack back at him, damaging him instead for quite a bit of health—

"754 ! "

Fuck, that had to have been only a portion of the damage reflected back! As expected, any skill that damages the boss will be weakened. It's such a shame that the damage from [Reflect] had been mitigated to such an extent... or else that blow alone would have dealt at least 2000+ points of

his health. Whatever, at least I was able to escape his attack this time!

.....

Raising my sword I backed off, distancing myself from the BOSS. Just taking two regular hits from this BOSS would put me in an ugly situation.

“Kid, you wanna escape?!”

The Hun Emperor called out fiercely and unexpectedly leapt off his horse, sending his whole body in an arc through the air towards me. Shit, is it that technique? [Savage Jump Slash]?!

“Peng!”

Pain seared through my shoulder as if it was being ripped apart. As expected of the Hun Emperor; he ferociously slashed me right after dismounting his horse.

1982!

Yuzi Chengshuo hastily cast [Heal] as her face went pale, “My God, this boss defies the laws of nature. His skills are too powerful!”

Chapter 169: Rainbow Cloak

Neighing, the Hun Emperor's steed charged forward, knocking Dong Cheng Lei and Old K away. With two of its hooves raised high in the air, the steed stomped on me. Unexpectedly, the boss' mount could attack like a pet. This boss' artificial intelligence was abnormally high!

"Hua!"

Under the light of the sword, I hurriedly rolled over, desperately dodging the attack. The place I was standing before immediately became a pile of rubble. The Hun Emperor mounted his horse, holding his longsword once again and came in for the kill. A sound indicated that a chain attack had been activated!

I looked at my own health and realized Yuzi Chengshuo and Darling Duck's [Heal]s were on cooldown. It was over!

I started to retreat quickly while using [Haste] and at the same time used a [Heal] to recover 900 points of my health. With my body bent, I thought, Come on, a battle to the death!

"Shua!"

A streak of red light flashed by me. Wan Er's beautiful figure appeared in front of the boss' and slid by. With a raised dagger, she successfully stabbed the boss, stunning it for 2.1 seconds!

"Don't attack!"

Darling Duck yelled loudly, at the same time using [Hemostasis] to replenish my health. Little Wolf carrying his dagger rapidly retreated, moving out of the boss' attack range. When facing a boss with such a high attack, the Assassin's role was to attack once and then retreat after landing a stun. Otherwise, they wouldn't even be able to withstand a single attack. Wan Er had the extra defense given by the steel umbrella and could perhaps withstand an attack by the boss, but Little Wolf definitely would not be able to. Not only was his armor not as good as Wan Er's, his level was also lower, therefore he was being heavily

suppressed by the boss.

After being healed to full health, I immediately attacked the Hun Emperor, retaliating with a Lv 6 combo using [Fierce Ice Blade] while simultaneously chugging down a Lv 6 Indigo Sea Pill. Constantly using a Lv 6 skill consumed way too much mana.

Not too far away, Dong Cheng Yue spread her pale fingers. With the sound “Snap”, [Thunderbolt Finger] activated and it consecutively landed on the boss three times. The setting of [Thunderbolt Finger] was to jump between multiple targets but for a single target; it could at most hit three times. This was quite confusing, but with Dong Cheng Yue’s intelligence, this definitely was not an issue.

The Hun Emperor was a heavy armor type boss, therefore [Thunderbolt Finger] caused a huge amount of damage. The three damage numbers made the others feel embarrassed–

1764!

1677!

1589!

.....

“Bang!”

Dong Cheng Yue used spells at an abnormally fast rate. She cast the skill [Icicle] next, which largely reduced the movement speed and attack speed of the boss. Without her [Icicle], I would have died long ago.

“Dong Cheng, watch the amount of mana you have. Don’t deplete it, that would be embarrassing!” I shouted out.

Dong Cheng Yue giggled and pulled out a Indigo Sea Pill and ate it, saying, “Don’t worry, I almost have 9000 points in mana. It is sufficient enough for me to use, and my equipment has mana restoring effects as well. I shouldn’t end up depleting my mana.”

“That’s good then. Continue to concentrate on controlling the boss’ output!”

Even before I finished talking, I once again sustained a couple of hits. The Hun Emperor's attack while on horseback was too high, making it hard for people to endure and once again he almost killed me in an instant. Darling Duck and Yuzi Chengshuo's hearts almost stopped from fright.

.....

"This won't do!!"

Lin Wan Er, tightening her fist, gently said, "If this continues, the boss will definitely land a fatal strike, and then Li Xiao Yao will be doomed. The boss must be separated from the battle horse. This way, his attack will decrease by at least 30%!"

Matcha took a deep breath and said, "Beautiful Cang Tong, I have a plan. When the boss uses [Savage Jump Slash] again, you use [Gouge] to make the horse stay behind. Then the two defensive Tigermen can delay the mount. Dong Cheng Lei and Old K, you two heavy armor classes can kill the mount with Little Wolf's help as well. Xiao Yao, Miss Dong Cheng Yue and you two Healers can continue finishing the main boss. I just checked that the mount only has 50000 health points, so it should be easy to take down. How does that sound? We get rid of the mount, then the boss, killing them one by one?"

Lin Wan Er laughed and nodded. "Sure, let's use that tactic!"

.....

A few seconds later, I left combat with the Hun Emperor. Once the distance increased between us, the trigger for [Savage Jump Slash]'s activation requirement would be met!

"Argh! Obstructing me is to go against the heavens!"

Liu Yuan yelled out in anger jumped up from his battle horse. In mid-air, his body streaked across in a curve. He suddenly dropped and landed a heavy blow with his longsword on my shoulder!

"Klang!"

3872!

I took one look at the damage number, and my heart froze. I'm dead!

"Swoosh!"

Yuzi Chengshou already predicted that I couldn't withstand the attack. She immediately cast [Revive] to bring me back to life to continue to block the boss' attacks. I ended up losing a level and had to pick up and equip the [Ice Fire Cloak] that I dropped. Damn it, being a tank really sucked. No matter if we all die or only I die, I'm always the first to lose a level!

"Whimpering Boss lost a level!" Matcha' said sadly as she looked at me.

Lin Wan Er held onto her daggers as she charged the boss' mount. In a low voice she said, "No problem, he can deliver the killing blow on the rest of the bosses. That way he should be able to recover most of the experience."

"Yeah!"

Crimson light flashed by as Lin Wan Er stunned the battle mount with a [Gouge]. The two Tigerman pets started to tank the battle mount once they were summoned and right when the mount recovered from his stun, Lin Wan Er's dagger slashed her own Tigerman's forehead, resulting in a 300+ damage. At the same time, that got rid of all the aggro that had been accumulated on her and the battle mount's [Charge] was interrupted because of the lack of a target. Instead it immediately started attacking the Tigerman. Besides the Tigerman, Dong Cheng Lei struck the battle mount directly with one [Flame Axe] and it lost over 2400 health—so powerful!

"I'm coming!"

Old K gripped his battle axe tightly and lowered his body. The nearby wind started to whistle as [Whirlwind Slash] was activated and he spun around like a large windmill. Right afterwards, a series of 5 damage numbers appeared from the battle mount's body. Each strike was over

1000+! The total damage was close to 6000—really strong!

.....

With the new tactic, the pressure on my end lessened greatly. After losing his battle mount, the Hun Emperor's damage output drastically decreased. Even a critical blow wouldn't kill me now.

After a few minutes, Hun Emperor felt that something was not right. He retreated while holding his sword and yelled out at the same time, "Mine where is my mount? Scarlet Turtle Mount, quickly return to me!"

Matcha's eyes widened, "Not good, the boss is going to ride again. We must separate them, otherwise it is going to be a hard fight again!"

I quickly lowered my body and hit the ground with my fist, causing [Binding Chains] to be used!

"Swoosh!"

This time it wasn't a miss; it snared HunEmperor at the original spot. His intention of searching for his battle mount was broken as Yuzi Chengshou smiled sweetly. "Good. Xiao Yao, your reaction speed is really quick, so we don't need to be too concerned about fighting the boss anymore. It looks like we really did get much stronger. A Purple Tier boss can no longer beat us!"

Not even a minute later, Lin Wan Er's dagger slashed down. With a neigh, the battle mount knelt onto the ground. Only the feeble boss was left.

.....

"The first Lv 60 Purple Tier boss. Wonder what goodies it will drop" Darling Duck wishfully laughed.

I looked at my equipment and said, "I'm missing a pair of leg guards. My leg guards are still Silver Tier....."

Darling Duck was speechless, "Boss, your equipment is really weak....."

TL: Sarcasm....

Lin Wan Er spoke in a quiet voice, “Dong Cheng, stop attacking when the boss has 2% of his health left. Let Xiao Yao finish him off since he lost a level and so his loss was bigger than any of ours.”

Dong Cheng Yue nodded with a smile and said, “Don’t worry, I pamper him so much. Of course I will give it to him.....”

Lin Wan Er was stunned. “Give him what.....”

Dong Cheng Yue chuckled and her face reddened, “My first time.....”

“You guys, stop that” I said as I attacked the boss. “Dong Cheng, lower your head and look at the ground. Pick up your morals and principles that you just dropped. Besides your appearance, what part of you do you think looks like a 19 year old girl?”

Dong Cheng Yue smiled, “Everywhere. You just don’t know about it”

My face muscles twitched, “Continue this conversation after we kill the boss, ok?”

Dong Cheng Yue giggled and continued to deal damage.

.....

Another 3 minutes passed by and the Hun Emperor’s booming roars became a whimpers for his life. There was not even 5% health left; soon he will die by my Frost Rain Sword.

Little Wolf held onto his dagger. While watching from afar, he laughed, “Hun minions killed countless of innocent people in ancient China....Getting revenge for them in this game feels so good!.....”

Old K smiled as he nodded his head. “If I were in the Han Dynasty, I would join the army. Follow Wei Qing to fight and conquer everywhere. For mainland China, I will sacrifice my life!”

TL: Common saying – Like I will defend Mother Russia or For Freedom!

Dong Cheng Lei also smiled. “I have a lot of strength. I would be an archer and shoot with great precision over long distances!”

I replied, “Guys, wake up

.....

The Frost Rain Sword started to tremble. A pillar of green light encircled my body as I felt powerful forces surge; it was going to be a fatal blow. The damage was added onto the [Wind Blade] strike!

2342!

After the blow, Hun Emperor finally lost all of his arrogance. He suddenly fell down onto the ground, his eyes bloodshot. Lifting his head, he stared at me. “I...I will never give up. You guys will never find Ran Min’s soul... You will not succeed!”

I promptly lowered my body and my sword flashed forward. “Ka Cha” sounded out as the Hun Emperor’s head flew off. I kicked his body away and at the same time, the boss exploded and all kinds of different items scattered onto the ground.”

“Hehee, we finished the Lv 60 boss” Matcha lightly laughed.

I walked forward and placed all the equipment that Hun Emperor dropped in front of everyone, one piece at a time. There were 4 pieces of equipment plus a skill book: a snow white cloak, a flaming red ring, dark golden leg guards, and a giant battle axe.

We looked at the cloak first. The attributes appeared with a wave of a hand –

【Rainbow Cloak】 (Purple Tier)

Defense: 240

Agility: +39

Endurance: +37

Extra: Increase user’s defense by 3%

Extra: Increase user’s magic resistance by 19%

Level requirement: 55

.....

As I held up the Rainbow Cloak with my hand, it emitted a rainbow

colored light. The cloak was a snow-white color. Shaking my head, I said, "Cloaks are not limited by any type of class such as heavy armor, leather armor, and cloth armor. This Rainbow Cloak is a Purple Tier equipment and very powerful. Us the 10 of us will all roll together to decide ownership? This will be fair and no one will complain. Come, let us roll!"

Everyone laughed as I opened the roll option and a dice appeared in front of everybody's eyes!

"Pa Cha!"

I rolled first: 77 points!

Dong Cheng Yue also rolled: 81 points. It already insta-killed mine!

Little Wolf rolled 12 points, Old K rolled 54 points, Fox rolled 70 points, Matcha rolled 91 points, Yuzi Chengshuo rolled 22 points and finally Lin Wan Er's rolled a 97. With her snow-white arm, she insta-killed everyone!

"Hehee, my luck isn't too bad" Lin Wan Er took the cloak, then blinked as she looked at everyone. "Do I need to give out red envelopes? I have 10000G to split with everyone... Otherwise I will be the only one getting an equipment, it is awkward"

TL: Chinese tradition to give red envelopes with money on events (birthday etc.)

Dong Cheng Yue laughed, "Just equip it. When that guy Xiao Yao got the [Nebula Armor], he was very confident. Wan Er, you got it through a roll. Equip it!"

Chapter 170: Number One Axe

“Okay then...”

Hesitating for a while, eventually Wan Er equipped the Rainbow Cloak. Suddenly, the cape that was previously snow-white burst into 7 different colors. A hood with the same rainbow pattern covered her hair, showing only the delicate face underneath. Revealing only the faintest hint of emotions, Wan Er’s eyes stared at me. How was it possible that Wan Er’s figure had immediately transformed into something even more refined and graceful than before? If the Assassins had a princess, then she would be one... a princess with a great figure. Thankfully, the cloak was unable to conceal her prides; with a swish of her cloak, she’d be able to force any man into making a fatal mistake.

.....

“Your defense has gone up by a lot, right?” I asked.

She nodded and smiled, “Yeah! I have 1029 defense now!”

Wolf was surprised. “Wow, I only have 814 defense. What a huge gap...”

Motioning to Wan Er’s Iron Umbrella, I said, “This is the reason for the gap. Moon Elves have the Iron Parasol to help with their defense, which allows them to go up to a whole new level of defense.”

Wolf gave a nod of understanding. “Ah, the Moon Elves seem to be really imbalanced. It’s a good thing only female players can create that class; female players are usually bad players...”

Suddenly, all of the females turned to look at him; their stares could kill.

Immediately bowing his head to escape the glares, Wolf waited a few seconds before looking back up. “I’m telling the truth, even if I were to fight Wan Er at night when I’m her level, my chances of winning would be less than 10%. And in the daytime, my chances of victory would still be under 25%, which isn’t that bad...”

Dong Cheng Yue smiled, “In the nighttime, you wouldn’t even be considered an opponent for her. And in the daytime, Wan Er could still

beat you even though she has to use one hand to hold up the umbrella...”

Wolf had no response to that.

Laughing to myself, I continued to look over the equipment. The Hun Emperor’s second drop was a Scorching Red Ring. Dammit, it was a Lv 54 Silver Tier ring that added strength and agility. I gave the ring to Fox since he favored equipment that gave stats to agility+strength. If things continue this way, then Zhan Long will have a Musketeer that could fire away rapidly and powerfully from the back and kill anyone before they get to us. To be honest, once a melee player gets near a long range player, no matter how high the defense or health of that long range is, he would die before he can even start kiting.

The third piece of equipment were some leg guards that had a dark gold color. It had the symbol of a beast embossed onto it and was a Gold Tier item. The attributes were still quite decent—

【Leg Guards of the Beast】 (Gold Tier)

Category: Heavy Armor

Defense: 220

Strength: +40

Endurance: +36

Extra: +9% to the user’s physical attacks

Required Level: 55

.....

“Damn, what a good item...”

Wan Er’s eyes opened up in surprise after she saw the stats. “Gold Tier armors generally give a bonus of 4% defense or attack, but this one gives a bonus of 9% to physical attacks! We got lucky with this drop!”

I nodded my head, trying to not drool at the sight of these stats, “This item far surpasses it’s counterparts. Even though it says Gold Tier, this item could outperform Purple Tier items! These types of items don’t drop

often!”

I turned around and took a step toward the group, “Ah Lei, Old K! Come here and roll with me. Let’s see whose luck is better!”

“Okay!”

“Shua...shua...shua...”

3 rolls later, the numbers appeared– 71, 17, 1!

Wan Er’s mouth dropped in shock. “Please excuse this, but who the hell rolled a 1?”

My face went red in shame. “I rolled the 1...”

“Not bad, Brother Xiao Yao...”

Me: “...”

.....

Old K held the Leg Guards of the Beast in his hands while silently looking at his own level “I’m only level 47, what the hell am I going to do with a level 55 leg guard? Boss, you take it....”

Giving my thanks, I took 1000G from my inventory and threw it to him. “It’s worth this much, so you might as well take it.”

Old K roared with laughter, “Take a hike, do you really think I’d take your money?”

I stared at him intensely, “Take it, I know you need the money. Your mom hasn’t been in good health lately, so go buy her something delicious instead of playing <Destiny> all day. Hurry up and go home to see her!”

Slapping his hand to his face, he groaned, “Yea, I’ll get on it...”

I happily took the leg guards from Old K. In the end, it was still I who received the treasure. Well, it can’t be helped. Within our group, the highest level heavy armor player is me and since we’re only killing high level monsters in here, the drops tend to be level 50+ equipment. To be honest, I could’ve kept all the drops for myself but I don’t think I have enough money to give out to do that.

Equipping the leg guards, the change in my stats were decent but the biggest change was the +9% to my attack. Although this stat was hidden from the status window, during fights, I would be able to see a noticeable difference in my attack and the enemy would feel the pain much more.

.....

I looked at the last item: a crimson red double edged axe that looked extremely malevolent. If a Berserker were to equip it and give it a swing, then death definitely would come instantaneously.

【Haunted Twin Battle-Axe】 (Purple Tier – Superior Grade)

Attack: 800-1070

Strength: +42

Endurance: +40

Extra: Increase attack by 9%.

Special Effect: 3% chance of a superior strike.

Special Effect: When attacking the target, there is a 20% chance to summon one of the demons, ice or fire, that attacks the enemy for massive damage.

Description: In the ancient times, a group of demons tried to invade and destroy the Heavens. One by one, the Gods fell from the heavens and became mortal men. One of the Gods that fell brought two demons with him to the human world and became an imperial blacksmith. After 10 years, he sealed the twin demons into a single battle-axe and granted the weapon the ability to fight both demons and Gods alike. Therein lies the legend of this battle-axe.

Required Level: 54

.....

Wan Er's mouth dropped even further. "Wow, the second... the second superior grade Purple Tier weapon dropped. Its stats should surpass the Frost Rain Sword right? What is our luck..."

I nodded my head, "Yea, overall point-wise, this exceeded my Frost Rain Sword by 8%. This battle-axe is currently the server's strongest weapon!"

Then, I turned to look at Dong Cheng Lei and Old K and said: "I'm not going to say much, both of you should roll for this. Whoever wins this Battle-Axe will be Zhan Long's number one Berserker. This is a gamble that will determine your fate~~"

Old K nervously clasped the dice and asked: "Ah Lei, you'll be nice, right?"

Chen Dong Lei simply said: "Sure, but I also want to be Zhan Long's number one Berserker and help Brother Xiao Yao to kill our enemies. I also want to kill those people bullying Dong Cheng, so I also want this axe!"

"Stop talking nonsense, everybody is busy, roll it now!"

Both of them almost threw the dice at the same time—

47 !

51 !

Old K suddenly leaped, his face red with excitement: "What the hell, I've never won a lottery before, what's wrong with today, my fortune is absolutely exploding!"

Dong Cheng Yue's face was expressionless: "That's because my brother's luck is too low, not because your fortune is good..."

I handed the twin-blade battle-axe to Old K's palms, then pulled out a skill book dropped by the boss and said: "This is also for you!"

I turned around, looked at Dong Cheng Lei and patted his shoulders. "Ah Lei, this time the good stuff is given to Old K, it was unfair to you. Next time, Big Brother will find a way to make it up to you."

Dong Chen Lei smiled simple-mindedly: "It's okay, as long as Brother Xiao Yao doesn't drive me away, doesn't kick me out of Zhan Long, I don't mind."

Lin Wan Er asked: "What skill book did you give to Old K?"

I laughed: "[Savage Jump Slash]... An S-rank skill book!"

"Huh?" She gaped with her small mouth: "Old K's luck is so good, after the Desolate Tomb of the Five Barbarian Tribes, he turned from a third rate Berserker into a first rate Berserker..."

I nodded and held up my fist and swore "Yup, I've decided. I'm going to make Old K Zhan Long's ace Berserker. Yep, wielding the Haunted Twin Blade Battle-Axe, using Whirlwind Slash to cut into the enemy crowd and then coming out with a Savage Jump Slash.... He'll be unstoppable!"

Song Han laughed lightly "En, Old K is finally becoming a powerful player!"

.....

After dividing the gems and Pardon Cards that dropped from the Han Tribe Emperor, we went onto the next floor, level five of the Five Barbarians Desolate Tomb, our final destination. The hero Ran Min's soul should be sealed on this floor.

"Sha Sha"

Squatting behind the Han Tribe Emperor's throne, I brushed away the wild grass and revealed a seemingly bottomless hole.

Lin Wan Er blinked her eyes at me "This is the entrance to the fifth floor?"

I nodded "It should be. I'll go first!"

"En. Be careful!"

I recklessly jumped down. "Peng!" My head slammed onto a slab of rock going down. The hole turned out to be only three meters deep and there was no path or exit at the bottom. Ugh, it hurt so much.

Looking at how I fell, Lin Wan Er covered her mouth in worry "Li Xiao Yao, are you ok?"

I replied "I'm alright... But this doesn't seem to be the entrance..."

Dong cheng Yue's voice traveled down "Xiao Yao! Climb up quickly!"

There's a set of stone stairs leading towards the fifth floor...

"Damn!"

I used my sword to climb up the hole, feeling like I fell into some sort of dog hole.

When I reached the surface, I saw for myself that there really was a flight of stairs going down. Blushing with embarrassment, I walked to the front. Using my Frost Rain Sword to light the way with its glow, we walked all the way down. From far away, we could see large figures patrolling within the map of the fifth floor.

"What's that?" Matcha asked.

"I don't know..."

.....

We advanced cautiously, feeling a bit startled as we watched the large amounts of war chariots parked in the middle of the field. There were four horses pulling each chariot and by the looks of it, these were the monsters designated to guard the fifth floor...

"As I thought, the Xianbei tribe occupies the last level..." I muttered quietly.

Old K questioned "How do you know it's the Xianbei tribe?"

I grinned and said "Because in the historic records, the person who killed the hero Ran Min was Xianbei tribe's Emperor Mu Rong Jun. Mu Rong Jun and his army consisting of 150,000 soldiers that spelled defeat for the hero Ran Min.

"Oh...I see.... " Old K raised his fist "Let's completely destroy them! Let's avenge my ancestor!"

TL: Old K and the hero Ran Min have the same name so this is a joke on "ancestor"

I inched up towards them slowly. When I was around 30 meters from the war chariots, I could read their status--

【Xianbei War Chariot】 (Elite Monster)

Level:62

Attack: ???

Defense: ???

Health: ???

Abilities: **【War Horse Roar】 【Savage Charge】 【Reckless Pike Thrust】**

Description: The Xianbei War Chariots were the aces and elites of the Xianbei tribe. These expertly made chariots were extremely durable and flawless. Harnessing four sturdy horses, each chariot can carry up to eight Xianbei soldiers. Ever since Ran Min died, these Xianbei War Chariots have been one of the tomb's guardians.

Chapter 171: Final Guardian

“I’m six levels lower than the war chariot so I can’t see the attack damage. Lin Wan Er how about you?” I asked as I turned toward the pretty lady at my side.

As the Rainbow Cloak behind her fluttered, a pair of long, snow white legs wearing small barbaric boots stepped onto the hillside. Her laugh rang like flowing water, “Their attack is greater than the Han Tribe Horsemen by about 20%, completely exceeding the attack power of what monsters should have at Lv 62. Their defense is at 1200, quite high, and health is 10,000 per chariot. How should we fight this time?”

Yuzi Chengshuo narrowed her pretty eyes, saying, “I suggest we don’t be reckless and let Xiao Yao test the waters first. We can’t act before we think, seeing as how these Xianbei War Chariots are a bit odd. We must fight them carefully, treating them as if they’re bosses”

Lin Wan Er nodded, “Yea, I approve of Sister Chengshuo’s plan. We must be cautious.”

Raising my hand, I drew out my Frost Rain Sword making a “Keng” sound. I spoke in a low voice, “Beautiful Chengshuo, buff me with a Lv 6 [Encourage]. I’ll attack now. Darling Duck, lock onto me and be ready to heal me at anytime.”

Darling Duck laughed lightly, “Don’t worry boss, I won’t let you die.”

“En!”

.....

Hefting my sword, I dashed over to the nearest Xianbei War Chariot. I hadn’t even gotten close when the Departed Xianbei Soldier Spirit holding the reins already unleashed a cry, “There’s an intruder! Kill him immediately! Hyah!”

As he whipped the reins, the four war horses simultaneously lifted their front hooves and charged towards me with the chariot in tow. Concurrently, I noticed that the front of the war chariot had four

protruding spikes while the two wheels of the chariot also had spikes protruding from the side. If a person got tangled in that, his life would probably be over.

“Shasha.....”

My Purple Dawn Boots stepped onto the floor and with my body slightly leaning forwards, I quickly dodged the spikes on the front of the chariot. Swinging my Frost Rain Sword, I unleashed a [Fierce Ice Blade] from the side and attacked the core of the chariot, bringing about a large damage number–

1327!

However, the chariot was not something alive and as a result, it did not slow down from [Fierce Ice Blade] in the least. Rather, the spikes on the wheels suddenly caught me on my shins as it swept by causing piercing pain to burst out. I straight up took 794 points of damage. Though, that was not the end of it as the five undead pikemen on the chariot started to attack in unison. “Keng keng keng” sounds burst forth as pikes were thrust onto my Nebula Armor, bringing about a chain of damage numbers–

312!

297!

323!

.....

Five continuous hits! Fortunately, I healed myself just in time, or else I would have been slaughtered by a Lv 62 elite monster! Behind me, everyone stared in astonishment–

TL: Entire chariot counts as 1 monster

Wolf: “Fuck, is this still an Elite Monster? Are you sure it’s not a Lv 62 boss?”

Lin Wan Er clenched her fists, “So strong.....”

Yuzi Chengshuo’s pretty brows furrowed, “It’s not looking good. These

Xianbei War Chariots are quite difficult to kill.....”

Matcha gripped her longsword tightly, “We need to try another strategy. Don’t charge directly, or else it’ll be too difficult!”

.....

Right after I suffered the first round of attacks, I immediately hefted my sword and attacked from the rear. Leaping up, I grabbed the rim of the chariot and flipped over onto it, starting a [Combo] with my Frost Rain Sword. I attacked the Xianbei soldiers that were riding in the chariot four times successively–

2019!

2217!

2072!

2137!”

.....

In an instant, the four undead soldiers fell. My eyes lit up as I said, “Everybody pay attention, the health of the monsters in the chariot don’t exceed 2000 points; they’re very easy to kill!”

At this, a undead soldier on the chariot used his pike to attack, forcing me to get off.

Dong Cheng Yue raised her staff, unleashing [Pillar of Fire and Ice]!

“Hong!”

The war chariot suddenly shook, losing more than 1200 points of health. However, the soldiers riding the chariot didn’t even flinch and Dong Cheng Yue opened her small mouth in surprise, “It can’t be? I can’t directly attack the soldiers?”

Lin Wan Er softly answered, “Dong Cheng, how about trying a single target attack?”

“Oh!”

Dong Cheng Yue raised her delicate fingers with lightning writhing

around them. With a “Bang!”, a bolt of lightning shot out, wreaking havoc on the bodies of the several soldiers in the chariot. Killing them all in one go, it was too ferocious!

After losing its driver, the combat ability of the Xianbei War Chariot took a significant hit. As I restrained the chariot’s movements, our range DPS were able to cast their skills safely. Not even half a minute later, the 10000 health points had already disappeared.

“Jiujiu.....”

The four horses wailed as they fell to the ground. “Hua La!” At the same time, the Xianbei War Chariot fell as well, finally turning into a bunch of scraps.

“Shua!”

A gold beam of light fell as Matcha leveled up. She looked at me with her clear eyes “Boss.....this....”

“What’s the matter?” I asked.

Delighted, Matcha answered, “With just one Xianbei War Chariot, I gained 4% exp... So much....”

Dong Cheng Yue nodded in agreement “I also gained 1.5% exp. These gimmicky monsters definitely give a lot more experience compared to the ones on the first four floors! The disparity is really huge!”

I chuckled, “That’s good then. We’ll lure and kill the chariots one by one. Fighting on the fifth floor will definitely allow everyone to level up. Hehe, in a blink of an eye, Matcha is already Lv 45 and Wolf is almost Lv 50! This SS quest line is so broken!”

TL: Broken as in OP

Everybody became overjoyed as they understood that this one SS quest would boost our strength by quite a bit. Even for Lin Wan Er, Dong Cheng Yue, and me, the experience and equipment that we’ve gained since coming to Five Barbarians’ Desolate Tomb would put us on another level. Our equipment, especially, had improved by leaps and bounds.

.....

Continuing on, we lured out a second Xianbei War Chariot. There's experience to be had! I carried my sword and retreated backwards a bit, while saying, "Fox, use [Double Shot] to shoot the soldiers driving the chariot; that will make the chariot lose accuracy. Dong Cheng! Continue using your [Thunderbolt Finger]. If the chariot's pikemen die first, then the [Reckless Pike Thrust] skill will be nullified, allowing me to fight them head on!

Fox nodded. He raised his gun, cocked his head to one side, and aimed. "Peng! Peng!" [Double Shot], added with a regular attack, resulted in the soldier driving the chariot falling off with a howl. The unlucky undead, in turn, got ground into lumps of flesh by the chariot's wheels.

Dong Cheng Yue followed with a [Thunderbolt Finger], finishing it for sure.

"Peng!"

The war horses reared and started their [Savage Charge], knocking Dong Cheng Lei along with his axe back a few meters. He held his battle axe and panted roughly with a smile on his face "Brother Xiao Yao, this chariot's too strong... I can't push it back head on..."

I couldn't help but laugh "Silly kid, don't be too reckless.... leave it to me."

Activating [Haste], I swiftly infiltrated the chariot and with a swipe of my Frost Rain Sword, I cut the harness connecting the chariot with the horses. Suddenly the four war horses neighed in despair and the chariot had suffered a critical blow to its mobility. Adding in Dong Cheng Yue's two casts of [Pillar of Fire and Ice] and Lin Wan Er's [Bleed], the chariot crumbled into dust. The amount that the experience bar jumped could be seen with the naked eye.

Pleased, I looked out into the distance. The amount of Xianbei War Chariots here were sufficient to bring me up to Lv 57. Yes, maybe I could even reach the top three of the Ba Huang Leaderboards. The most important thing right now is to raise my popularity. As long as I am

recognized and have enough influence around Ba Huang City, I can easily recruit many skilled players with a simple wave or call when [Zhan Long] is established as a guild. Otherwise, we may become just like a zerg guild, such as [Wrath of Heroes]. At that point, we'll for sure lose to [Prague] and [Vanguard] in terms of power.

TL: Zerg = many people but not many skilled people

.....

Continuing on, luring and then disposing of the Xianbei War Chariots one at a time, we noticed their abnormally high drop rates. In general, for every three chariots that we killed, one piece of equipment would drop. Of course, most of the drops were Bronze or Green Tier, but occasionally, there would be Silver Tier equipment. Gold Tier items were basically non-existent. Well, it was to be expected or else equipment in general wouldn't be worth much money.

"Cough, cough...." Dong Cheng Yue suddenly stopped attacking and said "Wan Er, I was just talking to Q-Sword just now and he asked us if we had any plans tomorrow?"

Lin Wan Er sounded surprised "What's up?"

Dong Cheng Yue said with her smooth red lips "Umm... Tomorrow Q-Sword is going on a business trip to Shanghai to discuss a contract. He said that if we're free, he'll take a small detour and come see us in Hangzhou."

"Oh..."

Lin Wan Er knitted her brows, raised her head and looked at me, asking "Do we have any important stuff to do tomorrow?"

I shook my head "Except for trying to power level, we basically don't have anything important. Don't worry, if Q-Sword wants to meet with you guys, you guys should go see him. If my guild had Vice-Guild Masters as competent as you two, I would've tried to meet them already."

Little Wolf grinned "This is a common tactic to win over your members isn't it? Guild Masters tend to try to meet offline with central member

once and make an attempt to foster the relationships between everyone. Every big guild tries to do this.”

Yuzi Chengshuo grinned and laughed as well “I’m afraid it might not be as simple as that right? Q-Sword, known as Bei Chen Feng in the real world, is the CEO of the Bei Chen Enterprise in Louyang region of Henan province and is the top swordsman player in <Destiny>. He’s regarded as the most perfect man in the whole Chinese server. Thus, you would never believe how cocky his personality truly is. Now, he wants to personally go to Hangzhou to see you two beauties....Haha... I can’t explain it very well...”

Old K blurted out “Perhaps the rumor is true? That kid, Q-Sword, maybe he really does like Lin Wan Er?”

Suddenly, Lin Wan Er’s face paled. Looking at me and then at Old K, her face looked stiff “Old K! Quit your bullshit...”

I lightly bumped her shoulder and said “What’s wrong Wan Er? Old K is only saying some random nonsense...”

“I...I...nevermind...” Lin Wan Er lowered her head and stared at the Xianbei War Chariots’ remains. She then quietly said “Then...tomorrow afternoon, you’ll accompany Dong Cheng and I to see Q-Sword...Which also includes eating lunch together.”

I nodded my head and laughed “Ah, sure. To be honest, I also wanted to meet Q-Sword and see what he looks like. To be labelled as the most perfect man in the Chinese server, I really wonder what kind of person he is.”

Yuzi Chengshuo snickered “Oh? Does our handsome boy, Xiao Yao Zi Zai, feel a threat? Are you going to compare your looks with Q-Sword?”

“Hehe” I laughed, tightly holding my fists “A man’s beauty will never be in their looks! Instead I wanted to see how we would match up in a fight!”

Yuzi Chengshuo was stunned “Violence addict....”

With no retort I could only remain speechless “....”

.....

After grinding close to three hours, we killed all of the Xianbei War chariots. As I had estimated earlier, I reached Lv 57 with my experience hovering around 49%. Lin Wan Er and Dong Cheng Yue were both already Lv 58. Everybody in Zhan Long also gained quite a few levels: Little Wolf was at Lv 51, Old K and Fox were both at Lv 50, and Matcha was at Lv 47. Everyone's progress far surpassed my expectations, Old K's especially. As he's already Lv 50, turning in the quest should give him enough experience to reach Lv 52. Once he's Lv 54, he would be able to wield the Haunted Twin Blade Battle-Axe. And when he does, he'll become a killing machine! Whether comparing his levels, skills, or equipment, he could be considered one of the best. If he could improve his battle techniques a little more, he would basically become a strong commander on the front lines.

We all stopped and stood in front of an icy hall. There, a crystal coffin was sealed in ice with the contents blurry. Wrapped all around the coffin were blood red chains with copper coins and many talismans pasted all over them. As I was wondering if the spirit of the hero Ran Min was really sealed there, I looked up. Sitting above the coffin was a war general, covered head to toe with armor and holding a long sword. This was the last boss guarding the spirit of Ran Min – Xianbei Emperor – Mu Rong Jun!

Chapter 172: Thinking Carefully

“This mission has become impossible!”

Looking at the boss in the distance, I bit my tongue, “We’ve really stirred up the hornet’s nest this time, this is a Lv 62 Emperor Tier boss! I don’t know if we have a chance at beating this boss...”

Wan Er shared the boss’ stats, which immediately elicited responses from Wolf and Old K-

【Xianbei Emperor – Mu Rong Jun】 (Emperor Tier Boss)

Level: 62

Attack: 1820-2250

Defense: 1350

Health: 500,000

Skills: **【Scarlet Demon Slash】 【Scarlet Demon Summoning】 【Ancient Fighting Spirit of the Past】**

Description: Xianbei’s Emperor Mu Rong Jun. Cunning and brutal in nature, he is one to start wars without a second thought. During his rule, he encircled Ran Min’s force with 150,000 elite soldiers and annihilated the 10,000 soldiers of Ran Min. After Ran Min was capturing after falling off of his war-horse, Mu Rong Jun demanded Ran Min and his people declare him the emperor. Ran Min retorted, saying, “You barbarians are unfit to rule; the chaos you’ve caused only shows how unworthy you are. I refuse to recognize you as the emperor. As the hero of Middle China, I will not bow down.” In anger Mu Rong Jun order Ran Min to be lashed 300 times and sent to Dragon City for execution. And even now, after their deaths, Rong Ming Jun’s spirit continues to imprison and haunt Ran Min’s.

.....

Wolf clenched his fist, “This mission really is impossible. With a 2250 attack, a regular hit from him would do over 1000 damage to Brother

Xiao Yao right? And if the boss used his skills, brother Xiao Yao would die instantly!”

Wan Er walked up behind me with a small smile, “In that case, we should all be prepared to act as cannon fodder. We must not let Xiao Yao be the only one to die; it would not be right if we did!”

Dong Cheng Lei grabbed his battle-axe in preparation, “Brother Xiao Yao, I would happily die with you. I can take about 1 hit away!”

I couldn’t help but smile, “For now, stay behind me Ah Lei, let me go first and test it out if I need your help in fighting him. This is the server’s first Emperor Tier boss, we have to go all out on this battle, fight on so there won’t be any regrets!”

“Okay!”

.....

“Hua!”

Mu Rong Jun stood up to face us, his crimson red cape fluttered in the wind. With a grim snarl on his face, he laughed, “Even in isolation, this emperor always knew this day would come. There would always be brats from the later generation who would try and free Ran Min’s soul. Come then, if you can defeat me, then Ran Min’s soul will be free from his ten thousand year imprisonment! Or else, he will forever be a nameless ghost under my command!”

“Mu Rong Jun has declared war...”

Swallowing my own saliva, I gripped the Frost Rain Sword and said, “Yuzi Chengshuo, Darling Duck, pay close attention to me. I’ll be going up to test how strong the boss’ attack is!”

“Okay!”

With my sword at the ready, I stepped forward two or three steps at a time. Leaping off the ground with my Dawn Boots, I looked at the people below; my Frost Rain Sword shook slightly as I prepared to unleash a Lv 6 [Wind Blade]!

“Bang!”

Connecting with Mu Rong Jun’s shoulder with a boom, sparks flew as I saw the numbers float up:

1321!

Sure enough, the boss’ defense was really high. Even though my own attack power wasn’t all that weak, I could hardly break through his defense. Dropping down onto the ground, Mu Rong Jun got into battle mode as his sword slashed across my breastplate, returning damage to me in the form of a regular attack:

1179!

I looked at the damage with panic, with my Nebula armor, I had 1583 points of defense, which could compete with top ranked Monks! However, the boss was cutting through my defense as if he was cutting tofu! This was seriously too painful...

The worst had yet to come however; Mu Rong Jun suddenly grabbed my neck with his big hands, his longsword stabbing through me with a ripping sound. Blood dripped freely from where his blood red sword had pierced me, this was the power of his skill, [Scarlet Demon Slash]!

“1987 ! ”

I immediately retreated, and was fortunately healed by the two Healers!

“+1421 ! ”

“+1123 ! ”

Darling Ducky and Yuzi Chengshuo’s [Heal] landed at the same time, while Fox shot the boss with a “bang” to attract attention. Even they could see that I couldn’t hold on like this for much longer. An Emperor Tier boss’ attack was far too strong.

.....

Smashing my fist into the ground, [Binding Chain] successfully bound Mu Rong Jun! I let out a breath of relief, he would be snared for 3.7 seconds!

Summoning Baby Bobo to sneak in some attacks quickly, Dong Cheng Yue let loose a [Thunderbolt Finger], [Icicle Spell] and [Pillars of Fire and Ice]; it was unfortunate that the boss had a strong magical resistance, so the spells didn't do much damage.

"Hou!"

Mu Rong Jun snapped to attention, slashing with his sword, it was another [Scarlet Demon Slash]!

"Pa-cha!"

Baby Bobo took the brunt of the attack. A shiver ran through the tiny guy's body as it fell to the ground. A big number floated over the body, goddamn! It was no wonder my pet couldn't handle the attack:

2761!

Wan Er appeared by the side of the boss, her dagger glinted in the light, it was a [Bleed] and [Backstab] combo!

1278 !

1311 !

Mu Rong Jun bellowed with anger, slashing behind him with his sword. Wan Er hurriedly opened up her Iron Umbrella in front of her, "Bang!" Even with the umbrella protecting her, she was sent back 10 meters, and lost 1127 health points. Even though she was only at the boss' side for a second, she was able to defend and see through the boss' attack so quickly. Just by looking at her, you could tell that this girl is indeed a professional Assassin.

After Wan Er had disrupted the boss's field of vision, my skills went off from their cool downs. With a burst of air, I unleashed [Strength of a Thousand Men], followed by a [Combo], which brought the boss' aggro back onto me. With a horizontal strike, I was hit by a [Scarlet Demon Slash]!

1774 !

With another beam of holy light, my health was restored by 1400+

points. Yuzi Chengshuo called out to me, “Stand strong and don’t retreat Xiao Yao! Otherwise we can’t fight this boss, so far he has only used the one skill [Scarlet Demon Slash].. There won’t be too much of an issue unless it lands a fatal strike, but other than that, you should be fine.”

I gave a nod while enduring a regular hit. Darling Ducky hastily cast a [Heal] on me, at this point, both of the Healer girls faces were dripping with sweat. My health was constantly within the 20% to 50% range. If it were not for my own Lv 6 [Heal], I would not be able to endure very long in this battle.”

“Keep on fighting! The boss only has 85% health left!” Wan Er held her fist out in determination, standing not too far behind the boss waiting for a good opportunity to attack.

“My skills are still on cooldown, hang in there Xiao Yao!” Yuzi Chengshuo cried out, although she was the server’s strongest Healer, to see her not be able to keep up with the rhythm was somewhat concerning. Immediately calling out, “Wan Er, disrupt the boss’ tempo this instant, or else we’re done for!”

Wan Er didn’t answer with words, instead she immediately disappeared and in the next second, a spurt of blood was seen coming from the boss, it was a stealth strike with a stun effect! Unfortunately, the stun effect missed although the boss was still hit by the attack. Turning around to look at her, Mu Rong Jun struck out with his sword!

“Wu...”

Wan Er’s reaction time was super fast; before the boss’ sword fell on her, she flashed her dagger, [Gouge]!

“Shua!”

Success! A stun would be applied for 2.1 seconds!

“Wan Er, retreat!” I cried out.

Wan Er gave a tiny smile, her slender white legs trembled slightly as she retreated while still looking attractive as always.

.....

With a sharp cry, the boss awoke only to be met with my [Combo], attracting it's aggro once more, and the entire group began attacking again!

“Hoho...”

A few minutes later, Mu Ron Jun's health was less than 50%. Throwing up his arms and roaring, he was suddenly surrounded by 4 gray runes that floated around him. Holding his sword up, he began to chant with a low voice, “Ancient wolf king of the grasslands, awaken from your slumber in the dark abyss. Bring with you, your powers of **, awaken the sleeping demons of blood. I, Mu Rong Jun, summon thee—Scarlet Demons!”

TL Note: ** is in the raws

“Shua!”

A giant red circle appeared in front of him. In the next moment, a blood-red demon came marching out. It was a Lv 62 Purple Tier boss' named Scarlet Demon, a summoned monster!

“It's over, even more chaos!” Wan Er's face paled, “Dong Cheng, your Tigerman and my Tigerman will move forward to block the Purple Tier boss. We'll figure out what to do next after we kill the summons! They only have 50,000 health, so they'll be easier to kill; Li Xiao Yao, you'll have to endure the boss without us for now!”

“Pa!”

Mu Rong Jun's blunt side of the sword smashed against my neck, causing me to recoil. Calling out while I retreated, I said, “Don't worry! I'll take care of this side, you guy's focus on killing the Scarlet Demons quickly or else we'll be doomed!”

The group split into two sides, I kept with me the 2 Healers to fight the boss while Wan Er waited for an opportunity to provide cover for me. Wolf attacked the Scarlet Demons with a [Gourge] while the two Tigermen acted as Tanks and they wouldn't die too soon. Old K brandished his battle-axe, and a [Whirlwind Slash] had engulfed the

Scarlet Demon. Soon after, the Scarlet Demon smacked Old K, nearly splitting him into two. Losing almost 89% of his health almost made him piss himself from the fright, so he fled 100 meters away from the Scarlet Demon, dragging his battle-axe behind.

.....

“Kacha!”

My whole body ached with pain as my instincts told me the boss had landed a fatal strike on me, I had died!

Yuzi Chengshuo quickly casted a [Revive] on me, bringing me back alive. With a great deal of regret, she said, “Xiao Yao, I feel that we should all be extremely sorry for you, to be the only person to consistently lose a level...”

I got up from the ground and grabbed my sword, casting [Turmoil Sword] before attacking the boss once again. “It’s nothing, any Tank should have the resolve to face this type of situation...”

.....

As the boss health got lower and lower, Matcha reminded us: “Everyone be careful! Once the boss reaches 10% or 20% health, he may activate his third skill, [Ancient Fighting Spirit of the Past]. It’s definitely a large-scale attack, so be prepared to defend against it!”

Wan Er’s eyebrows crinkled, “If it’s really what you say, then all of our waiting has been for naught, there simply won’t be any point to continue with the mission....”

Matcha shook her head, “No, there’s a way to prevent a failure of the mission...”

“Oh? What way is that?”

Speaking softly, Matcha said, “When [Ancient Fighting Spirit of the Past] is cast, Darling Duck will cast [Revive] on Yuzi Chengshuo. [Revive] has a cast time of 1.5 seconds, so in the case that everyone is killed, Yuzi Chengshuo will be resurrected. Straight away, she should cast [Revive] on

Xiao Yao, so that both the Tank and Healer will be alive. Hopefully, after 15 seconds, Yuzi Chengshuo can cast [Revive] on Darling Duck. Afterwards, the two can slowly cast [Revive] on the rest of the party. The boss won't be able to recover his health back to full, and this way we'll be able to kill him!"

Wan Er gave a big grin, praising her, "Sister Matcha really does think things out carefully. She deserves the title of 'Godly Strategist'! How reliable!"

Matcha gave a faint laugh, "This was only just a plan in the making, I don't know if this plan will yield the results we desire..."

Chapter 173: Killing Mu Rong

“Bang!”

Smoke flew out from the gun and the shot that Fox fired decreased the boss' health to 20%. This attack made Mu Rong Jun go into berserk mode. Carrying his longsword, he roared

“Life and death are dictated by the Heavens, yet the wandering soul of a warrior will never rest. Ancient Gods, heed my commands. Descend upon the Earth and crush these creatures who do not bow before you.”

“Boom!”

The whole tomb trembled as the air turned blood red; his skill was about to be unleashed!

I quickly moved forward and used my [Binding Chain] to bind the boss, but it wasn't enough to interrupt the skill. Matcha also raised her sword and commanded her Illusionary Butterfly Queen to attack with her [Vines of the Dancing Butterfly], but a big “MISS” appeared as the vines failed to bind the boss. They also could not interrupt the skill!

“This is terrible...” My heart sank.

Matcha hurriedly looked at Darling Duck and nodded. Darling Duck firmly nodded back.

.....

“Whoosh...:”

Suddenly, crimson cavaliers, each brandishing a long sword, appeared in the air. It was an huge AOE light spell that covered the entire floor and there was absolutely no way to defend it!

“Peng!”

“2479 ! ”

My body shivered as my health plummeted. Darling Duck quickly raised her staff and cast [Revive] on Yuzi ChengShuo. Yuzi ChengShuo quietly stood, with a confident and indifferent air.

“Peng Peng Peng...”

Countless crimson cavaliers descended, each of them the spirit of an ancient warrior. Under such an indiscriminate bombing, all of the player names in the group lit up one by one which showed that they were about to die. Song Han, Matcha and Wolf had already fallen!

“Pa...”

Lin Wan Er held her iron umbrella and tried leaping to avoid it. But the “light rays” suddenly struck her umbrella, and she received an attack from [Ancient Fighting Spirit of the Past]. The beautiful Miss whimpered “boohoo” before she fell, her snow white knees hitting the ground.

With a trembling shoulder, I died along with Lin Wan Er. Before my spirit was released I saw Yuzhi ChengShuo, Darling Duck, and Dong Cheng Yue fall to the ground lifeless. The whole team had been exterminated!

“Shua!”

As we had planned, Darling Duck’s [Revive] brought back Yuzhi ChengShuo just as [Ancient Fighting Spirit of the Past] ended. And after that she then took a few steps back and immediately cast [Revive] on me!

A bright light shone as I stood back up. I hurriedly took out a healing potion to recover my health. Then, with the addition of Yuzhi ChengShuo’s [Heal], my health was almost completely restored.

I gripped my sword tight, took a few steps to distance myself from the boss to gain some time. While summing Baby Bobo, I shouted: “Yuzhi ChengShuo, move back behind that big rock, I’ll attract the aggro of the boss!”

Yuzhi ChengShuo moved back while saying: “Okay, be careful!”

.....

Mu Rong Jun was outraged, he held his sword high and rushed towards me once again unleashing his [Scarlet Demon Slash].

My heart sank yet again. A basic attack and [Scarlet Demon Slash]

almost took away all of my health. In addition, the durability of my Fire Beacon Helmet and Nebula Armor had fallen slightly below 20%. If the durability dropped any more, then my defense stat would be in jeopardy .

After 15 seconds, another bright light began to shine; Yuzhi Chengshuo had used [Revive] to revive Darling Duck. The moment Darling Duck was revived, she immediately healed me. With a worried look, she said: “Boss, don’t die again!”

I quickly swallowed a Lv 6 Health Potion and said “I’ll try not to. Quickly revive Wan Er and Dong Cheng, they are needed to kill this boss. Let them summon their Tigermen to help too. I can’t cope with this alone any longer. So hurry!”

“Yes!”

Darling Duck raised her hands and a golden light shone upon Lin Wan Er as she revived. She immediately stood up, rushed forward with a dagger in hand and stabbed the boss’s back with a sneak attack, temporarily stunning him.

I held my sword, waited for around 2 seconds and healed myself again. Just like this, with such a small number of people, we tried very hard to control the situation. When Dong Cheng Yue revived, the condition had more or less stabilized.

Then, from the party chat, Matcha’s voice sounded, “Wait a moment! Yuzhi ChengShuo, Darling Duck, don’t revive the others anymore!”

“Why?” Yuzhi Chengshuo asked, surprised by the odd request.

Matcha giggled:”Level 6 [Revive] needs 120 mana, look at your mana. After reviving everyone, will you still have enough mana left to heal boss?”

Yuzhi Chengshuo gasped, silently marveling Matcha’s genius. “Wow, even I almost didn’t realize it...Matcha is indeed capable, you have even calculated that...”

Matcha smiled softly: “I’m really just a strategist, I can’t do much else. But I have already worked out everyone’s stats. It’s just simple math and

it can be easily calculated. You guys should keep fighting, we are going to turn into corpses soon. We must defeat the boss in under 3 minutes, keep fighting on!

“Yes!”

.....

In the short 3 minutes, the five of us kept up with the extreme situation. On one hand, we had to make sure I didn't die and on the other hand, we also had to manage the two Healers' mana. If the fight dragged on for too long, we would run out of mana. The two Healers didn't dare to use their Lv 6 [Heal] and used their Lv 4 [Heal]s instead, just to save 10 mana. It really put them in a difficult position.

“Shua shua shua”

Song Han, Old K, Wolf, Matcha, and Dong Cheng Lei revived, one after another. They quickly healed themselves with potions and summoned their pets. Matcha squinted her eyes at the boss and said: “His health is almost at 10%, I don't know what will happen this time...:”

My heart sank: “We can only hope that things will go smoothly from here on. If we die again, the experience earned on the fifth floor will be in vain...”

“Shua!”

A flash of scarlet red light darted across the boss' back and Lin Wan Er brushed past me, her long hair fluttering in the wind. She laughed softly, “It's okay, we can definitely finish him off. We must have more confidence in our own skills!”

“Yup!”

.....

At that time, Mu Rong Jun bellowed: “Restless spirits of the Ancient Warlords, heed my command and bestow upon me thy power!”

“Shua!”

A bright column of light shone upon Mu Rong Jun's body and countless

humanoid shadows descended from the skies, filling the boss' body. Afterwards, Mu Rong Jun's body got a lot bigger.

“Ding!”

Battle System Announcement: Please note that the Xianbei Emperor – Mu Rong Jun has just received a power-up from ancient souls. Level +3 and all stats have been increased by 15% for 10 minutes!

.....

“This is horrible....” Yuzhi Chengshuo whispered: “You have to defend well!”

“Keng!”

Just a single blow from the boss' [Scarlet Demon Slash] had caused the Frost Rain Sword to almost collapse. I felt a hot, burning pain in my shoulders as my health plummeted down more than 2700+ points; I almost got 1 shot! The two Healers hurriedly healed me, but how could they heal me back to the full health?

I staggered backwards, helplessly watching Mu Rong Jun approach me!

“Peng!”

Suddenly, I felt someone push me aside; it was Dong Cheng Lei carrying his battle-axe. He shoved me away quickly, then rushing towards the boss, his battle axe spewing flames and shouted: “Asshole, don't hurt my big brother Xiao Yao!”

“Pu...”

Mu Rong Jun slashed his sword horizontally and thrust into Dong Cheng Lei's abdomen!

“2918 ! ”

He was killed instantly...

“Ah Lei!”

I gritted my teeth and used [Strength of a Thousand Men] on the boss' body. Right now quickly killing the boss would mean less people dying!

“Shua!”

Once again Matcha’s Illusion Butterfly Queen used [Vines of the Dancing Butterfly], but this time it succeeded. The vines continued to bind the boss for a total of 4.7 seconds. At the same time, Matcha spread wings and took to the skies. She pointed her arms to the right, and said: “Boss, there’s a rock over there. Let everyone go there; Dong Cheng Yue can fly to the top of the rock and cast her magic from there while the rest of us block the boss at the bottom. Maybe we can kill the boss this way!”

I nodded and grabbed Darling Duck, and rushed towards the rock. Lin Wan Er, Dong Cheng Yue and the others also rushed over.

“Pa...”

Dong Cheng Yue landed on top of the rock gently. The two Tigermen roared and stood guard in front of the rock. As long as the aisle was blocked, the boss shouldn’t be able to climb up.

Unfortunately, we seemed to have underestimated the boss’ capabilities. Mu Rong Jun held his sword and rushed forward, immediately unleashing a sweeping attack in between myself and the two tigers-

“1726 ! ”

“1821 ! ”

“1804 ! ”

.....

“This won’t do...” Lin Wan Er held her dagger. She looked at Matcha and laughed helplessly: “This boss’s AI is too clever, whoever is blocking his way is killed...These type of PC Game tactics won’t do anymore...”

TL: Dong Cheng has the aggro on her and thus the boss should technically try to get to Dong Cheng – It’s like the old blue buff leashing in League

Matcha pursed her lips: “Wuuu...Continue to fight, there’s no other way...”

The boss’ health kept decreasing but he still slashed and slashed until

he decapitated the two defense type Tigermen. His next slash killed Baby Bobo instantly. Lin Wan Er couldn't bear to watch and cried, "Wuu....our pets were chopped up like vegetables..."

"Peng!"

The boss suddenly broke through our blockade and rushed forward, aiming his sword towards Dong Cheng Yue. Matcha hurriedly shouted: "Dong Cheng, quickly fly away..."

Dong Cheng Yue hurriedly fled, but unfortunately the boss unexpectedly jumped upwards, raised his sword and slashed Dong Cheng Yue!

Dong Cheng Yue's [Mana Shield] broke apart, and at the same time a damage number appeared—

1451 !

Dong Cheng Yue had less than 5% of health left while her face was ashen: "Oh my God, without [Mana Shield], his attack would have killed me 8 times over..."

"Keng!"

The moment the boss dropped to the ground, my attack followed through. The Frost Rain Sword cut deeply into Mu Rong Jun's breastplate while I shouted: "Let's continue, we should re-organize our defenses. Dong Cheng go fly around and start again from the top of the rock..."

Dong Cheng Yue hesitated : "Ohh...Okay..."

.....

The skill [Vines of the Dancing Butterfly] was used again, followed closely by my [Binding Chains]. We used every single way of defending against the boss' rage mode. In order to finish this Xianbei Emperor, we battled with our lives on the line...

Time passed slowly and at last, Mu Rong Jun health was depleted!

Dong Cheng Yue immediately stopped her attacks: "Xiao Yao, kill him!"

I gritted my teeth and replied: “Continue attacking. Don’t care too much about the drops, otherwise Wan Er will be killed...”

“Okay!”

My Frost Rain Sword and Dong Cheng Yue’s [Thunderbolt Finger] reached the boss’ neck at the same time. In the next moment, my [Combo] hexagrams shined out, along with [Thunderbolt Finger], and at last this Emperor-Tier boss – after killing so many of us – howled pitifully as it fell to the ground-

“The northern wolf tribe’s howl will never be stopped, just you wait, you arrogant Chinese Empires, we will return! Ran Min, I hate the fact that I cannot live for another 5000 years, otherwise, I would have you suffer forever as my slave. May the Heavens curse you, so that you can only be my slave forever! I, Mu Rong...”

TL: There are many chinese empires/kingdoms

With a “Ka Cha” sound, my sword swung down and took the boss head. I Couldn’t bear him insulting the us anymore.

.....

“Hua la la...”

One by one, a bright pillar of golden light appeared and surrounded us. Everyone had leveled up! I guess it was compensation for losing our level. Mu Rong Jun had also dropped a lot of things; everything looked golden and expensive, getting us all excited.

“Will there be an Emperor Tier Equipment, will there be an Emperor Tier Equipment...?” Lin Wan Er giggled softly.

I walked forward and picked up one of the drops and laughed: “Just maybe!”

Chapter 174: Desolate Divine Bone Chain

“Ding!”

System Announcement: Player Xiao Yao Zi Zai has killed the first Emperor Tier boss. As a reward, level +1 and charm +6. He has also gained great fame in his main city!

.....

What a nostalgic sound, at last I managed to be the first to kill again; this time, the first Emperor Tier boss. I'm so happy!

Yep, we shouldn't delay anymore. Everyone quickly looked at the equipment drops!

Moving forward and kicking away Mu Rong Jun's corpse, we found a lot of items. There were 5 spirit gems in addition to a myriad of cards and 3 pieces of equipment. The first one was a magic staff flickering with electricity. Next was a shiny pendant glowing with an orange light that had a majestic-looking bone sword embedded into it. I liked that. Lastly, there was a menacing dark looking blood red dagger, full of killing intent. This was something any Assassin would really love!

Taking the staff, I stretched out my hand, the stats of the staff appeared in the air-

【Floating Heart Staff】 (Purple Tier Equipment)

Magic Attack: 620-880

Endurance: +39

Magic: +37

Extra: Increases 8% damage on magic attack

Extra: Increases the durability of Mana Shield by 17%

Required level: 57

Required profession: Mage

.....

Raising the staff, I laughed: “First equipment, Lv 57 Purple Tier staff, we only have one Mage, so Dong Cheng Yue will be receiving it. No objections, right?”

Everyone nodded.

I handed the staff to Dong Cheng Yue and she immediately equipped it. A super beautiful staff appeared in her hands transforming our little Mage into an Arch Mage.

Continuing on to the the second piece of equipment, it was the necklace. Holding it in my hand, I felt a chill penetrate my hands. Reaching out, the equipment details appeared in front of me. All eyes’ bulged and mouths’ gaped at the sight.

【Desolate Divine Bone Chain】 (Emperor Tier Equipment)

Endurance: +50

Strength:+47

Magic: +44

Extra: Increases the attack of [Combo]s by 25%

Extra:Increases defense by 150 and increases health by 20%

Required Level: 57

Required Class: Swordsman

.....

My eyes bulged and I almost fainted. Such an overpowered necklace; it was a Swordsman’s dream equipment! And it was Emperor Tier! This was the first equipment that could increase 3 different stats! Needless to say, strength and endurance was something that every Swordsman needed to have, but the item also added 44 Magic points, an attribute that every high leveled player needed to have in order for them to use their skills without worry. Furthermore, it also increased the [Combo] damage by 25% which meant that my [Combo] would be an Ace at single target damage. In addition, the additional 150 defense and 20% health increase, was like icing on the cake; this necklace was just too powerful!

Holding the necklace, I couldn't even speak, wiping the drool off my face, I asked: "What do we do...?"

Lin Wan Er giggled: "I don't know, there are only two Swordsmen, you ask Matcha..."

Matcha blinked her eyes, laughing out loud "Boss, wipe off your drool. Rest assured, Matcha won't fight with boss for it. I'm still lacking 10 levels...Boss, I'm happy enough if you can just give me your current necklace...."

I nodded my head and gave Matcha my [Necklace of the Broken Army] and equipped [Desolate Divine Bone Chain]. Immediately my stats jumped by a whole bunch-

【Xiao Yao Zi Zai】 (Tomb Guardian of Dragon City)

Level: 57

Physical Attack: 1513-1971

Defense: 1643

Health: 3165

Mana: 1336

Charm: 40

.....

My health was over 3100, my defense exceeded 1600, attack neared 2000, and mana just over 1300. If these kinds of stats were leaked out, they would scare a lot of people. In addition, my charm rose to 40, the next time I PK someone, my chances of stealing a good piece of equipment would be really high.

Continuing on, I lifted up the last piece of equipment, the blood red dagger. This immediately caught the attention of Little Wolf and Lin Wan Er. The two Assassin's eyes gleamed brightly; there is no profession in this world that desires an extremely strong weapon more than an Assassin. The Assassin profession was: one hit kills and if the one attack failed then the Assassin would be the one dead. Their main path lied in

high attack and critical strike chance.

“Shua!”

The radiance of the blood red dagger ripped in the wind as I lifted it up, the brightness was unmatched, instantly Lin Wan Er’s pair of beautiful eyes become dazed. Little Wolf also clenched his fist: “Damn...”

【Scarlet Edge】 (Emperor Tier Equipment)

Attack: 780-1050

Agility: +48

Endurance: +48

Strength: +44

Extra: Increases 10% damage on physical attacks

Extra: Ignores target’s defense by 9%

Required Level: 57

Required Profession: Assassin

.....

“Damn, isn’t it too powerful?” Old K clenched his fist, his eyes almost popping out already.

Dong Cheng Yue said: “Gasp... in an instant [Haunted Twin Blade Battle-Axe] was overtaken...”

I nodded holding the dagger and said: “An owner must be chosen for this dagger but we have two Assassins taking part in this quest. Wan Er and Little Wolf, come roll. Whoever rolls higher wins!”

AN: Assassins have two weapon slots: main dagger attack 100%, secondary dagger can only utilize 70% attack

Lin Wan Er nodded: “Yup!”

Little Wolf was nervous to the point of death: “Heavens bless me...”

“Hua La!”

2 dice flew out, and finally stopped at-

“47 ! ”

“62 ! ”

Lin Wan Er won!

As I gave the dagger to her, I was filled with mixed emotions: a little disappointed and happy at the same time.

Lin Wan Er equipped her dagger quickly before turning to Little Wolf and smiling sweetly: “You are Xiao Yao’s best buddy so I won’t let you be at a disadvantage. I took the [Scarlet Edge], so I want to give you my Purple Tier Lv 46 dagger. This dagger is 6th on the Top Equipment List for Daggers...”

Little Wolf snapped out from his daze and quickly received it: “Thank you so much, pretty Miss Lin...”

Lin Wan Er smiled softly, skillfully rotated the [Scarlet Edge] in her palm and laughed quietly: “It’s what you need... Furthermore if what Xiao Yao said happens, sooner or later Dong Cheng and I will also join Zhan Long and at that time we’ll all be family. In the end, there is no need to argue about it too much. [Scarlet Edge]’s required level is 57, you wouldn’t be able to use it anytime soon, let me use it for a while...”

Little Wolf nodded: “Yup yup!”

.....

I distributed the rest of the Pardon Cards and Spirit Gems and then said: “We shouldn’t waste anymore time, let’s finish the quest. Today we need to get to sleep early so we don’t stay up late again. Otherwise these beautiful ladies will quickly turn into old hags...”

Lin Wan Er laughed: “Okay, let’s go!”

Our group of people came to the tomb again and uniformly stood in front of the crystal coffin.

“Is this Ran Min’s tomb ?” Old K asked, clenching his fists.

I nodded and started to peel off the sealing charms covering the chains. Once done, I broke the chains with my Frost Rain Sword. With this, hopefully, we could open the coffin. We each pushed against the the crystalline lid with our entire body weight, slowly it moved.

“Crash...”

We were shocked when we looked inside; there, in the crystal coffin, was a severed head. It was the face of a hero with a long wavy beard and piercing black eyes. Was this hero Ran Min’s?

Everyone became solemn. I held my sword and bowed my body as I carefully picked up the head. Then a system notification chimed in my ears-

“Ding!”

System notification: Your SS-Level Quest the 【Five Barbarians’ Desolate Tomb】 has entered the next stage!

Quest Description: You have found the Emperor Ran Min’s head, but now you have to find his body to awaken his spirit!

.....

“Hmm..”

A thundering sound rang out, shaking the Five Barbarians’ Desolate Tomb. Suddenly, the crystal coffin shattered, signifying that the seal was broken and a rotating magic circle appeared. At it’s center the form of a mighty warrior slowly materialized, sword in hand. Gazing at his face, I saw that it resembled the head of Ran Min that I was still clutching. The person before me wasn’t Ran Min’s real body but Ran Min’s spirit.

Slowly, Ran Min’s spirit solemnly knelt on one knee and said: “Many thanks to you all, later generations of the Han. Because of you guys, I have been granted new life. Alas, but with only this much, my soul remains unable to acquire salvation. Please, reunite my body and head. Only then will my soul find relief.”

I stepped forward and asked “Where is your body?”

Ran Min looked up to me and said: “Youngster, I was slain at Dragon City...my body should yet remain in Dragon City. Mu Rong Jun only took my head to seal here and buried my body in the Dragon City. You should go to the Dragon City to find my body!”

TL: The Dragon City Xiao Yao is from is actually called something like Cold Barren Dragon City. The Dragon City where Ran Min was killed was a district in Chaoyang City.

http://en.wikipedia.org/wiki/Longcheng_District – So Dragon City = Ran Min and [Dragon City] = Xiao Yao’s place

“Dragon City?” I frowned: “This... is there any other Dragon City on the continent of <Destiny>? Don’t tell me it’s...[Dragon City]?”

Ran Min was slightly surprised: Where is [Dragon City]?”

I explained: “It’s a newly established city. It lies on top of the Ice Spine mountain range that separates the north and south side of the continent....”

“Ice Spine?” Ran Min gasped slowly and said, “That’s it! It was there! I remember! When I died, my whole body was freezing cold; so cold, that I lost all sensation in my body. It should be there, in that freezing place. Youngster, please go to [Dragon City] and renew your search for my body. My soul will continue dwell inside my head you are holding. Only after my head and body are reunited will I be free from my ten thousand years of captivity!”

I nodded seriously: “We will! Leave it to us!”

.....

Ran Min’s soul began to slowly dissipate. Becoming a cloud of smoke, it drifted back into the lifeless head of Ran Min.

Carrying Ran Min’s head in my arms, I turned over to look at everyone and said: “Looks like we’ll need to head back to the [Ba Huang City] area. [Dragon City] is near there and is where my teacher resides. We should walk there instead of using our city teleport scrolls because Cheng Shuo, Wan Er, and Dong Cheng would return to [Fan Shu City], which is way

too far from [Dragon City].”

The three beauties nodded “Let’s go then!”

.....

We left the [Five Barbarians’ Desolate Tomb], and saved the old blacksmith man along the way. Then we began the long journey, which involved a lot of demon and monster killing, to [Dragon City].

Close to an hour later, we arrived at the bottom of Dragon City. The city was still the same as always, cold and desolate.

Far to the side was a simple tent and an extinguished bonfire. A snoring sound bellowed forth from inside the tent. This was my past instructor, the Beast Tamer Dalin’s house!

Moving forward, I tapped Dalin’s shoulder and said: “Teacher, wake up?!”

“Ahh!”

Dalin suddenly woke up and baring his teeth, attacked me, bellowing: “What mouse dares to disturb the mighty Dalin!”

I was thrown to the floor. Getting back up, I raised my Purple Dawn Boots and kicked him hard!

“Bang!”

Dalin rolled out of the tent, and only then, when he was fully awake, did he recognize me: “Brat, how come it’s you? Damn your strength is like a warrior’s. In just 3 days I can’t even recognize you anymore!”

I laughed softly: “Teacher, please help me pass a message to the Dragon Palace Guards, I need to go in!”

“Oh?”

Dalin tilted his head and looked at me: “King Luo Lin has decreed that guards from the lower standings can’t go in, you...uhmm, you are just a Tomb Guardian, so you are not qualified to step into the Dragon Palace.”

I opened my arms, showed the head of Ran Min and said: “What if I had

this?”

“That’s....”

Dalin’s whole body shook, his face a picture of pure shock: “What... What a mighty warrior spirit! I recognize this person. This is Ran Min. He has a statue in Dragon City! He was an ancient hero, how did you brat find his head?”

I laughed: “It’s a long story, could you quickly pass a message to the palace guards to let me and my friends go in please?”

“Okay!”

Chapter 175: Warrior Soul Reborn

Dragon City.

TL: The Dragon City mentioned in this chapter is for Xiao Yao's Dragon City.

Fine snowflakes swirled above the frozen ground as we headed up, escorted by NPCs. Now, I wasn't so cold, but Lin Wan Er had been shivering non-stop since the beginning of the trip. She even gave me a pitying look and said "You actually work in this freezing hell-hole without heaters?"

Awkwardly I laughed: "Yea, but usually I'm skipping."

"....."

.....

Two of Dragon City's guards led the way. Looking at me respectfully one of them asked: "Young Tomb Guardian, do you truly have the head of the ancient Hero Ran Min?"

I nodded in reply: "Yup. Please lead the way!"

In the air above Dragon City, fallen snowflakes danced about riding along strong gusts of wind. Tightening my cloak, I looked at Li Wan Er beside me and said laughingly: "You haven't frozen to death yet, right?"

Wrapped tightly in her Rainbow Cloak and with a slightly pale face and faint purple lips, she replied: "No, no matter how cold it is, in the game nobody can actually freeze to death. This Dragon City is really big! Unfortunately, it's a bit desolate...There's not even a shop in sight....."

I couldn't help but laugh out loud: "No average person would be able to live in this kind of place. Everyone who settled here are either warriors or people with special skills. Towards the north of the city, hoards of unknown monsters roam around. It's suicidal for normal people to come out here."

Li Wan Er nodded her head: "Eh, I see that This street is so long.

Does it lead directly to the main hall of the general? Who is the big boss here?”

“Luo Lin, King of Dragon City”

“Oh, never heard of him.....“

“.....”

.....

“Hua Cha! Hua Cha!”

Far away, on top of a set of stairs, roughly a hundred guards armed with long swords were split into two lines. From the depths of the city’s halls, a single person rushed out. He had jet black hair, a pair of shimmering blue eyes and was covered in dark red armor with heavy sword strapped to his waist. There’s no mistaking it, that’s the king of Dragon City – Luo Lin!

Luo Lin strode quickly to meet with us. He had an intimidating aura that made Dong Cheng Yue, Yuzi Chengshuo, and Darling Duck back away. He looked at me, bright eyed, full of hope and expectations with his voice booming “Young Dragon City warriors, was it you that brought back news of the spirit of hero Ran Min?”

Behind Luo Lin, there was shadow trailing him. It was Frost wrapped in a white leather cape. She looked at me and slightly bowed her head with a smile.

I looked back at Luo Lin and nodded in confirmation, “My friends and I have conquered many hardships and have entered the deepest parts of the Five Barbarians’ Desolate Tomb. We found the brave spirit of the hero Ran Min, as well as his head. However, upon hearing that Ran Min’s body was buried underneath the cold plains of Dragon City, we could only hope to put his soul to rest by reuniting them”

Luo Lin approved sincerely “Good. Young man, could you let me see, his excellency’s, Ran Min’s head?

I relaxed my arm that was gripping the head and unwrapped the cloak that was covering it. Underneath, Ran Min’s head stared straight at Luo

Lin. Luo Lin, a bit startled at first, immediately knelt with one knee on the ground, and passionately greeted “I, Emperor of Dragon City -- Luo Lin, deeply pay my respects to your excellency, Ran Min!”

“Shua!”

Ran Min’s spirit appeared, separated from the head, and stood in the air before me. Looking at Luo Lin, Ran Min’s heroic soul calmly said “So, Dragon City is no longer ruled by the Mu Rong clan? Looks like I have missed out on many things that have happened in these past ten thousand years. Luo Lin, I hope to find my body and be buried together with it so that I can be at peace and finally go to the place where I belong.”

Old K raised his battle axe and stepped forwards “Ran Min, where are you going?”

The spirit of Ran Min grinned “I’m a spirit. Naturally I am going to the netherworld to drink Meng Po soup and cross the Na He bridge. I will accept the nine*nine cycles of reincarnations whether I become a man, a bird, livestock or even a demon. I’ll accept any fate that the gods command!”

TL: Chinese believe, everyone upon dying goes into the netherworld, drink the Meng Po soup to forget about the past, cross the Na He bridge to crossover to the land of the dead, and then only get judged as to which of the 9 cycles that they will go to (including heaven)

Old K tightly balled up his fists and said no more.

I stood up and said “ Master Ran Min, if you could only stay here, it would be so much better!”

The spirit of Ran Min looked a bit shocked “Young man.... You guys... aren’t willing to part with me?”

Lin Wan Er nodded “Yup!”

Suddenly, Ran Min’s spirit couldn’t help but yell to the sky “ I, Ran Min, one who has battled all his life, one who suffered such a pathetic demise, cannot believe that there would still be people who would take pity on

this life of mine, life that left me 10,000 years ago. Regrettably, we are already separated by the boundaries of life and death and it is impossible for me to remain by your sides. Good bye youngsters, may you all forever maintain your dignity! It's better to die than to be humiliated!"

On the side, Luo Lin stood up as well and solemnly said "Your excellency, Ran Min, this minor general has a suggestion, though I'm not sure whether or not you are willing to hear me out?"

The spirit of Ran Min nodded "Let's hear it!"

Luo Lin grinned saying "With 10,000 years of hardships, your excellency Ran Min should possess god-tier powers and a strong spirit as well. This power should be enough to reconstruct your body and completely revive. Underneath the plains of our Dragon City, there is a hidden spring which is said to have the power of reviving the dead. With our Dragon City's most powerful priests casting forbidden enchantments of life, we would be able to repair your body. Like this, you would basically be revived!"

The spirit of Ran Min startled for a moment and raised his fists and said "You want to repair my body? Doing this, are you hoping that I, Ran Min, will in turn feel obligated to help you fulfill some wish? Kid, I can tell, your eyes are full of ambition!"

Luo Lin knitted his eyebrows and replied without any hesitation: "Yes, using my ambition, I hope to stabilize these lands. I wish to use my power to defend the last haven of the humans, the moon elves, the barbarians, and the wind elves. Your excellency Ran Min, if you choose to revive, I only have one request. Please stay and protect Dragon City, the border city of the human race. Your homeland lies towards the south. The youngsters behind you are all descendents of the people from your homeland. Are you willing, for their sake, to revive and go into battle once more?"

The spirit of Ran Min looked at me, then at Lin Wan Er, and then at Old K and the rest of us. I nodded "Please stay!"

Finally, the spirit of Ran Min gravely nodded in agreement "Ok, I'll accept your suggestion. However, Luo Lin, remember this. If one day, I

find that you betray us, I, Ran Min, will fight heaven and hell, tooth and nail, to show you my wrath!.

Luo Lin knelt down on one knee and solemnly promised “I, Luo Lin, pledge on my life my eternal loyalty to mankind!”

“Ok, then let’s go!”

“Yes! Please follow me....”

.....

Following Luo Lin, we all entered deep into the castle. After a while, we arrived in a huge chamber. Ran Min’s body rested at the center of it, being sealed for the last 10,000 years. Even the coffin had rust marks. Opening the lid, we found Ran Min’s body which still retained his appearance of when he had just been slain. His body retained a pink rosy color with the exception being his neck which had deep black clotted blood.

“Let me handle this...”

Frost walked forward, carefully holding the hero Ran Min’s head and placed it on top of his body gently. Then she took out some silver colored thread and needle and meticulously sewed his head back onto his body. After a while, the sewing was complete. Then, I went forward and lifted Ran Min’s corpse in one breath. I asked “Frost, where’s the hidden spring? Let’s head over.”

“Sure!”

As Frost started to lead the way, Luo Lin whistled and an old man suddenly appeared in the chamber. He wielded a dragon bone staff in his hands and was covered in a black cloak. He was to accompany us to the depths of the hidden spring.

After walking around a couple hundred meters, we found a river of green spring water flowing through the ground. I gently placed hero Ran Min’s corpse in the middle of the spring. The black robed man immediately positioned himself to the side, holding up the dragon bone staff. With a loud voice, he started chanting a spell in a language that we

couldn't understand. Swirls of blood red runes started to rise up into the air and formed some sort of giant magic circle with the hero Ran Min's corpse at the core.

As the spring water splashed onto Ran Min's corpse, one could visibly see the wounds on hero Ran Min's neck starting to heal. Under the effects of magic, Ran Min's body quickly started to turn to a blood red color before turning into a sea blue. In the air, slivers of blood started to ooze its way into the corpse slowly!

Finally, after ten minutes, Luo Lin raised his brows and said "Your excellency Ran Min! Your body is now ready to reunite with your soul!"

Ran Min's soul, which was waiting attentively at the side, immediately jumped out and with a "Shu!" and entered the body!

"Ah....."

With a long groan, Ran Min's body slowly rose from the spring. Sleeping for ten thousand years seemed to have taken a toll on Ran Min, making him forget how to even stand properly as he staggered around for a second. He looked at his own fist and grinned "I.... Am I revived with just that?"

The old magician nodded "Yes, ancient one...."

Ran Min, with a flame in his eyes, violently thrust out a punch at a boulder of rock. "Peng!" The rock crumbled in an instant and the whole underground passage shook violently.

Frost worriedly urged "Your excellency, please stop... One more of those and Dragon City may come crumbling down...."

Ran Min chuckled loudly.

Luo Lin, as he admired Ran Min's power, said "As expected, your excellency does indeed have strength rivaling that of gods! Magnificent!"

.....

Right at this time, a ring rang through the air. Finally, our quest had been completed--

“Ding!”

The system announced: Notice, player Xiao Yao Zi Zai and his party of 10 have successfully cleared the SS quest line [Five Barbarians’ Desolate Tomb]. As a reward, each player will receive: Level +1, Charm +5!

.....

Additionally, there was the experience granted from completing the quest. I was suddenly Lv 58 and my experience bar at 89%. Only a little bit more to Lv 59! It didn’t end there. With a “pa da!”, besides the experience and gold coin rewards, a ring also appeared inside my bag!

Excitedly, I took out the ring. It was a crimson ring with a battle axe picture carved on it. The crimson ring glowed warmly, giving off an orange color and emitted a feeling of some noble spirit within my palms. I looked at its stats and almost died out of happiness—

【Crimson Dragon Ring】 (Emperor Tier)

Strength:+50

Endurance:+49

Agility:+47

Extra: Increase the user’s attack power by 180

Unique Skill: [Shield of the Crimson Dragon] – Greatly increases the user’s defense for 7 seconds. Consumes 40 points of fury.

Level requirement: 58

.....

I felt like I had just won the lottery! It was another Emperor Tiered item! We lucked out so hard!

Quickly equipping the Crimson Dragon Ring, replacing Man Luo’s Ring, all my stats increased by leaps and bounds!

【Xiao Yao Zi Zai】 (Tomb Guardian of Dragon City)

Level: 58

Attack: 1689-2164

Defense: 1645

Health: 3370

Mana: 1336

Charm: 45

.....

My basic attack damage has already surpassed 2150 points! Adding in [Turmoil Sword], buffs, and other equipment bonuses, my true damage should already be more than 2500 points! Frightening!

Looking around, the other few people were also showing smiles.

Lin Wan Er held up a delicate looking chestplate and laughed “A Emperor Tiered leather armor! Hoho, fate has really smiled upon us!

Chapter 176: [Flying Dragon]'s Activity

“An Emperor Tier leather armor?” I looked at her in amazement. “Wan Er, is it really an Emperor Tier equipment?”

“It is!”

Wan Er brushed her hand and equipment stats appeared in front of her. It was indeed a Lv 58 Emperor Tier leather armor. Owning a piece of equipment like that, Wan Er's defense will skyrocket and coupled with her Moon Elf unique Iron umbrella, Wan Er's defense was definitely much higher than the normal Assassin. Perhaps her defense was already on par with a heavy armor class player of the same level.

“Wolf, Matcha, what did you guys get?” I turned to them.

Wolf said, “A Lv 52 Purple Tier dagger! Now I've got a dagger in each hand. Hehe!”

Matcha said, “I'm still at a low level, so I only got Lv 48 Purple Tier boots. The attributes are pretty good and are comparable to your own Purple Dawn Boots, Boss...”

Holding his battle-axe, Old K boasted, “I got a Purple Tier ring with a lot of attack and I can even use it right away! I'm also Lv 52 now, so in another 2 levels, I'll be able to equip the Haunted Twin Blade Battle-axe. At that point, I can then pretty much charge in and break through any enemy frontlines.”

I nodded, “Not bad!”

Besides us, Darling Duck and Dong Cheng Yue each got Purple Tier items as well. Fox, on the other hand was luckier and got a Lv 51 Emperor Tier necklace that would increase his attack by 11%, not bad at all! In short, this Five Barbarians' Desolate Tomb journey had increased our battle potential immensely. It can be said that we struck gold, especially those who got an Emperor Tier equipment! Emperor Tier equipment wasn't like regular Gold or Silver Tier equipments. Their value wouldn't drop much anytime soon so when we sell them later on, they'd still sell

for an incredibly high price.

TL: As time goes on and good equipment becomes more common and thus the prices of 'regular' equipment would drop. Despite that, Emperor Tier will reign supreme for a while.

.....

I grinned and flaunted my reward, the Crimson Dragon Ring. The whole group was stupefied after looking at the additional effect – that was far too strong – of the ring. It was to be expected since the unique [Shield of the Crimson Dragon] skill gave 7 seconds of increased defense at the cost of 40 Rage. Each player has a maximum of 100 Rage at any one time, so one can use this skill twice in a row without waiting for the points to recover.

TL: Rage is a new stat that was unlocked with high tier equipment and charges with damage/attack

“Do you want to put the [Shield of the Crimson Dragon] to the test?” Wan Er chuckled.

I nodded, “Bring it on!”

“Pa!” a blood-red battle flag fell between Wan Er and me. While I didn't activate my shield, I beckoned with one hand to Wan Er, “Come on Wan Er. Come at me with a normal attack!”

“Sure!”

Wan Er gently approached, brandishing her Scarlet Edge. A slash across my Nebula armor caused a damage number to float above–

914!

I was secretly surprised. Goddamn, Wan Er has such a strong attack; my defense of 1645 was non-existent under her attack, it was as if she was cutting through paper. If she were to have used a skill, then I would have died in two hits.

“Isn't it time you activated your shield?” Wan Er happily said.

I nodded and activated the ring's skill, [Shield of the Crimson Dragon]!

“Hong!”

A dragon’s roar echoed as a red ray of light immediately engulfed me. The crimson light condensed and took the form of a dragon, encircling my whole body like a gigantic shield that protected me from all sides. So this was the ring’s unique skill!

“Come on!”

Wan Er’s white arm swung and attacked me twice!

317!

289!

.....

Dong Cheng Yue’s mouth dropped open with shock. “Woah, [Shield of the Crimson Dragon]’s gives so much defense if Wan Er was only able to do that little damage. Arrows and bullets wouldn’t even be able to break through your defense!”

I nodded while both of us accepted the draw and laughed, “This ring is really awesome! In the future when we fight in team fights, I’ll be able to activate [Shield of the Crimson Dragon] at the start and rush into the frontlines. Relying on the fact that they won’t be able to kill me soon, the rest of our team should be able to close the gap quickly while I’m still alive. This tactic will surely be the bane of our enemies!”

Wan Er giggled, “Okay then, stop bragging. It’s almost night time. Dong Cheng and I want to go offline, take a bath and then rest. Do you want to go get dinner afterwards?”

“Yeah. The mission is finished. Thank you everyone for participating!” I said.

Yuzi Chengshuo nodded happily and said, “Alright, I’ll head back to Fan Shu City now. Well done guys! ”

Everyone said goodbye to one another and left for their own separate destinations.

.....

Ran Min, after being revived, remained on [Dragon City]'s peak and continued to train while also guarding that part of the city. Luo Lin had been wise in persuading Ran Min to stay because in doing so he had raised [Dragon City]'s battle capacity. In this tumultuous period, when wars become abundant and [Dragon City]'s population is low, splitting up the remaining forces between work and war would be difficult without Ran Min.

“Shua!”

Returning to Ba Huang City, I looked in my inventory and thinking of nothing else to do, I went straight to the auction house to sell the True Soul Spear. A Lv 53 Purple Tier weapon that was the strongest spear right now should fetch a high price. I set the minimum price at 3000G straight away with the highest bidder winning in 12 hours! However, if anyone wanted to, they could purchase it immediately for 15,000G. Amazingly, without having to advertise it myself, the spear reached first place in the auction house right after I put it in.

After putting the spear up for auction, I sat myself near the city walls and set up a stall to sell all the Silver and Green Tier items I got from Five Barbarians' Desolate Tomb. In 10 short minutes, all 7 of the items were sold, netting me a profit of 91G. Looking at Wan Er and Dong Cheng Yue, their character portraits dimmed as they both went offline.

Bringing up the system fairy, I glanced through the forums to discover the forums full of excited chatter about the first Emperor Tier boss defeated in the server. Because my name was revealed as the one who defeated it, I became the focal point of all the gossip. Everyone began to discuss the Emperor Tier boss in great lengths, wondering about what items he dropped. After looking through the equipment rankings and seeing the Emperor Tier items that recently appeared, even more speculation arose as everyone began to formulate new theories. For example, one commenter said, “Zhan Long's Leader Xiao Yao Zi Zai has gained several Emperor Tier equipment and will definitely seek revenge against Jian Feng Han.” Another, “Xiao Yao Zi Zai killed the boss and found the Emperor Tier Scarlet Edge dagger but out of his love for the

number 1 beauty of Fan Shu City, Cang Tong, he gave it to her as a token of his undying devotion.” I couldn’t bear reading the rest of the comments, they were all filled with mindless speculation that I couldn’t take seriously.

.....

After logging off and removing the game helmet, I let out a breath. The SS ranked mission was finally completed and it had gone particularly well. The drop rates and final mission rewards were both especially gratifying. After completion, the SS ranked mission also gave us a ton of experience, Wolf got to Lv 53, Old K and Fox both reached Lv 52, while Matcha leveled up to Lv 48, not to mention all those Purple and Emperor Tier items that we changed into; this was our Zhan Long’s upward climb to power and using the merits of our core members, we’ll attract even more experts to join. The epic undertakings of Zhan Long were on the way of becoming sung in taverns and told throughout Ba Huang City.

“Hi, Xiao Yao?”

By my side, Glasses was holding onto his helmet as he stared at me with wide eyes. “The one that killed the Emperor Tier boss, that couldn’t have been you, right? God damnit, tell me it isn’t true!”

I smiled. “It was me. I was invited by Fan Shu City’s Wan Er and Dong Cheng Yue to complete the mission together. We were able to kill the boss although we lost a few levels doing so. What’s wrong, Glasses, do you have a problem with it?”

Tang Gu’s face went green, “Motherfucker, it really was you. To have acquired an Emperor Tier item, you should treat me to a meal now!”

I smiled, “We will talk after I return, I’ll be taking a shower now. I’ve been online for far too long, I’m starting to stink!”

“Ah, go on then!”

.....

I entered the bathroom and took a cold water bath, feeling much more refreshed after it. As I looked at my handsome reflection in the mirror, I

saw a face that has grown more stern compared to my younger days. My features, looking sharp as if they were engraved with a knife, revealed an unwavering determination. The muscles on my body were well built and defined, as if carved from stone. Bullet scars dotted my chest mixed among a tangle of various thin scars from knife wounds, all of which I had accumulated over the years since I was 17 years old. I have been constantly teetering dangerously on the border between life and death.

Truth be told, it was impossible to come out unscathed, but in the end I still survived. Admittedly, surviving had nothing to do with luck; one could only rely on themselves. As the old man had always said, 'Only those who have walked through many life and death situations can be called true practitioners.' Perhaps I have already accomplished the task he had set out for me.

Getting dressed, I heard the phone ring: Wan Er was urging me to turn up at the girls' dormitory lobby at exactly 8pm to go for dinner. As expected, when I arrived at 8 PM, the two beautiful girls were already waiting for me downstairs. We all walked towards the Hunan restaurant to hopefully eat our fill.

After eating, on the way back, I quietly followed Wan Er by her side.

"Li Xiao Yao?" She looked at me suddenly.

"Yes." I gave her a wide smile. "Young miss, what's wrong?"

Wan Er gave a small laugh, "It's not anything major, but I wanted to tell you that tomorrow at 11AM, Q-Sword and Jian Han will arrive at Hangzhou's Western District. At that time, we'll be going out to greet them at the campus gates. Then I'll be inviting them out to eat lunch as a sign of our friendship. You're also from Hangzhou, so come with me."

I nodded slightly, "Of course I'll be coming. Don't forget, I am your bodyguard, if you are meeting with a stranger, I have no reason not to follow you..."

Wan Er couldn't help but smile, "Okay then, follow me if you must. I never said you couldn't follow me."

“Okay!”

.....

As I got back into the dorms, it was still early, so I logged back online.

“Shua!”

Appearing in Ba Huang City, I went to take a look at the Auction House. I received a pleasant shock there; unexpectedly the True Soul Spear I had put on the auction had already been sold! There was no bidding because someone had used the “buyout option”! 15,000G with the current exchange rate of 1:7, was about 105,000 RMB! How could anyone spend that much money for a single spear!?

TL: 105,500 RMB translates to roughly 17,000 USD

I took a look at the buyer’s name—Mu Tian? Why did this name sound so familiar?

Looking at his information, I saw—

Mu Tian Lv 52, Silver Swordsman.

City: Ba Huang City

Guild: Flying Dragon

Position: Team Leader

TL: Team leader is the position below Guild Master, Deputy and Elders

.....

So [Flying Dragon] bought the True Soul Spear? That’s kind of dumb... To give a swordsman the True Soul spear Isn’t that kind of a waste? They should know that 25% specialization bonus is a scary thing if used correctly... A Knight wielding this True Soul Spear would be on a completely different level than a Swordsman wielding it!

I took another look at the rankings list. Unsurprisingly, the owner of the True Soul Spear was someone else: Drunken Spear, the Nature Knight. Surprisingly, [Flying Dragon] spent over 100,000 RMB for the True Soul Spear just to give to Drunken Spear. Goddamn, [Flying Dragon] sure

knows how to get money. They don't ever seem to be short on that end!

Taking out all of the gold directly, I threw it into the auction house for sale. It was all sold in 10 minutes given the large amount of people selling Gold at a 1:8 ratio while I was selling it at 1:7. Thus over 105,000 RMB was sent to my bank account, I even personally paid the tax fee. Splitting the 105,000 RMB into ten different packages, I sent equal portions to Wan Er, Yuzi Chengshuo, and Darling Duck's bank accounts. With the price of the True Soul Spear easily searchable, no one could say they were treated unfairly. In a few minutes, everything was done and the transfer was confirmed.

Finally I went offline, it was time for me to sleep!

Chapter 177: Inevitable Battle

The next day, after having more than enough sleep, I woke up at 9:30 am. Looking at the time, I suddenly jumped out of bed, remembering that there was an important meeting today. [Hero's Mound]'s Guild Master will be coming to check on his two Deputy Chiefs and I, who was Lin Wan Er's bodyguard, should prepare myself as well. Even if I lose to him as a person, it does not mean I would lose to him in spirit!

I hurried and got up. After washing up, as I looked at the clothes in my closet while my face couldn't stop twitching.

"What happened?" Tang Gu looked at me and laughed.

I pondered and asked: "Glasses Bro, today I am meeting an important person. His position is far from ordinary, the CEO of some big company, so I don't want to look too shabby in front of him. Given these conditions, what should I wear?"

Tang Gu pushed his glasses up and chuckled: "Love Rival?"

"NO!" I denied fiercely.

"Then isn't it easy? If the other party is the CEO of a company, even if you dress nicely, it won't change a thing. You can't outdo him. You have to think outside the box. I would suggest wearing something casual."

"Casual wear?"

"Yup, or wear something slightly more formal, for example...There's a VERSACE store across the street, although it is slightly more expensive than average. If you buy a whole suit, it should be around this much!" He held up 2 fingers.

Stunned, I asked: "2000?"

"Dream on, 20,000!"

"Damn it!"

My heart was aching to the point of dying. I clenched my fist and said: "Isn't 20,000 too much? Forget it, I'll just wear my old outfit..."

Tang Gu laughed: "Don't. I'm guessing you are going to meet someone related to Lin Wan Er. Otherwise, with your 'Xiao Yao Attitude' you wouldn't even be nervous. Just go, the outfits in VERSACE are not too bad, you should just buy an outfit and a new pair of shoes. With your handsome looks, you definitely won't lose to anyone."

I pursed my lips and hardened my heart: "Alright then...20,000, then let it be 20,000..."

.....

Hurrying out the door, I entered the clothes store nearby. I purchased a casual black outfit with a price tag of RMB 24,000, and then I bought a new pair of shoes for another 800 RMB. I felt like my heart was bleeding, all this money came from the equipment and gold that took me great pains to acquire.

But when I thought about it more carefully, it's actually fine. No matter what, I would eventually need this type of outfit. In the future I may need to carry out a job that would require me to dress up as a celebrity to confuse the enemy. At that time, these clothes could take the limelight.

I was continually prepared myself until 11 am when my phone rang. It was Lin Wan Er:

"Li Xiao Yao, are you ready yet?" She asked, chuckling.

I nodded: "Yup, I'm ready. Has Q-Sword arrived?"

"He's coming in a minute. Come to the girls dormitory quickly, Dong Cheng and I will come down shortly. We'll go to the school gate together and welcome him..."

"Okay!"

.....

Walking downstairs, I rushed to the girls dormitory. Lin Wan Er and Dong Cheng Yue wore their normal school outfits and looked like normal students. I, on the other hand, was the only one who had overdressed!

"Wow..." Dong Cheng Yue looked at me while I was walking towards

them. Her pretty little face suddenly blushed and she didn't even dare to look at me anymore, while pulling Lin Wan Er's arm she said: "Wan Er, today Li Xiao Yao... Didn't that guy...suddenly become more handsome..."

Lin Wan Er also looked at me dazed, her small red lips softly moved: "I... I don't know..."

I coughed once: "Are you guys ready? Shall we go?"

"Yes..." Lin Wan Er snuck a look at me again, her face blushing red.

Dong Cheng Yue stared at me hard, laughed softly and said: "Xiao Yao, today you changed into a VERSACE outfit? Dressed like that, becoming so handsome, are you going to a marriage interview later? Wuu... looking at you like that, my heart is beating a little faster..."

I said: "Get a hold of yourself..."

Dong Cheng Yue: "Sure..."

Lin Wan Er: "..."

.....

While waiting at the school gate, barely 5 minutes later, a black Land Rover slowly drove by and pulled over to the road side.

"Ka!"

The car's door opened and a proud looking figure stepped out from the car. The impressive looking, handsome young man wearing a brown outfit looked around 25. A light smile appeared on his face as he walked straight to us. He looked at Lin Wan Er and Dong Cheng Yue and laughed: "Indeed, you both are just as beautiful as in the game. You are Cang Tong, and you are Cang Yue, right?"

Lin Wan Er laughed and nodded: "Guild Master, good afternoon!"

Q-Sword laughed heartily: "In the past I heard that Cang Tong was the Lin Wan Er that sang 'Heart of Time'. Now that I know it really is you ... I remember that I was crazy about you for quite some time..."

Lin Wan Er laughed softly: "Guild Master, you praise me too much,

this...”

She turned and pulled me to her side, her pink tinted wrist twirled around my arm. She laughed: “This is Xiao Yao Zi Zai, you should have met him before..”

Q-Sword stared at Lin Wan Er’s intimate attitude towards me as shock flashed across his eyes, but quickly a warm smile appeared on his face “Hello, Xiao Yao Zi Zai. I know your name, it’s Li Xiao Yao. It’s a good name. Turns out you really are Wan Er’s friend in real life, the gossip in the forum was not baseless.”

I nodded and smiled: “Hello, Q-Sword, Bei Cheng Feng, you are just like what the rumors described you, very handsome!”

Lin Wan Er shook my arm: “Enough, will you guys stop talking? Let’s find a place to eat, I’m starving since I didn’t eat breakfast this morning.”

Q-Sword laughed: “I know a good restaurant with delicious cuisine nearby, shall I take you guys over there?”

“Okay. Thanks!”

At this time, someone else stepped out from the driver side of the car. A 35 year old healthy looking man confidently strode toward us. He smiled softly and reached out his hand: “You must be Xiao Yao Zi Zai right? Hello, I’m one of the elders in [Hero’s Mound], my game ID is called Jian Han...”

“So you’re Jian Han, hello...”

I reached my hand out and smiled. Then, I helped Lin Wan Er step into the car. Land Rover was very spacious with ample room even for the three of us. Q-Sword kept chatting with Lin Wan Er and Dong Cheng Yue about their guild management and as the only person without a guild, naturally, I couldn’t join in the conversation.

.....

In the restaurant, our table was full with all sorts of dishes.

Q-Sword was an extremely well-mannered person and after three rounds

of toasting with his face slightly red, he laughed: “<Destiny> has been online for almost a month already and the competition is extremely fierce, especially in Ba Huang City, the most chaotic city of all. Ah, I’ve heard that Xiao Yao Zi Zai’s relationship with the [Flying Dragon], [Vanguard] and [Wrath of the Heroes] guilds in Ba Huang City is not the best, I guess it must be very stressful?”

I put down my chopsticks and smiled: “Actually, it’s nothing much: just a competition of who’s stronger. Anyways, you can’t really kill a person in game so as long as your account credentials and ambitions are still there, then you’ll never be gone.”

“Well said!” Dong Cheng Yue blinked her beautiful eyes and giggled: “I’ve always liked Xiao Yao’s stubborn and never ending willpower...”

Q-Sword smiled and said: “Although Fan Shu City is not as chaotic as Ba Huang City, there are still [Emerald Porcelain], [Narcissistic Society] and other rivals, so we can’t sit back and relax. I plan to build [Hero’s Mound] real life base in the coming month, it will be located just outside the cities Nan Jing and Shang Hai. At that time, Wan Er and Dong Cheng, you must come and join us, okay! If you like it, you can stay at the Guild’s Base and even have a spot in the Guild’s Residence. You two would definitely be our Guild’s central Symbols!”

Lin Wan Er frowned a little but didn’t say anything while Dong Cheng Yue looked at Q-Sword with confusion while asking: “I thought that Wan Er and I had told you already, we’ll stay in [Hero’s Mound] for only 3 months, so we definitely can’t stay at the Guild Base.”

Q-Sword gasped and said: “It can’t be. Wouldn’t it be better if you stayed with [Hero’s Mound]? Everyone in the guild is very close, how could you have the heart to leave [Hero’s Mound]? Ah, if Wan Er and Dong Cheng leave the guild, all the guys in [Hero’s Mound] would be so heart-broken. They even might riot... You wouldn’t want me, the Guild Master, to step down because I was unable to control the rebellion right?”

Lin Wan Er looked up, her beautiful eyes firm and steady: “I’m sorry Q-Sword, we promised another person that if he were to set up a guild and if

the guild became powerful enough, we would join him!"

Q-Sword was shocked: "Who? Who's guild is that?"

I stood up and smiled lightly: "My future guild –Zhan Long!"

Rage filled Q-Sword's eyes, no matter how well-mannered a person was, they would not be able to endure such sudden turn of events. He pursed his lips and snickered: "So that's the story... Hehe, I almost forgot the common saying, the early bird gets the worm...Haha, so be it. But since Wan Er and Dong Cheng will join you, Xiao Yao Zi Zai's guild, I will be at ease. Because with you as the Guild Master, at least you won't waste these two beautiful Deputy Leaders' abilities, right?"

I nodded and smiled: "Of course I won't, they are all my people. I'll never give them up!"

Q-Sword laughed but said no more.

.....

When it was about time to finish our meal, Jian Han stood up, looked at me, with his gaze holding a hint of provocation. He laughed and said: "We've had enough beer and food. I've heard that...Xiao Yao Zi Zai is a professional martial artist in real life and is really strong. We the House of Bei Chen have also been training in martial arts for generations. How about...we find a place to spar a little, share some basic moves?"

Having expected him to ask that, I chuckled softly and nodded: "Sure, Let's find a place to spar a bit!"

Lin Wan Er felt that there was something wrong with the situation and hurriedly grabbed my arms: "Li Xiao Yao, don't..."

My gaze was firm as I smiled softly: "Wan Er, don't worry. If I remembered correctly, Wang Ran's dojo has a nice ambiance and not many people that go to the dojo. Could you ask her to bring the keys to the dojo? We'll just spar a little there; it should be empty today anyways."

Jian Han nodded:"Good. Decisive!"

Lin Wan Er pursed her lips, looking a little worried. She wanted to say

something but didn't while Dong Cheng Yue bit her lips and whispered into Lin Wan Er's ears: "Don't worry, I don't think Xiao Yao will lose. I think he's the strongest person in the whole world, second to none!"

Lin Wan Er:"..."

.....

1 PM sharp, at the dojo.

"Fu...:"

Wang Ran slowly pushed the big door open and looked towards me, Jian Han and Q-Sword. She quietly asked: "Wan Er, who are these two people? They look young and familiar,"

Lin Wan Er replied softly: "They are Q-Sword and Jian Han, members of the [Hero's Mound]."

"What?"

Wang Ran opened her mouth wide: "Gasp...Is Li Xiao Yao sparring Q-Sword? This...This is going to be an exciting fight....."

Chapter 178: Dueling Q-Sword

“They... can’t be serious, right?” Wang Ran looked at us and softly asked.

Li Wan Er bit down on her lips: “I don’t know.....from the looks of it, the situation doesn’t look too good.....”

With her arms crossed, Dong Cheng Yue said with a faint smile: “Good luck Xiao Yao, we support you!”

Q-Sword looked around and was at a loss for words, as he said: “Dong Cheng, Jian Han is in the same guild as you. You are a Deputy Leader, Jian Han is an Elder, which means he is your subordinate, yet you’re actually cheering for the opponent.....”

Dong Cheng Yue gave a sheepish smile: “Guild Leader, Xiao Yao is my friend; if I don’t cheer for him, what kind of friend would I be.....”

Wan Er snickered but said no more.

Q-Sword speechlessly shook his head. He was completely helpless against the two beautiful Deputy Leaders.

.....

“Sha Sha.....”

Stepping on the ground with his cloth shoes, Jian Han took off his coat and revealed his muscular body. Slowly lifting his right hand, he smiled faintly and said: “Henan Bei Chen, Xing Yi Quan style, Bei Chen Hong, please enlighten me!”

TL Note: The spoken address is a common way that martial arts practitioners introduce themselves in Wuxia stories. “Henan” is the area of origin and Wikipedia has an article on “Xing Yi Quan”(literally Form-Intention Fist, or Shape-Will Fist). Bei Chen Hong is his real name.

I furrowed my eyebrows as I also took off my coat and hung it on a rack to the side, revealing a casual shirt underneath, I rolled up the sleeves and folded my hands behind my back, before replying with a smile: “I do not

know the specific origins of my martial arts but I do know that it's a form of the Northern Fists. Come, let me experience the might of the House of Bei Chen's Xing Yi Quan!"

"Ok!"

Without saying another word, Jian Han, with a single step, leaped at least 2 meters forward. His right fist suddenly shot out towards my chest. One could even see the faint glow of energy surrounding his fist!

Royal Air Level ?!

I was slightly taken aback. Never would I have imagined that Jian Han had reached the Royal Air Level. However, judging by the force of his energy, he had barely gotten to the Royal Air Level, as it did not feel powerful enough.

"Pa!"

Latching on to his hand, I borrowed the strength from his attack and pulled him in. Pushing down on my left foot, my right knee suddenly went straight for his chest.

"Huh?!"

In a daze, Jian Han hurriedly crossed both arms in front of his chest to block my attack.

"Peng" A loud noise rang out as Jian Han was forced to take consecutive steps backwards as a result of my attack. With both his arms slightly trembling, his eyes were filled with both shock and fury. Shaking his arms, he charged toward me with arms like two swirling dragons. His footwork was ever-changing and unpredictable while his fists came from seemingly impossible angles. There was no doubt that he had grasped the essence of Xing Yi Quan – the form following the intent, totally unpredictable and seemingly miraculous.

Sending Qi to both fists, I launched two attacks in a split second. "Peng Peng" the two strikes deterred further attacks from Jian Han. At the same time, I leaned forward and immediately threw another punch at him!

“Ha!”

The fist landed directly on Jian Han’s chest. As he was knocked back, his whole body seemed to lose all energy while his face went completely pale. In fact, he had temporarily lost the ability to utilize his Qi.

Q-Sword immediately supported Jian Han, nervously asking: “Third Uncle, are you ok?”

Jian Han slowly shook his head and his gaze fell on me as he spoke softly: “This Li Xiao Yao..... he is indeed an expert. My Qi has been almost completely suppressed by him. His attack combined both Tai Ji Chuan and Xing Yi Quan. He truly is a difficult opponent!”

TL: Two martial arts styles

After Jian Han spoke, he paused and looked at Q-Sword before saying: “Ah Feng, do you want to go and have a try?”

“I was intending to do so!”

Q-Sword tightened his fists and said with a confident smile: “Li Xiao Yao, is it possible for me to experience your ability?”

With both arms tucked behind my back, I calmly replied: “[Hero’s Mound]’s Guild Leader is a guest so if you want to exchange a few blows then come. However, we will stop upon contact. After all I do not want to injure you nor do I want to be injured by you!”

TL: Akin to saying if my strike touches you and you have no way of countering, we stop

Q-Sword laughed out loud: “Of course!”

.....

Q-Sword took off his coat and with a determined expression, slowly channeled energy into his arms. Energy that could be barely seen by the naked eye began gathering around his fists. Another Royal Air expert. In fact his energy completely surpassed Jian Han’s!

Li Wan Er seemed to notice that something was amiss. Wrinkling her eyebrows, she said: “Q-Sword, Xiao Yao, let’s stop here. Continuing any

further might end up affecting our friendship.....”

Q-Sword couldn't help but laugh: “Wan Er, you don't have to worry. It's not everyday that I get to meet such a young and strong opponent. If we don't exchange a few blows today, I would regret it for the rest of my life!”

Li Wan Er looked at me: “Li Xiao Yao.....”

“Yes, Wan Er?” I grinned, looking at her.

“Be careful.....” She looked at me nervously.

I smiled slightly: “Don't worry Wan Er, I am fine.”

.....

Even Wan Er seemed to have notice the change in Q-Sword. Although Q-Sword appeared aloof and nonchalant outwardly, his heart was a raging furnace; I had almost injured Jian Han. Once we started fighting, there was no way Q-Sword would hold back. Broken arms and broken legs were not uncommon during spars; especially spars between experts like us who have surpassed the Refined Body Level.

“Sha Sha.....”

Q-Sword suddenly approached. Stepping on the dojo's thin dust, form following his intent, his right fist swiped toward me.

My Yi Hai clearly saw this coming and I parried it away with my arm. But Q-Sword suddenly shifted his legs. Concentrating strength into his arm, he suddenly launched three consecutive strikes at me. A thick layer of energy was wrapped around his fist. He knew that I was also in the Royal Air Level, and he was not going to hold back at all.

I could not counter his fast and deadly strikes so I could only lift up my arms to block against three strikes. “Pa pa pa”. Q-Sword's attacks were actually quite fierce and my body uncontrollably slid backwards. “Peng”. I was knocked into a steel training dummy behind me and when Q-Sword saw that, he gave out a low grunt and lifted his leg to kick heavily!

“Hua!”

I quickly maneuvered out of the way and heard a “Peng” sound behind

me. The training dummy was trembling and a deep foot print could be seen; the steel layering had been deformed by his kick!

Utilizing my footwork, I stepped to the right and with my back toward Q-Sword, I launched a sharp elbow strike!

“Peng” My attack connected with Q-Sword. His whole body staggered toward the training dummy. I did not relent at all, smoothly turning around I struck out with my fist, directly aiming at Q-Sword’s back!

“Ugh....”

Q-Sword gave out a low groan as he pushed against the steel dummy towards the left! My fierce attack continued forward and with a loud “peng”, the training dummy was broken in half with the screws and steel plates clattering against on the ground.

.....

“My God...” Wang Ran gaped with her small mouth: “This..... are Li Xiao Yao and Q-Sword still human? What kind of strength is this, it is..... it is actually so overpowering...”

Li Wan Er looked at me with her pair of beautiful eyes, but remained silent.

Dong Cheng Yue tightly clenched her small fists and mumbled: “Xiao Yao, don’t lose.....”

.....

“Hua.....”

Following the sound of the whistling wind, Q-Sword’s next round of attacks had already begun. Slightly leaping, a heavy arm blow fell from above like an axe. This was exactly Xing Yi Quan’s essence, forming shape with willpower.

I raised my arm horizontally to parry and retreating two steps after a “Peng” sound of our arms connecting. Q-Sword followed closely but suddenly moved his body downwards. Out of nowhere both fists rose up from below. This was a Bursting Fist technique that struck like a

ferocious tiger!

I quickly pushed his two fists apart, but the force behind his attack left a trail of Qi that brushed past my nose. Then, Q-Sword, utilizing the force of his deflected attack, leaned backwards and immediately launched two more attacks with his legs.

“Hu.....”

The Qi energy in my body started to flow slowly and continuously while my Yi Hai gained clarity. For an instant I could feel the changes of the energy flow around me as I took advantage of it and switched my left fist into palm strike and with two “Pa pa” sounds I swept away Q-Sword’s attacks. Moving instantaneously, my right fist gathered energy as it slowly moved back. Focusing almost 100% of both strength and Qi into my blow, I struck!

“Ah!?”

Q-Sword immediately panicked. Without pause, he crossed his arms in front of his chest to endure my attack!

“Peng!”

With a single strike, Q-Sword’s body was almost blown away. Consecutively retreating for more than a dozen steps, he crashed into the bamboo sword rack in the dojo with a “Peng” sound. The rack immediately shattered and countless bamboo swords splintered as Q-Sword’s noticeably weaker body laid in the pile of broken swords. His face was pale, both of his arms were trembling, and his brows were locked in a deep frown.

“Ah Feng!”

Jian Han hurried over to support Q-Sword: “How are you? Are you ok?”

Q-Sword’s complexion did not look very good. Taking deep breaths, he panted: “Li Xiao Yao is indeed a high level expert. He was able to predict the hidden changes in each of my attacks. Otherwise I would not have lost so easily..... In addition, he.....”

“What about him?” Jian Han asked.

Q-Sword took a deep breath: “I am afraid that Li Xiao Yao is already at the peak of the Royal Air Level. The power of his Qi far exceeds that of either of us!”

Jian Han had a shocked expression: “Huh, no..... no way? Who exactly is this kid? I have never heard anything about there being anyone at the peak of the Royal Air Level in modern China. On top of that, he is still so young.....”

.....

I walked up and extended a hand with a smile: “You ok?”

Q-Sword took a hold of my hand and pulled himself up. Dusting off his body, he smiled: “It’s not too serious but Li Xiao Yao, your martial arts are indeed formidable. Third Uncle and I have lost without any complaints!”

On the side, Wang Ran laughed: “Actually Li Xiao Yao’s true expertise does not lie in hand to hand combat. Shouldn’t he be at his strongest when using a sword? Q-Sword you are also a grandmaster swordsman in Battle Reflux Style. Do you want to try fighting him again?”

Q-Sword hurriedly shook his head and laughed: “Better not. I’ve focused on Xing Yi Quan but still lost horribly. In terms of sword arts, Li Xiao Yao should be able to qualify as my master.”

As he spoke, Q-Sword looked at his arms, sighing: “Eh, all the buttons on this recently purchased Armani shirt have completely popped off because of your attack. What a waste, it cost 17000RMB

My heart faltered: “You..... You wouldn’t make me pay for it right?”

Q-Sword laughed out loud and slapped me on my shoulder: “Don’t worry brother, I’m not so evil. Besides, today I’ve learned a lot from your Kung Fu without paying any fees. How about we consider this shirt as payment?”

I nodded: “Yup, [Hero’s Mound]’s Guild Leader is indeed open-minded and generous, so much better than that of [Vanguard]’s!”

Q-Sword was taken aback. Suddenly he laughed: “Are you referring to that brat, Jian Feng Han? Hehe, Jian Feng Han is actually from Hangzhou and I have sparred with him once. He can utilize great power and is good at both offence and defence. It was a very enjoyable fight but Jian Feng Han’s behavior..... We shouldn’t discuss it any more. A noble person should not gossip about someone else behind their back. Anyways, Li Xiao Yao, you should come to visit us at Henan Luo Yang when you are free. I will let my great grandmaster test out your Kung Fu.....”

The side of my lips curled into a smile: “Ok.....”

However, deep down I was having different thoughts. That great grandmaster was most likely at the Yang Yan level. He should be one of the top experts in China and me going to challenge him is equivalent to seeking death. It’s important to know one’s limit.....

.....

That afternoon, we accompanied Q-Sword and Jian Han to the airport as they left Hangzhou.

On the way back.

Dong Cheng Yue was exceptionally happy. Laughingly she said: “Xiao Yao, that fist strike of yours was really awesome..... You bombarded Q-Sword until he couldn’t even resist. Earlier on you were forced back repeatedly, I was so worried that you would lose! Heehee luckily you won.....”

Li Wan Er said from the side: “Hmph, Dong Cheng, our Guild Leader lost, yet you are so happy!”

Dong Cheng Yue gave a cheeky smile: “Cut the crap, when Li Xiao Yao defeated Q-Sword with that strike, didn’t someone here also smile?”

Li Wan Er: “.....”

I massaged my knuckles, knitting my eyebrows together..

“What is it?” Li Wan Er asked, a little concerned.

I murmured: “When my fist hit that steel training dummy, it landed on

the screws. That was damn painful.....”

Li Wan Er: “.....”

Dong Cheng Yue: “.....”

Chapter 179: Ripples of the Heart

Late at night, Ba Huang City.

Sitting quietly under the northern gate's walls selling stuff, I gained 900G in just one night. The drops I acquired from the Five Barbarians Desolate Tomb sold like hot cakes and were gone extremely quickly. Now that the preliminary level cap provided by had increased to 150, equipment that was lower than level 100 became a part of the 'temporary equipment' category which meant I had to clear my inventory fast. If the average level of the players increased, equipment under level 50 would lose their market.

"Di!"

A message from Wolf came, "Brother Xiao Yao, have you seen the official information bulletin update?"

"No, what about it?"

"There's going to be an event that starts tomorrow at noon called 'Demons' Descent'. In all three cities, boss level monsters will start spawning at a high frequency and have a high drop rate. Brother Xiao Yao, we have to take advantage of this event!"

"Is that right?" My heart skipped a beat. "Then, be prepared by 10 AM tomorrow. Everyone in the studio must be online; we can't let this event slip through our fingers!"

"Yup, I'll go offline and rest!"

"Okay!"

.....

Turning off the chat, I quickly visited the game's official website and sure enough, on the sidebar was a huge banner saying 'Demons' Descent'. In order for this event to start, an Emperor Tier boss had to have been defeated; it seems like our completion of the Five Barbarians' Desolate Tomb quest line progressed the main storyline.

Opening the event details, there was an abundance of information.

【Demons’ Descent】 When the first Emperor Tier boss had been defeated, his soul’s death caused earthshaking tremors throughout the continent. All of the boss’ that were hiding in seclusion will begin to stir and will appear. All major cities will be ambushed by 3 Emperor Tier bosses, 10 Purple Tier bosses, 20 Gold Tier bosses, and 50 Silver Tier bosses. These bosses will give out generous rewards and killing these bosses will greatly improve your fame in the city. Please do not abandon your city in their time of need, young adventurers; the time to display your power has come!

Monster Drop Rate Overview

【Emperor Tier Boss Drop Rate】: Emperor Tier Equipment (10%), Purple Tier Equipment (40%), Guild Creation Tablet (70%), Guild Prestige Tablet (20%), SS Ranked Skill Book (5%), S Ranked Skill Book (20%)

【Purple Tier Boss Drop Rate】: Purple Tier Equipment (20%), Guild Creation Tablet (40%), Guild Prestige Tablet (5%), SS Ranked Skill Book (2%), S Ranked Skill Book (5%)

【Gold Tier Boss Drop Rate】: Gold Tier Equipment (50%), Guild Creation Tablet (20%), Guild Prestige Tablet (2%), SS Ranked Skill Book (1%), S Ranked Skill Book (3%)

【Silver Tier Boss Drop Rate】: Silver Tier Equipment (50%), Guild Creation Tablet (10%), Guild Prestige Tablet (1%), SS Ranked Skill Book (0.4%), S Ranked Skill Book (1%)

.....

Looking at the Boss Drop Rate Table, my eyes almost turned bright red: this was a great opportunity! Zhan Long was still in its infancy but the main foundation had already appeared with Old K, Dong Cheng Lei, Wolf, Matcha and me as the close combatants, Darling Duck as the Healer and Fox as the long range support. Combine that with a couple new recruits, we had a total of 21 members! Among these players, I was already on the CBN Battle Network Leaderboard top 1000 and thus I would be the centerpiece that attracts other experts to join. Given time, when Old K,

Dong Cheng Lei and Wolf become experts in their own right and when the Zhan Long Studio's funds have surpassed 100,000, only then would we have finally been able to establish a foothold in Ba Huang City!

In addition, we needed to establish our guild soon since skilled players would start being discovered and right now would be the perfect time to attract them. If we missed this opportunity then our competitive strength would be severely affected as we would be left with no choice but to recruit second rate players!

I looked at the boss drop rates with joy. Ah, the [Demons' Descent] event was simply something for us to use as preparations; we had to grab a Guild Creation Tablet during this event! Furthermore, since Ba Huang City would be visited by 83 bosses in total, and we would have a 10% drop rate for the tablet from the Silver Tier bosses while there was a 70% chance of it dropping a Guild Creation Tablet from the Emperor Tier bosses. That was practically a guaranteed drop and thus this event was for sure the optimal opportunity to establish our guild!

.....

Looking at the clock, I realized it was past 11 and thus sent a text message to Wan Er.

"Wan Er, you and [Hero Mound] will most likely be participating in tomorrow's [Demons' Descent] event, right? You should get to sleep early tonight and wake up early tomorrow to prepare. I'll be sleeping early too."

Wan Er replied back to me on the chat, the sound of her sweet laughter coming through loud and clear, "I'm currently helping Dong Cheng with her quest! Q-Sword has already set up the preparations needed for tomorrow's event, so there won't be any confusion tomorrow. Ah, that's right! You still want to establish Zhan Long and this is a once in a million opportunity. It's perfect for you since all of the Guild Creation Tablets being sold in any of the three cities are at least over 50,000 RMB, you wouldn't be willing buy one at all."

I stayed quiet, "It's not that we can't afford one, we just aren't willing to buy one.....Wan Er, Zhan Long can fight and kill any Purple Tier boss,

that's for sure. It's the Emperor Tier boss that poses a problem. If possible, would you and Dong Cheng come to Ba Huang City and fight alongside us?"

Wan Er hesitated slightly, "B...but I'm already [Hero's Mound]'s deputy chief, it's hard to say if I can come over and help you... At the most, I could, not participate with [Hero's Mound] and not join the event with you, so no one would be offended? Xiao Yao, work hard, you have to get a Guild Creation Tablet this time. Set up Zhan Long as soon as you can, so that Dong Cheng and I can join~!"

I couldn't help but smile, "Yea yea, I got it, are you hungry? How about I go and get you something to eat?"

Wan Er smiled in return, "There's no need; it's raining at the moment. You should really go to sleep and eat breakfast with Dong Cheng and me tomorrow! Although... although right now that idiot Dong Cheng is whining about how hungry she is..."

Clapping my hands, I asked again, "Come on, don't be like that! Say what you want to eat, and I'll go buy it for you..."

"In that case..." Wan Er's chat icon looked particularly lovely in this case, her hesitant lips pursed together, "Then... go buy two fried chicken drumsticks, I'm actually a bit peckish myself. Remember to bring an umbrella with you, the rain is getting heavier..."

"Alright, I'll give you a call when I have the food."

"Okay, I'm hanging up now."

.....

After hanging up, I put on a black outfit and left.

Sure enough, I could hear the constant rhythm of the autumn rain splashing down around me as my icy cold hands were clasped in my clothes to conserve heat. Crossing the rain filled fields, I walked into the fried chicken restaurant, and in two to three minutes, I bought the two fried chicken meals. Soon after, I was outside the lobby of the girls' dormitory, crouching under a tree as I gave a call to Wan Er. But as the

phone rang, a girl waved from within. It was Wan Er.

“Li Xiao Yao, come on over!”

Jogging over in front of the girls’ dormitory, I saw Wan Er dressed in a beige dress and carrying a green umbrella. She looked like a green lotus flower blossoming under the rain. She opened her beautiful eyes wide and looked at the raindrops on my hair and shoulders. Unable to remain silent about my plight, she said: “You’re already drenched... I thought I told you that you didn’t have to buy us food...”

I laughed: “No worries. Look, the fried chicken is still warm...”

Wan Er winked while pointing off into the distance, “Dong Cheng said she wanted to eat salad, let’s go and buy two boxes from the store over there.”

“Alright!”

As I turned to leave, she pulled my sleeve with her hand, “Let me go with you too!”

Looking at her umbrella, I was confused, “But your umbrella is too small to fit the both of us...”

“What?” She looked up and examined her umbrella with amusement, she laughed: “I don’t think so, let’s go...:”

“Okay...”

Turning to walk out, Wan Er followed me with her umbrella up in the air. Her body’s fragrant scent mingled with the smell of autumn rain, making my heart waver. The umbrella was too small, however, so Wan Er’s right arm was assaulted by the rain and became wet. I couldn’t bear the sight of it, so I took the umbrella and held it over her head to shelter her further from the rain.

Wan Er’s face went red while leaning ever closer against my arms. Bowing her head, her long eyelashes blinked away the rain that had fallen on them.

“Ahem...” I gently coughed to break the awkward atmosphere.

Wan Er looked off into the distance, where couples were roaming around intimately under umbrellas. Raising her head to look at me, she immediately ducked back down, whispering, "Idiot..."

Biting my lip, I let my hand wrap around her shoulder and helped her wipe off the rest of the rain from her snow-white arm. Soon after, I automatically drew myself closer to her shoulder, though for some reason Wan Er's shoulder trembled slightly as her face got even more red, just like an apple in autumn. The wind blew the rain under the umbrella and the rainy mist stuck to her eyelashes forming raindrops on it. As if covered in morning dew, she looked even more elegant, beautiful and captivating than before.

My heartbeat quickened to abnormal levels; even utilizing my Royal Air strength was insufficient in suppressing my stubborn heart rate; I knew that my heart was astir. Despite being at the Royal Air level, I was unable to remain in control. This should be in part due to Huang Ning's imprint chip from the First Heaven restaurant. Li Wan Er, was the sole reason of my constant vexation! But in reality, the chip had little control over my mind. The peak of the Royal Air is far above the comprehension of the average person and Huang Ning's understanding of Qi was far inferior to that of my own and so, he was unable to fathom the spiritual power that I had. Thus I was perfectly capable of erasing such a trivial memory imprint or not. However, it seemed as if... I was reluctant to part with those memories.

"Wan Er..." I said as I held her close, I was having difficulty finishing my sentence.

Wan Er tilted her head as she looked at me, "Yes?"

Seeing the shops in the distance, I secretly wished that this moment would last forever, hoping that the autumn rain would stay forever! Looking at Wan Er's elegant face, I was at a loss for words. I didn't know what to say and even when I did, the words would disappear when they reached my lips. I pursed my lips and looked at her once more. Distracted, I didn't even realize I was standing in the same spot, silent.

Wan Er looked at me as her face reddened. Her two beautiful eyes looked as if they could stare into my inner heart, though I knew that she was not using her mind reading powers. If she had been trying to do so, my Yi Hai would have started to ripple in agitation.

Suddenly, Wan Er turned and faced me, her right arm wrapped tightly around my neck as her body remained closed to mine. Our bodies felt warm as she hugged me tightly; the gentle pitter patter of the rain hitting the umbrella was all that we could hear. I heard only incoherent murmuring as she spoke softly to herself. Even then, I still managed to piece together the words, "I'm not... If so, events in the future... No... At that time, please protect me..."

Then, Wan Er looked up at my face; a pair of beautiful eyes stared straight into mine as her mouth curled into a beautiful smile. Her voice grew in strength as she said, "I don't care how much of it you heard, I'll only say that once..."

I lowered my head and said "Actually, I heard all of it..."

Wan Er's face flushed with that declaration, "No...no way, you couldn't have?"

I laughed and bowed slightly. My arm wrapped itself around Wan Er's waist tightly and I said, "Wan Er, you are the one fated to change my life..."

Wan Er stopped walking and after some time, with a hint of longing in her voice, she said, "You too..."

I didn't answer her.

Chapter 180: Demons' Descent

The next day... After waking up from my dream, I could scarcely remember anything from yesterday except for those moments in the heavy rain. It was like that memory was deeply imprinted into my mind, impossible to be erased.

In the morning, I met with Lin Wan Er and Dong Cheng Yue. I only grinned at Lin Wan Er, "Miss, I'll be online at 10 AM, and you?"

Lin Wan Er pursed her lips, "I won't be going to class either. Besides, I've already previewed the material for today's class."

"Okay!"

Dong Cheng Yue stared at me then at Lin Wan Er and suddenly narrowed her eyes at us, "Why do I feel... that something must have happened yesterday night, but...but Wan Er definitely came home to sleep... Xiao Yao, what did you do to Wan Er last night?"

I jumped: "Nothing happened, stop thinking weird things..."

"Hmph! I don't believe you!"

Dong Cheng Yue waved her hand, "Forget it. Go do your work, Wan Er and I are going to Thousand Demon Valley this afternoon to kill monsters. Too bad you're so occupied by Zhan Long and can't join us on our adventure."

I laughed: "There will always be chances to train together in the future, so you don't have to worry about that not happening. My first priority right now is to establish my guild. Damn it, there are already 7 guilds established in Ba Huang City, and my guild won't even be the 8th one. So depressing..."

Lin Wan Er couldn't help but laugh and patting my shoulder, she said, "Go find some people to kill the Bosses, and see if you can get the Guild Creation Tablet today!"

"Alright!"

.....

After seeing the two beautiful girls off, I returned to my room.

When I got online, it was already 10:07. Matcha sent me a message: “Boss, you’re late!”

“Yeah...I’m sorry...”

I coughed lightly and said: “Is everybody ready then?”

“We are getting ready now. Boss you should get ready too, shall we meet at Ba Huang City later?”

“Yup, okay!”

.....

In the city, I repaired my equipment and purchased a lot of healing potions. Then I brought 3 Pardon cards with me –which should be enough. The Demons’ Descent Event will definitely catch the attention of many guilds; PKing will be unavoidable.

It was almost 10:30 when I finished getting ready. The Zhan Long group had already assembled at the bridge outside of the North Gate of Ba Huang City.

Carrying my Frost Rain Sword and the Ancient Tablet on my back, I treaded across the mossy stone bridge, walking at a steady pace. Wolf, Matcha, Old K, Darling Duck and the others were already there waiting. Besides the players of the studio, there were around ten others mixed in. Altogether, including me, there were 20 people!

“Is everyone present?” I asked heartily.

Wolf nodded: “Basically everyone is here; there’s an Assassin who suddenly had a fever today, so he couldn’t come online, so we have exactly 20 people. Brother Xiao Yao, would you like to see their classes?”

Scanning the crowd, I counted under my breath, “3 Swordsmen, 4 Assassins, 4 Healers, 3 Mages, 1 Monk, 1 Knight, 3 Berserkers, 1 Musketeer. The number of damage dealers and Healers should be enough. Okay, this group should have no trouble defeating a Purple Tier BOSS!”

I clenched my fist as I said with a big smile, “A warm welcome to every newcomer who joined Zhan Long. From today onwards you’re one of us! We are Zhan Long, an ambitious team with big dreams to become a legend in . Our mission is to uphold justice and fight for the weak. Never will we allow this game to be a place where the strong eat the weak or let the weak shed tears!”

Everyone nodded one after another and Darling Duck excitedly exclaimed, “Well said, boss! We’ll stand up for the weak!”

Wolf coughed: “Let’s get the Guild Creation Tablet first before making an inspiring guild speech...otherwise our 20 men won’t even be a match for the other big guilds. [Vanguard] and [Flying Dragon] would only need half of their army to obliterate us!”

At that moment, amongst the crowd, a 19 year old Lv 47 Healer blinked her eyes and said: “Not necessarily. Though those guilds might win in numbers, it doesn’t mean they are stronger. Didn’t our Boss, Xiao Yao Zi Zai, take on hundreds of players from the [Wrath of the Heroes] guild in Green Qilin Abyss alone and ended up victorious?”

Dong Cheng Lei tightened his hand and said with a grin, “Definitely! Having a big number of people doesn’t mean they are better. As long we are united, we’ll be able to defeat those bastards from [Flying Dragon] and [Wrath of the Heroes]. What do you think, Brother Xiao Yao, did I say it right?”

I nodded: “Yep, you are right. But [Flying Dragon] and [Wrath of Heroes] aren’t bastards. They are all players like us, they’ve just chosen to walk a different path.”

Matcha looked at me: “Boss, are we just going to wait for the BOSSes to spawn? That...doesn’t seem professional at all...”

“No!”

I shook my head and laughed, pointing into the distance and said: “The borders around Ba Huang City are extensive and the 83 BOSSes will spawn randomly. Since there are too many players near the city, it would be hard for us to even get an opportunity to kill a BOSS. That’s why I’ve

decided that we're going to set off immediately. The 20 of us should walk towards Jiu Li City and go to Green Qilin Valley. The moment a BOSS spawns, we'll immediately defeat it. How does that sound?"

Matcha lifted her sword and smiled a little. Her beauty was second to none. She glanced at me and continued: "With such a wise boss, I know I didn't follow the wrong person. The plan to go to Green Qilin Valley is a smart one; the maps there are vast with high level monsters and few players. [Flying Dragon] and [Wrath of the Heroes] may not be able to find us, even with their abilities and wealth. It's very safe!"

I nodded with a growing feeling that Matcha was indeed best suited as the team's Godly Strategist: "Yup, since Matcha has approved our plan, we should set off. Based on the location of Green Qilin Valley, I think we should be able to reach the place before 12. At that time, we should be able to slaughter any boss that will spawn. Let's go, this is for the ladies!"

Old K was surprised: "Why is it for the ladies?"

I smiled wryly, "Once the guild has been created and becomes larger, a Lv 5 guild has a 10,000 member limit. Even if you, Old K, can only be the leader of a team, you'll be in charge of at least 1000 people. Since the ratio of boy to girl players is 6.2:3.8 according to the game statistics, then there will at least be 360 girl gamers. Some may already have a boyfriend or husband, so there should be around 200 single ladies. As their team leader, with so much wealth and resources, won't you be able to at least land a single girl? Do you want to live single forever brother?"

Old K thought about it, curled his hands and said with a stern voice, "Looks like creating a guild is of the utmost importance..."

Aside Matcha laughed lightly and said, "Actually, with Old K's looks, even with 200 single ladies, it'd still be very tough..."

Old K's face became bitter and tears pooled in his eyes.

.....

Together we left the city and entered the Ba Huang Forest, heading northwest. The levels of monsters in the forest weren't too high, so

relying on Wolf, Old K and Dong Cheng Lei to attack was enough. Matcha and I walked slowly at the back, protecting the rear, as there were many potential dangers on the map. Especially since Zhan Long, despite being relatively weak, was still an enemy of guilds like [Flying Dragon] and [Wrath of Heroes]. Lowering our guards was not an option.

An hour later, at Green Qilin Valley.

Standing at the edge of Green Qilin Valley, viewing the land that I hadn't visited in such a long time, I grabbed a vine and laughed: "This Green Qilin Valley is our land of fortune. Should our guild have a guild base later, I'll definitely choose Green Qilin Valley and no other place!"

Matcha smiled sweetly: "Boss's Frost Rain Sword was dropped by a BOSS here right? But then again, the Green Qilin Valley has a legend already. There was once a swordsman who battled with more than 300 people and in the end, made the enemies run away with tails between their legs. Even Jian Feng Han and Q-Sword, those skilled professional players, may not have been able to do it. But you, boss, you managed to pull it off!"

Little Wolf laughed softly, "That's the reason why we let Brother Xiao Yao be the Guild Master!"

I glanced at them: "Don't joke around, I fought for this Guild Master position!"

Darling Duck opened her eyes widely: "Fought for the position?"

"Haha..." Old K laughed heartily, feeling a little awkward. "It's an old story... Don't mention it anymore. We should enter Green Qilin Valley now; let's spread out and wait for the bosses to spawn!"

I nodded, "Yup, those who can defend themselves, spread yourselves out in the forest and wait for the bosses to spawn. Little Wolf, take a few Assassins and observe the terrain with your [Stealth] skills. All Wind Elves fly out and spread out. Old K, Ah Lei, both of you stay here to protect the Healers and Mages while I also scout around. This will be our meeting place. Everyone should maintain communication with someone else. There are still 20 minutes before the event begins. Everyone be on

alert!”

Little Wolf laughed heartily: “Understood, I’ll go immediately!”

Quickly, everyone dispersed into the forest situated where the monsters were between Lv 49-53. Everyone could pretty much solo them, especially players like Old K and Little Wolf who had both high levels and high quality gear. Soloing 2-3 Elite Monsters of the same time wouldn’t be a problem for them.

.....

“Whoosh...”

Stepping onto the lush green grass with Baby Bobo buzzing happily above my head, I made my way through the forest. I stood still in a meadow that was a fair distance from the meeting place and waited for 12 o’clock; the 20 minutes passed in a flash!

“Ding!”

A bell rang above my head, and a notice sounded: System Announcement: All players please pay attention, 83 powerful bosses have advanced onto the lands of Ba Huang City. Sharpen your blades, steel yourself and step onto the frontline! You must defeat these 83 bosses in 120 minutes, otherwise the surviving bosses will summon a legion of soldiers from the underworld to besiege Ba Huang City. May the odds be ever in your favor!

.....

“It’s starting!” In the party chat, Little Wolf muttered under his breath, “Everyone quickly find the boss. Green Qilin Valley is a big map so there should be at least 1 to 2 bosses!”

I quickly lifted my sword and raced forward like the wind while looking at the map. The boss’ position would be shown by an extremely big red dot, but on the map, the surrounding dots were all small and red—all the normal Dark Green Vine Monsters!

Above me, a female Wind Elf flew past. It was Matcha, flying at a high

speed!

.....

After a long 5 minutes, one Assassin shouted into the party chat: “Boss, I found one, it’s in the canyon with the coordinates of (4277,1983). It’s a Lv 58 Gold Tier BOSS. Should we kill it?!”

TL: Boss – Xiao Yao and BOSS = monster

With a stern voice I said, “Terminate with extreme prejudice. If you see one kill it! There are only 83 BOSSes. Everyone quickly head towards the location and once everyone has gathered we’ll make our move! Assassins keep a good lookout on the boss, don’t act rashly!”

“Yes, Boss!”

Chapter 181: Spirit Fire Beast

In the midst of a peaceful valley, a giant wielding a stone hammer stood among some scattered rocks. He was very tall and burly, approximately three meters high. His entire body shimmered with a metallic glow. A pair of bell like eyes sat in the middle of his rock like head; the slightest glance could scare a person half to death.

“Level 58 Gold Tier BOSS, Luke the Rock Giant!”

Matcha clutched her sword and flew to a branch, saying: “Just the boss is enough for this. Darling Duck, make sure you heal the boss well. Basically the two of you could finish off this BOSS!”

TL: Boss – Xiao Yao and BOSS – Monster (Maybe get used to this since might not have a TL note every time)

Darling Duck nodded: “Yup, I know!”

“Keng!”

I drew the Frost Rain Sword and stepped closer with my Purple Dawn Boots. With large strides I charged toward the boss like a shooting star. The edge of my sword was angled down and slightly trembling while ice particles started to swirl around. Before I even made it to the boss, I had already activated [Haste] to increase my movement speed. Waving my sword, “Puchi”, my Frost Rain Sword plunged deep into the Rock Giant’s chest with [Fierce Ice Blade], splattering shards of rock and blood.

1829 !

.....

“What the hell...” Old K clenched his fist, dumbfounded: “How much attack does that brat Xiao Yao have? The Rock Giant has a defense of 1100, yet he lost so much health with just one attack?”

Wolf held his dagger up and laughed: “I’ve seen his equipment stats, Xiao Yao’s base attack is 2164, his equipment adds 26% physical attack, [Turmoil Sword] increases it another 10% and with the addition of 6 % from Darling Duck’s [Encourage], his actual attack is 142% his base

attack. That's almost 3000+ in physical attack. Don't you think dealing 1800 damage is normal?"

TL: Attack (Varies like 120 – 150) – Defense = Damage

Old K sighed, "Sigh, his attack is so overpowered... I'm afraid that even after I equipped Haunted Twin Blade Battle-Axe, I still can't compare to his attack..."

Wolf couldn't help but laugh, patting Old K's shoulder and said, "Old K, don't bother competing with Xiao Yao's attack, I don't think you'll ever catch up to him. He can create an SS ranked custom skill, [Turmoil Sword], you can't. Moreover, brother Xiao Yao has 2 Emperor Tier and quite a few Purple Tier equipment equipped. His overall equipment exceeds you by at least 2 tiers..."

Old K wielded his axe and laughed, "Luckily he's our boss..."

"Hahah!"

.....

The Rock Giant roared and attacked with his rock fist, smashing against my Nebula Armor and causing sparks to fly out. It's a shame that he could only deal 500 damage to me, so weak. Another reason for my high damage was that my Nebula Armor could decrease the boss' defense by 7% which was a huge amount.

Behind me, a couple of Mages started their magic attacks and caused the Rock Giant's health to flow like water from a faucet. Before 2 minutes were up, he cried pitifully and died!

"Huala..."

The first Demons' Descent Event Gold Tier boss had fallen, what rewards would there be? I hurriedly moved forward and kicked away the rock giant's corpse, to check the drops that were scattered over the floor. I ended up disappointed, the 20% probability wasn't reached, there were no Guild Creation Tablets among the whole ground full of drops. However, at least there were still some equipment, all Gold Tier. Everyone in the party rolled for the equipment since we all came together but I didn't

participate since Gold Tier equipment was a bit shabby for me.

“Continue searching the surrounding maps!” I commanded.

Matcha sat on a tree branch with her long white legs swaying gently. Suddenly, she jerked upwards before flying downwards to call out: “Boss, a Purple Tier BOSS has spawned!”

“Where?” I replied, surprised.

Matcha’s beautiful pair of eyes looked to the east, “I heard the news from the forums, a boss spawned at the borders of Green Qilin Valley. There is a small party of 7 engaging it and it isn’t going well for them; they’re nearly wiped out. We should rush there quickly and finish the Boss!”

“Yup!”

.....

Sword in hand, I took the lead. Little Wolf, Dong Cheng Lei, Old K and the others followed one by one. The 20 members of Zhan Long rushed towards the east side of the Green Qilin Valley and since we weren’t that far from the boss, it only took 3 minute to reach there!

“Hua!”

Coming out of the dense forest, a giant roaring monster suddenly appeared in the empty field in front of us. The creature’s whole body was covered in a flaming red light and each breath spewed out smoke and fire. Above his head hovered blood red words-

【Fire Soul Beast】 (Purple Tier BOSS)

Level: 58

.....

Around the Fire Soul Beast, there were only 5 players, all with less than 50% health remaining. There were 2 corpses lying on the ground, a Lv 51 Mage and another Lv 52 Monk!

“Clang!”

Swords and blades struck the Fire Soul Beast's body, but the blows only agitated the beast further. The Lv 53 Swordsman who carried the party leader symbol furrowed his brows, commanding: "Archer, lock onto the boss and use [Scatter Shot] to stun it; this monster's attacks are too powerful. The two Healers, remember to heal me at separate times or else I will be in danger!"

His voice was hardly heard as the Fire Soul Beast suddenly roared and rushed forward, his 2 claws tearing down lightning fast!

2198 !

1974 !

The Swordsman body trembled and slowly fell to the ground, his eyes filled with helplessness.

"Damn, this BOSS has a 2 strike combo attack? Such a strong attack, boss has already been killed!" The Archer panicked and tried to run away.

"Clang!"

The Fire Soul Beast's whole body shook as he suddenly opened his mouth and a blazing arrow shot forth to pierce the Archer's heart!

2761 !

"Shit!" The Lv 51 Berserker couldn't quell his anger and he immediately used [Penetration] and [Flame Blade] to hack the boss' forehead, causing 1400+ damage. His attack was not bad but unfortunately, it angered the Fire Soul Beast and the Berserker was killed by a 2 hit combo!

The two female Healers were dumbfounded. They couldn't escape or stay.

.....

With pitiful cries, the two Healers also fell to the ground dead. This small 7-member party had been officially wiped out.

"It's our turn now!"

Matcha pat my shoulders and laughed, "Boss, work hard, okay? I'm

going to be Lv 50 soon so if there are any Purple Tier equipments I'd like to roll for them; I want to become stronger..."

I nodded and smiled, "Some of the Healers come and follow me. I'm going to try and figure out the boss' attack pattern!"

"Okay boss, work hard!" Darling Duck smiled sweetly.

The Frost Rain Sword moved like the wind as I rushed forward and used [Wind Blade] to greet the Fire Soul Beast's butt. My attack slashed his skin, causing a fatal blow!

3124!

"Roar!!"

The Fire Soul Beast bellowed in pain and quickly turned around and swung his claws, it's the 2 combo attack!

My Nebula Armor shook twice as a brief surge of pain washed over me with two numbers floating up—

1071!

1079!

In that moment, Matcha laughed from afar: "Boss's defense is indeed much stronger than that Swordsman's..."

Darling Duck cast [Heal] me and said: "Boss, go on!"

Currently my max health was at 3370 points, so it was relatively safe for me. With the flick of my wrist, my Frost Rain Sword unleashed a Lv 6 [Combo] and because of the additional damage from the "increase in combo attacks damage" extra from [Desolate Divine Bone Chain], the damage output was increased by 25%! In the midst of the Spirit Fire Beast's cries, the golden hexagrams fluttered away as a stream of 4 continuous numbers floated up—

1128 !

1074 !

1011 !

.....

With that attack, the boss' aggro was firmly locked on me. This was a Lv 58 Purple Tier Boss, which is the same level as me. Moreover, I had 2 Emperor Tier and 6 Purple Tier equipments and was far from the same person who fought the General of the Everlasting Wind from before. There were some high level Healers behind me so this Spirit Fire Beast would definitely die by my hand.

In just 4 minutes, the BOSS' health dropped to less than 20%. We should be able to wrap this up within a minute!

Matcha sat down on the grass and laughed happily, saying: "Purple Tier bosses have a 40% probability of dropping a Guild Creation Tablet, 2% probability of dropping an SS ranked skill book. Heehee, if our luck isn't too bad, we might still be able to create a guild today. I'm looking forward to it~~ We won't be wandering adventurers anymore, we'll have our own guild!"

Wolf was speechless, "Matcha, don't be too optimistic, things might not go that smoothly..."

Out of the blue, with an unexpected "Swoosh", a pillar of light flashed up. The dead Monk suddenly stood up; he had resurrected. He quickly retreated back to safety, carrying his steel shield and looked at me, fully alert. He cried out: "Who are you guys and what gives you the right to steal our boss?!"

Following that, another few bright lights flashed as the previous party's Swordsman and the five other members of the party also resurrected. One after another they moved back, putting a distance of 20 meters between us, while looking at us suspiciously.

.....

"Peng!"

I knocked the boss a few meters back with a slash, looked at them and said: "Please don't misunderstand, we are not stealing your boss. We only

took on the fight after your party died helplessly against the boss. We are not taking advantage of the situation.”

That Swordsman leader brought up his sword and said: “You put it so nicely; isn’t it the same as stealing our boss?”

I shot him a glance, this Swordsman’s level and equipment is actually not bad—

ID: Gentle Touch Lv 52 Silver Swordsman

Main City: Ba Huang City

Guild: None

.....

“Gentle Touch!” Old K carried his battle axe and walk over, replying menacingly, “Your boss still had 90% health left when you were all slaughtered, now the boss only has 20% health left, what do you guys want? Don’t tell us you want us to back away and give this dying boss to you? Do you think that people from Zhan Long are easy to pick on?!”

Gentle Touch looked at me: “Humph, Xiao Yao Zi Zai, you are a renowned player throughout Ba Huang City. Show me how you’re going to solve this problem.!”

I moved backward a little and replied, “Old K, calm down! How about this, Gentle Touch, your group doesn’t have the ability to kill this BOSS but you have suffered losses. How about...when I kill the boss, if a Guild Creation Tablet drops, it will definitely be mine. For the equipment, without looking at the tiers, I’ll let you take one. How’s that?”

Gentle Touch blinked: “Really?”

“Of course!”

“Alright!” Gentle Touch laughed: “Previously the forums were in an uproar, saying Jian Feng Han was dishonest person and unfit to be called Master of Battle Reflux Style. Today I want to see whether the best Healer Swordsman, Xiao Yao Zi Zai, is a trustworthy person!”

I smiled lightly: “Then keep your eyes wide open and watch carefully...”

.....

The killing of the boss proceeded smoothly and in a few seconds, his health dropped drastically.

“Swoosh...”

The other party's Mage moved slightly forward and tightened his grip on his staff. He looked as if he wanted to take the last hit to get experience.

However, a beautiful shadow fluttered down beside the Mage. It was the pretty and beautiful Swordswoman, Matcha. With her hand resting on her sword hilt, she said: “Don't move, otherwise I won't be so courteous to you...”

Her sword peeked out from its hilt by 10 centimeters, showing off her readiness to strike. Golden Hexagons peeked out: It was the prelude to a [Combo]!

Stunned, the Mage gritted his teeth and stood there quietly.

Chapter 182: The Start of a War

“Kacha!”

The Frost Rain Sword cut through the Spirit Fire Beast’s neck, causing the Spirit Fire Beast to roar in pain as blood gushed out from its large wound. Finally, the last of its health disappeared, causing its giant body to crash onto the ground. At the same time, it dropped quite a few items. I looked over all of the drops but to my disappointment, I didn’t see any Guild Creation Tablets. The road to establishing Zhan Long as a guild was bound to be long and tortuous...

.....

“Don’t move!”

Dong Cheng Lei brandished his battle-axe as he abruptly strode behind me. In a quiet voice, he roared, “Let Brother Xiao Yao take his pick from the boss drops. Everyone else wait for your turn patiently. If you get impatient, don’t blame me, Cang Lei, when I get violent .”

The 7 players were startled but did not say anything.

I took a step forward and kicked all of the equipment to an empty space. After that, I waved my hands towards the others, “Gentle Touch, come and take your pick. Take a piece of equipment here as your compensation!”

Gentle Touch nodded, pointing his finger towards a breastplate saying, “Then I’ll take the chestplate!”

Reaching out with my toes, I gave it a kick! I didn’t even look at the attributes of the item.

“Pa...”

The chestplate rolled towards Gentle Touch’s feet; as he picked up the armor piece, his face suddenly grew with excitement as he saw the stats. Around him, people began to whisper, “Damn, a Lv 53 Purple Tier that adds +37 strength, +34 Endurance and +5% defense. What a nice item...”

I smiled to myself and remained silent.

Gentle Touch put the chestplate into his inventory with a small laugh, “Xiao Yao Zi Zai, you really are a trustworthy person; thank you. If it weren’t for you, I wouldn’t have been able to face my friends. By the way, you’re familiar with [Valiant Bravery] right?”

I nodded, “Yeah, why do you ask?”

“Well....” Gentle Touch started, pointing to the six people behind him, “My six friends and I have been looking for a guild to join, but [Vanguard] has too many requirements, plus Jian Feng Han has a questionable personality. [Prague]’s Yan Zhao is as immemorial as a plank of wood; he is a strict traditionalist. We want to join a young and hot-blooded guild and that’s why we picked [Valiant Bravery]. However, we don’t have anyone to introduce us. So I’m worried that General Li Mu doesn’t want our group. Could you put in a word for us to him, how about it?”

“Sure, you guys get going and say that I sent you guys to him.” I glanced at their equipment and levels with a smile, “Your strength is pretty good, General Li Mu would be very glad if you all joined [Valiant Bravery], after all, at this point in time they’re in urgent need of high leveled players.”

“Ah, thank you, in that case we’ll...we’ll be going now?”

“Off you go and good luck!”

“Thanks!”

.....

Looking at Gentle Touch’s group travel farther and farther away, Wolf rubbed his nose, “Brother Xiao Yao, that was a Lv 53 Purple Tier breastplate that was just taken away by some brats. I’m not happy with the outcome, it could have been given to Old K, or Ah Lei, or even Matcha who would have made better use of it...”

I laughed out loud, “That’s enough of that, don’t make a fuss over such a small thing. Zhan Long is just starting out in Ba Huang City, we need to build up our reputation the right way. After all, it was them who attacked the boss first. In a situation where they haven’t completely given up, we

would technically be snatching the boss. Let's not have shady actions!"

Matcha chuckled, "Yeah, I support the boss. A single Purple Tier item in exchange for the trust of that group, this deal was a great bargain!"

Darling Duck piped up, "Boss, should we look at the rest of the equipment?"

"Alright...."

The boss had also dropped another 3 pieces of equipment: 2 were Gold Tier and one was Purple Tier. It was a Lv 53 necklace, which was rolled away by the highest level Mage, and the Gold Tier equipments were rolled to an Assassin and a Swordsman. Other than the 4 equipments, there were still a few Pardon Cards and two soul stones, which were also rolled away. In my heart, there was still a small bit of disappointment that I didn't find a Guild Creation Tablet, which was a shame since it was what we longed for most at the moment.

.....

Taking a look at the count, so far we had killed 2 out of the 83 bosses in total; our luck was looking pretty good today.

Matcha looked up into the sky, crinkling an eyebrow while in heavy thought, "Boss, according to the most recent news on the forums, the statistic reports say that 37 bosses have been killed and among those numbers, 6 of them were Purple Tier bosses; we just killed one of them. [Vanguard] killed two Purple Tiers, [Prague] killed one, [Valiant Bravery] killed one, and [Flying Dragon] also killed one. Right now, all of the major guilds are having their players track down the bosses throughout the map. It's expected that all of the 83 bosses will be dead within the next 2 hours..."

"Ah..." I nodded and after pondering then said, "It's all about luck; there's nothing we can do about it. We only have so many members and 20 people cannot realistically be expected to kill most of the bosses."

"Yeah, yeah."

.....

After searching for half an hour, there were still no signs of any boss. However, the Ba Huang City forums were abuzz with new information about the bosses that were being killed as well as the items that were dropped. As of now, 9 Purple Tier bosses had been killed already. This Demons' Descent Event had a really nice drop rate; the profits were extremely enticing.

Right as I was idling away and doing nothing, a "Ding!" was heard. It was a message from General Li Mu, "Xiao Yao, where are you at right now?"

"Qilin Valley, why do you ask?"

General Li Mu opened up the voice chat, his tone sounding urgent, "Ba Huang City's 3 Emperor Tier bosses have been found. Jian Feng Han has brought 3000 players to Fire Stone Valley to kill one and [Prague] has brought 4000 players on an expedition to the East Coast where it is said to contain a dragon turtle boss that's also Emperor Tier. The third Emperor Tier boss is southwest of Qilin Valley in the Wailing Forest. [Valiant Bravery] will be bringing 1500 players and we are nearly there, the only problem is that there's a particularly strong rival guild on their way: [Flying Dragon]. It is estimated that they're going to bring 3000 players, meaning their total players will be double ours. We are worried that we won't be able to take down the boss, so"

My lips pursed together in thought, "So you want me to bring over some men to help?"

"No, we mainly need you!"

"No deal, my people are very strong also!"

Li Mu sounded delighted, "Ah, that's even better then. Quickly come and join us now. Take the route through Qilin Valley to meet with us, bypassing [Flying Dragon]'s route. How many people do you have?"

"20 people."

"Eh, 20 people?"

"Yes!" I clenched my fist tightly, "Our fighting spirit is flourishing. We

are a dignified and composed looking group of 20 people. Under some circumstances, we can hold our own against thousands of men. You must be careful not to underestimate these 20 people!"

General Li Mu couldn't help but laugh, "Well then, say no more brother. This time, you'll really have to fight hard. This Emperor Tier boss must be taken down by us at any cost, otherwise, [Flying Dragon] will have an enormous lead over us!"

"Yup, I got it, We'll work hard!"

"Okay, thanks in advance!"

"Don't worry about it, you're one of us!"

"Yeah!"

.....

Turning off the chat, I turned to the group, "We have business to deal with!"

"Eh? What business, Brother Xiao Yao?" Wolf asked.

I said out loud, "There's an Emperor Tier boss southwest of us in Wailing Forest and two guilds will be competing against each other for it. One is [Flying Dragon] and the other is [Valiant Bravery]. However, [Flying Dragon] has over 3000 players while [Valiant Bravery] has only 1500 people. So we will help our friend [Valiant Bravery] withstand [Flying Dragon]'s attacks. Must help our friend guild take down one of the three big bosses!"

After the speech, I smiled, "Everyone, who's willing to go with me?"

"Why wouldn't we?" Dong Cheng Lei laughed, "Wherever Brother Xiao Yao goes, I will follow!"

Wolf nodded his head, "+1!"

TL: +1 literally means 'and me'.

Matcha and Darling Duck voiced at the same time, "+1!"

All 20 people quickly agreed that we would advance and retreat

together and be off to rescue [Valiant Bravery]!

.....

“Pa ta! Pa ta!”

A light, misty rain quickly turned into a torrential downpour in a blink of an eye.

I carried the Frost Rain Sword and rushed through the middle of the valley while Matcha followed. Wolf was running like a champ with his new dagger!

The massive rainfall pounded against the tree tops of the forest, creating a serene sound that would hide the sounds of fighting. Within minutes, we reached the Wailing Forest’s edge and dove right in. In a few minutes, the forest map in front of us began to show a vast amount of tiny blue dots of players. On each of the players’ arms was the shining emblem of [Valiant Bravery].

“Xiao Yao Zi Zai has arrived!” General Bai Qi chuckled as I approached.

General Li Mu walked on over, greeting me while carrying his sword. Looking at my troops behind me, he couldn’t help but look astonished. “My god, to have amassed a group like the one here in the past few days, impressive! That Cang Lei is Cang Yue’s older brother isn’t he? Wow, a Lv 54 Undead Assassin, Lv 53 Barbarian Berserker, Lv 52 Musketeer and a Lv 52 Healer... Xiao Yao, you’ve really outdone yourself this time. To have such a strong fighting force in a matter of days!”

“Thanks!” I laughed, “This is nothing, they are all my friends and brothers!”

“Haha, good!”

“Where is the boss?” I asked.

General Li Mu turned around and took us a dozen steps away towards the front of the jungle and beckoned for us to go look down into the basin below. “The appearance of the boss is quite deceptive. Look at the core of the basin over there...it’s that big tree over there....”

I was surprised, the core of the basin really did house a massive tree. Its branches were complicatedly interwoven and spread throughout the jungle, dispersing into the surrounding trees. Was that really the boss?!

General Wang Jian clenched his sword, saying, “Don’t bother looking Xiao Yao. It’s a Lv 60 Emperor Tier boss called Guardian of the Earth. Its defensive abilities and health are very high. It also has many different ways of attacking. For instance, its trunk and branches have the ability to shoot pine needles at us. What’s more is that it’s an extremely powerful AOE attack. The first time we attempted to go near it to attack, over 50 people died and we were defeated.”

I clenched my teeth, “Even though it’s an AOE attack, it shouldn’t be strong enough to do that much damage. After all, the boss is only a Lv 60 Emperor Tier, right?”

Wang Jian nodded, “Yes, you’re right, the boss did around 1800 damage with its AOE attack. So anyone who had over 1500 defense was more or less able to survive it . However it’s AOE range covered far too much ground and our Healers weren’t able to survive. Since our average heavy armor class player has around 1200-1400 defense, they weren’t able to last long without Healers. Our Mages were killed after their [Mana Shield] broke so this boss made us feel like there was no way to beat him.”

General Li Mu took a deep breath and pointed directly across the basin, “The biggest threat to us is out there; there are at least 2000 members of [Flying Dragon] waiting for us. Once we start the boss, they’ll definitely attack us. At that time, we will be too exhausted to resist them. In a situation like this, what would you do Xiao Yao?”

I looked over the troops, sweat beading down my brow, “If our numbers had exceeded theirs, then we could have split into two groups: one to protect while the other tried to kill the boss in 20 minutes. However, this isn’t the case. With our numbers being lower than theirs, there’s only one way...”

“What way is that?!” Wang Jiang asked.

I uttered my plan, “Dispatch a third of the troop so they can pretend to attack the boss. The other two thirds will do a sneak attack. Talk after killing [Flying Dragon], otherwise everything we discuss is pointless!”

General Li Mu pumped his fist and laughed, “You and I were thinking the same thing; to fight against a guild like [Flying Dragons], we need to shed some blood!!”

Chapter 183: A Strong Enemy Appears

“Pa...”

His battle axe landed heavily on the ground, causing a few chunks of mud to go flying. General Bai Qi raised his voice and said: “Xiao Yao, go ahead and explain how to start the battle. If we enter rashly, we’ll be eaten alive like a dumpling. [Flying Dragon] is not full of fools; Soaring Dragon is sly, Black Tortoise isn’t too easy to deal with either and the newly recruited Nature’s Knight, Drunken Spear is also shockingly powerful. We have suffered a lot of loss under his ruthless hands.”

“The gap in numbers is a little big...”

I stared into the distance and said, “General Li Mu, from your point of view, how would we start the battle?”

General Li Mu clenched his fist and replied: “We, [Valiant Bravery], though small in number, will never compromise. If I were to direct this battle, I will consolidate my main forces. Then like a fist, I would smash into the opponent’s weak point!”

I laughed, “What is their weakness?”

General Li Mu froze and couldn’t think of a response or any weaknesses in [Flying Dragon]. Standing on the hills on the opposite side, the line up of [Flying Dragon] troops looked strict and austere. The heavy armor group stood at the front, followed by the Mages, Archers and gunners. Last were the Healers. If we really fought them, there would only be huge losses for us. After all, [Flying Dragon] would not be easily defeated with those armors equipped by the heavy armor troops on the front lines.

After a few seconds of silence, General Li Mu replied, “Alright, I admit I can’t find their weakness. Their battle lines are well formed, indicating great expertise. I really can’t see any weakness.”

“Yea ...” I grabbed my Frost Rain Sword and laughed, “Actually I can’t see any either!”

“Ah?”

“However, we can create a weakness for them....”

I moved forward, reached out my hand, waved and said: “This is my plan. I’ll lead a few people with me to start to kill the boss. The enemy will definitely be anxious about this boss and might start attacking my group any time. The heavy armor group will definitely be diverted to stop us. Then, we will set up a few Assassins to prepare a sneak attack for the Mages in the back and you, General Li Mu, will lead a 1000 men main force. Taking advantage of the rain, you’ll sneak around the back and ambush them from behind. As for me, give me 200 people, I’ll break through from the front when they come to try to take the boss. In this way, we’ll be able to mess with their formation. Once their formation is broken, [Flying Dragon]’s superiority in numbers won’t account for much.”

General Li Mu widen his eyes “Just like that...Will it be enough?

Behind us, General Wang Jian said “It’s worth a try, otherwise the Emperor Tier boss will have no relation with [Valiant Bravery]. The last time we fought with [Flying Dragon], we lost. If we don’t win this time, our guild’s morale will take a big blow. This war is inevitable, we must fight whether we want to or not!”

General Li Mu took a deep breath and decided. With a swing of his hand, he shouted, “Okay, we shall fight!”

Having said that, he told me in a low voice, “Xiao Yao, I’ll let you lead 5 100-man teams and the rest of the group of 1000 people will be led by me. Let’s maintain contact and when the time is right, I’ll start the assault.”

I nodded and looked far into the distance, I said, “Take advantage of the pouring rain that’s limiting visibility right now; you should hurry and go. Just leave with me with 500 people!”

“Okay!”

.....

The heavy rain pelted onto the armor of the warriors. Old K clenched

his battle axe, preparing for the battle. He laughed lightly, “Li brat, how should we slaughter in little while?”

I said lightly “First, feint an attack; Old K you must endure, don’t charge ahead alone. As soon as you leave the Healers, only two of the enemy Mages are needed to insta-kill you, got it?”

Old K bitterly laughed “Okay, I’ll listen to the boss but I’m not good at feinting. I’m better at brute force. How about this? I’ll go with General Li Mu and charge with them from the back, that way it’s more fun!”

I frowned a little, and then laughed, “More fun my ass! I need your [Whirlwind Blade] and [Savage Jump Slash] to weaken the enemy’s firepower. So you better not leave, otherwise our 500 warriors won’t stand a chance against 3000 enemies!”

Old K was stunned. “How will I attract their firepower?”

I replied succinctly, “Easy, [Whirlwind Blade] can create a hurricane to break the enemy’s front line so you should use [Whirlwind Blade] to destroy their first line of defenses, kill your way forward and give as many people a taste of your [Flame Axe] and [Fire Axe]. Once the back line locks onto you, you will jump out using your [Savage Jump Slash] on an enemy that is near us. Repeating, you alone can toss and turn the enemies and make them extremely frustrated. But you’ll need to not fight a long fight or else you’ll die!

Old K laughed “Okay, I got it, let me handle this!”

Little Wolf lifted his dagger, “Brother Xiao Yao, what do you need me to do?”

Without hesitation, I said, “Little Wolf, take all the Assassins in this 500 people team and use [Stealth] to lay an ambush on the west side of the boss. There’s a small hill on the side of the cliff where you can hide. The moment the heavy armor player division passes by, you’ll immediately launch a surprise attack on [Flying Dragon]’s Mage division. Remember to use your strongest attack to break their [Mana Shield] and kill them on the spot, otherwise, if the Mages manage to launch their magic attacks, these 50+ Assassins will definitely be killed.”

Wolf nodded and smiled, "Understood, Brother Xiao Yao. I won't let you down!"

As he spoke, Wolf picked out the Assassins from among the remaining guild member and they switched into stealth mode one by one, quietly moving into the distance.

.....

"What's next?" Matcha lifted her long sword and asked excitedly.

I looked at the crowd and said, "100 man team leaders, please step forward!"

Swiftly, 5 players from [Valiant Bravery] came out one by one. One of them, a Swordsman that looked around 25 years old, smiled, "Xiao Yao Zi Zai, if you have any commands, say them. Today you are our commander!"

I nodded, "When you were killing the boss just now, what was the range of the boss' normal attack?"

The team leader thought for a while and said, "Approximately 25-30 meters from the trunk. You'll see that this Guardian of the Earth has many vines that hang from its branches. These vines have the ability to shoot sharp needles or attack like a spear and many of us suffered significant damage from those attacks. Furthermore, the branches' attack power is extremely high, it really lives up to its Emperor Tier boss name!"

The other team leader asked, "Xiao Yao, what's your plan of attack?"

I smiled, "All Knights and Monks, equip your shields and surround around the tree. Healers stand 30 yards away from the tree to [Heal] and ensure that every Knight and Monk has his own personal Healer to prevent any casualties. Give [Flying Dragon] the false appearance that we are spreading out our formation to kill the boss. This way, our mission will more or less be completed."

The team leader nodded and smiled, "Understood, I'll get on with it!"

"Alright, Swordsmen, Berserkers, Archers, Mages and Gunners, the players with these few professions all follow me. We'll move around the

boss and set up defenses in the valley to prepare to greet [Flying Dragon]'s attack!"

"Aye!"

.....

Amongst the clashing sound of armors and chains, all the Monks and Knights charged forward followed by a group of Healers behind. There were around 100 players and everyone was brandishing heavy shields to bear the tree's attacks and get to the foot of the tree. Then, we saw the whole tree started to wriggle, and suddenly the its branches and vines shot needles continuously, "Pow pow pow", stabbing the players' bodies. Luckily, the players I dispatched were all heavy armor players with high defense, so they couldn't be killed easily. Only players who went too close to the roots of the tree died, swept away by its large branch arms.

"It's about time, Boss.." Matcha reminded me.

Nodding my head, I raised my hand and lifted my cloak, covering my head and preventing the heavy rain from obstructing my vision. I slowly pulled out my Frost Rain Sword and whispered, "It's time. Everyone follow me, advance slowly and don't mess up the formation!"

"Clang clang clang..."

The sound of swords being unsheathed chimed. The average level of players in [Valiant Bravery] was about 50 and these Swordsmen were all the cream of the crop. Meanwhile, the Mages raised their staffs while each and every person entered into a mental state of preparation. Everyone understood that this battle was extremely important for [Valiant Bravery]. The reputation of this guild would depend on the results of this battle!

"Swooshhh..."

My Purple Dawn Boots strode through the wet grass as I summoned Baby Bobo and looked straight ahead. I led nearly 350 people to stand between [Flying Dragon] and the boss. The group spread their formation one by one and under the veil of the heavy rain, it was hard to tell the

actual number of players here; maybe the enemy will think that our main force of 1500 people is here.

“Di!”

General Li Mu sent a message, “Xiao Yao, not good, we killed 4 Assassins along the route so [Flying Dragon] definitely knows that we are coming!”

“Have your numbers been exposed?”

“In this heavy rain, we shouldn’t be too visible.”

“Then it’s still alright, thank God for this heavy rain! You guys should continue with the mission and prepare to ambush them. Now let’s wait and see if this Emperor Tier boss will really attract the [Flying Dragon]. Once Soaring Dragon attacks my location, you should immediately start the attack. Their formation will have a lot of weakness once they start moving. That will be our chance!”

“Alright! Oh by the way, Xiao Yao, beware of Drunken Spear. Remember that name; that Nature’s Knight might have the power to kill you. You must be careful, don’t die no matter what or else we’ll all be finished!”

“Okay, I’ll try my best!”

.....

“Boss, they are starting to move!”

Matcha raised her hand and pointed at the top of the Basin. Indeed, in the midst of the biting cold and heavy rain, the luster of swords could still be seen. Waves of impenetrable, heavy armor troops surged down from the top of the mountains, ready to attack!

I immediately commanded, “All the Knights, Monks and Healers fall back and prepare for battle. Heavy armor troops, now is the time, follow me forward. Let’s eliminate them!”

Everyone in [Valiant Bravery] roared, readied their weapons and raced forward like wild horses. Their resentment towards [Flying Dragon] was even stronger than Zhan Long’s!

“Ding!”

A sound rung from the front, a Lv 53 Swordsman from [Flying Dragon] had locked onto me and was about to unleash his [Combo] attack!

I saw his attack coming and the moment we would have came into contact, I rapidly turned my body. “Hua”, Turning a big arc, I successfully dodged the enemy’s attack. At the same time, I slashed my Frost Rain Sword behind and unleashed [Wind Blade]!

1747 !

The Swordsman was dumbstruck, “Wha...What a high attack power...”

Baby Bobo also released his 2 [Combo] attack, and it was done, the first victim!

Up front, the melee attackers tangled together. However, in just a short 20 seconds of contact, [Flying Dragon] had more than 10 corpses. I raised my sword and shouted, “Fall back!”

Everyone in [Valiant Bravery] fell back one by one and I continued to command, “Stay at your place and defend against the attack! Mages, use [Pillar of Fire & Ice]!”

.....

“Clang Clang Clang...”

[Flying Dragon]’s heavy armor players bombarded us with their strikes for a few seconds before the earth shook as columns of [Pillar of Fire and Ice] roared and rose from the ground. [Flying Dragon]’s members immediately cried in pain, one Berserker holding an axe bellowed, “Our formation is stretched too far and the Mages didn’t follow, how do we fight!?”

“Peng!”

An explosion sounded as 2 [Valiant Bravery] Swordsmen fell back one after the other, breaking the frontline. Then the ground suddenly split as indigo geysers of scorching hot spring-water spewed forth and caused all targets in 5 x 5 area to suffer burning damage. The 2 [Valiant Bravery]

Swordsman cried painfully and died, just like that.

I nervously gritted my teeth and looked towards the attacker among the crowd. It was a Knight wearing a whole suit of armor and the previous two attacks, [Rock Piercing Thrust] and [Scorching Spring] were all his creation. It was the person General Li Mu warned me about—

ID: Drunken Spear Lv 57 Nature's Knight

Guild: Flying Dragon

Position: Elder

Chapter 184: Getting Shot Hurts

“Keng!”

Knocking into a nearby Berserker, I dashed ahead with my sword tip ready to strike. There wasn't much distance between us, less than ten meters now. My Frost Rain Sword was already glowing bright with a [Fierce Ice Blade] ready to be activated. In a quiet roar, I said: “Drunken Spear!”

Drunken Spear noticed my existence, revealing a pair of black eyes that showed no fear. Yelling back at me, “Xiao Yao Zi Zai, you really are here!”

.....

Some people are destined to be rivals and the moment I saw Drunken Spear, I knew he was that fated rival. He would be a powerful rival, powerful enough to be a deadly threat to me!

“Shua!”

The raindrops on my Frost Rain Sword flew off the tip as I swung my sword at Drunken Spear's neck. That was generally the weakest point of a person, striking there would do an additional 25% damage. This was general knowledge that every gamer should know, let alone Drunken Spear. His uncanny ability to move like a cloud and flow like water showed that he was a master at the game.

TL: The Author is not bsing this part about the neck, he mentioned it before...

“Keng!”

I smashed my sword against his spear with a boom and wait, that was the True Soul Spear from the Five Barbarians' Desolate Tomb quest. It had ended up in our opponent's hands!

“Hehe...”

Drunken Spear's spear slid back 20 centimeters, blocking the Frost Rain Sword from sliding down and at the same time, he abruptly kicked the

bottom of the spear to make the tip of the spear move like a living thing. It was a special skill of his, [Rock Piercing Thrust], a skill unique to Nature Knights!

“Bang!”

My chest went numb as my Nebula Armor had a huge hole in the middle of it. At the same time, I was involuntarily knocked back a few meters. [Rock Piercing Thrust], a skill that could pierce through defenses as well as knock enemies back!

Drunken Spear smiled and rushed on forward, his right hand clasping the back of his spear as the tip of the True Soul Spear shot forward like a viper. The activation sequence for [Flame Blade] began. Here we go again. His spear handling was exceptional, and the way he worked the spear was pleasing to the eye. Although he was an enemy, with that move, I began to respect him.

1278!

My shoulders began to burn. Drunken Spear’s attack was extremely strong, doing over 1200 damage. However, he was shocked by how small the damage number was, apparently, he didn’t think my defense would be so high.

The True Soul Spear was cut off from making contact with me as I flicked my wrist which caused the hilt of my sword to catch the True Soul Spear’s shaft with a “ka!”. Taking advantage of this opportunity to leap into the air, my sword glowed bright with the colors of [Fierce Ice Blade] and instantly slashed into Drunken Spear’s shoulder. A big number came bursting out above him–

1517 !

“Ugh...” Drunken Spear frowned, he had roughly 50% of his original 3000 health left. After taking my attack, he abruptly stomped the ground with his boots. “Bang”, the earth began to tremble as all of a sudden scorching hot water came bubbling out of the ground around us. With no way of dodging it, I was scalded by the intense heat.

974 !

This skill was far too ruthless!

Lifting a foot, I lashed out to kick him!

“Bang!”

Drunken Spear brought his spear up to block against my Purple Dawn Boots, but his strength was lower than mine so he was knocked back a good 5 meters. His face showed surprise, though that didn't stop him from dashing back toward me with his spear. His iron spear started shaking as he activated [Iron Spear Thrusts]. This was his finisher, an AOE skill!

This was the first time I had seen a physical killing skill, so without hesitation, I activated the [Crimson Dragon Ring]'s special ability, [Shield of the Crimson Dragon]. Immediately a crimson dragon's head took form around me, acting as my shield and increasing my defense by a large amount. The Frost Rain Sword remained horizontal to my chest, a standard defensive position!

TL: Xiao Yao chooses to use the [Ring of Crimson Dragon] over [Reflect] mainly because the skill Drunken Spear is using is new/may have more than 1 attack.

“Keng keng keng!”

The spear stabbed into me three times, and three numbers began to rise up as a result–

317 !

296 !

305 !

.....

Waving my hand to cast [Heal] on myself, I recovered 900 health and then drank a Lv 6 health potion, which added another 1000+ health. Adding to the efforts of the group of Healers behind me, I was already back to full health!

Drunken Spear bit his lip, and growled under his breath, “Fuck, Xiao Yao Zi Zai has a ton of skill. Why is he helping [Valiant Bravery]...”

I didn’t speak and instead dashed over to him and used a skill. The Frost Rain Sword flashed after feinting a hit against Drunken Spear to force him backwards; power surged through me as I unleashed [Strength of a Thousand Men] onto him!

“Oh crap! Combo!” Fierce Tiger cried out from far away. He snarled, “Be careful Drunken Spear, that’s an S rank combo!”

Drunken Spear looked very calm despite the impending skill and with a flick of his wrists, the True Soul Spear hit against my sword thrice, “pa pa pa!” and defended against the first three strikes. Although my first three moves were blocked, the fourth move landed on him!

“Bang!”

My shoulder sank as I knocked into Drunken Spear, forcing him into a stun. The Frost Rain Sword trembled for the final skill, [Wind Blade]. Even though it landed on Drunken Spear perfectly, it wasn’t enough to kill him. A Healer from [Flying Dragon] cast [Heal] on him before I could do any more damage. This made killing Drunken Spear even harder!

An iron fist landed with a “bang!” onto the ground, activating [Binding Chains] to lock Drunken Spear’s legs. I growled, “Old K, use [Whirlwind Slash], Ah Lei, use your [Flame Blade]!”

That’s right, I deliberately angled my shot to knock Drunken Spear near my Zhan Long members. This would make killing him much easier. If we didn’t kill him now, then this would be a hard fight!

“Coming!”

Old K roared, his [Whirlwind Slash] lashed out as he danced with his trembling battle-axe. People that were close to Old K were immediately engulfed in the whirlwind. He had 5 hits on everyone caught in the skill for 400 damage per hit and a total of 2000. Dong Cheng Lei also flew forward, his [Flame Blade] at the ready!

But because of the approaching [Flying Dragon]'s Healers' [Heal]s, Drunken Spear was still hanging on with 30% of his health!

I called out to Old K while running forward, "[Savage Jump Slash]!"

Old K roared as he leapt forward; his Battle-axe heavily shook the ground when he attacked Drunken Spear with the skill!

"Bang!"

1427 !

The Frost Rain Sword grew brighter as it flew through the air, delivering the final blow to Drunken Spear. He fell to the ground and a helmet dropped from him, which I picked up. It was a Lv 44 Purple Tier, so I threw it over to Old K, further strengthening our Berserker!

.....

"It's over..."

Fierce Tiger's face paled, "Drunken Spear was killed! Dammit, he had 1547 defense and still died! How high of an attack do the people in Zhan Long have?"

In the distance, Soaring Dragon carried his staff as he flew in the air crying out, "Fierce Tiger! Don't worry, hurry up and break through their defensive line, we have to secure the Emperor Tier boss for ourselves! Also, don't fight with Xiao Yao Zi Zai, let our Mages and Archers take care of him. There is no need to duel someone like him!"

Biting my lip, I took command of the situation, "Everyone, charge, now!"

Meanwhile in the distant enemy lines, the Assassins were finally attacking!

"Whoosh!"

A red ray of light beamed down on a Lv 53 Mage and stunned him before a [Bleed] + [Backstab] combo to insta-killed him. Right after, the Assassin disappeared by using [Stealth]. Our 50+ Assassins were killing the Mages and Healers of [Flying Dragon] left and right. This strategy was without a doubt a decisive blow!

Seeing the Mages beside him killed by the surprise attacks, Soaring Dragon was livid. His staff shook the ground as he cast a [Rock Spike] while forced a [Valiant Bravery] Assassin out of his [Stealth]. Soaring Dragon immediately followed up with a [Pillar of Fire and Ice] that killed him off instantly. At the same time, he bellowed: "Use AOE spells to force the Assassins to reveal themselves! How despicable, to send Assassins to try a sneak attack. Musketeers, all of you crouch and use [Bombardment] on the whole area. I don't believe that the players in [Valiant Bravery] are invincible!"

In a flash, a rumbling sound was heard and each invisible Assassin was forced out of their invisible state and met by the anger of the remaining Mages and Archers. The original 50 Assassins quickly dwindled, leaving behind Wolf and a few other Assassins who quickly went into the bushes to hide. Although the Assassins had quite a few losses, they managed to kill over 100 cloth armor players!

The battle continued to spread out even more as players continued to collapse one after another. The long range members of [Flying Dragon] began to advance forward as we started to give way. Our losses were building up: over 250 players left alive and the closest graveyard to this area was 30 minutes away, so there was no way any dead player would be back anytime soon. Healers were also limited by their cooldowns, so [Revive] couldn't cover everyone.

"Kacha!"

My Frost Rain Sword ripped through a high leveled Archer while I simultaneously turned around and kicked away a Berserker that was planning to ambush me, "What is General Li Mu doing? Why aren't they here yet?" I cried angrily.

Matcha was carefully removing an arrow stuck on her chestplate as she bit her lip and said, "I don't know either, its should be soon...Boss, I can't dodge the Archer's arrows. Getting shot hurts..."

Reluctantly, I said, "Learn to run in a Z formation, Archers who are trying to lock in on you will have a higher chance of missing."

“Oh, but I can’t run in a Z formation well enough...”

“I know, slowly adapt to the game environment, try to get more balance...”

“Yes, I’ll give it a try!”

As she said that, Matcha was once again shot in the chest, causing her face to flush red as she moved it again. Darling Duck began to cast [Heal] as Matcha whined to herself, “Ugh, why do I feel like we’re going to lose...”

.....

Seeing my comrades fall one by one, I was starting to feel a little despair as well.

Suddenly, loud roars sprang up behind [Flying Dragon]’s frontline as a Swordsman with 10% health left came tumbling onto a hill. Over his head, the name “Mu Tian” could be seen. He stumbled towards Soaring Dragon with a cry, “Boss, the rear guard has been ambushed! The losses are disastrous, at least the 16th – 22nd 100 man teams are all dead within 5 minutes. [Valiant Bravery] has gone mad!”

Soaring Dragon trembled with astonishment, “What? 700 men killed within 5 minutes? I didn’t hear wrong, did I? Damn it, why didn’t you send me a message?”

Mu Tian clenched his teeth, “I thought we could win since their main team was out trying to kill the boss but who would have thought that more and more people would appear? The main attack force of [Valiant Bravery] has already penetrated our rear guard. The people in the Basin are just some random members with Xiao Yao Zi Zai leading them!”

Soaring Dragon clenched his staff with a great deal of force, the wood creaked under the pressure. His eyes were bulging out with no small amount of anger–

“Xiao Yao Zi Zai, General Li Mu, you two are really goddamn despicable...”

Chapter 185: Class Change Certificate

“Wolf!”

In the party chat, I said under my breath “Get ready to sneak up behind Soaring Dragon and break his shield. Old K, use [Whirlwind Blade] to break a path through and I will follow up. Once Soaring Dragon retreats, Old K will use [Savage Jump Slash] to chase after him. Remember, if we kill Soaring Dragon, [Flying Dragon]’s morale will dissipate!”

Wolf nodded, “I need 12 seconds to adjust my position so I can avoid Musketeers!”

“Alright, get ready!”

.....

I held my breath as I drew my Frost Rain Sword and rushed into the mob. The enemy’s Swordsmen and Berserkers attacked me endlessly with their weapons. Too bad for them my 1645 defense was so high where only a few people could break past my defense, and even if they could break past it, Darling Duck’s and my [Heal] were enough to keep my health up.

Within 9 seconds, I was only 7 meters away from Soaring Dragon while lowering my head and fighting against 2 Swordsmen. I could activate [Haste] at any time to rush in for the kill!

“Now!” Wolf shouted under his breath and activated his attack three seconds later, his Purple Tier dagger flashed through the air straight into Soaring Dragon’s [Mana Shield]!

“Pu...” The sound echoed lightly. The [Mana Shield] deformed but it did not break. Wolf did not give up and he crossed his arms, stabbing with the dagger three more times. All of his strikes were critical hits!

“Pa....”

Finally. Even if Soaring Dragon was the strongest Mage on this battlefield, his shield still broke. However, his reactions were also fast and the second his magic boots touched the ground, he twisted around, lifting his staff, made the sound “Keng” and blocked Wolf’s final stab! As

he retreated, he had already prepared an [Icicle] in his open hand while shouting “Eliminate the Assassin!”

[Scatter Shot], [Triple Shot], [Chilling Wind Spell], and [Pillar of Fire and Ice] and almost every other long range attack joined together. Wolf couldn’t dodge these attacks and was obliterated. He fell to his knees and said in the party chat, “I’m leaving the rest to you all!”

Instant kill! Even Zhan Long’s number one Assassin couldn’t defend that many attacks.

.....

Hong....

As a whirlwind erupted, Old K’s [Whirlwind Blade] slashed through a crowd of people and pushed into Soaring Dragon, dealing some damage.

1304 !

Unfortunately, the attack did not kill him. Soaring Dragon roared “Kill Old K, now! Defend me as I retreat! Where the hell are our Assassins? Attack their far side and kill Darling Duck and Fox!”

“Sha sha....”

In the rain, my Purple Dawn Boots smashed against grass as I leapt forward. My Frost Rain Sword crept towards Soaring Dragon’s back without a sound. I only needed to touch him and he’d be done for!

“What?”

Soaring Dragon turned his head, the horror of realization contorting into his eyes “Xiao Yao Zi Zai?!”

At that moment, he activated the skill, [Eject].

TL: Unique Skill to Soaring Dragon

“Whoosh!”

An invisible force pushed the Lv 58 Mage back 20 yards, it was an ingenious skill for retreating.

I lifted my sword, and yelled “Old K, use [Savage Jump Slash]!”

Just as I expected, Old K slightly bent his legs, gathering the energy under his feet. A “Bang” sound was generated by his feet when he left the ground. The strong force pushed him upwards and he was like a massive bullet as he came down upon Soaring Dragon. His battle axe carried a frightening force of power that hacked into the shoulder of [Flying Dragon]’s Leader!

1429 !

Finally, this attempt succeeded, and Soaring Dragon fell to his knees and decayed into a white light, leaving for the spirit world.

.....

As I rushed forward I shouted “Keep advancing! Don’t stop until we see General Li Mu’s group!”

Nothing is certain in war; we must use everything in this battle where we are outnumbered two to one. The [Flying Dragon] guild was actually quite strong; their average strength was not worse than our own. Therefore for us to win, we had to rely on wild strategies that were almost crazy.

I waved my hand to heal Old K, while at the same time I dealt with an Archer. Matcha, Fox, Darling Duck followed closely behind me, afraid we would get separated. Of the team of 500, we had advanced the farthest into “[Flying Dragon] territory”. But our losses were heavy: only 70 of the 500 were still alive. Even for Zhan Long, only 11 players remained.

Luckily, at the mountaintop, a familiar shadow appeared; it was General Wang Jian waving his sword and shouting “Victory is ours! Kill your way down and regroup with Xiao Yao’s group!”

A flood of [Valiant Bravery]’s players rushed down the mountain and overran [Flying Dragon]’s players. I had never thought that this would go so smoothly, not even 20 minutes had past and the battle was nearly over. Of [Flying Dragon]’s 3000 initial members, approximately 70% have been killed and the rest were no longer a threat. They couldn’t continue fighting against [Valiant Bravery] anymore.

“How many people are left?” Li Mu brooded while charging into battle.

I turned around to look at my group and seeing no more than 50 people I said “At this point, we’ve lost over 90% of our group. Li Mu, you really gave me a tough task.”

Li Mu couldn’t hold in his laugh “Good brother, don’t be mad, now what should we do?”

“Immediately regroup to kill the boss. We must get it done within 10 minutes, otherwise they can regroup after reviving!”

“Yes!”

.....

Reforming a defensive line, General Wang Jian led 500 people to set up defenses, Li Mu led the other remaining 500+ people to kill the boss and Zhan Long was in charge of the assault. The strategy was simple, I’ll tank and attract the boss’ aggro while high leveled Mages attack the boss from afar with [Mana Shield] up and an army of Healers will Heal from behind. Only this way would we have a chance.

“Sha Sha.....”

Guardian of the Earth, this Lv 60 Emperor Tier boss was slowly moving around. It’s whole body was covered with branches that could shoot needles to attack any players that went near it. So these needles were the boss’ max attack range. However, these were not attacks that normal players could withstand and was far longer than the distance long range players could attack from. Mages would need [Mana Shield]s to protect themselves while they attack and even had to keep track of the shield’s toughness, they would die the moment the shield is broken.

Holding the Frost Rain Sword, I charged forward. There were vines swinging over my head and waves of pine needles flying towards me.

217 !

198 !

201 !

.....

Luckily, I could withstand these attacks and so I arrived at the foot of the large tree. Once I got closer, I saw on the trunk of the tree were eyes that were similar to those of humans but at least more than 100 eyes, closing and opening. Then there were these two large branches that served as arms.

[Fierce Ice Blade]!

That put a layer of frost on the boss and at the same time I activated [Strength of a Thousand Men]. Not being too fancy with the attacks, I focused on the fastest method in killing this boss. Otherwise, when [Flying Dragon] members revived and came here, this would become impossible.

“Woosh!”

A shadow passed over me then my arm suddenly went numb. I got attacked and lost 1700+ health; thankfully there were enough Healers. “Swoosh Swoosh” was the sound I heard as my health fill back up. At the same time, General Li Mu instructed a group of Mages to attack.

“Mages, use fire based attacks, the boss is a wood-type monster, so fire should do more damage. Don’t hold back!” General Li Mu spared no effort and pulled out his sword to attack the boss together with me. His stats were more or less high enough for this dangerous; he was indeed one of the top 3 heavy armor players of Ba Huang City. Even though he was no match for Jian Feng Han or Yan Zhao Warrior, he wasn’t too far off.

“Clang clang clang” As the chaotic attack ensued, the Boss’s health gradually lowered. My heart started pumping faster and faster and when the Boss only had 20% health, I started chanting in my heart, “Drop a Guild Creation Tablet... Drop a Guild Creation Tablet...”

If we get a Guild Creation Tablet, Zhan Long will have some hope! Either way we can’t always be [Valiant Bravery]’s helpers, that was definitely not our goal!

.....

“7% health left! Let’s keep going!” Shouted General Li Mu.

Frost Rain sword was almost dull and chipped while I was using all of my strength attack the boss. Meanwhile, in the party chat, Little Wolf’s spirit cautioned “Brother Xiao Yao, be careful, I saw Drunken Spear and about a hundred other spirits arrive in the basin, They can revive at any time. The only reason they haven’t should be because they are waiting to steal the boss right?”

I gnashed my teeth, “Yes, tell Li Mu that he must do whatever it takes to stall Drunken Spear and his people, this boss is ours and we can’t have them stealing our kill.”

“Got it!”

.....

5% !

4% !

3% !

2% !

.....

As I saw the Boss’s health reach 1%, my heart had jumped to my throat. At this time, my luck had finally expired and not far from here, rays of light began to flash as members of [Flying Dragon] had begun to revive. Drunken Spear lifted his Soul Spear, and rushed straight at me. He immediately used [Scorching Spring], killing some of the Mages whose [Mana Shield] had been broken. At the same time, he aimed his spear at me yelling “Xiao Yao Zi Zai, go die with the boss!”

I quickly lifted my sword at Drunken Spear and activated [Shield of the Crimson Dragon]

“Bang!”

With a forced collision, I pushed Drunken Spear away from the boss area and at the same time, I shouted “Li Mu, the boss is yours to kill, hurry!”

.....

Within the short 5 seconds, General Li Mu finally killed the giant tree and the Guardian of the Earth let out a cry and fell. The tree's vigorously waving branches drooped and its green blood stained the ground with multiple equipments and items falling to the ground!

“Ding!”

System Notification: Everyone take notice, player General Li Mu has killed the Emperor Tier boss 【Guardian of the Earth】, +3 Charm has been awarded!

This means that the first Emperor Tier boss in Demons' Descent has been killed!

.....

“Ding!”

Drunken Spear's True Soul Spear flashed and my Frost Rain Sword shook at the same time. The two of us stepped back a few steps. Drunken Spear's eyes followed my every move and his mouth twitched into a smile as he said “Xiao Yao Zi Zai, you are indeed a good rival. Too bad we aren't friends!”

I weakly smiled “We can still be friends, as long as you leave [Flying Dragon]!”

Drunken Spear hesitated, then smiled “I hadn't considered that. Ha, good-bye!”

Quickly withdrawing, this top player of [Flying Dragon] took hundreds of people to leave. Since the boss had already been killed, there was no point in continuing the battle.

.....

“Li Mu, what was dropped?” I asked as I walked towards the foot of the tree.

General Li Mu stood up with a frown “Our luck wasn't too good; there weren't any Emperor Tier weapons but two Purple Tiers and a Gold Tier

dropped. Xiao Yao, there's also a Class Change Certificate, do you want it? Besides that, there isn't anything else I can give to you..."

"Oh, a Class Change Certificate? Let me see...."

"Sure!"

A cyan letter fell into my hands, a Class Change Certificate—

【Phantom Knight】 (SS) : This is an ancient letter that allows any heavy-armor class to obtain this class from their City's Knight Instructor. You will become a legendary yet mysterious Phantom Knight!

Chapter 186: Phantom Knight

“Shua!”

Quickly, I shoved the Class Change Certificate into my inventory. Staring at Li Mu, I said. “A gentleman keeps his promise, I came as soon as you called so I could help. It’s only fair that you gift me the Phantom Knight Class Change Certification. Don’t you agree?”

Li Mu couldn’t help but laugh and nodded furiously, “My god, how could you think that I would be like that? Zhan Long helped secure this Emperor Tier boss and helped [Valiant Bravery] preserve our dignity. Giving you something like the Phantom Knight Class Change Certification wouldn’t even be close to enough for compensation. You have a bunch of expert players and thus have a bigger need for it than I do!”

My eyes glanced over to Wolf and Matcha, nodding in return. I smiled, “Ah, then I’ll have to thank you Li Mu. The battle is over so I’ll be taking everyone back to Ba Huang City; I’ll leave the cleaning of the battlefield to you!”

“Yup!”

Li Mu announced, “I, Li Mu, may not have many friends in this life but Li Xiao Yao is definitely one of the most honored friends of Li Mu! It is because of the General Family that Zhan Long has incurred the enmity of a guild like [Flying Dragon]. Better friends than Zhan Long cannot be found even after a lifetime of searching. There is no other way to say this but whenever Zhan Long has need for my help, in any way, I, Li Mu, will definitely not hesitate to sacrifice myself!”

I smiled slightly, clenching my fist and said: “We all have people we want to side with no matter who they are; for that, there is nothing to be ashamed!”

“Yup!”

.....

Carrying the Class Change Certificate, I looked to Wolf and the others and said: “Zhan Long, let’s return to Ba Huang City, our task has been completed. Today, we have all worked very hard....”

Matcha blinked her eyes: “Boss, the 10 Purple Tier bosses were all killed, there are still another two Emperor Tier Bosses that are being fought at this moment, are we really are getting offline now?”

“No, everyone return to Ba Huang and wait for me at the blacksmith area, I have something to tell you all.”

“Yup....”

.....

I pulled out a return scroll and used it; “Shua” I was back in Ba Huang City. I headed straight for the blacksmith’s corner where Wolf, Old K, Matcha, Fox were and thus Zhan Long Studio’s online meeting began.

“Pa!”

Sitting on top of the warm furnace, I crossed my arms over my chest, smiled and said: “Today’s mission to kill the Guardian of the Earth proceeded fairly smoothly but Drunken Spear was difficult to kill. If it were not for us working together, I am afraid that we wouldn’t have been able to kill the highly offensive and defensive Nature Knight.

Old K clenched his fist, “His skills [Rock Piercing Thrust], [Scorching Spring], and [Iron Spear Thrusts] were far too strong. Those are class specific skills that others don’t have.”

Wolf waved his hands with a laugh, “Will the future of be dominated by those with hidden classes, I wonder?”

I shook my head, “Not necessarily, Q-Sword, Jian Feng Han, and Fan Ge Que are amongst the few players that have reached the pinnacle with basic classes. Strength in depends on the person and not the class. Anyways, we will have even more hidden classes in the future. Leaving aside my profession of Tomb Guardian of Dragon City, we will have another hidden class soon enough in our ranks!”

“Oh?” Fox asked, “Boss, what hidden class are you talking about?”

With glee I quickly pulled out, with glee, the Phantom Knight Class Change Certificate from my bag. The words floating in mid air above it proved what I said to be true. Immediately, the people around me began to stare blankly–

Wolf swore, “Damn, Phantom Knight, that sounds like a strong class...”

Old K was speechless, “This...this certificate, how did you come across it?”

Without skipping a beat, I answered, “The Guardian of the Earth dropped it and as a reward to Zhan Long for coming to [Valiant Bravery]’s rescue, Li Mu personally gave it to me. I want to pursue being a Swordsman so I don’t wish to transfer over to becoming a Phantom Knight, so let’s see which one of you guys want it.”

Wolf licked his lips with a smile, “I have been focusing on Assassins for over 30 years, I don’t want to suddenly switch over to a heavy armor type class. Old K, it’s just you and Matcha left, what do you two think?”

Old K held his axe for a moment, thinking about the decision carefully, “If I were to change classes, would there be any detriments?”

I nodded, “Yea, once you transfer over to a new class, you can only randomly keep one of your original skills. So for example, if you were left with [Flame Blade], you’d burst into tears.”

Old K let out a deep breath and then said, “Fuck it then, I’d rather not lose my [Whirlwind Slash] and [Savage Jump Slash]. Playing around with those two skills made my life so much easier and now I feel like a master at my class; I don’t want to suddenly become a noob.”

I laughed and handed the Class Change Certificate over to Matcha, “Then this is yours Matcha since you are a Swordsman and me being a Swordsman is enough for the studio. So take the class transfer to become a Phantom Knight. You would essentially become a mobile war fortress. If you become a Phantom Knight, we would be able to easily boss and PK– with someone like you having such strong defensive capabilities.”

Matcha looked at the Class Change Certificate being held towards her chest and her watery eyes blinked in surprise, “Boss, you... you really want to give an SS Class Change Certificate to me? This...this is pretty much priceless though, isn’t it?”

“It is...” I laughed, “It’s because it’s a priceless treasure that I’m giving it to you. I’d only feel secure knowing that something like this is in the hands of one of our own. Besides, Matcha is a priceless treasure as well. To be able to do the laundry, cook, and so on...”

“But, but...” Matcha lips trembled as she looked up to me shyly with her beautiful eyes, “I feel so bad about my horrible gameplay. I’m afraid...I’m afraid that I’ll waste this SS Class Change Certificate, so give it to Old K, he’d do it more justice than I would...”

I shook my head, “Don’t bother complimenting Old K, he only knows how to use three moves. I know him all too well. Matcha, you have an excellent understanding of the game mechanics and strategies that surpasses Old K by a lot. So become a Phantom Knight, this will give Zhan Long a better opportunity when you become a super-beautiful Knight. You’ll become Zhan Long’s symbol player with the start of this SS Class Change Certificate...”

Wolf walked up to pat Matcha on the shoulder and said, “Prepare to take that Class transfer Matcha! In the future, you’ll be Zhan Long’s number 1 tank and we’ll easily trample all of the small fries...”

Fox grinned, “That’s right, we’ll absolutely stomp them!”

Matcha slowly accepted the Certificate, her eyes barely restraining the tears from flowing down her face. Quickly, I tried to soothe her, “Don’t cry, whoever cries is a puppy. This is only a Class Change Certificate, nothing more. Come on, let’s go accompany you to get your Class transfer quests over with. Since this is a SS Level hidden class, it might be difficult to accomplish.”

TL: Common saying to get people to stop crying

Matcha slowly nodded her head in joy, “Ah, yes! You’re such an amazing Boss...”

.....

Opening the blacksmith's door, our group of 5 walked straight towards the job instructors within the grand hall. A group of professional instructors stood there while to the side of the barracks was a group of armed soldiers practicing how to fence. This spot here may be the safest spot of Ba Huang City. All the NPCs here were high leveled, so any hostiles would be toast by the time they took a single step in here.

Not too far away, a stout man with a beard growing all over his face stood there, slapping his chest with a loud laugh, "Guardians of the Order of Life, become a Knight! You will wield magnificent weapons and cultivate a strong body that is tougher than steel as you protect those human ladies. In addition, perhaps you may even seize the one with the biggest breasts to become your wife! Haha! Become a Knight of the Holy Alliance Faction!"

Matcha's face suddenly grew dark. Turning right round, she said, "I don't want to transfer classes anymore..."

I quickly pulled her arm, "Hey hey, don't be so impulsive, the instructor may be a wretched person but this doesn't affect you personally. Go on and show him your Class Change Certificate and see what type of mission he'll give you..."

"Okay..."

Shivering, Matcha walked over and handed the Class Change Certificate. The Knight instructor looked at Matcha with astonishment, "Little girl, you actually managed to get your hands on an ancient letter; this is a Certificate for changing classes. This one in particular will lead you down the path of power. You...do you really wish to become a Phantom Knight? Do you really desire to hold a spear between your hands for the honor of Humans, Moon Elves, Barbarians, and Wind Elves?"

Matcha nodded with a smile, "I do!"

"So be it then!"

The Knight Instructor held out his fist and said, "Well, take your

weapon to the southern jungles of Ba Huang City. You will find a Phantom Rabbit, kill it and deliver it to me along with 10,000 Gold and you will become a Phantom Knight as a reward!”

“Say what? 10,000 Gold?!” Matcha cried out loud, “No way, 10,000 Gold is too much...”

The Knight Instructor did not speak, he had already given the quest.

I pursed my lips together, “Don’t bother complaining about it, 10,000 is 10,000. Everyone pool your money together, how much do you all have?”

Wolf said, “I have a little over 1100 Gold...”

Old K muttered, “700 Gold...”

Fox waved his hand, “I took a look at the studio finances, Zhan Long has around 5900 Gold that we can spend.”

I pondered out loud, “Ah, that’s enough then, I have 3400 Gold. Give it all to Matcha so that she can transfer. This is a hidden class, it’s essential to the development of our future!”

“Okay!”

.....

We pooled together our money, and handed the 10,000 Gold to Matcha to hold onto for now. It was time to get out of the city and look for that Phantom Rabbit!”

Twenty minutes later after looking in the depths of the Ba Huang Forest. We arrived at where the quest had marked on the map. The group went on high alert as I beat the brushes with my sword in hopes of scaring the Phantom Rabbit out of its hiding place.

“Shua!”

A grey blur flew out, resulting in Matcha widening her eyes, “There!”

But the rabbit dashed into the bushes once more, evading capture. Wolf held his daggers with a stern look, “Wow, this rabbit is extremely fast. Its speed almost makes it look like a phantom!”

Old K crossed his battle-axe, “Depending on where it’ll pop out next from, I’ll split the rabbit in half.”

“Fox, fire a shot into the grass. We’ll get it: and there aren’t many places where this rabbit can hide!”

“Got it!”

.....

“Bang!”

An explosion went off and a gray blur passed by again. I quickly lashed out with my sword and Wolf slashed with his daggers, but unfortunately, we both MISSED. Old K didn’t even have the time to swing his battle axe!

“Again!”

After seven or eight tries in a row, Old K got fed up and used [Whirlwind Slash] once, doing a good amount of damage and dealing the money shot to that rabbit!

With a “jiji!”, the Phantom Rabbit fell to the ground, dead. It was gray rabbit with smooth fur and Matcha, smiling, said, “It seems that I can finally make that class transfer...”

“Yeah...”

.....

Returning to Ba Huang City, we handed over the quest item and the 10,000 Gold to the Knight Instructor. Suddenly, a golden beam of light fell onto Matcha, showing that she had successfully changed classes! She was now Zhan Long’s professional Phantom Knight!

“Ding!”

At the same time, a message came from General Li Mu, “Xiao Yao, terrible news...”

Chapter 187: Guild Prestige Tablet

“What’s wrong, General Li Mu? Calm down!”

“Okay...” General Li Mu turned on his chat function, took a deep breath and said, “This time the matter might be serious. Not long ago, Jiu Li City’s [Judgement] Guild defeated an Emperor Tier boss and it dropped a Guild Prestige Tablet. Xiao Yao, do you know what a Guild Prestige Tablet is?”

I jumped, “A Guild Prestige Tablet... I don’t know, I only know of the Guild Creation Tablet, what is a Guild Prestige Tablet used for?”

General Li Mu replied, “Guild Prestige Tablet is a must have item when issuing a guild challenge. During a challenge, it will be a showdown between a tenth of the guild’s number and the loser guild will immediately be disbanded while the winner guild will get 10% of the loser’s guild experience. This Guild Prestige Tablet is extremely rare but there is already one in Jiu Li City. Furthermore I received information 10 minutes ago that [Judgement] Guild Master has already sold this one and only Guild Prestige Tablet for 4,000,000 RMB!”

I froze, “General Li Mu, you don’t have to say anymore. I can imagine who bought this Guild Prestige Tablet. It’s [Flying Dragon]’s Soaring Dragon, right?”

General Li Mu gritted his teeth and said, “No, it’s not Soaring Dragon, it’s Mu Tian. Not even an hour after this Guild Prestige Tablet drops, Mu Tian went to Jiu Li City and bought it. They will definitely use it on [Valiant Bravery]!”

I thought for a while and said, “Wait, let me check the rules for this Guild Prestige Tablet...”

“Okay!”

.....

Opening the search function, I found Guild Prestige Tablet. There were a few lines of descriptions below–

Use Requirement: Player Level 50, Guild Level 3 and above, target Guild Level 3 and above

Usage Costs: 50,000 gold to use the Guild Prestige Tablet

Battle Requirement: The two Guilds participating will send the same amount of players to fight in the challenge, with the maximum being one tenth of their maximum member limit. If the guild levels are not the same, then the average between the two will be taken.

Battle Result: If the guild that uses the tablet wins, the losing guild will automatically be disbanded and can never be established again. The winning guild will also receive 10% of the losing guild's experience. If the guild that uses the tablet loses, their guild will be automatically disbanded and the challenged guild will receive 50% of the losing guild's experience.

.....

“So, do you understand now?” General Li Mu asked.

I nodded, “Not good. [Valiant Bravery] and [Flying Dragon] are both Lv 3 Guilds and have a limit of 1000 people. A tenth of it means 100 people participating from each side. This is a 200 people showdown but it's better than an all-out guild fight, after all the number of [Valiant Bravery] is lesser overall. If we're just choosing a hundred people, we can choose 100 elites. This way, our chances of winning are much bigger. General Li Mu, I know very well the abilities of General Wang Jian, General Bai Qi, General Lian Po and you. Even if it's [Flying Dragon]'s Drunken Spear, you all won't lose easily!”

“I'm just worried that they will hire mercenaries...” General Li Mu clenched his fist and said, “We, [Valiant Bravery], cannot afford to lose. Once the guild is disbanded, we brothers will have nothing left. That's why Xiao Yao, I'm inviting you, together with Wolf, Old K, Darling Duck, Fox, Matcha and Ah Lei to join [Valiant Bravery], help us to win this war caused by the Guild Prestige Tablet. After the battle ends, you can quit the guild, so please help us...”

I furrowed my brows and said, “As your friend, I will naturally help

you.... But General Li Mu, I can't make any promises for this Guild Prestige Battle, I don't know what kind of people Soaring Dragon is going to invite after all. If they are only in the level of [Wrath of the Heroes], then it will be easy. But if they invite the elites from guilds like [Legend], [Judgement] or [Vanguard], we 7 people from Zhan Long won't help much."

General Li Mu nodded and calmly replied, "I understand. Life and death is determined by fate, success and failure is determined by heavens. We can only try our hardest and hope for the best!"

"Yup. Can you continue to look for other people to invite?"

"Understood. Could you...Could you ask the two beauties Can Tong and Chang Yue to help us a bit...?"

"I'll ask but I can't guarantee they'll agree..."

"Alright..."

.....

Opening the chat function, I started a call with Lin Wan Er, it connected after a few seconds-

"Wan Er?"

"Yup, I'm finishing my quest, what's the matter?"

"It's..." I summarized [Valiant Bravery]'s situation.

Lin Wan Er frowned and thought about it and said with difficulty, "That... no matter what you say, I'm still a member of [Hero's Mound], moreover I am the Deputy Leader. The matter of me joining [Valiant Bravery] may cause unrest with other members of [Hero's Mound], so..."

I nodded, "I understand, it will be hard for you to do this."

Lin Wan Er smiled a little, "However, if you really want me to go, I'll bring Dong Cheng and join [Valiant Bravery] for a few days. It won't matter that much, at the most I'll just get scolded by Q-Sword a little when I return..."

I quickly shook my head, “It’s okay, I don’t want to owe Q-Sword anything. Leave it at that. [Valiant Bravery] are my friends but they are not Wan Er’s friends. I don’t have the right to ask you to help them, I’ll just settle it myself. Wan Er, be careful on your quest~”

“Okay, work hard! Don’t lose~~”

“Okay...”

.....

After getting back to General Li Mu about the expected news, he continued to look for other elite players.

Without surprise, not even an hour afterwards, a loud bell resounded in the air, a Guild Prestige Tablet have been used-

“Ding!”

System Announcement: Player Soaring Dragon has successfully used the Guild Prestige Tablet. The guilds involved in the battle are the challenger, **【Flying Dragon】** and the **【Valiant Bravery】**. Both parties are entitled to choose 100 players to participate in the battle. The final winner will receive a great reward while the loser will equally receive a great loss—guild dissolution. The official battle will start at 12 AM sharp tomorrow!

.....

“Wow..” Matcha held her long sword, dumbfounded, “[Flying Dragon] challenged [Valiant Bravery]... This time the joke is a little too big... Soaring Dragon is ruthlessly trying to wipe [Valiant Bravery] out from Ba Huang City...”

Little Wolf gritted his teeth and said, “The people in [Valiant Bravery] like General Li Mu are all good people; they can be counted as our friends. Brother Xiao Yao, let’s help [Valiant Bravery] in this battle!”

I nodded, “Yup, General Li Mu has already invited us. The 5 members of Zhan Long Studio plus Ah Lei and Darling Duck, a total of 7 of us, will join [Valiant Bravery] and help them to win this guild war!”

Fox frowned a little and said, “I feel like it won’t be that easy. Since

Soaring Dragon started this kind of war, he must be determined to win. Without any doubt, Soaring Dragon is definitely well prepared...”

Matcha twisted her eyebrows and said, “Boss, you have a deep bond with General Li Mu and General Wang Jian, so even if we know we’ll lose, we will still face the challenge head on. Furthermore...when Zhan Long is established, we should at least have a friend. [Valiant Bravery] members are all very loyal, I feel that Boss’ decision is not wrong. We must lend [Valiant Bravery] a hand, even if we are going to suffer a heavy loss!”

I laughed, “Yup, I have already informed General Li Mu. Let’s go to Ba Huang City North Market Square and prepare to join [Valiant Bravery]. Oh right, Matcha, have you learned any new skills?”

“It’s so expensive boss...all the special skills require 100g to learn...”

“Doesn’t matter, learn it!”

“Okay.”

After a few minutes, 3 golden pillars of light fell on Matcha’s body continuously and with a wave of her hand, 3 profession related skills were shared with us.

【Phantom Ray Slash (LV-1)】 : Channels power and releases a ray of straight light attack through a distance of 15 meters, dealing 110% of user’s attack. Percentage of attack changes based on the user’s skill level.

【Phantom Shadow Clone (LV-1)】: Creates a shadow clone that will cause a specified target to attack the clone instead of the user for 1.5 seconds. The effectiveness of the skill depends on the skill level.

【Phantom Holy Shield (LV-1)】 : Creates a holy shield to protect the user, increase defence and magic resistance by 5%. The effectiveness of this skill depends on the skill level.

.....

Looking at these 3 abilities, I nodded slightly and laughed, “[Phantom Ray Slash] is an attacking skill, [Phantom Shadow Clone] is a control skill while [Phantom Holy Shield] is a defensive skill. Changing classes to this

Phantom Knight profession was indeed the right choice. Matcha, what Swordsman skill did you keep?”

Matcha laughed lightly, “[Haste], it’s a little useful. I can increase my attack speed and movement speed. Furthermore, my attributes growth has changed, my endurance growth has increased by a lot, how should I add my points in the future, boss?”

“From your point of view, how would you add the points?”

“Based on my understanding of the Knight profession...” Matcha pursed her lips and said, “Defense and health is a must, these attributes have special growth from the profession. But physical attack must also not be neglected. Furthermore, I think that in the future, defense and health can depend on armors but attack can only depend on weapons. The attack power of spears is not as good as battle axes, hence, I will add more points on attack. The stats distribution will be 7 strength, 1 endurance and 2 defense. Boss, do you think this is practical?”

I nodded and smiled, “Very good, you can distribute it that way. I’m really looking forward to the day you become stronger!”

“Yup yup!”

“Let’s go, gather in the North Plaza!”

.....

5 minutes later, in Ba Huang City’s North Plaza.

General Li Mu came shuffling, carrying a Purple Tier long sword. He laughed heartily, “Thank you handsome guys and beauties from Zhan Long for your help, [Valiant Bravery] will remember it forever!”

I knitted my brows, “Stop talking about useless stuff, just add us into your guild!”

“Okay!”

The moment we entered the guild, a blood-red longsword sign appeared on my shoulder; it was the [Valiant Bravery]’s guild symbol. General Li Mu looked at me, “Brother, what position would you like, I won’t even

mind making you the Deputy Leader!”

I shook my head, “No, I don’t want any position. I will just lead the Zhan Long 7 person group and listen to your commands. We’ll kill whoever you want us to kill, as simple as that!”

“Okay, thank you all!” General Li Mu clenched his fist and said, “Thank you, my friends!”

I looked at the forest in a distance and said, “Enough, Li Mu, go and finish your preparation. We’ll also go offline to rest for a while, we’ll come online tomorrow afternoon before 11:00 and await your orders!”

“Yup, alright!”

.....

9pm at night, at the school bar.

Lin Wan Er held a glass of kiwi juice in both hands, slightly swaying, she looked at me, “The news about [Flying Dragon] and [Valiant Bravery] spread like a wildfire in the forums. Are you confident that [Valiant Bravery] can defeat [Flying Dragon]?”

I sat on the chair, “That will depend on the enemy...”

“Even when you have no confidence, you still help them...”

“Life itself is a challenge. How can there be any endeavor where success is guaranteed...”

“True. I wish you success. Sleep early tonight; tomorrow you’ll need to maintain your best PK mental state. Don’t go out and fight and don’t drink.”

“Okay!”

Chapter 188: The Calm Before the Storm

The following day, at 10AM.

In the lush woods near the outskirts of Ba Huang City, [Valiant Bravery] members could be seen everywhere and with the arrival of Zhan Long's group of 7, all the players were finally ready for the 100 VS 100 battle.

Standing underneath a pear tree, I crossed my arms, looked at General Li Mu and asked "Did you find out who [Flying Dragon] hired to join their guild?"

Li Mu nodded "Only players that have entered the guild for two hours should be able to participate in the Guild Prestige Battlefield. According to the spy I planted in [Flying Dragon], they hired 11 high level players that are all on the CBN network's top 1000 players ranking . They also invited 21 players from Fan Shu City, who are all at least level 50 top tier players and the rest are from Ba Huang City.

I gave a cold stare "Who in Ba Huang City would help [Flying Dragon]?"

Li Mu bitterly said: "[Vanguard] did. 13 core players from [Vanguard] joined [Flying Dragon] as mercenaries. All of them belong to heavy armor type classes."

"13 players?"

"Yes!" General Li Mu gripped his sword handle and said "Xiao Yao, these 13 players are also on CBN's top 1000 players and are veteran gamers from Jian Feng Han's forces. They are [Vanguard]'s elite squad and are nicknamed [Vanguard]'s 13 Eagles. Their leader is Fallen Wolf, who you have previously sparred against!

I clenched my fist "Che, the situation looks grim; it is not in our favor."

Li Mu nodded "Yeah, their average level is 2-3 levels above ours'. Since [Flying Dragon] hired 50% of their fighting force, they have an advantage in both level and equipment. They are really determined to win!"

Alongside me, Matcha said "So much hired help might not be a good thing, they are not as organized as we are. If we can use the geographical

location to our advantage, we could stand a chance.”

I asked “When will the map for the Guild Prestige Battlefield be released?”

“30 minutes before the battle, we will wait here right now since the time is so short.”

“Yeah.....”

.....

Li Mu sat down on the grass by the pear trees and used both of his hands to hold up his head while his arms were resting in his lap. Frowning, he whispered “Xiao Yao, can you tell me what I should do? [Valiant Bravery] is my and my brothers’ dream. It is our expedition in this world of virtual reality, so why do we keep on hitting these roadblocks such as, [Flying Dragon] and [Vanguard]?”

I patted his shoulders, smiling “Don’t pressure yourself too much, and don’t worry about it alone, you have us with you. Even if we lose, there should not be one bit of regret. However, we might not lose!”

Li Mu nodded.

Off to the side, General Lian Po sighed. Holding his crossbow, he laughed “We in the General family are called madmen by the players of Ba Huang City; it seems like they were right. We are not afraid of picking fights with others because we think of everyone as equals, not only that, but we all share a love for the Generals of the Warring States Period, to the extent that we have used different names as our ID’s. As you can tell Xiao Yao, Li Mu’s original name was Li Xin, Wang Jian’s original name is Wang Teng, Bai Qi was originally Bai Ying, and I changed my name from Sun Hong to Lian Po. And now you have it, a complete meal...”

TL: He means that the whole General Family is named completely after famous generals of the Warring Kingdoms time.

I couldn’t hold back my laughter and said “Yeah, that’s exactly the reason why, we are the type of people that care for one another. Life is a long and lonely journey, but it is filled with our friends and dreams that

accompany us. Without them, what's the difference between life and death?"

Li Mu stood up, laughing "Yes, Xiao Yao is right, [Valiant Bravery] is our dream, so we can't let the despicable people from [Flying Dragon] vanquish it!"

I replied: "Let's check our battle preparations to make sure that everything is in order. The battle will begin in one and a half hours. We need to obtain the information on the map of the battleground and decide on a strategy in the 30 minutes before the the battle starts. If we don't come up with a strategy, and rush in recklessly, we will not have even a 20% chance of victory!"

Li Mu nodded in agreement "Sure!"

.....

Time passed by slowly; for some of [Valiant Bravery]'s players it was a type of torture, while for others it was exhilarating. Knowing that they would have to face off against elite players coming from all three of the large cities, who are definitely stronger than them, increased their heart rate in both cases.

"Brother Xiao Yao...." Little Wolf silently held the dagger next to the pear tree and asked "Will we win? I can't help but worry that we might not win...."

I forced a smile while pointing at the [Valiant Bravery]'s logo on my shoulder and said "Today, we are warriors of [Valiant Bravery] and with that we must fight without any regrets!"

Matcha nodded cutely, "Yes, what boss says is right....."

Old K held his battle axe while grinning: "Let's not talk about winning or losing, we haven't even fought yet. I'm more interested in fighting [Vanguard]'s 13 Eagles and seeing if they are as good as rumors say."

.....

Moments later, a "Ding" sound could be heard as the Guild Prestige

Battlefield map revealed itself. It was a 10,000 x 10,000 field that was not too large nor too small, in the center of the map was a plateau with lush forest that was surrounded by shrubs. The players spawned on opposite ends of the map. Once the battle started, the players would start fighting, the penalties for dying here are as usual; if you die, you will lose a level and drop some equipment.

“Hua...”

Deep within the forest, Li Mu waved his hand and the Guild Prestige Battlefield map appeared, he browsed the map and said “Everyone has seen the battlefield, if you have any suggestions, let’s hear them now since everybody here is trustworthy!”

Wang Jian said in a low tone “The map has large bushes and deep ditches that can hide Mages, Archers, Musketeers to use in an ambush. “

General Bai Qi laughed “Hehe, within our 100 combatants, we have 44 heavy armor players that can be used on the plain to charge forward at them in the most effective way. We can clash against them head on!”

I shook my head “No, that is what we must not do....”

Li Mu lifted his head and looking at me, he asked “Xiao Yao, where do you think is a crucial location?”

My finger pointed on the map: “The crucial location is the center of the map, the plateau. Using the elevated land will help raise the potential of the heavy armor players as well as increase effectiveness of ranged attacks. Controlling the plateau will control the battlefield, so a battle for the plateau will be inevitable.”

Matcha chuckled “Haha, only boss can see it clearly; the battle for plateau is inevitable, and we must occupy it. It will then become easy to attack and retreat to defend. If we secure this location, we can control the pace of the battle.”

Li Mu nodded “Good, then it is decided, we shall develop our tactics so that we can capture the plateau!”

Lian Po smiled slightly “Yup, then let’s do that. I am afraid of

disorganized fighting which usually ends up in losses. Our main strength lies with you guys: Xiao Yao, Li Mu, and Wang Jian. The strength of others can't compare to them, so to win, we must stick together."

"Let's discuss specific tactics now!" Li Mu took a deep breath and continued "we don't have much time left."

Within the crowd, Fox coughed and asked "General Li Mu, how many Musketeers do we have for this battle?"

Li Mu was surprised "A total of 8, why...."

Fox stood up and said "Everyone knows that the firepower of Musketeers is not as strong as Archers nor Mages when it comes to ranged attacks. In teamfights, Musketeers shooting against heavy armor players is like tickling them, so I suggest that we gather all 8 of the Musketeers and concentrate our attacks solely on their Archers, Musketeers, Healers and other cloth armor players in [Flying Dragon]. Overlapping our [Bombardment] 8 times can insta-kill unsuspecting players. What do you think?"

Li Mu couldn't contain his laughter and nodded in approval "Good! Then the other 7 Musketeers will be under your responsibility, Fox!"

"Okay, I will organize the ambush, we will make them realize that we, Musketeers, although unpopular, are a force to be reckoned with! They will fear us Musketeers!"

"Okay!"

.....

Simple instructions were given to the remaining players. Our tactics were simple; the important thing was to occupy the plateau while the smaller details were only vaguely discussed since the time of the battle was drawing near!

"Ding!"

System Notification: You are one of the selected participants to enter the Guild Prestige Battlefield between the two guilds; the battle will start

in 5 minutes. However, you can enter the battlefield now, do you wish to be teleported?

Confirm!

“Swoosh!”

My character's body decomposed and with a flash of light recomposed at one end of the Guild Prestige Battlefield. When I opened my eyes, I saw that I was within the lush green forest and surrounded by fragmented broken swords, decaying human bodies, and the bloodied bodies of defeated orcs. These were the remnants of a battle that had taken place long ago. The plateau towered over us, over 50 meters tall, and there was an invisible border that would only allow us to enter the battlefield once the battle began.

.....

“Gu Dong!”

Li Mu drily swallowed, his expression nervous yet excited. He was also a battle maniac, and even though this battle was one to determine the life and death of [Valiant Bravery], his blood would still boil at the beginning of a battle. Of course, he was not the only one looking forward to battle, Bai Qi and Old K both loved the rush of battle.

“How do we charge to occupy the plateau?” Matcha said slowly
“Preparations must be done in advance.....”

I nodded and said to Li Mu “You take 20 heavy armor players and charge from the right side, I'll take Zhan Long and charge in from the left side. Whoever gets to the top first will start covering fire for others to help them get onto the high ground. The fight for the high ground is a must. Fox, you can lead your squadron of 8 musketeers. I'll send you some coordinates and be ready to ambush the players there! We must become famous from this war, dissolve [Flying Dragon], and teach Soaring Dragon a lesson!”

Li Mu and Fox both nodded “Ok, no problem!”

.....

After waiting for five excruciating minutes, finally, before our eyes, the curtain began to slowly disappear, bit by bit. The system began the countdown for the event

3!

2!

1!

The moment everyone has been waiting for has arrived. The battle has begun!

Carrying my Frost Rain Sword, I was the first player to charge forward. Following close behind me was Old K, Dong Cheng Lei and Matcha. Then it was Wolf, Fox, Darling Duck and the rest. Meanwhile, General Li Mu led the other group to charge from the right. We kept pace with each other and were no further than 100 meters apart so that we could hear each others call.

Chapter 189: Every Strike Draws Blood

“I’ll head up first!”

To save time, I traveled quickly with [Haste] and my Purple Dawn Boots’ built in movement speed which made me faster than anyone else. Within moments, I was near the base of the plateau. I rushed up, carrying my Frost Rain Sword, while Baby Bobo buzzed behind me, ready to fly in to assist me.

I sprinted up the rocky cliffs of the plateau. By the time I arrived at the top, I noticed that no one from Flying Dragons had arrived yet and immediately rushed to the other edge. However, before I even managed to get halfway, a player appeared in my field of view. It was Drunken Spear, the Nature Knight!

“Xiao Yao Zi Zai!”

Drunken Spear was wielding his True Soul Spear as he charged at me, his eyes were cold with determination. “Let us fight once more!” He shouted.

The Frost Rain Sword hung low as I powered forward. Right as his spear was about to pierce me, I threw myself to the ground and continued to slide forward at Drunken Spear. The Frost Rain Sword swept out from ground cutting deeply towards both of Drunken Spear’s legs!

“Xia!?”

TL: Sound of surprise/fear.

Drunken Spear jumped up to avoid my sword as he simultaneously stabbed my back with his spear. At the same time, his Fire Wolf pet snarled, it’s sharp claws were coming straight for me!

I kept calm, sliding forward with my body like a bullet; my boots caught onto a gigantic rock, and I sprang off of it with a strong kick! Both of my hands held firmly onto the Frost Rain Sword as I activated my Lv 6 [Combo]. Since Drunken Spear was in the air, he couldn’t dodge it and so I unleashed the first four hits onto his back!

627!

671!

669!

701!

.....

As his health dropped , I didn't wait for his reactions; my Frost Rain Sword trembled as I unleashed the 5th hit, [Fierce Wind Blade]!

“Crap...”

Chugging down a health potion to recover 1000 health, Drunken Spear unleashed his [Rock Piercing Thrust] as I released my [Wind Blade]. Only then did I realize that the [Rock Piercing Thrust]'s knockback capabilities which would help him avoid my [Wind Blade].

894!

After getting hit by the [Rock Piercing Thrust], I was forced to move back and couldn't finish Drunken Spear off. However, Baby Bobo came streaming in with his own [Combo] + [Sting] and although two of the attacks missed, Drunken Spear's health still fell back down a good amount!

“What a strong control...”

Drunken Spear fell back while stomping with a “Pow!” The earth began to rumble as he activated his skill [Scorching Spring].

Flying back with a MISS flying overhead, I smashed the ground with my fist , activating [Binding Chains]! Drunken Spear quickly leaned 3 meter to the side, resulting in a large MISS to appear over his head. Holding his spear in his hand, he laughed, “I'll be going back, what a good adversary! Don't you dare die too early on me...”

.....

I stood still and used a [Heal] to recover 900 HP. At the same time I looked forward and saw that there was a mass of people rushing uphill.

They were the Vanguard's Thirteen Eagles with Fallen Wolf in the lead! As expected, all of them were heavy armor classes: Swordsmen, Berserkers or Knights!

"Xiao Yao Zi Zai, you will die today!" Fallen Wolf held his battle axe and rushed forward, roaring "Brothers! Let's teach the ignorant Zhan Long what defeat tastes like!"

So aggressive, Fallen Wolf is too arrogant!

On the other side, Li Mu's eyes turned cold. He gripped his sword and rushed forward yelling "Advance! Let's buy time for Xiao Yao to regain his breath!"

.....

Soon, both sides had over 20 people on the plateau. In the distant skies, above the trees, more than 20 Wind Elves belonging to [Flying Dragon] revealed themselves. Perhaps this was their true trump card!

Behind me, Darling Duck, Fox and the others finally appeared, I was relieved; back-up had finally arrived.

Quickly running forward, I activated a Lv 6 [Combo] aimed at Lv 55 Swordsman's forehead. That caused a string of numbers to burst forth but a Healer managed to cast [Heal] onto him at the last second, keeping him alive. The insignia on the Swordsman shoulder showed that he was from Jiu Li City. With a happy smile, he reversed the tip of his sword and unleashed a [Combo]!

"Keng keng keng..."

After a chain of hits, the numbers flew up over the blade of my sword, totaling over 1800 points of damage. The people from Jiu Li City were not easy to deal with at all.

"Bang!"

A burst of air came from under my feet as my Frost Rain Sword shook; seeing that, the Lv 55 swordsman's eyes widen, "This...this is a unique [Combo] of a Swordsman? It's Xiao Yao Zi Zai!!"

With a fast paced combo, I rammed through [Flying Dragon]'s front line and into the core of their team. A final [Wind Blade] cut through a Lv 55 Swordsman's battle armor, killing him instantly. There weren't many that could withstand the full length of my [Strength of a Thousand Men].

.....

Li Mu's group was also fighting against [Flying Dragon], Wang Jiang snarled as he brought his sword up, "There's a Lv 54 Berserker to the right. Focus on killing him first!"

"Shua shua shua!" Three swords struck together, resulting in the Berserker whimpering as he fell to the ground. At the same time, Fallen Wolf's battle axe grew hot with a raging fire while another one of [Vanguard]'s 13 Eagles initiated a [Combo] onto one of our own Berserkers. Both sides were feeling the damage and so the situation was getting desperate!

"Hong!"

The earth trembled faintly as a [Pillars of Fire and Ice] exploded out from the ground, marking the first attack of Soaring Dragon. In addition, their Archers from the side shot at us with [Scatter Shot]s, landing with a "pa pa pa" sound. Immediately, two Swordsmen from [Valiant Bravery] keeled over; killed instantly as a result of the [Scatter Shot].

In the air, another group of Archers and Mages began firing at the ground with a fierce firepower. In a flash, 10 players from [Valiant Bravery]'s frontlines died, in a battle of 100 people, this was a huge loss. Things couldn't continue like this or we would lose for sure!

.....

"This is no good, kill one of the main guys first!"

I marked Fierce Tiger who was [Flying Dragon]'s Deputy Chief and then barked out a command, "In a few seconds, I'll burst in and use [Combo]. Old K, you'll use [Whirlwind Slash] to try and kill him and then use [Savage Jump Slash] to jump out. It's important that you succeed because once Fierce Tiger is killed, [Valiant Bravery] will have a chance!"

“Okay!”

Moving sideways, I knocked back a Knight. And then evaded the two [Combo]s by incoming Swordsmen with ease and smiled at the two MISSES that appeared. Moving past the two Swordsmen, my sword glowed with the golden hexagrams and was ready to cleave Fierce Tiger in two!

“Fuck!”

Fierce Tiger jumped back in a hurry and my [Combo] MISSED the first two hits!

MISS!

MISS!

875!

915!

.....

Before he could recover himself, a roar was heard from Old K as he brought his battle axe up. The winds of [Whirlwind Slash] engulfed the crowd and with two “Kacha!” Two hits landed on Fierce Tiger; he died!

“Ugh...”

Fierce Tiger sunk to the ground, his eyes looking at the wound on his chest. He did not think he would be a victim so quickly; casting an eye of hate at us, he cried out, “You dare... focus on me?!”

Feeling something was coming, I retreated while calling out to Old K, “Old K, retreat now!”

The earth shook with a ferocious tremble as a [Pillars of Ice and Fire] exploded from under Old K’s foot, smashing into him for 1200 damage. From midair Soaring Dragon quickly cast another [Pillars of Ice and Fire]! Old K was on the verge of death now!

“Get lost!”

Ignoring the fact that he was close to death, he cut into an Archer with his axe while his entire body began to glow red. Springing up with his

[Savage Jump Slash], he targeted a Swordsman and then dragged his battle axe while retreating, “Darling Duck, heal me...”

Darling Duck nodded her head in silent acknowledgement, her staff raised to cast a [Heal] onto the scarred body of Old K.

.....

Soaring Dragon trembled with anger, “It’s always you that gives me trouble, Xiao Yao Zi Zai! You and your Zhan Long! Screw you! Must you always fight with [Flying Dragon] until the bitter end?! [Flying Dragon], every Wind Elf, Mage, Archer, and Musketeer, lock onto Xiao Yao Zi Zai and kill him at any costs! Every heavy armor class player, lock on to Xiao Yao Zi Zai; break through his armor and break him!”

Staring coldly behind me, I yelled out, “Fox, prepare to fire!”

“Got it!”

Not bothering to retreat, I continued onwards; knocking away a nearby Berserker as the entire [Flying Dragon] concentrated onto me!

Inwardly panicking a bit, I activated the [Shield of the Crimson Dragon]. The crimson dragon curled around me in the shape of a protective shield for 7 seconds and used up 40 points of Rage. But because of that, I gained a tremendous boost in defense!

TL: Rage will be the final call (may have been Fury before)

“Pa pa pa pa...”

Countless arrows and magic attacks splintered against me, ranging from a low 40 to a high, but still low, 300 points of damage. The [Shield of the Crimson Dragon]’s extra defense and magic resistance was extremely powerful!

General Li Mu looked at me with no small amounts of awe, “Healer, heal Xiao Yao!”

The lights of [Heal] enveloped me while I also cast my own at the same time. Estimating their position, I yelled, “Fox! Aim northeast 25 degrees and fire at 35 degrees!”

Behind me, I heard the sounds of 8 Musketeers casting their [Bombardment] skill. The sky lit up like fireworks as 3 Wind Elves Archers and 2 Wind Elves Mages were blown apart!

“Fuck!”

Soaring Dragon’s face grew purple, “Wind Elves fall back, don’t die for nothing!”

I commanded Baby Bobo to fly forward and he killed an Archer. But afterwards, Baby Bobo unfortunately died by concentrated attacks after killing that Archer; it was worth it though.

.....

“Keng!”

Li Mu knocked back the shield of a Monk with a [Combo] and without skipping a beat, he activated [Absolute Authority], killing the Monk that had been standing on the frontline.

Wang Jian’s eyes locked together and whispered into the chat, “Boss, a player has disappeared...”

“Who?” Li Mu asked.

“Drunken Spear!”

“Ah?” Li Mu turned towards the back, “Have an Assassin do recon!”

Soon after, a blood-curdling scream came out as two [Valiant Bravery] Assassins perished from the back as a horde of [Flying Dragon] players launched an attack from the back. Drunken Spear was leading the attack with a bold look on his face! Singlehandedly charging into [Valiant Bravery]’s back line, he dodged various [Scatter Shots] with ease. Slamming down his foot, a [Scorching Spring] exploded from the earth and into the crowd. At the same time, he launched an [Iron Spear Thrust], killing a total of 7 members of [Valiant Bravery].

“Forward, kill them all!” Roared Drunken Spear.

My heart grew cold as I saw the event that had just transpired, “Matcha, block Drunken Spear from moving towards us!”

.....

“Sha sha...”

Our little Phantom Knight brandished her sword as a surge of energy escaped forward!

“Boom!”

Her [Phantom Ray Slash] swept through a group of people and although the damage wasn't high, it hit many people.

Drunken Spear didn't say anything but his True Soul Spear did all of the talking for him. Stabbing Matcha on the shoulder with a “Pa!”, a spurt of blood came out while the attack forced Matcha to retreat while crying out in tears. Activating [Reflect], she tried to hit Drunken Spear before getting out of range but unfortunately Drunken Spear easily dodged it with a MISS floating up!

“Weng!”

Three golden shields encircled Matcha as she activated her [Phantom Holy Shield].

Chapter 190: Must Die

“Xiao Yao, you go help Matcha block Drunken Spear, I’ll hold the frontline!” General Li Mu yelled loudly.

I was not willing to let Matcha face Drunken Spear and a dozen other players from [Flying Dragon] alone, so I took this chance to quickly run back while loudly yelling, “Little Wolf, Old K, Ah Lei, we’re going to save Matcha and kill Drunken Spear!”

.....

“Shou...”

With my Purple Dawn Boots sweeping past the meadow, I arrived with my Frost Rain Sword aimed straight at Drunken Spear’s chest. But Drunken Spear was also very fast, and his arm blurred when he raised it. “Keng.” My attack was blocked. However, by the time the True Soul Spear was able to move again, my fist had already hit his stomach with a “BANG” and I had finished aiming another kick too.

“Bang!”

My Purple Dawn Boots were blocked by the True Soul Spear, thus reducing some of the damage, while my fist still struck Drunken Spear fairly—

611!

227!

Drunken Spear took several steps back from the blow, his face full of shock. “Damn it! What kind of strength is that? How can Xiao Yao be this strong?!”

Behind him, an Archer of Jiu Li City spoke softly. “Drunken Spear, our priority is to kill Xiao Yao. We can’t let him use his full power. Otherwise when he uses his [Combo] and [Strength of a Thousand Men], he may very well kill you.”

Drunken Spear gave a nod: “Got it!”

I stayed where I was and furrowed my brow while whispering in the team channel, “Little Wolf?”

“Who do I kill, Brother Xiao Yao?” Wolf asked. His speed was greater than mine, so he was already hidden within the forest, near Drunken Spear.

Watching Drunken Spear retreat, I quickly spoke, “Give up on Drunken Spear, Little Wolf, go and stun the Berserker named Sa De Le Jia. Old K, use [Whirlwind Blade] to break up their formation and I’ll be the main attacker. Duck, focus on healing Matcha, and Matcha, go back and find opportunities to use [Phantom Ray Slash] to whittle away their health !”

Everyone nodded. In the next moment, “Sha,” a crimson light appeared which signaled the success of our ambush. Wolf had stunned a Lv 54 Berserker, and I charged in violently. My cold blade swept past his throat as I unleashed [Fierce Ice Blade] followed immediately by a [Combo], leaving behind a string of damage that killed the Berserker while he was still in a stunned state.

“Peng!”

A wooden arrow pierced straight through my armor, stunning me. It was a [Scatter Shot]!

Drunken Spear hollered one thing: “Now!”

[Rock Piercing Thrust]! [Scorching Spring]!

1107!

987!

Two consecutive hits and I was still stunned. This was a dangerous situation!!

“Xiao Yao, I’m coming!”

Old K roared loudly and charged head on, brandishing his battle axe. He carried with him a violent aura as he swept through the crowd, completely breaking the formation of the Swordsmen and Berserkers around me. But that wasn’t the end of it! With a loud roar, Old K

activated [Savage Jump Slash] which landed directly onto the Archer that shot me, before following up with [Flame Axe] to finish things off!

1429!

1527!

The Lv 55 Archer's eyes were wide open as he kneeled to the ground. Within Jiu Li City, he was one of the Top 10 Archers and could even be considered a Master Archer. But unfortunately within this battlefield, he couldn't take the attacks of a Berserker, especially a Berserker that had an S-Class skill. That skill was just too frightening!

"Swoosh!"

+900!

After gulping down a potion and casting a [Heal] on Old K, I shouted, "Old K, retreat! If you go any further, you'll get killed!"

Two Berserkers rushed toward Old K, their battle axes were already gleaming with elemental light: one was a [Flame Blade] while the other was an [Ice Blade]. If they landed, Old K would mostly likely be a Dead K.

At that crucial moment, Little Wolf broke broke his stealth right after his cool down finished and managed to stun the Berserkers.

"You wanna die?!"

Drunken Spear spun around, locking his True Soul Spear onto Little Wolf and stabbing him!

"Uh...."

Little Wolf pivoted quickly and crossed his daggers in front his chest into a defensive stance. At that moment, the spear collided with him, striking him hard enough to knock him back a few meters into some far off bushes. He put his life on the line in order to save Old K.

I rushed forward and swung the Frost Rain Sword towards the other Berserker. "Keng." The blade clashed against the Berserker's [Flame Blade] for a second before it got parried off. At the same time, I shifted my shoulders and rammed into the Berserker's chest, giving off a "Keng"

sound. The blow knocked him back, causing him to lose his balance. Air surged around me and I activated [Strength of a Thousand Men].

“Ah.....”

The Berserker slowly fell to his knees. His eyes widened and all his energy left his body as he teetered on the edge of life and death.:

“Dammit, why does Ba Huang City have so many experts.....?”

.....

“Kill!”

Drunken Spear went around me in a large circle and killed a [Valiant Bravery] Archer with two jabs. Then he turned to face Matcha with eyes filled with killing intent. “The Phantom Knight is a hidden class. She must be killed first!”

Seeing the [Rock Piercing Thrust] activate, I hurriedly said in the team channel, “Matcha, [Reflect] back the attack. Drunken Spear’s attack is too high! You can’t take it!”

Matcha nodded. She waved her arm softly as a mirror-like shield appeared at her side. [Reflect] was successfully activated.

Drunken Spear was no rookie; he knew what skill that mirror really was. He quickly turned the tip of his spear just enough to let his attack only graze Matcha, causing very little damage to her and consequently decreasing the rebound to himself.

472!

Just then, Dong Cheng Lei’s axe broke past Drunken Spear’s defenses, rapidly launching a flurry of attacks at him and loudly yelling, “Brother Xiao Yao, Drunken Spear managed to break [Reflect]!”

The corner of my mouth drew back: “Did you see that, Little Wolf? Go, we’re changing our target, focus on Drunken Spear!”

“Yes!” From within the underbrush, a shadow appeared and swept past.

.....

“Use [Reflect] again, Dong Cheng Lei!” Matcha yelled as she pulled back her sword and retreated.

Dong Cheng Lei activated the skill without hesitation. [Reflect] was the perfect counter against high attack players but Drunken Spear’s reaction speed was too fast. He immediately stopped his spear while punching Dong Cheng Lei to waste the [Reflect]. Then, he launched his [Rock Piercing Thrust].

“Pu!”

1749!

With just one attack, Dong Cheng Lei was almost out of health, and suddenly Drunken Spear slid to the left, dodging my sword stab. Twisting his wrist, the spear swept past a second time and penetrated Dong Cheng Lei’s abdomen with a slight sound, causing 1100+ damage to him: insta-kill!

“Plop!”

Dong Cheng Lei fell to his knees. Right before he was killed, he punched Drunken Spear, with a “Bang”, and knocked him back a few steps. His super strength really wasn’t something to laugh at.

.....

Taking advantage of Dong Cheng Lei’s knockback punch, I attacked once more with Frost Rain Sword using [Fierce Ice Blade]!

1429!

It hit but there were just too many Healers: he wouldn’t die with just that..

“Hong!”

Then another sword slashed downwards, this time it was Matcha’s [Phantom Ray Slash]. Unfortunately, at that crucial moment, when Drunken Spear had almost no health, that idiot girl’s slash was crooked...

Drunken Spear hastily retreated, after all, he was the last person alive from his team. However, he kept his calm and wasn’t flustered at all. As

he retreated, he lifted his True Soul Spear and threw a [Flame Spear] attack at Old K, almost killing him!

Old K paled in shock and quickly fled. I bit my lips and dashed in. One second afterwards, Wolf appeared. Using his ambush skill, “pa”, he succeeded in stunning Drunken Spear!

“Don’t fight, I’m coming! Old K, get the [Whirlwind Blade] ready!”

Having reached the stunned Drunken Spear, a bright glow shined under my feet: the prelude to [Strength of a Thousand Men]!

The quick attack simply couldn’t be avoided. Drunken Spear understood this and grounded his teeth, “Darn, I fell into your trap! This time I’m done for. Why did I die so early...?”

“Hung!”

Old K swept past Drunken Spear with his [Whirlwind Blade], followed up by my [Wind Blade]. Under the two attacks, Drunken Spear kneeled, slowly falling into the ground, dead. He looked at me and faintly said, “I hope next we meet, it won’t be as enemies.....”

I nodded, “Rest in peace!”

.....

At the conclusion of the battle, Zhan Long’s 6 member team together with the 9 players from [Valiant Bravery], had annihilated the 14 people from the opposing team after a fierce fight. But our losses were also heavy, the 9 [Valiant Bravery] members were all dead except for 1 Healer.

Turning around, I looked at the battle situation on the other side. I couldn’t help but groaned bitterly; There were hardly any [Valiant Bravery] players left on the plateau. The remaining survivors were being suppressed by 20+ [Flying Dragon] members. General Li Mu, General Wang Jian and General Bai Qi were all painfully hanging on with only half of their health left. There was too big a gap between the average battle strength of the players. It was impossible to fight them head on!

“Quickly, we need to help them!”

I hastily rushed over and gauged the difference between the two groups

Valiant Bravery 14 players VS Flying Dragons 27 players

.....

I felt dread from the bottom of my heart. We were already at an absolute disadvantage in the number of people!

“Xiao Yao!!!”

Li Mu hacked his way over and roared at the top of his lungs, “Our Healers are all dead so we have no chance of victory. Retreat downhill with your Zhan Long members and look for another opportunity later on. It’s already too late for those of us up here to fall back! [Valiant Bravery]’s future now rests within your hands!”

“Klang!”

As a battle axe hacked into his shoulder, General Wang Jian was forced to his knees, his health depleted. However, with his dying breath, he propped himself up on his blood soaked battle axe and thrust his weapon into his opponent’s chest. He was immediately hit by another [Combo] and gradually fell. On the other side, General Bai Qi’s chest was pierced by 10+ arrows. Letting out a grunt, he too died!

“Hung!”

[Pillars of Fire and Ice] ravaged the ground, causing General Li Mu’s body to tremble. Under this near-death condition, he unleashed [Absolute Authority] and killed off another player from [Flying Dragon]. But at this moment, a battle axe descended upon him and ploughed directly into his chest!

“Bang!”

The attack caused General Li Mu to immediately drop dead. At the same time, Fallen Wolf slowly pulled out his axe from Li Mu’s corpse. Stepping on his dead body, he looked towards us and laughed menacingly, “Is [Valiant Bravery] filled with second-rate players? It doesn’t matter if you

add Xiao Yao Zi Zai and Zhan Long, trash is still trash! Didn't you say you were strong? Have you seen us? The [Vanguard] 13 Eagles have not sustained a single loss!"

.....

Holding my Frost Rain Sword firmly, I slowly retreated while bitterly shouting out——

“Retreat! We can lose this battle but [Vanguard]’s 13 Eagles must die!”

Chapter 191: Arrogance

“Rustle...”

I felt a surge of pain as my legs got entangled in some shrubs. Tightly gripping my Frost Rain Sword, I stayed behind the Zhan Long members still alive, consisting of Old K, Darling Duck, Matcha and Little Wolf. On the map, the red dots far exceed the blue dots in number; [Valiant Bravery]’s players had almost been completely wiped out. The number on the map now indicates 5 VS 25. There are only 5 of us now – 4 from the Zhan Long Studio plus Darling Duck. Who would have thought that after that one battle we’d only have so few players remaining.

.....

I sat down under a towering tree. Clenching my fist, I said with annoyance in my heart, “Was.... Was our tactic to attack the highlands wrong?”

Little Wolf appeared from a thick patch of grass and comforted, “Brother Xiao Yao, it has nothing to do with our tactics; the disparity between our strength is simply too huge. The reinforcements acquired by [Flying Dragon] are astounding, especially the 13 Eagles. Any one of their attack power is not lower than 1900. A clash against them left most of the heavy armor group from [Valiant Bravery] dead. There wasn’t much of a fight.”

Old K with his axe in hand sat down on the grass and said, “We only have 5 people while they still have 25. This is impossible to overcome.”

In the air, Matcha interrupted as she flapped her wings while carrying her sword, “We still have a chance but we must not attack the highlands, we will instead use mentality.”

“What mentality?” Wolf replied in astonishment.

Matcha beamed, “They’ve had such a successful battle and even killed the guild master of [Valiant Bravery], can they not be proud? Therefore, we’ll just send a bait and lure them bit by bit.”

I asked in a low voice, "Who will be bait?"

Matcha patted her 34C as she smiled, "Who else but me. Though I am the lowest leveled here, I am not that weak and should still have some value. Boss, you didn't see it but I almost killed Fallen Wolf with [Phantom Slash] so he must hate me a lot. As long as he sees me flying in the highlands, he'll be rushing down towards me with the 13 Eagles. At that time, Boss and Little Wolf should begin, divide and conquer, this will be our best chance."

"With a Musketeer's long-range, killing them would be easier." I glanced around, "Hey, where is Fox?"

Old K says with a grin, "Fallen Wolf's axe already sent him to Ba Huang City."

Me, "....."

.....

Clasping her hands, Matcha declared, "In that case, everyone must prepare! This Guild Prestige Battle is the first among the three main cities of China's server. This event is on live TV. As you can see, many people are observing this battle; millions of players are currently watching us right now, let us not shame ourselves so go and prepare!"

I shot a glance on the viewer count and discovered that this Guild Prestige Battle has a total of 2,748,872 observers. With the 3rd and 4th batch helmet issued, the Chinese server's players sure have skyrocketed; the number of people watching us is almost 3,000,000. Regardless of victory or defeat, the three main cities will surely be aware of the "Zhan Long" name after this battle. We must do this beautifully or else we will just be wasting such a good propaganda opportunity.

I stood up while further strengthening my grip on the Frost Rain Sword and said, "Good. Everybody follow the plan; we only have 5 people so everyone must do their best!"

Scanning the map, I found an area of motley hedgerows and pointed my hand over there before saying, "This is the place where we'll assemble."

Little Wolf, sneakily make your way towards the front. Old K and I will remain hidden in the central area. We'll employ this dense vegetation to conceal ourselves from their maps and avoid being seen as red dots. Darling Duck will be at the rear end. We will take advantage of Matcha's mobility and attract the 13 Eagles here. I will launch the first attack and have their attention focused at me. I will then activate the [Shield of the Crimson Dragon] to withstand their attacks for 7 seconds. Little Wolf, you must eliminate 1 of them while they are concentrated on me; I will try to kill 1-2 of them. When my [Shield of the Crimson Dragon] only has half of its duration left, Old K, use your [Whirlwind Slash] and [Savage Jump Slash] and kill 4-6 of them. Do not go on fighting after that and simply escape after completing your attacks and continue to look for new opportunities!"

Everyone nod, "Okay!"

.....

Following the plan, our group of people used the natural cover and approached the plateaus. In the air, Matcha fluttered her fairy wings as her snow white legs appeared exceptionally charming. She gave a laugh and said, "I will go now; pray for my safe return!"

I nod, "Take care, we'll be waiting for you here!"

"Okay!"

Matcha flew away with a gust of wind. Little Wolf, carrying his daggers, faded away as he used his [Stealth]. I drew my sword and cut down a large number of vegetation and packed it in a small ditch. Old K and I immediately jumped down and buried ourselves deeply within it until what little indication that was visible on the map disappeared.

.....

In the distance, Matcha with her wings dancing, looked at the ground. Her pair of beautiful eyes were on full of alert as she maintained her distance from the forest where the crowd was. She barked into the darkness, "Fallen Wolf, shame on you!"

Fallen Wolf with his axe exposed said with a livid expression, "Shame on me? The people from Zhan Long are the ones who are shameless. After striking, you quickly leave. Where are you hiding? Xiao Yao Zi Zai, come out and fight with me. Don't be a coward who only knows how to hide. When the 120 minutes are up, we will still be the winners. [Valiant Bravery]? What a joke!"

Matcha blinked as she proudly looked at Fallen Wolf before continuing to taunt, "[Vanguard] is merely a group of villains. I think it should not be 13 Eagles, it should be 13 Crows. No, it's 13 Ducks!"

TL Note: Ducks is also slang for male prostitutes in China.

Fallen Wolf trembled with anger, "Do not insult our [Vanguard]. You have no right to do so!"

Matcha gave a subtle smile. She suddenly made a hand gesture as she formed a gap of about 2 cm between her index finger and thumb and said with a nifty smile, "What a shame, you're only this long!"

"Shit!"

Fallen Wolf lost himself in his fury. He roared as he raised his axe which had fire jumping on its surface. Charging at Matcha, he cried, "Go to hell!!"

"Swoosh" a miss flashed as Matcha hurriedly retreated and began her escape, never glancing back.

"Fallen Wolf, don't be rash!" Soaring Dragon lifted his wand and gave his orders, "Defend the plateaus and we'll win. It doesn't matter if they drag this on for 100 minutes more. We can afford to wait, so don't act impulsively!"

Fallen Wolf retorted with a smug look on his face, "They only have 5 people now which includes a Healer. With so few opponents you still want to hide in the plateau, what's the difference between us and that Zhan Long turtle group? Soaring Dragon, you can stay holed up here. I'll kill them, [Vanguard] will not cower. 13 Eagles, follow me and slaughter them!"

TL: Turtle = can only defend, no way to attack

In the forest, the other 12 heavy armored players jumped out of the grass with their swords, axes and spears and started the hunt.

.....

“Boss, they are coming!” Matcha whispered in the team channel.

“I can see them. Just keep flying; they have no long range skills or long range classes so they can’t hurt you. Don’t fly too fast so that they can follow you!”

“I know!”

“Be careful!”

.....

A few minutes later, a player flew through the sky. It was Matcha who was followed by red dots coming from the forest one by one. Fallen Wolf walked ahead with 2 Swordsmen and 3 Berserkers behind him. They were all near the front.

Little Wolf mumbled in the team channel, “Brother Xiao Yao, should we kill Fallen Wolf first?”

“No!” I shake my head and smirks, “Let’s kill the others first. Fallen Wolf is not that good of a target. I want to butcher the 13 Eagles before him and watch him seethe in fury!”

“Okay!”

“Get ready, I’m going out!”

“All right!”

As they came closer and closer, the battle erupted when a Berserker was about 5 meters away!

“Swoosh!”

Brambles and grasses split apart as I jumped out of the ditch. The Frost Rain Sword glowed with golden hexagrams. Four slash marks imprinted on the chest of the Lv 54 Berserker and caused super high damages.

1192 !

1087 !

1094 !

1127 !

Instant kill: Berserkers suffer from low defense!

Turning around, I stretched my hand to seize the hilt of a Swordsman's sword that was flying towards me. I countered with my [Fierce Ice Blade] towards his chest and a huge damage number appeared, 1574. Not waiting for the Swordsman to react, I quickly used another basic attack, and dealt 974 damage. My second kill! The effect of my equipment added with my [Turmoil Sword] was truly terrifying. My attack was too powerful; enough stand at the top of Ba Huang City!

I swung my leg and it found its way to a Swordsman's chest with a "Bang" which knocked him back. Air started to swirl around my feet as I was about to use my [Strength of a Thousand Men]! I ended with a normal attack to save cooldowns and it did the job. With a whining sound, the third player fell before my sword.

.....

"No!"

2 seconds after that, Fallen Wolf had finally come to his senses. He charged at me as his eyes burn with hatred, "Xiao Yao Zi Zai, I dare you to come at me. Stop killing my brothers!"

I lift my hand and a "Clang" could be heard as my Frost Rain Sword collided with his axe. I swiftly kicked him at his stomach; the shock wave knocked him back several meters. The difference in strength was obvious!

Behind me, Wolf's Purple Tier dagger gleamed as he stunned a Berserker by using [Gouge], and attacked him with three consecutive strikes. The Berserker sobbed and fell to the ground. In a few seconds, [Vanguard]'s 13 Eagles became 9!

.....

“Center, defensive formation!” Fallen Wolf growled as he commanded, “Use your [Flame Axe] and [Ice Blade]. Surround Xiao Yao Zi Zai and kill him. Just exterminate him and we’ll win!”

“Swoosh, swoosh, swoosh”

Seven successive [Flame Axe]s and 2 [Ice Blade]s came rushing directly at me. Escaping this barrage of attacks was out of question.

Chapter 192: Death Match

“Hong!”

A dragon’s screech sounded as scarlet flames burst from the ground, instantly taking the shape of a scarlet dragon. Encircling my body, it increased my defense by a huge amount. At the same time, I strode forward and slid through the gap between the three enemies. As I dodged 2 [Ice Blade] attacks, two big MISSES appeared above my body. However, I couldn’t avoid the damage from the other 7 [Flame Axe] attacks.

372 !

411 !

385 !

407 !

.....

A continuous stream of damage numbers burst out. These 7 violent [Flame Axe] attacks instantly depleted my health. Without a second thought, I drank a healing potion and cast [Heal] on myself, regaining 2000+ health immediately. At the same time, with a flick of my wrist, my Frost Rain Sword flew like an ice dragon bursting forth from the sea, “swoosh swoosh swoosh”, and sliced through a Berserker.

“Clang clang clang...”

Sparks of fire splattered endlessly out of my Nebula Armour. However, with the protection of [Shield of the Crimson Dragon], each attack only amounted to approximately 100 points. Then, a holy light descended upon my head as I regained about 1000 health. That was Darling Duck’s [Heal].

“Damn...”

One of the Vanguard’s 13 Eagles Swordsman clenched his longsword tightly while his eyes almost popped out of their sockets, “What kind of shield is that? It’s so tough! We can’t break it. F*** it! Even [Flame Blade]

can't break his defense, what kind of defense is that!?"

TL: Break defense = Do significant damage = Have attack higher than defense

Fallen Wolf looked from afar, clenching his teeth, "Where is Zhan Long's healer, Darling Duck? Two of you go and kill her! The others continue to surround Xiao Yao Zi Zai, his shield definitely has a time limit!"

.....

I kept brandishing my sword and attacked while shouting in the party chat, "Darling Duck, move back, don't mind us, you can retreat already! Old K come on up, pave your way with [Whirlwind Blade] then use your [Savage Jump Slash] to kill people with low health. Little Wolf continue to stun people but don't put yourself at risk!"

Old K carried his battle axe while rushing forward, splitting the grass in his path. His body was slightly lowered as a circle of cold wind whistled on his battle axe. Then, the entire group of people were suddenly flung away and spun within an endless hurricane that was sweeping everything away. "Slash Slash Slash" [Whirlwind Blade] swept past the crowd, its attacking power was exceptionally brutal. The three players whom I had just attacked fell in a flash.

"This is bad!"

Originally Fallen Wolf wanted to pursue me, but with the presence of my [Shield of the Crimson Dragon], I became an unmovable iron plate. Old K's sudden attack also caused Fallen Wolf to be completely unable to kill him. In the middle of [Whirlwind Blade], Old K was an invincible killing machine. No one dared to take the initiative to approach him, it was the equivalent of seeking death. As Fallen Wolf watched the situation spiral out of control, he roared in fury: "Retreat, wait for an opportunity to fight back!"

"Where are you running to?!"

Old K roared and then suddenly leapt forward, his battle axe landed on

the forehead of a Swordsman with only 31% of health left. He was immediately killed. With a flash of his battle axe, his [Flame Axe] charged into another Berserker!

“Shua!”

Wolf also appeared just at the right time. He stunned a Berserker that was running away and thanks to the poison debuff from earlier, when Wolf was finding opportunities to slip shots in, the Berserker’s speed got reduced. Trapped in Wolf’s hands, he was fated to die.

.....

In the blink of an eye, 10 of Vanguard’s 13 Eagles met their end, only 3 were left.

“Matcha, block him!”

I shouted loudly. Matcha immediately descended from the air and executed [Phantom Ray Slash] with her sword. With a “bang” sound, it hit its target; a Swordsman standing at the very front. The angry Swordsman rushed forward toward Matcha, while at a low health level, and bellowed, “Even if I die here, I must at least kill someone!”

“Ding!”

The light from his [Combo] flickered. Matcha hastily activated [Reflect], but unfortunately, it could only reflect one attack. With the dying Swordsman’s [Combo], she received 3 additional attacks. Then, at this time, Fallen Wolf rushed towards Matcha from the back, with flames erupting from his battle axe. It was a [Flame Axe]!

“Careful!” I yelled, “Matcha, move to your right, there’s an enemy behind you!”

“Ah?!”

Matcha gasped with her rosy lips. However, she made a grave mistake as she tripped over a strawberry plant. Fallen Wolf’s battle axe swept past her shoulders, bringing forth a huge amount of damage—

.....

“Boss...” Matcha looked at me, her body disappearing into fragments of light and scattering with the wind.

Zhan Long Studio had once again lost a member. My heart sank as I held my sword and dashed forward. With a “bam”, I brushed past a Swordsman, killing him with a slash from my Frost Rain Sword quickly. Then, I raised my sword with both hands as I rushed towards another Swordsman.

“F*** you, Xiao Yao Zi Zai!”

His face twisted with anger, the Lv 53 Swordsman suddenly raised his sword; he was going to trade hits!

“Shua!”

A ray of light appeared around him, it was [Reflect]!

I changed from using my sword to using my bare hands and hit him, effortlessly neutralizing [Reflect]. Then I rushed forward and kneed the Swordsman. “Bam”, he was pushed back while my Frost Rain Sword pierced him through his chest. A ray of green light descended from the skies as a huge amount of damage was dealt.. An fatal strike—

2655 !

Once again, another enemy was killed!

.....

“Huff...Huff..”

Fallen Wolf huffed roughly, standing in the middle of the plains, with his whole body slightly trembling. Battered and exhausted, he looked at me, surrounded by 12 corpses. All of [Vanguard]’s 13 Eagles members had fought with outstanding results before but he was the only one left now. This arrogant chap was the last man standing.

“Bam!”

I thrust my Frost Rain Sword into the ground and propped myself up on

the sword. Indifferently, I said, “Fallen Wolf, where did your arrogance go? Didn’t you claim that [Vanguard]’s 13 Eagles were undefeatable? Didn’t you look down on Zhan Long? How about now, without your superiority in numbers, what advantage does [Vanguard] have?”

“Gulp...”

Fallen Wolf swallowed his saliva and looked toward me, his gaze cold and overcast. “Xiao Yao Zi Zai, I admit you are extraordinary! Remember this, sooner or later we will return you this debt. [Vanguard] will definitely not bear this kind of humiliation!”

I abruptly pulled out my sword and pointed it at his chest. Enraged, I said, “Who’s the one shaming to [Vanguard]? Who’s the one who backstabbed me for the sake of a Heaven’s Plan Sword in the Valley of Everlasting Wind? Who’s the one who tried to take advantage of me again and again? Indeed, who’s the one that is embarrassing [Vanguard] in the end? It’s [Vanguard] itself. It’s Jian Feng Han! It’s you, Fallen Wolf! It’s all of your arrogance that brings shame to your former glory!”

Fallen Wolf gritted his jaw, “We have nothing to talk about. Prepare to die!”

His battle axe shone with a glint while Fallen Wolf silently appraised me.

.....

“Hua...”

With a wave of my arm, I called forth [Binding Chain], binding Fallen Wolf at once. I raised my hand and commanded Baby Bobo to attack while saying, “Wolf, Old K, finish him!”

Turning around, the sounds of a blade slashing through armor resounded, Fallen Wolf howled miserably and fell to the ground. Finally, [Flying Dragon]’s reinforcements, [Vanguard]’s 13 Eagles, have fallen. It’s just as what I had said before. We can lose the Guild Prestige Battle but the [Vanguard]’s 13 Eagles must die!

.....

Behind me, I heard a female voice crying out. My heart sank, there's trouble again!

Indeed, Darling Duck's name in the party list had turned dim!

Wolf raised his dagger and entered stealth mode while angrily shouting, "Brother Xiao Yao, Darling Duck was killed by an Assassin's sneak attack!"

"Kill him!"

I raised my hand and healed myself before lifting my sword and rushing to Darling Duck's corpse. She had been on a grassy plain but the Assassin had hidden thanks to his [Stealth]. The problem is that he couldn't have gone too far; he hasn't had the time to escape yet.

Old K also lifted his battle axe, his eyes sweeping around, trying to catch any movements or irregularities.

Wolf softly said in the dark, "Nobody move. If we carefully observe every movement in the surrounding area, we'll find the assassin's position..."

"Okay!"

.....

All three of us stood still like tree stumps in the wilderness but there were no movements for three full minutes. I looked at every grass and trees in the surrounding areas all the more, how could it be?

Could it be that?

At this time, a small gush of wind blew in the distance, carrying a cloud of dandelions. I hastily lifted my sword and said in a low voice, "Little Wolf, pay attention, an opportunity has come..."

Wolf nodded his head, "Yes, I'm watching carefully!"

"Swoosh..."

As the dandelions flew around, suddenly at a point, a few stalks of dandelion's changed their trajectory, obviously hitting some obstruction. But it appeared as if there was nothing there.

I quickly whispered, “ Old K, use [Whirlwind Slash] immediately! The target’s position is at (7471, 2973), now!”

“Okay!”

Old K turned around and immediately swept to the left. Then, there was a “ding” sound from an Assassin’s dagger blocking Old K’s battle axe but the Assassin was knocked back by the impact!

“This bastard, you are indeed here!”

Old K laughed maniacally and lifted his battle axe to give chase and kill him. But suddenly his whole body trembled and he fell into a stunned state. On his forehead a large damage number burst forth-1109!

Crap!

My heart sank, I never would have thought that there would be another Assassin here!

The fleeing Assassin, who was running away, suddenly turned back to attack. With his daggers dancing in the air, “Slash Slash Slash”, he made three continuous attacks and Old K immediately fell to the ground. Even his battle axe was dropped.

“Damn it...”

I lifted my sword and flew forward, knocking away the second Assassin with a [Combo] before finishing him off with a stab through his chest! Wolf appeared behind the first Assassin, successfully sneak attacking him and killing him with one attack!

.....

“Pa Da! Pa Da!”

Another two bodies fell. Wolf and I glanced at each other with immense concern in our eyes. Old K, Matcha, Fox, Darling Duck, and Dong Cheng Lei had all died. There were only two of us left but there were still 10 elite players on the other side, including [Flying Dragon]’s Guildmaster, Soaring Dragon. This Guild Prestige Battle was going to be an extremely difficult fight!

We collected the equipment drops on the ground. 7 Gold Tier and 1 Purple Tier equipment all went into our inventory. As all the players here were hard to deal with and thus the equipment dropped were all exceptional.

.....

I stood on the field as I raised my hand and sheathed my Frost Rain Sword. Wolf stood by my side and said, "Brother Xiao Yao, how are we going to fight later on? Matcha and the others are probably really worried about us. Unfortunately, they can't give us any news now. The Guild Prestige Battle has blocked all communication from the outside."

I looked up at the distant plateau and said, "Let's go, we'll find an opportunity. Even if we don't win, we need to at least kill that Soaring Dragon bastard!"

"Yes!"

.....

A few minutes later, at the plateau area in the Guild Prestige Battlefield.

I hid myself in a bush, watching the plateau, and saw Soaring Dragon holding his staff and standing straight with 4 heavy armor players, 2 Healers, 2 Mages and 1 Archer. This group was extremely formidable. The Archer's [Scattered Shot] could stun us and then the Mages could bomb us indiscriminately with their attacks. Even God would not be able to withstand this combo.

"How shall we fight?" Wolf asked.

I muttered, "I only have 44 Rage Points left, so I can only call [Shield of the Crimson Dragon] once more. To begin, I will move first, attracting their firepower. I'll try my best to kill 1 to 2 heavy armored players. Little Wolf, wait at their escape route, focus on killing the two Healers but don't stay too long. Once you have used your skill two times in 6 seconds, retreat back and wait for your cool down to finish. You can kill two to three people with each rotation and we can win with 2-3 rotations!"

"Okay!"

Chapter 193: Valiant

“Brother Xiao Yao, be careful!” Wolf was hiding in the bushes as he softly said, “They know we are coming and will have prepared a trap. Your [Shield of the Crimson Dragon]... can it really be strong enough to resist Soaring Dragon’s magic attack? Also, the Archer’s [Scattered Shot], you need to dodge it, otherwise you will die...”

I hid myself in the shrubs and slowly moved forward. “Yup, whether we advance or not, we’ll lose either way. Anyways, my inventory is filled with 9 pieces of equipment dropped by [Flying Dragon] members, even the lowest one is Gold Tier. Even if we die, it is still worth it. Little Wolf, go there in stealth and remember to focus on their Healers the moment I attack. Keep track of your cooldowns and try to escape without dying so that even if I die, you still have a chance.”

Wolf couldn’t help but laugh, “Brother Xiao Yao, if you die, how could I continue to live by myself?”

“That’s enough, stop being so low class. Let’s prepare to attack!”

“Yes!”

.....

The map showed that Wolf’s figure was already on the plateau. High leveled Assassins’ [Stealth]s were very difficult to uncover. Furthermore, points in agility would increase the effectiveness of [Stealth] and Wolf’s equipment was not bad; his agility could probably rank among the top 100 in Ba Huang City. Naturally, his stealth wouldn’t be that easy to uncover.

“Brother Xiao Yao, I have reached my position!”

“Okay!”

Sucking in a deep breath, I called forth Baby Bobo as I tightened my grasp on the Frost Rain Sword. Pumping power into my legs, I lept out from the bush. It was only 100 meters, just one charge!

On the plateau, Soaring Dragon froze and pointed to his right, “There!

Xiao Yao Zi Zai is coming, prepare to attack, kill him for me! If you kill Xiao Yao Zi Zai, a trivial Assassin like Wolf Totem wouldn't be able to accomplish anything against us!"

"Hei!"

An Archer hiding quietly in the bushes slowly opened his bow, his shoulders shone with Jiu Li City's crest. That's one of the elites from Jiu Li City, a level 56 Archer, one of the very best. Pulling the bow without shooting the arrow, his bow shone with the prelude of [Scattered Shot]. This definitely was one of an expert Archer's moves. He was waiting; waiting for the best opportunity to unleash the [Scattered Shot]. As long as he had me stunned, a round of magic attacks would be able to kill me!

Soaring Dragon gnashed his teeth, waved his arms and said, "The two Knights from Fan Shu City, help me block him for a while. Slow Xiao Yao Zi Zai's advancing speed!"

Behind him, the two level 55 Knights immediately lifted their long spears and rush forward. With their long spears glowing with [Flame Spear] attack, the two Knights intentions were extremely clear. They didn't wish to kill me, they were just trying to interfere with my running path. Afterwards, [Pillars of Fire and Ice] and [Scattered Shot] would be able to finish me off.

"Shua!"

My blade glowed with a biting cold [Fierce Ice Blade] and a "bam" sound was heard when it pierced through the Knight's chest. I grabbed his chestplate and seized the opportunity to use his body as shield for about 0.5 seconds before passing him by and then giving him a kick with my boots. The Knight immediately slid backwards and collided with the other Knight's body. The two of them tumbled down into the bushes.

"Swoosh swoosh..."

Raising my sword, I threw myself into a thicket of bushes, enduring the pain of thistles and thorns pricking my body. I quickly crawled away, while behind me the sounds of [Pillars of Fire and Ice] and [Chilling Wind Spell] bombarded the bushes. Unfortunately, they couldn't guess my

position accurately.

“Damn!”

The Archer squinted his eyes, drew back the corners of his mouth, sighed and said, “This Xiao Yao Zi Zai is indeed an expert...I can’t find an opportunity to lock onto his position for the time being...”

Soaring Dragon said apathetically, “Have a little bit of patience, wait until he comes nearer. We’ll attack him and kill him!”

“Okay!”

.....

Time was running out, so there was no time to hesitate. I lept out from the bushes, activated my [Haste] skill and ran following a zigzagged pattern. As I moved forward, unceasingly closing in on Soaring Dragon’s position, I followed the movement of the Archer’s hands closely. He was the biggest threat to me. If I got hit by [Scattered Shot], I would definitely die. If he missed, I would still have a thread of hope.

“He’s coming!”

The Archer furrowed his brows while the strings on his bow creaked loudly. His powerful arms pulled strongly, almost causing his, at least Purple Tier, bow to snap. The bow glowed with [Scattered Shot], and with a “bam”, he shot the arrow. He was only 15 meters to the left of me, it was too near, no matter how fast I was, I couldn’t dodge it it!

As I watch this happen, I abruptly bent my legs to the ground but a huge amount of inertia drove my body forward. If I move forward even a little, I would have entered the Archer’s anticipated range!

“Clang!”

Abruptly, I pierced my Frost Rain Sword into the ground, splashing flickers of sparks, rapidly decreasing the speed of my slide. That [Scattered Shot] arrow swept past, barely above the tip of my nose!

“MISS!”

“Too cool!” Wolf couldn’t help but laugh happily in the party chat.

I picked myself up as the two Knights chased me from behind. I didn't care about them anymore. With a wave of my arms, the ground started to tremble as a scarlet, red dragon's flame burst forth and condensed to form a figure of a scarlet dragon that circled around me, becoming my shield. My physical and magical resistance increased by a substantial amount!

"Clang clang..."

I endured two attacks of [Flame Blade]s on my back and I used their momentum to, "Bam", punch the ground!

"Bang!"

[Binding Chain] burst forth, immediately ignoring Soaring Dragon's [Mana Shield]. After binding Soaring Dragon's two legs, the Lv 6 [Binding Chain] would persist for 4.7 seconds; Soaring Dragon had no way of moving anymore!

"Little Wolf!" I yelled loudly, "Kill!"

As I shot forward, I aimed straight for the Archer's throat. The Archer's playing style was extremely astute, he retreated while shooting a [Triple Shot]. Even though it managed to cause some damage, it was not that much.

"Shua!"

A crimson-red flash flew past as Wolf appeared from the back and stunned the Archer!

I did not say another word and with a roar, a cyclone encircled the surrounding area. After charging for 0.2 seconds, [Wind Blade] was ready. With a "Ka Cha" sound, I almost slashed the Archer into two, inflicting fatal damage!

3784!

.....

"Use [Pillar of Fire and Ice], cast it at the same time to kill the Assassin!" Soaring Dragon hollered furiously.

Wolf's dagger swept past, killing a Healer on the spot. But his body

trembled slightly as a [Pillar of Fire and Ice] appeared beneath his legs. Furthermore, they were consecutive attacks since the two Mages casted 2 [Pillar of Fire and Ice]s!

1291!

1173!

Wolf's magic resistance was not as strong as mine and naturally he couldn't resist this kind of attack. With his knees on the ground, he died just like that, dropping a leg guard.

I did not hesitate for a moment and flew forward, twisting my body to bring forth my [Combo]. "Pa pa pa pa" my 4 hit [Combo] fell on the two Mages' [Mana Shield]s, shaking them violently. Then, Baby Bobo attacked one while I attacked the other. At the same time a Killer Bee and Ice Rat made a ruckus behind me. The enemies' pets were equally strong and even through they were attacking [Shield of the Crimson Dragon], my health still depleted quickly.

"Ah..."

With a miserable cry, Baby Bobo killed one of the Mages. Meanwhile, my Frost Rain Sword slowly shook as a pillar of green light fell upon me; a fatal strike was coming!

"What!?" The Mage gasped, before he understood, his chest was pierced by a sharp blade!

2649!

.....

The two Mages fell to the ground, only Soaring Dragon was left!

I turned around without hesitation and slashed my sword. Soaring Dragon was still bound and could not budge, hence he used [Pillar of Fire and Ice] to counter my attacks. My feet felt surges of heat and cold; it was extremely uncomfortable as my health also dropped significantly. I hurriedly used [Heal] and drank a health potion to regain my health.

Behind me, a burning hot sensation came forth once again. Soaring

Dragon sinisterly laughed, “Kill! Kill Xiao Yao Zi Zai! F**ker, you think you and your lousy Zhan Long group have the power to turn the tide? You think you, Xiao Yao Zi Zai, can rule the universe? I will tell you today, you are just a bunch of shit, you are not even worth being stepped on by [Flying Dragon]’s shoes!”

The effects of [Shield of the Crimson Dragon] had already ended as the two Knights attacked me from behind—

798!

801!

As my health lowered even more, Soaring Dragon’s also raised his staff, seizing the opportunity. Was he going to make the last?

I laughed lightly. I already knew [Valiant Bravery] was done for. Even after doing all I could, I still couldn’t reverse the situation; [Valiant Bravery] was fated to be disbanded.

“Bang!”

Air surged beneath my feet as my eyes were filled with killing intent. No matter if we win or lose, I must kill Soaring Dragon, that vile person!

[Strength of a Thousand Men]!

“Pa pa pa...”

With 3 continuous attacks, the [Mana Shield] broke. Then, I lowered my shoulders and rammed forward. “Bam” I rammed into Soaring Dragon who was pushed back and lost 1100+ health from the attack. Then, the fifth move struck down like lightning!

1798!

.....

Soaring Dragon’s eyes were still open as he slowly fell to the ground. Naturally, he never thought that I would still have this kind of explosive strength when I was about to die!

Turning my body, I struck my Frost Rain Sword horizontally. “Peng” I

blocked a Knight's spear, but couldn't block the other knight's attack to my abdomen. The sudden pierce took 977 health which was my last bit of health. That Knight was one of Fan Shu City's elite and he looked at me with clear eyes and spoke, "Drop dead, Xiao Yao Zi Zai. You are really an opponent that deserves respect!"

"Shua!"

A bright light shone in front of me. I was sent out from the Guild Prestige Battlefield.

.....

In the forest of Ba Huang City, I was back at the place where I was first sent into the battlefield. There was a group of [Valiant Bravery] members around me, all disappointedly standing. General Li Mu clenched his fist, his eyes red. General Wang Jian stood still and stared blankly, tears almost falling from his eyes, "The [Valiant Bravery] we took blood and tears to establish, met its end just like that?"

"Bang!"

I fell on my knees and punched the ground, causing blades of grasses to scatter about. My brows furrowed, I whispered, "I'm sorry...Li Mu...I'm sorry..."

Li Mu tapped me lightly on the shoulders and said with a trembling voice, "Don't say you are sorry; we are all brothers. Never say you are sorry, Xiao Yao, you've tried your best...."

.....

"Ding!"

System Announcement: The current Guild Prestige Battle has ended, the survivors in the end numbered 5:0. Congratulations to the【Flying Dragon】guild who won with 5 remaining members. As the losing guild, 【Valiant Bravery】will be disbanded automatically. In addition, within a time period of 365 days, no guild can use that name.【Flying Dragon】obtained 10% of the other guild's experience as a reward. The current Guild Prestige Battle MVP is Xiao Yao Zi Zai who killed 17 people. He will

receive【Camouflage】(S-Ranked Skill book) as a reward!

Chapter 194: Brother, We Finally Met

With a “Pa Da” sound, a light purple colored book fell into my inventory. Seems like I really was this Guild Prestige Battle’s MVP. Unfortunately, all these rewards couldn’t make up for [Valiant Bravery]’s scars. In just a moment, Li Mu, Wang Jian and the others had been left with nothing at all. The guild that they staked their everything on turned into a lost dream in just an instant.

I glanced through the skill book. The effect wasn’t that bad-

【Camouflage】 (S-Rank): Understanding a battle’s hidden aspects, the owner of this skill will be stealthed when entering into bushes among other vegetation. A passive ability. Level required is 50.

A ray of light swept past, as I learnt the skill. The surrounding areas of Ba Huang City were all forests, this skill would be fairly useful to a certain extent.

.....

Slowly standing up, I looked at the others and said with a serious voice, “I’m sorry, Zhan Long could not really help [Valiant Bravery] much but we will continue to work hard and help Li Mu to re-establish a guild with another name. I hope everyone will not give up.”

Li Mu slowly shook his head, “Forget about it Xiao Yao, it’s too late...We don’t have the resources and connections to make a comeback anymore...”

The guild crest on everyone’s shoulders slowly faded away. Very quickly, a few people walked forward and said, “Guild Master, we...we have friends who joined [Legend]. They have actually invited us over before since it’s already like this now, we...”

Li Mu smiled blankly, “Just go, thank you for having placed your trust in me, Li Mu, so much before...”

One after another, members of [Valiant Bravery] left.

I stood there, watching Li Mu’s pair of eyes full of sadness and grief. He probably never had thought that today would happen. When a tree

topples, the monkeys scatter. [Valiant Bravery] was disbanded, so they wouldn't be able to pay the salaries of the players. Hence, the group of people leaving was also an inevitable matter.

"Don't be too depressed..." I said in a low voice as I held my arms against my chest, looking at Ba Huang City in the distance.

Li Mu mocked himself and laughed, "We are back to right at the beginning, what's there to be sad about? Perhaps we, [Valiant Bravery], only amount to this much and can only go this far. [Vanguard], and all the other prestigious, super influential guilds, only needs to send a few of their elites to push us, [Valiant Bravery], back to the beginning..."

I was a little enraged as I abruptly hit Li Mu on his chest. I yelled, "What disgraceful things are you talking about? It was only a one time failure, does it matter? As long as your heart never dies, [Valiant Bravery] will not die. One failure doesn't matter much. Right now, mourning for your failure should be the last thing on your mind. You have to think about how to seek revenge against [Flying Dragon], how to show off the General Family's honor to the people in Ba Huang City, Jiu Li City and Fan Shu City! The Li Mu I knew was an indomitable spirit, a force who was able to support both heaven and earth. With just a sword, he and his brothers had conquered all of Ba Huang City's people!"

Li Mu's body rammed against a big tree. He looked at me in a daze then suddenly laughed, "Xiao Yao, having a brother like you...it's very nice..."

Wang Jian also laughed, "Yup, what Brother Xiao Yao said is right. One failure doesn't matter much. We have to pick ourselves up and once again prove our General Family's honor!"

I nodded and smiled, "That's the way!"

Wolf also laughed, "Having the ability to make a comeback, that is a real true hero!"

Li Mu laughed heartily, "Yeah, it's okay even if we lost the Guild Battle. After all, we became acquainted with so many brothers and sisters from Zhan Long! Yep, since it's like that...where are you guys from?"

I said, "Zhang Long's base of operations is in the West Lake area of Hangzhou."

"Ok!"

Li Mu made a fist and laughed, "Wang Jian, Bai Qi, Lian Po and I are from Yang Zhou. We're going to buy a bus ticket to go to Hangzhou tonight. How about having a few drinks later?"

I nodded, "Sure! We'll wait for you all!"

"Okay!"

.....

At this moment, a line of people passed through the forest and came over to us. The first person looked rather familiar, it was Gentle Touch. It was the person I met once before. Gentle Touch who was followed by tens of people, faced Li Mu and said, "Guild Master, aren't you going to say a few words?"

Li Mu froze, "The guild was disbanded, what else am I going to say?"

Gentle Touch balled his fists and said, "We brothers will follow you and won't leave because of a guild disbanding. As long as you are still here, us brothers will follow you. You might have let us join the Guild Prestige Battle because you thought we were weak but we'll never abandon you, our Guild Master. With your one word, we will wait, wait until you can establish a new guild!"

With Gentle Touch's words, 40+ core players of [Valiant Bravery] who had been a part of the Guild Prestige Battle also started to gather around us. Everyone's eyes were without the slightest doubt. "Guild Master, we will forever be [Valiant Bravery]'s people. This fact will never change!"

Li Mu was moved. With his eyes turning red, he nodded and said, "Thank you, brothers, for your trust in me. If it's this way, I want to add all of you as friends. The moment a new guild is established, the first thing I will is to invite you all back!"

"Okay!"

.....

After all was done, I went back to the city. I sat on Ba Huang City's walls and set up a stall. There was a lot in my mind. [Valiant Bravery]'s dissolution was not a small thing to me, it was a scar to my confidence. But it made me become more resolute in creating my own guild and for that we must have our own army. Otherwise we would not be able to survive in this chaotic Ba Huang City that was constantly enveloped by the flames of war.

“Di!”

A chat message appeared from Lin Wan Er, “Don’t be sad...”

I replied, “I’m not sad...”

“You’re going to be a puppy if you lie...”

“Actually, I do feel a little bit sad...”

“Then, I have a few things to show you...”

“Oh? What things?”

“Wait a second...”

Very quickly, Lin Wan Er sent me a picture. It was a golden tablet – Guild Creation Tablet!

My whole body shivered, “Wan Er, this Guild Creation Tablet, where did you get it from?!”

Lin Wan Er laughed softly, “When you were fighting the Guild Prestige Battle, Dong Cheng and I were training in Thousand Demon Valley with a few others. We happened to kill a level 60 Purple Tier boss and it dropped this... How about it? Will Zhan Long need this tablet? I’ll give it to you...”

I frowned, “Give? That...That is not very good... I won’t receive something I didn’t work for. I don’t want to be like those people who reap where they have not sown.”

Lin Wan Er pursed her lips, “Then what would you like to do? Don’t tell me you want me to sell it to you at market price?”

“Now...What is the market price of Guild Creation Tablet?”

“I think it’s around 350,000RMB...”

“Eh, forget about it then, I can’t afford it...”

“You really don’t want it?”

“No!”

“Humph!” Lin Wan Er angrily retorted, “Li Xiao Yao, you are an idiot. What the heck are you thinking, didn’t you say I’m one of Zhan Long’s people? If that is the case, why don’t you want my Guild Creation Tablet?”

“It’s not the same...” I thought about it and said, “Wan Er, you can just sell this Guild Creation Tablet. I will find another way...I don’t want to owe you too much...”

Lin Wan Er pouted her dainty mouth and closed her eyes, seemingly thinking about something. A few seconds later she opened her eyes and showed a sweet smile, “Okay then, I will sell this Guild Creation Tablet... But promise you won’t be too depressed, okay? I’ll accompany you for dinner later!”

“Err, I have a dinner appointment...”

“I don’t care what dinner appointment, I’ll accompany you!”

“Okay then...The four people from the General Family are coming over tonight. They’ll arrive around night time. Will you, the [Hero’s Mound]’s Deputy Leader, want to eat with us, a group of losers who were defeated and just had their guild disbanded?”

“Yes I do, I’ll also bring Dong Cheng...”

“Okay...”

.....

Having nothing to do, I went back to Dragon City to receive another profession quest to kill the monsters disturbing the Dragon Tomb. In 2 hours, I reached Lv 58. Wolf and the others were also anxiously training,

racing against time. Everyone understood that Zhan Long could be established anytime, so maintaining our own level superiority was extremely important.

Around 5pm in the evening, I went offline when I received a call from General Li Mu. They had arrived at the district of West Lake in Hang Zhou. Acting as the host, I reserved a table at Xiang Wei restaurant near the school. With everything settled, everyone simply needed to go there on time.

In the campus, I met Lin Wan Er and Dong Cheng Yue who looked like a pair of twins, inseparable.

I walked up to them and said, "Let's go quickly, Li Mu and the others might have already arrived. We shouldn't be lagging behind."

Lin Wan Er stepped forward with her long legs, following me while her dimples showed as she smiled, "What kind of people are the General Family? Do you think they will be old boorish men?"

"I have no idea, I have never met them in real life before."

"Oh..."

At Xiang Wei restaurant, Wolf, Old K, Matcha and Fox had already arrived. Matcha, who was wearing a cream colored short skirt, looked fresh and pleasant to the eyes. She started waving her hands from afar and smiled, "Boss, we're here..."

I grinned as I reached them. Fox, who saw Lin Wan Er and Dong Cheng Yue to my sides, also grinned and said, "Ah, we are eating with 3 beautiful ladies, this is bliss! What should I do if I can't sleep at night later?"

Matcha furrowed her brows, "Go away...don't you see us everyday? If you can't sleep, then go and level, you are currently at the bottom of Zhan Long members' levels. Aren't you ashamed of yourself?"

Fox gawked, "Isn't your level lower? Matcha..."

Matcha turned red and dropped her head, "I don't count..."

"You little..." Fox became a little mad.

Me: "Let's go, all of you can go up first, I'll wait a while for Li Mu and the others at the entrance!"

"Okay..."

I supported Lin Wan Er's arms, then looked at Wolf and said, "Wolf, bring Lin Wan Er up, and secure the perimeter..."

Wolf nodded, "Rest assured, brother!"

He knew that Lin Wan Er was my employer and that protecting her was my job's. Thankfully, there were no strong Qi-practitioners in Xiang Wei restaurant. If it was just the average hoodlums, Wolf and Old K would be more than enough to deal with them. Wolf's skills are extremely good and Old K has a lot of brute force; both of them were great at fighting. If not for the fact that I practiced martial arts, these two people may have become Zhan Long studio's bosses already.

.....

Seeing everyone off, I stood quietly at the restaurant and waited.

Less than 10 minutes later, I could see the shadows of 4 people walking slowly down the street. The one leading them looked like a young man around his mid-twenties, looking exactly like Li Mu in game. Behind him, a slightly younger man looking like Wang Jian followed. There was also a burly looking young man who looked like Bai Qi and a 50 year old looking man that was definitely Lian Po.

"Xiao Yao?" Li Mu saw me from afar, not believing his eyes, "Damn, you are more handsome in real life than in game! No wonder [Prague]'s Yue Qing Qian likes you so much..."

"..."

"Hua!"

With a bear hug, Li Mu hugged me hard and laughed loudly, "Brother, we finally meet!"

Chapter 195: Through Thick and Thin

General Wang Jian also walked over and hugged me. Bai Qi looked very sturdy, his build similar to Old K and he seemed like an expert in martial arts. He laughed and said, "I won't be hugging you, it's a little creepy..."

I could not help but laugh. "Let's go. We can go up and prepare to eat dinner; I'm starving to death! The other people are all upstairs waiting. Oh, and Fan Shu City's Cang Tong and Cang Yue are also accompanying us for dinner."

"Oh?" General Li Mu was surprised and excited as he said, "Looks like today we'll be fortunate enough to have the opportunity to catch a glimpse of Fan Shu City's number one beauty?"

I spoke with a rough and meaningful voice and laughed, "Yup, you won't be disappointed!"

"Let's go..."

.....

Our group of people walked up the stairs and into the room. Wolf was already there and stood up to greet the General Family with enthusiasm. After a while, the room was filled up, and Wan Er, Dong Cheng Yue, and Matcha all stood up, greeting the guests with smiles.

"Damn..."

Li Mu suddenly froze up and rubbed his eyes, "I...I have lived for 25 years in Yangzhou where beautiful women are abundant but how is it that I feel that the standard of beauty over there is no longer high anymore? All of a sudden, I see 3 beautiful women. Hangzhou is really a paradise to live in..."

Wang Jian looked at Wan Er, his excitement clearly noticeable. "You are...you are Fan Shu City's number 1 Assassin, Cang Tong, aren't you? I know you. You have another alias, the Heart of Time singer Lin Wan Er, right? I am one of your fans..."

Wan Er laughed, "Nice to meet you!"

Soon after, she gave me a meaningful glance, beckoning for me with her finger. I quickly walked over to her. “What’s up, Wan Er?”

Wan Er leaned towards my neck and whispered into my ear, “Li Mu and Wang Jian both look pretty handsome, but Bai Qi looks like a construction worker and Lian Po looks too much like an old geezer...”

My face turned purple, “Will you die if you don’t ridicule them?”

Wan Er laughed, “Hehe, I’ll order the food and lots of it. You’re paying for it after all, right?”

I thought back to my credit card; it still had 50,000 RMB. “Go for it. I invited you all, so feel free to eat as much as you want,” I nodded.

“In that case...” Dong Cheng laughed, “It’s rare that Xiao Yao is generous, so let’s eat a lot and maybe order some drinks as well? The high-quality, 500 RMB-a-bottle type of red wine...”

TL: 500 RMB = USD\$80.59

I clenched my teeth, “Sure, just order one...”

.....

Before long, fragrant dishes came out one by one onto the table. Hunan and Szechuan cuisines are truly the best with exquisite tastes. Hunan Cuisine emphasizes spiciness; originating from the early periods of the Han Dynasty when it became new style of cuisine.

I laughed, “Li Mu, you come from Yangzhou, so you must have eaten a lot of Jiangsu cuisine. Can you eat spicy food?”

TL: Jiangsu/Yangzhou = not so spicy food

Li Mu smiled, “Although I come from Yangzhou, I can stomach spicy food easily!”

“In that case, eat up!”

Pouring the wine, I stood up to give a toast, “I won’t be giving the traditional greeting but I do have to say a few things today! When I just joined Ba Huang City, I met with the General Family quite a few times.

The first time was when you guys fought against [Prague] for a boss. If we hadn't fought, we wouldn't have become friends! Now, we both fought to protect [Valiant Bravery]- although we were defeated in the end – we still fought until the bitter end. Whether we emerged victorious or suffered defeat, we fought with all of our strength! We are men that fought for a promise, fought for a cause. We will never look back and we will never regret! Come, let us celebrate our lives and deaths together! Ganbei!”

TL: Ganbei is the chinese way to toast. Like Kanpai in Japanese.

Li Mu and Wang Jian stood up. Their eyes shone with excitement as they drank!

Wan Er, Dong Cheng, and Matcha only took a small sip–these little girls couldn't drink like we could.

.....

After Li Mu sat down, he said, “Xiao Yao, what do you plan to do in the future? Have you planned that out yet?”

I nodded, “I have! I will quickly try to get my hands on a Guild Creation Tablet, though I won't pay for one since it's too expensive. I've also already asked Yue Qing Qian to join once Zhan Long is established. She will immediately quit [Prague] to join Zhan Long. She is Ba Huang City's number 1 Assassin. With her in Zhan Long, recruitment won't be hard at all, it's just that...”

“It's just what?” Wang Jian asked.

I pondered out loud, “It's just that Zhan Long has a shortage of manpower; it's just me and the rest of the studio at the moment. Including some others, we have a little over 20 people and we can't create a guild with so few people. We need more in order to have a solid guild.”

Wang Jian pressed his hands to his mouth, thinking a bit before speaking.

“Ahem...” Bai Qi coughed, “Xiao Yao, what type of team are you looking for?”

I replied seriously, "Cohesion. I don't care for those players who put profit over everything. What I want is a group of players with a dream. A dream to conquer the three cities but unfortunately there aren't many people like that."

Li Mu was stunned, "Ah yes, there aren't many like that..."

I filled my glass with wine and stood up, smiling slightly, "I am not a person that likes to be subtle. I prefer to be straightforward with my words. Once Zhan Long is created, I sincerely hope that the General Family will join us since our enemies in Ba Huang City are numerous. Together we stand, divided we fall. If the General Family joins Zhan Long, then we can become a one big family with a common purpose. We will be inseparable!"

Lian Po's eyes bulged, "That...:"

I coughed a little, then continued, "Of course, I will preserve the General Family's group. If Li Mu wishes for it, I can give you the title of Deputy Leader. Not the Guild Master—that position is mine."

Li Mu couldn't help but laugh, "I'm not that greedy, being a Guild Master is just a fleeting fancy. I just can't bear the fact that [Valiant Bravery] was decimated by [Flying Dragon]. Our revenge must be exacted!"

I nodded, "Yes, if my guild is established, [Flying Dragon] and [Vanguard] will be our first two mortal enemies!"

Lian Po smiled lightly and said, "Xiao Yao, how do you plan to allocate your guild's strength?"

I replied earnestly, "Supposing my guild is established, first, I will divide it into 2 camps. The first camp will be called "Zhan Long Camp", which will be managed by me. The second camp will be called "Valiant Bravery Camp", which will be managed by Li Mu and all of you. This way, [Valiant Bravery] will not disappear but instead be transformed into a new group. You can also account for those people who stayed behind and decided to follow you, right?"

Li Mu held fast his fist and thought for a long while. Finally he knocked lightly on the table, stood up and said, "Okay, we'll follow what you said. We, the General Family, will join Zhan Long today. From today onwards, we are one family and will share everything. We'll rise and fall together and we'll stick together through thick and thin!"

I nodded too and said, "Yes, from today onwards, we are brothers! Everyone at this table is a member of Zhan Long and together, we'll make Zhan Long, these two words– be known all over the world!"

Wang Jian and Wolf laughed at the same time, "Yes, known all over the world!"

Li Mu coughed a little as he glanced at Lin Wan Er and Dong Cheng Yue and said, "Are Fan Shu City's number one and two most beautiful ladies also members of Zhan Long?"

I chuckled.

Lin Wan Er straightened her body, full of pride, and smiled lightly, "Yes, Dong Cheng and I will join Zhan Long sooner or later. But in the meantime, we are still hired by [Hero's Mound]."

Li Mu made a fist and laughed loudly, "Then there's no problem. As long as Zhan Long has Cang Tong and Cang Yue to help us, our top tier power won't lose to [Vanguard] and [Hero's Mound]. With the powerful attraction of Lin Wan Er's beauty, inviting new players will definitely not be a problem. With them, Zhan Long will gain popularity even if we don't want it to!"

"Ahem..." Matcha smiled lightly, "Don't be too excited. For the time being, we have no Guild Creation Tablet. This is a big problem. Without a Guild Creation Tablet, it's all empty words no matter what we say..."

Lin Wan Er squinted her eyes and laughed, "Actually, I have a Guild Creation Tablet in my inventory. I planned to give it to Xiao Yao but this idiot doesn't want it, so I can't do much. He insists on getting a hold of a Guild Creation Tablet himself; it really worries this big sister..."

I was the picture of helplessness, "I can't just take your Guild Creation

Tablet without offering anything in return. This is a matter of personal principle.”

Li Mu nodded, “Yes, then we shall get one ourselves!”

Wolf said, “Unfortunately, even though Xiao Yao has a high drop rate, getting Purple and Emperor Tier equipment drops, a Guild Creation tablet has only dropped once...”

I laughed, “It’s okay, we’ll think of another method...”

“Okay!”

Looking towards Li Mu and the others, I asked, “Are you guys going back tonight?”

“Yes, we still need to level. We’ll need to maintain our lead in levels so as to keep our advantage.”

“Alright...”

.....

We kept drinking till late at night. At around 8+, Li Mu and the others took the bus and left Hangzhou, returning back to Yangzhou. They didn’t bring their helmets here, otherwise we’d have definitely asked them to stay for the night at Hangzhou. Since we had all become one family, we’ll need to be courteous to them.

After seeing Lin Wan Er and Dong Cheng Yue back to the girls’ dorm, it already was a little after 9 PM and I immediately went online and continued to level at Dragon City. I wanted to reach Lv 60 as soon as possible to receive the third job advancement. That was another big division. The third job advancement skills were not yet released yet so I wasn’t really sure what they were but the skills must be extremely strong!

I leveled until around 11+ PM and then prepared to log out and sleep!

At that moment, suddenly a “di” sounded, and a chat message notification from the beautiful Assassin Yue Qing Qian came up, “Brother Xiao Yao, are you still online and not asleep?”

“Yeah. Qing Qian, why aren’t you asleep yet?”

“I can’t sleep...”

“Why can’t you sleep?”

“I was just thinking of the events earlier in the day. Brother Xiao Yao and [Valiant Bravery] lost so tragically...”

“Aih, don’t talk about it.”

Yue Qing Qian laughed softly, “Oh by the way, Brother Xiao Yao wants to establish a guild, right?”

“Yes, what’s wrong?”

“Do you have a Guild Creation Tablet?”

“Not right now...”

“I have a method to get a Guild Creation Tablet quickly...”

“Ohh? What method?” my heart jumped.

Yue Qing Qian smiled lightly and said, “The third team leader from [Prague], “Luo Mu”, gained a Guild Creation Tablet during a guild event this morning. But he doesn’t want to share the spoils with the guild and would like to quietly take all of the profits. A spy I secretly placed informed me that at 12 noon sharp, Luo Mu will bring a few people to sell the Guild Creation Tablet. He will be at the Ba Huang City Forest with the coordinates of (10000,10000)!”

I was speechless, “That won’t do, Luo Mu is a member of [Prague], I can’t fight over it...”

“Big brother, don’t be anxious and listen to me!” Yue Qing Qian giggled, “The buyer is a player from [Flying Dragon] called Mu Tian, a Swordsman. You should wait until the transaction ends, and then attack him. The drop rate for an item that was just transacted is extremely high, so as long as you can kill Mu Tian, you can get the Guild Creation Tablet. Moreover, I will help you!!”

Me: “...”

Chapter 196: A Little Payback

“I remember... Mu Tian is one of the players from [Flying Dragon]. If he wants to buy a Guild Creation Tablet, then could it be he wants to split away from [Flying Dragon] and form his own guild? How odd...”

“No...” Yue Qing Qian laughed, “In fact, after Soaring Dragon forced [Valiant Bravery] to disband, [Flying Dragon]’s reputation skyrocketed. Soaring Dragon’s ambition is higher than the sky itself and [Flying Dragon] is already planning to create their first sub-guild. After all, the maximum number of people a guild can have is 10,000 people. [Flying Dragon] has been getting invite requests from tens of thousands of people so they can’t accommodate everyone with a single guild. They would need three or four sub-guilds at the very least.”

I nodded, “So that’s how it is...”

Yue Qing Qian gave a quiet laugh with her lips, “Brother Xiao Yao, give me an answer, are you going to take this deal or not? The transaction is a very big secret, aside from me and you, there aren’t many people that know about it. Luo Mu wants to hog the 300000 RMB to himself, hmph! If Uncle Yan Zhao found out, he would explode with anger...”

I clenched my hand into a fist, “This Guild Creation Tablet is ours, we’ll wait for him to finish the transaction before we strike. Let’s have [Flying Dragon] pay for our Guild Creation Tablet and this will be our payback for them disbanding [Valiant Bravery]!”

Yue Qing Qian laughed, “Hehee, Luo Mu and Mu Tian won’t be bringing too many people; at the most they’ll only bring 10 players they trust. Brother Xiao Yao, how many people are you planning to bring?”

Without hesitation, I said, “I’ll be going solo! If you were to go with me Qing Qian, wouldn’t Yan Zhao Warrior reprimand you?”

“I’m not afraid...” The corner of Yue Qing Qian’s mouth raises, smiling, “Once you establish Zhan Long, I’ll immediately quit [Prague]. There won’t be any type of relation between Uncle Yan Zhao and me anymore. Even if he tries to lash out at me, it’ll be alright if Brother Xiao Yao is

there!”

I nodded, “Of course, you will be one of my people once you join and if he wants to start something, we’ll just have to see if he has the skills to back it up!”

“Okay then, when will we head on over to set up the strike?”

“We’ll head over now to set up an ambush. Yue Qing Qian, you’ll have to keep on using [Stealth]!”

“Okay, invite me to your party!”

“Yea!”

.....

Immediately getting up to repair my equipment, I brought out some Pardon Cards and health potions and headed out the city alone.

I entered the verdant Ba Huang Forest alone and leapt into the bushes while my [Camouflage] skill activated automatically. A mysterious glow enveloped my body and concealed me inside the bushes. This skill really gave the player invisibility. Tsk, this [Camouflage] skill is so wretched, though I can’t help but be fond of it...As long as I am within a bush, I gained Assassin-like stealth. If I were to be found, all I needed to do was to take a few steps back and I would become invisible once more.

Throughout the journey, I didn’t call out my pet even once. Instead, I kept traveling between bushes. My Purple Dawn Boots and Leg Guards of the Beast were being scratched by all of the thorns but for the Guild Creation Tablet, I’d bear these minor hardships!

11:32 at the pre-determined coordinates.

“Shua!”

By my side, a beautiful figure flickered into view; it was Yue Qing Qian. The little girl was wearing completely scarlet leather armor and her ample body was even more appealing than before. To look like this at the age of 17, when she grows up she’ll have to deal with so much attention...

“Brother Xiao Yao?” She cocked her head sideways while looking at me,

her body was still somewhat hidden but because I was her party leader, I could see her perfectly well.

“Yes.”

I pointed a finger in front of us, “They’ll probably be making the transaction right over there and I’m sure it’ll be over in a flash. Qing Qian, let’s move back a bit, around 50 meters. Stay hidden so that right after the transaction is completed, and Mu Tian decides to use a return scroll, we’ll have a brief opportunity to interrupt his return and take the Guild Creation Tablet!”

“Got it.” Yue Qing Qian brought up her hands from her waist, revealing a dark green dagger that glistened. “I’ll attack with Brother Xiao Yao and stun those who would try and attack you...”

“Okay!”

.....

Moving 50 yards away from the coordinates and into some nearby bushes, I crouched down in silence while fidgeting with my sword hilt. My other hand carefully touched the ground while I started to breathe somewhat irregularly. In 20 minutes, people will start to arrive with 300000 RMB for the Guild Creation Tablet. This was far too important for Zhan Long and had a very significant meaning. If we could take the Guild Creation Tablet from [Flying Dragon] and use it to create Zhan Long, wouldn’t that be the ultimate form of revenge?

The news Yue Qing Qian had given me was really important, if I didn’t have her help, I wouldn’t have known about this huge transaction taking place in the dead of the night! If this was also happening inside the city walls, so there wouldn’t have been a chance to stop it even if I did know about it.

“Brother Xiao Yao...”

Yue Qing Qian looked at me with her huge gleaming eyes with astonishment, “Brother Xiao Yao, why is it that your current status invisibility? When did Swordsmen become able to hide themselves, we

Assassins will be out of a job if that happens...”

I gave a slight chuckle and waved my hand to share the effects of [Camouflage] with her. Immediately, the beautiful Qing Qian laughed, “[Camouflage], so it’s something like this...this must be the reward you got for being the MVP in the Guild Prestige Battle...”

“Yea, this skill is quite good, it means that in the future, I can assassinate someone easily in the jungle.”

“Yes yes, good luck!” Yue Qing Qian grabbed my left hand, her pretty face showing a trace of indignation. “I saw the Guild Prestige Battle between [Valiant Bravery] and [Flying Dragon] from start to finish. Brother Xiao Yao, don’t you know? Everyone supports you and thinks you’re the strongest player around. If it weren’t for [Flying Dragon] hiring all those CBN rankers from Jiu Li City then [Valiant Bravery] would had been the winner...”

Looking away from her, I laughed to myself, “I’m a king if I win but a bandit if I lose. If I lose, then it’s my loss, fortunately, this is only a game, we still have an opportunity to reverse the tables back into our favor. It’s time for [Flying Dragon] to face the bitter consequences.”

TL: I’m a king if I win or bandit if lose is an idiom meaning that his reputation will be dictated based on whether he wins or loses.

“Yeah!” Yue Qing Qian nodded excitedly. “Starting from today, I will be with Brother Xiao Yao!”

“Haha, sure...”

“Shhh...” Yue Qing Qian’s lift her forefinger to mouth, “shhhh”, with a smile, “They’re here!”

.....

In the distance, sounds emits from the bushes. Within a few seconds, a few dozen men came walking out of the forest. Standing in front of the open space on the ground, everyone’s shoulder had the insignia of [Prague]. The ringleader, Luo Mu, was there also.

“Boss, who are we selling the Guild Creation Tablet to? In Ba Huang City, the amount of people who could afford one aren’t too many....” An Archer asked.

Luo Mu held his sword hilt with a single hand, stating monotonously, “You don’t have to worry about that, just wait for your cut of the money.”

The Archer laughed, “Just saying but if we sell the Guild Creation Tablet in private and don’t give [Prague] 20% of the transaction fee. Won’t the Guild Master find out and get angry at us?”

Luo Mu grinned, “Don’t worry about him, this Guild Creation Tablet was achieved only after dozens of our comrades lives were sacrificed. Why do we need to give 20% of the profit to the guild? The rules are meant to be bent. I refuse to give it up. If Yan Zhao wants to eliminate me, then we will take out our group of 500 people and leave. No big deal anyway.”

“Yes, Boss is wise!”

.....

Two minutes later, another group of players came out from the forest, it was [Flying Dragon]’s members. Mu Tian walk out in the front holding his cyan sword with a smile on his face. “Yo, brother Luo Mu is right on time!”

Luo Mu smiled, “Not too bad, Mu Tian, did you bring enough money?”

“I brought enough!”

“You also brought many people with you...” Luo Mu looked behind Mu Tian, “Five of the 13 Eagles of [Vanguard]. Heh, you really think highly of me. Are all these men here to help protect the Guild Creation Tablet or to rob it?”

Mu Tian laughed, “I brought the 13 Eagles to protect myself. After all, we are currently standing outside of the city areas. I’m not so confident I could protect the Guild Creation Tablet by myself! Come on then, let’s trade!”

“Of course!”

Luo Mu opened up the trading chat, and suddenly, the two symbols floated up from their heads signifying a transaction was taking place.

“Pa-da”

A ring sounded, the transaction was complete!

Yue Qing Qian brandished her daggers, “Brother Xiao Yao, it’s time!”

“Hold up!”

I quickly reached out and pulled her back into the bush, “Wait up, I’m not too sure they actually completed the transaction yet.”

.....

Sure enough, in the open space ahead. Mu Tian gave an awkward smile, “Wait a moment please; my account balance is 10,000 short of 300,000. Give me half a minute and we’ll complete the transaction for sure; the money will be sent immediately!”

“Understood!” Luo Mu nodded.

Yue Qing Qian blinked in surprise then punched me with a laugh, “Wow, I almost went out on impulse. Brother Xiao Yao is quite the experienced person, always so cautious...”

Smiling, I said, “One has to be careful, otherwise, I’d be dead a long time ago.”

.....

Another trade was set up and the transaction was completed!

Mu Tian took a few steps back, the 13 Eagles members stepping up to protect him as he unraveled a return scroll. “Thank you brother Luo Mu! I’ll be going now, I hope this will mark the beginning of a beautiful friendship between [Flying Dragon] and [Prague]!”

Smiling faintly, Luo Mu answered, “Yes, of course, I wouldn’t want to go to war with your guild!”

.....

“It’s time!”

Right at the moment Mu Tian started the spell to return to the city, I immediately rushed out towards him. My Frost Rain Sword rose in the air as I advanced while my other hand made contact with the ground. “Pa!” [Binding Chains] came exploding out from the ground and wrapped around Mu Tian’s legs, automatically interrupting Mu Tian’s return scroll!

“Crap, it’s an ambush!”

One of the Swordsman from the 13 Eagles hastily pulled out his sword and activated a [Combo]. Dodging to the side to avoid two hits, I activated my own skill at the same time, the [Shield of the Crimson Dragon]!

Several attacks hit my shoulder continuously but it did almost no damage to me. Stabbing forward with my Frost Rain Sword, it penetrated Mu Tian’s breastplate and I activated my Lv 6 [Combo]!

“Bang bang bang...”

With the successful strikes, Mu Tian’s health dropped straight away. He was insta-killed!

“Pa-ta...”

As he sunk to his knees, his eyes widen and he stares at me, “Xiao Yao Zi Zai, why are you here?”

I didn’t answer but instead looked at the equipment and items he dropped. Picking up the golden tablet, I told myself: Motherf*cker, we finally did it, the Guild Creation Tablet given to [Flying Dragon] was finally in our hands! Mu Tian was too kind, to give us this Guild Creation Tablet...

.....

“Pa!”

Behind me, a [Scattered Shot] had stunned me as another one of the 13 Eagles swung at me with his sword. Fortunately the [Shield of the Crimson Dragon]’s effect was still up, otherwise I definitely would have been

killed!

A cool breeze came over us as a beautiful figure flashed, it was Yue Qing Qian ambushing the other players. Stabbing two of the enemy players, she stunned both of the Archers. Dashing straight towards the third Archer, she applied a [Bleed] to him as well as two basic attacks, killing him instantly!

.....

“Whew...”

I let out a breath of air in relief as I came out of my stunned state. Hastily casting [Heal] on myself and drinking a health potion, I cried out to Yue Qing Qian, “Qing Qian, let’s escape, stop fighting!”

.....

“Sha...”

Both of us jumped into the bushes, [Camouflage] quickly activated making me appear invisible. Behind us, several people were stunned, “How...how did they disappear so quickly?”

Yue Qing Qian giggled in the party chat channel, “Brother Xiao Yao, did you succeed?”

I laughed joyously, “Yeah, I got it! Let’s return to Ba Huang City!”

“Okay!”

Chapter 197: Start of Zhan Long

“Swoosh!”

With a white flash, I reappeared within Ba Huang City with Yue Qing Qian at my side. Intimately, she pulled my wrist and smiled, “A Guild Creation tablet usually costs around 300,000 RMB, so Brother Xiao Yao should treat me to dinner!”

“Of course, I was already planning to do so.”

I laughed loudly, “Qing Qian don’t leave right now. Come with me to the Guild Association in the city so you can meet the other members in our guild, after all we are going to be one big family soon.”

Yue Qing Qian nodded while smiling “Yup, yup!”

.....

In a hurry, I pulled Wolf, Matcha, Ran Min, Fox, Dong Cheng Lei and Darling Duck into our party.

“Brother Xiao Yao, what happened?” Wolf asked.

Old K forced his eyes open, “It’s already past midnight. Can’t you let us focus on leveling?”

Matcha laughed lightly “Be silent and let the boss speak!”

I didn’t say anything and instead sent a picture of the Guild Creation Tablet through the party chat and laughed, “Everyone, take a look at this.”

“Ah?! A Guild Creation Tablet....” Matcha’s jaw dropped.

Wolf got so emotional that he couldn’t form his words, “Brother Xiao, this..... this is a Guild Creation Tablet but where did it come from? Is this from Wan Er?

I shook my head “No! This is from [Flying Dragon]’s Elder Mu Tian. He was at Ba Huang City’s forest buying a Guild Creation Tablet and before he could return and give it to Soaring Dragon, I killed him and then it dropped!”

“[Flying Dragon] is paying the bill?” Old K’s eyes popped open, “Awesome! This is really sweet!”

Darling Duck smiled and asked “Then this tablet belongs to us and we can finally establish our guild? Boss?”

I nodded “Yeah, have everyone gather at Ba Huang City, Fox withdraw 10,000G and give it to me. Today is a memorable day, we will finally be able to establish our guild. This is the first step in realizing our dream!”

Fox laughed “Ok, I will go immediately!”

.....

I took Yue Qing Qian to the city master’s office and waited by the steps. After a short while, Matcha descended from the air and giggled, “Boss! Wha.... So this is the beautiful Yue Qing Qian. Wow, she’s definitely a girl who can make guys drool over her...”

Yue Qing Qian blushed “Brother Xiao Yao, who is this person?”

“She is Matcha.....” I laughed, “Zhan Long Studio’s newest member. Qing Qian if you come to Hangzhou to visit, you’ll definitely meet her! Matcha is really kind, although a bit clumsy.”

Matcha gave me a death stare and I abruptly stopped talking.

Shortly after, Old K, Wolf, and the others plus Yue Qing Qian gathered, making a total of 8 people that would be in the Zhan Long guild!

....

Taking 10,000G from Fox, I quickly introduced Yue Qing Qian to everybody else. Old K, Wolf and the others seem to like and appreciate this young girl wearing a [Prague] emblem. If I wasn’t at the scene, I’m afraid they would have asked if she had a boyfriend.

Taking a long walk, we finally arrived in front of Duke Luo Lei’s office in Ba Huang City. I handed over the Guild Creation Tablet to the Duke. When he looked toward me, he said, “I know you! Young warrior of Dragon City, do you want to establish your own guild?”

I nodded “Yes, my Duke!”

“Tell me what you would name your guild!”

“Okay.....”

I turned back to look at the group and said “We’ll name our guild **【Zhan Long】**, will there be any problems?”

Wolf raised his fist “Ah, Zhan Long! Carrying out justice and helping the weak!”

Matcha nodded “The name Zhan Long isn’t that bad, it sounds much better than Valiant Bravery....”

TL Note: The meaning of Valiant Bravery is to sacrifice oneself for the sake of others

Yue Qing Qian covered her mouth and smiled, “Ok, Zhan Long it is!”

I nodded then turned back and entered the two words “Zhan Long”. Immediately, I heard a dinging sound echo throughout the sky of Ba Huang City. We were officially the 9th guild established in Ba Huang City. —

“Ding!”

System Announcement: Please be aware that player “Xiao Yao Zi Zai” has successfully used a Guild Creation Tablet and created the guild **【Zhan Long】**! Since this is Ba Huang City’s 9th guild, +2 charm has been awarded!

.....

“The award is really small. Only +2 charm....” Yue Qing Qian pouted.

I turned around and laughed a little “No problem, establishing the guild is the most important thing. Charm can be gained by yourself! Come now and apply to join my guild!”

In a hurry, Wolf, Old K, Matcha and the others joined [Zhan Long]. Finally, the only person left to join was Yue Qing Qian. She held her dagger silently as the [Prague]’s deputy leader emblem hovered just above her arm.

I looked at her and smiled “Qing Qian, it’s time to come home.....”

Yue Qing Qian’s face glowed red “Yup”. Immediately with a wave of her hand, the [Prague] emblem disappeared; she had officially resigned from the guild. At this moment, Yan Zhao Warrior would definitely hate me; I stole a cute deputy leader away from him. Eventually, Yue Wei Liang would also join Zhan Long, in effect, I stole two players at once.

After joining Zhan Long successfully, Yue Qing Qian laughed lightly “Brother Xiao Yao, we forgot to come up with an guild emblem. Right now it’s blank, which isn’t good...”

I nodded. Taking out a design that was prepared a long time ago from the my database, I stared at it. It was a Dragon’s Head, crimson red, looking slightly savage with the finishing touches on bloodthirsty background. This was indeed a guild logo worthy of praise and combined with the two words [Zhan Long], it gave out a majestic feeling!

“Ha Ha, this looks good.....” Yue Qing Qian looked at the guild logo resting on her arm.

Wolf stepped up and asked “Brother Xiao Yao, how do we organize the positions within the guild? There’s only a few people here....”

I thought to myself for a moment and said, “Let’s temporarily separate into two camps. The first one will be the Zhan Long camp, the other one will be Valiant Bravery camp. All of those who are present here will belong to the Zhan Long Camp while the General Family will manage the Valiant Bravery Camp. There will be two Deputy Leader positions, who wants it?”

“The person must have a considerable amount of influence” Matcha said while looking at me. She then looked at Yue Qing Qian, laughed and said “Yue Qing Qian was [Prague]’s deputy leader before and she is well known since she is a top ranking player on the CBN network. To let her be the deputy leader is the best choice. The other deputy spot should be left to General Li Mu, alright?”

I laughed “Yeah then that should be it. Qing Qian will speak on my behalf and will be the recruiter for now.”

Yue Qing Qian puckered up her red lips and said cautiously, “Brother Xiao Yao, if they are... [Prague]’s players, would you dare to accept them?”

“Hmm, what does that mean?”

“Well....” She smiled sweetly “I introduced a lot of my friends into [Prague], all of them are above average players. If I joined Zhan Long, they would surely follow me. Will Zhan Long accept them?”

I was startled and after frowning I said, “If Qing Qian’s friends want to join, I have no reason to refuse. Just don’t make this a big issue. If too many people transfer over, I’m worried that [Prague]’s Yan Zhao would think that Zhan Long is poaching their players. Zhan Long already has a lot of enemies, I don’t want [Prague] to be another enemy.”

Yue Qing Qian smiled “Don’t worry brother, there are only around 50 people. The average level is around 53.5, everyone of them has at least 3 Gold Tier equipment or above and they are experienced players...and also...”

She pulled on my arm and smiled “You said that after establishing your guild, you would let the General’s people run the Valiant Bravery camp. General Li Mu can bring at least over a hundred players and all of them are veteran players. That strengthens the Valiant Bravery camp. But, what about our Zhan Long camp? We can’t just have 8 players, so if I bring 50+ players, it can supplement the Zhan Long camp. Otherwise, it’s embarrassing...”

I burst out laughing while giving Yue Qing Qian a big hug around her shoulder, “Qing Qian is so thoughtful that it’s very alluring.... Okay, then let’s do as you say....”

Yue Qing Qian’s face flushed red and didn’t reply.

Matcha rubbed her forehead. “That’s the end for her, this girl has fallen....”

Wolf “.....”

Old K “.....”

.....

I continued to assign Elder and Team Captain positions to Old K, Fox, Wolf and Matcha. With the authority given to them, it would make running the guild easier. As for me, the emblem of the guild leader shined on my arm...

At the beginning of a guild's establishment, the most important thing is to increase the level of the guild. A Lv 1 guild can only allow 100 players. People that would want to join wouldn't fit, so within 24 hours, we must increase the guild to Lv 2.

"To increase a Lv 1 guild to Lv 2, it requires 1,000,000 guild experience points.... Wolf grinned. "Guild members have their experience obtained from grinding also count for guild experience points. We can even train together. Once we collectively obtain 1,000,000 experience points then the guild should level up."

I nodded "Okay, let's go all night grinding. Let's try to get a Lv 2 guild within 24 hours. Qing Qian, you can go find your players to join and we can all work together. If we have 100 people and everyone gets 10,000 experience points each, then our guild can level up.

Yue Qing Qian nodded and smiled "Alright. I'll tell them. Haha, Wei Liang wants to join the guild too. Brother Xiao Yao, I'll go to the North gate plaza to accept players!"

"Yes, go!"

.....

Soon after, 47 veteran players from [Prague] all transferred to [Zhan Long]. Including our other group of team members, Zhan Long had nearly 70 players. Leveling up to a Lv 2 guild wouldn't be a big problem anymore!

Late night, nearly 1AM, a "Ding" sound echoed. General Li Mu and company went online. Li Mu gave a call and laughed loudly "Hot damn! We were in the bus when we saw the news of Zhan Long officially establishing. Where are you now? I'll bring people to join!"

I nodded “North gate plaza! Li Mu, how many of [Valiant Bravery]’s players are you bringing?”

Li Mu said sadly “Not too optimistic, when the tree falls, the monkeys disperse, but what’s left are the true friends. Those are hard to find. Around 200 players. Xiao Yao, you won’t mind right?”

I shook my head and laughed “Why would I mind? Except right now, there’s only 30 spots in the guild. First, bring 30 players over and tomorrow, when we rush to a Lv 2 guild, they can all transfer over. How about that?”

“Deal!”

“Let me give you the Deputy leader position, that way it is easier for you to lead!”

“No! General Li Mu shook his head “I want an elder position, just enough to run Valiant Bravery. Xiao Yao, you can give the vice guild leader position to Cang Tong, Cang Yue, or even to Yue Qing Qian. They have more influence than I do so they are more suited to be vice guild leader, which is an important position. The executive positions in the guild are very important, they can’t be too ugly....”

“Too ugly.....” That was hard to digest and I said “Looks like Old K is definitely not fit to be vice guild leader....”

Li Mu laughed loudly “SO mean..... Okay, I’ll go gather the people. You should also go and by tomorrow 8AM, we must get the guild to Lv 2!”

Good!

Chapter 198: I Will Miss You

After staying up till 7 AM in the morning the next day, finally, a bell sounded as Zhan Long leveled up to a Lv 2 Guild –

“Ding!”

System Announcement: Congratulations, your guild **【Zhan Long】** has leveled up to a Lv 2 guild, you receive a new guild skill**【EXP Increase】**!

.....

【EXP Increase】 increases a guild member's exp gain by 10% which is similar to Fan Shu City's buff. This is also the reason why a guild is so special; from Lv 2 onwards, the guild would receive a new buff for each level. A Lv 3 guild would have**【War Drum】**which increases the attack of all members by 5%. A Lv 4 guild would have**【War Barrier】**which increases the defense of all members by 5%. A Lv 5 guild would receive**【War God Blessing】**which increases all players' monster and player kill drop rate by 20%. This is considered to be a first-rate buff!

Therefore, we must rush our guild to Lv 5. Not only can we increase our member intake, we would also be able to increase our drop rate by 20%. With this 20% increase in drop rate, the members' basic equipment and drop rate will be much higher, thus having the an advantage over everyone else. Furthermore, high level guilds can use buff advantages to attract high leveled players to join, which puts the guild into a good cycle.

.....

“Di!”

Guild Announcement: Please note, Deputy Leader**【Yue Qing Qian】**has approved player

【Dream of a Thousand Cities】to join the guild!

“Di!”

Guild Announcement: Please note, Deputy Guildmaster**【Yue Qing Qian】**has approved player **【Ling Xiao Wu】**to join the guild!

“Di!”

Guild Announcement: Please note, Elder 【General Li Mu】has approved player

【General Hua Xiong】to join the guild!

“Di!”

Guild Announcement: Please note, Elder【General Li Mu】has approved player

【Cold Eyes】to join the guild!

.....

The Guild Announcements flowed endlessly as the number of players in Zhan Long also increased rapidly. In the end, not even half an hour later, we had reached the maximum limit of 300 people!

As I looked at the average level of the players in the guild, which was 52.4, I couldn't help but smile. A level average of 52.4 would definitely shoot us into the top-notch guild category at the present stage. Even [Vanguard] might not have such a high average. But we still lacked in numbers, so the level average might drop if we invite more players.

Through the Guild Masters tools, I looked at the players statistics. Currently, the players' equipment were really shocking. Out of 300 people, there were a total of 4 Emperor Tier equipment, it seemed like Yue Qing Qian had one. Then there were a total of 249 Purple Tier and 1244 Gold Tier equipment. The lowest Tier was Silver equipment and not a single Bronze or Green Tier equipment existed. Just based on the equipment, one can already catch a glimpse of this guild's battle prowess!

Opening a chat with Yue Qing Qian, I said, “Qing Qian, staying up the whole night, aren't you tired? Shouldn't you sleep a bit?”

“Yeah, I'll go sleep a while. Brother Xiao Yao, I will wake up earlier and continue to fight with the others to level...”

“Yup, yup!”

“Brother Xiao Yao, you should give a speech in the guild chat. You are

the Guild Master...”

“Alright...”

.....

I opened the guild chat function and entered a few words. They immediately came up on the guild chat screen that was visible to all guild members.

Xiao Yao Zi Zai (Guildmaster): “Hi everyone, I am Li Xiao Yao and thank you for joining Zhan Long. I will definitely not betray your trust! We, Zhan Long, are a new and uprising guild. Our mission is to fight to protect the weak. Currently, Zhan Long’s primary goal is to have everyone to level quickly and earn guild exp so that we can reach guild Lv 5 as soon as possible. Only after that happens will we be on par with other powerful guilds! As a part of Zhan Long, we are brothers and sisters from today onwards. Whoever bullies one of us will have to face all of us!”

Immediately, the guild chat bustled with noise and excitement—

Yue Qing Qian: “Heehee, Brother Xiao Yao is so macho!”

Yue Wei Liang: “Guild Master, you should sleep now...”

General Li Mu: “Haha, the Guild Master is right, we of Zhan Long are one body. In the future if one of us is bullied, everybody else has to prepare to roll up their sleeves. Whoever bullies us, we’ll bully them right back!”

General Wang Jian: “Yup, it is a must!”

Matcha: “Boss, you should sleep now...”

Me: “Yeah, I stayed up online the whole night since yesterday. I’ll sleep first. Qing Qian, could you arrange a capable assistant to manage the matters during the day? I’m already quite tired.”

Yue Qing Qian: “Okay, rest assured. Yesterday, Wei Liang didn’t level, so today I’ll let her manage during the day. She also has the position of a team leader, so that should be enough.”

Me: “Okay...Everyone continue to work hard, we’ll aim to reach guild Lv

3 in 48 hours!”

Ling Xiao Wu: “Yes, yes. Have a good rest, Guild Master!”

TL: Ling Xiao Wu is using ancient chinese sayings that would have been directed to kings/emperors.

Me: “...”

.....

Logging off, I went downstairs to buy two fruit pancakes to eat and then I went back to the dorms and slept like a log.

When I woke up it was almost 6 PM. Looking at my phone, there were 2 missed calls, both from Lin Wan Er. She called me an hour ago but I had slept so soundly that I didn’t hear my phone ring. I hurriedly called back and after a few rings, Miss finally picked up my call. But there were clanging and slashing sounds of swords in the background; she had obviously picked up my call from in game-

“Oh, did you just wake up?” She asked with a laugh.

Me: “Yes, I stayed up too late, so...”

Lin Wan Er smiled lightly, “First of all I should congratulate you, Zhan Long is finally established. Even though it is the 36th Guild amongst all 3 big cities, it’s still not that bad. You should now be a Lv 2 guild right?”

“Yup!”

“In the future, take note of the guild rankings in the Chinese server. Hopefully Zhan Long will enter the top 10 before long!”

“Of course, what’s our rank now...”

“I told you, your guild rank is 36th...”

“Then that’s close to top 10 already...”

“Pei, such an unscrupulous guy! Originally I wanted to ask you to eat with us but you actually slept so late so Dong Cheng and I have already eaten something else. You can eat your dinner alone, then log online again. Being a new Guild Master must be very tough.”

“Yeah...” I sighed once, “When are Dong Cheng and you joining Zhan Long to help me?”

“That... wait for a while more. Wait until Q-Sword cools down from his anger for a while, then we’ll talk again...Since Hangzhou, after he was beaten up by you, he seemed to be kind of depressed. He looked so gloomy and sad...”

“Haha, he should be...”

“Then I’ll continue to level!”

“Okay.” Then, I suddenly said another word, “Miss...”

“What’s wrong?” Lin Wan Er smiled softly.

I wanted to say something, then I stopped. After a few seconds, I asked, “Then I won’t be meeting you today, right?”

“I think so...” Lin Wan Er jumped, “Not seeing each other...not seeing each other is not something big...”

I said, “Not seeing you for 24 hours, I will miss you...”

“So it’s like that...” Lin Wan Er laughed softly, “Even if it sounded really fake, but...tonight before 12, we can log off and you can take Dong Cheng and me for a midnight snack...”

“Yup, yup. I’ll go message you before I go offline.”

“Alright, go on then~”

.....

I went downstairs, ate 3 fruit pancakes, went back home and logged online!

“Shua!”

Appearing in the middle of Ba Huang City, I checked the guild exp. Currently it was Lv 2 at 5%. Indeed, going from Lv 2 to Lv 3 required a lot more guild experience. We could only go slowly, reaching Lv 3 in 48 hours was going to be a little hard.

Looking at the list of players in the guild, from Guild Master to Deputy

Leader, Elder, Team Leader and Flagbearer, all 44 management level players were all online. Everyone was really devoted, I was the last management level player to be online.

“Di!”

A message was received from Matcha: “Boss~”

I asked: “Matcha, did anything happen in the guild during the time I was offline?”

“Basically no...” Matcha pursed her lips and laughed, “There’s one thing though. When the twins Yue Qing Qian and Yue Wei Liang brought 100 players to train in Green Qilin Valley, they met a 50 man [Wrath of the Heroes] team. When taunted, they decimated the [Wrath of the Heroes] 50 man team... Boss, are you going to scold the twins?”

I laughed out loud, “What do I need to scold them for? If it were me, I would’ve also done that! Zhan Long currently has 300 people already. We may not be able to afford to offend [Vanguard] and [Flying Dragon], but don’t tell me we also cannot offend [Wrath of the Heroes], these kind of lousy players? Since we have already killed them then it’s alright. If Tyrant of Western Chu brings people to attacks us, then take it as them delivering equipment to us.”

“They are indeed going to fight back. They are currently preparing a huge number of players to head towards Green Qilin Valley. They numbered around 500+ people... Boss, what do you think we should do now?”

“What else can we do?”

I made a fist and laughed, “Pass my command along, all members of Zhan Long that are online should head towards Green Qilin Valley quickly. We’ll change our training map to Green Qilin Valley. The monsters there are suitable for leveling, moreover there are also Elite mMonsters and high drop rates. If [Wrath of the Heroes] wants to fight with us, then we’ll face them directly. Zhan Long is not a group of 10 people anymore. Since the big powers of Ba Huang City are not letting us off easily, then we’ll kill everyone. Fight a battle to train for another

battle. Today let's use [Wrath of the Heroes] as our training dummy!"

"Okay, I like this kind of Guild Master. So aggressive, heehee..."

"I also like this kind of team leader..."

"What did I do?" Matcha pouted her small lips.

"Moe..." I laughed out loud.

Matcha angrily stomped her feet, "Boss!"

.....

After repairing my equipment and grabbing some health potions and Pardon Cards, I set off!

The target was Green Qilin Valley. From before, Green Qilin Valley was my pot of gold at the end of the rainbow and it will also become Zhan Long's pot of gold. Since [Wrath of the Heroes] decided to challenge us in Green Qilin Valley, then we should ruthlessly teach them a lesson!

Checking Tyrant of the Western Chu's Guild, it was a Lv 3 guild with 1000 members, reaching the maximum limit. Outside the guild, there were around 2000+ members. After counting out the players who were offline and those that didn't listen to his orders, Tyrant of the Western Chu could more or less mobilize 1000 online players. On the other hand, Zhan Long's current online players numbered at 279 people. Outside the guild, there should be around 100 players and approximately 400 elite players. This should be sufficient to crush 1000 lousy players from [Wrath of the Heroes]!

.....

Dozens of minutes later, after coming out from the forest, my camouflage effect disappeared. I carried the Ancient Tablet and Frost Rain Sword on my back and jumped into Green Qilin Valley. Far away, a group of people were killing a Dark Green Vine Monster. One of them was a girl wielding a dagger; it was Yue Qing Qian. She glanced back and looked at me before saying, "Everyone, Brother Xiao Yao is here! Hee hee, these people from [Wrath of the Heroes] are going to suffer!"

Chapter 199: Zhan Long's First Battle

“Qing Qian, what’s the situation now?” I walked forward and smiled lightly.

Yue Qing Qian blinked her eyes, “Currently there are around 200 [Wrath of the Heroes] members nearby, all of whom were killed by us at least once and are basically running corpses at this point. Furthermore, it seems that the [Wrath of the Heroes]’s Guild Master Tyrant of Western Chu is downright furious. He has threatened to mobilize all of [Wrath of the Heroes]’s forces to storm the Green Qilin Valley in order to annihilate [Zhan Long], our newly established guild...”

I ground my teeth, pulled out my Frost Rain Sword and laughed, “Then let them come. How many people do we have here now?”

“Around 150+ people. Matcha is currently commanding the Zhan Long Camp while Li Mu is in charge of the Valiant Bravery Camp. For the time being they have split up to train.”

“Okay!”

I opened the guild chat and said, “Little Wolf?”

“Brother Xiao Yao?” Wolf replied.

I chuckled, “Send out around 10 Assassins and also around 10 Wind Elf Archers to patrol the Green Qilin Valley. Report back immediately if there is any news of [Wrath of the Heroes] so that we may prevent them from making a sneak attack.”

“Alright, understood!”

General Li Mu said, “Xiao Yao, what sort of deep resentment does Tyrant of Western Chu harbour against you, that he would go this far?”

I replied indifferently, “Actually, I also don’t know...”

Matcha giggled slightly, “According to my knowledge, Tyrant of Western Chu and Boss are students of the same school. Tyrant of Western Chu wanted to chase after Fan Shu City’s number one Assassin

beauty Cang Tong but Boss is her bodyguard, so...Boss became the cannon fodder, bullied by Tyrant of Western Chu every single day..."

Feeling a little awkward, I said, "It wasn't as melodramatic as you said... Maybe it was because I snatched a Black Iron Tier weapon [Bramble Thorn Sword]... Moreover I wasn't bullied by Tyrant of Western Chu everyday, it's just that he brought a lot of people..."

Ling Xiao Wu giggled, "Boss, rest assured, today is different from yesterday. You currently have 300 brave warriors from [Zhan Long] so even if [Wrath of the Heroes] fights against us with their full strength, we'll still help you to get your revenge..."

Me: "..."

Old K made a fist with his hands and boomed, "No matter what, [Wrath of the Heroes] is the first guild that is going to fight us after our establishment. Today we will have to annihilate them no matter what!"

General Wang Jian: "That's right, today we'll annihilate [Wrath of the Heroes]!"

Everyone bustled with excitement. Each and every one of them were high leveled and had good equipment, so naturally they weren't a peaceful bunch. Now, with a big battle coming, everyone was burning with bloodlust.

.....

There were a lot of different types of monsters in Green Qilin Valley, with levels around 50-65. The further we went, the higher the levels. There was a Lv 70 monster near Green Qilin Abyss, and the players at the current stage almost couldn't fight it. But with a group of 50+ players, a Lv 70 normal monster was still manageable; a Lv 70 Elite Monster would be a different matter.

Following the commands, everyone continued to train but they didn't split up too much. Splitting the group of people into units of 100, 4 big groups killed the monsters in the canyon. The rate at which the groups killed monsters was extremely high and the guild EXP bar could be seen

rising at a speed visible to the naked eye.

“Ka cha!”

Cutting off a monster’s arm with a dagger, Yue Qing Qian jumped lightly to my side to let the other two Swordsmen kill the monster. She giggled softly and said, “Brother Xiao Yao, at the most we still have 30 minutes before Tyrant of Western Chu makes a move. Now, there’s around 500 [Wrath of the Heroes] players gathering at the canyon’s side. Looks like...Tyrant of Western Chu doesn’t really have much confidence, he seems to want to gather at least a 1000 people before launching an attack against us...”

I nodded and muttered slightly, “[Wrath of the Heroes]...”

Yue Qing Qian blinked her eyes and said, “Boss, how do you plan to fight?”

I looked off into the distance and replied, “Dispatch half of the forces to battle at the front and defend the surrounding area outside the canyon. Then dispatch the other half of the forces to attack from the side to disturb [Wrath of the Heroes]’s formations. This way the battle will be easier. We definitely have the upperhand in terms of quality, our average level is 52, while [Wrath of the Heroes] average level doesn’t even reach 49. This means that almost every one of us has level 6 skills, while they can only use level 5 skills...”

“Yup yup....are there any specific tactics?”

“For this, you should ask Matcha...”

In the skies above, a beautiful shadow flew past. Matcha descended towards the ground somewhat clumsily. She retreated a few steps but still couldn’t balance herself. Instead she stabbed her sword into the ground, and was barely able to prop herself up with it. Looking a little embarrassed, she gave a smile, “Simple, we’ll use our level advantage to the maximum. Let the Knights and Monks defend at the front while Fox leads a group of 30+ Musketeers behind. Execute a volley attack, everyone shooting forward; this should be able to kill quite a few people. Then take turns to shoot another volley. I guarantee [Wrath of the Heroes] won’t be

able to endure it.”

I nodded, “Also, let Old K lead a group of Berserkers and Swordsmen to attack from the side. With [Whirlwind Blade] opening, [Wrath of the Heroes] will definitely cry their eyes out. Today, we’ll let them know the difference between us and them!”

Matcha pursed her lips, her eyes showing a little concern, “Old K’s attack should be enough already, I’m just worried... worried that he would be reckless and die immediately. Our morale will drop if that happens...:”

I sighed, “That is I’m worried about too...”

Yue Qing Qian coughed, “Ahem, you two are so mean...”

.....

On one side, General Li Mu came carrying his sword and said, “Newest report, [Wrath of the Heroes] currently has 600 people gathering outside the canyon. They are starting to get restless, so they might start attacking at anytime!”

Matcha curled the corners of her mouth, “600 people, it won’t be enough for a show. Tyrant of Western Chu isn’t that arrogant, he would scrape together at least 1000 people before he directly attacks us, just wait. We’ll start forming our groups when they have gathered 900 people!”

“Okay!”

After a while, General Wang Jian whispered, “Guild Master Xiao Yao, [Wrath of the Heroes] has gathered more than 900 people already!”

I immediately raised my arms and shouted, “Frontline troops, organize yourselves and prepare to defend! Old K, Li Mu, Wang Jian, the three of you lead our attacking troops properly, move toward the south, be careful not to alert the enemies!”

“Yes!”

.....

In the canyon, around 300 people formed a horizontal battle formation.

The first line had Knights and Monks. The second line had Archers and Mages. The third line had Musketeers while the fourth line had Healers. Other than me, all Swordsmen and Berserkers were led by the Valiant Bravery Camp to another position; Old K also went to help. We were in charge of the defense here, while massacring and breaking the enemies' defenses was left in their hands.

“Clang clang clang...”

Waves of heavy shields dropped to the ground and linked together. Each and every one of Zhan Long's Monks and Knights wore a serious and heavy expression. Matcha also carried a Gold Tier shield and stood at my side, her mouth curling as she said, “Boss, I'm already Lv 51, am I counted as part of the main force now?”

“Of course, how could you not be counted in?” I laughed out loud.

Matcha flapped her wings and stood steadily. Full of confidence, she said, “Alright then, this time I'm fighting alongside Boss, please protect me well...”

“You are a Knight, you should be protecting me, not the other way around.”

“You're the Boss..”

“Alright then, you have a point...:”

Yue Qing Qian laid low in the nearby bushes and leading a group of Assassins, prepared to ambush. She laughed softly, “Brother Xiao Yao, they are starting to attack. Coming from the front...”

“Okay, you guys be careful, wait for an opportunity before attacking!”

“Okay!”

.....

On a hill, Tyrant of Western Chu appeared, carrying his sword. The pretty Assassin Ageless Beauty stood at his side, having already become a Lv 52 Assassin. Her whole body shone with a purple light; she probably wore a lot of Purple Tier equipment. Liu Ying (Tyrant of Western Chu)

didn't lack money, he would, for sure, have his woman wear equipment of the best quality. From the looks of it, the quality of the equipment that this Ageless Beauty wore would be equal to about 70% of Wan Er's equipment. However, with regards to battle capabilities, Ageless Beauty wouldn't even reach 30% of Wan Er's capabilities. Sometimes, whether someone is really strong or just a pretty face can be differentiated with just a glance. Wan Er can stand on par with Jian Feng Han, a world class player, but I'm afraid Ageless Beauty wouldn't even last three attacks before she was killed.

“Shua!”

Suddenly raising his sword, Tyrant of Western Chu's face was full of resentment as he yelled, “This is the group of people that keeps provoking us. They were the ones who humiliated us, [Wrath of the Heroes] glory, time and time again! Brothers, we are conquerors, we'll definitely not let anyone off easily. Follow me and rush forward, we'll break their defensive line immediately, let those who bear Zhan Long's crest on their shoulder be annihilated, with nobody spared!”

A whole bunch of people roared and rushed down from the hillside. The ten 100-men groups were indeed superior in numbers. [Wrath of the Heroes] was a guild that was established using RMB. You'll have people when you have money. This point, without a doubt, was true.

.....

“Keng!”

With my Frost Rain Sword unsheathed, I stood on the frontlines. Staring with cold eyes, I yelled loudly, “Don't rush into battle, we'll first stay here to defend. Those on the frontlines, pay attention to your health, drink a health potion if needed. Healers use group heals! Prepare for battle, slaughter the enemies in front of you, let Zhan Long's name be glorified under the sun!”

The battle line took out their blades one by one, looking high in spirits and ready to battle. Everyone was looking forward to this mock battle; to us, [Wrath of the Heroes] was just a stepping stone!

.....

With a wave of my hand, I activated a Pardon Card. I didn't want to be a chaotic player, it was too troublesome. Furthermore, I'm now a Guild Master, so I should take care of my life, I can't rush in alone. The moment I die, the morale would take a fatal hit!

At the back, Fox led a group of Musketeers that were standing in a tight group. When the opponents reached us, Fox quickly commanded, "Raise your guns and take aim, starting with the Lv 53 Berserker - Everyone's Son, shoot!"

"Peng peng peng..."

Smoke flew around following orderly gunshot sounds. That Berserker, who was not low leveled, was afflicted with deadly wounds, and with a "plop", he fell to the ground and breathed his last breath...

.....

"Gasp..." Yue Qing Qian knitted her brows, "What...what a powerful gun attack! This will indeed be the cornerstone for mainstream tactics..."

Fox quickly locked on to another target and the orderly gunshot resounded again. 30+ Musketeers volleying an attack against one person was extremely effective. Once the Musketeers were ready again, another person was killed, regardless of the type; heavy armored, leather armored or cloth armored!

"They're coming!" Matcha cried softly.

On the frontline, the glow of [Flame Blade] and [Ice Blade] was blinding. [Wrath of the Heroes]'s front line attackers were before us in just a short amount of time!

Shua!"

I quickly strode 2 meter forward and made a "MISS" appear from dodging a [Flame Blade]. Then I swung my sword as I unleashed my [Wind Blade] attack, slicing a Lv 47 Berserker down. Twisting my wrist, my sword brushed past another Swordsman's neck. Blood splattered

everywhere, with just a normal attack and an additional [Fierce Ice Blade], I claimed another life!

“Peng!”

A Berserker almost struck my chest; his battle axe hit my shoulder instead, but it didn't hurt!

.....

“Kill!” Matcha commanded.

Zhan Long's first battle after its establishment was starting now!

Chapter 200: Thousand Suns Over Snowy Lands

A biting cold [Icicle] pierced through my chest, causing 1017 damage. Spikes of ice appeared around my wound, decreasing my movement and attack speed; this effect was extremely annoying. My body involuntarily staggered a few steps back. There were not many mages that had the power to shave off that much of my health with just an icicle attack. Nobody ever thought that there would be such an expert in [Wrath of the Heroes] guild.

“Boss, it’s that person!” Matcha pointed with her sword.

Amongst the crowd, there was a level 56 female mage carrying a staff covered in an aura of frost. She observed me and smiled faintly as her ID flashed above her head—

ID: Thousand Suns Over Snowy Lands Lv-56

Main City: Ba Huang City

Guild: Wrath of The Heroes

Position: Flagbearer

.....

“Shua shua...”

The glow of [Heal] casted by the healers from behind healed me endlessly. Unless I sustained a fatal attack, this female mage, like the rest of the players, wouldn’t be able to kill me.

“Thousand Suns Over Snowy Lands, why does this name sound familiar?” I slashed the players in front of me as I asked in the party chat.

Matcha checked for a while and faintly replied, “Thousand Suns Over Snowy Lands is Ba Huang City’s third ranked magician. She’s second only to Simple and Tornado. She’s even higher ranked than Soaring Dragon. It’s truly surprising that such a person actually joined [Wrath of the Heroes]. It’s hard to understand what she was thinking...”

Yue Qing Qian said, “I know, Thousand Suns Over Snowy Lands is sort of my friend. I actually added her as a friend ... It seemed to be because of a Purple Tier staff; Ageless Beauty pulled her into [Wrath of the Heroes] around one week ago. I had almost forgotten about it...”

“She’s your friend?”

I trembled slightly as I endured another [Pillar of Fire and Ice] from Thousand Suns Over Snowy Lands. My health quickly depleted by 1000 points as I immediately said, “Qing Qian, think of a way to poach Thousand Suns Over Snowy Lands from [Wrath of the Heroes] to our [Zhan Long]. It’s such a waste to let such a talented magician rot in [Wrath of the Heroes]!”

Yue Qing Qian pouted her lips, “Alright, I’ll try my best. But now it’s too late, we’ll have to kill sister Thousand Suns to win. Otherwise their attacking pressure will be massive...”

As Yue Qing Qian finished her words, Thousand Suns Over Snowy Lands unleashed her combo of [Pillar of Fire & Ice] and [Rock Spikes], immediately shaking the area beside me. At the same time, the health of a bunch of heavy armor players depleted rapidly, to the point that one of them even died. A Lv 51 monk held his shield as he knelt on the ground, killed. A few berserkers from [Wrath of the Heroes] took advantage of this and broke in. Battle axes danced in the wind as our defense line was in a precarious position.

Matcha’s beautiful eyes froze, “This won’t do. We have to kill Thousand Suns Over Snowy Lands first, otherwise our defensive line will be torn to shreds!”

I nodded and replied heavily, “Qing Qian, it’s your turn to shine. Move stealthily towards her and use [Stealth] and [Bleed] to break Thousand Suns Over Snowy Lands’ [Mana Shield]. Once her [Mana Shield] breaks, stun her with [Gouge]. Matcha and I will cooperate with you so that the three of us can kill her together! Qing Qian, you have to be careful, once you succeed in attacking her, you should retreat back to our side. Darling Duck will provide support for you!”

Yue Qing Qian nodded and smiled, “Ok, I understand. Wait for my good news!”

“Okay!”

.....

I swung my sword again, killing 2 low-health swordsmen. At the same time, I endured the attacks from two berserkers with my Nebula Armour. A ripple of light glowed underneath my feet as I unleashed [Strength of a Thousand Men], killing one of the berserkers. The other one was immediately killed by Fox’s musketeer group’s volley attack!

Closely observing the crowd, Thousand Suns Over Snowy Lands narrowed her lips as she waved her staff slowly. Every single time, her spells managed to cause a huge amount of damage to Zhan Long’s players. Her magic attack should have been at least 2000 for her attacks to be so painful! Even her [Pillar of Fire and Ice] attack could do 1500+ damage on a single person and it was an AOE attack!

A faint green shadow was currently slowly approaching Thousand Suns Over Snowy Lands. Yue Qing Qian lifted her Purple-Tier dagger, while her beautiful pair of eyes observed Thousand Suns Over Snowy Lands closely. Yue Wei Liang followed Yue Qing Qian closely; the two twins were planning to attack together. This way the success rate would be slightly higher.

“Wei Liang, attack!”

Yue Qing Qian shouted out from the party chat. A dagger swiftly flew out; the ambush attack was successful! “Pa” – Thousand Suns Over Snowy Lands’ [Mana Shield] distorted but it didn’t break. The air around Yue Qing Qian started to tremble as she concentrated with pursed lips to cast [Bleed]. With it, she finally managed to penetrate the [Mana Shield], causing a substantial amount of damage – 1312!

Thousand Suns Over Snowy Lands was shocked to see this. Caught off-guard, she moved forward a few steps, barely missing an ambush attack from the back by Yue Wei Liang. At the same time, she cried astonished, “Qing Qian, you joined Zhan Long?!”

Yue Qing Qian carried her dagger and burst forth once again, and the corner of her mouth slightly curled, “About that...wait until this battle is over then we’ll talk about it. Sister Thousand Suns, I’m gonna kill you now...:”

Thousand Suns Over Snowy Lands laughed, “You brat, you can try!”

.....

“Peng!”

Rushing forward with all my strength, I collided against a group of people. Then, while Thousand Suns Over Snowy Lands was still distracted by the assassin, I dashed forward 20 meters. At the same, I activated my [Shield of the Crimson Dragon] to endure all kinds of attacks and at the same time punched the earth. “Pa” [Binding Chain] burst forth from the ground, binding Thousand Suns Over Snowy Lands’ legs.

“Ahh?!” Thousand Suns Over Snowy Lands looked in my direction with astonishment, “Oh, Xiao Yao Zi Zai also came...I’m so dead...”

Not far away, Ageless Beauty lifted her dagger as she ground her teeth and commanded loudly, “Quickly, all healers focus on healing Thousand Suns, don’t let her be killed!”

When my Purple Dawn Boots stomped on the ground, my body shot like an arrow towards Thousand Suns Over Snowy Lands. At the same time, I endured all kind of attacks from the surrounding players, pets and also suffered debuff effects such as slows. With my Frost Rain Sword raised, a golden hexagram with 4 circles on it appeared. I yelled loudly, “Matcha, use Phantom Ray Slash to support me, we’ll kill her together!”

“Shua!”

Frost Rain Sword slashed down, attacking 4 times consecutively. However, [Wrath of the Heroes] had at least 100 healers focused on healing Thousand Suns Over Snowy Lands. Unsurprisingly, she was back to full health after each hit since she had around 1500+ health left after attack, and each of my hits didn’t do that much more damage.

Behind me, the light of [Phantom Ray Slash] had come!

I used this opportunity to charge my skill; a green wind started to encircle my sword. At this moment, Thousand Suns Over Snowy Lands' beautiful face changed colors as she softly cried, "Not good...Xiao Yao Zi Zai's [Wind Blade], Guildmaster, I...."

Before she finished, [Wind Blade] and [Phantom Ray Slash] hit her almost at the same time, inflicting a huge, huge amount of damage –

"1987 ! "

"1224 ! "

.....

Assassination complete! A flash of light fleeted across as a cloth head guard dropped from Thousand Suns Over Snowy Lands. Taking a glance at it, it was a Purple-Tier equipment with 6% increase in magic attack. No wonder her magic attack was so powerful! Furthermore, Fox had directed the musketeer team to provide support fire. Because of that, the healers of [Wrath of the Heroes] did not dare to revive Thousand Suns Over Snowy Lands; she would die the moment she was revived and lose a level in vain.

I grabbed the cloth head guard and immediately headed back. In front of me, Yue Qing Qian was surrounded by [Pillars of fire and ice] and she only had 29% of her health left. Furthermore, she was constantly being slowed. She might not make it!

"Hua!"

I hurriedly rushed forward, unfolding my Icy Fire Cloak, blocking the attacks for Yue Qing Qian. I reached out and grabbed her waist with my left arm as I rushed forward, using my body to shield her from the blades attacking us. At the same time, I yelled loudly, "Darling Duck, focus on healing your Deputy Leader!"

Darling Duck cleverly nodded as she cast her two healing spells to heal Qing Qian back to full health. When her health was full, we had also got back to our frontline. As I loosened my hold on Yue Qing Qian, her small face was red to the ears. Yue Wei Liang also pulled back to join the group

since assassins were not suited to be in the frontlines; they were more suited for individual ambushes. Yue Qing Qian and Yue Wei Liang were both among the handful of Ba Huang City's top assassins, so naturally they'd understand this basic logic.

.....

"Damn!"

Tyrant of the Western Chu clenched his fist and furiously bellowed, "They...they actually managed to kill Thousand Suns Over Snowy Lands, damn... this is too...this is too arrogant, isn't it? Li Xiao Yao's [Zhan Long] was just established, how could they already have so many experts?! Aren't Yue Qing Qian and Yue Wei Liang [Prague]'s Deputy leaders? Why would they appear in Zhan Long? Motherfucker, how can this be..."

Ageless Beauty lifted her dagger and said, "Ah Ying, don't be angry, we still have a chance. Let the long range group bombard their frontline, we should first kill those knights and monks. We have a high chance of winning since larger numbers definitely gives us an advantage over them!"

"Yeah!"

Tyrant of the Western Chu held his sword and yelled furiously, "Kill! Long range group bombard them indiscriminately, we must break their defense line in under 5 minutes! Crush them, avenge Flagbearer Thousand Suns Over Snowy Lands' death!"

In the air, all different colors of magic attack descended while the rumbling sound of explosions echoed endlessly!

"Ugh..."

On [Zhan Long]'s defense line, a whole row of knights and monks. More than 10+ people were killed in a flash, it was a tragedy!

"Matcha, raise your shield..." I bit out as I slashed my sword.

Matcha nodded. Spreading her arms, a ball of energy condensed on her snow white finger tips. Next, a holy shield materialised in front of her. It

was indeed the Phantom Knight's skill, [Phantom Holy Shield]. The magic attacks that fell on the holy shield had their damage reduced by at least 70%. This [Phantom Holy Shield]'s magic resistance was really shocking. It really put everyone at ease. At least with Matcha on the defensive line, we would not be easily injured or torn to shreds by magic attacks.

.....

Watching this situation, Tyrant of the Western Chu smiled menacingly, "Haha, they are just no more than that...[Zhan Long], this guild, today I will wipe you away from the map of Ba Huang City. I shall beat up all of you below-average players back to level one!

Ageless Beauty' giggled happily, "Yeah yeah, Li Xiao Yao that brat.. hee hee..."

Grinding my teeth, I looked at the two people standing at a distance. My sword flung down, killing a swordsman as I angrily answered them in kind, "You pair of whores!"

Matcha let out a light laugh, "Boss, you also use dirty words..."

Me:"..."

.....

Amongst the crowd of [Wrath of the Heroes], standing at the back of Tyrant of the Western Chu, Piggy fired a shot and touched his burning hot gun barrel. His face was rather serious as he quietly said, "Guildmaster, don't be too happy yet. We're looking at 300 people at most. This is not all of Xiao Yao's strength; he definitely still has a trump card up his sleeve. We shouldn't lower our guard..."

"Trump card?" Tyrant of the Western Chu couldn't help but laugh. "Li Xiao Yao, that kind of trash... what trump card could he possibly have?"

Piggy quickly glanced through the crowd, "[Zhan Long] still has many core players that have not made an appearance yet. General Li Mu, General Wang Jian, General Bai Qi, Old K and Cang Lei, they all have destructive and powerful attacks..."

Chapter 201: Natural War Machine

“What?!”

Once Tyrant of Western Chu heard this, he became flustered while holding onto his sword, “Where...where did that group of people go to? The General Family? Hmph, they’re a group of losers... they shouldn’t be a threat to us, right?”

Piggy couldn’t help but laugh, “Losers? Guildmaster, if you really think the General family are losers then you are gravely mistaken. Although they lost at the Guild Prestige Battle, it was because their opponents were far too strong. [Flying Dragon] had hired [Vanguard]’s elite squad: the 13 Eagles and top ranking CBN players from both Fan Shu City and Jiu Li City. Even with that, they barely defeated [Valiant Bravery]. Now... [Valiant Bravery]’s elite group has joined together with Xiao Yao Zi Zai, Yue Qing Qian and Yue Wei Liang are experts in the Ba Huang City’s rankings. They are already out for vengeance with a burning fury, do you really think [Zhan Long]’s strength is less than [Valiant Bravery]?”

Tyrant of Western Chu’s face became pale as he realized the gravity of the situation. But with a slight chuckle, he said, “It shouldn’t be as bad as you make it out to be, after all...after all, we have nearly 1400 people, a number that is 3 or 4 times bigger than theirs. Even if each [Zhan Long] member becomes like Spartans, we’ll still win...”

Piggy took a deep breath: “We’ll have to fight with our full strength or we’ll lose for sure!”

Tyrant of Western Chu did not speak, the only thing he could do was shudder.

.....

“Kill!”

Finally, a roar came from the other side of the hill. I’ve been looking forward to hear this sound for ages. A dense group of elite heavy armor players came rushing at us from the hillside, with General Li Mu and

General Wang Jian leading in the front. Their golden titles had Ba Huang City's ranked 5th and 10th over their heads, it was far too obvious!

"Crap, they really came!" Piggy's eyes looked like they were going to pop out from his head.

Tyrant of Western Chu's face ashened but he raised his sword up into the air and commanded out loud, "Sixth group, seventh group, rush forward to block them!"

Immediately, two, hundred man squads leapt forward to meet their enemies. A group of monks pounded their shields onto the ground and crouched down under the shields. It was a typical defensive formation.

"Keng!"

General Li Mu lowered his body and knocked a shield away. At the same time, golden hexagrams appeared on his sword and he easily killed a Lv 49 knight; the difference in stats was way too large and the opponent had no chance of blocking him!

Old K was also at the forefront, wielding his beloved Haunted Twin Blade Battle Axe. With a roar, a strong wind picked up as he snarled and whirled his battle-axe. He was like a killer windmill as it swirled out; [Whirlwind Slash]'s AOE killing ability was truly too powerful. Combined with the damage of the Haunted Twin Blade Battle Axe, he was basically invincible. Completely engulfing the vanguard of [Wrath of the Heroes], he dealt astonishing amounts of damage—

"1734 ! "

"1527 ! "

"1839 ! "

.....

He had split open a path by his own might!

Wang Jian stabbed an archer while saying, "My god, Old K's attack power has no limit! What kind of S ranked skill is [Whirlwind Slash] supposed to be? It should be a SSS ranked skill instead..."

General Li Mu couldn't help but laugh, "Don't think about it too much, the current SSS and SS ranked skills are all passive skills. The real SSS ranked attack skills will surely be super terrifying. Just you wait, there might be an SSS rank skill that could split apart a city with just one sword slash!"

"Pa!"

A arrow stunned Li Mu as a group of archers growled. "Fire! Kill that idiot Li Mu!"

"Hong!"

Old K suddenly lowered his body as his feet were surrounding by a raging fire. With a "Bang", he leapt from the ground into the sky and snarled as he activated [Savage Jump Slash]!

"Boom!"

The Haunted Twin Blade Battle Axe shone with a light that signified an AOE skill and immediately tearing the 5 archers apart! Rays of white light rose continuously, wherever Old K passed by, not even a single blade of grass was left standing.

.....

"Fuck..."

Tyrant of Western Chu clenched his sword tightly, his eyes full of anger, "That...that Hero Ran Min (Old K), wasn't he a noob? How did he... how did he become so strong and reach Lv 54 so quickly? Isn't the leveling speed too fast?"

Piggy nodded, "Yes, Ran Min is part of Zhan Long's studio; he's also one of Xiao Yao Zi Zai's closest friends in real life. Did you not see this coming? Xiao Yao Zi Zai has trained people like him and Ran Min in the future will definitely be one of our biggest enemies. However...he's all brawns with limited intelligence. He rushes way too far, should we order the mages to focus and kill him?"

"Yea!" Ageless Beauty nodded.

The next moment, countless Mages locked onto Old K!

“Roar!”

Old K activated [Whirlwind Slash] once more with his Haunted Twin Blade Battle Axe. Followed by a [Savage Jump Slash], he once again killed close to 30 people before a raging flame surrounded him, killing him!

“Pada...”

Old K fell to the ground and his Haunted Twin Blade Battle Axe dropped. The members of [Wrath of the Heroes] almost died from their greed, each and every one of them rushing over!

“Scram!”

Li Mu arrived first, his sword pushing back the enemies. Grabbing the Haunted Twin Blade Battle Axe, he placed it into his inventory. In the guild chat, he said, “Old K, I picked up your battle-axe so don’t worry, I’ll give it back to you later!”

.....

“Fuck!”

I clenched my fist and flung back a berserker while looking off at the distant fighting.

Matcha’s red lips gently laughed, “Eh... Old K already died...”

“I was expecting something like this to happen. Say no more...”

“Uu... however their attacks are intense. Hehe, these are Zhan Long’s elites. Having these troops, Zhan Long will be able to settle down in Ba Huang City! Also, even though Old K got killed, with his 2 skills, he managed to kill 50 people, even more than you! It was worth it...”

With tears flowing, I said: “Damn, if I had two S Rank AOE skills, I wouldn’t be so miserable...”

“Hoho... Boss you are so cute~~”

.....

Within a short 5 minutes, [Wrath of the Heroes]’s two groups were

eliminated. They couldn't defend against General Li Mu and his group's attacks. Tyrant of Western Chu's face grew ugly as he furiously shouted: "Mother fucker, Group 1,2,3 and 4 charge together! I don't believe we can't block their measly 100 heavy armored players! Damn it!"

"Boss, relax..."Piggy continued to plead with him.

Under the command of Ageless Beauty, nearly 300 people went to defend against Zhan Long's melee group's attacks. With this, the pressure on our side had lessened. Then, Yue Qing Qian, Wolf and their assassin group started ambushing enemy troops everywhere. They would use [Bleed] and [Backstab] before quickly Stealth themselves again; they were extremely effective in killing leather and cloth armored groups to the point where the enemy's healers were so few that most [Wrath of the Heros] players couldn't expect a heal anymore.

.....

"Hua!"

Wielding his axe, Dong Cheng Lei rushed forward. To his front were shielded arrays, consisting of Knights and Monks, but Dong Cheng Lei did not halt his steps and headed straight forward.

"Crap! What's this Cang Lei doing?", General Li Mu said with his eyes open wide.

General Wang Jian shook his head and said:"I... I don't know what he is thinking..."

The next moment, with a "Peng", Cang Lei's knocked into the shield formation and blew away 7 Knights and Monks by more than 10 meters. This was a innate super strength!

"Damn!"

General Li Mu's lower jaw dropped. "Is that... is that even possible? This... this kid is literally a Natural War Machine! Brothers Charge! Destroy these players from [Wrath of the Heroes]!"

Like broken bamboo, [Wrath of the Heroes]'s cooperation and player

ability were both severely inferior to Zhan Long's. They couldn't maintain their situation for long and steadily retreated.

.....

Holding my Frost Rain Sword with jubilation, I shouted, "It's time to counterattack!"

Our group of Archers, Mages and other classes rushed in while Matcha and I led the counterattack. After being sandwiched, [Wrath of the Heroes]'s people lost their motivation and got slaughtered one by one. They could barely defend against our barrage of attacks.

Like a typhoon blowing leaves away, within 30 minutes, out of [Wrath of the Heroes]'s 1200+ people, only 100 or so were left. Unfortunately for them, [Zhan Long] still had over two hundred players still standing. An overwhelming advantage!

"Shua shua shua..."

In a distance, members from [Wrath of the Heroes] were constantly reviving!

.....

"Guildmaster!", General Li Mu called out while holding his longsword stained with blood. Happily, he said, "Members of [Wrath of the Heroes] are reluctant to give up and they keep on reviving to fight with us. What should we do?"

I freed my sword from an archer's chest and kicked away his corpse, shouting, "Continue killing them without mercy! [Wrath of the Heroes] tried to bully us. Today, let's let them taste despair! Any revived players from [Wrath of the Heroes] will be killed, leave no one alive!"

General Wang Jian laughed, "So ruthless . I love it!"

.....

"Sha Sha..... "

Battle boots stepping on the lush grass, I approached the opposite commanding position. Behind me was the beautiful Matcha. Looking at

me, she cheerfully said. “Boss, do you finally want to take down their leader?”

“Yes. If I don’t get Liu Ying, it’s not enough to make them understand!”

“Alright. I will coordinate with you!”

“Ok !”

Wielding my sword I rushed forwards with high speed, running straight towards Tyrant of Western Chu. Beside him were over ten players guarding him. When Ageless Beauty saw me heading towards him, her face turned green. “Xiao Yao is coming! Kill him quickly!

“Shua!”

“MISS ! ”

Dodging a swordsman’s attack, I activated the [Shield of the Crimson Dragon] and used [Haste] as I charged forward!

Tyrant of Western Chu also had a strong bloodlust and didn’t hide behind his soldiers. Holding his longsword, he rushed forward and yelled, “Li Xiao Yao! Let’s have a showdown !

Unfortunately, he was mistaken. I was no longer the little swordsman from before. My speed of advancement exceeded his imagination while Western Chu was stuck at the level of a RMB warrior.

TL: Someone who uses money to get better

.....

Turning with my feet, I avoided Liu Ying’s [Combo]. Then, Frost Rain Sword’s [Fierce Ice Blade] pierced his chest from behind. With another flick of the wrist, I used a [Combo], and insta-killed him!

My back trembled and I was stunned. It was Ageless Beauty’s attack!

In the air, a cold sword slashed downwards, killing her!

“Uu.....”

Ageless Beauty slowly fell to her knees and died.

Hefting her sword, Matcha's lips quirked: "Hmph, sneakily attacking my boss, you're just asking to be killed....."

Chapter 202: Resolving Grudges

In less than an hour, the battle drew to a close as [Zhan Long] reigned supreme. Soon enough, there was no longer a living player from [Wrath of the Heroes] in the valley.

“Keng!”

With my sword on a rock, I looked at the ground that was full of items and said, “[Wrath of the Heroes] is so friendly. They didn’t come here for revenge but to give us equipment!”

Still wielding his sword, Li Mu sat down on a green colored rock and gleefully commented, “Boss, this battle has been fought enjoyably and perfectly. After examining the outcome, do you think [Zhan Long]’s fighting strength to be decent?”

I nodded, “Ah, there is almost no obvious problems aside from Old K dying too early.”

Yue Qing Qian gently came over with a dagger in her hand and smiled, “Brother Xiao Yao, what shall we do now? All the players from [Wrath of the Heroes] are already dead. Should we camp them or leave?”

I pondered for a while then said, “50% of our people should go continue leveling and earn experience for the guild. The ones remaining will camp the corpses here. All Assassins should activate their [Stealth] and exterminate those who resurrect. Since Liu Ying dared to bring troops here then we should warmly entertain him. Immediately kill the Healers to prevent them from using [Revive]. Yue Qing Qian, you shall manage this matter; you are the deputy leader.”

Yue Qing Qian nodded with a smile, “Oh, I’m an expert when it comes to these kinds of things!”

.....

“Also”

“What else?” The beautiful young girl tilted her head as she looked at me, her face full of smiles.

Clenching my fist, I responded, "Qing Qian, I want you to initiate a talk with Thousand Suns. She is a great Mage whom I am very interested in. Tell her that [Zhan Long] is sincerely inviting her to join us. We are in need of first class Mages, especially since Dong Cheng Yue hasn't joined us yet. Simple is Jian Feng Han's sister while Tornado is an elder of [Prague]. We won't be able to poach them, then only Thousand Suns will qualify. Tell her that [Zhan Long] is in need of her skills and is sincerely extending our invitation towards her."

Qing Qian pursed her lips in thought. After a while, she looked up at me and smiled sheepishly, "Brother Xiao Yao, if I get Thousand Suns to join [Zhan Long], what will you reward me?"

Startled, I laughed, "Whatever Qing Qian wants as a reward, I will give it to you."

"Well, Brother Xiao Yao shall treat me to a meal."

I stuck out my lips while patting my chest, "Sure, it won't be that hard. Here I thought it'd be a request to destroy 3 monasteries or sacrifice my life or something. I was worrying for no reason..."

Yue Qing Qian's cheeks started to blush, "Brother Xiao Yao, you big rascal..."

Li Mu chortled, "Damn, Qing Qian, If only I was 7 or 8 years younger, I would have crazily went after a girl like you. "

Matcha interrupted, "Looks like it's never going to happen; Qing Qian would never fall for you. Your specs are too bad."

Li Mu, becoming teary eyed, said: "You should not say things like that..."

.....

I used [Camouflage] while holding my sword as I stood in the grass. I was not in a rush to level up as I observed the surrounding. It's about time for [Wrath of the Heroes] come back attack after being wiped out.

Qing Qian's enchanting figure sat beside me on the grass and smilingly asked, "Brother Xiao Yao, will we just wait here?"

“Well, it’s going to be soon...”

“What’s going to happen soon?”

“They will resurrect soon.”

“Oh.”

In the guild chat, I whispered, “Everyone, be alert! They will probably start resurrecting now. After that, they will have half health points and mana so don’t worry too much. Recall all the groups leveling outside and get ready to kill with them. Kill them one more time. Let’s have them gift us more equipment. We will make Tyrant of the Western Chu cry to death!”

The others laughed.

Sure enough, they started resurrecting after a few minutes!

“Swoosh, swoosh, swoosh.”

After a whole beam of lights came from the resurrections, I quickly took my Frost Rain Sword as golden hexagrams appeared on the edge of my sword. My [Combo] killed 3 players simultaneously. At the same time, I let loose Baby Bobo to let him wreak havoc everywhere too.

“Hurry, tighten our defense!” Piggy shouted amidst the crowd.

Unfortunately, his voice wasn’t heard. Matcha’s [Phantom Ray Slash] fell down with a “Boom!” – directly killing a group of Archers who had not yet drank their health potions. In the rear, Old K brandished his battleaxe and with a ferocious roar; he activated his [Whirlwind Slash] and swept through the crowd of players. Wang Jian and Gentle Touch followed Old K to protect him. Darling Duck, on the other hand, brought with her several Assassins to pass through the encirclement and struck towards the core using the path created by Old K’s previous engagement. This will be enough to completely slaughter them!

“Swoosh.”

In the middle of the crowd, Yue Qing Qian and Yue Wei Liang exhibited their dodging ability as their daggers unceasingly danced. One after

another, Archers and Healers fell. They were like two beautiful butterflies killing people wherever they passed!

Little Wolf's fighting style was more violent. He simultaneously executed [Bleed] and [Gouge] along with a normal attack, slaughtering heavy armored players. A stylish way to murder.

.....

With [Zhan Long]'s 300+ members attacking together, the reviving enemies were immediately eradicated. Even though [Wrath of the Heroes] 700+ player revived at the same time, they were reduced to nothing in 10 minutes.

Strawberry Matcha led a few dozen people to clean up the field. After killing 21 players, I went back to squat on a thick patch of grass and turned invisible. Yue Qing Qian beside me giggled as she said my tactic was too dreadful.

I asked, "Yue Qing Qian, about Thousand Suns's matter, is it already handled?"

Qing Qian tilted her head and said, "Sister Thousand Suns already promised me to leave [Wrath of the Heroes]. She even had a quarrel with Tyrant of Western Chu last evening..."

"Oh, what were they arguing about?"

Yue Qing Qian blinked, "Actually, I myself am not too sure. However, I heard that Tyrant of Western Chu demanded sister Thousand Suns to travel to Hangzhou but she rejected him. In return, he demoted her from being an elder of the guild to a flag bearer. Brother Xiao Yao, why did Tyrant of Western Chu ask sister Thousand Suns to go to Hangzhou?"

I gaze at her beautiful star-like eyes, I couldn't help but smile, "Nothing much. They would just lay down together and have a chat about life..."

"Ugh, shameless. Can we get Thousand Suns now?"

"Yes, her coordinates are (7423,1287). We'll go there and protect her resurrection spot!"

“Alright!”

I moved out from the patch of grass as I carried my sword. Accompanied by the beautiful twins, Yue Qing Qian and Yue Wei Liang, we arrived together at the coordinates mentioned by Qing Qian. Immediately sheathing my sword and placing a hand on my chest, I beamed as I said, “Beautiful Thousand Suns, please resurrect now. It would be an honor for us to welcome you to join [Zhan Long]!”

“Shua!”

A white light rose as Thousand Suns came back to life. Her admirable stature stood there and she instantly activated [Mana Shield] for fear of my sword killing her.

.....

“Protect Brother Xiao Yao!”

Behind me, Dong Cheng Lei lifted his axe as he wildly charged towards us along with some few Berserkers and roared furiously, “Slaughter this [Wrath of the Heroes] chick, protect Brother Xiao Yao!”

I quickly cross my arms and bellow, “Ah Lei, stop! From now on, Thousand Suns will be on our side. She is part of [Zhan Long]!”

“Ah?” Gentle Touch was rather anxious, “Boss, that is not possible. She has killed at least 20+ of our people. Our brothers loss of 1 Lv cannot be in vain? We must kill her!”

I shook my head, “Before she followed her Guild Master’s command and killed many of our brothers. That is a proof of the beautiful Thousand Suns’ strength. Such a talented person is qualified to join [Zhan Long], am I wrong?”

“That ... guess it’s fine ... but our brother’s deaths are in vain”

.....

I gave Thousand Suns a look, pointed at the emblem on her arm and said, “The beautiful Thousand Suns, you can now remove that. It isn’t worth staying with [Wrath of the Heroes].”

Thousand Suns smiled and stretched her hand to remove the emblem and thereby leaving her guild. I invited her and in the next moment, she became a member of [Zhan Long]. I directly promoted her to team leader. For now, she is our most powerful Mage player.

Thousand Suns tilted her head while smiling and stared intently at Qing Qian, “Qing Qian, you owe me meals for a week. Sooner or later, I’ll come and get it from you!”

Yue Qing Qian giggled, “I don’t mind. I will go Brother Xiao Yao’s place to eat!”

Thousand Suns oogled me, “Guild Master Xiao Yao, I also want to have a meal with you...”

I smile, “Sure, whenever you accompany Qing Qian to visit Hangzhou! I will treat you guys and won’t be cheap, it will be meat! By the way, you sure gave me a ton of pain, how much is your magic attack?”

“Hehehe, 1977. Is it enough to be [Zhan Long]’s Mage?”

“It’s enough. You are now [Zhan Long]’s strongest Mage!”

“I heard Fan Shu City’s number 1 Mage Cang Yue’s maximum magic damage is 2050. I’m not sure if it’s true though.”

“It should be true. Yesterday, she was bragging about how high her magic attack was. ”

“Wow, you really know her and Cang Tong.”

“But 2000+ magic damage is nothing. Jiu Li City’s Fang Ge Que’s magic damage already exceeded 2100. Now that’s scary. As of now, the number 1 staff is in his hands.”

“Well...”

.....

Zhan Long new recruit, Thousand Suns, would improve our guild’s Mage strength by a huge amount. A killer Mage like Thousand Suns is extremely rare and in team fights, she and Old K’s [Whirlwind Slash] would break apart anyone’s defense.

Splitting half of the team to level while the others kept camping the [Wrath of the Heros], we successfully eliminated another mass revival. After another two hours, no one revived anymore; looks like they gave up.

Finally, with a “Di!”, I received a message: Player [Tyrant of Western Chu] has applied to become your friend, confirm?

Confirm!

Quickly, Liu Ying sent out a message: “Li Xiao Yao, you win!”

I smiled and replied: “Huh, [Wrath of the Heroes]’ Guild Master, what happened? We only have about 400 people, is [Wrath of the Heroes] scared?”

Liu Ying: “Li Xiao Yao, this is not a solution to our problem. Why don’t we resolve our differences in real life!”

“How?”

“Tonight at 10, the school’s third cafeteria, second floor. Do you dare to come?”

“Why not?”

Chapter 203: Making Peace

10 PM.

As our group was walking down the campus avenue, I couldn't help but notice how Lin Wan Er's flawless white skin and t-shirt were illuminated by the silvery light from the street lamps. Carrying her purse, Dong Cheng Yue looked at me with worried eyes, "Xiao Yao, did you really set up a meeting with Li Ying at the 3rd cafeteria?"

I stretched my arms and nodded, "Hmm."

Lin Wan Er puckered her red lips, "[Zhan Long]'s clash with [Wrath of the Heroes] in Green Qilin Valley has been the talk of the game. Knowing Liu Ying's personality, won't he act against you in school?"

I shook my head, "He definitely won't!"

"How are you so sure? ?"

"Because Liu Ying is actually an intelligent guy. After what happened last time, he knows that his people are no match for me. So in this offline meeting, he must want to settle the feud between [Zhan Long] and [Wrath of the Heroes]."

"Well, let's hope so."

I looked at the beautiful Miss and couldn't help but laugh, "Be at ease Wan Er, I can protect the two of you if anything happens. In my eyes, the power level of Liu Ying's group is barely 5."

Wan Er burst into laughter and turned her beautiful eyes towards me, "Okay. Besides Dong Cheng and my safety will be in your hands. And don't forget we are here to eat so try not to fight."

"Okay!"

.....

In the 3rd cafeteria, on the 2nd floor.

I brought Wan Er and Dong Cheng upstairs. Inside the dining area, a group of 7 people were there. The most impressive looking amongst them

was the Armani dressed Liu Ying whose face looked a bit ashen.

We chose a table by the window. After the two beauties sat down, I raised my hand, “Waiter, order!”

A waitress came over and handed the menu over to us. I picked a few stir-fried dishes and returned it to her.

“Shua, shua.”

Liu Ying and his people stood up and walked over step by step. The waitress, feeling the situation taking a turn for the worse, grasped the menu and said, “Please wait a moment, I’ll take your order now.”

“Bang!”

Liu Ying sat down to a table next to ours. His eyes shone indifferently as he looked at me, “Li Xiao Yao, what? Don’t you have anything to say? Even now, your people in Green Qilin Valley are still camping the 300+ members of [Wrath of the Heroes]. You find it interesting? No one is leveling now. In the end, it is advantageous to [Vanguard], [Flying Dragon] and [Prague], those big guilds..”

With a wave of my hand, I replied while smiling, “Not a problem, only 40% of Zhan Long is currently camping the corpses of your men. The others are leveling up. It will not affect the guild’s progress nor will it deter everyone’s leveling speed.”

Liu Ying pounded his fist on the table and yelled viciously, “Li Xiao Yao, what do you want?”

I looked at him and lightly said, “It’s not what I want but rather what do you, Tyrant of the Western Chu wants. We from [Zhan Long] were only leveling in Green Qilin Valley but wasn’t it you, your [Wrath of the Heroes], that launched an unprovoked attack on us? Wasn’t it you, Liu Ying, who gathered 1300+ people with the desire to chase us out of the valley? Since the matter unfolded this way, you must endure the cost.”

“Shit!”

Liu Ying growled and stared at me to the point where his eyes were

about to pop. It seemed like he was going to eat me alive. However, I rolled up my sleeves and which meant that I wasn't afraid of a fight. Actually, I would be quite glad to teach an arrogant bunch like them.

"Okay!" Liu Ying gritted his teeth and said, "This affair should be settled no matter what.... [Wrath of the Heroes] has been too headstrong. I will take responsibility. We shouldn't have tried to drive you away and engaged in battle nor should we have attacked you three times in the wilderness. Because of those incidents, I'm apologizing to you!"

With that, Liu Ying took out a bottle of wine and poured out two cups. One was given to me and he said, "This wine is my, Liu Ying's, apology to you, Li Xiao Yao. Starting from now, we shall no longer interfere with each other's business."

I sneered, "You have spilled wine on me before..."

Liu Ying's face turned green, "What? You want to spill wine on me? Don't you dare forget who I am!"

"Is that attitude of yours making amends?"

Liu Ying clenched his teeth and puffed his chest. Closing his eyes, he said, "Ok, you can spill it. Back then, when I spilled my wine on you, I should have thought of this day."

My arm flicked and the red wine shot out like a sword and with a "Pa", splashed over Liu Ying's face.

Liu Ying opened his eyes as he started spitting. His white Armani shirt was stained red but he didn't care, he smiled instead, "Damn, I found out that I am starting to appreciate you as a person. You really did pour your wine on me."

I replied, "Who do you think you are, why wouldn't I dare."

.....

Liu Ying raised his glass, finished it in one gulp and said, "Let this wine be the solution to our thousand enmities and forget the grudges between us. I admit, in the beginning I was opposed to you. Mainly because I

wanted to ...”

As he was talking, he glanced at Lin Wan Er. Suddenly, Wan Er gave him an evil stare but remained silent.

Feeling embarrassed, Liu Ying coughed and continued, “Truth be told, ever since Lin Wan Er entered the school, I have liked the beautiful her. Even now, I feel the same. It is in my nature to get my hands on a woman I like, but Lin Wan Er didn’t even acknowledge me, which has been beyond my expectations.”

The corners of Lin Wan Er’s lips curved, revealing a refreshing smile as she joined the conversation, “You’re the kind of person that can only woo naive little girls.....”

Liu Ying laughed as he responded, “I see. I acknowledge that the Lin Wan Er cannot view me as her equal. But I would have never thought that you would fall to Li Xiao Yao’s level...”

Lin Wan Er’s cheeks flushed red and her hand formed a fist, “What did you say?! Li Xiao Yao... What about him?”

Liu Ying countered, “You know, this guy doesn’t have any money and is more shameless than me. He’s gotten himself into trouble with various big forces in Ba Huang City and when I spilled my wine over him, he didn’t dare say anything. I figured that you would never fall for someone like him, but it turns out that you have been unceasingly supporting him.... It seems that Liu Hua University’s finest beauty is in love with Li Xiao Yao!”

Her cheeks becoming more flustered, Lin Wan Er retorted, “Shut up! Don’t talk anymore!”

I glared at Liu Ying, “Shut up or else I’ll order Yue Qing Qian to have people guard your corpses for three days and three nights!”

Liu Ying swiftly excused himself, “Don’t, pretend I didn’t say anything.”

.....

At this time, a person came walking up from downstairs. It was Xu Yue,

who seemed to be much older than a 20 year old sophomore with her thick makeup. After arriving, she glanced at Lin Wan Er and Dong Cheng Yue with dismay. She then grabbed Liu Ying by the arm and asked, "My dear, when are we going to Suhe Bar?"

Liu Ying chuckled as he wrapped his hand around Xu Yue's hips and said, "Wait, don't you see I'm negotiating with [Zhan Long]'s leader?"

Xu Yue nestled in his arms and sweetly said, "Hehee, then I will wait."

.....

I looked at them and whispered, "A person's morals drops every day."

Lin Wan Er said in a low voice, "Those are the kind of people you're talking about."

Dong Cheng Yue lightly giggled, "It's just that Liu Ying and you come from different worlds."

I didn't reply.

Liu Ying had been listening and snickered, "The beautiful Dong Cheng Yue is right. Me and Li Xiao Yao are from different worlds but it cannot hinder us from becoming friends, right?"

I frowned, "What are you talking about? You got scared from the beating you received in Green Qilin Valley. Now you are trying for peace since you lost...."

The sound of Liu Ying gritting his teeth could be heard, "Damn. Say what you want to say. I'll think that we're friends anyway."

Liu Ying added, while his hand was still on Xu Yue's hip, "Li Xiao Yao, I don't know what kind of person you are but I can tell you what kind I am. I'm a man who has seen much of this world. In my eyes, there is nothing money can't solve. Besides my looks aren't bad, so there will be no deficiency of women. As long as I, Liu Ying, desires someone, I will always get her. Moreover, a woman....."

Liu Ying smiled, "Women are very emotional creatures..... They will feel lonely, are vain and lose their reason. Some women want to be loved while

wanting other things. And I, Liu Ying, am very lucky because the women beside me belongs to the latter. I don't play with emotions, what is emotion anyways? We are just ordinary humans who can't afford to play!"

I nodded.

Lin Wan Er's pair of eyes stared at me, "Do you understand?"

I smiled, "If a person never has eaten pork, does that mean he doesn't know what a pig looks like?"

TL: Means that even though one has not experienced something, they can still understand it.

Dong Cheng Yue looked directly at Xu Yue and gave a provocative smile, "Xu Yue, just as what your man said, do you belong to the latter?"

Still burrowed in Liu Ying's arm, Xu Yue didn't answer. Her eyes showed no signs of any emotion. She only reached for Liu Ying's cheek and gave it a kiss, as if agreeing to what was just said.

.....

At this time, Liu Ying coughed and raised his hand, "Li Xiao Yao, now that we've talked. From now on, [Zhan Long] and [Wrath of the Heroes] will no longer be in each others path. Shouldn't the battle be stopped now?"

I nodded, "Well, looking at [Zhan Long]'s guild rank, there is no longer a point in wasting time on [Wrath of the Heroes]. I'll call Yue Qing Qian and order her to stop camping on your people's corpses. You must leave the Green Qilin Valley, as this area will be our main base. You people must never provoke us again or else [Zhan Long] will return the pain many times over!"

Liu Ying seriously accented, "I know. Aren't we friends now?"

I couldn't help but laugh as I crossed my arms across my chest and said to Liu Ying, "You know that we are from different worlds and are destined not to be friends. However, I hope that we won't be sworn enemies in the future. Liu Ying, I don't believe your words today, even if you believe them

yourself, I don't. Starting today, [Zhan Long] and [Wrath of the Heroes] will no longer be involved with each other. But if [Wrath of the Heroes] tries to interfere with [Zhan Long] again, I assure you that I'll hunt you down and you'll be the first one to be killed. I know that you know that I have the ability to erase [Wrath of the Heroes] from Ba Huang City!"

Liu Ying took a deep breath then nodded, "I get it. By the way, tonight will be the opening the new Suhe Bar. Wanna come with us and have fun?"

I, "...."

Lin Wan Er, "...."

Chapter 204: Ancient Tablet Unsealed

“I’ve never seen such a shameless person...” Dong Cheng Yue mumbled as she looked at Tyrant of The Western Chu’s shadow.

Lin Wan Er also nodded her head, “Yeah, he really has a thick skin. Li Xiao Yao is so much better than him...”

I immediately reached out and pulled Lin Wan Er’s arm, laughing softly, “Wan Er, you should bring me to the Su He Bar later since I’ve never been there before. I’m already 25 years old and I’m still single... I’d like to have a fateful meeting with someone in the bar if I can ...”

Lin Wan Er replied sourly, “Alright, count it as your win, you bastard. After dinner, big sister will bring you there...”

Dong Cheng Yue, “You’re joking right?”

Lin Wan Er and I replied in unison, “Of course!”

Dong Cheng Yue raised her fingers to her chin and looked at us while her beautiful eyes were full of disappointment, “I hate you both. I thought today I’ll really be able to have fun in a bar. Hmph, you just dashed my hopes away...”

I looked at the scenery outside the school window as I laughed, “Dong Cheng, Liu Hua University forbids students to drink or go to night attractions such as bars and nightclubs during school days. Do you really want your parents to be called?”

“Yes, of course. It’s been a long time since I’ve seen my dad and I miss him a little.... Brother Xiao Yao, how about we go to the Su He Bar together?”

“You have no morals! I certainly don’t want to meet Liu Ying and Xu Yue those two people again...”

.....

Early morning the next day.

I woke up in the morning around 8 AM. Glasses Tan Gu was playing

with his phone on the bed to opposite of the room. He stretched his body out and said, “Li Brat, did you know? The first person to attain a 3rd job advancement has appeared!”

“Who?” I asked as I squinted my eyes.

“It’s Jiu Li City’s Fang Ge Que. Che, he raised his levels with unbelievable speed. Yesterday night he succeeded with his 3rd job advancement, becoming the first player to attain a 3rd job in the whole server. He received an Emperor Tier Fan as a reward. They say that the fan is a magic type equipment and can increase the player’s magic attack by 12%. There is also a special attack option, what an awesome weapon! With this Fang Ge Que is really undefeatable...”

I stared blankly as I mumbled, “Fang Ge Que...”

“Yeah!”

Tang Gu nodded and said, “In other games previously, they say that there was a legend in the north and a hero in the south. They were talking about two of the most powerful guilds in the Chinese server, one is [Legend] in the north with Fang Ge Que as the Guild Master, while the other one is [Hero’s Mound] in the south, with Q-Sword as the Guild Master. This is something you must know. Oh right, are you really Xiao Yao Zi Zai? Did you establish the [Zhan Long] guild?”

I sit up right, “Is there another me?”

“Damn...” Tang Gu balked, “Even experts like Yue Qing Qian, Yue Wei Liang, General Li Mu, General Wang Jian and Thousand Suns are willing to be your subordinates?”

“No...” I shook my head and laughed, “They are my friends and they are helping me to turn [Zhan Long] into a powerful guild. You can’t say that they are my subordinates because I don’t monopolize the authority and order them around.”

“Isn’t it the same...?” Tang Gu chuckled.

I countered with my own question, “Glasses, how are you developing in Fan Shu City? Have you joined any guilds?”

“For now, I have joined a small guild. The Guild Master is kind of a sissy and he doesn’t have any ambitions so I am planning to join [Hero’s Mound]. How about giving me Wan Er’s number so that I could ask for her help to allow me to join [Hero’s Mound] easily? Dammit, my equipment and levels are not high enough to fulfill [Hero’s Mound] recruitment criteria. All of their recruitment criterias are too high...”

I glared at him and replied, “You just want Wan Er’s number right? Did you think I’m so easily fooled ? You idiot...”

Tang Gu rubbed his head as he laughed out loud, “You can even see through this. Actually I really want to join [Hero’s Mound] but their criterias are too high. Without an insider’s help, I’ll definitely never be able to join.”

“How high is [Hero’s Mound]’s criteria exactly?”

“[Hero’s Mound] just reached guild level 4, their capacity is 3000 people but it’s already almost completely full. There’s only 100 empty spots left, hence the criteria is high. You must be Lv 55 and above with at least 1 Purple Tier and 3 Gold Tier equipment. If you are a melee player, your physical attack must be at least 1900 and for magic attackers, their magic attack must be 1850 and above. The competition is too fierce...”

“Haha...” I couldn’t help but laugh bitterly, “Q-Sword is indeed amazing. Wouldn’t it be hard to have people joining with such a high criteria?”

“There’s no other way, [Hero’s Mound] is a highly reputable guild and it can be regarded as China’s number 2 guild in games. Other than [Legend], there are no other guilds that are comparable to [Hero’s Mound]. Even famous guilds such as [Vanguard], [House of Prestige], [Judgement] are second to [Hero’s Mound].”

“.....”

After chatting with Tang Gu about some of the game matters for a while, I immediately got up and bought something to eat. Then I logged online, thinking only about my guild affairs. After all, I’m the Guild Master, so I would need to be online long enough. Otherwise if new members join in and saw their Guild Master name in a gray color

constantly, it would greatly affect their morale.

“Shua!”

Appearing at Ba Huang City, I opened the Guild Management System and looked at the list of players online. Yue Qing Qian, Yue Wei Liang, Li Mu, Matcha, Wolf and the others were all there, even Thousand Suns who joined yesterday was also online. Moreover the guild level progress had reached 14% already, just 86% remaining before turning into a Lv 3 guild. When that moment comes, we can recruit 1000 more people. Only by having an army of 1000 people will we be able to take our first step to challenge [Flying Dragon] and [Vanguard]!

In the guild chat, I chirped happily, “Thank you everyone for all your hard work; the guild level is progressing well!”

Yue Qing Qian replied quickly, “Brother Xiao Yao come here and join us~”

Matcha also replied, “Qing Qian almost died missing you...”

I didn’t say anything

Wolf laughed out loud, “Brother Xiao Yao, I have good news. Yesterday, in the early hours of the morning, we found a Purple Tier boss in Green Qilin Valley and killed it. It dropped two Purple Tier and 1 Gold Tier equipment.”

Me: “That’s really good, is there anything else? What happened when I was not around?”

General Li Mu said, “In the morning around 7 AM, a 100-man group from [Flying Dragon] passed by Green Qilin Valley, but they didn’t break into any conflict with us. According to my speculation, Soaring Dragon is testing us to see what kind of attitude [Zhan Long] will have.”

General Wang Jian also quipped, “Guild Master, if [Flying Dragon] make a move against us, how are we going to respond? Do we strike back or surrender?”

I couldn’t help but laugh, “I’m not just a pretty face. Should [Flying

Dragon] attack us, we will strike them back immediately with full force! But if it's just a small skirmish that doesn't kill anyone, we should restrain ourselves if we can. We must become a Lv 3 guild as soon as possible because right now the guild's 300 person limit is holding us back. It may still be enough to fight against [Wrath of the Heroes], but it'll will not be enough to fight against [Flying Dragon].

Yue Qing Qian laughed lightly, "Brother Xiao Yao, don't worry too much. I have talked with Uncle Yan Zhao a few days ago. Recently [Prague] was fighting over training grounds with [Flying Dragon], somewhat fiercely too. Uncle Yan Zhao will help me by pinning down [Flying Dragon] for a few days; he said to count it as a parting gift for me and Wei Liang.

Feeling a little guilty, I asked, "Cough...we stole over 50+ players from [Prague]'s main forces, shouldn't uncle be angry?"

Yue Wei Liang giggled, "They say that on the night that my sister and I joined [Zhan Long], Uncle Yan Zhao gloomily went to a bar alone and drank two cases of beer. The next day he was rushed to the hospital due to alcohol poisoning..."

Me: "I have sinned..."

.....

Suddenly I felt a peculiar feeling from my back. The Ancient Tablet felt quite warm, almost to the point of scorching hot. I hurriedly took it down and looked at it. I noticed that the experience bar on top of the tablet was almost full – 99.9% filled! Woah, is the secret buried inside the Ancient Tablet finally going to be revealed to this world?!

With the experience from the past, I had to kill high leveled monsters in order to give experience to the Ancient Tablet. Yes, I've never thought that the experience had accumulated so much that it was already going to be unsealed. Then I should continue to train, anyway I had nothing much to do in the morning!

Going outside the city, I went straight towards Fire Stone Canyon, arriving about 30 minutes later. Following along the edge of Fire Stone

Canyon, I slipped inside and walked further into the depths of the canyon. I walked for around 10 minutes, avoiding various players who were already training there. As I entered a forest deep in the abyss, the number of people around me began to lessen. Finally, a high leveled monster appeared in front of me. It was a type of green colored poisonous snake that climbed between trees, its body almost as big as Ice Rats, around 1.5 meters in length. As its forked tongue slides in and out, it hissed menacingly. There are 7-12 snakes in every tree; they are extremely close together!

【Venomous Viper】: Level 61 Elite Monster, high attack power, low defense, low health.

TL Note: http://en.wikipedia.org/wiki/Trimeresurus_stejnegeri – Actual animal.

.....

“Keng!”

Pulling out my Frost Rain Sword, I rushed forward immediately. With me being Lv 58, killing a Lv 61 Elite Monster was as easy as one-two-three. Hacking here and there, it died within two strikes but my face was sprayed venom. The Venomous Viper’s attacking power was not fatal, but the poison was extremely troublesome, luckily I had [Heal] to heal myself, otherwise I would have to drink health potions into poverty!

After killing Venomous Vipers for about an hour, my experience has increased by 9%, but the Ancient Tablet was still on the verge of unsealing, with not even a sign of activity!

After killing for another hour, it was almost 12 noon!

“Di!”

My beautiful big boss sent me a message, “Li Xiao Yao, let’s eat lunch!”

“Okay!”

As I was preparing to return, I quickly finished another Venomous Viper with a shake of my arm. Suddenly, the Ancient Tablet on my back

started shaking. Moreover, countless bone inscriptions appeared on top of the Ancient Tablet as it broke into pieces in a blink of an eye. Falling totally apart, the countless pieces rose from the ground and formed a mist glowing with 7 colors around me. The next moment, a system announcement bell rung in my ears –

“Ding!”

System Notification: Congratulations, your【Ancient Tablet】has successfully merged with your body. You received an SS-ranked ancient martial arts skill -【Seven Star Fragments Slash】!

.....

SS-ranked!!

My brain turned blank for a moment, it was actually an SS-ranked skill, this is too awesome!

I hurriedly open my skills interface. There’s indeed a new skill glowing in a gold luster, an SS-ranked skill, it’s dazzle was incomparable to others. Dammit, after carrying the Ancient Tablet for almost half a month, I finally get to reap the benefits-

【Seven Star Fragments Slash】(SS-ranked): Condense the power of the 7 stars of Ursa Major and release the charge gathered in the sword. It will cause a substantial amount of AOE damage to targets in front. It also has the ability to break buildings that are unbreakable. At level one, it will consume 40 MP and will have a cooldown of 15 seconds!

TL Note: Ursa Major is one of the constellation in the skies.
http://en.wikipedia.org/wiki/Ursa_Major

.....

I’m on cloud nine!

It’s really an SS-ranked skill, moreover it’s a physical attacking skill! This [Seven Star Fragments Slash] is sufficient to have my strength soar through a whole new level!

I unleashed my skill and after a short moment of charging, a powerful

force welled up on my sword. I raised my Frost Rain Sword and pointed it to the sky. At that moment, 7 meteorites streaked across my blade, dispersing into a seven-colored flame. The flames surrounded my sword, encircling it before shooting forward!

“Bang!”

Dust scattered around. Almost 30 meters of effective attack distance, this was too awesome!

Chapter 205: New Allies

Looking at the Frost Rain Sword in my hands that was still ablaze with the luster of the seven color star fragments, the effect of [Seven Star Fragments Slash] had yet to end. Dammit, this move is too awesome, with an attacking distance of 30 meters and enveloping a width of 3 meters, this meant a total AOE attack of 72 square meters! It could be such a powerful attack if used against a group of people or monsters and it will definitely be effective in any situation!

I was filled with happiness as I watched there. Suddenly, a bell sound was heard. Another guild was founded in Ba Huang City –

“Ding!”

System Notification : Attention! Player 【Han Bei Song】used Guild Creation Tablet to create a guild. The name of the guild is [Crimson Contract] ! As for being Ba Huang City’s tenth player to create a guild, Han Bei Song receives Charm +2!

TL: Han Bei Song – Reciting over a frozen gravestone

.....

“ [Crimson Contract]? Han Bei Song? ” I mumbled softly. It seemed very familiar. Isn’t that the little studio that posted flyers on the electric pole in Hangzhou’s West Lake area? Damn! Why did a studio with such a bleak future set up a guild? However, this Han Bei Song was on Ba Huang City’s Top Ten Player Board so his founding of a guild isn’t very surprising...

At this moment, the Friend Notification updated that Cang Tong and Cang Yue went offline! I just remembered we were going to have lunch...

Quickly logging off and running towards the girls’ dorms, I found both beauties already waiting there. Lin Wan Er and Dong Cheng Yue were like a symbolic breathtaking landscape scene by the girls’ dorms and would always wait before the dorm for a few minutes before lunch.

At noon, at the 2nd cafeteria, we chose a seat near the window. The

scent of a few dishes drifted gently in the air as I got a filled bowl with rice and swept through the dishes! Lin Wan Er slowly savored her food while Dong Cheng Yue said that she was on a diet and didn't eat too much. This did, however, mean more food for me. As usual, Wan Er will be the one paying for the meal. The feeling of having someone rich paying for your meal all the time is indeed great!

.....

"It seems Ba Huang City has another new guild. It's called [Crimson Contract] or something, right?" Asked Wan Er as she batted her eyelashes.

"Yup." I raised my head and looked at her, saying, "The Guild Leader is Han Bei Song. He's from the West Lake District too. The Deputy Guild Leader, I think, is called Sheltering Guest. From what I feel, this guild doesn't have a bright future. The Guild Leader isn't ready to conquer Ba Huang City.

Wan Er couldn't stop smiling. Tilting her head and inspecting me closely, "Oh big hero Li! Do you think you can conquer Ba Huang City as well?"

"It's not like that, [Crimson Contract]'s Han Bei Song and Sheltering Guest posted flyers all around to draw attention from people. I don't want to comment too much on this..."

The beautiful Miss narrows her beautiful eyes and sweetly said, "Didn't you find Matcha using flyers as well?"

"Ummm..."

Dong Cheng Yue duly looked at her cell phone and said, "Well, it looks like this guild really doesn't have much of a future. Look, this is the post they uploaded..."

"What kind of post?"

"Look and see..."

Her cellphone moved in front of Lin Wan Er and me. The screen showed

an impressive display of a highlighted post, showing some complaints from the players in [Crimson Contract].

【Is there justice in Ba Huang City? (Player ID: Yin Yang Appears)】

Content: I am one of the players from [Crimson Contract] of Ba Huang City. 20 minutes ago, I was leveling with a group of 10 in Ba Huang Forest when a King Killer Bee appeared. It was a Lv 55 Purple Tier boss. We attacked it until it only had 17% health left but then a group of people ambushed us; immediately killing our group of 10 people. When we resurrected, the boss had already been killed, but we remembered that the group's team leader was from [Flying Dragon]. After bringing this matter up to [Flying Dragon], Soaring Dragon denied it, saying that this person was not from [Flying Dragon]. He even threatened us and said that a newly established guild like [Crimson Contract] should lay low in the beginning, otherwise [Flying Dragon] may take action to discipline us. I'd like to ask a question. [Flying Dragon], being one of the top 10 guilds, do you really have only this level of character and bearing? Let me tell you, we the [Crimson Contract] are not afraid of you, let's have a war!

.....

Following the post were a series of various responses, both sides almost started a war from comments–

【1st comment (Player Sheltering Guest)】: Keep calm, [Flying dragon] does that all the time.

【2nd comment (Player Fierce Tiger)】: Saying that [Flying Dragon] members stole your boss, bring out the evidence to prove it! Otherwise, you are just slandering our name, we won't let [Crimson Contract] off so easily!

.....

【12th comment (Player Soaring Dragon)】: Let's hope that this is just a misunderstanding. But if [Crimson Contract] is really trying to slander [Flying Dragon], then you will be sorry. Don't blame me if we won't be so courteous anymore!

.....

【57th comment (Player Sheltering Guest)】: Humph, Soaring Dragon has finally shown his true colors. Truly worthy of becoming [Flying Dragon]'s Guild Master. Just you wait until our Guild Master Han Bei Song logs on see what he has to say!

.....

【129th comment (Player Han Bei Song)] : Damn! So much nonsense the moment I logged online. Dammit, who says that we [Crimson Contract] are slandering others, who are the ones bullying our members? Damn you, write down your guild name and house address if you have the balls to do so! Just you wait, I will definitely gather my former subordinates and lead [Crimson Contract]'s thousands of brothers to your house to kneel in front of your family gate for a long time!

TL: To kneel in front of your family gate shows that Han Bei Song wanted to apologize.

.....

【241st comment (Player Yin Yang Appears)】: Damn, Guild Master where's your integrity...

【242nd comment (Player Sheltering Guest)】: So shameless, with a capital S!!

.....

Blinking, Dong Cheng Yue let out a sigh and laughed: "It seems as though Xiao Yao is right after all. Indeed, this guild's future prospects aren't too good. This Guild Master actually gave in to [Flying Dragon], such character..."

I held my fist and said, "Not necessarily. Being able to restrain themselves to this step shows that Han Bei Song is not your average Joe. I think [Zhan Long] should form an alliance with [Crimson Contract], after all we are fated to be [Flying Dragon]'s arch enemies. We should form an alliance in Ba Huang City and start by defeating [Flying Dragon] a couple times."

Lin Wan Er's dimples showed as she smiled, "Alright. I also feel that such a vulgar guild like [Crimson Contract] would actually rather suit [Zhan Long]. Although [Crimson Contract] may not become a super guild like [Vanguard] in the end, having a Guild Master like Han Bei Song who knows when to push or when to pull, he should be in the same league as those Guild Masters ranked in CBN Networks list. I support an alliance between [Zhan Long] and [Crimson Contract]; it shouldn't be something bad."

I nodded and laughed: "Alright. Then I'll listen to you, Missy!"

"Just try and call me Missy again!" Lin Wan Er stuck out her chest, slightly angry.

I laughed faintly: "Wan Er, eat more....."

Wan Er harrumphed, saying: "Fang Ge Que has already reached his 3rd job advancement, we'll also need to do our best. I'm level 59 and already at 87% experience. It should take me seven hours at most to level up to 60. How about you Xiao Yao?"

"I still need a little more to get to level 59. If only I didn't die once during the Guild Battle Challenge, I could be level 60 already now..."

"Yup, good luck!"

.....

In the afternoon, I went online!

Appearing in the Ba Huang City's forest, I summoned Baby Bobo and leaned against a pine tree as I opened the player list to look for player Han Bei Song. Sure enough, he was online, so I quickly added him as a friend and turned on the chat system-

"Haha, Xiao Yao Zi Zai?!" Han Bei Song spoke first: "You actually took the initiative to add me as a friend, seriously..... Hehe. Actually, I had long since wanted to make friends with you, but I was a bit embarrassed and scared you'd refuse. I am a man who is afraid of rejection....."

I said, "Then you are destined to remain single!"

Han Bei Song was surprised: “You have even realized this.....”

I laughed out loud and continued to joke with him, “I’ve heard that you are taking all 1000 members of [Crimson Contract] to Soaring Dragon’s house and kneel for a long time in front of his house entrance, this... this is not something a normal person could do...”

Han Bei Song was a little awkward; full of regret, he said, “What else can I do? We [Crimson Contract] are just a newly established guild of 100 people and including the outside contacts we have, we only have a little more than 300 people. We can only swallow our broken teeth with blood and endure. If we really fight, our 300+ players can barely count as a meal for [Flying Dragon].”

I laughed, “Don’t look down on yourselves, [Crimson Contract] is not as weak as you think. [Flying Dragon] is also not as strong as you think. A person like Soaring Dragon won’t be smiling for too long...”

Han Bei Song laughed softly and then tried asking, “Xiao Yao, your [Zhan Long]...yesterday you’ve just annihilated [Wrath of the Heroes]. That [Wrath of the Heroes] is known to have 3000+ connections to outside players, although they won’t all be able to log online at the same time, they would have at least 1500+ people right? [Zhan Long] was just a newly established guild, how could you annihilate a guild with far greater numbers than yours?”

“There’s a video of our fight with [Wrath of the Heroes] in the forums. You could take a look at it. They are definitely greater in numbers but [Wrath of the Heroes]’s quality is far lower than ours. Moreover, the cohesion and understanding between them just isn’t good enough, so their loss was not a surprise. Furthermore, [Zhan Long] had help from the elite General Family and with the addition of Deputy leaders Yue Qing Qian and Yue Wei Liang, what can [Wrath of the Heroes]’s lousy players do? Wait till [Zhan Long] rises to a level 3 guild and has 1000 players total with at least 700+ people online at any time. Then we’ll become even more powerful and even if it is [Flying Dragon], we will not be afraid!”

Han Bei Song stared blankly for a moment then couldn’t help but laugh,

“Okay...and here I thought all the guilds in Ba Huang City are like [Prague] who tried to preserve their position or like [Vanguard] who don’t bother to bicker with [Flying Dragon]. Or that everyone is just a bunch of cowards, watching [Flying Dragon] tyrannically abusing others and doesn’t dare even fart. Now that I look again, with [Zhan Long]’s appearance, Ba Huang City’s chaos might have just met its end!”

I laughed mildly, “Maybe there would be more chaos instead...”

Han Bei Song laughed knowingly: “Xiao Yao, have you ever thought about...”

I unhesitatingly said, “There’s no need to say so much nonsense, come to the bridge outside the North Gate of Ba Huang City, I’ll wait for you. Today is the day that [Zhan Long] and [Crimson Contract] form an alliance. We are comrades from today onwards!”

“Sure! This was just my intention!” Han Bei Song became extremely excited.

Chapter 206: A New Trial

Mid afternoon by the quiet North Gate bridge.

It was autumn; the maple leaves swirled as they danced with the breeze and gently fell on the clear waters. With a “Pa” sound, I sat atop the bridge’s white jade railings. My Frost Rain Sword glowed with a faint purple hue as I quietly waited.

After a few minutes, a huge group of people slowly walked towards me. They all had the same emblem on their shoulders, it was the crimson imprint, the kind that was used to seal contracts. A Swordsman with slightly long hair and a red cloak drooping behind him came forward. The corners of his mouth had a small smile –

Han Bei Song, Lv 57, Silver Swordsman

Main City: Ba Huang City

Guild: Crimson Contract

Position: Guild Master

.....

Just like me, Han Bei Song’s emblem glittered with a golden hue of a Guild Master. He reached out his hand and said with a smile, “Hello Li Xiao Yao. I am Han Bei Song, the Guild Master of [Crimson Contract] !”

I moved my hand to shake with his and said, “Yeah, from now on, we will be Ba Huang City’s first alliance. When any of us gets in a pinch, the other one must help out.”

“That’s how it should be!”

I opened the guild management window and clicked the alliance tab. A light shrouded Han Bei Song’s body as the alliance formed. In front of my eyes, the name color of all those [Crimson Contract] players that were standing behind Han Bei Song changed, indicating that they were now friendly players. This way, during fights, AOE attacks from either of us will not injure either of us.

The Lv 56 Barbarian, Sheltering Guest, who was behind Han Bei Song, started to laugh, “I never imagined that just after [Crimson Contract] had been established, we would be able to have such a formidable ally from the same city; [Zhan Long]!”

Another player frowned and scoffed, “Deputy Leader, [Zhan Long] was created only a day earlier than us and isn’t that much ahead. Do not belittle ourselves...”

Sheltering Guest replied, “You know nothing Xiao Si. Although we have founded our guild at almost the same time as [Zhan Long], they’re completely different from us. Since the start, Xiao Yao Zi Zai of Ba Huang City has been in conflict with [Vanguard], [Flying Dragon] and [Wrath of the Heroes]: those big guilds. He’s been fighting them until now and with the addition of General Family’s four core players, beautiful twins Yue Qing Qian and Yue Wei Liang and his own core members Old K, Wolf and some others, [Zhan Long] is strong, strong that they can deal with our [Crimson Contract] without any problems.”

I laughed, “The gap isn’t that great. I actually like [Crimson Contract] and hope that you guys continue to develop further and become powerful enough to form alliances with stronger guilds. Our two guilds have many adversaries in Ba Huang City and [Flying Dragon] really wants to utterly destroy us, so we must grow faster. Within half a month, [Zhan Long] will strive hard to become a Lv 4 guild with a 3000 members. You should also do the same.”

Han Bei Song nodded, “[Crimson Contract] will not let its allies down. We will endure this time and avoid any confrontations with [Flying Dragon] until we become a Lv 3 guild!”

“Good, that’s how it should be! Well then, I have some quests to finish so just continue with what you were going to do.”

“Okay!”

.....

I entered Ba Huang City with members of [Crimson Contract] still after at me. After resupplying some items, I went straight to the cold barren

lands of Dragon City. It's been awhile since I visited Dragon City so it was useful to see what that old Tomb Guardian Karl was doing. After rising to Lv 60 and changing to my 3rd job, I might have a new instructor and will no longer see that old guy in the future.

After a walk of 40 minutes I finally arrived at the cold barren lands of Dragon City.

At the foot of Dragon City, Beast Tamer Dalin's tent was in complete tatters and looked like he hadn't been living there for a long time. Even the number of flags on Dragon City's walls had lessened. If it was not because of those red colored battle flag fluttering in the wind, I might have thought that there has been a change in the city's ruler.

Drawing the Frost Rain Sword, I climbed along snowy mountain path step by step to reach Dragon City. However, I didn't enter the city itself. My teacher was not located there; instead, I went to the snowy ridges of the valley – a plain and barren land with various dragon bone fragments everywhere, gleaming duly.

In the distance, the stone cottage was still quietly standing there.

I held onto Frost Rain Sword just in case and slowly walked towards the door. I knocked on the stone door with my free hand “Da, da”, and then said, “Teacher, I'm back. Do you have anything for me to do?”

“Creeeeak.”

The stone door slowly opened as the Tomb Guardian of the Dragon Tomb came outside with his wheelchair. His face was very pale; he even had a fresh scar on the right side of his bony cheek. The cut was extremely deep and should have been from a very sharp weapon. The end part of his wheelchair had also been slashed off while there were sword marks on the tomb walls with streaks of dark blood on the floor.

“Teacher, what's going on? What happened?” I asked in surprise.

Karl's eyebrows furrowed and sighed, “Three days ago, a legion of Dark Dwarves attacked the cold barren land of Dragon City during the night. After a night of intense fighting, the Dark Dwarves retreated after they

suffered more than 3000 casualties.”

“The Dark Dwarves?” I paused.

“Yes!” Karl looked at me and lightly said, “The Dark Dwarf King dispatched an army of ten thousand Dark Dwarves to destroy Dragon City after you killed their Dark Dwarf Prince. Unfortunately for them, they Dragon City was stronger than they expected and Lord Lou Lin led us to strike back against the cruel Dark Dwarves. Heavenly King Ran Min also lent us his help in slaying one of the leaders of the Dark Dwarf army. 3000 Dark Dwarves died before they started fleeing towards the east of Fire Stone Canyon...”

I took a deep breath and inquired, “Our losses are not that great, right?”

“Not that great?”

Karl sneered and answered, “Even I and Captain Frost have been injured and you still think our losses weren’t heavy? We only had 1000 Dragon City soldiers and 178 of them perished in that battle. This time, we truly enraged the Dark Dwarf King and when the Dark Dwarves decide to attack again, their number would be in the hundreds of thousands instead of tens of thousands. At that time, Dragon City might become not more than a ruin!”

“That will absolutely not happen!” I clenched my fists and continued, “If Dragon City become history, then our school will be finished as well ...”

Karl responded, “Boy, your powers sure have grown. However, it’s still not enough to defend Dragon City. Do you know that deep within the Tomb of Dragon City lies a secret, a secret from the ancient times? It’s an incredible mission but I still cannot give it to you yet...”

I was stunned, “Teacher, why?”

“Because...” Karl sighed, “I do not know if you are strong enough to accomplish it. Also, I, Karl, am a detached person. I have never received any disciples other than you. Among the youths I saw, you are the one with the most potential. I don’t want to see you die.”

I tightened my fist even further, “Teacher, how can I prove that I am

capable of completing the ancient duty?"

Karl pondered for a while and finally answered, "Well then, to prove that you now possess the strength, you must first kill a dragon...."

My whole body trembled, "Kill ...kill a dragon?"

"Yes... " Karl said, "The Tomb of Dragon City is no longer at peace. Recently, a number of Evil Necromancers tried to resurrect the skeletal dragons. Although I was able to repel them, they were able to revive an Earth Dragon's corpse. Among the dragon family, the Earth Dragon is the weakest. Its body is just slightly larger than that of a large beast and its power slightly stronger. You must kill that summoned undead Earth Dragon. Only then will you have proven your strength. Are you willing to accept this trial?"

I frantically nodded, "Yes, I am!"

"Good!"

Karl smiled, "The resurrected Earth Dragon is an ominous beast. It's held captive within the Dragon City. Find Captain Frost and show her my letter, she will then guide you to where that dragon is. Remember, you must single-handedly slay that Earth Dragon. Otherwise, it will prove that you still do not have the ability to challenge the mystical secrets hidden within the depths of Dragon City!"

I nodded, "Yes, I understand. Please wait for my good news teacher!"

.....

Leaving the Tomb of Dragon City, I continued climbing through the freezing cold of the snowy mountain. At the peak, everything seemed to be covered in snow and ice. In addition, broken and rusted weapons were scattered all over the place. Obviously, the areas surrounding Dragon City were the battlegrounds of countless wars fought in the past. Weapons without a trace of magic were starting to crumble to pieces; perhaps this place was a battlefield in ancient times.

Arriving at Dragon City on foot, I called out, "Brothers above, please hang a rope down and let me climb up there!"

An NPC guard cocked his head to look at me. After discovering that there was a Dragon City emblem on my shoulder, he immediately let a rope fall. I grasped it, quickly ascended and agilely landed on the top of the wall. I faced the guard with a smile and said, "Brother, I have something to ask. Do you know where Captain Frost is?"

The guard was startled, then said, "Captain Frost is not on duty today. She is probably in her room?"

"I see... So where is Captain Frost's room?"

"This..." the guard looked at me. He hesitated for a while, and then said, "In the weapon district of the city, at the guard's hall of the second floor, her room should be the one closest to the glass sword... However, Frost is a woman after all. So...so in normal situations we wouldn't want to disturb her. You are a newcomer but you should probably still understand this."

I nodded, "Yeah, I know. I won't be rude."

"Good."

.....

In Dragon City's weapon district, black smoke rose from furnaces as the booming noise of metals being hammered unceasingly rang.

The guard's hall was where most of the elite soldiers were stationed; this was also the place where the King of Dragon City took his residence, except he had the entire main hall to himself. Climbing the ice-cold stone steps, I headed towards the second floor where a dazzling glass sword was suspended on a stand at the end of a hallway. Above it was a certain seal; it probably was a mighty weapon from ancient times but had its power sealed. Right next to the glass sword was a slightly luxurious room with a red door.

I approached the door, "Thump, thump" and knocked.

"Who is it?" Frost voice resounded.

I said in a low voice, "It's me. The Tomb Guardian of Dragon City."

“Oh, come in.”

“Yes!”

Pushing the door to enter, I witnessed an impressive pure white back. Frost was sitting on the bed, with her back to the door, while cleansing a long scar from an axe on her shoulder with cotton. If Captain Frost wasn't so skilled, I'm afraid she would have been cleaved in two.

With her back to me, Frost chuckled, “Boy, what business do you have with me?”

I presented Karl's letter and said, “My teacher, in order to train me, told me to kill the imprisoned Undead Earth Dragon. Only Captain Frost can take me there so I came to look for you.”

“What? You want to kill the Earth Dragon?”

Astonished, a half-covered Frost turned around. In front of me were half covered....

“Ah.....”

Frost, noticing her appearance, turned red and glared at me, “What? Why are you still not turning your back and closing the door? Haven't you seen enough yet?”

Chapter 207: Slaying the Earth Dragon

Holding the letter, Frost read it for a long time. She muttered something then slowly lifted her heavy crimson armor to equip it. But it accidentally chaffed her extensive injuries making her cry painfully.

I quietly stood there and asked, “Was the raid of the Dark Dwarves against Dragon City caused by the fact that I killed the Dark Dwarf Prince?”

Frost winced a smile turned to face me and said, “You’re wrong, the Dark Dwarves have always wanted to get their hands on Ba Huang City, Jiu Li City and Fan Shu City. The Dark Dwarves are a bunch of tribes that have abandoned their honor; they are just like a bunch of locusts gnawing away at the fruits of mankind’s labor. The war between the Dark Dwarves and Dragon City is something that cannot be avoided.”

I tightened my fist and said, “What kind of person injured you?”

Frost looked at me, stunned for a moment. Then she lowered her head, her beautiful eyes glancing at her shoulder, and said, “The dwarf king’s top general, Hei Rong Yan. He has a god-sent strength and owns the legendary battle axe “Ten-Way Destruction”. Even King Luo Lin’s sword wouldn’t be able to match Ten-Way Destruction’s attack. Fortunately, we had help from the ancient warrior Ran Min; If it weren’t for him, I wouldn’t have only had an arm injured but my life would probably be lost.”

I pursed my lips, carrying the Frost Rain Sword on my back, I calmly replied, “Frost, the next time the Dark Dwarves attack Dragon City, remember to call for me. No matter what you say, I’m still one of Dragon City’s warriors.”

“Sigh...”

Frost looked at me in shock, a pair of blue irises holding a thought that I couldn’t read. She suddenly giggled, stood upright and walked towards me. Patting me on the shoulder, she said, “Brat, you have not even reached the strength of an average dragon city warrior yet; you shouldn’t

be throwing your life away. Even though Hei Rong Yan was already killed, a small flagbearer under him could easily kill you. I also don't wish for you to die so easily...."

I stared blankly and then lowered my head. Frost smiled, "Those who dared to enter my room are not many. I didn't kill you, so that means I really value you, you know?"

I stood silently.

Frost then continued, "Karl, that old guy wants me to take you to kill the Undead Earth Dragon, did he tell you what you will do for the next step?"

I nodded, "Teacher Karl promised me that as long as I have the capability to kill the Undead Earth Dragon, he will let me explore the Ancient Mysterious Power inside the Dragon's Tomb. But I don't know what power it is though..."

"The Ancient Mysterious Power inside the Dragon's Tomb?" Frost suddenly tightened her fist, her oval-shaped face shrouded in frost. She muttered in a low voice, "Karl that old imbecile, did he want you to suicide?! Humph, the Ancient Mysterious Power inside the Dragon's Tomb, other than those strange playthings, what other things are there? Even Sword Saints died there, you know? And you're just a mere adventurer..."

I froze, "Frost, what exactly is the Ancient Mysterious Power inside the Dragon's Tomb?"

Frost stood quietly for a few seconds, then looked at me as she said, "Brat, from the day that you joined Dragon City, you have become one of my people. That's why I won't let you walk towards your death. Hmph, even if that old fart Karl wanted to hurt you intentionally, I won't let him get away with it! I, Frost, should be the one to decide my people's life or death!"

I thought for a while and said, "Could you still bring me to kill the Undead Earth Dragon...?"

"You really want to fight it?" Frost looked at me, astounded. She gaped

as she said, “That Earth Dragon, even though it can be said to be the weakest among all the Dragon species, it still has the ability to breathe dragon fire. If you make a single mistake, you could be roasted to ashes, what will you do then?”

I pulled out my Frost Rain Sword and laughed, “Relax, how could I be easily roasted? I’m not a kid that will never grow up, forever hiding behind you and seeking your protection. One of these days, I will grow to be strong enough to protect you, Frost!”

“That...”

Frost looked at me silently, the corners of her mouth curved upwards as she laughed, “Alright then, I’ll bring you to kill the Undead Earth Dragon. But rest assured, if you are in grave danger, I will come to your rescue.”

“Okay...”

.....

“Ding!”

System Notification: You received an S-ranked quest【Slay the Earth Dragon】!

Quest Description: Follow Frost to find the place where the Undead Earth Dragon is imprisoned and kill him by yourself. You will then receive a generous reward. But please note that you have to kill the dragon on your own, otherwise you will lose the right to continue with the quest.

.....

“Pa pa pa...”

As my Purple Dawn Boots stomped on the cold stones, I followed Frost one step at a time, into the deeper parts of Dragon City. After a few checkpoints, the prison finally appeared!

“My liege!”

The guards of the Earth Prison uniformly raised their arms to their chest, making the Dragon City’s formal salute.

Frost nodded slightly and said, "Guards, give me the key to the Earth Dragon's prison!"

"My liege, why are you...?"

"Just give it to me, don't ask!"

"Yes!"

After taking the pitch black key from the guards, Frost smiled towards me, "Come, let's go!"

After walking around the prison, we arrived at the most southern part of the Earth Prison. At the end of the corridor, I could faintly hear the howling of a beast. But it didn't seem to be a dragon's roar, or maybe it was because the Earth Dragon's rank too low?

Right ahead, there was a heavy iron door. The beasts howls resounded right from behind the door. Frost took out the key, slowly turning it as a "Ga Da" sound was heard, and the door was unlocked. She looked at me and smiled lightly, "Be careful now..."

"Be careful of what?"

"Just be careful..."

As she said that, Frost suddenly opened the prison gates. With it, a breath of burning air assaulted my face. With the roaring of the Earth Dragon, a breath of Dragon Flames suddenly rushed towards me. When I realized that dodging it was too late, Frost suddenly closed the prison gates, and only a crimson red flame could be seen seeping through the gaps under the prison gate door, burning the ice on the frozen ground.

I stared blankly, stupefied. What the heck, this Earth Dragon looked like it's really violent...

Frost lifted her head, looked at me and couldn't stop her laughter, "How about that, brat, do you still want to continue to fight against that Earth Dragon?"

I tightened my grip on my sword, "Yes!"

"Alright then, I can help you a little bit..."

As she said that, Frost opened the prison gate again, standing majestically in front of the Earth Dragon and smiled, “Hi, low-class dragon~~~”

“Hou!”

The Earth Dragon roared, suddenly unleashing a breath of flame again!

Frost didn’t move at all, her gaze cold as she let out a hmph. Energy started to well up besides her, forming a wind shield to protect herself. “Pa pa pa” The shield reflected all of the dragon’s flames back, and the dragon howled miserably from his own flame. She then immediately closed the door!

A few seconds afterwards she re-opened the door and once again lured the dragon to shoot its dragon flames. Again, she reflected it back. She repeated the cycle for another 7 times!

“Pa!”

The last time she closed the door, Frost pursed her lips and said, “That... You have also seen it. The Earth Dragon has breathed its flame 7 times and this Dragon’s age is 717 years old so it can only unleash dragon flames 7 times in a short period of time. Now its dragon power has been exhausted and it won’t be able to shoot dragon flames for an hour. Go now, go in and kill this dragon that can’t breathe fire. If you can kill it, maybe I would really consider allowing you to explore the Ancient Mysterious Power of the Dragon Tomb’s. After all, it is a mystery that has to be solved...”

I nodded.

“Ka!”

Frost opened the door as I took Baby Bobo and leapt through the prison gates. Green smoke obscured my sight. After the smoke dissipated a little, I saw an impressively huge dragon crawling across the ground. It looked like a big lizard that had a genuine dragon head which looked exceptionally terrifying. It only had bones left with waves of powerful flames pulsing the depths of its eye sockets ablaze. Its long tail swayed

slightly as it laid on its stomach and looked at me, letting out threatening low roars.

【Undead Earth Dragon – Jessie】 (Purple Tier Boss)

Level: 62

Attack: 1700-2075

Defense: 1650

Health: 200000

Skills: 【Dragon Flame】【Three Combo Attack】【Tail Pierce】

Introduction: Jessie, a young dragon bred in the Dragon City. After living happily for 700 years in Fire Stone Canyon, a catastrophe happened and it was crushed to death by a meteor falling from the sky. Buried in the Dragon Tomb for a long period of time, he was awakened once again, resurrected by an evil necromancer. He has already forgotten its honor as a dragon; now his heart is only filled with hatred and killing intent.

.....

Looking at the boss' attributes, I secretly breathed a sigh of relief. An attack power of 2075 was not that terrifying. It was at least weaker than the level 62 emperor tier boss Xianbei Emperor. Furthermore I'm level 58 now, so there's almost no penalty on the level difference. My physical attack was also higher than the boss while my defense was more or less equal. I can start this battle!

Suddenly smashing the grounds, “peng” [Binding Chains] appeared from the ground, smoothly binding the Earth Dragon. I lifted my Frost Rain Sword as I flew forward, with a couple of golden hexagram, a Lv 6 [Combo]!

“873 ! ”

“842 ! ”

“869 ! ”

“881 ! ”

.....

A string of damage numbers appeared as I followed immediately with a [Strength of a Thousand Men]. With the addition of Baby Bobo's attack, in just a moment, we produced more than a total damage of 8000+. The boss' health bar decreased by a whole chunk, no less than around 4%. This damage proportion was too powerful; with my current skills right now I could solo a Purple Tier boss with the same level as me without a problem. As for an Emperor Tier boss at the same level, uhm, at the most I'll probably die, not a big problem!

"Hou hou..."

The Earth Dragon howled furiously, trying to struggle out of my [Binding Chains]. It suddenly bore its claws, "shua shua shua". It attacked me violently from three different angles!

"641 ! "

"712 ! "

"774 ! "

I hurriedly cast [Heal] and drank a Lv-6 health potion and continued to fight. Fighting one battle to grow stronger for another battle!

After a few seconds, the Earth Dragon's body trembled wildly due to the large damage I had inflicted. Its sharp tail suddenly floated as a wave of light glowed around it. It was [Tail Pierce]; the bone tail condensed to form a sword. "Shua", a gust of wind flew past me, the tail's speed was so fast that it was impossible to dodge!

"1538 ! "

I hurriedly cast another [Heal]. My heart beats with trepidation, thankful that the attack wasn't a critical hit. The Purple Tier boss' attack were still considerably powerful...

Outside the prison, Frost quietly stood there and observed the battle, her delicate hands formed a tight fist while her eyes couldn't mask her concerns.

.....

After an exciting 15 minutes of fighting against boss BOSS, its health finally dropped to 10%. Even if it's regenerative powers were high, it couldn't keep up with my high damage output. The battle will be finishing soon!

“Hou Hou...:”

Flying into rage, the Earth Dragon roared unceasingly. Suddenly, its tail pointed up, it was another [Tail Pierce] attack!

I tried to dodge, holding my breath and judging the angle of attack. With a leap, I suddenly jumped up, a huge MISS appearing behind me. At the same time, with a “Peng”, the Earth Dragon's powerful tail broke the stone wall behind me!

Cold wind rushed into the cell. Damn! A cliff several hundred metres high was right outside! I could even see Ba Huang Forest from here!

“Hou!”

The Earth Dragon roared, as overjoyed as an inmate who saw a woman after many decades in prison. He rushed forward, right out of the prison cell!

Whoa, this guy was breaking out of jail!

Chapter 208: Expelled By the Mentor

Without any hesitation, I desperately gave chase. As the Earth Dragon jumped through the broken wall, I grabbed its tail, using every ounce of my strength to pull him back. A Swordsman's agility isn't just for show and adding that to my already enormous strength, the Earth Dragon that was in the middle of his leap and thus unable to do anything was thrown back into the cell! Eying the stone pillar not far away, I circled around it twice, entwining its tail around the pillar. At the same time, I took out a Lv 55 Silver Tier spear that had not been sold and with a "Keng", I pinned his tail to the ground by stabbing it down with the spear. With no way of moving his tail, the Earth Dragon wouldn't be able to use his [Tail Pierce]. If he hadn't ran, I would not have been able to get this chance!

At the door, Frost laughed out loud, "Hehe, very nice!"

It's a rare sight to see Frost's beautiful smile. In a blink, I immediately rushed towards the Earth Dragon's head. Striking it non-stop, it took me no longer than two minutes to finish everything!

"Ouu..Ouuu..."

Letting out a wailing cry, the Earth Dragon officially left this world, its flaming soul dispersing in the wind. His death was accompanied with a burst of drops and a level up. On the ground where the dragon died, a necklace and a blood red cloak, pulsing with a faint purple glow appeared! It didn't look half bad and seems to be a Purple Tier Equipment!

Picking up the cloak and looking over its stats, I was amazed!—

【Cloak of Disillusionment】(Purple Tier Equipment)

Defense: 270

Strength: +40

Endurance: +37

Extra: Raises user's defense by 125 points.

Extra: Raises user's Magic resistance by 14%

Required Level: 55

.....

Looking at my Icy Fire Cloak a Lv 39 Gold Tier Equipment, I thought that it was a pretty good time for a change. Taking it off, I equipped the new Cloak of Disillusionment. In addition with the stats gained from leveling up, my entire body's defense felt as if it raised drastically—

【Xiao Yao Zi Zai】(Tomb Guardian of Dragon City)

Level: 59

Attack: 1707-2186

Defense: 1840

HP: 3484

MP: 1366

Charm: 45

.....

The Cloak of Disillusionment's additional defense was too high! My defense has now risen to 1840 points! This level of defense would make Monks and Knights cry with envy!

After that, I took a look at the second piece of equipment that dropped: the necklace. Dammit, in the end it was only a Silver Tier equipment. Such common trinkets could only be sold for money equivalent to just half a pot of Sauerkraut and fish...

Collecting the 7G on the floor, I noticed that there weren't any Pardon Cards or Soul Stones. This Boss sure was stingy! But it still gifted me this nice new cloak though and so still worth it.

Standing up, I wanted to walk towards Frost but suddenly, I caught small blue-ish glint next to the Earth Dragon's broken tail. What was that? It looked like... something metal?

Reaching out with a sound, "Pa", I grabbed it. Using all of my might, I

pulled on a section of the metallic object that shone with a glassy sheen.

“Kacha.....kacha.....”

The Undead Earth Dragon’s body shook as I pulled on it with my entire body weight so hard that I was almost crawling on all fours. Slowly moving forward, I advanced just far enough to free the metallic object from the Earth Dragon’s bony spine.

“Shua!”

When it was finally released, the Earth dragon’s body collapsed with a “Hua Cha” and I saw in my hands there a shimmering long spear. I looked at it’s stats... fantastic!

【Glass Spear of the Dragon’s Soul】(Purple Tier Spear – Superior)

Attack: 810-1070

Strength: +40

Endurance: +38

Extra: Increases the user’s damage by 8%.

Extra: 5% chance to ignore 100% of the target’s defense.

Required Level: 55

Introduction: In ancient times, at the Earth Dragon’s burial grounds, heaven and earth’s spirits accumulated in the dragon’s bones. When the Earth Dragon got resurrected, these spirits automatically condensed into Spirit Weapons. Unfortunately, these weapons would be forever confined to the inside of the dragon’s skeletal structure. Coincidentally, Player Xiao Yao Zi Zai forcefully broke the skeleton, revealing this Glass Spear of the Dragon’s Soul.

.....

Looking at this introduction, my jaw fell open. It had my ID in it! Awesome! Even more so, it’s a Superior item. It’s attack power even made Lin Wan Er’s Emperor Tier dagger pale in comparison!

Author’s note: With everything else equal, equipment of the same tier

are ordered by: Axe, Halberd, Knife, Sword and Dagger.

TL: Spear falls under Halberd Category

Opening the Friend's List to look at Matcha's level, she was at Lv 53! Under the help of Fox, Old K and the others, Matcha's level slowly caught up. Our Zhan Long's Phantom Knight is Matcha so, fittingly, she should switch her sword for the right weapon for her class.

"Pa da... "

Putting the Glass Spear of the Dragon's soul into my inventory, I felt satisfied as I stood up. Returning to Frost, I smiled and said, "Lady Frost, have I finished my mission?"

Frost nodded. "Yup, you did well... I was right. You are indeed Dragon City's most qualified Swordsman. I believe you will have a great future. You may even help Dragon City rise as a powerful force!"

"Hehe, what will we do next?"

"We'll go look for Karl, that geezer. I want to see what kind of excuse he'll give me....."

"Sure!"

.....

Following Frost as she exited the prison cell, I reached the Dragon City's borders. Looking at the unending snowy sea, I took a deep breath. It was finally time to trek for miles and miles on mountain ridges.

"Bang..."

Frost lightly pulled my arm and said, "Are you ready?"

"Ready for what?"

"Nothing... "

After a moment of silence, Frost jumped down with me. We fell down nearly a hundred meters with the freezing wind whistled in our ears. Because of the extreme speed, I could hardly keep my eyes open. Frost, however, had her beautiful eyes wide and snowflakes collected on her

long eyelashes. Her Qi became somewhat like a shield around her, blocking the chilling wind which was why I was shivering while wearing a full sized robe while she had her arms out.

With a small jump, we jumped over a hundred meters; Frost's strength totally shattered my expectations. After only a few leaps, she successfully brought me to the Dragon's Tomb. In the distance, Tomb Guardian Karl's little cottage could be seen.

Frost let go of my arm. With both of her hands behind her back, she approached the cottage and said, "Karl, It's me, Frost. Please come out!"

"Creak..."

The stone door opened, and Karl came out on his wheelchair. With dull eyes, he looked at Frost and then at me. He suddenly smiled and said, "Oh, if it isn't Lady Frost from Dragon City! How nice of you to come by this empty and barren land."

Frost's eyes flashed with rage momentarily, "Karl! You know that this guy is one of my own. Is that why you requested him to challenge the inner mysteries of the Dragon's Tomb? You still hate me, don't you?"

Karl's whole body shook: "Lady Frost, why do you say such words?"

Frost plainly said, "Your hatred towards me, I can understand it, but you must remember Karl that your son died in the war with the Barbarians. It wasn't I who killed him!"

Anger flowed through Karl's eyes. Raising a finger, he shouted, "Bullshit! Frost, you knew Carter was my only son. You knew the Barbarian Chief was a god-like warrior but you still sent my poor son and his troops to confront him. On that night, Carter's head, pierced by a long halberd, was sent back to me! Was this what you wanted? I know that you and Luo Lin both plotted for this this. Both of you were jealous of Carter's skill, jealous of his talent, being able to become a warrior by the age of 17!

Frost inhaled deeply but did not reply. Instead, kneeling on one knee, she faced him saying "Karl, I understand the feeling of losing Carter but the mission had to go on. This was Luo Lin's order. Carter's group

defended against the Barbarian's frontal attack. Only then were we able to ambush them during the night and kill the Barbarians over a huge area. Please believe me, that Emperor Luo Lin's doings are for the good of Dragon City, and not for his personal gain!"

Karl shouted furiously: "Bullshit! You guys meant to ruin Carter's life. I can never forget Carl's expression before he died!"

"Clang!"

Frost lifted her hand. Behind her a sword rose high into the air rushing at her white neck. Frost looked at Karl and said indifferently: "If it needs to be paid with my life. I will gladly give my life for the King. Karl, after I die, I wish for you to be able to forget your hatred. Do not live a life filled only with hate.

"You !!" Karl's face flushed red, not knowing what else to say.

I hastily walked forwards, grabbing Frost's sword by the handle. A sudden breeze of cold flowed through my arm. This wasn't an ordinary sword! Holding the sword tightly, I prevented the sword from cutting through her skin. I said with a deep tone, "Frost. You were under an order. You shouldn't waste your life on such a small matter. Didn't you say I am one of your own? If you die here and now, who will I be relying on in Dragon City?

Frost lifted her head and looked at me stupidly: "I..... sorry....."

.....

Seeing all this, Karl suddenly let out a smirk: "Hmph, then it would be better this way....."

Frost looked distantly: "How?"

Karl swept a glance at me, saying: "Since he is one of your men then let him replace you in this. Let this boy venture into the depths of the Dragon's Tomb and accept his destiny! If he lives, then I, Karl, will never bring this issue up again. If he dies in there, I will similarly bury this matter and take it that this boy has accompanied Carter in death. How about it?"

“Out of the question!”

Alarmed, Frost’s pretty eyes revealed a hint of anger: “Karl, you’re too despicable. How can you let him, who is so young, take such a risk? Don’t forget, he is your disciple.....”

“Hmph!.....” Karl let out a sneer, “At that time, Carter was also that young when he left me. This boy is not my disciple. In my entire life, I’ve only had Carter as my disciple!”

.....

I started and immediately a system notification bell sounded–

“Ding!”

System Notification: Please take note: you have been expelled by your mentor. You have lost the name, Tomb Guardian of Dragon City!

.....

“What..”

I groaned as I stood there stiffly saying, “Then from now on who will be my mentor? I... what should I do?”

Behind me, Frost’s faint voice drifted over: “Don’t worry. Should you really be able to return alive from the depths of this dragon tomb then your mentor will be me. You will study under me.....”

Chapter 209: Dragon Temple

I stood there in astonishment as I gazed at the beautiful woman warrior standing in front of me: “Frost, you are going to be my mentor in the future?”

“Ah.”

Frost gently nodded and then suddenly started laughing: “What, are you not willing to be my disciple? Is it because you think I can’t compare to Karl?”

I quickly shook my head: “Not at all, not at all, that’s not it...”

“Well then good.....”

Karl smiled coldly: “Okay, since it has been decided, then.....come with me to the depths of the Dragon’s Tomb!”

Frost nodded: “Alright!”

Saying this, she turned her body around and looked at me: “Don’t worry, I will bring you there.....”

“Ah!”

.....

Following my beautiful new mentor, I suddenly felt a great sense of security. If the strong, but gentle and enigmatic Frost would truly become my mentor, I would be well off. After all, Frost was the captain of the Imperial Knights of Dragon City, the most elite force, the direct subordinates of Dragon City’s king, Luo Lin.

The three of us walked in two rows, me and Frost in front while Karl was behind us as we went to the deepest part of the Dragon’s Tomb. We went deeper than I had ever been in this area. Ahead, in the underbrush, the normal imps became Elite Lv 65 monsters. From this, it was easy to see that the deeper you went into the tomb, the more difficult the map would become.

“Zhi zhi...”

A few imps, with their teeth and claws bared threateningly, rushed over. I quickly drew my sword in preparation for a fight, but unexpectedly Frost's speed was faster than mine. With her sword brandished in front of her, an invisible sword energy was sent out and instantly slaughtered several imps. My eyes widened as enormous damage numbers popped out above the dead imps—

13634!

12387!

16746!

I watched flabbergasted; so this was Frost's attack! Only heavens knew what level she was and what rank of boss she would be classified as! In short, she was already strong enough to kill me with no more than a single attack!

Ten minutes later, a heavy and dense blood red fog appeared not too far from us and Frost wrinkled her eyebrows, saying softly: "Be careful. Beings with unimaginable power lurk in these shadows."

"Ah....."

I held my long sword tightly and looked around my surroundings. On my shoulder sat Baby Bobo. With its eyelids opening and closing while staring at me, I felt like I was being stared to death.

.....

Soon after, we reached the end of the canyon where a blood red stone monument covered with vines blocked our path. A few inscriptions were engraved on the monument, while a network of ancient runes was imprinted on the enormous boulder. It looked a bit frightening, to the extent that I could sense the immense energy buried under that massive rock – insurmountable power!

"We're here....."

Frost halted, and pointed at the boulder saying: "Your enemy is buried in the depths of this area. However, this place has already been sealed for

eons, therefore.....”

She laughed: “You have a day to prepare. Look for strong teammates. On the other hand, Karl will use his strength to break the seal throughout today. Tomorrow, at this time, you must have brought your companions here to accept this challenge. I can only wish you good luck..... that..... Are you ready?”

I nodded: “Yes!”

“Ding!”

System notification: Congratulations, you have received the SSS-rank quest line【Dragon’s Temple】!

Mission contents: When Karl opens the seal, all will be revealed! You must find accomplices strong enough to complete this mission. This quest allows a maximum of 9 additional players, and the minimum level requirement is Lv 50!

.....

Damn this mission even hides its contents. Only tomorrow, when we arrive here at this time will we see the truth!

I resentfully looked at Frost. She replied with a smile and said, “Good luck. Hurry and look for members strong enough to challenge this quest! I will wait for your return... ”

I nodded, then took out my city return scroll and crushed it!

“Shua!”

Returning to Ba Huang city, I immediately sent Matcha a message: “Matcha, are you busy? If not, come to Ba Huang City square’s northern entrance. I have something good to give you!”

“Oh, what is it boss?”

“Come and you’ll find out!”

“Okay, wait a minute!”

Soon, Matcha’s beautiful figure appeared in a flash. Wearing a full suit

of armor and carrying a sword, she looked like a pretty Phantom Knight. Although a little clumsy, this type of beauty had a nostalgic way of mesmerizing people. Even outside of the game, Matcha would still count as a 10/10 sister figure. For a young men my age, it was a killer combination.

“Boss, what goodies are you giving me?” Matcha said as she happily walked up.

I opened my bag and took out the glassy spear and handed it to her, “This, do you like it?”

“Ah....”

Matcha’s small mouth opened in shock, her eyes filling with incredulity: “Boss...Boss, this Superior Purple Tier spear, is it for me?”

“Yes, is there a problem? I laughed.

Matcha nodded “Of course there is, this spear..... this spear is too good. Giving it to me is a waste, boss, I”

She blushed, speechless from excitement. She probably hadn’t seen such an amazing weapon before, not to mention actually using one.

I patted her shoulder, laughing: “It’s okay. Once you get stronger, our Zhan Long Studio’s average strength will increase. Just take it and quickly level up to 55 so you can equip it!”

“You’re seriously giving this to me, Boss?”

“Sure!”

“This is too great..... too great.....”

Matcha was so excited when she gripped the Glass Spear of the Dragon’s Soul that she couldn’t bring herself to let go of it. Suddenly she tried to hug me but miscalculated the height and hugged my chest and made it up by standing on her tip toes and lightly kissing my chin “Boss, thank you....”

I touched my chin: “No problem, hurry up and level.....”

“Yes.... “

.....

Right after, I sat there alone in the Ba Huang City Square, thinking about whom I should bring with me to complete the quest.

After sending a message to Lin Wan Er with the details of the quest, the beautiful little miss quickly invited me to a video call, her voice couldn't contain her excitement.

“Li Xiao Yao, this...you accepted this kind of quest? An SSS rank quest is almost a godlike quest. Are you trying to rebel against the heavens??!!”

I couldn't help but laugh: “Yes, I accepted the quest but finishing it is another matter. You can see that this quest will be rather difficult. A ten-man team, I'm wondering, what should I do..... who would be a good choice.....”

Lin Wan Er's large eyes blinked: “ Me, me.....”

I couldn't help it: “I know already, of course I'll choose you. Otherwise I wouldn't have told you.....”

“Yup yup, you're really great....”

“Dong Cheng Yue is a must; we need her magic attack..... On the other hand, for a healer we'll bring Darling Duck. As for the main tank, I don't think I alone will be enough. We still need a person whose attack is high and can still defend well. This person..... should be our Zhan Long Studio's big sister, Matcha. She is a Knight-class, and her equipment is pretty good..... As for others, Wan Er do you have any suggestions?”

Lin Wan Er's lips curved into a smile: “That's easy, Dong Cheng can be the damage dealer and there's not much else we need. For tanking, there's you and Matcha. I'll take care of the crowd control but there are never enough healers. We'll need at least 3. Do you have any suggestions?”

“Pretty Yuzi Chengshuo, can we ask her to join us again? Last time at Five Barbarians Desolate Tomb, she didn't receive any rewards. To compensate her for last time, let's ask her to join us again.”

“Sure we can. What about the last healer?.....”

“There is Who’s Blue, one of the Top Ten Healers in Ba Huang City.”

“Alright, you can go call her. As for the others, we’re still missing two people.....” Lin Wan Er pondered, then said: “It’s best if we have one more for the controlling department. Whoever is Zhan Long’s current number one Assassin, call them as well!”

“Yue Qing Qian..... Little Wolf’s level is a bit low.”

“Then we’ll go with Yue Qing Qian. As for the last person, who do you think is most suitable?”

I mulled it over then clapped, saying: “We’ll add another long distance attacker and bring Fox, simultaneously helping him power level.....”

Lin Wan Er couldn’t from laughing: “This..... if Glass Fox comes with us, will he really contribute much? In any case, you’re the captain, so it’s your choice. You can bring whoever you want; this little girl won’t say anything else.....”

My mouth quirked: “Yeah, so this is the plan for tomorrow. In a moment we’ll give them the list and let them prepare. Tomorrow morning at 11:00 AM, we’ll promptly meet up in Ba Huang City!”

“Alright! Oh right, get ready in a bit. Tonight you and I will go out to eat together, my dad is treating us, saying he wants to introduce a friend. We’ll bring along Dong Cheng as well.”

“Sure, alright.....”

.....

A 9 person team was quickly formed, 8 of whom I had already friended and thus could get in contact quickly. The only missing person was Blue while Yuzi Chengshuo had already confirmed that there would be no problem in joining us tomorrow at noon at Ba Huang City.

After the meeting, I went to Ba Huang City’s forest to sharpen my skills. By dinnertime I brought [Seven Star Fragment Slash] to Lv 5, raising its attack 125% of my base attack. The skill had become very deadly, just in

time for me to use it for the quest ahead.

At five in the afternoon, I went offline.

In the female dorms, Lin Wan Er and Dong Cheng Yue diligently stood there waiting for me.

“Where are we going to eat?” I asked.

“Qin Lun International Hotel.”

“Eh?” My eyes widened: “The...the 7 star hotel? How expensive! What kind of a person would have the status to invite Lin Tian Nan to go to Qin Lun International for dinner?”

Lin Wan Er shook her head: “I’m not sure either. Either way, my old man said that the person was extremely important. Shall we head out? Haha, you probably haven’t even been to a 7 star hotel right?”

“No, I’ve gone before.....”

“Oh?”

“However, I didn’t eat, rather, I watched others eat. I was a mercenary at that time.....”

“ Cough.....”

.....

The Audi TT sped through the night, passing the suburbs of West Lake. Slowly, it pulled into Qin Lun International’s parking lot. The night was very tranquil and the breeze lightly cradled the nearby lanterns.

Getting out of the car, Lin Wan Er walked in front with Dong Cheng Yue and I behind her. Today we were going to meet up with Lin Tian Nan and under no circumstances could I casually walk shoulder-to-shoulder with Lin Wan Er as I do normally; it would be inappropriate.

When we entered the building and walked into the dining hall, there was an eighteen person table. Lin Tian Nan stood at one side, and grinned: “Wan Er’s group has arrived!”

.....

I quickly glanced at the table; twelve people were sitting at this table, 11 of whom were handsome middle-aged men and community officials while the remaining person seemed around twenty-five years old and was emanating a refined and scholarly aura.

Chapter 210: Ito Makoto

Several of the people around me recognized Lin Wan Er as she arrived. They immediately stood up courteously and smiled, "Oh, the rich miss from the Tian Nan House is here. It's been a long time since we've met! Wan Er has become so beautiful!"

Lin Wan Er smiled softly and greeted them one by one, "Uncle Liu, Uncle Zhao, how do you do..."

"So this is Boss Lin's most beloved pearl! "A middle aged man wearing a traditional Chinese suit stood up and smiled, "I am Ou Yang Peng, owner of Shi Fang Can Mall. I've seen you before when you were still very young..."

Lin Wan Er smiled softly, "Oh, I was still small at that time, so forgive me for not remembering you..."

"Haha..." Ou Yang Peng laughed candidly, "I don't know what good deeds Boss Lin did in his previous life to earn such an obedient and beautiful daughter! It really makes others envious. Oh right, Wan Er, why don't you introduce the two people you brought here?"

Lin Wan Er immediately pulled Dong Cheng Yue's hands, "This is my best friend who lives with me, Dong Cheng Yue!"

"Oh, don't tell me...is she Dong Cheng Feng's, that old chap's daughter? Such a beautiful girl..."

"Yeah."

"Haha, it is her indeed. I've heard rumors that Dong Cheng Feng's daughter is very beautiful. Today, the rumors were proven to be true! Oh right, there's also this handsome young man. Who is he?"

Lin Tian Nan coughed a little and said, "He is Li Xiao Yao, and he's Wan Er's...uhm..."

Lin Wan Er pursed her lips and quickly said, "He's just my friend. What else can he be?"

Lin Tian Nan smiled faintly, "Yeah, a friend he is then..."

Ou Yang Peng looked at me and smiled, "Li Xiao Yao? That's a good name...Young man, all of Lin Wan Er's friends are not ordinary, so what's your story?"

I calmly looked at him, "I have no story, I'm just Wan Er's classmate."

"Oh, is that so..." Ou Yang Peng, after hearing the retort, could only laugh aloud, "Good, not even a sign of nervousness. Young people nowadays are becoming more difficult to handle. Anyway, our main star for today's dinner is... Aside from Wan Er, there's another star, isn't that right, Boss Lin?"

Lin Tian Nan smiled lightly, "Yes, Wan Er, you all take a seat first, I'll introduce you to someone..."

As he said that, Lin Tian Nan reached out his hands and pointed towards the twenty-five year old young man right in front of me. He said, "Wan Er, today I have called you here in order to introduce him to you..."

"Him?" Lin Wan Er furrowed her eyebrows, "Who is he?"

The young man slowly stood up, giving us a friendly smile, "Lin Wan Er, you might not know me, but I've already known about you since 2 years ago. Your "Heart of Time" has always been my favorite song; I could even be considered your fan. I never knew that you are actually Uncle Lin's daughter—a fact that I only learned after I came back to China. If it were not for this, I would never have been able to meet you, a superstar...."

Lin Wan Er gasped, feeling a little amazed, as she asked, "Who are you?"

The young man laughed softly, "I... I just came back from Japan, so I don't really know how to introduce myself....cough, cough...This is a little awkward..."

Lin Tian Nan stood up and firmly said, "Let me do the introductions then! This is the son of a good friend of mine. He went to Japan and lived there alone for a few years. This time, he came back to assume his post as a high ranking manager at an MNC. In Japan he's called "Ito Makoto", but his Chinese name is "Wang Ze Cheng". He is my good friend, **'s,

son. Having not seen him for a long time, I never thought that old chap's son had grown so big..."

TL: ** is in the Raw

"Wang Ze Cheng?" Lin Wan Er glanced at the young man and smiled softly, "How do you do..."

Wang Ze Cheng also smiled and nodded, "How do you do, it's very good to see you. I hope you can give me some pointers. Uhh...I haven't lived in China for a long time, so I'm not really used to speaking in Chinese. But I will work hard to improve my Chinese during this period of time. Furthermore, for the sake of learning my mother tongue well, I have applied to become a member in the Chinese department in Liu Hua university. After a few days, Wan Er, we'll be classmates."

Lin Wan Er nodded her head, quietly sitting by my side, and said, "Alright, got it..."

That Ou Yang Peng looked at us, smiling meaningfully, "Ah Cheng, you just came back recently, so there are many things you aren't used to, right? You have to adapt to the language and food cultures here. Which company are you working for in Hangzhou?"

Wang Ze Cheng smiled brightly and replied, "Booster Company."

"Ah?"

Ou Yang Peng was shocked, "Booster Company, the multinational China-America joint venture, the company that just bought the large, astronomically priced Star Tower in the CBD(Central Business District) area in West Lake District in Hangzhou city?

"Yep, that's right, Uncle Ou Yang."

"That..." Ou Yang Peng was stunned, "What a boy, you actually managed to enter such a prestigious company. You are really extraordinary. Oh right, Boss Lin said that you hold a high ranking managerial position in Booster company. What exactly is your position?"

Wang Ze Cheng smiled lightly, "That... it is actually not a high ranking

position...my position is Asia's Regional Chief Executive Officer..."

"CEO of the Asia Region?"

Ou Yang Peng's face turned pale, "A young person's abilities must be respected... You managed to attain that high position at such a young age. That isn't easy at all. You literally made all of us old people sweat in shame..."

Lin Tian Nan laughed out loud, "Ou Yang, don't scare Ah Cheng off; we, the Tian Xin Group and Booster company, have just signed a ten-billion dollar long-term contract, so we are one family from today onwards. Wan Er, this Ah Cheng guy is very sensible, and furthermore, he's young and promising. You can learn a lot from him. Do ask for his advice when he joins your class in Liu Hua University. When the time comes, I will arrange for you to enter Booster Company for an internship."

Lin Wan Er gawked, "Dad, I want to decide where to intern myself. Can I?"

Lin Tian Nan wrinkled his nose, "You are already a grown-up, don't be so willful. Booster Company is the strongest biological research center on earth. Their products can be found all throughout the world. The management of the company is also focused on science; you would learn more things if you join the Booster Company. Dad is still waiting for you to take over my burdens..."

Lin Wan Er wanted to say something else but I nudged her from underneath the table. She took a glance at me and then simply nodded, "Alright then, but when I start my internship, Li Xiao Yao has to come with me too..."

Li Tian Nan laughed, "Sure, Li Xiao Yao is also your friend. If he agrees, you can ask him to intern together with you. In any case, Li Xiao Yao is also Liu Hua University's student, so there will be plenty of chances for the three of you to befriend Ah Cheng....Alright, we should prepare to start dinner!"

"Okay!"

.....

A bunch of middle aged people suddenly became busy toasting each other and so Lin Wan Er, Dong Cheng and I couldn't seem to fit in. Also, Lin Wan Er's mood was not the best. She sat quietly beside me, but no matter who tried talking to her, she would plaster a friendly smile on her face. She always acts appropriately for the occasion and can control her temper in front of an audience well.

Dong Cheng Yue whispered, "Wan Er, do you think there's a hidden meaning as to why your Dad introduced you to this Wang Ze Cheng? Don't tell me he wants to betroth you to him or give you a boyfriend candidate?"

Lin Wan Er unintentionally glanced at me, then quickly dropped her head. Pouting her lips, she whispered back, "I...I wouldn't want to even if he beats me to death. I won't compromise at all in this aspect..."

Dong Cheng Yue eyes darted towards me and laughed, "Don't tell me it's... Your dad felt that placing Li Xiao Yao at your side was too risky. The moment he's not careful, someday, his precious daughter's heart might just get stolen by this bastard..."

Lin Wan Er blushed beet red and said back, annoyed, "Dong Cheng, what the heck are you saying..."

I sipped my tea at the side, smiling but choosing to stay silent.

At this moment, Wang Ze Cheng actually walked over, carrying a glass of red wine. He stood beside Lin Wan Er and said, "Superstar, let me toast a drink to you. But you can just drink the non-alcoholic drinks..."

Lin Wan Er stood up right and nodded, "Alright, thank you..."

Wang Ze Cheng then emptied his wine glass in one gulp, and smiled, "Superstar, I've heard that you guys are quite good players in <Destiny>, is that right? I have gotten my hands on a <Destiny> helmet recently, if you have time, help to train this newbie okay...? Uhm, forget about it, I reckon you guys are not that free. Such a deadweight like me will be better off training by myself. When my level catches up with yours, could you just

count me in as your friends? I will promise that I won't slack off and won't hold your group back. My skills in gaming are quite good, you know. In Japan, I was actually the number one gamer in Kanagawa..."

Dong Cheng Yue tilted her head as she looked at him and asked, "Really? I've heard that Japanese people are all simple and down to earth and they seldom boast of their own skills..."

Wang Ze Cheng spread out his hands and laughed, "I'm not Japanese anyways. I'm an authentic Chinese man. It's just that since I was young, I've followed my Dad and grew up in Japan. Otherwise, I would have definitely spoken to you in a standard of Beijing accent!"

TL: Beijing Accent is considered to be the highest quality/most traditional of Chinese pronunciation, kinda like the British English.

Dong Cheng Yue couldn't help but laugh, "Hehe..."

Wang Ze Cheng looked bewildered, "What are you laughing about?"

"It's just...hehe..."

"That..."

Perhaps out of boredom, Wang Ze Cheng then asked, "Wan Er, Dong Cheng Yue, what are your player IDs?"

"Cang Tong."

"Cang Yue."

"Huh?!" Wang Ze Cheng shouted in shock, "Fan Shu...Fan Shu City's two great beauties are actually the two of you? Cough, cough...Excuse me for my manners, I'm really sorry. Turns out that those are your player IDs. I'm too disrespectful..."

As he said that, Wang Ze Cheng looked towards me and asked jokingly, "Li Xiao Yao, what's your player ID?"

Me:"Xiao Yao Zi Zai."

"Eh?" Wang Ze Cheng furrowed his brows, "So you are Zhan Long's Guild Master? No wonder your atmosphere is different...Haha, I knew it.

Lin Wan Er and Dong Cheng Yue's friend wouldn't be an ordinary person. So Xiao Yao Zi Zai turned out to be you...Even though I've never played <Destiny>, I followed the news on what was happening throughout the three cities. 2 days ago, Zhan Long managed to win even with lower numbers against [Wrath of the Heroes], it was beautifully fought, only, your battle controls are still a little lacking..."

"Battle control?" Dong Cheng Yue asked, astounded. "Wang Ze Cheng, explain to us more clearly. Although Li Xiao Yao's battle control cannot be considered as number one, it's still not bad right? Why do you say that his battle control is lacking?"

Wang Ze Cheng smiled lightly, "There are different styles when having a close combat fight. Pulse Break Style, Battle Reflux Style, Thorn Style, Drunken Sword Style, and other strategies. What do you think Xiao Yao Zi Zai's battle style is classified as? It's not any of those; not Pulse Break, Battle Reflux or Drunken Sword. Your equipment also seems like it doesn't have any return damage so you can't be Thorn Style. Therefore, you can only kill people but you have not mastered the art of PK in game."

TL: Alright so these styles are kind of vague so here's a more comprehensive thing

Pulse Break – Break your opponents attacks and then deal devastating strikes

Battle Reflux – Life Steal, fight, fight and fight more, healing with your lifesteal

Thorn – Basically returns damage to whoever hits you, thornmail?

Drunken Sword – Using wine to increase fury and use fury attacks

(Note that many of these styles will not appear till later...)

Dong Cheng Yue could only stare at his reply and had no idea how to retort back.

The corners of Lin Wan Er's mouth twitched, "Li Xiao Yao, don't you want to say anything?"

I tightened my right fist, my Qi twisting around it as I smiled lightly, “Killing people is already an art in and of itself!”

Wang Ze Cheng’s gaze turned cold, “Heh, getting to know you all has really been interesting. We will be meeting quite a lot in the future, so let’s be good friends, okay....”

Me: “...”

Lin Wan Er: “...”

Chapter 211: Entering Dragon Temple

That night, I drove the car on the way back to school. Wan Er sat beside me while Dong Cheng Yue sat in the back.

.....

“That Wang Ze Cheng....” I finally said, unable to keep quiet anymore.

Wan Er tilted her head to look at me then tugged on her seat belt to loosen it. She smiled lightly, saying, “What’s wrong? Don’t take it to heart, just think of him as a passerby...”

I stared straight ahead, watching the streetlights and said, “But no matter how I look at him, to me he doesn’t look like a mere passerby..”

Dong Cheng Yue smiled, “This is very likely a powerful rival for Xiao Yao. But I think the appearance of Wang Ze Cheng is actually a good thing for Wan Er..... Wang Ze Cheng is quite the character. He’s young, handsome, and he’s the CEO of a multinational corporation, truly a rich guy! It looks like he’s really interested in you, Wan Er. Xiao Yao you have to be careful now. If you are not, then your beautiful miss might be taken away!

I swallowed, my heart was in disarray: “Wan Er.....”

Wan Er lightly patted my arm, “Idiot, don’t listen to Dong Cheng’s nonsense. She is just trying to make you anxious. As for Wang Ze Cheng, so be it. I do not want him to cause any changes to our current life. I wish the three of us would remain the same, just like how it has been until now: playing, going to school, eating, chatting, remaining like that forever. That is all I want in my life. ”

I nodded: “Yea, I’ll try my best to maintain this lifestyle. Rest assured, Wan Er.....”

“Actually, I’m most scared of.....” Wan Er glanced at me, hesitating.

I lightly pressed on the brakes, slowly stopping before a red light then turned to look at her: “Wan Er, what are you most scared of?”

Wan Er bites her red lips, “My father is a great businessman and at the same time a foolish man too. He thinks that everything in the world is under his control. He thinks that he has always given me the best but he forgets that I am a person, a human with my own feelings. I’m worried that he might force me to Wang Cheng’s side. Even thinking about it is giving me a headache. Li Xiao Yao, you are a stubborn and fearless guy. If father decides to terminate the contract with you because of the Wang Cheng’s matter, what could I do about it... ?”

Seeing her lost expression, I couldn’t help but smile. “Don’t worry, I won’t. Even if your dad terminates the contract, I will still accompany you as your friend, even he cannot stop me from doing that.”

“But I’m afraid.....” Wan Er pursed her red lips, staring out into the distance as if in a trance.

Dong Cheng Yue leaned on the back of my chair, blinking her large eyes, then said: “I heard that Wan Er’s dad used to be part of the military and that he had quite a few unique and capable fighters who served under him. What’s more, he learned many tricks and strategies after he came back from America, so it’s best that you don’t challenge him. That wouldn’t be good for you, judging from his personality, he might even.....”

“Kill me?” I looked at her and asked, faintly laughing.

Dong Cheng Yue nodded silently: “Yup. Truthfully speaking, I have seen this happen many times when I was younger.....”

I took a deep breath and looked at the brightly lit meter then lifted my head to look at Lin Wan Er. She was also looking at me with a pair of beautiful pupils as if wanting to say something, yet she didn’t say a word. After a while, I spoke out in a long, drawn-out voice: “You don’t need to worry, Wan Er. You are my friend and I don’t know since when but I’ve already considered you and Dong Cheng Yue as an irreplaceable part of my life. Even if your father wants to kill me, I wouldn’t back down. After all.....”

I made a fist and gathered qi, making the car’s internal alarm ring noisily with a “hua hua”, then gently laughed: “After all, am I so easily

killed? Whoever it is, whether a sniper or retired veterans, under your father at most they could only beat up society's hoodlums and lowlifes. Now, if they want to kill me, just know they haven't seen anything yet!"

Wan Er couldn't help but laugh: "Alright, stop speaking so seriously. My dad isn't that extreme. Once I return, I'll give him a call and chat calmly with him. He won't do anything rash."

"Yeah, that would be best. Good luck Wan Er....."

"You too....."

Dong Cheng Yue blinked: "When we get back, what should we do?"

I thought for a while: "Stock up on health potions and such items. Tomorrow morning at 11 AM we'll meet up at Ba Huang City. At 12 noon we'll promptly take on the Dragon Temple quest. Alright, how about we eat at 10 AM?"

"Okay!"

.....

Upon reaching the campus, we slept early and woke up at 8 AM the next day to be in time for my class. After that, we had a light meal while I didn't drink too much water to prevent going to the toilet. God knows how long we'll be online. When I came online before 11 AM Lin Wan Er and Dong Cheng Yue were rushing across the map to come to this city. Assassins had high mobility while Wind Elves could fly so they could probably get here in less than 1 hour.

"Shua!"

After logging on, I went to repair my equipment and refill my supply of potions. I went to Ba Huang City's North Bridge to wait for everyone. After leaning on the white jade railing for a while, a group of people arrived. Matcha, Ducky, Yue Qing Qian, Fox and Who's Blue all rushed over here since I was the owner of the quest.

"Brother Xiao Yao... " Said Yue Qing Qian with a face full of delight. Hanging on her waist was two high tiered daggers and she walked

towards me happily while saying, “An SSS rank quest, I have never done one before. The toughest quests I completed were only S rank and I’ve even died twice. This SSS rank quest, I think I might cry from dying...”

I responded with a smile and said, “ Relax. This time there’s Matcha and me as tanks. There shouldn’t be a problem at all! You and Cang Tong just take care of intercepting the Boss’s skills. After that, just wait for the loot to drop!

“Ok!”

Matcha was already at Lv 54. Holding a longsword she said, “Boss, I’ve been training all I could, but... but I could only get to 72% of Lv 54. Just a little bit more and I’d be able to equip the Glass Spear of the Dragon’s Soul. Should I bring that spear along?

I nodded immediately. “Of course! This time your job is to tank together with me. If your attack isn’t high enough, you won’t qualify as a tank. Oh besides that, how much is your defense now Matcha? Your shield is quite strong, is it?

Matcha looked at her stats and said, “ Currently I have 3500 health, 1900 defense, and 1750 attack. Boss... Are these stats good enough for the SSS rank quest?”

Next to me, Yue Qing Qian was astonished. “Wow, such high health and defense; it should be enough... The attack power is also rather high...”

I nodded. “Yup. Changing to the Glass Spear of the Dragon’s Soul, you will have a base attack of 2000. Adding the bonuses, you will have at least 2400 actual attack damage. It should be enough to fight the Boss or at least have the Boss lock agro onto you.”

Matcha chuckled and nodded. “Yup! That’s good. I was so afraid to drag down the whole team...”

“How would that be possible?”

“Hehe...”

At this time, Who's Blue walked over here. Wielding her staff, she pouted and said, "Handsome Zi Zai, how unfortunate for this mission to have a limit of 9 players. If not, I could have brought Not Yet Red over too. Today she could only accompany a group of stinky men to random places..."

I was shocked when I looked at her Guild Emblem—

ID: Who's Blue Lv 54 Silver Healer

Main City: Ba Huang City

Guild: [Crimson Contract]

Position: Team Leader

.....

"Who's Blue. When did you join [Crimson Contract] ?" I asked.

"This morning. After Han Bei Song begged us for a long time, we had no choice but to join [Crimson Contract]. After all, our previous guild wasn't that fun. Brother Xiao Yao, does Zhan Long need more people?"

I shook my head. With a warm smile, I said, "For now we're full. Both of you, just stay in [Crimson Contract]. Guild Leader Han Bei Song is a nice guy, though a bit wretched. Even so, this guild's isn't bad; you can treat it as your home."

"Ok..."

.....

Not long after, at 11:20, three gorgeous beauties arrived in Ba Huang City. Lin Wan Er, Dong Cheng Yue and Yuzi Chengshuo were finally here. This 9-man party was ready!

After sharing the quest, everyone was momentarily filled with immeasurable exhilaration. They could finally see with their own eyes, that I really had an SSS rank quest. It wasn't a fraud.

"Let's go. Onwards to Dragon City!" I said.

Lin Wan Er happily nodded. "Alright. Let's get to Lv 70 in one shot!"

Looking at her level, Damn! She's already Lv 60 and received her third job skill. On her shoulder was a shining emblem that proved that. Accompanied with bonus stats, all skills could be leveled up to Lv 8!

.....

After nearly an hour's journey, we arrived below Dragon City. In a distance, ropes were hung down. Reaching for one, I pulled down hard. Smiling, I said, " Dragon City's public transportation, it's pretty sturdy... "

"Sigh... Aren't there elevators? How primitive... " Said Yuzi Chengshuo wide-eyed after noticing the rope.

Unable to contain my laughter, I replied. "There's a need to be simple, ok? Quickly go up. The quest is about to start!"

"Yes!"

Hurrying upwards, it wasn't long before everyone reached the top. Following Frost, we walked east and entered Dragon's Tomb. Lin Wan Er, Dong Cheng Yue, and Yue Qing Qian who were shivering from the cold, finally began to recover after they entered Dragon's Tomb. Under my lead, the group entered further into the tomb. Far away, we finally saw a tiny glimmer of light towards the end of the cave. That's the stone's luster. We're here!

.....

"We've finally arrived....."

"Shua!"

"Ding!"

System notice: You are entering the map— Dragon's Temple!

Map Summary: In ancient times, there existed a mysterious technique in the east that spread the people, the Mohists', fame across the land. The Mohists were master trinket makers and their art was refined over the generations to the degree that even the largest of dragons fell prey to it. Over the course of several hundred years, a myriad of dragons were slaughtered, slain by the technique, until finally, the Obsidian Dragon

God appeared, filled with indignation. He demanded the death of the Mohist people. Ten million dragons appeared on his call, dropping from the sky and scorching the Mohists City. In a blink of an eye, the entire land was covered in black soot with countless Mohists devoured whole by the Obsidian Dragon God. Ultimately he imprisoned the guardian master of the Mohist city, Elder Yun Chen in Dragon's Tomb with his own body. The four largest Dragon Tribes then sent powerful dragons to protect and defend the tomb. After the Obsidian Dragon's Death, its power did not scatter and remained within the depths of the cavern. Thus Cave, which was the burial of a great dragon was renamed as the Dragon's Temple. In this era, the Mohist's technique was long lost! Legends say, whoever willing to accept the challenge to save Elder Yun Chen from the Dragon's Temple would receive the true teachings and transcripts of him. Upon completion of the quest, the person who received the quest primarily would obtain the [Mohist's Five Scrolls]. An ancient book that was lost for eons!

.....

Clap

Dusting my hands, I was full of energy, "Mohist's Five Volumes... I want it!"

Chapter 212: Suspended Map

With the sound of rocks scraping against each other, the ground in front opened to show a deep underground passage. It looked like the ground had been split by a sword. A path of stone steps covered with moss exuded a smell of decay. The passage continued all the way into the depths becoming an unseen bottomless pit, while the two sides of the walls were engraved with ancient inscriptions. It looked like this passage had been sealed for a long time, there was no way of knowing how much time had passed since someone had last stepped in here.

Looking down at the depths of the stone trail, Matcha stuck out her tongue and managed a weak laugh, "This SSS-ranked quest sure lives up to it's name. The opening scene itself is already so extraordinary....."

Yue Qing Qian blinked her eyes, "Oh, the quest reward, only Big Brother Xiao Yao alone will get the 【Mohist's Fifth Volume】 series?"

Wan Er nodded, "Yeah, that's what's written on the quest description."

Yue Qing Qian laughed softly, "No matter, if it is for the sake of Big Brother Xiao Yao, I'll gladly help him~"

Dong Cheng Yue lifted her staff, "Then we should prepare to enter; this time there are two tanks, Li Xiao Yao and Matcha, and 3 Healers. We should have enough manpower, let's go!"

I took a glance at the depth of the passage, the atmosphere was so eerie that I could almost hear the sound of howling from the depths of the temple. We had no idea what was inside. Taking a deep breath, I turned towards my beautiful NPC master and said, "Frost, we'll enter first."

Frost held her sword as she nodded softly, "Yeah, be careful. I will monitor your situation at all times. However...I can't enter the Dragon Temple. This is a thousand year iron-clad rule of Dragon City. Only an Adventurer from Dragon City has the right to enter the temple. I would incur a great disaster should I even try to enter the temple...."

I laughed as I pulled out the Frost Rain Sword on my back, "Alright

then, we'll be going now.”

“Take care!”

.....

“Pa....”

My purple dawn boots slowly stepped on the stone steps which were completely covered with moss. I stepped on the moss with all my strength and regained my balance before I took another step. Behind me, Wan Er held her dagger in one hand and grabbed the stone walls with the other, carefully following behind me. Dong Cheng Yue and Matcha flapped open their wings; Wind Elves didn't need to travel on the ground.

The deeper we advanced, the darker it got, to the extent that we almost couldn't see any of our fingers in front of us. I raised my Frost Rain Sword high in the air, but it only lit up an area of a few meters. On the other hand, Wan Er's Scarlet Edge could light up nearly ten meters of the area. Emperor Tier equipment obviously wasn't the same; its luster and shine far exceeded that of Purple Tier equipment.

About five minutes into our slow advance, Matcha's eyes grew large as she cried out loudly from behind me, “Boss, careful!”

“Shua!”

I suddenly stepped on empty air and my whole body immediately plunged down!

“Ah?”

Lin Wan Er cried out in distress as she hastily jumped forward to catch me. I also reached out my hands with panicked eyes. I hugged her snow white and slender right leg with both of my hands tight, my body was halfway down the abyss, thus her thigh prevented myself from falling even further down. An exquisite, smooth and soft feeling came through my palms, making this short moment glorious...

“Oh my.....” Wan Er's face was pale as she looked at me and asked: “Are you okay?”

I nodded: “Yeah.....”

Matcha fluttered her wings and looked down: “This map is really strange. Halfway through, the stone steps are suddenly cut off and there’s no other path..... and Boss, can you stop hugging Beautiful Miss’ thighs already.....”

Wan Er’s face blushed and she reached out her hand to grab onto my arm, dragging me up.

Fox hefted his gun and snickered: “Hugging her thigh..... how fortunate.....”

Wan Er’s face blushed even more.

My eyes flashed coldly as I said: “Stop teasing Wan Er already, hurry up and think of a way to navigate this map.....”

Lin Wan Er’s beautiful oval shaped face was still burning red as she looked up, blinked her long eyelashes and suddenly raised her hand to point, “Look, the solution should be right there...”

We all looked up and saw a string of iron chain hanging a meter above our heads. It led straight down into the darkness. The thickness of the iron chain was around the size of a baby’s wrist, and it swayed slowly in the midst of the wind. A piece of barren land and empty space greeted us at the front, with nothing else to be seen.

“I don’t know...” Lin Wan Er pursed her lips, “I don’t know what place this iron rope leads to, could it be our destination?”

Yuzi Chengshuo laughed lightly: “It should be. Where else could it lead us?”

“How do we we get there?” Who’s Blue asked.

Dong Cheng Yue laughed faintly: “It’s simple, we just have to use our cloaks as cloth ropes, and simply swing it over the chain to slide down. This iron chain’s incline is steep enough, so there shouldn’t be any problems. This is the only path, so we have to go this way.”

Fox mused aloud: “Or we could try to get on the iron chain and walk

across.....”

Wan Er couldn't help but burst into laughter: “Uncle, do you think you are an acrobat? What if you fell.....”

Fox's face was all purple: “Uncle? I'm only a little older than Li Xiao Yao.....”

Yue Qing Qian hefted her dagger and said casually: “ Who cares. You're still an uncle.....”

Fox's face was white: “I can't even talk to you guys anymore.....”

.....

“Hua!”

I suddenly pulled the Cloak of Disillusionment on my back and fold it into one cloth rope. Holding it with both hands, I asked, “Don't waste time anymore, I'll be in front. Everyone come and follow me. It's just a small part of the map. We won't be frightened by that much, will we?”

“Yeah, be careful!” Lin Wan Er and Dong Cheng Yue replied in unison, laughing.

Stepping back a few steps, I suddenly leapt forward. With my cloak, I landed on the iron rope accurately and my whole body started sliding down the iron chain. Behind me, Lin Wan Er, Yue Qing Qian and the other girls followed along. Dong Cheng Yue and Matcha were no longer able to fly either. Wind Elves in this case, their advantage of flying would be affected by the vast vertical distance between them and the ground. In this area's altitude, they would also fall from the sky, unable to fly.

In the air, the wind blew hard against our ears as the nine of us slid down the metal chain, like the vines of a morning glory entwining around a fence. After descending from such a height, a flash of light appeared before us, revealing a sea of stars. As visibility improved, at the middle of the shimmering stars lied four floating pieces of land. Our next path is confirmed!

As Lin Wan Er looked into the distance, her beautiful eyes were filled

with wonder as she laughed: “It’s so beautiful... these four suspended maps are truly the workmanship of the heavens; like a heavenly palace in storybooks, it’s exceedingly magnificent.....”

Dong Cheng Yue laughed lightly: “These maps should be the Mohist Sect’s inheritance, Elder Yun Chen’s masterpiece right? Besides him, nobody else would be able to create such a heavenly map.....”

Fox let out a cough and said, “ The specialty of the Mohist Sect is machinery and traps. Constructions and buildings are most likely the work of Lu Ban descendants.”

TL: Lu Ban is a extremely well known craftsmen who was famous for his architecture

Dong Cheng Yue’s face grew cold: “Uncle, go die. Stop being smart.....”

Yue Qing Qian couldn’t keep from snorting, then she burst out into laughter, her graceful body shaking in the air. In the starry sky, her figure was quite beautiful.

.....

The first area was steadily getting closer and when I was about ten meters off the ground, I let go of the cloak with my right hand and unsheathed my Frost Rain Sword.

“”Peng!”

My purple boots, upon contact with the ground stirred up clouds of dust. Taking advantage of my inertia, I charged forward. In my ear I heard a voice—

“Ding!”

System Notice: You have entered the SSS-rank map – [Dragon’s Temple First Floor]. Please take caution!

.....

Behind me, Lin Wan Er, Dong Cheng Yue and the others touched down too. A row of 9 people stood silently on this ghost town of a map. This entire land floated on the ocean of stars, not giving any sense of security.

Holding my Frost Rain Sword, I continued marching onwards. Darling Duck immediately cast a Lv 6 [Encourage], raising my attack damage by 6%, it was better than nothing.

“A monster appeared...”

Yue Qing Qian pointed at the direction of a dried up patch of overgrown grass. A figure slowly walked around. That’s a humanoid creature. It looked like a giant lizard but with arms, its body was covered with a scaly armor, and it wielded a broadsword. On its back were sharp and scaly protrusions, causing the creature to look like its back was full of swords. On its hideous head, were a purple helmet. A pair of aggressive eyes looked at us from far away. That’s right, it’s a monster. Likewise, the monsters in this SSS-rank map had a strength that was far beyond the ordinary—

[Dark Draconian] (Elite Monster)

Level: 62

Attack: 1180-1540

Defence: 1000

Health: 12000

Skill: [Thrust] [Dark Slash] [Dragon’s Spirit]

Introduction: In legends, Dark Draconians are said to be the descendants of the Dragon Tribe and Heavenly Tribe. They have enormous vitality. These Draconians were sealed in the Dragon’s Temple for over tens of thousands of years. Pure hatred filled their meaning of existence, causing them to become extremely aggressive. This, however gives them the perfect role as one of the guardians in the Dragon’s Temple.

.....

“Good boy... Good boy...” Fox said gently. “In the Five Barbarians Desolate Tomb, there were Lv 60 Elite Monsters with 9000 health. It’s not peculiar for this map’s Lv 62 Elite Monsters to have 12000 health!

But... I don't think I could break through that 1000 defense... ”

Wielding her dagger, Lin Wan Er calmly said, “ Nevermind. Xiao Yao and I are enough to take them on. You can just take it easy... ”

Fox said with tears in his eyes, “I may be suspected of leeching, but don't look down on me to that extent... ”

I smiled and said, “ Ok, that's enough guys. Stop teasing Fox. I'll go ahead first to test the Draconians' defense and attack power. Everyone be careful.”

“Yes!”

.....

Wielding my Frost Rain Sword, I charged forward, immediately using [Fierce Ice Blade]. At the same time I took damage from the Draconian's first attack!

“1764 ! ”

“312 ! ”

Fox gasped. “Hell, that 1000 defense was so easily broken by Xiao Yao... ”

My sword glowed with multiple hexagrams, I released a [Combo]. Slicing and dicing the enemy, Dong Cheng Yue, and Fox started dishing out their attacks too. In a mere few seconds, the Dark Draconian's health already dropped to around 30%!

“Hou... ”

With a sound similar to a dragon's roar, the Draconian activated its third skill—[Dragon's Spirit]! Momentarily, a gigantic apparition of a dragon's talon flew down from the sky, sharply increasing the Draconian's attack. The broadsword swung horizontally across. A [Dark Slash] hit my chest!

“917 ! ”

.....

“Ah...”

Yuzi Chengshuo said with her tiny mouth agape, “That’s not good... [Dragon’s Spirit] raised its attack by at least 50%. We must kill it as quickly as possible!”

Chapter 213: Shadow of the Wind Dragon

“Click!”

I chopped off the Dark Draconian's head. I thought: 13 seconds per mob, our dps isn't bad.

After which, I bent down and picked up the 47 silver on the ground and the party distribution system automatically split the sum. I smiled and murmured to myself: “Very nice, just farming for gold here is going to make us rich.....”

Lin Wan Er remarked: “When draconians' health drops to about 30%, their dragon-strength buff will automatically activate, so make sure your skills are off cooldown for the second volley of attacks and control the damage output such that we can focus our skills to finish it off as soon as its health drops to 30%”

Matcha nodded, “Yup, our beautiful Lin Wan Er is right. We should try our best to be efficient.”

.....

I could immediately see numerous draconians nearby as I turned around to take a look at the area. Closest to us was a group of five draconians.

“Oh, thats a lot.....” said Who's Blue.

Lin Wan Er celebrated saying: “It's still good since we have both Matcha and Li Xiao Yao to tank.....”

Beautiful Matcha smiled placidly, “Yup, these five draconian are gathered too closely; attacking any one of them will cause them all to get aggroed. Afterwards, boss will bait two while I'll attract the other three. Concentrate your attacks and finish off the two assaulting boss and then help me eliminate the other three.... ”

Feeling somewhat doubtful, I asked: “Matcha, are you confident in keeping the aggro of all three draconians on yourself, even with the aggro generated from the heals of our healers?”

“Don’t worry boss~”

“Good, then be prepared. Dong Cheng, lure the mob!”

“Roger!”

Approaching slowly, Dong Cheng Yue came to a halt at a distance of about 37 meters from the mob. Her pair of beautiful eyes accurately judged the position of the mobs. Then, gathering her energy, crackling sounds of lightning could be heard as lightning circled between her fingers while energy danced wildly around, beating about her robes, revealing two splendidly long legs.

“Pa!”

The beautiful mage activated [Thunder Finger] letting a bolt of lightning bounce within the group of draconians, drawing the aggro and causing a damage of at least 10,000 points at the same time. This S class skill was way too overpowered.

I leapt forward. As my Purple Dawn Boots stepped on the grasslands, I looked for a good angle. The next moment, seven meteors appeared and floated around my blade, bursting out and hitting all 5 draconians. The level 5 [Seven Star Fragment Slash] struck out with shocking attack power, while the rows of damage numbers that appeared stupefied everyone!

1763 !

1820 !

3764 !

1799 !

.....

The group of mobs trembled. Having been aggroed by me, they shouted while raising their broadswords, rushing over with killing intent.

“Oh my.....” Lin Wan Er speechlessly remarked while grasping her daggers: “Li Xiao Yao has finally obtained an AOE skill, I just knew it didn’t make sense that he would be unable to get a physical damage AOE

skill.....”

With a sweep of my blade, I initiated my custom combo, [Strength of a Thousand Men]. Next to me, Matcha wielded her sword to attack, unleashing Phantom Ray Slash on three of the draconians. In the same time, she waved her other hand and summoned a Phantom Shadow Clone, microing it to draw in the attacks of the three draconians. Through this combination of skills and techniques, the aggro of the three draconians was successfully kept by Matcha.

“Beautifully done, Matcha.....” Fox laughs while firing.

“Keng keng keng...”

The broadsword slashed against Matcha’s golden shield. Fortunately, she had put 1 point into Endurance each time she leveled and redistributed her stats when she changed classes and thus had an additional 53 points into Endurance. In addition, she had put over 100 points into defense, so with her shield, her defense wasn’t too far below mine.

Swiftly finishing off the two draconians, I switched my focus to help Matcha kill the other three. In a mere 30 seconds, Matcha had been beaten till she had less than 30% of her health points. While being healed by Who’s Blue and Darling Duck, Matcha cast her Phantom Holy Shield to protect herself, complaining: “A girl shouldn’t be a tank, being beaten by mobs really hurts.....”

I replied: “Fortunately you are an attack-oriented knight who adds 7 strength per level. Some knights distribute 5 points each to defence and endurance per level, a build that focuses purely on being able to take punishment. When the 3rd job advancement and aggroing skills are released, those type of knights and monks will start to “shine”, as they become the main tanking force in boss runs~”

As Matcha’s sword continued to hack and slash at the draconians, she laughed: “Boss, I’d rather happily stay as an attack type knight.....”

I nodded in agreement and said: “You must. In the late game meta, the focus will be on PK between players and not boss runs. The future of

Zhan Long can only be secured through fighting, thus we do not really need too many highly skilled defensive players but more importantly we need attack type players. Matcha with your AOE job skills such as Phantom Ray Slash, there is no way I would allow you to play a defense focused build.....”

Happily laughing, Matcha exclaimed: “Yup, boss is brilliant!”

.....

A green tier armor dropped after dispatching many draconians. As it wasn't of much use, we continued forward while clearing out the mobs. About an hour later, we managed to clear out most of the draconians in the map, However, to get to the next level, we still had to overcome one last hurdle.

Checking my experience bar, I found that I had gained 34% in the last hour, bringing my current progress to lvl 59 with 48% experience. Killing this level's boss would probably bring me to level 60. Once I've reached lvl 60, I would finally be accepted to be taught by a true teacher, who's also a beautiful lady. As a woman who was able to earn the respect of Karl and Luo Lin, Frost's strength was the real deal; I've seen it with my own eyes. Her position was earned through strength, not through her womanly charms, or else, she would be unable to survive in the cold, desolate and bloody lands of the Dragon City.

“Shua!”

A ray of light descended on Matcha, indicating that she had reached lvl 55. As we trained together in many S Rank or above maps, Zhan Long's Experience Baby continued to level up. Even though she started at a lower level, as her levels rose, more experience was needed, which made catching up to the average server level a lot easier.

“Keng!”

In a flash of light, the sword in Matcha's hand was replaced with a slender looking lance. This was the Glass Spear of the Dragon's Soul that I gave her, a Superior Purple Tier weapon with a very high attack rating.

“Wow.....”

Exclaimed Matcha as she took a look at her status window gleefully: “My base attack has finally reached 1950, what a blessing.....”

As he did not have a deep understanding of a melee fighter’s stats, Fox asked: “Is a base attack of 1950 considered high? How high is Guild Master’s base attack?”

After taking a quick glance at my status, I answered: “2186, I add all my points to strength and have two Emperor tier equipment that give strength bonuses.”

“Oh, looks like Matcha’s equipment is not bad.....”

Darling Duck took the moment to refresh the Encourage buff on Matcha. Now, Matcha has obtained both offensive and defensive capabilities that would not be lacking in killing mobs or fighting bosses.

.....

Continuing to clear the mobs, in another half an hour, we arrived at the end of the map. Here stood a cliff and on the edge of the cliff was an impressive chain that lead downwards. It was the entrance to the 2nd level of the Dragon Temple. However, blocking the path was a huge statue, looking like it was ready to come to life at any time. This must be the boss of the first level, I could already sense the huge power originating from within the statute.

“The boss has appeared.....” Lin Wan Er murmured excited, tightly grabbing the daggers in her hands, :”Eh... shall our number one tank initiate the boss fight?”

Without replying I started moving towards the statue then leapt into the air. My sword arcing towards the statue, the Frost Rain Sword chopped down onto its neck.

“Peng!”

Shreds of stone skin peeled off towards the ground, revealing the indigo scales beneath. ‘Damn, there’s a real dragon guarding the souls of the

Mohist Sect's descendants. This Dark Dragon God is way too cautious!"

"Hou!"

With an angry roar, the dragon finally emerged from its stone shell. Gusts of wind could be seen circling the body of the huge dragon standing before us, filling the air with a sinister sensation. The dragon's body had a glossy sheen, as if it was made of glass, yet no one could deny that the dragon was powerful. With a slight sway of its head, it dashed forward, raising its claws, striking heavily on my Nebula Armour.

"1193!"

"Peng!" the force was enough to push me back 10 metres. Lifting my battered body up from the ground, I swung my sword, which glowed resplendently with the light of Fierce Ice Blade and sunk it into the dragon's neck —

"1421!"

.....

I lifted my head to take a look and quickly shared the BOSS status with my party —

【 Shadow of the Wind Dragon ▪ Bu Lu 】 (Purple Tier BOSS)

Level: 62

Attack: 1720-2150

Defence: 1250

HP: 350000

Skills: [Dragon Claw] [Blade Storm] [Galing Cyclones]

Introduction: Bu Lu was created based on the Saint of the Wind Dragons and bestowed with a portion of his powers. After the Dark Dragon God imprisoned the Mohists, he summoned the four Saint Dragons and using their blood and essence, he created the Saint Dragon Shadows. With a part of the power of the four Saint Dragons, these shadows were left to guard the Dragon Temple as warriors of the dragon race.

.....

“Damn, 2150 attack power..... Wind Dragon, one of the four saint dragons?” Carrying his rifle, Fox backed away quickly, leaving the Shadow of the Wind Dragon’s attack range, while asking: “Matcha, how should we fight?”

Matcha raised her Glass Spear of the Dragon’s Soul, replying in an indifferent tone: “How else can we fight, Xiao Yao will continue attacking first, when he has max aggro the rest of us will join into this war of attrition, in the later stages when Shadow of the Wind Dragon starts using large-scale skills, I will help to support boss by tanking some of the damage.”

“Okay, sounds good!”

I lifted my Frost Rain Sword, braced myself and continued the assault. welcoming the boss’ sharp claws with [Strength of a Thousand Men] while giving myself a Heal to recover health. In less than 30 seconds, after inflicting over 10,000 damage, the three healers could finally start to support me with heals, allowing the fight to stabilize. Even though the BOSS had a high attack power, my defence and health was high too. So, unless the boss was able to finish me off in 1 hit, there should be no problems.

“Hou!”

The Shadow of the Wind Dragon abruptly raised its head as its neck expanded. A dragon breath is clearly imminent!

“Be careful, the dragon’s breath is [Blade Storm] and will hit all targets in a line, Darling Duck! Move!”

The exceptionally intelligent Lin Wan Er rushed forward, shoving Darling Duck out of harm’s way, while Shadow of the Wind Dragon prepared to unleash his power. Wind could be seen coalescing and condensing in its huge maw before it blasted out. As predicted, it’s a linear attack!

“boom!”

My shoulder felt like it was being ripped apart while a searing pain flared across my shoulder and a devastating damage figure popped up above my head --

1736!

Behind me, Lin Wan Er raised her metal umbrella, enduring the [Blade Storm] attack.

“Peng!”

1643!

The metal umbrella had the effect of boosting the wielder’s magic defence. Coincidentally, [Blade Storm] was a magic based attack. Thus, in a certain sense, Lin Wan Er’s survivability was higher than mine.

.....

Darling Duck’s face turned white as a sheet: “My god, the boss’s attack is so quick and fierce, it’s hard to keep up.....”

Wan Er hurriedly backed away to regain her HP, gently smiling as she replied: “Don’t fret, Li Xiao Yao just needs to adjust his position so that the rest of us will not be in any danger.”

Chapter 214: Galing Cyclones

[Blade Storm]: The Shadow of the Wind Dragon spits out a wind-imbued axe to attack in a straight line. Its attack power is immense, not to mention it also deals magical damage. Only Wan Er and I could withstand such a powerful attack. If it was anyone else, he would certainly be insta-killed.

“Keng...”

Sparks flew as my sword slashed at its dragonscale armor. I kept pinpointing my attack towards the dragon’s neck where the scales were forcefully removed from its hide bit by bit. Eventually, blood finally spilled from its neck. Because of this, I could see that each of my attacks dealt an additional 40% damage. The speed of killing the boss improved greatly!

“Xiao Yao, be careful! The boss’ last skill... ” said Dong Cheng Yue as she used a [Thunderbolt Finger] and retreated to avoid the [Blade Storm]’s trajectory, “It wouldn’t be weird if that [Galing Cyclones] was an AOE skill. Later when the boss uses the skill, Xiao Yao, you should use a [Combo] to stall it for a few seconds. Wan Er and Qing Qian will try to interrupt the skill by using [Gouge]. [Gouge]’s stun rate is not bad and this boss’ level isn’t that high too, so we should be able to interrupt the skill.”

Wan Er nodded. “Alright... ”

At the back of the dragon, Wan Er and Yue Qing Qian danced around with their daggers. “Pa pa pa!” They knocked away chunks and chunks of the dragon’s health. A high leveled Assassin’s attack speed is not something to be made fun of. With a full set of decent equipment, an Assassin would easily be able to break the boss’ defense and with their quick attacks, their overall damage output would not lose out to a 10-point attack heavy armor class like me.

.....

“Boom!”

The enormous dragon's head raised as it released another [Blade Storm] !

I saw the signs and quickly dashed aside to divert the boss' trajectory. Having 70% of the aggro, the boss' target would certainly be me. My body felt a tearing pain. That wind-imbued axe pierced through my body and landed on a big rock behind me, shattering it into a million pieces.

"Nice dodge... " Dong Cheng Yue giggled.

As her laughter echoed, the boss started raising its neck to give out a loud roar. Flapping its wings that were spread wide, gusts of wind started forming in our surroundings. I felt a chill down my spine and shouted, "Is this it? Intercept it before he casts the skill!"

A white glow appeared under my feet. I activated [Strength of a Thousand Men] to attack at the boss' thigh but it wasn't enough to break the casting!

Behind the dragon, Yue Qing Qian and Wan Er rushed over with their daggers. "Shua Shua!" They thrust at the dragon's head, the both of them using [Gouge] at the same time!

MISS!

1279!

.....

Yue Qing Qian's attack missed but Wan Er's [Gouge] hit right on target. The boss was stunned and [Galing Cyclones] was, as a result, successfully nullified before it could be cast!

Dong Cheng Yue chuckled. "Nice one Wan Er. It really can be stunned!"

Wan Er waved her dagger. Seeing an opportunity, she attacked once more and fell back in a blink. Smilingly, she said "I was just lucky today!"

Yue Qing Qian pouted, "Big Sis Cang Tong's weapon is the Scarlet Edge, an Emperor Tier dagger. Of course the hit rate would be higher. Boo hoo... My dagger is only Purple Tier. I'm in disdain..."

Far away behind me, Yuze Chengshuo healed me while saying, "Behind

the luxurious gates of the rich residences, meat goes to waste while people freeze to death on the road. One of you has an Emperor Tier and another with a Purple Tier, yet you still complain that your equipments aren't good... You bastards should know how many players still use Silver Tier and Bronze Tier weapons, not even Gold Tier! Someone using a Purple Tier alone is treated as a god in battle. Wan Er's Emperor Tier Scarlet Edge is simply too luxurious..."

Wan Er couldn't help but laugh. "Big Sis Chengshuo, you have a Lv 51 Purple Tier healing staff. You don't have the right to judge..."

Yuzi Chengshuo giggled. "Aiyo, this little rascal learnt to counter me. Alright, Xiao Yao Zi Zai is here to back you up so you're getting audacious huh? ...Forget it, I have no comments. I'd rather not be treated cruelly by you guys... However, our group now is really strong, especially Xiao Yao Zi Zai, Wan Er, Yue Qing Qian, and Cang Yue. This team's control skills and tanking ability are at the pinnacle of its mastery in the entire server..."

Wan Er's dagger grazed the boss' right leg and immediately moved back to dodge [Blade Storm]. She exaggeratedly laughed, puffing up her chest, "Hehe, if our skills were not first class, why would we have accepted this SSS ranked quest in the first place?"

Yuzi Chengshuo nodded. "Good luck wrecking the boss! I have a premonition that the next boss will be an Emperor Tier. Wuu wuuu... You guys... are just so loyal to me. To call me again for these kinds of maps, I love you all! If it were not for the fact I owe a lot to [Emerald Porcelain]'s Guild Leader's gratitude and favors, I would surely have joined [Zhan Long] to be a part of Xiao Yao's guild..."

Swinging my sword to push away the dragon's claw, I said, "Just come. [Zhan Long] will always welcome Big Sis Chengshuo..."

Wan Er smiled. "Forget about that, Big Sis Chengshuo and [Emerald Porcelain]'s Guild Leader have been lovers for 7 years. There's no way for her to leave [Emerald Porcelain]..."

"Okay..." I laughed. "Our [Zhan Long]'s Number One Healer is still

Darling Duck then...”

Darling Duck pouted and said, “If Big Sis Chengshuo came, then I would become a mere substitute, wouldn’t I, Guild Leader?”

“No way. There is no point comparing Healers. In fighting bosses and group fights, who wouldn’t rely on Healers?”

“You have a point. Hehe...”

.....

Not even 3 minutes passed when the boss let out another roar. It was another [Galing Cyclones] !

I hastily launched another [Combo]. Unfortunately after the barrage of attacks, the skill needed a cooldown of 4 seconds!

“Wan Er! Qing Qian! Hurry up!” I hastily bellowed.

Both girls hurried as much as they could. They consecutively used [Gouge] but unfortunately two misses elegantly traversed above the boss’ head. Our interruption had failed!

“This is bad!” Matcha hastily rushed forwards with her spear and shouted, “Everyone get back!”

“Hong!”

The surroundings started to dim as a huge cyclone formed. The galing winds that were like sharpened knives started raging upon us. A bone-grinding pain could be felt as I took 3 separate hits. It was extremely scary—

1717!

1637!

1736!

I nimbly drank a Healing Potion; I was severely injured but I didn’t die. Wan Er fell back and opened her umbrella. “Pa pa pa” Within the three successive hits, I managed to slip in a [Heal] and so she barely managed to survive. An Assassin with a body full of high tiered armor and nearly

2500 health points, Wan Er's stats were one of a kind.

On the other hand, Matcha rushed forwards with her shield as well and pulled Yue Qing Qian into her embrace. Hugging one another, they kneeled on the ground. She readied her shield as she closed her eyes and started to chant her skill, [Phantom Holy Shield]! Three golden shields orbited around her, giving protection to Yue Qing Qian who was within the range of protection. Fortunately with this, they didn't get blown away by the [Galing Cyclones]. After the skill dissipated, she raised her head and looked at Yue Qing Qian. Unable to hold a chuckle, "Luckily I made it..."

Yue Qing Qian was scared purple, "Big Sis Matcha... Thank god you were there!"

.....

"Hong!"

The gigantic dragon raised its head once again. It's another [Blade Storm]! This boss' tempo was just too terrifying!

In the distance, those who weren't doing close-combat all dodged to the side. Their timing was adequate. Yuzi Chengshuo expected an attack as such and swiftly rushed a bit closer to heal me—

+1574!

This healing is just too powerful. With another heal my health returned to above 2000 points. I could take the [Blade Storm] head on!

"Bang!"

The wind-imbued axe went through my body and hit onto the rocks behind me. But ignoring it, I continued attacking!

The whole boss-killing pace had slowly stabilized; the last few [Galing Cyclones]s were all intercepted. The battle proceeded smoothly. In a short 12 minutes, the boss' health was obviously critically low!

.....

"Let's try to guess. What kind of treasures will he drop?" Said Yue Qing

Qian as she stabbed the boss behind his neck with her dagger and leaped backwards.

“A Purple Tier item will certainly drop.” I thought for a second, then said, “In this SSS rank map, the drop rate from bosses will probably increase.”

Wan Er replied. “Yeah. I hope it drops an S rank skillbook or something. S rank skillbooks are worth so much more than equipments. In a way, that’s logical since skills will stay forever with a player but equipments will just come and go. Any equipment that is lower than Lv 100 will be replaced with something stronger sooner or later.”

“Yup. Oh, it’s at the last 4% HP. Pay attention.”

.....

Slashing my sword horizontally, I cut deep into the boss’ neck. The Shadow of the Wind Dragon was merely a clone of the real thing, if it were the true Wind Dragon, one of the Four Saint Dragons, I think we would have been finished off in the first round!

This time, we didn’t decide on who’s the one to kill the boss, so all of us did as much damage as we could to kill it quickly!

Finally, after letting out a miserable howl, the Shadow of the Wind Dragon’s suddenly

exploded into millions of pieces. Countless pieces of glittering dust fell toward the ground as a pile of loot dropped!

.....

“Shua!”

Fox and Who’s Blue both leveled up. I then held my sword tightly and walked towards the loot. Looking at the equipments dropped, I said “I’m the leader, so I’ll go through the loot. Are you okay with that?”

Matcha and Wan Er lightly nodded. “It’s all yours to decide. Hurry up...”

Bending over, I grabbed the loot. There was a total of 3 equipments. It really is impossible to drop anything above Purple Tier—

【Hurricane Staff】: Lv 58 Purple Tier Staff. Magic attack 740-875, Magic attack +8%, Endurance+38, Magic +39

【Chain of Mercy】: Lv 58 Purple Tier Necklace, Endurance +40, Magic +37, Healing Effect +128

【Inferno Dagger】: Lv 58 Gold Tier Dagger, Attack power 540-750, Endurance+35, Agility +34

.....

As usual, we rolled to decide who gets which item. The results were that the [Hurricane Staff] was taken by Dong Cheng Yue without question, as she was the only person who needed a staff that added magic attack. The [Chain of Mercy] necklace was rolled by Yuzi Chengshuo. Who's Blue's level was a bit short of the requirement, so giving it to her was obvious. As for the Lv 58 Gold Tier Dagger, everyone decided to give it to the one who was most beaten up by the boss. So, I put it into my inventory. After returning back to the city, I'll be able to sell it for a few hundred RMB. No matter how small it was, there was value in it.

What was a little disappointing is that the boss didn't drop any skillbooks. Not even Soul Stones! It only dropped a few Pardon Cards. We couldn't help but sigh.

.....

A few minutes later, standing at the border of the layer, I looked into the distance. A metal chain transversed across the starry cosmos, connecting to the second layer. This time we would have to slide for a very long time to reach the next level.

Inhaling deeply, I said with a smile, "Let's go. Onwards to the second floor! I want to level up!"

Everyone else nodded at the same time. "Yup!"

Chapter 215: Twin Blade Harmony

“Hua!”

The cold wind blew past my ears as I rapidly slid down the cable. Far off in the distance a large map began to appear in front of me. On it, one could see layers of mountains surrounding dark green lakes; it looked like something out of a painting. This geography wasn't all that bad but red dots were appearing all over the map, these were the monsters that were awaiting for our arrival!

“We've reached the second layer...” Matcha smiled.

Wan Er's beautiful eyebrows knit together as she looked at the distant sky, “You guys, look at the clouds on the second layer; they are all red colored. I can sense something hidden behind them ready to fight against us.”

“What is it?” Dong Cheng Yue asked.

Wan Er shook her head, “I don't know either.”

I clenched my shirt, “Let's hurry up but be careful of what's to come!”

“Got it!”

.....

After landing I involuntarily took 10 steps onto the floor of the second layer, the aggro of a monster that was standing not too far away from me was triggered. It was a human warrior wearing an armor that was completely purple colored. He carried a blade that crackled with electricity upon its edge. Taking wide strides toward us, he snarled, “Halt, you are trespassing on Dragon Temple's forbidden grounds, this is punishable by death! Brat, surrender your life!”

The broadsword crackled with electricity and exploded outwards as he tried to cleave it into my shoulder. Immediately, 500+ points of damage was dealt to me while simultaneously forcing me into a state of paralysis for 3 seconds and reducing my attack and movement speed by 15%!

I unsheathed my Frost Rain Sword right after the paralysis ended, casting a [Fierce Ice Blade] and a [Combo] upon the monster, dealing nearly 4000 damage to him. Behind me, Wan Er chuckled as she passed by with her double daggers, “Take a look at my 3rd advancement skill!”

With a shout, Wan Er held both her daggers in front of her chest. With a “keng,” she held the two daggers together, condensing them into a single crimson red blade edge. The monster before her was known as the Thunder Blade Guard, a Lv 63 Elite Monster and as her newly formed blade penetrated its body, the monster howled miserably and its body began to shudder violently. A huge number came floating out from above the body–

2741!

.....

“Gulp!” Fox and I swallowed our saliva, “What a strong move....”

Yue Qing Qian’s mouth dropped open, “Wow, sister Cang Tong, is this the Assassins’ 3rd advancement skill? How strong, this skill has great damage potential; it can out damage the [Flame Blade] used by a heavy armor class can’t it?”

Wan Er struck the Thunder Blade Guard with a [Gouge], “Yea, this is the trump card for Assassins of the 3rd advancement–[Twin Blade Harmony]. It’s our strongest skill until level 100 and it is capable of ignoring a huge amount of the target’s defense. Not only that, after advancing to the 3rd advancement, the typical PK strategy used by Assassins is to ambush them using [Backstab] linked with [Gouge]. After 2 seconds, you use another 70 mana to cast [Twin Blade Harmony]. This can pretty much kill any heavy armor class player.”

Yue Qing Qian chuckled, “Yea, it looks really powerful, and [Twin Blade Harmony] also looks unbelievably cool. I want to reach the 3rd class advancement as soon as possible...”

While attacking the Thunder Blade Guard, I turned around to say, “You’re already Lv 59 Yue Qing Qian. Once we finish this map, you’ll be able to advance. I’ve thought it all out: once the second layer is cleared,

we'll all return to Ba Huang City to reorganize and repair our equipment. If it is possible, those who can advance should do so. At this moment, Dong Cheng, Qing Qian, Chengshuo and I will all be able to advance, which would mean a total of 5 players who have reached their 3rd advancement. This would also increase our chances of beating the final boss, since 3rd advancement players would add to our power."

Yue Qing Qian nodded, "I hear you, brother."

Fox kneaded his forehead, "If only I had a younger sister like this..."

Yue Qing Qian giggled, "That's no problem, I'll have Yue Wei Liang call you older brother..."

"Really?"

"Really, though I'm sure she'd see you as an old person, so you'd be an uncle."

"As long as she doesn't think of me as a grandfather, then I'll be happy. Am I really that old?"

All the girls nodded in symphony, leaving Fox to cry to himself.

.....

We continued onwards, taking a good look at the Thunder Blade Guard's stats. His attacks had the lightning attribute and when he had only 10% of his health left, he would use an AOE skill named [Raging Thunder Blade]. It would probably deal 70% of his base attack, not a bad skill at all.

Less than a 100 meters forward, a ravine appeared with countless Thunder Blade Guards roaming inside. Wan Er immediately trembled at the sight; a happy look was apparent on her face, "Wow! It looks like I'll be able to get to Lv 61 now..."

Taking a second look at the ravine, I felt uncertain. "It's hard to say... with this many monsters, we'd have to kill them for at least 7 or 8 hours, how troublesome..."

Fox pondered a bit, then suddenly looked up upon hearing some sounds, "Xiao Yao, look out!"

“Eh?”

Looking up, I saw a scarlet meteorite with a flame trail flying out from behind the clouds. It was heading straight toward me. If I didn't dodge this, then I'd surely be badly injured, if not killed. Not only that, the meteorite would hit a large area and both Dong Cheng and Yue Qing Qian were within range; there was only a second to react!

“Dammit!”

Inwardly whining, I quickly activated my [Haste]. As I rushed forward, I spread both of my arms out and quickly hugged both Dong Cheng and Yue Qing Qian to my chest and dove to the side. “Everyone be quiet and take cover!”

During the crisis, the two girls were stunned. Just as the meteorite was about to hit, they found themselves flying through the air into the nearby bushes!

“Bang!”

Behind me was a scorching piece of ground that was at the very least 2 meters in diameter. The meteor's impact had completely blew away our previous footholds. The surrounding 100 meters were slanted downwards and even the grass nearby was burned into ashes.

I stood up while Dong Cheng and Yue Qing Qian looked on with fear, “What...what was that...”

Wan Er looked up to the skies, “So that's how it is...”

Together, we all looked up into the sky and saw meteorites dropping in groups of 2 or 3 from the heavens, wreaking havoc onto the earth below. This had meant that not only do we have to pay close attention to the monsters and bosses on this map but we also had to keep track of the sky patterns and the meteorites.

“F**k...”

Fox clenched his rifle reluctantly, “This map is crazy isn't it? It looks like we've triggered the meteorological mechanism, making clearing this

map a whole lot more difficult for us.”

Dong Cheng Yue asked, “What do we do then? We can’t just stay here and kill while keeping track of the sky can we?”

I thought for a few seconds, “Well...we can have someone keep track of the sky, Fox can do that since his damage output isn’t that strong yet. He’ll play the experience baby and keep us updated on the circumstances of the sky. You’ll have to alert everyone when the time comes....”

Fox nodded as he stared at the clouds, “I think...after this map is cleared, my cervical spondylosis will be cured....”

TL: Cervical spondylosis is medical term for an age related wear and tear of the neck.

Naturally, I didn’t bother to comment on that.

.....

“Boss...”, Matcha looked at the sky, warning me with a confident voice.

“What’s wrong, Matcha?” I asked.

Matcha smiled, “Haven’t you seen it yet? The trajectory of these meteors head south at 45 degrees, so that means we have a way to avoid these meteorites completely...”

“Oh? What method is that?”

“Look over there...” Matcha pointed some distance away, “There’s the mountain peak, we can stay under the mountain base and kill monsters there. This way, we won’t be hit by any of the meteorites, because that’s where the blind spots are for the meteorite’s path. Not only that, some weird ruins are over there; all sorts of exotic terrain should be there as well. We can use the terrain to our advantage and kill the monsters that are bottlenecked at that spot. Boss already has [Seven Star Fragments Slash] and combined with Dong Cheng’s [Thunderbolt Finger] and [Pillars of Ice & Fire], we’ll be killing the monsters quickly. Wan Er can take on the Thunder Blade Guards that are below 10% health so that they won’t be able to use [Thunderous Rage]. This way of doing things should

make life easier, right?”

I nodded happily, “Yeah, lets go with Matcha’s strategy. Does anyone else want to chip in?”

The females all nodded their heads in agreement, “No, let’s go with this strategy... Another meteorite is already on the way...”

We rushed down the hill and leaned against the cliff, and as expected we could hear sounds of meteorites exploding above us but no meteors actually reached us.

“Right here...” Matcha pointed her finger at a triangular rock formation. It was not a bad place to hide behind as well as a perfect spot to lure monsters to.

I nodded and raised my sword, “Wan Er and I will be on the outside core with two Tigermen. Matcha will come with us and help attract the monsters. Matcha, you’ll fly on out first and attract monsters, do you feel ready for this? When the Thunder Blade Guards reach 10%, they’ll release their final killing skill, you should be fine if you stay far away.”

Matcha stuck out her chest and with a voice that showed her insightfulness in her answer, she said, “No problem, attracting monsters is my specialty. Give me a position and my Lv 6 [Phantom Ray Slash] will be there. It’s not that weak, so it’ll be put to good use...”

“Yea... remember to bring 100 monsters to us at a time, otherwise we won’t have time to heal and fail the quest.”

“I got it, I’ll act accordingly!”

.....

The Mage, Healer, and Musketeer were left within the core of the group while Wan Er, me and our 2 pets headed on outwards. Yue Qing Qian’s Ice Rat was perched on her shoulder while grumbling away. It was a Lv 57 Ice Rat with a strong magical power and with Matcha’s Illusionary Butterfly’s magical prowess, our group’s physical and magical might could not be questioned at all.

A few minutes later on the map, Matcha was leading a bunch of orange dots back to us. Holding the Glass Spear of the Dragon's Soul in one hand and a shield in the other, she flew on over, "Be careful, a bunch of monsters are coming!"

I hurried on over, "Matcha, get into position!"

"Got it!"

"Hua", flying on over, Matcha didn't aim her trajectory well enough and crashed into Yue Qing Qian. I hastily grabbed onto her waist and forcibly pulled her into an upright position, "Matcha, the monster's aggro is on you, so when they all approach, be prepared to use your [Phantom Holy Shield] and Healers, remember to heal us well..."

Matcha immediately turned around, with three golden shields surrounding her.

Chapter 216: Drifting Thunder

“Peng Peng Peng...”

5 or 6 Thunder Blade Guards hit Matcha's shield, causing sparks to fly and a few electrical currents entangle her as she cried out, “Ouch, that really hurts. Sister Chengshuo, Darling Duck, quickly heal me...”

Three bright beams of [Heal] basked Matcha in their warm light. It would be hard for her to die with three Healers on her, even if she wanted to.

Before my eyes, there was already a huge group of Thunder Blade Guards. Getting fired up, I calculated the right angle, then my arm shook as I cast [Seven Stars Fragment Slash]. Seven different colored flames enwrapped around my sword and with a ‘Bang’ sound, my sword came crashing down onto the group of Thunder Blade Guards, dealing 1500 points of damage to each monster. Another beam of light basked down on me, signifying I had triggered a fatal attack!

Matcha also went on the offensive, her Glass Spear of the Dragon Soul glowed brightly as its tip transformed into a large point. Rumbling loudly as she smashed her weapon into the crowd, she also triggered a fatal attack. The exceedingly high dark green numbers that flew overhead were pleasing to the eye.

Behind us, Dong Cheng Yue gathered energy as her robes fluttered around madly, revealing her enchanting pale legs underneath. She was levitating slightly above the ground as she pointed out with her five fingers. With a [Thunderbolt Finger] and the Illusionary Butterfly and Ice Rat, the Thunder Blade Guards all screamed in pain. Their health dropped in a blink of an eye to around 10-20%.

“Okay...”

Taking a look around with her beautiful eyes, Wan Er readied her daggers. Quickly killing monsters that had less than 10% health left, she swept through them before finally bringing her weapons together in preparation for [Twin Blade Harmony]. “Bang”, the tip of her twin daggers

stabbed into a Thunder Blade Guard that had 20% health left, killing it instantly.

Fox was standing in the back firing [Bombardment] and commented, “With this damage we could definitely get into the top of China. Miss Wan Er, Miss Dong Cheng, are you two joining any time soon?”

Dong Cheng chuckled, “Uncle, did you say join or marriage?”

TL: Fox uses the word “Join”, but it can be misheard as “To wed”. A Chinese joke.

Wan Er’s face reddened, “Dong Cheng, continue killing, don’t joke around with the poor young Fox...”

Fox: “.....”

.....

In about 20 minutes, all 100+ Thunder Blade Guards were dead, leaving behind plenty of experience and equipment. At the same time, Qing Qian and I both leveled up to Lv 60, meaning we could finally advance in our classes. It was a pity that we couldn’t go right now and so we would have to endure for now. Fortunately, the experience given in this map was quite generous, and we could be Lv 61 by the time we finished up here.

There was one thing that was certain however; in this SSS-ranked map, the players in this group could easily rank in the top 10 of each of our respective cities. At the moment, Ba Huang City’s number one player was Jian Feng Han at Lv 61. If I continued to grind without dying, I could overtake the throne as the number 1 player, though the chances of keeping it for long were not very high.

Looking at the various equipment strewn about, we were ecstatic to start cleaning up the battlefield. In an orderly fashion, everyone began to systematically gather up the items. The Elite Monsters had dropped a lot of Silver Tier equipment but they were of very little value besides this one jewelry that provided .5% lifesteal; that one should sell for quite the fortune.

“Hey, what’s this?”

Yue Qing Qian picked up a silver tile from the ground and examined it closely. She laughed and showed it to us—

[Devil's Token]: Proof that you have slain a devil. You may exchange this token to any city in exchange for a generous amount of experience as a reward!

.....

“Exchange for experience?” Wan Er laughed, “This is some good stuff, it's similar to our Mortal Scrolls.”

Yue Qing Qian immediately turned on the roll system, “I can't hog this item to myself, come on guys, let's roll for this.”

I shook my head, “Let's not, we're all friends here, so let's give the items to those who need it most. Qing Qian, Wan Er, Chengshuo and I are already on the verge of advancing so we don't have a huge need for it. Give the Devil Token to Matcha, she's only Lv 55, but her strength is important. If she's given the Devil Token, then Lv 60 won't be too far away and by then she'll truly become a part of Zhan Long's core.

Wan Er smiled, “I have no objections since I'm not lacking in experience at all.”

Likewise, Yuzi Chengshuo chuckled, “Right, give it to the lowest leveled player.”

So everyone agreed. For the sake of Zhan Long, the Devil Token was given to Matcha, who accepted it with a red face. Sending me a message in secret, she was very happy about it, “Boss, thank you, you're so kind to me...”

I couldn't help but smile, “Let's work hard and level. The boss can't be the tank forever; I want to be a pure offensive attacker. So you have to be Zhan Long's number 1 tank, Matcha. Wait until you can ride a horse and have an extremely strong shield. With your additional points into defense, you'll be Zhan Long's immovable guardian!”

Matcha smiled, “Boss, I finally understand why Wan Er, Dong Cheng, Qing Qian, and other females are so fond of you. You have such a unique

personality...”

“Keke, I thought it was because I was extremely handsome....”

“Peh...”

.....

Continuing to loot the battlefield, I also picked up two more Devil Tokens, which I gave to Matcha. After she returned to the city, she was destined to level up. Though it's for sure that she wouldn't be leveling up too many times, otherwise the RMB warriors wouldn't have to level at all.

So again, after a dozen times, we finally cleared the ravine of all of the Thunder Blade Guards and proceeded to clear the surrounding borders of the monsters as well. We had already spent 4 hours or so and it was already 7 PM when our group finally got to the end of the 2nd layer of the Dragon Temple.

Our feet were damp with water as our 10 person team stood in a stream. Right in front of us, an iron cable stretched horizontally across the sky. However, a giant dragon crouched at the entrance of the cable bridge, seemingly like a purple stone statue. One didn't even need to think, that was obviously the second layer's boss. Furthermore, the stream we were standing on converges on the spot ahead; the area was a huge torrential body of water. If we wanted to kill the boss then we would have to do it in the water.

“What do we do?” Wan Er asked.

Matcha chuckled, “How about boss lures the boss out onto dry land so we can kill it?”

I shook my head, “That's not possible, it's too far away. I estimate it to be 500 meters. Whether the boss will come out or not remains to be seen but I definitely won't be able to live if I try.”

Wan Er clenched her fists saying, “Then we'll go kill this dragon boss in the water!”

“Yes, let's go then...”

Step by step, we treaded towards the deeper part of the river and started swimming. Our movement speed was reduced to 50% of that on the ground, which would heavily impact us. Not only that, when we entered the water, we would only be able to breathe for about 10 minutes before we would need to take another breath. The higher level a person was, the longer they'd be able to breathe underwater.

After swimming towards the statue, I stayed a decent distance away from it and used a long distance attack. With my sword, I activated [Seven Stars Fragment Slash], and 7 beams of energy were let loose onto it!

“Bang!”

The [Seven Stars Fragment Slash] effect of breaking objects appeared and without further ado, a giant purple dragon came flapping out with a snarl. Its giant wings were flapping around so much, the water below was being pelted outwards from the shockwave! Taking advantage of the moment, I quickly took a look at the boss; stats and shared it amongst the party before desperately swimming back towards the team—

[Shadow of the Thunder Dragon – Lorraine] (Purple Tier Boss)

Level: 63

Attack: 1750-2180

Defense: 1270

Health: 370000

Skills: [Dragon Claw] [Drifting Thunder] [Thunderbolt]

Description: Lorraine, the shadow of the Saint of Thunder Dragons and retains some of the powers the thunder dragon once had. Summoned by the Obsidian Dragon God to guard Mohist City, he was one of the four who had their blood and soul sacrificed to give birth to the Shadow Saint Dragon. The shadow of the thunder dragon is now an eternal guardian.

.....

“Be careful, the BOSS has two skills we’ve never seen before!” I hefted my Frost Rain Sword and retreated a few steps in the water as I warned

everyone in a low voice: “Keep to the strategy we used to kill the Shadow of the Wind Dragon; Matcha, get into position!”

Matcha flew above the surface of the water, carrying her Glass Soul of the Dragon Spear and nodding slightly: “Got it, Boss!”

“Roar!”

Behind us, the Shadow of the Thunder Dragon roared and somehow struck out at my back, driving me deep underwater!

“Gugugu...”

The sound of water battered my ears as I sank lower. Water clouded my view, and all that I could see was the faint purple luster of the dragon scales. Without hesitation, I used [Strength of a Thousand Men] on the dragon’s neck. A white scale marked the location of its lamella, this seemed like the weakest point in the Dragon’s defense so striking at this location will do major damage!

Having its white scale attacked, the Shadow of the Thunder Dragon became enraged. It snarled as both of its claws struck out at me, forcing me deeper underwater. Fortunately, it had only done 1200 damage to me—nothing fatal. A health potion and a [Heal] would be enough to withstand it. My equipment was pretty good right now so I could live through something like this.

.....

A few seconds later, I finally had the opportunity to resurface from the water and raising my hand, I sent a [Wind Blade] towards the boss. At the same time, Dong Cheng Yue blasted the boss with [Thunderbolt Finger] while Fox shot at it with a [Double Shot] overhead. Yue Qing Qian and Lin Wan Er’s silhouettes surfaced from the water as their dagger tips twinkled in the light. With me around, the two girls would not have to worry about the boss suddenly aggro-ing onto them.

“Roar!”

The Shadow of the Thunder Dragon roared as it opened its gigantic jaw and a milky white glow began to condense inside.

Matcha cried out hastily, "Be careful, the boss is about to cast a skill!"

"Eh?"

How could I be any more careful? I might as well take it on...

The next moment, a ball of lightning was spat out at me with frightening speed!

"Bang!"

A boom rang out on the water as the ball of lightning smashed straight onto my chest, sending my body and sword into the depths of the water. I had sunk at least 10 meters in when the ball suddenly exploded!

1974 !

Wow, what a disgrace. Not only did the attack hurt me but the electricity had spread through the water, causing massive damage to both Wan Er and Dong Cheng Yue who were fighting nearby!

Chapter 217: Void Fan

“That’s [Drifting Thunder]!” The beautiful Matcha shouted in the party chat, “Boss’s health won’t be able to hold up at this rate!”

Who’s Blue whimpered, “Ah ah, the electric shock is too numbing... Xiao Yao is too deep in the water...I can’t even click on his character to heal him...”

Wan Er hastily said, “Open up the party menu and lock onto his portrait to heal him! You can heal even without vision. Hurry!”

Dong Cheng Yue: “Wan Er, use [Twin Blade Harmony] to interrupt the boss’ skills and attacks. You should be careful. Use [God’s Dance] and [Absolute Step] because you’ll need plenty of speed to survive the fight!”

“Not enough energy...”

“Dear god...”

.....

On the surface of the water, Wan Er suddenly raised her hands and activated the [Twin Blade Harmony] combo. With a loud bang, the daggers pierced through the boss’ soft white scale. Reacting to the pain, the boss counterattacked with a sweep of its tail. Quick on her feet, Wan Er swung her iron umbrella horizontally in front of her chest to block the strike. However, the force of the attack was still strong enough to fling her away into the water.

Hell bent on killing Wan Er, the Shadow of the Thunder Dragon flew up with a roar. In a single downward motion, it pounced toward Wan Er.

Wan Er clenched her teeth as she lightly waved her arm. Activating one of her third advancement skills, [God’s Dance], her evasion rate was increased by 70%. Activating the last of her advancement skill, [Absolute Step], her movement speed increased by 150% while her attack speed went up by 30%. Her legs were now a blur as she ran over the water, forming ripples with each step as she avoided the boss’ attacks. The power of an Assassin’s third advancement skills was truly unmatched! Especially with

a top class beauty like Wan Er using them, this was truly a sight to behold!

After several healing spells, I was back to full health. Running across the water, I saw that Yue Qing Qian was able to interrupt one of the boss' attack and was being chased down by it. I hurried over and attacked with a [Wind Blade]+[Chain Strike] combo onto the dragon's lamella. With a loud cracking sound, the lamella scale cracked, causing blood to spurt out as the Shadow of the Thunder Dragon howled in pain.

"Hou...hou..."

Shaking its head, it roared once more and swung its tail towards me as if it was an iron whip. Unlike Wan Er, my strength attribute was much higher in comparison to an Assassin. Swinging my sword in front of my in a guarding form, I forcefully blocked the attack.

"Keng!"

Sparks flew off my Frost Rain Sword as my whole body was shaken by the force of the attack and was thrown several meters into the water. Turning over, water splashed out as the Frost Rain Sword lit up once more in its shining glory. Sending out a [Fierce Ice Blade] and [Strength of Thousand Men], I enraged the boss with a series of random attacks. The bastard lifted its neck up high and, with a howl, began to channel another [Drifting Thunder] from within its throat .

"My god..." Yue Qing Qian dashed forward with her dagger and loudly commanded, "We can't let it keep spamming [Drifting Thunder] on Xiao Yao. We need to interrupt it!"

Using [Ambush] behind the boss, she was unable to disrupt its channeling. Without giving up, she swam over a few meters to the front of the boss and raised her arms to use a [Gouge]. Finally, she was successful this time. After all, she was Lv 60 while the boss was only Lv 63. The chances of interrupting the boss was fairly high. It was no longer like the level difference of a Lv 42 Assassin fighting against a Lv 54 Purple Tier boss..

.....

As a result of the two beautiful Assassins' unrelenting interruptions, the Thunder Dragon was only able to use normal attacks with its claws. This way, there was less pressure on me. With 3 Healers behind me to keep me at a stable 60% health; I felt extremely safe.

Time flew by quickly. In less than 8 minutes, the Shadow of the Thunder Dragon was already at less than 40% health. Wan Er noticed a change in the dragon, and alarmingly cried out, "The boss is about to cast its last skill!"

"Roar!"

Without waiting for our interruptions, the Shadow of Thunder Dragon roared and quickly dove into the river. Its gigantic body disappeared with a huge spray of water in its wake.

"What...what happened?" Yue Qing Qian's eyes widened as she looked around, "Is that it? The boss didn't run away, did it? This doesn't seem like an ultimate skill..."

Wan Er dragged her iron umbrella over the water's surface as her eyes passed over the surroundings, "Yeah, this is weird..."

Suddenly, a crackling sound could be heard from underneath the waves. A bolt of lightning jolted out of the water from the deep, dark abyss and continued onwards towards the sky.

Dong Cheng squinted her eyes, "Crap, here it comes!"

With a "Pacha" sound, the top of the cave lit up as countless meteorites wrapped with crackling static energy started to rain down. This [Rolling Thunder] covered nearly half the map!

My whole body went numb as [Rolling Thunder] overpowered my senses. My health dropped rapidly as it struck me three times, almost killing me –

1328 !

1237 !

1299 !

Drinking a health potion to recover my health, I looked over to the rest of the group. Who's Blue and Darling Duck had both perished from the meteorites; only Promised Love was left trying to cast [Heal] with some difficulty to recover her health. Qing Qian and Fox had both died and Wan Er was hiding under her iron umbrella. Her health had dropped significantly but the iron umbrella helped bolster her defense and saved her from death.

"Quickly!" I shouted loudly, "Revive Darling Duck; the boss is about to emerge!"

A popping sound escaped from under the waves. The dragon's sinister head was emerging from the water just 3 meters away from me. Without further comment, I swung my sword downwards onto it, then quickly retreated. Immediately after reviving, Darling Duck healed me and then cast [Revive] on Who's Blue. The three Healers now stood on top of the water, struggling to stabilize the situation.

At that moment, Matcha appeared from under the water with 52% of her health left. Blinking away the water in her eyes, she said, "When the boss casts [Rolling Thunder] again, remember to not be on the water's surface, dive deep into the water to take advantage of its ability to bear the brunt of the meteors! This way everyone won't die..."

I nodded, "Ah, good idea!"

Matcha had 3,000+ health initially. If she only took 1,500 damage, then everyone who hid underwater stood a chance of surviving!

.....

A few more minutes passed without further trouble; the dragon was at 17% health before it immediately dove back into the water. This time, we learned from our past experiences and everyone dove into the water. I gave a parting slash to the dragon before it could release another [Rolling Thunder]. [Fierce Ice Blade] was extremely effective under water and could do even more damage.

On the surface, there was still a violent shaking, followed by my body going numb again. The three attacks that hit me still hurt but I had only

lost 1,200 points of health. It was definitely less damage than before, and the 3 Healers were already healing everyone back up to almost full health. On the other hand, judgement day for the Shadow of the Thunder Dragon had finally arrived.

In less than 3 minutes, the boss had 1% health left. Mustering all of my strength, I delivered the killing blow!

.....

“Kacha!”

The Frost Rain Sword completely shattered the lamella scale on the dragon’s neck. Fresh blood spurted out wildly and with a single roar of despair, the Thunder Dragon fell into the water. Its body continued to sink deeper as it broke into pieces of electric shards. In the midst of the fragments, pieces of equipment and tokens had also sank into the water. I swam over to collect the pile of loot and subsequently swam to the surface.

“Wow...”

Splashing water in all directions, I took a look at my experience. I was 47% of the way to Lv 61. The experience the boss had given was quite generous; if I were to kill a few more, I would become Ba Huang City’s number 1 player. This would be an achievement I had never accomplished before!

“Big bro, what did the boss drop?” Matcha called out, between her relief filled laughs

Holding her Scarlet Edge, Wan Er stood in the water with the rest of the group, smiling radiantly. The girls were completely soaked, Dong Cheng Yue and Promised Love especially. Their clothes were dripping wet as they tightly clung to the girls’ bodies. Their plump chests and tight waists were especially easy to see. Fox and I couldn’t help but stare, this environment was dangerous for all the males here.

.....

Taking a second look at the equipment the dragon had dropped, there

were a total of 3 pieces. A dragon shaped red ring, a fan that was slightly purple, as well as a battle shield with a dense light. The attributes didn't seem all that bad, so I picked up the red dragon ring and looked over the stats. It definitely wasn't bad at all-

【Bloodthirsty Spirit Ring】 (Purple Tier)

Agility: +40

Endurance: +38

Extra: Increase the effectiveness of an Assassin's skills by 10%.

Special: Lifesteal, attacker heals for 5% of total damage dealt.

Required Level: 58

.....

"Damn..." Fox clenched his fist, his eyes were wide open. "What kind of luck is this? A ring with 5% lifesteal, what a godly item! In Ba Huang City, a 1% lifesteal necklace is already selling for 10,000 RMB at the very least; this ring's value has to at least be well into the millions, right?"

The lifesteal effect was generally found on weapons, rings and necklaces. Weapons generally focused on attack power, so the chances of finding a weapon with high lifesteal wasn't too high. Most experts tried to find rings and necklaces with high lifesteal, so they could maintain their health without depending on Healers during combat. That way, they could return health while dodging their opponents attacks and at the same time control the flow of the battle.

Holding the Bloodthirsty Spirit Ring, I looked up at the group, "This is an item meant for Assassins, so Matcha and I won't try to roll for it. Qing Qian and Wan Er, you two try your luck and see who will walk away with this ring!"

"Okay..."

Wan Er spoke softly as she bit her lips. Her small hands clutched the dice tightly as she looked at the equally nervous as Yue Qing Qian. The two girls threw the dice at the same time, eventually landing on 2

numbers-

77 !

14 !

Wan Er had won, leaving Qing Qian sullen, “Sigh, how could I be so unlucky in life...”

I threw the Bloodthirsty Spirit Ring to Wan Er and patted Qing Qian on the shoulder, “Don’t worry, there are plenty of areas in the Dragon Temple; we’ll just clear the maps together and eventually you will get the equipment you desire. If we’re able to get another piece of good Assassin equipment then it’ll be yours without question.”

Yue Qing Qian nodded with a smile, “Okiedokie, thank you brother Xiao Yao...”

.....

Looking at the next piece of equipment, it was a paper fan glowing with a purple luster:

【Void Fan】 (Purple Tier)

Magic Damage: 710-900

Endurance: +41

Magic: +39

Extra: Increase the user’s Magic Damage by 9%

Required Level: 58

Required Gender: Male

.....

“A fan for a male mage...” I mused.

Yue Qing Qian: “Sell it to Soaring Dragon...”

Wan Er: “Then kill him to drop it, then sell it to him again...”

Dong Cheng Yue: “Remember to sell it to him on an alternate character, that way it won’t be awkward if we run into him later...”

Promised Love couldn't help but laugh, "You three are so evil..."

Chapter 218: Great Realm of Desolation

As I inspected the rest of the loot, I noticed that the third piece of equipment was a hexagonal shield with sharp edges on its sides. It emanated a dense holy radiance. As I held it in my hands, I felt an imposing force flowing through my arms. Its defensive power definitely wouldn't be bad. I flicked my wrist and the stats of the shield appeared in front of me. I immediately laughed, "Matcha, your new shield has appeared!"

【Holy Spirit Shield】(Purple Tier Equipment)

Defense: +610

Strength: +40

Endurance: +38

Extra: Health Points increase by 1000 points

Extra: 23% Magic Resistance

Extra: Attack +70

Parry Chance: +27%

Level Requirements : 58

"Uh..." Looking at the stats of the [Holy Spirit Shield], Wan Er opened her mouth in amazement and said, "Aren't these stats way too high? The defensive power of this shield is off the charts...not to mention that it also adds 1000 health and 70 attack points...for Purple Tier Equipment, this is just broken..."

"After this, Matcha can level safely; at this rate, by the time we enter the fourth floor, she will be Lv 58. When she equips the [Holy Spirit Shield], she can be the tank for the last boss..."

Sister Matcha stood there with a dazed expression. She blinked and stared at me. "Boss, the final boss might be Emperor Tier. Can I really do it?"

I smiled and handed her the [Holy Spirit Shield], "I say that you can, so

you can. Don't worry..."

"Yes..."

.....

Looking again, the boss also dropped some other items. Two spirit gems, as well as a lustrous golden tablet had also fallen where the dragon died. It looked like the Guild Creation Tablet, but the shape wasn't right. I held it with both hands and lifted it. It turned out to be a new item—

【Heaven's Decree +2】: After use, gain +2 charm!

.....

"Woaaaahh..." Dong Cheng Yue let out a small smile. "This Heaven's Decree is definitely something good, since it adds charm. Xiao Yao, charm is an invaluable treasure, something that cannot be bought!"

I just nodded my head. "This Heaven's Decree... whatever, let's just have everyone roll for it; we'll see who's luck can win over these 2 Charm points!"

"Okay!"

To everyone's surprise, the Heaven's Decree was rolled away to Fox. Since he got the two points of charm, he felt so happy he could have died.

Standing in the middle of the river and looking at the cables above, I returned the [Frost Rain Sword] back to its sheath and said, "It's almost eight o'clock in the evening, should we take a break? We'll return to the city, repair equipment, and stock up on supplies; my weapon only has about 21% durability left, so we'll all meet up at Ba Huang City at 10 sharp and then come here. We'll pull an all nighter and complete this SSS rank quest in one breath, how about that?"

Promised Love, "Hey...but I still have work tomorrow."

"Take a day off..."

"Give me a legitimate reason, kid!"

“Just say you’re busy...”

“Fine...”

.....

The girls used their return scrolls to go back to their respective cities to prepare for the next part of the quest. I checked my level again and saw that I had reached Lv 60. Since I wasn’t in a hurry to go back to the city, I first looked for Frost to see if I could get a job change.

I climbed back up the iron chain from the now empty second floor. It took about ten minutes to finally reach the first floor, and then ten more minutes to finally arrive at the exit of the Dragon Temple.

“Pa da...”

I collapsed onto the ice-cold stone steps, breathing heavily. I felt extremely tired but I stood up and lifted my Frost Rain Sword as I walked out of the corridor. When I reached the surface, Frost, who wasn’t far from me, stood up and shouted, “Who is it?”

I cast off the cloak on my head and revealed a smile as bright as the sun, “Frost, it’s me.”

Frost was surprised at first, and then laughed, “Oh, you’re okay? That’s great! Have you found where Yun Chen is yet?”

“Not yet...” I took a deep breath. “We need to go back to Ba Huang City to repair our equipment and restock our supplies. Then we’ll come back and finish journeying into the Dragon Temple, but...”

I looked straight at Frost and said, “I’m already level 60, so I need a job promotion. You promised me that you would be my teacher, so please help me with it. I can’t always go to battle without a job.”

“Oh, it’s like that...” Frost looked at me carefully and walked up to me, reaching out her hand to place it on my chest while softly whispering, “Young warrior, tell me. Can I trust you completely?”

I nodded my head vigorously and said with a powerful voice, “If you recognize me as your apprentice, I will use all my strength to defend

Dragon City. I would give my life to protect you. I will keep this vow until the day I die!”

“Until the day you die, you’ll never change it...”

Frost’s shoulders quivered, and a complex array of colors flashed through her eyes. She lowered her head and blinked, showing a faint trace of a smile. “Okay! From this day on, I am your teacher and you are my apprentice. Come, you will receive Dragon City’s welcoming one more time!”

.....

Saying this, Frost once more placed her small, snow-white hands on my chest. She closed both of her eyes, softly chanting, “This dragon’s domain is cold and dark, yet kindness is eternal; even if we die, we will not submit. We will protect this cold barren wasteland and the city which stands upon it. I, Frost, captain of the Dragon Rider Squad of Dragon City, bestow upon you the honor of becoming a Dragon Warrior. From this day on, you are an important part of my life; even if you die and get reincarnated, never let me down!

I looked at the pair of her beautiful eyes and nodded, “Even if I am reincarnated, I will never disappoint you!”

Frost’s mouth curled into a smile, “Good...you and me, our whole lives will be dedicated to Dragon City and we shall remain loyal to the great King Luo Lin!”

“Yes!”

At this time, the sound of bells ringing floated past, and my third job advancement was completed, just like that.

“Ding!”

System Notice: Congratulations! You have completed your job advancement! You received the job title【Dragon City Night Watch】, 【Golden Swordsman】. Because you are the third person in Ba Huang City to get their third job advancement, you received a reward: charm+4!

.....

Okay, my total charm had reached 51 points!

Looking at Frost, I smiled and asked, "Frost, do you have any skills from the third job advancement that you can teach me?"

Frost pursed her red lips and said, "Do you want to see?"

"Yup!"

"Alright, move away from me for a second..."

I took a few steps back. Frost nodded her head and with a soft hum, a glowing radiance shone in her eyes. Suddenly, she opened up her fist, and the sword on her back flew out of its scabbard with a "keng" sound. In the blink of an eye, it transformed into three identical swords hovering in the air. Aiming at a distant boulder, Frost smirked and suddenly clenched her fist together, "Break!"

"Sou!"

The three swords were simultaneously sent flying towards the boulder and the boulder immediately shattered into countless tiny pieces. Holy shit! It didn't seem like a pure single target attack. In addition, this was a long range attack!

"Keng!"

Returning her sword to her scabbard, Frost crossed her arms, slightly smiling at me. "How was it? Do you want to learn it? This skill's difficulty isn't considered that high, you can learn it right now with your level of understanding and comprehension..."

I was very excited and I unconsciously nodded my head. "I'd like to learn it! No, I need to learn it!"

"Yeah, okay..."

A curtain of light appeared in front of my eyes. On the notification window there was a row of dazzling words-

【Great Realm of Desolation LV-1】(S Tier): Call forth the power of the

ancients and gather it on the edge of the weapon. This skill delivers a devastating attack on a designated target, and also causes a strong splash type attack to enemies within a radius of the target. [Great Realm of Desolation] reduces the effectiveness of heals on the target by 50% for 12 seconds. Consumes 50 mana. Cooldown time of 12 seconds.

Cost for learning this skill is 500 gold.

Requires minimum level of 60

Required job [Dragon City Night Watch].

.....

[Great Realm of Desolation]; a very tyrannical skill name, and its attack was also insane, since within a small range of the target it could cause deadly splash damage, not to mention that it also lessened the effect of healing' this skill was designed to kill a single target. It was also a long range attack, so it could kill archers and mages. It could also be used to kill heavy armored classes since the long range attack would give the skill user an obvious advantage.

I clapped my hands once, took out 500 gold coins and learned the skill!

“Shua!”

[Great Realm of Desolation] I saw a golden light as it appeared on my skill list. I could learn S-class skills from my teacher. My hidden class was absolutely awesome!

After successfully learning the skill, I just kept on staring at Frost. She changed her expression and smiled. “Don’t look at me! I can’t teach you anymore right now. You cannot learn advanced skills right now because your comprehension is too low. As for the rest of the combat skills, you can actually learn them elsewhere. If you want to learn them, then go ahead and learn...”

Saying this, a table of skills appeared on the list interface, all of which were generic Lv 60 third job advancement swordsman skills.

【Skyshaker Slash LV-1】(A) : Summon the power of an ancient god,

dealing a devastating attack to the target. Healing effects lowered by 30%. Learning fee 20G. Consumes 30 mana points. Cooldown time of 12 seconds.

You have learned [Great Realm of Desolation] so this skill cannot be learnt.

【Enrage LV-1】(A) : You become enraged and increase your own attack by 1% for a short period. The effect increases based on the amount of damage sustained. Cost 20G to learn. Consumes 30 mana points. Cooldown time of 12 seconds. You are able to learn this skill.

【Blade Rush LV-1】(A) : Focuses Sword Qi on the edge of the blade and you will charge forward 5 yards, inflicting damage on anything caught in your path. Damage is based on your strength stat. Consumes 40 mana. Cooldown time of 12 seconds. Costs 40G to learn.

TL: Sword Qi = Invisible Sword Power

.....

Without thinking, I immediately learned [Enrage] and [Blade Rush]. [Enrage] increased attack power, so a Lv 10 [Enrage] could increase attack by 10%, which was a useful effect. [Blade Rush] was the skill I had always dreamed of having, a sudden attack skill. Its effect was very similar to Ran Min's [Savage Jump Slash]. It was useful both for attacking and running away, making it a very handy skill!

Since I had just acquired three new skills, I had to try them out!

I opened my fingers and behind my body, the Frost Rain Sword leapt out of its scabbard and materialized three swords in midair. I locked onto a frozen pine tree in front of me and curled my fingers into a fist as [Great Realm of Desolation] activated. The frozen pine tree was crushed and torn apart and even the grass around it was cut in half. The effect of this skill was not one bit inferior to [Wind Blade] and it was even an AOE skill!

I used [Enrage] next and a low growl could be heard as an icon appeared above my head in the shape of a warblade. The system showed that I had

raised my attack by 1%; if I were to level up the skill the effect would be boost my attack more.

With both my hands gripping the Frost Rain Sword tightly, I launched the third skill, [Blade Rush]. Suddenly a powerful burst of Qi entered my body; in the middle of the rolling slash, a “shua” sound could be heard as I made an awe-inspiring rush of five yards. On the ground, a multitude of deep marks had formed. If the ground had been a group of players, my sword would have penetrated through their hearts.

.....

Happily standing there, Frost smiled. “Is that enough?”

I nodded my head. “Frost, I need to return to Ba Huang City. See you later!”

“Ok! I’ll wait here for you!”

At this time, Wan Er also sent a small message: “Log off. It’s time to go to dinner...”

“Ok!”

Chapter 219: Pitiabale Person

Explicite Part at the end - "sexual content"

Tonight, the campus of Liu Hua University experienced an unexpected calm. As a refreshing wind blew, two beautiful young ladies stood beside the road for a long time.

I crossed the road and headed towards them, Wan Er suddenly shouted, "Be careful! There's a car!"

"Hua!"

A black shadow flashed by me and another Maybach followed immediately afterwards. I stared, dumbfounded; Li Hua University was a rich kid's school after all. Those were two extraordinary high class vehicles costing more than 5,000,000 RMB!

.....

"Who the hell was that?" I looked at the cars in the distance as I walked towards Wan Er.

Wan Er bit her lip, "I don't know. Who cares about them..."

A moment later, the two cars slowly stopped at the intersection beside the street lamp. With a "Ka" sound, the car door opened, a handsome man, albeit looking quite lazy, stepped out of the car. He moved his arms about while faintly laughing, "Hic... So this is the Li Hua University that Wan Er attends, it doesn't look too bad. From now on, I'll be coming here to practice my Chinese..."

The door of the Maybach opened and three youths in black suits walked out. They respectfully bowed their heads and said, "Chief, should we go sign up?"

"Yes... .."

.....

“My god...” Dong Cheng Yue blinked her eyes, “Is that the Ito Makoto that we met before?”

Wan Er’s pair of beautiful eyes looked into the distance, “To be accurate, that is Wang Ze Cheng. I didn’t expect him to come... How unexpectedly extravagant... This is the famous stuck-up Booster Chinese Division CEO.”

Dong Cheng Yue bit her lip, “Xiao Yao, Wan Er, let’s go eat...”

“Sure ...”

Suddenly a man and a women appeared coming around the corner which were again acquaintances of us. They were no other than the Tyrant of Western Chu, Liu Ying and Xu Yue, his girlfriend. Xu Yue looked furious and pushed Liu Yang away shouting “You, Liu Ying, have never once lacked a woman; I, Xu Yue, on the other hand was born poor, yet you still insist on going out with me? You think I like you for your stupid money? Let me tell you, I don’t care..”

Liu Ying tightly grabbed Xu Yue’s hand, “Ah Yue, please listen to me, I didn’t mean what I said. At that time I was angry with Li Xiao Yao and said words in a fit of rage... The whole of yesterday night, in fact the whole of yesterday...”

Xu Yue was livid, “You dare say that you weren’t in the bed of that woman from the bar last night? Bah, Liu Ying, I am disgusted by you. We are through; even I, Xu Yue, can find a man in the streets who is a hundred times better than you!”

Liu Ying could not help but sneer, “Were those words said in a fit of rage? Then I’ll just pretend I did not hear them. But if they weren’t, god dammit you should find one and show him to me!”

“Haha is that so...”

Xu Yue also sneered, not looking back she walked along the smooth asphalt road; she had even kicked off her high heels. Seeing a few people in front of her, Xu Yue stepped forward, arms outstretched into the hug of the foremost person, Wang Ze Cheng. Without an explanation, she

opened her mouth to kiss Wang Ze Cheng. You could even see some tongue action going on, they were even French kissing...

“Oh...”

Wang Ze Cheng stood there, arms open. He stood there in disbelief at this sudden turn of events while Xu Yue had her eyes closed and diligently kissed him. Her body was tightly pressed against Wang Ze Cheng's body. She had even stretched a hand to tightly grasp Wang Ze Cheng's right hand, while her other was placed directly on his chest.

Wang Ze Cheng used one hand to hold Xu Yue's waist and used the other to guard his chest. However, he took no other action afterwards. He just stood there, completely and utterly stupefied.

Behind Wang Ze Cheng several bodyguards could not help but laugh, “The Chairman has such good luck, you've just entered the university and you were kissed by such a high-quality beauty; so envious...”

“Ah...”

Wang Ze Cheng finally pushed Xu Yue away, with a pale face he said, “Classmate, who are you...”

Xu Yue looked at him and asked, “What's your name and do you have a girlfriend?”

Wang Ze Cheng startled said, “I... I am called Wang Ze Chang, pleased to meet you; I have no girlfriend right now, but...”

“No buts!”

Xu Yue ordered Wang Ze Cheng to hold out his arm and said, “From today onwards, I'm your girlfriend, do you not agree to it?”

“This, no... It's not like that...”

Wang Ze Cheng's face had a hint of embarrassment, “I don't even know your name, I just got here today; we do not understand each other yet. I think this is inappropriate, my fellow student, you ...”

Xu Yue's tears flowed down her eyes and she said while crying, “I want to be your girlfriend, do you want me or not?”

Wang Ze Cheng clenched his teeth, "I... I..."

Not far away, Liu Ying was fuming with rage as he gnashed his teeth. He suddenly punched a lamppost and shouted, "Xu Yue, in my lifetime I have never seen such a cheap woman such as you. Go ahead, why not just sleep with him right here and now? I was blind to like a woman like you, Scram! Don't ever show your face in front of me ever again!"

Xu Yue's mouth curled into a sneer, "Liu Ying, now do you understand how angry I was? Where has all your pride from before gone?"

At this time, Wang Ze Cheng took a few steps back, leaving his embrace with Xu Yue, he turned to her and respectfully said, "I... I do not want to be the person who breaks you two up, I... I'll pretend I was never here, ah... that..."

Wang Ze Cheng suddenly saw Wan Er, Dong Cheng Yue and I walk past and completely froze on the spot, "Lin Wan Er... You guys... How come you are here too?"

Wan Er smiled, "We were here from the start, Boss Wang is in a good mood, hee hee..."

Wang Ze Cheng hastily stepped forward, "Wan Er, I did not mean that, I really didn't mean it. I didn't think that..."

Wan Er with her smooth red lips said, "What do you have to say? Wang Ze Cheng?"

Wang Ze Cheng lowered his head and thought for a while, then said, "We are still friends, right?"

"I suppose?"

"That's good, I didn't mean to offend anyone, that situation just now was really not my intention..."

Wan Er laughed, "No worries, I won't think about it."

Then, Wan Er took my arm, "Li Xiao Yao, let's go eat dinner, today it's your turn to treat..."

"No problem..." My mood suddenly improved by a lot.

Wang Ze Cheng hastily stepped forward and said, "Wan Er, that... I just came to this school; may I treat you to a meal how about lunch tomorrow? Actually it's about your father's Tian Xin Group's particulars that I still do not really understand. I would like to know a few more details; this is also Mr. Lin's desire..."

Wan Er creased her eyebrows, "Is that so? Then... I guess that's fine."

"Yes, Thank You! Thank You!"

.....

Leaving the crowd, we entered the second cafeteria ordered a few meals and began eating.

"Wang Ze Cheng really came to school..." Wan Er looked worried.

Dong Cheng Yue laughed, "Wan Er, you should also see it from your father's point of view, he wanted you to get to know Wang Ze Cheng. In fact, I would say.... he's not the worst looking guy around, he doesn't look all that bad. He kept a calm head even when Xu Yue was like that, you should still consider him a gentleman. Not only that, but he has a very high social status and grew up quite nicely. Here in Liu Hua university he's going to be super popular with the girls. But, personally I still prefer Xiao Yao..."

Saying this, Dong Cheng Yue turned her head to look at me, eyebrows lifted while exposing a provocative smile.

Wan Er was speechless, "Keke, you rascal! You shouldn't take advantage of this situation to tease Li Xiao Yao. Let's talk seriously here, how can I live on campus with Wang Ze Cheng here? He makes me feel rather uncomfortable."

Me, "Relax, as long as I'm here, I won't let Wang Ze Cheng touch even a single strand of hair on your hair."

"But..."

Wan Er pouted with her tiny, red lips, "But you know, he is someone my father approves of, if you get into a conflict with Wang Ze Cheng, I'm

afraid with dad's staunch personality he will definitely do something unfavorable to you, I'm very worried..."

I clenched my fist, faintly laughing, "Wan Er relax, I haven't been living my life aimlessly these past few years; if your father wants to go against me, rest assured, I definitely will not kill him!"

Wan Er: "..."

Dong Cheng Yue tilted her head and looked at me, "What about Wang Ze Cheng?"

"Ignore him, we will continue with our lives as normal..." Wan Er was helpless.

I laughed loudly, "In fact, Liu Ying is the most pitiable, The moment Wang Ze Cheng came to school, he almost directly stole Liu Ying's woman. That Xu Yue cannot be considered a good woman but that certainly doesn't make Liu Ying feel better..."

Dong Cheng Yue lightly laughed, "Liu Ying is what kind of person? He's the son of a wealthy entrepreneur and the bully of the school. Basically his word is law in Liu Hua university and Wang Ze Cheng actually did this to him; hee hee, in the future Li Hua university will become more lively. Wang Ze Cheng and Liu Ying's dispute, will become more intense, wait and see..."

"Yeah..."

.....

Not long after, we finished eating supper. I sent the young beautiful ladies back to the girl's dorm and slowly walked back to the boys dorm. I still had 30 minutes before the appointed time, so there was no need to rush.

"Rustle..."

The wind blew away the leaves, the campus was very quiet. It was 9.30 pm and many couples were gathered in the park, so the area next to the male dormitory was practically deserted. Quietly stepping across the

grass, my Yi Hai slowly spread out, and I became alert. There was someone here!

I quietly slipped closer under the cover of the bushes. I was shocked to see a group of people standing there, all dressed in black suits, hidden there in the darkness of night. In addition, there were seven or eight men lying on the ground issuing a muffled cries. One of them was Liu Ying. Among the few people who were standing, Wang Ze Cheng was one of them and the remaining people beside him were his bodyguards!

“What? Still want to test my skills?” Wang Ze Chen coldly stared at Liu Ying who was on the ground.

Liu Ying’s face was bruised, his hand held his phone, “Just you wait!”

Wang Ze Cheng gave a black suit a look. Immediately stepping forward, the black suit smacked the phone. With a “pop” sound, Liu Ying’s phone was instantly shattered. I was a little surprised; this black suit’s palm strength was quite strong!

“I heard, that you are the boss of this school?” Wang Ze Cheng looked down at Liu Ying, his face showed a lazy smile, “So from today onwards, you need to know that in this school, I’m the boss. Do you understand?”

Liu Ying furiously roared, “Get lost, trash!”

“Is that so?” Wang Ze Cheng laughed, “You can’t even keep your woman and you can still say that?”

“Xu Yue... Xu Yue she...” Liu Ying couldn’t say anything.

.....

“Xu Yue...”

Wang Ze Cheng turned to Xu Yue in his arms as his mouth revealed a smile, “Now she is my woman...”

“No, she’s not!”

“Is that so?”

Wang Ze Cheng lowered his head and gave Xu Yue a kiss. He raised his

hand to turn Xue Yue around and had her hold onto a nearby tree. Following this, he untied his belt and raised Xu Yue's short skirt...

.....

“Bang!”

Liu Ying punched the ground, his eyes burning with fire, “You dirty swine! Xu Yue, you whore!”

Xu Yue closed her eyes in pleasure as she sneered at Liu Ying.

Chapter 220: Proof of Cruelty

Wang Ze Cheng's mouth smiled cruelly with self-satisfaction. He looked at Liu Ying and said, "Liu Ying, son of the Chairman of Hangzhou Fengling group, your company's value is barely 1.2 billion! Don't you realize how worthless you are? Booster is well over 100 times wealthier than your group! You're nothing more than an ant I can crush anytime I want."

Liu Ying nearly broke his teeth in anger, and his eyes became bloodshot as he looked at Xu Yue, "Slut, you slut...."

Xu Yue opened her eyes and heartlessly looked at Liu Ying. She faintly said, "Didn't you say some women only want to be loved while others only want **, and I am the latter? Now, didn't I just prove to you that you were right when you said that I do not love you?!"

Liu Ying whimpered, "Slut, you slut....."

Wang Ze Cheng could not help but laugh coldly. He leaned down and spoke, "Liu Ying, just acknowledge the fact that you are no match for me. I've returned to China to conquer and Xu Yue is only my first woman. The woman I, Wang Ze Cheng, truly want is Wan Er. Moreover, I will get her. Just you wait and see....."

Liu Ying stood up vigorously and brandished his fist. However, one of Wang Ze Cheng's bodyguards lifted a leg to kick him in the stomach, sending him sprawling backwards, moaning!

Piggy was lying face down on the floor, his face covered with blood. He wailed at Liu Ying, "Boss, don't fight them! We're no match for these guys. They're all a bunch of freaks..."

Liu Ying ignored him and roared as he advanced onwards. Another kick sent him flying back once more with blood spilling out of his mouth.

.....

"Whoosh!"

A cold wind blew forth as the bodyguard was about to hit him for a

third time and an arm came out of nowhere and blocked him with a “bang”. The bodyguard’s arm broke with a sickening crunch, followed by a kick directly into his stomach, throwing him onto the grass.

“Who dares interfere?!” Wang Ze Cheng’s cold eyes glared at me.

I stood with my fist swaying slightly in the wind. “Wang Ze Cheng, I heard... that you were planning to make a move on Wan Er or did I hear wrong? If so, I’m afraid you won’t be seeing the sunrise tomorrow!”

“Li Xiao Yao! So it really is you!”

Wang Ze Cheng moved forward and said, “Everybody, get rid of him!”

Suddenly, 4 black suited bodyguards came rushing at me!

The sound of a fist whistling through the air came through loud and clear as I moved my shoulder like a pendulum to evade the blow. Simultaneously throwing out my right hand out, I struck against another bodyguard’s fist head on. Unexpectedly, my right hand felt a bit numb afterwards; even though I used about 30% force with the blow which should have been much more than any normal person!

Quickly increasing my Qi, a strong wind blew around my body as my strength was increased by 50%!

Both of my fists went up as I lowered my body. “Bang, bang!” My punches were accompanied by the sound of bones breaking and the bodyguards flying. At the same time, the other two bodyguards came at me with their fists ready.

“Hua!”

Bringing my right foot to sweep through quickly, I swept their feet out from under them, causing them to fall to the ground. I could only guess from their screams of pain that their ankles were probably broken.

Each and every bodyguard was now on the floor, broken and screaming endlessly.

Wang Ze Cheng’s face went pale as he looked at me with a faint sense of fear.

"I'll ask again, are you going to make a move on Wan Er?" I asked coldly.

Wang Ze Cheng laughed faintly, "I only wish to pursue her."

"People like you are scum and not worthy of someone like her."

"Hmph! Is that so?"

Wang Ze Cheng rolled up his sleeves before throwing himself at me with his right hand outstretched. It went towards my chest but before it could land, I gave him a punch with 50% of my strength!

"Bang!"

My arm became numb due to the force of my punch. I remained in the same place but Wang Ze Cheng flew backwards through the air, only stopping when he hit a tree. His clothes were shredded from the impact and his face paled from the pain, "Li Xiao Yao, you are good, really good ... just wait and see ... you will regret this later ..."

After that, he turned and ran into the forest.

.....

"Li Xiao Yao....." Liu Ying laid on the floor, watching me with extreme embarrassment, "Thank Thank you....."

I glanced at him, "I didn't do this to help you. Liu Ying, you're quite pitiful. So is this the cost of playing around with someone's feelings?"

Liu Ying laughed self-deprecatingly, "Forget it, just stop ridiculing me already....."

At this time, Piggy quickly ran over and slowly helped lift Liu Ying up, supporting him he said, "Boss, let's go to the hospital. What should we do about Wang Ze Cheng's bodyguards?"

"Forget about them....."

.....

Xu Yue leaned against the willow tree while giving us an icy glare and suddenly laughed, "Liu Ying, did you really think that this day would never

come?”

Liu Ying snorted while Piggy helped him to his feet and the two slowly started to walk away from her.

In that moment, my phone also rang. It was Wan Er's number–

“Hello, Li Xiao Yao, what are you doing Everybody's waiting for you.....”

“Oh, I'll come right away. I was just taking care of something.....”

“Hurry and wrap it up, don't waste our time.....”

“Okay.....”

.....

Although my thoughts were jumping around like mad, I quickly returned to the dormitories and got online. The tense affairs between Wang Ze Cheng and Liu Ying weren't even something I thought I'd interfere with but it had happened. Nevertheless, it would be better to help the group out with clearing the map first before thinking about it any further. After all, there was no way Wang Ze Cheng would dare make a move on the girl's dormitories at night. All of the people Lin Tian Nan stationed there were experienced mercenaries who have lived through countless battles; there was no way they would lose to Wang Ze Cheng's bodyguards.

“Shua!”

In Ba Huang City, I quickly repaired all of my equipment and then went to buy some Lv 6 potions. Walking off toward the northern bridge, I saw the other 9 players already waiting for me.

“Yo...” Dong Cheng Yue tilted her head as she looked at the emblem on my shoulder. With a smile, she said, “Congratulations on your 3rd class advancement, Dragon City's Night Watch. You're no longer the Scavenger or Guardian of the Tombs...”

Wan Er chuckled, “Since you're the Night Watch, your rank should be higher than both the Scavenger and Guardian classes...”

Yue Qing Qian's beautiful eyes sparkled with clear amusement, "Brother Xiao Yao, what skills did you learn; they're super strong right?"

I nodded my head.

Matcha flapped her wings, "Come on then, show everyone here what you've learned. We haven't seen the new skills of the swordsman yet!"

"Alright then..."

Lifting my hand to unsheathe the sword, it transformed into 3 separate blades, [Great Realm of Desolation] had been activated. The river water in the moat for Ba Huang City was struck by the three blades simultaneously with an aura of death flowing out from my blades. The river was split into 7 different river flows while the riverbeds were clearly visible. It was quite astonishing to see. Clenching my fists tightly as I activated the [Enrage] skill, I grabbed my sword once more! "Pow," came the sound as I grabbed the hilt of my sword; my body and sword were both combined with Sword Qi seeping out. Flying forward 5 meters, fragments of the brick walls of the city began to fly as my sword left deep gouges in it.

The several females in the group gaped at me with their eyes as wide as saucers and mouths open so wide, a blue whale could fit in it! Wan Er had been speechless for some time before finally saying, "Wow, is that the legendary skill [Blade Rush]? I've heard it has an extremely potent killing ability, is that true? Swordsmen during the late game are the strongest physical class and a bunch of third promotion swordsmen using [Blade Rush] to break enemy formations will be quite a mainstream strategy."

I nodded, "Yea, this skill [Blade Rush] is equivalent to Old K's [Whirlwind Slash], though the attack range is much smaller. But if a lot of people were to cast this skill at once, its lethality would be extremely impressive. As long as there is sufficient attack power behind it, then it will instantly break through any shield without an issue."

Wan Er nodded her head, "Not bad, not bad~"

I looked at Dong Cheng Yue, "Dong Cheng, the third class advancement for Mages, how strong are the skills?"

“Let’s see....”

Dong Cheng Yue smiled earnestly, “Our Mana shield is strengthened. We also get a skill called [Indigo Sea Arrow] which summons an ice arrow to attack a target. It’s a super strong single target attack and then, the third one is actually my favorite skill...”

“Oh? Why is that skill your favorite?”

“Why don’t we try it?” Dong Cheng beckoned to me with her finger in a provocative manner . “Xiao Yao, try to grab me; if you can even touch me, I’ll give you a kiss...”

My mouth twitched, “Is that even a reward? Why don’t you give me 1000 RMB instead if I catch you for a deal that’s actually worth it...”

Dong Cheng Yue’s face went green, “You asshole, it’s not like kissing me will kill you! Fine then, 1000 RMB it is. If you can catch hold of me within 5 seconds then I’ll give you your money!”

“You’re on!”

I was taking this seriously since money was involved. Raising my arms, I cast a Lv 6 [Haste]. My Purple Dawn Boots took me toward Dong Cheng at rapid speeds and in a moment, my hand had clasped down onto her shoulders!

“Hua!”

“MISS ! ”

Dong Cheng Yue flashed away from me completely into a different space, appearing to my side 7 meters away. My boots reversed the direction I was going in and immediately spread out my hands to grab her one more time!

“MISS ! ”

Again, Dong Cheng Yue teleported behind me, her tongue sticking out gleefully, “Brother Xiao Yao, you can’t do it. There’s no way you can catch me...”

Cold sweat was already breaking out on my forehead, was this one of

the new skills of a mage? To be able to jump twice in a row, would she be able to jump a third time?

Trying once more, and sure enough, there was a third leap!

“Pa...”

Sitting on top of a rail, I waved my hands, “I’m not playing anymore. I can’t catch you within 6 seconds...”

Wan Er laughed gently, showing off her two dimples, “What a shame, this is the mage’s 3rd class advancement skill [Dimensional Leap]. In 30 seconds, one can jump up to 3 times consecutively. You missed the chance...”

My lips pursed together, “Yea, with a stronger mana shield and [Dimensional Leap], a mage’s vitality will really improve by a large margin after their 3rd class advancement. How annoying will it be to try and kill one...”

Dong Cheng Yue twirled her staff around, “That’s enough of that then, don’t even think about what could kill me or not, let’s head out. It’s time to finish this mission tonight!”

“Alright, move out!”

.....

Arriving once again at the entrance of the Dragon Temple, Frost moved aside to let us through.

Following the cable through the starry skies, we finally reached the third layer. Up ahead, the third map was within sight as we rapidly approached. The land looked like it was a fiery pan—smoke was billowing up everywhere. Magma was bursting from the ground all over the wasteland. Before we could even step foot on this layer, Yue Qing Qian and Matcha were already coughing, “This map is really hot...”

I noticed Wan Er’s face was oozing with sweat as she looked at me, “The third layer is quite different from the second layer...”

I pointed off to a distance to answer her, “The mobs on this level are not

the same either...”

.....

Far away in the wilderness, an elf completely enveloped in fire jumped, as an unpleasant sound was produced by it. This must be one of the aborigines of Dragon Temple. Approaching it, I took a look at the attributes, and immediately shared it with the rest of the party—

【Fire Elf】 (Phantom Tier Monster)

Level: 64

Magical Attack: 1150-1500

Defense: 900

Health: 12000

Skills:**【Fire Manipulation】【Fireball】【Inferno】**

Description, Fire elves, favorites of the fire elementals, are able to freely control fire. They are living beings that have emotions and strong fire attacks. These fire elves were imprisoned by the Fire Dragon king for thousands of years. As a result of their imprisonment, their hearts are filled with burning hatred and wrath and are ruthlessly cruel as a result. They are just another type of guards that protect the Dragon Temple.

Chapter 221: 10 Charm for One Night

“These Fire Elves, we should kill them one by one.....” Wan Er looked out at the Fire Elves, happily jumping around close to their vicinity and slightly smiled, “Phantom Tier monsters, they are a new type of monster with a magic attack of 1500. Phantom Tier monsters have an approximate stat increase of 20% as a hidden attribute; 1800 magic damage would hurt a lot wouldn’t it? Boss, why don’t you go try it out and go first?”

I nodded, raising my Frost Rain Sword and rushed at a nearby Fire Elf; I had barely approached it when its body started to shake and it issued a chilling scream. Its aura of fire condensed as the Fire Elf raised both its arms and summoned a mass of fire. The Fire Elf immediately shot it out towards my chest and with a “peng” sound it hit me!

794!

As expected, in comparison to physical damage, magic damage was more lethal; we shouldn’t try and kill them in groups otherwise even I’ll be insta-killed!

As I quickly spread out my palms, my Frost Rain Sword separated into 3 sharp blades with a “ding” and flew out, aiming at the direction of the Fire Elf, [Great Realm of Desolation]!

1997!

A large damage number flew up, and at that same time Fox exclaimed with a surprised face, “Dang! Xiao Yao’s attack is really high, I believe [Great Realm of Desolation] is still a level one skill right? And it’s almost 2000 damage already just with that!? This is too overpowered! “

With her pair of attractive eyes observing the Fire Elf, Wan Er giggled as she commented, “Uncle Fox, it’s not because Li Xiao Yao’s attack is too high, but probably because the skill [Great Realm of Desolation] is relatively strong? It’s an S-Tier single target attack skill and a third promotion skill from the high-class NPC Frost, it’d be more unbelievable if it wasn’t this strong; plus the Fire Elf’s defense is also lower, so 2000

damage should be pretty normal.”

I smiled slightly and quickly shortened the distance between the Fire Elf and myself. Suddenly it let out a continuous loud cry and a sea of fire covered the surroundings. Still it wasn't a big deal, I used a normal attack before activating [Blade Rush]. My body fused with the light of my sword as I dashed 5 meter ahead with a “Hu cha!”. Penetrating through the body of the Fire Elf and escaping the sea of fire, I turned around and activated a Lv 6 [Combo] and with a following attack from Baby Bobo, in a short amount of time this Lv 64 Phantom Tier monster died crying and fell on the ground, turning into 10 streaks of light and flying towards every one of us.

“Wow.....”

Matcha widened her pair of beautiful eyes as she stared at me, mouth curved laughingly, “Boss’ understanding of his skills are really deep and the overall attack rhythm has great coherence to it. Hoho, having this kind of leader will guarantee us a great future”

Dong Cheng Yue’s pretty cheeks were blushing, “Not only that but this leader is also very handsome, everyone likes him so much, what to do.....”

Promised Love interrupted, “You little girls be a little more serious, We need to continue killing monsters, quickly clean up the Fire Elves on this map. Oh right Xiao Yao Zi Zai, that Fire Elf dropped something, check out what it is.....”

“Right!”

I walked up to the front and picked up the spoils: there was a Lv 57 Silver Tier cloth wrist guard which added some magic attack, it was pretty good and could be sold for some money later. There was also a fiery red card and waving my palm, the card’s effects turned to words and were displayed in front of me—

【Fire Elf Card】(A Tier) : Increases user’s magic attack by 5%, reduces defense by 10%, lasts 60 minutes, requires Lv 60 to use.

.....

“Um.....” Lifting my eyebrows and laughing: “A consumable card that increases one’s magical attack by 5%, Dong Cheng, what’s your magic attack right now? Tell us.....”

Dong Cheng Yue let a sound and looked down, saying “ 2097 magic attack as of right now, how is it?”

I laughed, “Adding 5%, then it’ll be 2201 points of magic attack at the very least....”

Dong Cheng Yue suddenly felt really happy, “ Then.....then wouldn’t my magic attack already surpass the number one Mage, Fang Ge Qi? Hehe, I’ve never thought about it.....”

Shaking the card in my hand, “If you assume....Fang Ge Qi didn’t receive a storyline quest and didn’t encounter Phantom Tier monsters and they didn’t drop magic attack increasing cards. These Phantom Tier monsters will soon be known to other players and be killed by the masses. Thus the actual stats are still more important, so good luck on that. Here, I’ll give you the card.....”

Dong Cheng Yue accepted the card and carefully placed it into her bag as she said, “I’ll wait until we’re up against a BOSS or when we’re PKing; it’s not worth it to use right it now.”

I nodded: “As you wish.....”

Wan Er carried her Scarlet Edge, her purple eyes stared down the faraway Fire Elf as she said, “We should split into smaller groups and start killing, otherwise it would take far too long to kill them all. This fiery red plain has a bunch of Fire Elves and it would take us 24 hours before we could kill them all...”

“How will we be split into groups?” Fox asked.

Wan Er bit her red lips then thought it over, saying, “We’ll split into 3 groups, Li Xiao Yao, Who’s Blue, Fox, you 3 will be in one group, Yue Qian, Promised Love and I will be in another group. Matcha and Dong Cheng will be with Darling Duck. This way, each group will have a tank, a damage dealer and a healer, so killing them won’t be as difficult.”

TL: Okay – 9 People on the quest

I nodded, “Right, we’ll follow Wan Er’s plan; everyone will split up to farm. Try to finish up this map in 4 hours, we can’t stay here for too long, [Zhan Long] still needs someone to manage it.”

Matcha chuckled, “Oh right, the Guild Leader and Vice Leader are both here sweeping the map, while outside there’s only Old K, plus Li Mu and his group of roughnecks. If [Zhan Long] starts something with another guild, a lot of problems will start up without a clever Guild Master.”

I smiled, “Don’t worry, Wolf is cautious, thoughtful and cool-headed. With him around, there shouldn’t be any major problems. Furthermore, Yue Wei Liang and Thousand Suns are in the guild too, nothing to worry about.”

“Okay.”

.....

After we split into teams, I took Who’s Blue and Fox and started advancing on the right side of the map. One by one, the Fire Elves started to wander into the valley cheerfully as if they were celebrating the new year. Our plan to kill them all was not at all complicated. It called for me to be the main assault, Fox to be the marksman and Who’s Blue to heal us when needed. Although I could easily kill all of the Fire Elves by myself, having someone heal me made life much easier.

“Hua-cha!”

The blade of my sword shone brightly as I ran forward and cast [Great Realm of Desolation]. It was a pity that the activation signs for the skill were quite obvious, plus it took a second for me to gather strength. Although the power was strong, it was better suited to kill monsters than other players. It would be a miracle if it could land on top ranked players like Jian Feng Han and Q-Sword.

Still, I needed to focus on using my newer skills more. It was necessary to level them up as soon as possible. Right now, [Great Realm of Desolation] took too long to gather Qi but with the factor of terrain, the

map's lighting and other factors, the success rate of this skill wasn't 0%. I just needed to be more diligent when I attacked. If the attack lands, then any opponent would be half dead.

“Cha!”

My sword sliced through the head of a Fire Elf, droplets of magma spilled out from it along with a screech of pain. This was the 7th Fire Elf to die by my sword and it had also dropped a Fire Elf Card for me. Pocketing the card, I planned on giving Dong Cheng Yue the two cards I had collected already. A card that gave a 5% increase in magical attack was a new type of item, so it was necessary for our own group to take advantage of this carefully. Other than the card, the Fire Elf also dropped a Devil Token, this would go to Matcha later to help raise her level!

Off in the distance, Matcha was dancing around with her Glass Soul of the Dragon Spear as she killed monsters while Dong Cheng Yue came to her rescue when needed. The two together were killing at a faster rate than I was, though Wan Er herself was killing at a rate that was even faster than the both of us. Fire Elves fell instantly to the overwhelming might of the [Gouge]+[Twin Blade Harmony] combo. The Healer on her team had barely spent any time healing her and spent most of her time attacking monsters instead.

.....

In the blink of an eye, more than two hours had passed. The majority of the Fire Elves had been wiped from the field. The battles continued and after a while there was finally a change in topic in the party chat--

Wan Er: “I...I didn't mishear that right? A few minutes ago, I heard the sound of an ambulance outside the dorms....”

Dong Cheng Yue: “You didn't hear wrong... it's true....”

“What is the situation?” Promised Love asked.

Dong Cheng Yue laughed faintly, “I heard from my class representative that not long ago, a group of students fought in an undeveloped part of the school grounds. Quite a few people were injured and some of the

injuries were pretty serious...”

My heart thumped, already having understood something. I asked, “Dong Cheng, do you know who was fighting?”

Dong Cheng Yue strained her mouth, “Who else would it be....it’s Liu Ying, Piggy, and their group. It seems their injuries were quite serious; a few bones were broken. A total of 9 people were wounded from the fight....”

“Who did Liu Ying fight with?” Wan Er asked.

Dong Cheng Yue laughed lightly, “I don’t know, the paramedics only saw Liu Ying’s group when they had arrived at the scene. They were probably suppressed by someone else. Hehe...how interesting, for someone from a second generation group like Liu Ying to have finally stumbled onto rough lands...”

TL: Second Generation = rich kids

I furrowed my eyebrows. That couldn’t be possible. Those bodyguards under Wang Ze Cheng’s commands had either their arms or legs broken by me, there was no way they could leave by themselves. Did that mean those bodyguards had been rescued by someone else? Maybe this was the case, otherwise they couldn’t have crawled back by themselves, not from that wasteland...

I didn’t say much. It was best that the actions I had taken in those small woods remain unknown to Wan Er. After all, it was not my place to say what type of person Wang Ze Cheng was or else it would make me seem inferior. Also, it could easily cause her to gain some misunderstandings about me. The thing I wanted to do was to stay by Wan Er’s side and protect her so that no harm would come to her, especially from the likes of Wang Ze Cheng. I kept having this feeling that the CEO of Booster’s Asian Branch was not that simple. For a youth like him to have reached where he stands right now, he must either have some type of strong background or a supporter from behind the scenes. Another possibility was that he possessed something that gave him an advantage over others.

Engrossed in the task, we continued to kill the monsters. These Fire

Elves gave quite a bit of experience. Since their drop rates were also quite high, the riches poured out like water. Clearing the monsters on this SSS-ranked quest map was really a great enjoyment.

.....

After nearly 4 hours, we had finally completely wiped out all of the Fire Elves on the field. We didn't have to kill all of the monsters to advance to the next level but the experience was very generous. If we hadn't killed all of the Fire Elves before continuing onto the next level, we would've regretted it.

The end of the map was a piece of land that had grown wild. Twelve towering totem pillars were rooted to the ground. In the center there was a large plaza with a faint amount of magical light floating around. Our three small groups regathered at this plaza.

"What drops did you get?" I asked while facing Wan Er.

Wan Er checked her bag, replying, "9 Fire Elf cards, 4 Devil Tokens, 3 Gold Tier equips and 27 Silver Tier equips and the others are not worth mentioning; how about you?"

I laughed and responded with, "15 Fire Elf cards, 7 Devil Tokens, 6 Gold Tier equips, 44 Silver Tier equips, how is it?"

Wan Er raised her head and looked at me, whining : "So this is the difference between 51 points of charm and 39 points of charm? So unfair, if you drop another heaven's decree, it's mine, no objections....."

Dong Cheng Yue giggled on the side, "That's right, 1 point of charm for a kiss. Collect 10 points of charm and Wan Er will roll around with you under the sheets....."

Wan Er blushed and raised her daggers, "Do you want to die Dong Cheng?!"

Dong Cheng Yue's whole body shivered, "Miss Wan Er is so charismatic, she has a large amount of tolerance and is very intelligent..., this little girl here humbly backs down! I will forever serve by Xiao Yao's side and will be your willing fallback girl , hehe....."

Wan Er: “Seriously, enough.....”

Chapter 222: Indigo Sea Shot

3 AM: a group of people gathered at the end of the third floor in the Dragon's Temple. Behind the twelve totem poles was an elevated platform with a 10-meter tall copper statue of a dragon perched on top of it. The statue looked as if it would come to life at any moment.

“Sha Sha...”

Wan Er stepped over fallen leaves, slowly closing the distance while wielding her dagger. Reaching out, she touched the base of the statue. Looking back at us, she asked, “Is this the boss of the third floor? The copper looks really solid. What now?”

Dong Cheng Yue answered, “The melting point of copper is 1083 degrees Celsius. Given a certain amount of pressure, it will melt in around an hour's time. Should I try doing that? My high-heat flames...”

I took a glance at her. “You and your weak flames... There must be another way to free the boss from the copper shell. Let me try...”

“Alright”, Wan Er said as she retreated.

I walked forwards. My feet pushed against the ground and my body soared 3 meters high. Landing at the base of the statue, I took out my Frost Rain Sword and slashed once at the dragon's foot with all my might.

“Keng!”

Sparks flew everywhere. The attack only left a shallow scratch to the copper shell, not even a dent!

This is not right... The weak point must be somewhere else!

Stretching my hand outwards to grab the dragon's tail, I pulled myself atop the back of the dragon and climbed all the way up to its head. I then dealt another blow to the statue. The entire floor shook but the dragon once again did not seem like it was moving at all!

.....

“Boss is like a blacksmith. He keeps knocking and knocking...”, Said

Matcha.

Fox laughed loudly. “A blacksmith with his tiny figure? He can’t even lift a hammer...”

Wan Er replied, “It still beats the strength of this premature uncle...”

Fox: “You... Grr, let’s settle this!”

Wan Er flashed the edge of her blade: “One second!”

“What does that mean... One second?”

“All it takes to kill you ...”

“You!”

.....

Ignoring the quarrel between Fox and Wan Er below, I continued smashing and bashing the giant dragon statue. Suddenly, Promised Love raised her voice and yelled, “Xiao Yao, come down quickly! The boss is awakening!”

“What’s the situation?”

Standing on top of the dragon’s head, I held tightly onto one of the dragon’s horns. The ground shook as the base of the copper statue emanated mystical runes. At the same time, a smouldering heat radiated from the copper statue. The next moment, red light seeped through the cracks that formed; the copper became molten copper!

“Shit! It’s a Fire Dragon...”, I finally snapped out of my daze.

“Quickly get down!” Wan Er anxiously said as she held her dagger.

I was like a cat stuck on a tree... it was more than ten meters high from the ground and I couldn’t find a chance to get down!

“What do we do now? Boss can’t get down...” said Matcha nervously.

Wan Er, wielding her dagger shouted, “Li Xiao Yao! You just stay there and be a tank! We’re killing the boss anyways, you might as well keep attacking from up there...”

With one hand grasping tightly on its horn and the other on my Frost Rain Sword, I replied grimly. “I can’t even stand firmly, how am I going to fight like this? I can’t even see the boss’ face...”

“Just hit him! Why do you need to see his face?!”

.....

“Hou!”

Finally, the Fire Dragon melted all of the copper, escaping his shell. Its scales glowed abnormally bright under the moonlight with flames covering its entire body. My Purple Dawn Boots turned red upon contact with the scalding red scales. My health was also slowly being drained away. In this situation, I don’t even need to be hit by the boss; I would be burned to death!

With my left hand grasping the dragon horn tightly and with my right hand holding my Frost Rain Sword, I spread my fingers and activated [Great Realm of Desolation]. My sword split into 3 other swords and I aimed at the head of the Fire Dragon. “Kacha”, my attack landed right on target!

1548!

Luckily, this attack could pierce its defense. Catching the Frost Rain Sword that returned, I focused and released a [Fierce Ice Blade], fiercely stabbing the Fire Dragon’s head!

1327!

The damage done was reduced by a bit. I raised my hand and used a Heal!

“Hou!”

The Fire Dragon felt the pain and violently shook his head to shake me off. I fell off and while my body was in the air, a giant pair of scarlet red eyes looked straight at me and I was able to make out the dense smoke puffing out of its nostrils. Without another word, I grasped my sword tightly as I used a [Combo]. Five continuous hits landed on the dragon’s

head!

“Peng peng peng peng.....”

Loud sounds blasted in quick succession. After taking so many hits, the dragon finally started raging. Raising his claw, he swiped down, scratching my chest causing a jolt of pain. Before I landed, the dragon opened its jaw and fan-shaped flames burst from its mouth. In that moment, my entire body felt as if it had evaporated. The pain from such an intense heat was unbearable! Above my head, a chain of numbers appeared–

1625!

+1574!

2128!

+728!

+1426!

.....

Luckily, Darling Duck and Promised Love healed me quickly and I managed to survive. With a “Peng” my body, charred black, rolled on the ground, leaving a long trail on the stone floor. I finally halted my rolling after knocking into a totem pole. After receiving another few heals, I stood up again and rushed towards the boss with my sword in hand. I knew very clearly that if I was a second late, everyone would be decimated by the boss!

Twisting my hand, seven meteorites flew by. This Lv 5 [Seven Star Fragments Slash] was aimed directly at the boss’ thick skull!

“Peng!”

921!

The AoE attack had not been enough to break through the defense of the boss. I quickly used a [Binding Chains] but it unexpectedly missed. Although it had missed, the Fire Dragon was indignant. Its sharp claws came flying out in a cross shape formation to attack. Behind, the three

Healer girls hastily got ready to cast [Heal] on me while Wan Er and Dong Cheng Yue's Tigermen pets were attacking the boss near its foot. With a short snort, the dragon lashed out with his tail to crush the Tigerman to death!

At this moment, I got even closer to the BOSS and finally got to see the stats of it. Once I got confirmation of it, I immediately shared it amongst the party chat.

【Shadow of the Fire Dragon – Paige】(Emperor Tier BOSS)

Level:64

Attack: 1950-2300

Defense: 1470

Health: 500,000

Skills: **【Dragon Claw】 【Breath of the Fire Dragon】 【Volcanic Domain】**

Description: Paige was created based on the Fire Dragon and bestowed with a portion of his powers. After the Obsidian Dragon God imprisoned Mohist City, he summoned the four Saint Dragons and used their blood and soul to create shadows of the Saint Dragons. With a part of the power of the four Saint Dragons, Paige was one of the few to guard the Dragon Temple as a warrior of the dragon race.

.....

“Wow...” Wan Er's Scarlet Edge flitted across the tail of the boss as she struck with [Twin Blade Harmony]. “We finally have another Emperor Tier Boss. With 2300 attack and an impressive appearance, Qing Qian has to be really careful with this one!”

“Pa!”

Yue Qing Qian launched her own [Twin Blade Harmony] right after and immediately had to dodge the boss' claws right after. This Boss' AI was really high! The Aggro system was completely tossed aside for this battle!

Yue Qing Qian's combat experience was extensive and so she quickly dodged the incoming claw with her [God's Dance]. Her head showed a

MISS on top but that didn't stop her face from paling in terror as she retreated, "Sister Cang Tong, I can't pierce through its defenses. This boss is really strong, a single hit would probably kill us quickly: how scary!"

Wan Er nodded back to her before retreating as the Fire Dragon brandished its claws towards the beautiful Miss!

I quickly brought out my sword, the tip of my sword glowed bright; it was time for [Blade Rush]!

"Hua cha!"

The sword penetrated through the body of the dragon, appearing on the other side of it before stopping right in front of Wan Er. Flashing the sword once more, I earned the aggro of the boss and saw a single claw heading straight towards me. The Shadow of the Fire Dragon sucked in a large breath of air, which alerted the whole group of the ominous event that was about to hit us!

"Huang!"

1984!

My entire body grew hot from the sudden change in temperature after nearly being burnt alive. Behind me, Wan Er extended her parasol but was still sent flying back by Paige 10 meters. "Wuu..." came her painful cry as her eyebrows knit together. Her health was already almost at rock bottom so she hastily took a health potion as she jumped onto the sidelines. Indeed, an Emperor Tier boss was a tough opponent.

.....

"Heal boss, we need him to stand a chance here..." Matcha winked her eye, "This Emperor Tier BOSS is too strong, but our boss is also strong. Even if Paige hits him with [Dragon Claw] and [Breath of the Fire Dragon], he may still live. The third skill, [Volcanic Domain], I'm not too sure about. Wan Er and Qing Qian should watch for an opportunity while keeping a safe distance away from the BOSS. We don't want to provoke it again but if it starts to use [Volcanic Domain], then use [Absolute Step] and interrupt its casting. This is our only way of beating it so far..."

Wan Er and Qing Qian nodded at the same time, "Alright, we understand."

Dong Cheng Yue raised her Fire Elf Card to increase her magical attack. With a swish of her magical staff, an indigo colored arrow made from magic began to condense. Another flick of her hand sent it flying forward with a "Shua", right into the neck of the Fire Dragon. This was the [Indigo Sea Arrow] from the 3rd advancement of a mage. Its power was super strong, and the Fire Dragon suddenly howled in pain-

2874!

"Damn.." Fox's eyes squinted at the number, "Dong Cheng is quite the Mage...ai, very few heavy armor players of the same level would be able to live after taking a single [Indigo Sea Arrow] right?"

While casting another spell from her staff, Dong Cheng laughed, "It's hard to say, Xiao Yao could definitely take a hit from this. Old K and Dong Cheng Lei, they don't have much magical resistance, so they'd die. Of course, this skill takes 2.5 seconds to cast and I have to carefully aim my spell before I use it. Otherwise, I'm afraid the one dying would be me. If Old K uses [Whirlwind Slash] and [Savage Jump Slash] and breaks through my [Mana Shield], that would be too embarrassing..."

Matcha laughed, "Old K is quite pitiful. He hasn't done anything and yet still gets ridiculed..."

Fox laughed as he fired his rifle, "If he knew he was ridiculed by a beautiful girl, he'd be happy..."

Yue Qing Qian clenched her dagger tightly as she looked at the Fire Dragon, "Brother Xiao Yao is being ripped to pieces by the boss and you guys are still able to joke around at this time. What horrible people you are..."

Fox smiled, "If I had such a beautiful young girl looking over me like this, I'd happily die for her..."

Yue Qing Qian went silent after that.

.....

As time slowly went by, after around 12 minutes, the Shadow of the Fire Dragon's health had finally dropped down to 50%!

“Hou hou...”

As it howled, the Fire Dragon reared its head. The earth began to shake as the dust began to fly in the air.

Wan Er's eyes narrowed, “It's coming, Qing Qian, we have to interrupt it!”

.....

“Shua...”

Activating [Absolute Step], the two girls sped like lightning towards the BOSS with their daggers twinkling in the light. With a growing sense of anticipation, I could only watch with my heart in my throat in hopes that they would succeed.

Chapter 223: Beating the Fire Dragon

“Ca!”

Stepping on a giant stone in the middle of the grass, Lin Wan Er leapt, her pair of snow white legs gave off a captivating luster under the moonlight. Using the momentum, she landed on the back of the enormous dragon's neck. The daggers rose high and then came down, stabbing it's neck. The place she stabbed was where I had slashed numerous times and the scales flew while blood poured out. Attacking an already injured spot, a skill's damage would be heightened dramatically. Wan Er was a video game veteran so she naturally knew this point very well.

MISS !

Unfortunately, her skill was returned with a big MISS. Lin Wan Er landed on the ground, her small agile boots took a turn and she charged back to the boss' back. She activated her [Gouge] skill but was yet again rewarded with a MISS. The beautiful miss's face immediately paled, “Oh no, this is bad...”

Yue Qing Qian's dagger attacks also resulted with two MISSes. Immediately, I started my skill, [Binding Chains]!

The fifth MISS flew out. This Emperor Tier boss' evading abilities were really too high. All of our abilities that could intercept its skill had success rates that were less than 20%. We really had to force our way through now.

.....

Seven bright fragments of stars flew out from my Frost Rain Sword. As I unleashed [Seven Star Fragment Slash], I shouted out, “I'll keep the boss with me; Wan Er, Qing Qian back out or you'll be killed!”

“Wu...”

Lin Wan Er and Yue Qing Qian moved back with lightning speed. Unfortunately, their retreat was a tad too late as giant holes suddenly

appeared in the surrounding ground. In just a moment, with a “Gugugu” sound, a large amount of red hot lava spurted out from the ground, just like countless volcanoes erupting all around. As the magma fell onto our arms and face, plumes of burning smoke oozed out. It was painful and our health decreased very quickly!

“Ahhhhh....”

Lin Wan Er cried out in surprise as she quickly unfurled her umbrella to block some of her body from the lava. At the same time, she grabbed Yue Qing Qian’s arms and the two ladies started to run for their lives.

[Volcanic Domain]’s AOE range was extremely wide with a radius of 100 meters. Even our Healers could only cast [Heal] within a 40 yard radius. It was too late to retreat, so we could only receive [Volcanic Domain]’s lava baptism!

“Be careful!”

Promised Love looked from afar and said, “Darling Duck, I’ll revive you, you revive Who’s Blue, and Who’s Blue will prepare to revive Xiao Yao Zi Zai. We can’t be annihilated just like this. We have to keep our flame burning!”

Who’s Blue was flustered, “ Big Sis Promised Love, then who’ll revive you? What do we do if you die...”

“It’s okay...”

Promised Love sighed a little, “If I don’t go to the underworld, who’ll go...”

On the other side, Matcha didn’t make a sound and brought down her shield in front of Promised Love. She reached out her hand and took the beautiful Healer into her arms as her shield struck the stone slab with a “Keng”. As the [Phantom Shield] skill was activated, three golden shields floated around them, protecting Matcha and Promised Love!

[Volcanic Domain]’s countless miniature volcanoes erupted at our feet and fumes of smoke billowed as scorching hot lava spurted out. I alternated between using [Heal] and gulping down bottles of health

potions but I still couldn't keep up with the rate of my health falling. Far away, Fox let out a weak groan as he knelt on the ground, fell on his musket and died. Darling Duck and Who's Blue couldn't keep up against this kind of attack either and the two fell to the ground with a whimper.

“Shua!”

Promised Love's resurrect skill was activated as Darling Duck stood up. She immediately cast [Revive] on Who's Blue. On the other side, Lin Wan Er's steel umbrella was almost burnt into nothing by the lava. She cried “Wu...wu...” lightly as she tumbled out of the volcano cluster with Yue Qing Qian. Unfortunately, under the last spurt of molten lava, Yue Qing Qian's body trembled weakly as her last thread of health was drained by [Volcanic Domain].

1427!

A white light shone down as Yue Qing Qian died. This Emperor Tier boss was indeed intent on tearing our small group into shreds.

“Shua shua shua..”

Rays of healing light continuously poured down on me as Promised Love tried to pull my health back up with all her might. Who's Blue also stood back up. The cluster of miniature volcanoes calmed down and the thick smoke surrounding us dispersed. We had overcome [Volcanic Domain]'s seemingly infinite 10 second attack!

.....

“Keng!”

Dragon claws clashed with my Frost Rain Sword as sparks of fire burst forth. I moved a few steps back, flicked my hand and unleashed [Great Realm of Desolation] against the boss' lambella. Bathed in sword light, I used [Blade Rush] and attacked the boss' body with a “Hua Cha” sound. In addition to my [Strength of a Thousand Men] and my combo attacks, the Fire Dragon's health fell by a lot.

Matcha moved her shield away and stopped blocking Promised Love's field of view. Promised Love turned deathly white and weakly laughed,

“Scared me to death, I thought we’d be annihilated... Luckily Matcha protected me, so I wasn’t killed by Volcanic Domain... Heehee, Xiao Yao Zi Zai is getting really strong, he could withstand such a strong attack from the boss..”

My face was pale, “Don’t say anymore, quickly heal me, I’m dying...”

Darling Duck let out a giggle, “ Guild Master really has it hard...You have to endure the boss’ painful attacks and still take care of our safety.”

Matcha’s eyes were lucid, “The boss’ [Volcanic Domain] attack power is very high but the cool down is at least 10 minutes. We should hurry up and increase our attack output and aim to defeat him before his second [Volcanic Domain] attack. Otherwise, we could possibly lose more levels. Even Yue Qing Qian lost a level this time, so our losses are a bit big.”

Yue Qing Qian who was brought back to life through Who’s Blue’s [Revive] slowly stood up. She didn’t cry and instead laughed a little, “It’s okay. I’ve learnt my third job advancement skill and got my third job advancement anyway. Even if my level fell to 50, my stats still retain the hidden bonus. Wuwu...had I known earlier, I’d have chosen the Moon Elf race too. Big Sis Cang Tong’s survivability is so strong...”

Matcha pouted her lips, “That’s because Beautiful Lin’s operative abilities are too strong. The positions she ran to just now is extremely favorable and avoided more than 90% of the [Volcanic Domain]’s attack. Otherwise how could you two Assassins still be alive...”

Darling Duck suddenly looked grim, “There is still one severe problem.”

Me: “What?”

Who’s Blue and I were both revived, so we only have 50% mana. This makes mana a big problem, so I’m worried that our heals won’t keep up.”

Matcha said, “Relax, Boss can still endure it in the mean time. With Big Sis Promised Love’s full [Heal]s, both of you can use Lv 4 [Heal]s to help a little. Just don’t go all out.”

“Okay!”

.....

As time passed away bit by bit, under the baptism of multiple [Breath of the Fire Dragon]'s, my Nebula Armor was almost charred black. But luckily my Nebula Armour had an option to ignore 7% defense on the enemy, thus decreasing Shadow of the Fire Dragon's 1470 defense to 1367. Otherwise it wouldn't be so easy to kill. Very quickly, around 9 minutes later, the boss' health fell below 5% and everyone started to get excited—

Lin Wan Er: "It's an Emperor Tier boss and it's dying, heehee..."

Yue Qing Qian: "Drop an Emperor Tier sword please, best if it's an superior sword for Lv 61..."

Matcha: "Eh? Yue Qing Qian, why would you want a sword instead of a dagger to drop?"

"So that Big Brother Xiao Yao can use it!" Yue Qing Qian blinked her eyes as she replied.

Matcha smacked her palm to her forehead, "What..."

I asked: "Currently, what's the most expensive equipment?"

Promised Love laughed, replying, "Superior weapons of types like swords, battle-axes, and daggers are the most expensive because the professions that use them depend a lot on their weapons. Other than that, probably rings and necklaces that add health. Then it would be defensive armor and etc..."

I muttered back, "In other words, superior swords are the most expensive?"

"Yeah, more or less..."

Yue Qing Qian wielded her dagger and unleashed [Twin Blade Harmony] as she laughed, "Big Brother Xiao Yao, your pet...is too pitiful. It died so many times under the boss attacks..."

I looked at Baby Bobo, a little speechless, "Yeah, its growth is a little low, so its health did not increase much. Dying is considered normal, it's just an elite pet after all, now it can't even be compared to a lot of other

players' pets..."

"Oh..."

.....

As we watched the boss' health near depletion, everyone held their breath almost at the same time. It was the death of another Emperor Tier boss, what drops would it give us?

3% !

2% !

1% !

Just as its health fell to the last thread, the Shadow of the Fire Dragon finally lifted its head back up. The surroundings lit up with fire as the ground trembled slowly. This chap was starting to call forth its [Volcanic Domain] again. It was exactly 10 minutes, Matcha's prediction capabilities were really accurate!

"Break the skill!" I quickly shouted out.

The two Assassin ladies quickly activated their skills. Unfortunately after 4 MISSES flew out, their small faces turned green, "Why can't we break it?!"

Yue Qing Qian gripped her dagger, "Big Sis Cang Tong, hurry and run..."

Instead, Lin Wan Er raised her two arms, activating [Twin Blade Harmony]. Her face was resolute as she said, "We are not running. It's the last 1% health, we should attack all out and kill it before it activates its skill! Dong Cheng, use Thunderbolt Finger and Indigo Sea Arrow!"

Everyone's blood was boiling with killing intent, KILL!

[Twin Blade Harmony], [Indigo Sea Arrow], [Thunderbolt Finger], [Double Shot] and all other kinds of attacks fell on the Shadow of the Fire Dragon's body. It howled pitifully as it called out [Volcanic Domain]. Linked in an endless line, countless volcanic craters protruded out from the ground. Scorching hot molten lava bubbled inside the volcanic crater, just like boiling water. It would erupt at any time!

“KILL!”

I steeled my heart, raised my hands and unleashed [Strength of a Thousand Men] in addition to a [Combo], “Pi pi pa pa”, attacking wildly. However, Shadow of the Fire Dragon just couldn’t be killed, its body swaying weakly with 0% of health left. Still not dead yet, isn’t this cheating!!

The other ladies raised their heads to look at the boss and immediately fell into chaos—

Lin Wan Er: “Gosh, it didn’t die even after this...”

Yue Qing Qian: “We are doomed, we are going to die together with Big Brother Xiao Yao...”

Matcha: “The BOSS total health is 500,000, 1% is 5000. This is not even 1%, so its health should only be around 2000. Just a little more, everyone do your best! Ah, the boss skill is activating, we’re finished...”

.....

I raised my hand and clenched my teeth as I unleashed [Great Realm of Desolation]. Three blades of the Frost Rain Sword trembled in the air and suddenly flew out, a green ray concentrated on my body. It was a fatal strike and furthermore, I had unexpectedly, landed a critical strike!

4478 !

“Shua!”

A pillar of golden light flooded out as I rose to Lv 61. Shadow of Fire Dragon howled pitifully in grief as its body shattered into thousands of flaming pieces, drifting through the wind. [Volcanic Domain] was immediately put to an end and at the same time a bunch of drops fell to the ground. Emperor Tier boss drops, this is what we were most interested in!

Bathed in a golden pillar of light, Yue Qing Qian giggled happily, “The Emperor Tier boss experience is really high, I gained the level I lost just now...”

Lin Wan Er looked at the ground filled with equipments and pursed her lips, “Li Xiao Yao, go and look through the equipments. Hopefully one of them is an Emperor Tier leather armor~~”

“Thank you for the well wish!”

Chapter 224: Nightbreeze Woodscent

Dragging my burnt legs, I walked unsteadily to the spoils of war. I was not worried about an Assassin stealing the loot because we were within the Dragon City borders. Ordinary players would not dare approach here and with Frost guarding the Dragon Temple, no one could possibly enter.

I sat on top of the burning hot floor as I divided the equipment. Altogether, there were 4 items. Compared to the drops of a Purple Tier Boss, Emperor Tier Boss' drops were far more impressive. One of the drops was a pair of orange glowing leather boots which looked as if they were sewn with dragon skin. Another drop was a heavy scarlet red helmet which was craggy and dignified and it made my heart beat quite loudly. The third drop was a water bamboo colored umbrella that seemingly had no use. Finally, there was a dagger glowing dimly.

I picked up the orange glowing leather boots first and then waved my hand over them to see the stats. Just as the glow implied, the boots were Emperor Tier, these were definitely from the legendary lucky hands that I had—

【Dragon's Cry Boots】(Emperor Tier)

Type: Leather

Defense: 255

Agility: +48

Endurance: +45

Strength: +44

Extra: Increases magic resistance by 17%

Extra: Increases melee attack by 9%

Level Requirement: 60

.....

Raising the boots up in the air, I laughed: "Leather armor! Who wants it? It is close combat fighting equipment so Fox can't have it..."

Fox angrily yelled: “Go away, you jerk!”

Lin Er Wan looked over the pair of boots with her beautiful eyes and then turned to Yue Qing Qian. She said: “Qing Qian, I will not roll for these boots and let you have them. But I will take the bamboo colored umbrella since it is a Moon Elf equip. Okay?”

Qing Qian nodded: “Emperor Tier boots, I won’t suffer any losses in this trade. I will listen to you, Sister Cang Tong.”

As a result, the two girls finished up their transaction.

As I threw the Emperor Tier boots to Yue Qing Qian, I picked up the water bamboo colored umbrella. A burst of energy ran through the length of the umbrella and entered my palm. I waved my hand and the attributes appeared and as a result, everyone jumped in alarm. Who would have thought that would drop such an item——

【Nightbreeze Woodscent】(Emperor Tier)

Type: Defense Item, Moon Elves

Defense: 270

Extra: Increase magic resistance by 25%

Extra: Increase chance of blocking by 37%

Level Requirement: 61

.....

Placing the elegant umbrella in front of Lin Wan Er, I laughed faintly: “If you replace your default iron umbrella, this could enhance your defense and your defensive rate by a lot. It’s a good item.....”

Lin Wan Er giggled and nodded: “Yep!”

While speaking, the iron umbrella on her back changed to the appearance of the Nightbreeze Woodscent with a “Shua” sound . With her two hands gripping her two daggers, her posture graceful and her cloak lightly fluttering, the aura she emanated changed, giving her a more luxurious and sweet-tempered appearance. Of course, that

umbrella's killing power was not decreased and after equipping an Emperor Tier armor equipment, Wan Er's potential maneuvers surged by a huge amount. Most likely, even if she met an expert like Jian Feng Han, she would not be too inferior in any respect.

Continuing my inspection, I held the scarlet red helmet against my body. It flared a blazing red and after stroking it, the helmet's attributes immediately appeared in front of me, showing incomparably powerful stats--

【Divine Fireguard Helm】(Emperor Tier)

Type: Armor

Defense: 370

Strength: +49

Endurance: +48

Magic: +45

Extra: Elevates the user's magic resistance by 27%

Extra: Elevates the user's physical attack by 12%

Effect: Enhanced vision, field of vision at night is increased by 10 meters

Level Requirement: 61

.....

Matcha's level difference was a bit large and she insisted on refusing it, so this helmet was mine.

Immediately, I switched out my Fire Beacon Helmet with glee, as this Lv 45 Purple Tier equipment ought to have been discarded long ago. Once I put on the Divine Fireguard Helm, I immediately felt all of my senses elevate by leaps and bounds. It was also nighttime at the moment and my field of vision increased by quite a lot. In many fights, field of vision was one's lifeline. This was almost like Battleship, whoever could attain further area coverage of mines was the near certain winner.

I looked at my stats again, and they were all enhanced greatly--

【Xiao Yao Zi Zai】(Dragon City Night Watch)

Level: 61

Attack: 1735-2220

Defense: 2031

Health: 3624

Mana: 1736

Charm: 51

.....

My defense directly broke 2000. For now, this exceeded 95% of the Monks and Knights in game, a state they could never attain. Thinking about it, even Matcha who had a whole body full of top tier equipment had not yet reached a defense of 1900. From this, it could be seen that Emperor Tier armor was really powerful!

Matcha looked at me with pretty eyes, "Boss, your defense broke 2000?"

I was surprised, "How did you know? "

"Hm, looking at your laughing appearance, it's obvious..."

Wan Er at my side said, "What I want to know is the value of your mana."

I checked, "1736 points...."

"It is still a bit lacking..." Wan Er furrowed her brows, saying, "[Great Realm of Desolation] consumes 50 mana at the first level, [Blade Rush] consumes 40 mana. This implies that when these two spells are trained up to the seventh level, they will consume 350 mana for [Great Realm of Desolation] and 280 mana for [Blade Rush]. You calculate; how long will your 1736 points last?"

I rubbed my forehead, "Yea, what a headache, apart from a single Emperor Tier equipment, I have nothing else that increases my mana. If only I had 3000+ mana points, I'd be able to use skills without restrictions..."

Promised Love laughed lightly from the side: “It’s fine, Xiao Yao’s 1736 mana points is one of the highest values I’ve ever seen. Our Emerald Porcelain Guild has a few Swordsmen with only 600+ mana. Not even mentioning skills like [Great Realm of Desolation], even Lv 6 [Flame Axes] used consecutively 2-3 times empty out their mana. After that, they can only anxiously use normal attacks; don’t bring up how miserable that is....”

Matcha lifted her shield, saying, “Yeah, Boss is already excellent among those who use heavy armor equipment. 1736 mana points, so as long as he economizes his mana consumption, it will be enough for him to constantly use his skills while PKing. Using Lv 7 [Combo]s and the other skills from Lv 3-5, it should be fine ...”

Darling Duck laughed lightly: “Considering Guild Master’s 2200+ attack power, using Lv 3-5 skills is too wasteful. Moreover, I’ve heard that the heavy armor type’s common third job advancement attack skill is [Skysaker Slash]. Boss’ [Great Realm of Desolation] is a whole tier higher than that. Lv 7 [Great Realm of Desolation] is really a luxury. Hehe, after continuing to work hard and getting more Emperor Tier equipments, it will be possible to constantly use those skills... Oh right, is Boss following the path of the Battle Reflux Style or the Thorn Style?”

I nodded, “I am not completely sure either. I will follow my own path for the moment...”

“Alright... ”

Wan Er looked at the ground, “Wow, there are quite a few drops; let’s divide them quickly and head to the fourth floor! ”

“OK ! ”

The fourth equipment, a Lv 61 Purple Tier dagger, was given to Qing Qian under Wan Er’s agreement. Thus, Qing Qian’s main weapon attack power was boosted quite a bit; after all, Emperor Tier equipment are invaluable right now. At the moment, most top-ranked players all used Purple Tier equipment. Step by step, our [Zhan Long]’s dream of becoming the an unrivaled guild was being achieved.

Upon further inspection, there were also Gems and Pardon Cards and finally, on the ground was a purple colored book that had been left behind. Grabbing it in my hands, I took a look at its specs. –

【Bullet Screen】 (S rank): Uses gunpowder to create a 40×40 yard smoke screen, causing the enemy players to lose their sight. Players in it will not see clearly for a duration of 12 seconds. Required profession: Musketeer, Required Level: 55, Consumes 1 Charm Point to learn.

.....

I turned around and gave the [Bullet Screen] skill book to Fox, “Learn that, it will be a very practical skill during battles. Hehe, I’m sure you understand Fox...”

Fox laughed lowly: “I understand, I understand....”

“Shua!”

Light was emitted from Fox’s hand and the new skill was successfully learnt. [Bullet Screen], during PK, would enable him to blind a group of enemies. This skill will be a trump card if group’s teamwork is good. As long as we have this skill, [Zhan Long]’s small-scaled PK strength will rise to a new level!

.....

After approaching the early morning at around 4 AM, we stood at the edge of the third level where the iron chains were suspended high in the air. I took a deep breath and said: “It’s the final level; let’s move out. The earlier we clear this part of the map, the earlier we can get some sleep.”

Matcha covered her little mouth as she yawned a few times, “Nya, so tired, I still have to wake up tomorrow afternoon to cook food for the livestock....”

Fox: “We are not livestock...”

I laughed: “No problem. If we stay up tonight, Matcha can just bring everyone to eat out tomorrow afternoon. Our studio isn’t lacking in that much money anymore and this would allow you to save some more time

for sleep.”

“Really?” Matcha was endlessly excited: “Boss is the best, a thousand times better than those other livestock. They only know how to squeeze out as much labor from me as possible.... boo hoo....”

Fox’s face was dark: “How...the crap you’re spitting out is too much!”

Wan Er smiled, “Let’s go, don’t babble so much, we can talk while we slaughter our way through the fourth floor. ”

.....

Standing on the high platform, we leaped over and grabbed the chains and using makeshift hooks, we slid down the whole way. From afar, the last part of the map could be seen suspended among the stars in front of us. It was a huge area of ice, however there was still some fauna growing in it. A large number of shrubs and winter trees were packed together on the area of the map.

“Pa....”

Gently falling to the ground, I stumbled forward a few steps, leaving some footprints behind in the snow.

Right in front of us was a giant around 3 meters tall, its whole body was flawlessly carved with a chunk of ice for its head. It did not have eyes but it had a pair of thick arms that created cold gust when they moved. The force those arms was quite apparent but the most astonishing thing were the words that appeared above the large fellow’s head that made one’s heart race—

【Ice Giant】(Emperor Tier)

Level : 1

Decription: Can be sealed

.....

“Gosh, a sealable monster...” Wan Er pursed her red lips: “And it’s even Emperor Tier. Matcha’s Illusionary Butterfly is only Purple Tier. This Ice Giant must be very strong...”

I gritted my teeth, and said in a low voice: “We’ll bypass that Lv 1 and go kill the normal Ice Giants. Once the illustration is dropped, we’ll come back and seal it!”

“Okay!”

We snuck around it very cautiously to prevent attracting its attention. Behind the Lv 1 Ice Giant was a field of ice where countless Ice Giants were energetically running around, occasionally letting out dull shouts.

Ice Giant, Lv 65 Phantom Tier Monster!

Before I got closer, one of the Ice Giants let out a sharp cry and suddenly raised its arms to form an ice spear. With a “Pa” sound that broke through the winds, it directly penetrated my Nebula armor—

512!

Chapter 225: Emperor Tier Pet

“Wow, Xiao Yao’s defense is really reassuring! A Lv 65 Phantom Tier Monster’s skill only did 500 damage. What a beast...” Dong Cheng Yue giggled.

I gripped my sword as I rushed in to slash at the Ice Giant. “Use fire attacks! It deals additional damage to them. Should we split into groups or stick together?”

Matcha looked into the distance, “There are no safe spots here, so let’s kill them slowly. Besides, the Ice Giants’ Ice Spear is a ranged attack. If boss doesn’t attract all the aggro, I’m afraid all our Healers would be killed! Your 2000 defense seems impossible to break but breaking a Healer’s 800 defense is as easy as pie...”

“Ok. Understood...”

.....

Within the canyon, the Ice Giant slaying expedition commenced! Even though we looked like one single group, we actually had two teams. Yue Qing Qian, Dong Cheng Yue, and I were one team, while Lin Wan Er and the others formed another. My defense was enough to ward off the Ice Giants’ attacks. Even taking two or three at a time wasn’t a problem as long as I had a Healer on me. Lin Wan Er, on the other hand, had an Emperor Tier umbrella which raised her defense by an incredible amount. Not to mention, this Number One Assassin in <Destiny> had godlike movements. Both offense and defense at the ready, Wan Er could nimbly switch between the dagger and the iron umbrella without breaking a sweat. She could single-handedly kill one or two Ice Giants effortlessly.

Since the release of <Destiny>, the number of female players who chose to be Moon Elves were in the thousands but none of them could bring out its potential like Lin Wan Er, swiftly changing between offense and defense in battle. Wan Er’s parrying and blocking had a success rate of over 70%. Above her head, Misses appeared non-stop. Even though occasionally a few hits got in, the 5% life steal was enough to replenish

her health. She didn't need any healing at all!

After a long string of victories, two hours passed as we pushed towards the center of the map. Finally, after a pitiful cry, an Ice Giant fell and a dark blue card dropped. It was the Ice Giant Illustration!

"What now? Who will learn it?" I asked.

Yue Qing Qian blinked continuously and said, "The success rate of sealing a pet is influenced by one's Charm. Brother Xiao Yao's 51 points of Charm is the highest among all of us. You learn it. Let's capture that Ice Giant! "

"Yes!"

The whole group stopped killing monsters and followed me to the entrance of the Fourth Floor. There, we found the same Lv 1 Ice Giant still lingering there. Far away, I took out a bunch of sealing cards from my inventory. Throwing one out to the Ice Giant, a magical glow appeared from under its feet. Lines of light swirled around the giant, trying to suck him into the sealing formation. Shrinking, the Ice Giant struggled to get free!

After a few seconds, the sealing failed!

Again!

The first 7 cards failed but on the 8th card, finally, the Ice Giant howled as it entered my pet space. At the same time, a notification sound popped in my head--

"Ding!"

System Notice: Congratulations! You successfully sealed an【Ice Giant】(Emperor Tier). You are the first player to seal an Emperor Tier Pet. Your reward: +5 Charm!

.....

I was overjoyed, now I had 56 Charm! This Charm attribute was really important. In battle, it could increase the chances of attacks being closer to the upper limit. For example, if my attack was 1735-2220, with high

charm every single one of my hits would deal close to 2220 damage. This is also under the presumption that my minimum damage was also pretty high. If there were some players whose difference between their minimum and maximum damage was over a thousand, then the Charm's effects would be even more prominent.

Looking at my pet space, a large monster surrounded by snow flakes appeared--

【Ice Giant】(Emperor Tier)

Level: 1

Attack: ★★★★★☆

Defense: ★★★★★★☆☆

Health: ★★★★★★

Agility: ★★★★★☆

Magic: ★★★★★☆

Skills:【Ice Spear】【Ice wall Sweep】【Absolute Zero Absorption】

Excellence: 91%

.....

Looking at the Ice Giant's stats, everyone was shocked speechless--

Lin Wan Er's mouth was agape: "Wow... What a huge growth capability... It's skills aren't half bad at all. This pet, should be the most powerful pet in existence right now... "

Matcha added, "The [Ice Spear] is an Ice attack, which will decrease the enemy's speed. The [Ice Wall Sweep] causes the Ice Giant's arm to transform into an Ice Wall which it can attack with. Using this would give out a great damage output. Furthermore, [Absolute Zero Absorption] ...Boss, what does [Absolute Zero Absorption] do?"

I took a glance at the skill description. "Absorbs the ice energy in the air to return 3% of the Ice Giant's health every second."

"My goodness....." Promised Love said as her mouth opened and closed.

“This..... Wouldn’t this Ice Giant be invincible? Individual attack, AoE attack, and it can even replenish its own health. Adding that its powerful growth potential.....”

I nodded and laughed, saying: “Exactly. 5.5 star attack, 6.5 star defense, 6 star health, it’s indeed near matchless. Adding 7 points to Strength, 2 to Endurance, and 1 to Defense every level up and once it’s Lv 60, it’ll have an attack of at least 1900, 3000 points of health, and a defense of 1500..... This Ice Giant, whoever wants it, let’s just handle it now, or should we roll?”

Promised Love coughed, saying: “Actually, I’m a Healer and everybody understands..... Later on, I’ll need a pet with high damage output, so how about just sell this Ice Giant to me? At present, about how much does an Emperor Tier pet fetch?”

Matcha shook her head: “There is no market price. In Ba Huang City, the auction price for Purple Tier pets should have already been set around 10000G.....”

Lin Wan Er laughed lightly: “But Big Sis Promised Love is one of us, so it should be cheaper. We can’t refer to the market price.....”

Yue Qing Qian answered: “The price of Emperor Tier pets should be about 3-5 times that of Purple Tier pets, so it would be around 40000G. We’re friends, so by how much should we reduce the price?”

I asked probingly: “50% off? 70% off?”

Lin Wan Er giggled: “Let’s make it 70% off then. If it’s too expensive, I’m afraid Big Sis Promised Love will cry.....”

“Alright, then that would be 12000G, right? Big Sis Promised Love, are you willing to accept?”

Promised Love was slightly excited: “Of course I have to have it! 12000G for an Emperor Tier pet, it’s too cheap. What is the current exchange rate of gold currency, I haven’t looked at it in many days already.....”

“It should be 1:6?”

“Then that would be..... 72000RMB? Splitting it between us 9, everybody would get 8000RMB, so I’ll just transfer 8000 to each of your bank account numbers. Wait for me for about two minutes.....”

Promised Love muttered a bit as she stood there unmoving. A few minutes later, each of us received a bank account transfer notice. 8000RMB had entered into our accounts!

I inwardly rejoiced. This income came about way too fast. Just one dividend was already 8000, something that I had never dared to dream about! As expected, in Destiny, the most expensive things were not equipment, but rather pets and skill books!

Promised Love gleefully summoned the Ice Giant and it followed behind her like a mammoth-sized monster.

Walking alongside Lin Wan Er, I said in a low voice: “Wan Er, what does Big Sis Chengshuo do that she just casually bought a pet worth 70000. She’s way too generous.....”

Lin Wan Er laughed lightly, then lowered her voice and moved closer to my ear, saying: “Big Sis Chengshuo owns her own company, what do you think? If she likes it, much less 70,000, even if it was 700,000 she would still be able to buy it off without blinking.”

Me: “.....”

“Alright, the poor shouldn’t be discouraged. Earn money diligently. You will strike it rich one day.....”

“It’s hard to say. I’m afraid that in this lifetime, such a chance will never come by.....”

“Weak, I can help you find an opportunity later.....”

“.....”

.....

Going back on the icy fields, we resumed killing Ice Giants. At the same time I prayed that we’d find another Lv 1 Ice Giant. Doing so could earn us even more funds... But alas, Lady Luck did not smile upon me again. We

didn't find another Lv 1 Ice Giant.

8:00 AM in the morning. The last Ice giant fell prey to my hands. When I checked, my inventory was full of equipment; over 50 of them! Ranging from Green Tier to Gold Tiers, we had them all. After selling these, we could gain at least ten thousand RMB. This is the SSS rank quest's specialty; one could earn a living here by just farming equipment drops.

"That's....."

Yue Qing Qian hefted her daggers and looked out into the distance as her face suddenly turned red: "What is that, it's really....."

The other girls' faces also turned red!

Looking straight into the distance, there was a vast altar. Several worn down totem poles stood there, seven of them, in fact. Each one corresponded to a placement of a star, arranged like the constellation of the Big Dipper. Attached onto the poles were chains with runes on them. The chains intersected in the center penetrated the body of a naked old man. Besides that, between the iron chains were several copper coins being tied together by lines of fine red threads which added a hint of mystery to the sight.

The old man kneeled there with his head hanging low, not muttering a single word. His hair cast down, drops of dark, fresh blood flowed along the iron chain. The blood gathered in a blood trough in the middle of the altar, forming a colossal dragon's portrait that glowed faintly, giving an eerie feel.

.....

"That's....." I shuddered all over: "That's Elder Yun Chen?"

Lin Wan Er nodded: "It most likely is..... Only, he's not wearing any clothes....."

Dong Cheng Yue's pretty face was red: "Yeah, why did the game designers do it so that he's not wearing any clothes. Furthermore, he's not that long either, at most six or seven centimeters. Xiao Yao don't you think so?"

I stared at her, expressionless: "Dearest, is not your main focus a bit off?"

Dong Cheng Yue shuffled her feet: "I was speaking truthfully. It's not that it's not long and it's most definitely not as long as yours....."

My face turned deathly white.

Fox squinted his eyes: "Beautiful Dong Cheng has seen Xiao Yao's?"

Dong Cheng Yue lowered her head, her face blushing as she didn't say a word. I really wanted to beat her to death!

Lin Wan Er's face also went pale as she stared at me: "You and Dong Cheng..... nothing happened right....."

I felt like dying right then and there: "Have you never seen her tell lies before?"

"Haha....." Lin Wan Er laughed faintly, saying: "Where's the boss? Or will we simply save this Elder Yun Chen? This SSS-rank quest can't be this easy right?"

"Of course it wouldn't, the BOSS is concealed and will wait until we make a move....."

"Then let's make a move?"

I stared, saying: "Who'll go?"

"You go, who else is there....." The Beautiful Miss chuckled as she looked at me.

.....

Finding my resolve, I turned towards Elder Yun Chen. Unsheathing my Frost Rain Sword, I knelt on one knee in front of the old man. Reaching out, I touched pat his shoulder and said, "Old man, are you okay?"

Elder Yun Chen slowly opened his eyes but suddenly, an evil grin appeared on his face as he looked at me. My face started to freeze up as I heard him say, "Haha... Young one, are you ready to die?"

Chapter 226: Shadow of the Ice Dragon – Hans

I gawked as the “Yun Chen Old Man” in front of me started to shed his outer skin, revealing an austere looking plate of armor underneath. His skin kept rupturing and peeling off and he turned into a strange looking warrior wearing armor. His pair of deep blue eyes gave off a clear light and his right hand suddenly grasped the iron chain as his fingernails turned into a sharp, glimmering blade. With a “Pu chi” sound it pierced through my Nebula Armor as a high damage number flew out—

1989!

“Damn!” Enduring the pain, I hurriedly moved back. But the “Yun Chen Old Man’s” right arm was stuck into my chest. The corners of his mouth twitched as he gave me a malicious smile, “Brat, is it painful? Who are you to think that you can help Yun Chen that old chap out; dream on! Let me tell you, even if you’re a fallen God, don’t think for a second that you can escape Dragon Temple with that old geezer!”

As he said that, he raised his left palm which suddenly transformed into 3 sharp, shining blades that flew towards me, splitting the wind. It was a three combo attack that would definitely kill me!

I couldn’t care that much anymore. I crossed both of my arms on my chest and made use of my Frost Rain Sword to block my front. At the same time, I used Heal and gulped down a health potion!

“Gugugu...”

The three attacks’ damage numbers flew out and mixed together with the healing numbers—

1573!

1621!

+1611!

+1977!

1711!

Darling Duck's and Promised Love's two [Heal]s helped me stay alive but that tremendous force still slammed into my arms and shoulders. After receiving such a heavy attack, my whole body flew like a broken kite and I fell on the ground with a "peng". After tumbling on the ground for a few meters, I laid unmoving, battered and exhausted in the middle of the icy ruins.

.....

"Wow..."

Matcha carried her shield over and quickly struck her shield on the ground. She shielded me from the front as she breathed, "Protect Boss, this Yun Chen Old Man is fake..."

"Of course it's fake..." Lin Wan Er and Yue Qing Qian clenched their daggers.

"Hahaha..."

Yun Chen Old Man raised his head and laughed, his human voice slowly turned into a dragon's roar. His body shook violently as he transformed. His two hands that were supporting him on the ground turned into a giant dragon's forelegs. His scalp peeled off to reveal a monstrous looking dragon head that replaced his previously human head. His body swelled at a tremendous speed as he quickly turned into a colossal monster in front of us. Then, his dragon mouth slowly moved as he spoke in human language, "You ridiculous people, did you really think I would be stupid enough to place Yun Chen Old Man here for you to uncover his seal? Dream on, that Yun Chen bastard must die. He killed so many people from my dragon tribe. These kinds of people cannot be forgiven, he should have gone to the netherworld much earlier!"

"Gudong!"

I looked at this Ice Dragon and gulped. At the same time I moved closer to read its status. Indeed, the last BOSSes would always be considerably stronger than the others before it-

【Shadow of the Ice Dragon – Hans】(Emperor Tier Boss)

Level: 65

Attack: 2000-2350

Defense: 1700

Health: 700000

Skills: 【Dragon Claw Triple Slash】【Icicle Domain】【Fury of the Ice Dragon】

Description: Hans is the shadow of the former Ice Dragon King and he preserved a part of the Ice Dragon King's battle abilities. Summoned by the Obsidian Dragon God to guard Mohist City, he is a Shadow Saint Dragon. The shadow of the ice dragon is now one of the eternal guardians that imprison Yun Chen in the Dragon Temple.

.....

Lin Wan Er's expression turned serious, " This Lv 65 Emperor Tier boss is so much stronger than the Lv 65 Fire Dragon we fought earlier. Be careful, the last BOSS' difficulty is not your usual cup of tea. Protect Li Xiao Yao well, we can't be annihilated too quickly..."

I didn't say anything and instead charged forward with my Frost Rain Sword. I smashed my fist hard onto the ground and [Binding Chain] burst forth from the floor!

"Peng!"

Miraculously, the Ice Dragon Hans was immediately bound by the chain. I took advantage of this chance and moved forward; six hexagonal lights surged on my sword as I unleashed my combo attack. Immediately, four damage numbers flew out but the numbers made everyone's mouth drop with shock—

474!

412!

434!

399!

.....

“Gosh...” Matcha gasped, “What is this? Boss has such a high attack, but even his combo attack couldn’t break the BOSS’ defense? This... Isn’t this too much....”

Promised Love breathed, “The BOSS’ name is Hans and it’s as tough as a rock. While it only has 1700 on the surface, after adding in the BOSS’ additional attributes it should have at least 2300 defense. It’s already good that Xiao Yao Zi Zai can inflict this kind of damage; if it were other swordsmen, they would thank heavens if their attacks were even in the double digits!”

After my combo attack, I quickly twisted my sword and activated [Strength of a Thousand Men]. The first four attacks didn’t even inflict 2000 damage on the BOSS and the last attack, [Wind Blade], could only inflict 1100+ damage, but it still saved face compared to the previous attacks.

“Roar....roar...”

Hans raised its head arrogantly as it roared angrily, its front claws rose up. It was that chilling attack again, [Dragon Claw Triple Slash], 3 consecutive attacks!

I lifted my arms ferociously; I must block it!

“Peng peng peng.”

The three consecutive attacks caused tremendous tremors that pushed me backwards as my feet created deep trenches in the icy ground. My health dropped low in a flash but luckily there were three beautiful healers who healed me at the same time, ensuring that I wouldn’t die!

I raised my hand and unleashed [Great Realm of Desolation]!

My Frost Rain Sword split the wind as it flew across the ground, separating into three blades that suddenly intertwined together and pierced Hans’ scales. The shadow of the ice dragon let out an angry roar

as a big damage number flew out from the top of its head—

2744!

Lin Wan Er frowned, “Gosh, even the strongest attack could only inflict this much damage, this is doomed to be a difficult boss fight. Yue Qing Qian, we’ll approach it from a different direction, be prepared to fight!”

Yue Qing Qian clenched her dagger and nodded. The two ladies disappeared with the wind as they approached the boss in their stealth mode.

“Peng!”

Smoke flew out from Fox’s gun barrel as he attacked the boss from afar. He whimpered, “Damn, I’ve never seen such a strong boss in my whole life of gaming. If I wasn’t in a party with super strong players like you guys, I would have run away already...”

Who’s Blue laughed lightly, “Uncle Fox has such a bright future...”

Fox: “...”

.....

Matcha’s clear eyes watched the boss attentively as she breathed softly, “Boss be careful, [Dragon Claw Triple Slash] has a cooldown of 12 seconds, so it can be activated anytime. The BOSS’ second skill hasn’t been used yet and I’m not sure what [Icicle Domain] will be like, but anyhow, you have to be really careful...”

I brandished my sword as I endured the BOSS’ claws. I laughed weakly, “Yeah, I’ll try too!”

Just as I finished speaking, Hans let out a thundering roar. Its ruthless pair of eyes glared at me as its claws let out three glints of a blade. It was coming again: [Dragon Claw Triple Slash]!

I unconsciously retreated back quickly, evading its first attack. But I still had to receive the full brunt of its second and third attacks. The three lady healers hurriedly healed me, but the BOSS’ attack had not ended yet. Hans raised its head and howled with an unrivalled ruthlessness as an icy

energy bubbled out from the grounds!

“It’s coming!”

“Pa” an icicle burst forth at my feet, immediately causing me to lose 1400 health. Then, immediately, a second icicle followed, also causing 1300+ damage. Numerous icicles suddenly appeared all around, this is [Icicle Domain]?!

1537!

1432!

1522!

1479!

.....

A chain of damage numbers flew out, causing me to fall to the ground and die in an instant! The three lady healers didn’t expect the possibility of the boss being able to unleash 7 continuous magic attacks in 1.5 seconds and therefore didn’t even get a chance to heal me. This was the power of [Icicle Domain]; even a veteran game player would die from this kind of attack. There was no doubt!

“Quickly revive Boss!” Matcha screamed.

Promised Love waved her arms and activated [Revive]. I confirmed it straight away and stood back up on the place I had died. Gulping down a health potion, I charged toward the BOSS, my sword tip pointed toward its lambella. After a [Fierce Ice Blade], I immediately retreated back, raised my arms and called forth another skill – [Great Realm of Desolation]!

Steadily keeping the BOSS’ aggro on me, I looked at my level. Lv 60 with 91% experience. Motherf**ker, I lost another level. But fortunately I wasn’t that far from Lv 61, so I could probably gain it back after killing this BOSS. Otherwise, with the Lv 61 requirement of the Divine Fireguard Helm, once I took it off for repair, I wouldn’t be able to put it back on.

“Matcha....” Promised Love frowned with her brows and said, “[Dragon Claw Triple Slash] can make Xiao Yao’s health bar almost empty, so we

have to heal him. If the BOSS immediately unleashes [Icicle Domain] in the next attack, with the cooldown of our Heals, we won't be able to pull his health back up. How can we break this sure-kill attack?"

Matcha bit her lips and said, "We still have a chance. Darling Duck should heal through [Dragon Claw Triple Slash], Who's Blue heal between [Dragon Claw Triple Slash] and [Icicle Domain] while Big Sis Promised Love you heal through [Icicle Domain]. With that, Boss should have a chance to survive! Other than that, [Icicle Domain] has about 1.5 seconds of casting time, so Wan Er and Yue Qing Qian, you both should try your bests and intercept the BOSS' skills. If the spell can't be broken, I will use my shield to protect Boss."

Lin Wan Er's [Twin Blade Harmony] suddenly hacked away 2000+ points from the BOSS' health. She quickly retreated back, her pair of beautiful eyes looked toward me as she said quietly, "Let's try it one more time. If Li Xiao Yao dies twice, we should give this quest up. I don't want Li Xiao Yao to drop to Lv 50 trying to complete this profession quest..."

I was slightly moved, "Wan Er loves me after all..."

Lin Wan Er's oval face turned red, "Do I? I just felt sorry for you..."

Dong Cheng Yue cast [Lightning Finger] as she giggled, "Do your best, have a good fight!"

.....

Not even a minute later, Hans' deadly combo came once again!

[Dragon Claw Triple Slash]!

I was forced back around 10 meters and my health bar became almost empty. Who's Blue and Darling Duck healed me while Promised Love's heart almost jumped out of her throat, "Be careful, Xiao Yao..."

"Roar..."

Hans raised its head; it was the start of [Icicle Domain]!

The two lady assassins immediately used their abilities to intercept skills and the BOSS was gracious enough to cooperate with us and replied

with four big MISSES. It was almost like fate was helping us!

“Be careful!” Lin Wan Er looked at me full of worry.

From the back, Matcha lifted her shield and charged towards me. She reached out her hands and pulled me to her embrace, her shield struck the ground with a “Keng”. She activated [Phantom Shield], and three golden shields appeared and surrounded us. This Phantom Knight profession could only protect one other person at most. This time Matcha’s worth was fully showcased!

The icicles danced around my feet as both of us became just like a small boat swaying hard in the middle a big ocean. Our health dropped quickly but fortunately there was [Phantom Shield]’s protection. Promised Love quickly targeted the both of us and activated a group heal, trying hard to pull our health back up!

1.5 seconds afterwards, Matcha and I stood there with half of our total health left. We looked at each other with bewildered expressions, not expecting that we had actually survived the continuous attacks of [Icicle Domain].

Chapter 227: Fight between the Dragon and the Tiger

“That’s right, this method works; it’s the trick to killing this boss!” Dong Cheng Yue smiled sweetly.

I brandished my sword and charged towards the boss, enduring its painful attacks and beatings, but my heart was beating rapidly. Merely two of its skills could send us all to our graves; if Hans used its third skill, [Ice Dragon’s Fury], would we have a way to survive? It was hard to say, but we had to walk this path at least once...

.....

Numerous thrilling instances happened, [Icicle Domain] even killed Who’s Blue who was standing too close once. Luckily we weren’t annihilated. Under our perfect harmony and skillful operations, Ice Dragon Hans’ health slowly dropped. After 30 minutes of fighting, at last the Lv 65 Emperor Tier BOSS’ health was hacked down to 50%!

“Careful!”

Looking at the boss from afar, Lin Wan Er said, “Same old rule, it’s going to unleash its skill when its health reaches 50%. Maybe it will be that [Ice Dragon’s Fury] skill...”

Dong Cheng Yue bit her lip, “Yeah, we must be careful!”

After a few seconds, Hans’ claws suddenly slashed through Matcha’s shoulders. She was standing too close and had attracted its aggro!

I hurriedly charged with my sword and unleashed [Great Realm of Desolation] to attract back the aggro!

“Roar....”

Ice Dragon Hans roared angrily, its mouth suddenly spoke in human tongue, “You bunch of ants; you have the guts to injure me to this extent. The Obsidian Dragon God definitely won’t forgive you! Come now, grant me the dragon power of darkness. Let my dragon soul become even more

powerful, all mighty Obsidian Dragon God, bestow this servant with your powers!”

“Shua” a dark pillar of light fell from the skies and the Ice Dragon Hans’ body suddenly leapt toward me, its claws slashing my shoulders!

2534!

So painful, it was a critical strike!

I quickly gulped down a health potion, while my legs suddenly buckled as I endured another heavy attack on my shoulders. Hans’ power had increased by so much that the ice beneath my feet had split open from his attack, exposing fresh soil underneath. There was a big crack in the icy ground. This Hans was simply too ferocious; did he wish to plant me into the dirt?!

“Heal Xiao Yao Zi Zai properly!” Promised Love hurriedly shouted, “Cast Heal on the group leader quickly!”

In the air, pillars of healing light flooded me. I couldn’t bear the pain, my chest bore more than 10 attacks from Hans’ claws. After he asked for power from the Obsidian Dragon God, he went berserk. A cold feeling washed through my Nebula Armor; there were lines of cracks on it. Really, my Nebula Armor was already starting to shatter in such a short amount of time?!

“Peng!”

Dragon claws came down once again, smashing down on my head. My forehead received the brunt of this heavy attack and my whole body was immediately slammed down two meters into the ground. My whole body was now submerged nearly 5 meters deep. Ice Dragon Hans was like a dog digging in the dirt to hide its bone and kept burying me deeper. Did he want to bury me so deep that I could not be pulled back out, allowing him to then put his hands on the long range players? This guy’s AI was really too frightening...

I climbed through the dirt and stones as I lifted my arms, [Great Realm of Desolation]!

“Swoosh!”

My Frost Rain Sword charged through the air and separated into three swords, intertwining and focusing its attack on the boss' neck. Hans let out a painful howl as its health dropped down a little more. I was about to be killed in the next strike and even with Dong Cheng Yue's high magic attack, we still couldn't change the flow of the battle.

“We are dead...” Yue Qing Qian sighed in the party chat, “Big Brother Xiao Yao will be beaten into a pulp, what do we do? This... once the BOSS unleashes his [Icicle Domain], Big Brother Xiao Yao will definitely be killed...”

Matcha clenched her teeth, “Yeah, this is really worrying. It's all my fault, I wasn't standing in the right position just now...”

Fox suddenly shouted, “Be careful, the BOSS is using his skills!”

“What!?”

Yue Qin Qian and Lin Wan Er almost gasped at the same time. Then I saw a series of notifications from the party chat-

“Di!”

Battle Notification: Player Yue Qin Qian used the skill [Ambush], the stun effect was successfully dodged by【Shadow of the Ice Dragon – Hans】!

“Di!”

Battle Notification: Player Cang Tong used the skill [Ambush], the stun effect was successfully dodged by【Shadow of the Ice Dragon – Hans】!

“Di!”

Battle Notification: Player Cang Tong used the skill [Gouge], the stun effect was successfully dodged by【Shadow of the Ice Dragon – Hans】!

“Di!”

Battle Notification: Player Yue Qin Qian used the skill [Gouge], the stun effect was successfully dodged by【Shadow of the Ice Dragon – Hans】!

.....

All intercepting skills were MISSED, this time the situation was really dire. The skies flashed with lightning and thunder, and the area around us turned into an icy wasteland as the temperature dropped significantly. The dragon's roar did not stop. Hans was activating an even higher level skill!

[Ice Dragon's Fury]!

Switching my point of view, I could see that there was a raging blizzard outside. On top of that, the snowflakes could cause damage. As the snowflakes flew past, Lin Wan Er, Dong Cheng Yue and Yue Qing Qian's healths were constantly falling' it was practically cutting down their health. The three healers couldn't keep up with their healing. Promised Love gritted her teeth and said: "Who's Blue, I'll revive you!"

Unfortunately, [Ice Dragon's Fury]'s duration was extremely long. Right after Who's Blue revived, she was immediately killed again. Yue Qing Qian, Darling Duck, and Fox were all killed. Lin Wan Er hid under her umbrella and furrowed her eyebrows, her health was constantly dropping before her snow white knees finally slowly knelt to the ground as she fell. Following close behind, Matcha also fell to the ground. Dong Cheng Yue's mana shield was penetrated by the hail and she also evaporated into a white light. In the blink of an eye, 8 top players were dead and besides me, everyone was killed – the team was annihilated!

Looking up, the sky was covered with snow; [Ice Dragon's Fury]'s area of effect covered the entire map. Unless the skill's activation was disrupted, everyone would all die. But with our current levels, it was very unlikely that we could disrupt the skill, which was where our problem lied.

The climb up was excruciatingly hard as dirt and rocks fell between my clothes and eyes giving me a searing pain.

In the team chat, Yue Qing Qian shouted: "Brother Xiao Yao, we'll run back to our bodies. Don't leave yet since you'll be killed the second you come out. [Ice Dragon's Fury] is a constant spell, if the boss doesn't die, then the spell will continue to be in effect. Even if the strength drops after

the first 15 seconds, you can't solo the boss right now.....”

As I held my sword, my brows furrowed. Is this the end? Is there no other way to kill this boss?!

My heart was filled with disappointment. This SSS-ranked quest had harmed the rest of the team. There were multiple equipments on the ground, even Lin wan Er's Scarlet Edge was dropped. If we didn't pick them back up, they would disappear in 2 hours. What a loss it would be!

.....

“Child.....”

In the chaos, I seemed to hear someone calling me. The voice was extremely soft, but I still heard it.

I calmed down and replied, “Who are you?”

That voice continued to call out to me, “Child, don't worry. I will not harm you. You've come here, so you shouldn't be the Obsidian Dragon God's subordinate right? I have slept deeply for thousands of years here, it's been a long time since I spoke to another person...”

My heart skipped a beat, “Are you... Yun Chen Old Man?”

“You...How do you know me?” The other person was a little taken aback. “I was sealed under the ground for thousands of years, even my body was already shattered by the dragon's powers. Ordinary humans wouldn't be able to see me. Child, how did you recognise me?”

I replied in a serious tone, “An official called Frost from Dragon City ordered me to come here to break your seal and settle this thousand years old grievance!”

Yun Chen Old Man couldn't help but laugh bitterly, “There are still people that remember these old bones? Child, how could you be buried so deep? Normally, you wouldn't be able to hear my voice if you were above ground....”

I lifted my head and looked up, “The Shadow of the Ice Dragon pummeled me down...”

“Oh, that stupid dragon...” Yun Chen Old Man laughed heartily, “Seems like he didn’t know that the Obsidian Dragon God sealed me under the ground, otherwise he would never have buried you here.”

I clenched my fist, “What should I do to kill that Shadow of the Ice Dragon? Old man, can you help me?”

“Oh?” Yun Chen Old Man coughed, “No...no. My body is already gone, I’m just a spirit with regrets, I can’t help you much...”

My heart sunk, “Then...Then what should I do?”

Yun Chen Old Man laughed, “Although I can’t help you much, my old friend can. But you’ll have to break his seal first!”

“Old friend?”

“Yes, an old friend that I molded myself, a being with the soul of a tiger. As long as you have its help, you’d stand a chance against that Ice Dragon Hans!”

I was excited, “Old man, what do I need to do to help your friend break its seal?”

Yun Chen Old Man replied lightly, “We’ll have to see how good your luck is. There is an asterism of the Big Dipper on the ceiling of this room. You have to go above ground and break the Epsilon and Delta Ursa Majoris seal on their totems. Only then will my old friend be released! After being imprisoned here for so long, I thought that I would never see anything again. Child, my spirit is already very weak, it’s all up to you. As long as you can break the cycle of reincarnation my spirit is locked in, I will pour all my life’s worth of knowledge into you!”

TL: In astronomy, an asterism is a pattern of stars recognized in the Earth’s night sky. It may be part of an official constellation or it may be composed of stars from more than one constellation. Editor: And now you know. And knowing is half the battle.

.....

There are always good things that come from unfortunate times. What

else can make a person so happy in this world other than this?

Clenching my Frost Rain Sword, I climbed up ferociously. Suddenly leaping to the ground above, a large, heavy snowstorm greeted me. Even the drops of snow falling on my body decreased my health by a lot. Seeing that the rate my health dropping wasn't getting any slower, around 2% every second, I would be dead in 50 seconds. But I still had [Heal] and health potions, so maybe I could endure it for a little bit longer!

“Roar...”

100 meters away, Shadow of the Ice Dragon Hans had already noticed me!

“Move!”

Suddenly charging forward with my sword, I flew straight towards the 7 totems. I knew the asterism of the Big Dipper like the back of my hand because of my [Seven Star Fragment Slash], and luckily it was as such. Otherwise, other players who didn't understand the stars might not know which two totems to destroy. Even if they were given this opportunity, they wouldn't be able to grab on to it!

“Roar...”

Behind me, the Shadow of the Ice Dragon charged towards me at a tremendous speed!

I activated [Haste] and flew straight towards the totems. I measured the angle, making sure that I was aligned with the Epsilon and Delta Ursa Majoris. Then, I unleashed my skill – [Seven Star Fragments Slash]!

“Boom!”

As the Sword Qi flooded out from the sword, the two totems fell down quickly and at the same time, I felt a breeze behind my back!

“Peng!”

My body was suddenly thrown and I fell onto the icy ground. I only had 50% health left. In the party chat, Yue Qing Qian cried anxiously, “Big brother Xiao Yao you big idiot, why didn't you wait for us, what the heck

are you doing above ground?!”

.....

“Bang...”

Shadow of the Ice Dragon Hans’ back foot stepped onto the ground, moving towards me step by step, its eyes filled with menace and hatred. Its mouth suddenly spoke human tongue, “Brat, you are just seeking your death. Did you think doing this was enough?! Receive your death!”

Just as it was charging towards me, suddenly the earth started to shake violently!

“Boom!”

A pair of sharp steel claws burst forth from the ground, immediately plunging into the Ice Dragon’s abdomen. Following closely, a ferocious looking tiger head made from steel burst out from the ground, biting the Ice Dragon’s body while roaring relentlessly!

I stared at them speechless, as if I was dreaming –

What a magnificent Tiger-Dragon fight!

Chapter 228: The Death of Hans

[Divine Tiger Mechazord] (Sacred tier)

Introduction: One of the Mohist City guardians, the talented Yun Chen, traveled across the world and found an ancient god tiger's spirit. He spent 10 years, finally casting the tiger god's spirit into a mechanical animal, giving it the strength of a tiger god. It also became the final guardian of Mohist City and has always been at Yun Chen's side.

.....

Even though this Iron Tiger didn't have a level, it was a Sacred Tier monster. Sacred Tier was the next tier after Emperor and currently, there hadn't been any Sacred Tier BOSSes or equipments in the whole server. But there was no level description for the tiger, so it was hard to say if it could beat the genuine Emperor Tier boss.

"Damn it!"

The Shadow of the Ice Dragon roared and waving his claws striking the mechanical tigers' body, he yelled: "Yun Chen you bastard, to think that you hid this mechanical animal. Very well, now I will let you and this mechanical animal go to hell and from now on there will no longer need to be a Dragon Temple to imprison your spirit, because today is the day that I will kill you!"

"Bang!"

With a cracking sound, the fierce tiger cried out while backing away. One of the ears on its head had been torn off by the Ice Dragon's claw, as drops of scarlet blood dripped down from its ears. Heavens! This mechanical tiger actually had a mortal life!

After retreating, the fierce tiger quickly started flashing its sharp claws and slashed them through the air twice. At that moment, two claw marks appeared in the air and the Ice Dragon was pushed backwards while its health bar dropped by a whole chunk. A Sacred Tier BOSS attack was at a whole new level, dealing over 30 000 damage in a single attack; it was so

much higher than what we could possibly do.

While I watched the situation, I used [Heal] on myself and lifted my sword to rush forward. I attacked from the BOSS's flank and a chain of 1000+ damage attacks hit the Ice Dragon's side. Retreating from the hit, Hans was furious. With me and Fierce Tiger attacking, he was helpless.

“Goddamn it, I will destroy you both!”

The dragon raised his head arrogantly, suddenly unleashing [Icicle Domain] upon the tiger's body. “Pa pa pa” a chain of high attacks left Fierce Tiger with less than 70% health. My heart sunk. This was not good; the mechanical beast was, as before, not on par with Ice Dragon Hans. If he didn't receive help soon, he would have no chance!

I slammed my fist down and [Binding Chain] burst forth from the ground, successfully binding Hans onto the ground. I opened my fist and activated [Great Realm of Desolation]!

1823 !

After retreating a few steps, I slashed my sword and unleashed [Seven Star Fragment Slash]!

1327 !

The two consecutive attacks thoroughly infuriated Hans. The Emperor Tier Ice Dragon opened his wings and flew right at me. His front claws slashed as he activated a skill, [Dragon Claw Triple Slash]!

I quickly activated [Shield of the Crimson Dragon] and endured as the meteorites fell. My Nebula Armor and Frost Rain Sword were almost destroyed by the BOSS. I quickly used a potion to survive, but my health was at the bottom!

Inside the party chat, everyone was in panic—

Wan Er: “ What exactly is happening? Li Xiao Yao, why has your health bar suddenly dropped so much?”

Yue Qing Qian: “Brother Xiao Yao, don't die! Wait for us, we'll be there in 10 minutes.....”

Matcha: "Boss..."

.....

"Bang!"

Another thrust from the dragon's palm came again, forcing me to drop down once more onto the icy cold floor. Laying there weakly, I had almost given up. There was just no way to fight this monster at all without a healer! Although, even with a healer, there'd still be no chance. The effects of the [Ice Dragon's Fury] was still there, so healers would already have a hard time healing themselves, let alone casting [Heal] on me.

"Accept your death, brat!" Han's draconic eye had a sinister look that pierced straight into me as his face snarled.

His ferocious mouth opened wide and immediately an icy frost began to spread out. It was the prelude to[Icicle Domain]! Hans was thinking about killing me here and now.

"Hou!"

A roar came from the tiger with a large gust of wind. The fierce tiger came down in front and protected me. The steel hairs on its body opened up and with a snarl from the tiger, they all flew towards the Ice Dragon. Piercing into its mouth, the needles stripped away bits of its skin, dripping dragon blood down onto the ground that quickly froze over. It seems that the Ice Dragon's blood could quickly freeze itself.

Bellowing in pain, the Ice Dragon roared, "You steel trash! You still want to protect that mortal behind you with your body?"

The fierce tiger howled with a lift of its head in response since it could not speak.

Hans was extremely angry now. When the fierce tiger slashed down with its claws onto the ground, it opened its mouth wide open. Taking in a huge breath with the force of a vacuum, Hans started to inhale the tiger towards itself. With a howl, the tiger began to fly towards Hans!

"Puchi"

With a gulp, Hans swallowed the fierce tiger whole, hiccuping slightly. Laughing sinisterly at me, it said, “Brat, this mechanical tiger has unknowingly become a meal for my stomach; will you be the next one?!”

“Next one only in your dreams!”

I flipped myself upright and clasped down onto my sword with both hands. Then dashing forward on the ice, I slid down towards his stomach. With the Frost Rain Sword’s tip already near the stomach, I ripped it open, spilling blood everywhere. The wound was so deep that I could faintly see the dragon’s internal organs beating inside. It was a shame that my strength wasn’t that high or else I would have been able to split apart the intestines as well.

“Shua!”

Bringing back my sword, I started to run away from the distracted Hans and towards the entrance to the 4th layer. In order to have a chance to kill this Ice Dragon, I had to meet up with everybody else. Dammit, he still had at least 5% health left. With a total of 700,000 health points, that would be 35,000 points. Truthfully speaking, twenty strikes of [Great Realm of Desolation] and [Seven Star Fragments Slash] was enough to kill it. But it probably would not give me the chance to use that many attacks because he could kill me with just 2 hits.

“Brat, where do you think you’re going?!”

The Ice Dragon bellowed as it flew over, its large wings flapping about, causing the snow and ice on the ground to fly away, revealing a plot of lush, tall green grass underneath. The plot of grass was spread quite far; nobody would have expected there to be such an abundant vegetation underneath an ice covered ground!

In that moment, my thoughts came to a halt. Is this my chance?!

I rushed forward and flipped into the grasses. At the same time I activated [Camouflage], entering into a state of stealth!

“Roar!”

Ice Dragon Hans stopped beside the grasses, unable to detect my

whereabouts. It actually didn't notice me!

“A good chance....”

I was thrilled, the grasses were the guardians of the earth and even ice and snow had no way of penetrating it. Just by hiding in the grass, I could shield myself from [Ice Dragon's Fury]. My hopes soared, I could fight this battle now. Besides, as the Ice Dragon uneasily stood there, something inside of him seemed to be squirming, as though it was..... the mechanical tiger!?

Upon careful examination, it turned out to be true. The mechanical tiger was raging inside Ice Dragon Hans stomach, causing the Ice Dragon's health recovery to fail. Even after all this time, Hans' health was still at 5%. My chance had come!

After calculating the distance, when I was around 30 meters away from the boss, I suddenly jumped out of the grass and raised my hand, activating [Great Realm of Desolation] and then [Seven Stars Fragment Slash] as a ranged attack!

“Keng keng!”

1911 !

1347 !

Hans roared in pain and started to slash in my direction. I quickly retreated back into the bushes, retreating almost a hundred meters before finally stopping in a corner. I lifted my head to scan the area. Hans was furiously hovering around the map but could not locate me. Although the Boss's AI was extremely intelligent, it was not smart enough to figure out my location. Damn, [Camouflage] was just right for this situation!

After a few minutes, Ice Dragon Hans health had dropped to 2%. My heart started beating faster as I started to get more excited. Even if I was hiding in the bushes, I did not feel cold at all, but instead, it felt slightly warm.

Inside the party chat, Promised Love said: “We have entered the 4th layer, Xiao Yao Zi Zai! But...”

Me: “But what....”

Promised Love: “But the [Fury of the Ice Dragon]’s attack power is too strong. We lose 200 health every few seconds, so we can’t revive together. You need to wait for a bit; the 5 of us--the three healers, Wan Er, and Matcha--will revive first!”

I thought about it for a bit: “If it’s really impossible then we can come back and discuss after I slaughter this BOSS!”

“Ah?!” Wan Er said in shock, “You can kill the boss by yourself?”

“Yup, give me another 3 minutes, 4 minutes at most.”

“How can one person kill such a powerful boss?” Yue Qing Qian said impatiently.

I immediately shared my player’s point of view and tried out the hit and run tactic with the help of the grasses. Immediately, Yue Qing Qian laughed in understanding: “This tactic....so vulgar...”

I laughed: “How else would such a powerful boss be killed? Ok, just wait a bit; after the boss is killed, I’ll meet with you guys again. I won’t hog all the equipment to myself!”

Promised Love: “Yeah, we’ll wait for you. Us going over would definitely be too dangerous. Even protecting ourselves would be difficult.”

“Okay!”

.....

Time passed bit by bit. After seeing that the boss health was not even at 1%, my heart started beating at my throat. Seeing my own level, killing the Lv 65 Emperor Tier boss by myself should be enough to raise me to Lv 63 right? The experience alone was a huge profit, this SSS-ranked map was really a blessed trip. Of course, this was after overlooking the part when we had been painfully beaten up by the boss, which had been scenes of devastation too tragic to bear.

After around 3 minutes, finally, the Ice Dragon Hans fell with a roar from my [Great Realm of Desolation]. Before dying, it even howled

miserably: “You sly brat, I won’t die so easily. Just you wait, the Dragon clan will definitely get their revenge on you. You lowly humans; I will definitely chew up your flesh and bones so that nothing is left!”

I lifted my long sword and charged in. With a flash of light, the Ice Dragon’s head dropped and with a “peng” its body fell into countless pieces of frost essence onto the ground. At the same time the Ice Dragon was killed, it also dropped the equipments I had hoped for. “Shua shua”, two golden lights fell over me and I directly rose to Lv 63 with 11% experience!

I opened the ranking list to check, damn it, I still hadn’t been able to reach the top. Ba Huang City’s top ranked was Jian Feng Han at the same level of 63. I didn’t know what map that bastard found, leveling 2 times in one night!

.....

Raising my head to look up, the hail had gradually stopped; the effect of [Fury of the Ice Dragon] had also disappeared with the Ice Dragon Hans’ death. I guarded the pile of equipment by myself. Not long after, the figures of 7 beauties and 1 uncle appeared on the plain of ice.

Wan Er carried the water bamboo colored small umbrella, smiling as she walked over: “Not bad, there’s actually someone who can deal with a level 65 Emperor Tier boss alone.....”

Promised Love nodded and smiled: “Xiao Yao Zi Zai this fellow is really OP....”

Matcha ran forward, hugging my shoulders and looked around: “Boss, you didn’t lose an arm or a leg from the boss’ beatings did you?”

I couldn’t help laughing: “Let’s not talk about that; hurry up and see what this Shadow Ice Dragon dropped....”

“Sure sure!”

.....

Chapter 229: Flaming Tiger God

TL Note: Changed Sacred Tier to Valkyrie Tier. The TL of the tier was incorrect in the first place.

Among the frost covered grass, 3 pieces of equipment were glowing brightly. The first piece was a ring glowing bright orange. The second was a pair of boots wrapped in a frosty aura. Lastly, the third was the broken remains of a blade. It didn't look so strong but since the other two items were glowing orange, they had to be Emperor Tier items.

Holding the ring in the palm of my hand, the attributes suddenly appeared in the air—

【Deep Ice Soul Ring】(Emperor Tier)

Magic: +51

Endurance: +49

Agility: +45

Extra: Increase magical attack by 8%

Extra: Increase maximum health by 400.

Required Level: 63

.....

Clasping the ring, I laughed, “An Emperor Tier Mage ring...this is pretty much the top ring for Mages. Since we don't have any other Mages except for Dong Cheng, I guess this will go to her...”

Promised Love laughed, “Dong Cheng, congratulations!”

Dong Cheng flushed red from ear to ear, “Thank you everybody, thank you Xiao Yao. I love you to death~”

Me: “...”

After giving the ring to Dong Cheng, I picked up the pair of boots that were wrapped in a frosty aura. Waving my hand over it, the attributes of the shoes floated overhead. Immediately looks of shock came from

everyone; Hans was very generous to have given us two Emperor Tier items!

【Demon Ice Boots】 (Emperor Tier)

Type: Leather

Defense: 220

Agility: +50

Endurance: +48

Strength: +44

Extra: Increase physical attack by 5%

Extra: Increase magic resistance by 17%

Extra: Increase movement speed by 5%

Required Level: 63

.....

Upon seeing the stats of the boots, I cried, “These boots are very strong, even without the three bonus effects, it’s an incredibly powerful item! It adds agility and movement speed, and even 3 other attributes! The value of these Emperor Tier boots is practically unimaginable!”

Matcha laughed, “We have 3 agility reliant players; Wan Er, Qing Qian, and Fox; should they ROLL for it?”

Wan Er chuckled slightly and passed on the ROLL, “I already received the Nightbreeze Woodscent parasol. How would it be fair to the others if I also ROLLED? Let Uncle Fox and Qing Qian try for it...”

Fox sighed, “I’m only Lv 58, there’s still a long time before I can even use it...”

After saying that, Fox passed on the ROLL, leaving Qing Qian to stand there awkwardly. Blinking her huge eyes, she said, “Then...then should I not ROLL either?”

I couldn’t help but laugh as I threw the boots towards her, “I don’t need

it, so these boots are for you. Besides, Lv 63 isn't too far away for you..."

Qing Qian blushed and asked, "Brother Xiao Yao, can I really?"

I nodded, and even Wan Er laughed, "Just take it. Otherwise, this Dragon Temple run will be for nothing if you're not as well equipped as us. Oh, right, Xiao Yao, isn't there a third item? Hurry up and show us...."

"Got it!"

I reached down to pick up ruined blade. The blade was covered in nicks and rust from the years of use it had gone through, looking like it had been snapped in half. Rubbing off some of the rust with my hand, the attributes of the weapon became clear to me—

【Ancient Spirit Sword】: A section of the sealed remains of a sword. A sword spirit is dormant within. One must awaken the spirit inside, then smelt the sword with rare metals in order to obtain a new godly weapon!
Current Awakening Rate: 0%

.....

"This..." I swallowed hard and looked towards the girls, "What kind of item is this suppose to be?"

Wan Er extended her arms to grab the item and immediately stuffed it into my bag while laughing, "Who cares, you're the only sword user here, so it should go to you. Whether or not it has a use will depend on your luck now..."

I knew that Wan Er helped me pocket the ruined sword. She probably noticed it as well, that once this item was reforged, it could become a super strong item!

Continuing onward, we looked at the rest of the loot. There was a total of 12 soul gems. With my good luck, I rolled 3 of them and threw them all into my bag. Further inspecting the bushes, I saw a bright orange book that glowed as it lay on the floor. Grasping the book in my hand, a bright orange flame encircled it. At a glance, it looked like a fire related skill!

Everyone was curious—

Dong Cheng Yue's pair of sparkling eyes opened wide, "What kind of skill book will that be?"

Wan Er's dimples showed as she smiled, "Praying for an Assassin AOE skill..."

Fox clenched his fists, "I hope it's a super powerful AOE attack for Musketeers, like a laser cannon...or something like an ion cannon?"

I threw him a look and said, "<Destiny>'s primary style is fantasy weapons and simple gunpowder, and yet you want an ion cannon? So, what? Should we just give you a warship for you to sail over to the American server and blow up their Iron Skull City while you're at it?"

Fox's old-looking face turned red, "No need, American players are very strong... I know my own strength..."

Matcha pursed her red lips and asked, "Excuse me, young warriors. Can we see the skill book before continuing your daydreaming?"

I laughed heartily and with a brush of my hands, the description of the skill book floated in the air. It was indeed an AOE skill, but unfortunately, some of us was going to be really disappointed.

【Magma Lance】(S Rank): Channeling the power of fire, the user summons a magma lance to attack a 20×20 area. The power of the attack is dependent upon the user's magic attack value. Required Class: Mage. Required Level: 60. Learning this skill will consume 2 Charm.

.....

"Congratulations, Dong Cheng..." I held the skill book in my hand, "It seems like Dong Cheng is the biggest winner this time. Not mentioning Icy Deep Soul Ring, you even got an S ranked skill book as well. Go on and learn it and let us see how strong it is, okay?"

"Okay!"

Dong Cheng's hand flashed for a second as the skill book dematerialized. She raised her staff and channeled the spell for 2 seconds before the area 20 yards in front of us suddenly burst into flames. A

bright red spike shot out of the ground, leaving a scorching red ring. The damage inflicted onto enemies inside the area would definitely be far from low.

“Goodness...” A joyous expression appeared on Wan Er’s face as she muttered, “This is definitely going to be super useful when I party up with Dong Cheng to grind levels...”

Dong Cheng Yue pursed her lips and patted her ample chest, “Leave it to me!”

Matcha’s face showed some regret, “It’s a shame though, Miss Dong Cheng is still in [Hero Mound]. If she was in [Zhan Long], then [Flying Dragon]’s members wouldn’t dare to continue picking on us on the forums...”

Lin Wan Er was astounded, “Is Soaring Dragon still provoking [Zhan Long]?”

I nodded, “Yeah, it’s not the first time. We even had small conflicts over training areas, many of which are probably Soaring Dragon’s doing. Ever since we helped [Valiant Bravery] in that arena match, [Flying Dragon] has held a grudge in their hearts. Furthermore, Soaring Dragon wants to be Ba Huang City’s best guild, so they will eventually have to eradicate the two biggest guilds, [Vanguard] and [Prague]. As you can see, Soaring Dragon’s ambitions are sky high.”

Continuing on, I turned and placed a hand on both Wan Er and Dong Cheng’s shoulders. With a laugh, I asked, “When will you two join [Zhan Long]? You two have kept me waiting for a long time now. Do you really want to see [Flying Dragon] bully us before joining?”

Wan Er gave me an apologetic look, “Believe me when I say that I want to join [Zhan Long] right away. But Dong Cheng and I had originally made a promise with Q-Sword. We can’t leave [Hero Mound] for at least another month. Just wait a bit more, 20 days. At most another 20 days and we will both be able to join [Zhan Long], alright?”

Satisfied, I nodded and smiled, “Okay, 20 days it is!”

.....

Right at that moment, Yue Qing Qian treaded across the grass and with a gasp, she called out, “Brother Xiao Yao, look! The BOSS dropped something else here...”

As she spoke, she picked up a small sphere covered in flames and cried excitedly, “Wow, this looks pretty awesome!”

“What is it, Qing Qian?” Everyone got excited.

Yue Qing Qian touched the sphere, and the words immediately floated up into the air, causing everyone to look on with shock—

【Flaming Tiger God’s Pet Egg】 (Valkyrie Tier BOSS Pet): Unhatched, bound to player Xiao Yao Zi Zai.

.....

“Val...Valkyrie Tier BOSS rank...pet....” Surprised, Wan Er looked at me and smiled in excitement, “I’m not just seeing things right? You just got a Valkyrie Tier pet... and it’s even BOSS rank...”

I froze, “Why? This... but why is it bound to me?”

Promised Love said, “Did something happen to you before we arrived?”

I told them about the mechanical beast, and Promised Love sighed a breath of relief, “Then it wasn’t weird, I guess that mechanical tiger recognized you as its master during the battle, then its tiger spirit was digested by the Ice Dragon into a pet egg. That is the reason for the unhatched pet recognizing its master even before it is born. Your blood probably had splashed onto tiger’s body during the battle just now...”

After saying that, Promised Love patted my shoulder, “Kid, you really did strike gold from a disaster!”

Yue Qing Qian handed over the pet egg to me, “I can’t hatch the egg, so Brother Xiao Yao why don’t you have a go at it?”

.....

“Pa!”

The pet egg felt heavy on my palm before a scorching hot energy came from within. I was besides myself with excitement, it was hard to believe. A Valkyrie Tier BOSS rank pet, just for me? I...felt extremely happy as I rubbed my face...

Confirmed, hatch!

“Shua!”

A bright flame split the the egg shell open. In the next moment, a pair of tiny furry paws flicked the egg shell away. A small and chubby golden tiger crawled out from the shell, fumbling and tumbling straight towards my feet. It rubbed its round furry head onto my Purple Dawn Boots as it let out a low purr, “Meow~~meow~~”

Everyone all crowded over, Yue Qing Qian suspiciously asked, “Brother Xiao Yao, is this a Flaming Tiger God, or is this a Flaming Kitten God??”

I froze, “It should be a Tiger God...”

Wan Er laughed, “Who cares if it’s a tiger or a kitten, just hurry up and let us look its stats!”

“Right!”

.....

Opening up the pet window, I was the one who was in awe. As I shared the Flaming Tiger’s stats to the crowd, stunned faces could be seen all around–

【Flaming Tiger God】(Valkyrie Tier BOSS Rank)

Level: 1

Attack: ★★★★★★☆☆ 8.5

Defense: ★★★★★★

Health: ★★★★★★☆☆

Agility: ★★★★★★

Magic: ★★★★★☆

Skills:【Flame Claw】【Flame Armor】【Fierce Roar】【Vampiric Strike】
【Burstfire Raid】

Excellency Rating: 100%

Chapter 230: Mohist Five Scrolls

Wan Er's eyes opened wide: "Wow, what a powerful growth potential..... 8.5 star Attack growth, and the rest of its stats aren't that bad either....."

Promised Love looks over the stats and said "Actually, its greatest strength isn't simply in star growth potential but its potential as a Valkyrie Tier BOSS. Other pets around the same level can't compare. Xiao Yao Zi Zai, what are the Flaming Tiger God's abilities?"

I glanced over the tiger's skill descriptions and said, "[Flame Claw] is a single target attack, [Flame Armor] is a protection skill to increase defense. [Fierce Roar] is an AOE skill that attacks the surrounding targets with sound waves; [Vampiric Drain] is a one time skill but it can absorb 100% damage dealt and turn it into health. [Burstfire Raid] is a skill to rush forward and damage all targets in its path..."

Yue Qing Qian bent down and caressed the tiger's head, fondling it admiringly as she laughed, "Big Brother Xiao Yao, this pet is so cute. Could you... could you let us see its skills? A Valkyrie Tier BOSS is indeed different; it's just at Lv 1 but it has already unlocked all of its skills. It even has five of them...."

I nodded and ordered the tiger to unleash its skills with my mind-

"Hou!"

The small tiger that was the size of a small cat suddenly let out an angry growl, raising its head as its claws slashed through the space in front of it. A red claw mark lingered in the air, even after the tiger put his claw down. This was [Flame Claw]. Following closely with yet another growl, a battered looking shield appeared around the Tiger God, hovering and spinning around it. Using the shield to protect itself, the tiger's front claws that were in the air suddenly fell on the ground and with another growl, a sound wave attack engulfed the surrounding area. After this attack, it activated [Vampiric Drain] but since there was no enemy, the life return effect didn't show. Lastly, it unleashed [Burstfire Raid], which was the last of his skills!

“Hou!”

Letting out an angry growl, the small tiger’s figure suddenly got three times bigger and its whole body became engulfed in fire. Its four claws were stepping on an ice blue flame as it suddenly rushed 10 meter forward. [Burstfire Raid] left a flaming path on the grassland, leaving the grasses on the sides almost scorched black. The skill looked extremely powerful.

.....

“Wu...” Lin Wan Er pursed her lips and looked at me while laughing, “It’s a pity it is a bound pet...otherwise...otherwise I could borrow it and look cool once in a while...”

I laughed heartily as I looked at her, “It’s okay, we can train together later on and you can watch its mighty powers.”

“Yup!”

Promised Love asked from one side, “Xiao Yao, this pet can be considered the number one of pets; how do you plan to use its stat points?”

I thought about it for a few seconds, “I’ll stack strength. I can boost its defense with [Flame Armor] and keep it healed up with [Vampiric Drain]. If I can maintain a high attack power, even if it’s against high level monks or knights, I won’t have anything to worry about.

Wan Er nodded, “Yeah, you have to quickly train your Tiger God; as soon as it reaches Lv 60, it will be able to display its full power and take the center stage. It could become Zhan Long’s mascot you know, just like how the four characters Xiao Yao Zi Zai are synonymous with Zhan Long.”

Matcha laughed lightly, “ Yeah, there are many people who volunteered to join Zhan Long because of Boss’ stellar reputation...”

I bent over and picked the small tiger up. It reached out its little furry paws and batted at my chin, crying out “meow meow”. Yue Qin Qian and Lin Wan Er, the two girls loved the small tiger to death, one stood to my left and the other was on my right as they swarmed around me. The small tiger wasn’t just a powerful ally in battle, but it could also act cute. It was

the perfect weapon to pick up girls but it's too bad these two girls are off limits!

.....

"Let's go, the quest should be completed...."

I turned and led the group across the icy ground towards the place with 7 totems. I shouted at the crack in the ground, "Senior Yun Chen, you can come out now. We have already killed the Ice Dragon, there is no one else that can imprison you here!"

The earth shook a little as a centipede-looking mechanical beast burst forth from a crevice in the ground. Head held high, an old man with a long beard and white hair sat on its back. The old man's body seemed to be translucent; he didn't have a solid body. He looked towards me and smiled, "Child, you have actually killed that Shadow of the Ice Dragon. I'll represent all tribes from the Mohist City to say our heartfelt gratitude..."

I nodded, "Naturally, it's something that I should have done.... Senior, is it still possible for your body to be revived?"

"No..." Yun Chen lifted his head and disappointedly laughed out loud, "Thinking that our Mohist saying was for peace and not war. In order to do this, we had to go to war with all these great dragons in order for all killing to stop. But we failed miserably in the end. However, I have never regretted it. We had to fight even if we didn't want to. In order to protect this place, Mohist City will willingly endure any kind of consequences, even if we are destroyed!"

As he spoke, Yun Chen Old Man's body slowly trembled and the mechanical centipede he was riding also slowly peeled off its skin. Yun Chen Old Man looked at me and smiled weakly, "Don't worry about me, my life has already met its end. Child, you are a brave swordsman; even my old partner was willing to be reborn and follow you. This means that you have gained its trust. Since that happened, I would also bestow Mohist City's last treasure to you. I hope that you can pass on Mo Zi's legacy and spread "Universal Love" across the world and defend the people!"

TL Note: For curious readers, <http://en.wikipedia.org/wiki/Mohism>
“Shua!”

Yun Chen Old Man waved his hand as a black colored skill book flew towards me –

A “pa” sound followed; the words “Mohist’s Five Scrolls” were beautifully written on the book cover. Indeed, the last reward for this quest was made for me, the Mohist’s Five Scrolls!

“Child, I’ll be going now. I hope you can keep your pure heart. Don’t be led astray by great power...”

Yun Chen Old Man’s voice became softer and softer and the fourth floor become filled with heavy snow that engulfed Yun Chen Old Man’s body, blowing him to the skies far away. The mechanical centipede also let out a pitiful cry as it turned into dust. Both of them disappeared in an instant, as if they had never existed before.

I stood still and looked towards the place where Yun Chen Old Man disappeared, my hands clasping the Mohist’s Five Scrolls tightly.

Behind me, Wan Er tapped lightly on my shoulders and whispered softly, “What a pitiful person, your master had just appeared but he disappeared forever right away. However...luckily, he left you a Flaming Tiger God and the Mohist’s Five Scrolls. Take good care of them, remember to practice “Universal Love” and don’t attack others...”

Dong Cheng Yue couldn’t help but giggle from the side, “Practice ‘Universal Love’ and don’t attack others... If you practice a ‘don’t attack others’ strategy in winning girls’ hearts, they will probably be snatched away by other men...”

I was speechless, “Dong Cheng, what the heck are you thinking...”

Dong Cheng Yue hugged Lin Wan Er’s arms, “Humph, isn’t it true? That Wang Ze Cheng is definitely interested in our Wan Er....”

Wan Er’s eyes bulged, “You have said enough, Dong Cheng...”

Matcha laughed lightly, “Boss, why don’t you look through the contents

of the Mohist's Five Scrolls? Let us see it too; this is an SSS-rank profession main quest reward, all of us have never seen such a reward before..."

I nodded as the Mohist Five Scrolls disappeared from my embrace, shattering into millions of fragments and entered my body. At the same time, 5 new lines appeared on my skill list overview—

School of Mohist Mechanical Gear Technique (Mohist Five Scrolls) –

【Black Tortoise's Realm】 (S) : Draw a body of water from underground. A type of trapping skill; target's movement speed while in the Black Tortoise Realm will be reduced by 70%. Level Requirement 50, Consumes God's Army Card x1 each use.

【Soul Army】(S) : Summon an army of soldiers that will continue to attack the targeted enemy. Level Requirement 50, Consumes God's Army Card x2 each use.

【Seven Stars Teleportation】(S) : Allows the player to teleport from one to another position of the seven stars. Limited to 100 teleports. Level Requirement 60, Consumes God's Army Card x3 each use.

【Azure Dragon Crossbow】(SS) : Summons a large scale siege weapon that is able to continuously shoot arrows. The attack power is 90% of the user's attack power. Level Requirement 80, Consumes God's Army Card x50 each use.

【Violet Thunder Tank】(SSS) : Summons a large scale siege weapon that is able to wield the power of thunder and lightning and has immense destructive power. Level Requirement 100, Consumes God's Army Card x100 each use.

TL: God's Army Card will be clarified in the next chapter

.....

Looking at the five skills, I muttered, "Currently I can only use three skills..."

Wan Er's eyes shone brightly as she laughed, "[Black Tortoise Realm],

an S-ranked skill to reduce movement speed. [Soul Army], an AOE skill that passively attacks your enemy and [Seven Stars Teleportation]...uh, this skill is too IMBA; it allows the user to teleport to the seven star locations non-stop with a limit of 100 times. As long as you use your brain, you can kill anyone—even an expert player— with this teleportation skill...”

Matcha chuckled, “Actually the most powerful skills are the last two scrolls, [Azure Dragon Crossbow] and [Violet Thunder Tank]; they are siege weapons! You can even use them for defense. Tsk, my Big Brother Xiao Yao’s name will be known throughout the world. If there is a large scale group attack next time, these skills will take the center stage. Mohist Five Scrolls is indeed a befitting reward for an SSS-ranked quest!”

Dong Cheng Yue clasped her staff, snuggling up to my side, “Alright~ I’m going to follow you, Big Brother Xiao Yao, forever...”

I pursed my lips, “Alright now, don’t be too happy, we still have to report the quest. Everyone has stayed online for far too long. We can’t go on like this, we have to sleep soon.”

“Yeah!”

.....

Our group of people climbed out of the Dragon Temple with great pains. Outside, Karl and Frost were waiting. Frost looked at the Flaming Tiger God in my embrace and smiled, “Good! Very good! You guys have finished the quest as expected!”

Karl froze, “That... Isn’t that Yun Chen Old Man’s Tiger Spirit Guardian?! Good brat, you went as far as killing the Four Saint Dragon’s Shadow. This...this is unbelievable!”

Frost smiled, full of pride, “What, are you now regretting not keeping this disciple? Hmph, it’s too bad! Now he’s my student, in the future he will be a member of the Dragon’s Cavalry. He won’t have anything to do with you Tomb Guardians anymore!”

Karl coughed coldly, “Don’t be bragging so soon!”

Frost gave a frosty look and Karl hurriedly lowered his head.

.....

I walked forward and said, "Teacher, could you give us the quest reward....?"

Frost was slightly embarrassed, "Oh, yes, sure..."

Chapter 231: The Probe

Frost looked at us with her clear eyes, the corners of her mouth slowly lifting up. She smiled, “You didn’t fail to live up to our Tian Ling Empire and Holy Union’s expectations; the World Tree will definitely grow even more prosperous because of you guys. The Obsidian Dragon’s powers in the Dragon’s Tomb have been eradicated. Thank you for everything you have done for Dragon City. Come now, this is your reward; I’m really proud of you guys!”

“Ding!”

System Announcement: Congratulations, you have finished an SSS-ranked profession quest【Dragon Temple】. Your rewards: Level +1, Charm +9, 20,000 Gold and also a skill book【Absolute Zero Megrez Wall】(SS-ranked)!

.....

“Absolute Zero Megrez Wall?”

I immediately opened the package and an SS-ranked skill book appeared. Its power was exceptional –

【Absolute Zero Megrez Wall】(SS ranked): Condense the cold Qi of Megrez Star to protect the caster; reduce the damage taken by 50% for 15 seconds. Level requirement: 50, Profession required: Berserker

.....

Dammit, what a painful ending, how can this quest reward me with a special protection skill for a berserker? It would have been best if it was something I could use... Thinking over and over again, I decided to give this skill book to Dong Cheng Lei. I had seen his super strength previously in the guild battle with [Wrath of the Heros]; he had destroyed a ten man shield formation by himself. If he had [Absolute Zero Megrez Wall], Dong Cheng Lei’s survivability would increase a lot and he would be able to make use of his abilities more. Together with Old K, this two man hot headed, beastly team would probably shock the whole world.

Looking at the surrounding ladies, I asked, “What rewards did you guys receive?”

Yue Qing Qian blinked, “An Emperor Tier leather chestplate, heehee...”

Matcha: “Purple Tier leg guard...”

Dong Cheng Yue, “Damn, why is my reward only 10 Fire Elf Cards? This is illogical, how could a card’s worth be compared to an Emperor Tier equipment? ’s system is really bad...”

Fox: “I received a Purple Tier necklace, hehe, it increases my long ranged damage by 12%!”

“There’s no fairness in this world, how could I receive nothing...”
Darling Duck and Who’s Blue voiced their dissatisfaction.

Promised Love tilted her head as she looked at Wan Er and said, “This girl should have received something good!”

Wan Er pursed her lips while she quietly stood there with a pleased and happy expression on her face. In the end, she couldn’t help but laugh so hard that she almost choked.

I folded my arms, “What on earth did you get?”

Lin Wan Er reached her hands out, revealing an indigo coloured skill book –

【Heavenly Armour】(SS-ranked): Increases defense by a large amount. Doubles the total defense of the casters’ whole set of leather equipment and allows a light armored player to have the defense of a heavy armored player. Required profession: Assassin, Musketeer, Archer. Level Requirement: 64. Learning the skill requires 10 charm.

.....

“Damn!” Fox eyes bulged out, “Isn’t this skill book too shameless? Double leather armor’s defense? This...a leather armored player’s defense may even exceed a heavy armored player’s already...”

I laughed, “There’s nothing much to say. Learn it, Wan Er, let’s see if your defense will exceed mine!”

“Okay!”

A bright light flashed across Lin Wan Er’s hands. Successfully learning the skill, she called forth her character properties screen and shared it with us immediately.

【Cang Tong】(Gold Assassin)

Level: 64

Attack: 1574-2117

Defense:2004

Health: 2450

Magic:1549

Charm:37

.....

“Xiao Yao, Wan Er’s defense is already at 2004 points, what about your defense points?” Dong Cheng Yue smiled as she asked.

I clenched my fist, “Damn, I only have 2034 defense, Wan Er’s defense is really out of this world! Adding the umbrellas attributes, her survivability will be much higher than mine...”

Dong Cheng Yue couldn’t help but smile, “You are wrong, the best thing about Wan Er is not her defense but the power of her piercing damage which ignores a portion of one’s defense...”

Matcha said on the side, “Boss, don’t be too shaken. You have [Great Realm of Desolation], [Seven Stars Fragments Slash] and [Mohist Five Scrolls]. At least on the skills side you are better than Lin Beauty...”

Wan Er twirled her dagger and said, “Speaking of skills, we shouldn’t compare so much. You have so many S-ranked skill, right...”

I rubbed my nose, “Not really, I only have 9...”

“Only have 9?” Wan Er replied incredulously. “In the whole of Hero’s Mound, those that have S-ranked skills and above can be counted with two hands. You have 9 S-ranked skills and above yourself alone and you

still have the nerve to say ‘I only have 9’? Aren’t you ashamed of yourself?”

I nodded, “Yes I am, I am deeply ashamed...”

Wan Er moved her graceful body a step forward then smiled briefly and said, “Since you are ashamed of yourself, then why don’t you treat Dong Cheng and I to dinner tonight? You couldn’t possibly be lacking the money since you’ve just received more than 10,000 gold from the quest reward...”

“Oh ...yeah” I felt happiness surging up inside me.

Matcha was also happily flying in the air, “10,000 Gold can be exchanged for 50,000 RMB. Oh, my reward, heehee, I can finally buy new clothes...”

Fox nagged, “Remember to pay 20% of it to the studio’s operating expenses account!”

I turned and replied, “No need, she doesn’t have to donate from her quest reward. Matcha, use the money to buy new clothes and wear nicer looking clothes. Only then will you be able to increase our studio’s fighting strength!”

Matcha giggled happily, “Boss you are so nice, I love you to death!”

Me: “.....”

Dong Cheng Yue: “.....”

Lin Wan Er: “.....”

.....

After giving [Absolute Zero Megrez Wall] to Dong Cheng Lei and attending to other matters, I logged off, hurriedly ate some food and then lay on my bed to sleep. But I couldn’t sleep even after lying on my bed since my heart was worried about matters in the game. I needed to level my Flaming Tiger God and find a way to fix the broken sword, as the future of my godly weapon was riding on its back. Furthermore, the skills from the Mohist Five Scrolls required the use of God’s Army Cards. I still

had to find out what these were!

My mind turned hazy as I started to fall asleep. Not sure how long I slept, I was suddenly awakened as my Yi Hai sensed something. There was a problem!

“Hua!”

Kicking off my blanket, I sat up suddenly, my Yi Hai sensed a super strong power. It was ultra-energy person; he or she had to be at least over the Royal Air level and was at least 500 meters away from me, in the direction of the female’s dorm. It was coming from Lin Wan Er and Dong Cheng Yue’s dorm room!

Getting up quickly, I put on my clothes and shoes and ran outside!

“Peng!!”

Slamming the door as I left and ran quickly down the stairs. The sun’s rays were not that bright anymore. Along the way, there were students playing basketball and soccer all around. There was also a gorgeously dressed female student but I simply wildly ran past her. The students all looked at me, astounded.

Arriving at the female dorms quickly, I raised my head and looked. The power came from the fourth floor; it was really Lin Wan Er’s dorm floor!

“Hey, that male student over there, what are you doing here?!” The dorm guard pointed at me and shouted.

I frowned, reached out my hand and pointed at the border walls, “Look at that, there’s a female student who’s trying to climb over the walls!”

“What, how dare you?!”

When the dorm guard turned around, I passed by her in an instant and flew to the second floor. I found myself face to face with a few girls at the stairs, “Ah, what is this handsome guy doing in the girls dorm?”

Without speaking a word, I evaded her with a speed that would shock others. Before arriving at the fourth floor, my Qi was already enveloped around my fist.

“Shua...”

On the fourth floor, I slid forward a few steps, and proceeded onwards. My Yi Hai continued to chase after that supernatural ability user; he or she was inside the third room on the right side!

Quickly rushing forward, I found that the room door was locked. I didn't say a second word and immediately threw a fist!

“Peng!”

The door was crushed open. Just as the door was opened, a black figure swept in front of me, his fist covered with Qi struck me on my chest. He was indeed a Qi Expert. He looked like a middle aged man of around 40 years old wearing a suit, his face looking fierce and austere. He used his full strength for this attack, not even showing a little bit of mercy!

I twisted my hands and blocked his next attack, “peng”, his expression changed in a second. Immediately my right hand followed as my five iron hard fingers dug into his left arms like claws.

“Pa!”

The middle aged man knew that he was weaker than me and retreated backwards. I followed closely behind, my left fist gathered energy as I let out a low shout: “Get lost!”

“Peng!”

Dust scattered all around as the middle aged man slid backward on the floor, heavily slamming against the railings on the balcony. I chased him as I stretched forward a single hand to trap his two arms against his chest. Qi encircled my right fist; once this attack hit, his life would perish. I turned around and shouted, “Wan Er!”

.....

“Li Xiao Yao, you can stop now!”

A familiar voice sounded from behind, it belonged to Lin Tian Nan.

I turned around to find Lin Tian Nan, Lin Wan Er, and Dong Cheng Yue sitting there. Wan Er stared at me in astonishment, a complicated look

flashing across her eyes: “Li Xiao Yao...”

Dong Cheng Yue looked straight at me, “This guy...”

Lin Tian Nan let out a small sigh, “Li Xiao Yao, release him. He is an old friend of mine; it was just meant to test whether or not you really had the ability to protect Wan Er.”

I nodded, loosened my grip and discovered that the middle-aged uncle had wounds all over his chest and arms where I had attacked him. I said apologetically: “Next time, don’t try this out. If I don’t know whether Wan Er is really in danger or not, I will always use my full strength to attack....”

The middle-aged uncle rubbed his arm, and laughed out loud, “Lin Tian Nan, you old rascal....you really did find a treasure. In all of China, there aren’t many people that can subdue me in a flash and this little fellow is still so young....”

Lin Tian Nan stood up and laughed slightly, “Ok, it’s been hard on you 4th Brother, come let us drink a cup together; this is a place for young people to stay, not a place that is suitable for old men like us!”

“Good, we will not go home until we are as drunk as rabbits!”

.....

Lin Tian Nan and the expert left through the front door. The two beautiful young ladies stared at me as I stood on the balcony; the three of us stayed silent for a long time.

“Ahem.....” I broke the silence and asked, “Wan Er, was your father testing me?”

Lin Wan Er bit her rosy lip as she replied, “Yeah.....”

Dong Cheng Yue added, “Mph, Uncle Lin said that if you did not arrive within 3 minutes after they had entered the room, they would replace you with someone better. Unfortunately for them, you had arrived not even a minute after they had entered the room. Moreover...”

Dong Cheng Yue laughed, “Moreover you beautifully defeated that violent uncle....”

Lin Wan Er looked at me, “I was so worried that you would be hurt by that uncle!”

I glanced downstairs, Lin Tian Nan had finally drove away.

I let out a deep sigh and said, “Your dad has started to doubt me, this is not a good sign. It’s my fault for having slept too soundly, else I would have detected that uncle from two miles away!”

Wan Er stood up, lightly laughing, “Ok, don’t blame yourself. Dong Cheng and I are still waiting for you to treat us to dinner. Let’s go?”

“Okay.....”

Chapter 232: Flaming Cloud Sword

Liu Hua University, Second Cafeteria.

Dinner tonight consisted of a bowl of mushroom and fowl stew, a bowl of silver fish soup, and a plate of sweet pot chicken. In front of me, there were three empty bowls of rice and the fourth was in the process of disappearing into my stomach

Dong Cheng Yue looked up at me and furrowed her brows, “Wan Er, why do I feel like in the future... even the two of us together would not be enough to feed this pig, Li Xiao Yao?”

“If it comes to that.....” Wan Er sweetly smiled, “If I were to become that poor, I would just go back to singing. That would be enough to keep him fed.....”

I grabbed the ice water at the side, took a big gulp and said, “No need, I can support myself, Hehe, the earnings from the Dragon Temple map is enough to feed me for half a year!”

“Too bad, with your level, you can’t even dream of becoming Ba Huang City’s number one player...” Dong Cheng Yue said a little grudgingly “After leveling frantically for 24 hours you still didn’t become the number one player; I guess it really is only a dream after all...”

I interrupted: “Jian Feng Han is number one, right?”

“Yup, he’s level 65, crazy!”

Lin Wan Er slid her finger across her phone screen to unlock it. She lifted her head and smiled at me as she said, “According to some reliable information, 72 hours ago Jian Feng Han disappeared. I didn’t find out until today that he and Simple, Fallen Wolf, Fushen Monk, and Good-bye Tears went on a SS tier quest – Saving Princess Xue Lin, Tian Lin City’s lost princess who was imprisoned near Ice Ridge Mountain. King Luo Lei sent cavaliers to save Princess Xue Lin and Jian Feng Han’s team helped. The bosses along the way were even soloed by Jian Feng Han, helping him level faster. On top of that, of all the equipment, the first superior

weapon that surpasses Purple Tier appeared....”

“What?” I was shocked: “You’re kidding right? The first Emperor Tier weapon?”

“Yup!”

Lin Wan Er firmly nodded her head, looked up the stats, then placed her phone in front of my face. It was an ornate double edged long sword; even its stats were gorgeous—

【Flaming Cloud Sword】(Emperor Tier – Superior)

Attack: 935-1350

.....

“Crazy.....” I furrowed my brows: “What high attack! Jian Feng Han, that bastard, has such great luck!”

Lin Wan Er slightly smiled: “Therefore, your Frost Rain Sword has already been surpassed. On top of that, Jian Feng Han’s team also got an Emperor Tier battle axe. Similarly, its stats surpass that of the Haunted Twin Blade Battle Axe and will probably go to Fallen Wolf. After this SS tier quest, Vanguard’s high level players will become even more dangerous....”

Dong Cheng Yue smiled at me: “How about it? Is it a challenge, guildmaster?”

I responded slightly resentful “Not really, his strength has nothing to do with [Zhan Long]’s goal to rush levels. We just have to avoid conflict with them. Besides, there’s [Prague] to deal with, so [Vanguard] has to watch their step. With this, Jian Feng Han doesn’t necessarily have a reason to mess with [Zhan Long]. Even if he did, it would just be a broken net with dead fish; this is just a game, [Zhan Long] won’t be hurt because of it!

“Mm, well said.....” Lin Wan Er smiled, “What are your plans for tonight?”

I thought for a bit before I said, “I’ll find a grinding spot, and gain a few levels. I’ll first level the Flaming Tiger God to Lv 50+, that way it’ll have

enough battle power. Flaming Tiger God already has a lot of stamina and my Baby Bobo has already become obsolete. Sometime later I'll find a chance to sell him, as he is still a quality pet...."

Wan Er said, "Ya, the Bee Overlord's damage is very strong and lots of healers who are trying to level are looking for that kind of pet. It should be in high demand."

Wan Er added: "Also, speaking of weapons, you should find a way to use the Ancient Spirit Sword. I have a feeling that it will become a godly weapon, one that will surpass Jian Feng Han's Flaming Cloud Sword....."

I laughed and said: "Alright alright, as the little miss says, I will end up with a godly weapon!"

.....

That night, I sent the two girls back to their dorm and went back by myself. It was time to power level the new pet!

"Whoosh!"

Once online, I gave the Void Fan to Fox to sell. The money gained would be split evenly among the team leaders. Before heading out, I stopped to stock up on potions. I planned to head to my regular place, Firestone Canyon, as it currently had the highest level monsters available. It was also the most suitable place to level the small tiger.

Summon!

A ray of light started to bubble from the city's fountain and in the next moment there was a purring sound as the small furry tiger appeared in the center of the summoning circle. With tiny leaps the tiger ran to my feet and rubbed his round head against my leg. I bent over to pick him up and walked straight out of town. Once I entered Ba Huang Forest I pulled out my Frost Rain Sword; none of the monsters along the way were strong enough to endure a single round of my [Combo].

Without any hesitation, I killed everything in my path. Upon arriving at the edge of Firestone Canyon, the chubby tiger was already Lv 24; its leveling pace was extremely fast. Furthermore its physical body also grew

by a whole lot, from soccer ball size to more than a meter long. Its cuteness level decreased by 50% but its majestic level increased by 50%. Yeah, this was what I wanted, you couldn't rely on cuteness to kill your enemies. This kind of King of Beasts pet truly has the air of a domineering ruler!

Taking a look at the stats of the Tiger God, I was secretly surprised. The rate of growth was far better than Baby Bobos; its attack power right now had already beaten Baby Bobos.

【Flaming Tiger God】(Valkyrie Tier Boss)

Level: 24

Attack: 960-1200

Defense: 720

Health: 1920

Mana: 624

Skills: **【Flaming Claws】【Flame Armor】【Fierce Roar】【Vampiric Drain】【Burstfire Raid】**

.....

At this rate, when it reaches Lv 60, the Flaming Tiger God should have at least an attack around 3000 and a defense of around 1800. Combined with around 5000 health and it being a Valkyrie Tier Boss pet, its growth speed completely overwhelmed my own! It's no wonder high tier pets sell for great prices in the markets!

After calculating, I figured out the formula for the Flaming Tiger God's growth. In general, it should be—

Attack = Level 20 (1+100%) to Level 25 (1+100%)

Defense = Level 15 (1+100%)

Health = Level 40 (1+100%)

Mana = Level 13 (1+100%)

With its natural 100% excellency rate, it clearly had an advantage. It

seemed like an unwritten rule that pets that come out from a pet egg are overly strong and on average have an excellency rating between 90% to 100%. My luck was extremely good, since I received a pet with an excellency rating of 100% and it had 5 skills to boot! When this pet grows to adulthood, it would be strong enough to fight by itself and with its current growth, it'd reach maturity at Lv 50!

.....

Entering Firestone Canyon, I slaughtered my way through every monster in sight to help raise my little tiger's levels. Having reached level 37 at around 8 in the evening, my dream was inching closer with each moment. While working my way through the canyon, I saw a densely packed group of players beginning to appear into view. Even from this distance, I could see the insignias on their arms. They were all from different guilds and they seemed to be arguing about something?

“Shua!”

Treading into the bushes, I became hidden with [Camouflage] and recalled the small tiger pet. It was best to first go over and look at the situation; the area seemed to be pretty lively. Looking at the map, I discovered that this forest bordered the ancient mountain range called “Arctic Fox Forest” and was about 100 meters away from the group of players. I stood still in the bushes with my back against a towering ancient tree and observed the lively scene.

The crowd was split into two; surprisingly, one of the sides was made up of [Vanguard] players. Fallen Wolf of the Thirteen Eagles was carrying a battle axe with an orange glow while standing to the side. With a wave of his hand, he said, “Since as early as a week ago, we [Vanguard] players have been in Arctic Fox Forest grinding for levels. So no matter what you say, we will not be the ones that will leave!”

On the other side was a Lv 60 berserker who had clearly finished his third class advancement. He was carrying a purple colored battle axe and the words above his heads were certainly eye-catching.

Misty Clouds Lv 60 Golden Berserker

City: Ba Huang City

Guild: Misty Palace

Position: Guildmaster

.....

“Pa!”

Misty Cloud’s battle axe ploughed into the earth suddenly as he glared at Fallen Wolf. “So whoever is here first should be the only one that stays here? Then with this logic, shouldn’t Firestone Canyon belong to Xiao Yao Zi Zai? I heard that he was the first to discover this place. Isn’t that right then?”

Fallen Wolf gnashed his teeth, “Brother Misty Clouds, why are you like this; why do you insist on always butting heads against [Vanguard]? Wasn’t [Misty Palace] recently established a few days ago? Aren’t all of your members people who have yet to experienced battle or draw blood yet? There aren’t even a total of 1000 people in your guild, could it be that you want to drag your several hundred brothers into the endless sufferings of hell? Then please, fight [Vanguard] if you dare, then you’ll truly know what hell is!”

Misty Clouds didn’t acknowledge Fallen Wolf’s words and responded with a sneer, “Excuse me? I have already informed the leaders of [Ruined Bones] and [Winds of Battle]. Within 20 minutes, they will bring their men to help us here in Firestone Canyon because I have already invited them to go hunting in Arctic Fox Forest. Fallen Wolf, do you think your group of 400 players will be enough? [Vanguard] might not be easily trifled with but do you think that our newly established guilds are easy to bully?

Fallen Wolf held his battle-axe in hand firmly and started laughing, “So thats how it’s going to be? If there are people in Ba Huang City truly foolish enough to provoke us then prepare for war. Misty Clouds, I hope you don’t come to regret your actions, I will report back to Jian Feng Han. 5,000 of [Vanguard]’s elite will be here in half an hour, you might as well gather up your brothers and flee the forest. I do not wish to see a river of

blood flow, especially not for such an insignificant place like Arctic Fox Forest. This forest is hardly worth shedding blood over, right?

“Arctic Fox Forest is insignificant?”

Misty Clouds laughed, “Fallen Wolf, do you think everyone else is stupid? Arctic Fox Forest may be worthless but the mine shaft located in the center of the forest has a value that can’t be calculated! That mine shaft produces blood gold, a high quality ore that is essential in refining high tier weapons and arrows. Those who possess blood gold will have an immense control over the battlefield. Did you really think that we don’t know this?”

Fallen Wolf’s face grew cold, “So be it, nothing else can be said to resolve this matter peacefully. In half an hour, Arctic Fox Forest will be a battleground!”

Chapter 233: A Conflict I Wanted No Part In

“Ao....”

Coming out from the Arctic Fox Forest was a Lv 66 Elite Ice attribute Arctic Fox with pure white fur. It was pretty much the strongest level monster in the central section of Firestone Canyon. It was also perfect for me to grind levels with since killing Elite Monsters would increase the leveling speed of my pet by a lot.

Looking off into the distance, both [Vanguard] and [Misty Palace] players were standing opposite of each other around 200 meters away. Their troops were standing in formation, but neither had made a move just yet. Both sides knew they didn't have enough men yet to be at 100% fighting capabilities. They had also both agreed on waiting half an hour; if any side initiated early, then the video evidence of it would be circulated on the forums and hurt the reputations of their respective guilds.

.....

Gripping my Frost Rain Sword, I charged straight at the Arctic Fox. Right when the Arctic Fox was about to release a magical arrow, I cast [Strength of A Thousand Men], and interrupted the skill from being cast. Then came [Great Realm of Desolation], and a great big number came flying up.

2471!

By my side, a streak of fire came out of nowhere as my tiger growled. [Flaming Claw] had struck the body of the Arctic Fox, dealing 3014 points of damage in a single stroke! I was stunned just by looking at the damage. Wow, it was already that strong at Lv 37. How strong would it be at Lv 60?!

After the [Flaming Claw] attack, the small tiger shook a little as he let out an angry growl. An invisible shockwave spread out and with a “hong”, the Arctic Fox lost another 1500+ health. With a couple of painful yelps,

the fox tried to raise its front paws and use its abilities. Unfortunately for the fox, my tiger was extremely fierce and he suddenly grew larger with fire sprouting from his fur. With a [Fierce Roar], he stepped on the Arctic Fox and then opened his mouth to use [Vampiric Drain], killing off this Lv 66 Elite Monster in 2 seconds.

I was dumbstruck. A Valkyrie Tier Boss pet, was this its power?! Invincible! With the rate his stats were growing, soon they wouldn't even be inferior to mine. Yup, with the [Vampiric Strike] life steal skill, he would soon take center stage on the battlefield. Personally, my own power would be increased by at least 40% with this tiger backing me up!

Bursting with joy, we headed off to kill the second Arctic Fox. After killing it, my tiger grew to Lv 38. As expected, killing higher level monsters while the tiger was at a low level would mean that there would be more experience for the tiger. In addition, the tiger was basically on par with the Arctic Fox, making grinding easier to exploit.

Far away, the large guilds were still arguing, but that wasn't my problem. Arctic Foxes were magic based monsters and thus had low health, so they couldn't withstand the attacks from me and my small tiger for long. They died quicker than I had expected, and the experience they gave was generous. I had already fallen in love with this training ground; my tiger would be able to get to Lv 55 in just 3 hours.

.....

Unknowingly, close to half an hour had passed. I weaved through the edges of the Arctic Fox Forest unhindered, pretty much killing all of the Arctic Foxes. My bag already had 7 Silver Tier equipments and 11 Bronze Tier Equipments, and my little tiger had already risen to Lv 46!

Raising my head to look up, I saw an open field followed by a thick forest. Shadows of white were jumping around in the forest; Arctic Foxes! Yes, that was a perfect place to keep leveling.

With my Frost Rain Sword and the still somewhat cute tiger, I ran through the open field and went straight towards the forest!

.....

“You there!”

Suddenly, there a voice above called out towards me.

Looking up, I saw two Wind Elf Archers. They were both [Misty Palace]’s members and one of them said: “Sorry friend. Our [Misty Palace] is currently leveling here and will soon be fighting [Vanguard]. If you don’t want to get caught up in this fight, you should leave quickly. Go find another training ground. If you die once, you’ll have wasted all that effort.....”

Laughing slightly, I said, “Don’t worry, I won’t interfere, I’m just leveling and won’t PK anyone...”

The Archer’s eyebrows furrowed, “Just past this place is the area that [Vanguard] has blocked off; do you really want to go that way?”

I nodded.

The other Archer shook his head, “No, we can’t let him through, his ID is concealed. If he is a spy for [Vanguard] that has discovered our troops here, he would make our situation even worse if he told [Vanguard] our location!”

I shot a glance at the bushes to my side; there were at least a hundred Archers lying in ambush. On another side, I could vaguely see some Musketeers with their guns ready. It was an open wide space in front, a suitable battling ground for heavy armored players. It seemed that they had planned to ambush [Vanguard]’s front line...

“Don’t worry, I won’t say anything...” I spread my hands out in submission, “In fact, I am supportive of the [Misty Palace] guild in the first place...”

The young Archer squinted, “No, we must see your ID; just because you are high leveled doesn’t mean you can belittle us...”

I gave a sigh in exasperation.

At that moment, a group of people came by; one of them was the young Berserker Guild Master Misty Clouds. Upon seeing me, he quickly

realized everything. With a humble tone, he said, “Dear friend, would you kindly reveal your ID? Otherwise, we cannot let you pass...”

My own level was higher than his by 3, so even this Lv 61 Berserker wouldn't be able to see my information at all.

TL: Yeah... I don't know either, apparently it changes (maybe cuz he's a higher level) I'm pretty sure that Shi Luo Ye explained all of this in a previous novel but... Dunno which one.

With a laugh, I revealed my ID, and the words immediately raised into the air above my head.

Xiao Yao Zi Zai Lv 64 Dragon City Night Watch & Ba Huang City's 2nd Player

City: Ba Huang City

Guild: Zhan Long

Position: Guild Master

.....

“Woah!” The Archer that had asked for my ID clenched his fist with a pale face, “It really...is Xiao Yao Zi Zai. Oh god, I just held up [Zhan Long]'s leader...and Ba Huang City's 2nd ranked player...”

Misty Clouds was instead much calmer. He smiled lightly, “Hmph, I knew it. If he has the ability to hunt in Arctic Fox Forest alone, he should have both the courage and strength to do so. You are indeed the expert, Xiao Yao Zi Zai, a name that resounds throughout Ba Huang City. I didn't think that our first meeting would be in such a dire situation, haha...”

I swung my Frost Rain Sword onto my shoulders and lazily leaned on a nearby tree. I smiled, “I also never thought that in Ba Huang City, besides [Zhan Long], there would still be another guild called [Misty Palace] that would be picking a fight with [Vanguard]. Truthfully, I'm very relieved; you can even say I'm very happy!”

Misty Clouds steeled his fist and replied in a serious tone, “There are some guilds that are putting up a tough front, for example, [Wrath of the

Heroes]. There are also some guilds that are arrogant to their bones, for example, [Vanguard]. [Vanguard] practically rules all of Ba Huang City's affairs; that Jian Feng Han even treats Ba Huang City as his own personal land. However, we, [Misty Palace], want to let [Vanguard] know that even if they are strong, they can only bully the weak. We [Misty Palace] will definitely not accept them, and we'll fight if we must. If we die, at the most we'll only lose levels. We can just stay up at night to train and fight them again!"

I was deeply moved. I raised my arms and waved my Frost Rain Sword, "Alright, I hope that you can win the war you've started. Today I came here to train for myself, so I won't be joining the fighting going on here."

Misty Clouds nodded, "Yeah. Xiao Yao, what do you think of our battle arrangement?"

I shook my head, "Not great..."

Misty Clouds froze, "If you say so, I hope you can give us some pointers..."

I reached out my hand and pointed to the front and said, "Your intent for ambush is too obvious. Furthermore, although your Archers and Musketeers are lying in wait in the bushes, you are an easy target from above. Once the enemies' Wind Elves notices you guys from above, all of your troops will be plainly visible; you are going to fail this way. Instead, why don't you prepare an ambush 500 meters south from here; there are bushes for you to hide in and also giant, tall trees to block vision from the sky. Arrange for some heavy armored players to start the battle here. Once the battle starts, retreat slowly to the south and ambush [Vanguard]'s players there. You'll find the result to be better..."

Misty Clouds paled as he clenched his fist, "Damn! Why didn't I think of this before...alright! Thank you, Xiao Yao. Your words helped us realize our weaknesses. I'll arrange them accordingly immediately; there is still 10 minutes before they start their large scale attack. You should avoid the battle grounds so that you don't get pulled into this disaster."

I nodded, "Sure, I wish you luck! Let's meet again sometime!"

“Okay!”

.....

Carrying my sword and small tiger, I passed through the wide open space. This time, I chose to move forward on the grass. [Camouflage] would allow me to be invisible, and the small tiger was originally a wild animal, so it had a natural ability to blend in with the grass. It would be easier to hunt this way. With both the tiger and I disappearing into the wide open grassland, we resumed our Arctic Fox hunt journey.

“Pu!”

My sword slashed through an Arctic Fox’s body, causing a stream of fresh blood to gush out. At the same time, I turned and looked afar, noting that the battle had already started. War cries thundered through the air. Aside from [Misty Palace], there were two other strong guilds in the battle. One of them was [Ruined Bones] and the other was [Winds of Battle]. They were both newly established guilds in Ba Huang City. The most reassuring thing about China is that we never lack heroes. Ba Huang City, as a virtual city, also did not lack guilds with courageous and high ambitions. The emergence of [Misty Palace], [Ruined Bones] and [Winds of Battle] would complicate Ba Huang City’s power struggle even more. This was also a situation that [Zhan Long] needed.

If the world wasn’t chaotic, how would [Zhan Long] become famous?!

.....

Even with the fierce battle so close, I acted as if nobody was there and continued to train. The battle of the three big guilds versus [Vanguard] was extremely desperate; there seemed to be endless deaths and revivals, as well as endless fires and explosions, on both sides. People perished in groups; the wide open space had turned into a river over-flowing with blood. But neither side had the intention of withdrawing, and so they continued their desperate killing.

“Shua!”

After a little more than an hour, the battle still continued on, but my

Flaming Tiger God had already rose to Lv 52 and his stats exploded like crazy-

【Flaming Tiger God】(Valkyrie Tier Boss)

Level: 52

Attack: 2080 – 2600

Defense 1560

Health: 4160

Mana: 1352

Skills:【Flaming Claws】【Flame Armor】【Fierce Roar】【Vampiric Drain】
【Burstfire Raid】

.....

Holy, the attack, defense and health attributes increment were too fierce! He was only at Lv 52; if his level rose to Lv 64 like mine, it would definitely increase by a whole lot more. This pet's growth attributes were really not a joke, it is currently the number one pet on the entire server!

Happily picking up an Arctic Fox card that increased a player's defense by 50 points, I continued to look further into the distance. There were still 7-8 more Arctic Foxes loudly wailing in the wilderness, waiting to give us experience.

Just as I was about to go there, the forests beside me suddenly started shaking. Following that, a Berserker from the [Winds of Battle] guild staggered out, his health not even at 10%. Carrying his battle-axe, his face was full of frustration, "Damn, so many people...:"

Before he even finish speaking, "pa", an arrow struck at his shoulders; [Scattered Shot], stun successful!

A [Vanguard] Swordsman followed him out of the bushes; his killing method was extremely clean and agile. "Pu" his sword pierced the Berserker's neck. Slowly pulling out his sword, he whispered, "[Ruined Bones], [Winds of Battle] and [Misty Palace]; they are indeed just a bunch of nobodies flocking together..."

At the side, an Archer carrying a longbow charged out from the forest, lowly bellowing: “Fourth Brother, careful, there’s a person there! Wait, it’s Xiao Yao Zi Zai!”

I started in alarm, realizing that I had forgotten to reactivate the function to hide my ID!

.....

“Kill!”

The Swordsman suddenly raised his sword with both hands, his eyes filled with a strong desire to fight: “Only Xiao Yao Zi Zai alone, hmph; spoils of war like these cannot be let go. We have to tell all of Ba Huang City that today we not only defeated [Misty Palace], [Ruined Bones] and [Winds of Battle] acting together, we also managed to kill our old enemy in the Arctic Fox Forest—[Zhan Long]’s Guild Master, Xiao Yao Zi Zai!”

I stared blankly for a bit, then similarly raised my Frost Rain Sword and slightly laughed: “This fool, why rush into an early grave?”

Chapter 234: In a Quagmire

I scanned the map and found a total of 7 [Vanguard] players; 3 stronger ones from the main guild and 4 from the sub guilds. Luckily there were no 3rd advancement players!

“Swoosh!”

A Pardon Card flew up, closely followed by another Arctic Fox Card. This raised my defense by 50 points. Even though it was small, it was better than nothing.

“Sha! Sha!

The wild grass was flattened beneath my battle boots, causing a strong smell of plant juice. I had already rushed out; with a swing of my Frost Rain sword, my [Combo] rang out, galloping towards the nearest Lv 59 swordsman.

“What?!”

This swordsman wasn't some noob and he slipped to the side and caused the first strike of my [Combo] to MISS. Though he continued to try and back off, my speed was greater than his, thus the last three strikes successively struck his shoulder. “Bang! Bang! Bang!” Each hit successfully sounded out but to my horror, he did not die; a healer managed to sneak in a heal in time, recovering 1200+ of his health.

I slightly lowered my blade as I decisively activated [Blade Rush]. Sword and man melded as one into a flash of light, “Swoosh! Swoosh!” I dashed forward five meters. In that same instance the four heavy armored class players within the range of [Blade Rush] were cut till their health dropped to critical levels. After [Blade Rush] had completed, I searched for a good angle, abruptly turning my body, and with a wave of my Frost Rain Sword, seven bobs of light emerged on my blade, “Bang!” [Seven Star Fragment Slash] pierced through the crowd!

Painful yells could be heard as four players fell simultaneously. There was no leeway for discussion and even the healers were unable to

interfere with a split second heal.

“F**k!”

The archer gritted his teeth and exclaimed: “Way too OP! We have to retreat.....”

I waved my hand in response: “Since you’re already here, don’t even think about leaving until you offer up a level!”

[Great Realm of Desolation]!

Three phantasmical weapons penetrated the archer’s body as a huge damage number appeared —

3011!

Another one hit kill; my attack power was too strong and none of them could endure it unless they were a heavy armor type player!

In the distance, a Lv 59 mage clenched his jaw and cursed: “F**k! Not long ago, Xiao Yao Zi Zai was merely a noob yet now his strength has grown to such an extent; it makes no sense!”

Smiling smugly, my fist smashed into the ground and without warning, [Binding Chains] erupted out and trapped the mage’s legs. With a graceful sweep of my Frost Rain Sword, [Wind Blade] destroyed his mana shield and murdered the mage! A banging sound of despair could be heard as a Lv 57 Gold Tier staff dropped!

“Motherf**cker, what is this.....”

The Lv 58 healer, Sweeping Leg, roared furiously. Grabbing his healing staff he fled while shouting, “Xiao Yao Zi Zai, just you wait, [Vanguard] will not let this matter go’ only death awaits you!”

I coolly gazed at him, “You think you can leave?!”

With 30 meters between us, he had already exceeded my attack range. Sweeping Leg gave a sigh of relief, “Why? Do you think I can’t leave? Do you really think you can kill all of us? I’m only 100 meters away from thousands of [Vanguard] members. If you have balls, come chase me!”

“Hou!”

Right after he finished speaking, a fierce little tiger flew out from the bushes, [Flame Claw] scratched directly onto the chest of the healer. A huge damage number floated above—

2188!

This was yet again a one hit KO. In an instant, the squad of 7 died without being a challenge at all. However, the experience obtained helped increased my pet tiger. With 2600 in basic attack damage, he was able to one hit KO. Along with his other four attacking abilities: Flame Claw, Fierce Roar, Vampiric Drain and Burstfire Raid, he would even be able to kill veteran players.

.....

“Hua! Hua! Hua!.....”

I hadn't even had the time to turn around when 10 [Vanguard] players appeared behind me. Amongst the players, there were 2 that were part of [Vanguard]'s 13 Eagles. The rest were mages and archers. I knew my limits; I couldn't let scatter shots and icicle spells strike me or else I would die.

Charging straight through, “Shua,” I dove in between the wild shrubs and onto an open field. If I appeared out on the open then I would truly regret it. It had already reached the late stages of the battle, with a large amount of [Vanguard] players chasing down [Misty Palace], [Ruined Bones], and [Winds of Battle] guild members. It was disappointing that the three big guilds combined forces was no match for [Vanguard]. Based on the the map, there were at least 1000 [Vanguard] members alive. The three guilds had around 200 members total. A lot of the members wouldn't accept the revival of the healers and waited for the end of the battle, since every time you revive, you will lose a level if killed again. This was the reason why many players wouldn't accept revivals.

“Xiao Yao Zi Zai!”

The battlefield was covered with skeletons everywhere. One high level

berserker fended off the attacks of several swordsmen. Holding onto his battle axe, he asked me, “Why did you come back? Didn’t you go further away?”

This wasn’t any normal player, this was Misty Clouds, guildmaster of [Misty Palace], along with two other players by his side fighting. One player was [Ruined Bone]’s guildmaster, a Lv 61 knight called Sword Reborn. The other player was [Wind of Battle]’s guildmaster, a Lv 60 Wind Mage called [Fighting in Blood]. The three players were grouped up with around 200 players and were completely surrounded by [Vanguard] players.

Holding onto my Frost Rain sword, I ran along the edge of the forest yelling “I don’t want to participate in this war but [Vanguard] members attacked me so I defended myself!”

Misty Clouds hacked apart a swordsman and shouted, “Everybody, we will break through to cover Xiao Yao Zi Zai!”

A [Misty Palace] squad leader strongly voiced his opinion “Guildmaster, we lost nearly up to a thousand members, must we protect a player we just met? Even if.... even if it is [Zhan Long]’s guildmaster?!”

Misty Cloud replied “Don’t hesitate, just charge with me. dammit. As long as he is [Vanguard]’s enemy, then he is good enough to be my friend. I have already acknowledged Xiao Yao Zi Zai as my friend. So, for a friend, even if I die one time, it is nothing. I will get the level back in 10 hours!”

“Fine....” The squad leader obeyed.

[Ruined Bones]’s guild master, Sword Reborn carried his spear and rushed forward and said “Let me charge, Misty Cloud you can follow me closely. I can hold down a good portion of them, while you bring others to charge out. We’ve already lost this struggle in Arctic Fox Forest, so the least we can do is to minimize the loss and not give [Vanguard] more of our equipment!”

“Yup, I was thinking the same!”

.....

Following closely behind me was a group of archers relentlessly chasing. In front of me was a group of knights and monks waiting in defensive positions. [Vanguard] had grouped up to 50 people in preparation for me; they really gave me too much credit.

“Everyone, stop!”

Amongst the group of people, a high level female mage holding a staff appeared; she walked out and faced the group of swordsman and berserkers and shouted, “Don’t attack, we [Vanguard] and [Zhan Long] aren’t enemies, so don’t attack!”

After saying that, she turned and looked at me. It was [Vanguard]’s vice guildmaster, Simple. She had that helpless look in her eyes and said “Xiao Yao, we have no reason to become enemies, I have surrounded the place. At the north side, there is an exit, you can escape there....”

Before she finished, Fallen Wolf charged forward with his axe shouting “Vice guildmaster, we can’t let him go just like that! Not after he killed so many of our brethren. If you let him go today, this will forever haunt the heart of our brothers. Today, Xiao Yao Zi Zai must die!”

“You!” Simple’s face became green.

“Give me your life!”

Fallen Wolf charged at me with his battle axe. The battle axe had an orange aura surrounding it; this was [Vanguard]’s Emperor Tier battle axe, its attack damage wouldn’t be low at all!

I clenched my teeth, and decided that I must first kill Fallen Wolf to display my powers.

“Shua!”

A Killer Bee flew at me; it must be Fallen Wolf’s pet. Its level was very high so the attack damage won’t be too low!

“Papapapapa....”

The combo did some damage on my Nebula Armor, each attack doing 200+ damage. I could withstand that type of attack. On the other side,

Fallen Wolf's attack was incoming as he violently and quickly threw the axe. This must be the 3rd advancement skill, [Battle Axe Throw]. It is able to disregard the defense when it strikes so it is definitely a strong attack.

"Peng" My Purple Dawn Boots left deep indentations on the grass. I forced myself to change directions and a miss appeared above my body. I was able to dodge the enemy's killer attack just in time. Fallen Wolf was not at all surprised; he already expected I could do that so he grabbed the returning battle axe and unleashed [Skyshaker Slash], another 3rd class skill.

I didn't evade this attack because I couldn't. I used my shoulders to withstand this attack!

"Peng!"

1321!

I shook from head to toe; even with 2000 defense I wasn't able to withstand this type of attack. Fallen Wolf attacked full force so he had a sluggish moment of 0.5 seconds after the attack. Even high level players would have this type of flaw. I didn't let this chance go, and swung my Frost Rain sword across Fallen Wolf's abdomen!

2297!

Fallen Wolf shouted while retreating "Healers, heal me!"

Unfortunately, he was too late!

With my other hand , I activated [Great Realm of Desolation]!

"Hong!"

Three swords appeared and pierced Fallen Wolf's body!

2764!

Instant KO. He didn't drop the battle axe, but he did drop a round helmet. I rushed forward and picked it up.

.....

“Damn, Fallen Wolf has been slain....”

Amongst the group of people, Jian Feng Han held his Flaming Cloud Sword, “Xiao Yao Zi Zai, to instantly KO Fallen Wolf, you are the first person in Ba Huang City to do so!”

After saying that, Jian Feng Han turned to his guild and shouted “Brothers, the end is near! gather your forces and surround and kill them!”

“Hua Ca!”

A flash of light followed the sword as Jian Feng Han’s sword sliced through a few wounded swordsmen and then sword slashed onto a knight’s chest!

“2471!”

This knight wasn’t any normal player, it was [Ruined Bone]’s guild master, Sword Reborn. Being wounded and still holding onto his spear, he retreated. His face turned purple “This, Jian Feng Han has this type of attack power!? Misty Cloud, we can’t break through with Jian Feng Han in our way. No matter how many people we use, we will all die if he is guarding....”

Misty Clouds held his battle axe “F*ck, it doesn’t matter, charge anyways!”

.....

I watched as they got surrounded and killed by the other players. Deep down I thought to myself, I needed to charge back but what good would I do? Thus, I charged forward with my Frost Rain Sword as 50 people waited for me and either way I would be killing [Vanguard] players.

“Keng!”

In the group, a Lv 60 monk drew his blood-drenched sword and said, “Brothers, prepare for battle! Kill [Zhan Long]’s guild master and we will enjoy a feast; otherwise, tonight’s going to be 5 yuan rice boxes!”

Chapter 235: Battle of 27 Elites

“Clang! Clang! Clang!

A row of heavy shields smashed against the ground to form a wall of shields. [Vanguard]’s intention was very clear; even if I was only one person, they would cut no corners. As if they were one, the shield formation tightened as they waited for me to rush towards them.

“Why must we force [Zhan Long] to be our enemy! ?”

Simple gripped her staff tightly in her hands as waves of emotion shook her figure. She looked in the direction of Jian Feng Han and shouted, “Ah Han, I am asking you why we must treat [Zhan Long] as foes; do we truly need to eradicate [Zhan Long] for [Vanguard] to become first in Ba Huang City?!”

With a flick of his wrist, Jian Feng Han sent his blade through the chest of a [Ruined Bones] member. Slowly pulling it out, he coldly replied, “Elder sister Yun, don’t bother saying any more. Once Xiao Yao Zi Zai killed brother Fallen Wolf, he became a mortal enemy of [Vanguard]. As the Guild Master, I am held accountable by everyone for his act of killing an Elder of [Vanguard]. If I don’t kill Xiao Yao Zi Zai today, don’t even bother mentioning [Vanguard] taking our rightful place in Ba Huang City, what dignity would our guild have left? !”

Simple clenched her teeth and taking out a City Return Scroll from her bag, she murmured, “Fine, you are the Guild Master and have the final say but I have the right to make my own decisions for myself: I will not participate in this battle!”

“Swoosh!”

[Vanguard]’s number one Mage returned to the city, leaving the battlefield.

Goodbye Tears turned: “Leader, what should we do now?”

Jian Feng Han gave a low shout in reply: “Kill Xiao Yao Zi Zai, what else!”

“Roger!”

.....

“Archers!” Goodbye Tears raised his longsword and shouted: “Draw nearer to Xiao Yao Zi Zai and use [Scattered Shot] to target him. Once he has been stunned, the Assassins will help finish him off!”

In the group, 7 or 8 Archers readied their bows; drawing the strings all the way back, getting ready to shoot.

The best defense, is a good offense!

Now, I could no longer hesitate. I held my Frost Rain Sword and quickly used my techniques to accelerate straight towards the enemy formation, my target was Goodbye Tears. He was the group’s Flagbearer, so killing him would hurt the group’s morale. If I couldn’t break through the row of heavy shields, I wouldn’t break through at all.

“Sou!”

I moved to the side to dodge [Scatter Shot] as it whipped past my nose, Archers were hiding in the nearby pine trees waiting for a chance to strike. I started to move in a zigzag pattern as I continued to dodge their shots. In a flash, I was only 10 meters away from the shield wall.

“Be careful!” Goodbye Tears raised his sword. He then ordered, “Mages, use [Pillar of Fire & Ice] to lock him down; Archers continue using [Scatter Shot]. Close combat is not in our favor, hurry up and kill him!”

“Hong hong....”

Underneath my feet, a mix of ice and fire surged. This was the precursor of [Pillar of Fire & Ice]. I had to accelerate even more to avoid it. I held my Frost Rain Sword while performing difficult flips and maneuvers. The sword started shaking and I released [Seven Star Fragment Slash]. This was the first time I had used [Seven Star Fragment Slash] to kill a group of people. Since it was already at Lv 6, the [Seven Star Fragment Slash] had overwhelming power and a string of damage numbers appeared.

1764 !

1827 !

1911 !

1784 !

.....

Even the three Healers behind the shield wall were KO'ed by the AOE attack. In addition, the players that were 5 meters ahead of me had less than half their health left. Goodbye Tears had a lot more health points, around 4000; so he still had approximately 70% health left. He held his sword and angrily shouted, "Block him!"

"Keng!"

I held my Frost Rain Sword firmly and suddenly struck out at Goodbye Tears' shield. He helplessly received the hit and was even forced to take 2 steps back. Lowering his blade, he stabbed at my abdomen, and his blade flashed with the light of [Mountain Strike]. Although he was a health and defense oriented Monk, the damage of [Mountain Strike] could not be taken lightly, as Goodbye Tears had a pretty decent looking weapon.

Right as the tip of the blade was about to slice into me, I lowered my body while my blade began to glow. The entirety of my sword began to increase in size and with a screeching sound I advanced 5 meters. I nearly killed 20 nearby players with [Blade Rush] while simultaneously dodging Goodbye Tears' [Mountain Strike] skill.

1547 !

A huge damage number floated above Goodbye Tears' head; he probably only had about 2200 health left!

"F*ck!"

Goodbye Tears turned around, gulped down a health potion and raised his longsword as he charged towards me laughing, "The so-called number one Sword Healer in Ba Huang City, Xiao Yao Zi Zai; is this all you've got? If so, all you can do is wait for [Vanguard] to kill you because this level of ability is not even worth mentioning. Come and kill me if you have the

guts!”

I clenched my jaw and abruptly opened my palm. Three blades floated in the sky as I targeted Goodbye Tears with [Great Realm of Desolation]. Kill!

2215 !

A huge damage number appeared, but Goodbye Tears still managed to survive since a Healer had him locked as a healing target. With about 1700 health left, it was as if he could not be killed!

Within the crowd, a few [Vanguard] players could not help but laugh out merrily, “To be able to survive that, Monks are truly formidable. At this rate, [Vanguard]’s number one Monk and Vice-Guild Leader Fushen Thousand Blade would be hard pressed to keep his title!”

Goodbye Tears laughed playfully: “As it should be!”

As he was still speaking, a tiger suddenly hissed from the brushes. Immediately, a fierce golden tiger jumped out and suddenly transforming into an enormous tiger. Walking on a trail of flames, it locked onto Goodbye Tears.

“What... what’s happening? ” Goodbye Tears stopped moving, “What’s that? ”

The Flaming Tiger God, crushed against the body of Goodbye Tears, dealing 1789 damage, before raising its head and bellowing; [Fierce Roar]!

“Hong! ”

The powerful sound wave swept through the crowd, forming a shock wave that impacted anything within a 50 meter range. The group of heavy armored players that I had previously injured all died on the battle ground. A few Healers, Archers, and Musketeers within the vicinity were also immediately killed; there was no other outcome, the little tiger’s attack power was too high, even a [Fierce Roar] could kill them off easily!

.....

“Eeeh...”

Goodbye Tears lost the Healers and alas, his health dropped to 0. Slowly he fell to the ground and looked at me, “This is the end, Xiao Yao Zi Zai swapped his pet for a crazy monster.....”

Suddenly, my shoulders started hurting since two Berserkers had used [Flame Blade] to do a total damage of 1000+. I didn’t hesitate. I swiftly used [Combo] on them. The two Berserkers died in no time. At the same time while I was fighting, a group of players near the edge charged towards me. I healed myself and prepared to engage.

“Breakthrough, Kill him!”

Not far away, two level 60 Swordsman both came up to attack. These are definitely elites even within Vanguard. In Ba Huang City, there are only around 100 players that have gone through their third advancement. 30 of those players are in [Vanguard].

“Hua ca!”

Two Swordsman simultaneously activated [Blade Rush] and ran through my body!

971 !

712 !

It was extremely painful and one of them was equipped especially well!

After getting run through, I intuitively dashed forward a step and immediately felt something hot at my back. Two [Skyshaker Slash]es both MISSED. Penetrating and then turning to use [Skyshaker Slash], this was every Swordsman’s general routine. Using this kind of trick against me was a mistake!

I lowered my Frost Rain Sword and turned, my whole body disappeared with the sword. Immediately, the two strong Swordsmen gazes turned cold: “F**k, it’s [Blade Rush]!”

“Hua Ca! ”

Dashing at high speed, I swept through both of them, inflicting enormous damages—

1746 !

1527 !

Without waiting for their reaction, I sped up my pace and looked for a good angle, and raised my hand for a [Seven Star Fragment Slash]!

“Hong!”

[Seven Star Fragment Slash] had once again killed 9 people, and on top of that, the Flaming Tiger God used its [Burstfire Raid] ability to sweep across the battlefield; there wasn't much left of the group of 50+ people that we were originally facing, it went to the extent that I didn't even have to use my Shield of the Crimson Dragon. Goddamn, with the help of my Flaming Tiger God, my crowd combat power was really substantially increased.

“Sha sha.....”

My Purple Dawn Boots advanced across the grass, and my Flaming Tiger God got rid of the remaining few people behind the line of shields. Walking towards the battlefield, I picked up nearly fifty pieces of equipment and threw them into my bag. There really was no limit to the drops with my 65 Charm, almost to the point that killing a player would guarantee a drop!

.....

Not far away, Misty Clouds' battle axe split open a [Vanguard] Swordsman, but was also hit by Jian Feng Han's [Skyshaker Slash]. He quickly backed off, but didn't forget to look in my direction, laughing out loud, “I say! Xiao Yao Zi Zai, you're so strong! One person can break the enemy's shield formation of fifty to sixty people. This...is that big tiger your pet? How fierce!

[Ruined Bone]'s Guild Master Sword Reborn laughed as well: “This time, [Vanguard] has tasted bitter defeat. Losing so many people to just Xiao Yao Zi Zai himself, are they all trash? Jian Feng Han, do you only have the ability to bully us newly founded guilds? Haha, getting defeated by Xiao Yao Zi Zai like this, don't you feel like saying anything?”

Jian Feng Han gritted his teeth in hate, angrily saying: “Fine, open your dog eyes wide. I’ll let you see Xiao Yao Zi Zai’s corpse on the field! 13 Eagles, bring your elite troops and come with me. Our goal is no longer to take over Arctic Fox forest, but to kill Xiao Yao Zi Zai!”

Misty Clouds raised his battle axe, drew back the corners of his mouth, and bellowed: “Brothers, Xiao Yao Zi Zai is currently attracting the enemy’s attacks for us. Our chance has arrived; prepare to break out. Kill as many as possible; let [Vanguard] know that we are not simply livestock waiting to be slaughtered!”

.....

A group of figures moved forward, it was Jian Feng Han leading 27 cronies. There were a total of 28 absolute elites, with no lack of thrice promoted experts. Taking a rough glance, including Jian Feng Han, there were a total of 8 third advancement players. This time I’ve nailed my own coffin!

Looking into the area above, I saw three Wind Elves comprising of two Archers and one Mage, and that Mage was a Lv 61 third promotion player. As such, that Mage would have [Indigo Sea Arrow], that brutal skill. I would have to kill that Mage first, or else it would be extremely hard for me to advance smoothly.

Facing the impending assault of Jian Feng Han, I didn’t retreat backwards. Instead, I hefted my sword and stood there firmly, my heart calm as I waited for the most optimal opportunity to take action!

The players crept closer and closer!

“50 meters!”

“40 meters!”

“35 meters!”

Finally within range!

My arm trembled as my fist connected with the ground, targeting Jian Feng Han, [Binding Chains]!

“Peng!”

A cloud of dust formed as a pair of battle boots danced about with pretty footwork like those of a ballerina; Jian Feng Han beautifully MISSED the attack from [Binding Chains]. His awareness was truly terrifying, but [Binding Chains] still managed to trap a Lv 59 Swordsman behind him.

My hand waved, [Seven Star Fragment Slash]!

“Hong!”

In the split second before [Seven Star Fragment Slash] was sent out, I raised my left hand. Five fingers parted as [Great Realm of Destruction] flew towards that Swordsman!

1733 !

2214 !

Having suffered damage from the two continuous hits, the Swordsman gave one last cry of agony before falling, becoming the first casualty of the 27 people brought by Jian Feng Han.

Chapter 236: Don't Be Foolish

“Hua!”

Jian Feng Han stomped over. Once he was 6 or 7 meters away from me, he used his [Blade Rush] to get close the gap. The Flaming Cloud Sword was ready to strike, and the dense smoke swirled around it quickly, giving people no time to react. Immediately, the air above us crackled and shook as his sword came downwards!

I didn't budge a single step, and released a [Wind Blade] in return!

“Keng!”

Our angles of attack were the exact same. As they connected with each other, they created a scary shockwave. This was a contest of pure strength!

With my arm numb, I was blown back by Jian Feng Han. I had never thought that Jian Feng Han's strength was so much more superior than mine. He only had to step back a few steps while I had flown backwards. It had to be true that his Flaming Cloud Sword was much better than my own Frost Rain Sword, leaving me to be the ultimate loser.

As my body flew through the air, Jiang Feng Han roared as he slunk downwards. He had finished storing up energy in his Flaming Cloud Sword, and a faint image of a wolf's head appeared above the sword tip. As he lashed out with his sword, the wolf's head flew forward and pierced through my body!

“Ding.”

Battle Notification: Player Jian Feng Han has used the skill [Corrupt Wolf Edge] against you causing 2198 damage!

.....

With a single glance at my health, I became terrified out of my mind! I only had 97 points of health left; what a frightening sight. What kind of skill was this, Jian Feng Han?!

As I fell into the bushes, I called my Flaming Tiger God to follow me. [Camouflage] had activated automatically, so I had already faded away from view. I hurriedly used [Heal] to recover some health while commanding my pet tiger to hide in another bush and wait for an opportunity to strike.

“Where’d he go?” An Archer asked with wide eyes.

Jian Feng Han readied his Flaming Cloud Sword and said, “He’s in the bushes, Xiao Yao Zi Zai is using his new skill to hide in it. [Camouflage] allows one to hide within the plants with ease, so be careful everyone. Stick together so that you won’t be ambushed by Xiao Yao Zi Zai. Wind Elves, fly up and search from the sky. Although he’s hiding in the bushes, he’ll have to make a move, and I want you to flush him out!”

The group all nodded their heads and since the bushes nearby were vast, they separated into 3 groups.

I leaned against a bunch of maple trees and healed myself up with 3 Lv 7 [Heal]s. My natural health recovery wasn’t all that bad; I got about 20 health every second. Looking off into the distance, I groaned. There were 9 people total: 3 Swordsmen, 1 Berserker, 3 Archers, and 2 Mages. Among them was a Lv 62 Mage, who was also a Wind Elf. He carried a staff and the ID “North Pole” floated above him. He looked like he was around 27 years old, and his whole body was radiating purple and gold light. He was basically completely dressed in Purple Tier Mage equipment.

I recognized this player; he was the second-ranked Mage in [Vanguard] and second only to the Mage Simple. It was said that even among the Mages, he was ranked within the top 10 in Ba Huang City and was only slightly worse than Thousand Suns Over Snowy Lands. Seeing that his equipment definitely wasn’t inferior, getting hit by one of his [Indigo Sea Arrow]s would definitely be very painful. This wouldn’t do, I needed to kill him first. Otherwise the chances of me surviving would be extremely lowered!

After reaching a decision, I unsheathed my sword and began to climb up the maple tree while being concealed by the various layers of leaves.

Since I was still concealed, I could safely face the 3rd class advanced Mage. A sneak attack against this Mage was necessary, or else I wouldn't have any good opportunities against him.

“Hua...”

North Pole's face had a guarded expression as he flew around the area with his transparent wings flapping. When he gazed over at the maple trees, he began to scowl, “Archers, concentrate your fire at that maple tree over there. Xiao Yao Zi Zai is a master at guerilla warfare and would never let an opportunity to hide escape him. That maple tree over there is the best chance he has to attack my position!”

Upon hearing this, I became slightly frightened. This North Pole player was difficult to deal with. To think that he could accurately figure out where I was hiding!

“Shuaa...”

A single barrage of arrows could completely wipe out the tree but I still remained quietly on it. My heart pounded; although North Pole guessed where I was hiding, he wasn't sure of it. So I still had a chance!

Keeping an eye on the dots on the map, I took control of my tiger, who was hiding in another part of the bushes. It faced a couple of Archers and while the Mage was searching the map up above, I commanded the tiger to attack!

“Houuu!”

The tiger came roaring as it jumped out from the bushes. With a [Flaming Claw]+[Burstfire Raid], it killed an Archer straight away before turning around and running towards the maple tree I was hiding in.

“Not good!” North Pole cried out in alarm, “After Xiao Yao Zi Zai's pet; with me everyone!”

They fell for the trap!

North Pole flew across the field quickly as I started to hold my breath. As he approached where I was hiding, I kicked off of the tree branch with

a bang and flew out from the tree while I activated a [Combo] with my Frost Rain Sword!

“Bang bang bang!”

Three attacks landed on North Pole’s [Mana Shield] and broke it completely, though he immediately recovered from the sudden development. He activated [Dimensional Leap] and plummeted downwards 20 meters. Seeing me follow his direction, he jumped once more 20 yards in another direction. His staff went up and the [Indigo Sea Arrow] flew towards me!

1874 !

A single hit knocked out a bunch of my health, how fierce!

But, North Pole had completely forgotten I had a pet and out of the bushes came the Flaming Tiger God once more. Embers erupted from where he was stampeding, and his claws scratched at the back of North Pole, dropping him down to almost no health immediately! He hastily tried to teleport out of his predicament, but unfortunately, he had used up the last of his three jumps from [Dimensional Leap].

“Hou!”

The Flaming Tiger God roared again; it was [Fierce Roar]! A heavy surge of energy hit North Pole, dropping him down to the ground. As he knelt down, the tiger slashed at him with a combo, killing him!

I flew down to kill the rest with [Seven Stars Fragment Slash] and hit the 3 Swordsmen and 1 Berserker. With my sword, I activated another skill, [Great Realm of Desolation]!

2537 !

The Berserker fell to the ground dead while the 3 other Swordsmen with only half their health remaining were immediately killed off by my tiger. The remaining Swordsman activated his 3rd class advancement skill, [Blade Rush]!

“Huacha!”

In one second, my Flaming Tiger God had been hit for over 1400 points of damage. Following with a [Skyshaker Slash], Flaming Tiger God lost another 1800+ points of health!

With a roar, the Tiger God activated [Flame Armor] and an incomplete shield of fire appeared over its body which improved its defenses by a large amount. While the swordsman was unable to break through its defense, the tiger retaliated with a slash to a nearby Archer, killing him. It landed a fatal blow, while recovering 50% of the damage it did–

4238 !

+2119 !

.....

“Damn, this tiger pet is absurdly strong...” The Lv 60 Swordsman retreated quickly with a deathly pale face. He had used his [Skyshaker Slash], [Blade Rush], and even [Flame Blade], so he had no choice but to retreat and wait for the cooldowns to finish.

Although, there was no way I’d let him do that. I shook my arm and activated [Binding Chains], directly tying him down. Flying forward, I released a [Fierce Ice Blade] to finish him!

“Pow!”

In another direction, my Flaming Tiger God whom I didn’t command to do anything was stunned by a [Scatter Shot]. I finished off another Swordsman then simultaneously activated [Haste] and charged over through the grass. [Blade Rush] along with [Seven Star Fragment Slash] directly finished off two other Archers. In the air, the last Mage stared dumbstruck. Casting [Pillar of Fire & Ice], he immediately flew off in the distance.

I couldn’t let the Lv 59 Mage run away!

I hurriedly ran forward and locked onto the airborne target. With a wave, I activated [Great Realm of Desolation]!

“Bang!”

Three swords penetrated into the [Mana Shield] of the Mage. Perhaps the skill did too much damage, because right as the shield broke, a large number still rose above the player, and ended up killing him–

1764 !

Pitiful Mages. Once their shields were broken, they became the frailest class ever. Even Healers had more defense, and they could even heal and buff themselves up. Mages had to place 10 points into magic or else their attacks wouldn't do any major damage. Without a doubt, first class Mages had to put their faith into magic.

“Pow!”

The Mage that was flying overhead dropped his boots, Lv 47 Purple Tier ones. I stuffed this into my inventory; I'd be able to sell this for a bit of money later!

From afar, voices came shouting out. It was a small group of 8, the map clearly displaying bright dots.

I hastily retreated and brought my tiger into the underbrush, but not before scooping up all of the loot that had been dropped.

Looking at them from a distance, this group of 8 players looked fairly strong: 3 Assassins, 2 Swordsmen, 2 Knights, and 1 Mage; it was a standard attack formation. With the Assassins to stun, the Mages and Swordsmen to score a kill, and the Knight to tank, this formation could easily kill any solo players.

.....

“Everyone shut up!” The Mage barked as his hand went up. In a quieter voice, he said, “Crap, even North Pole's group was wiped out by that bastard Xiao Yao Zi Zai. What kind of skill does he have to be able to wipe out so many experts so casually while surrounded?”

While hiding in the shadows, the voice of an Assassin called out, “Do a sweep of the area up front, Knight. Your health is the highest amongst us. As long as you can withstand Xiao Yao Zi Zai's attack power, once we draw him out, successfully stun him a few times, and let Lao Qi hold him

off, even if he has 9 lives we'll take them out one by one!"

The Knight furrowed his brows, "I'm afraid I wouldn't be able to withstand Xiao Yao Zi Zai's attacks. Rumors say that his true attack power is stronger than our Guild Master's by a bit..."

The mage asked in a low voice, "You have 3 points in defense, 5 points in health, and 2 points in strength, and you are a third advancement knight as well, what are you scared of? Tell us your stats..."

The knight hefted his spear, saying, "2200 defense and 5340 health with an attack of 1500+..."

.....

"Ca..."

Within the bushes, I almost burst into laughter. A third advancement class knight only had 1500+ attack? Dong Cheng Lei and Old K at Lv 40 already had this much attack. It looks like a Knight's only worth was to help fight a boss and act as a shield.

"Sha..."

The Knight cautiously stepped forward with his hand on his spear while carrying a purple shield in his other hand. Without even thinking about it I knew it was a Purple Tier one; [Vanguard]'s equipment was all top notch, and almost bordered being abnormal. Purple Tier equipment could be seen everywhere, while in [Zhan Long], Purple Tier items at present were still considered rare drops.

.....

I looked at the Knight's ID. Yep, Don't Be Foolish, this guy's life is finished!

Chapter 237: Rock Spirit Fighter

Don't Be Foolish was a Lv 60 Knight and [Vanguard]'s number one Knight. With 2200 defense as well as 5340 Health, his stats could make any boss at this stage shed a tear. Even Hans would find that breaking Don't Be Foolish's defense required an extraordinary amount of effort.

Nevertheless, I still had to kill him; otherwise he would continue to be an obstacle.

.....

I glanced toward the tiger at my side, and the tiger reciprocated my glance with a look that I could depend on. It rubbed its shaggy head against my shoulder while its tail wagged about adorably. I couldn't help but laugh; this little guy was too cute! But at the moment, I didn't need his cuteness. I needed his sharp claws to help me kill the number 1 Knight of [Vanguard].

"Bang bang bang..."

The Knight's spear whacked through the underbrush as Don't Be Foolish walked forward. Laughing, he said, "Xiao Yao Zi Zai, if you claim yourself to be [Zhan Long]'s Guild Master, you should show some of yourself. How can you afford to stay in the bushes all day and night? Come out, and face my mighty spear if you are a real man!"

I didn't pay much attention to Don't be Foolish, but I was extremely careful with the three Assassins by his side. Although they were invisible, they left some footprints in the grass. It wasn't difficult at all for me to deduce their locations from those. In the sky, some green birds and yellow bees were flying; it seemed that even their pets were looking for me.

I pondered to myself: I had to bait Don't Be Foolish first, then kill those three Assassins. I would then kill Don't be Foolish afterwards. I had to be fast, or else Jian Feng Han would arrive.

"Gulp! "

Swallowing a Green Qilin Pill, I restored 700 MP. [Blade Rush] and

[Seven Star Fragment Slash] consumed Mana far too fast, and these repeated fights left my MP bar almost empty!

As Don't Be Foolish got closer, I figured out the Assassin's walking patterns and began to focus on figuring out their positions. Unfortunately, this was a tad bit difficult, and it took me half a minute before the 3 positions were finally determined!

[Turmoil Sword]! [Haste]! [Enrage]!

My chain of skills passively increased my stats. With [Haste], I increased my speed so that I could rapidly dash out onto the open grass. With a twist of my wrist, my sword flashed like a shooting star and [Seven Stars Fragment Slash] came flying out!

“Boom!”

The dirt flew everywhere as my sword qi blew across the ground. Three rays of light enveloped the 3 Assassins, and were killed by me!

2119 !

1987 !

2001 !

Even Wan Er didn't have over 2000 health, and so these Assassins definitely wouldn't have that much health. Unless my attacks MISSED, they would definitely die!

Once the Assassins all died, the Swordsmen, Knight and Mage all rushed on over while I purposely stood there without retreating. The 2 Swordsmen hoisted their swords as they rushed to kill me, but unfortunately for them, a tiger's roar came out from the bushes. It fired off a [Burstfire Raid], and with its gigantic body, it came barreling at the players and left a flaming trail of numbers—

1764 !

1643 !

1804 !

1900 !

.....

I didn't hesitate finishing them off at all. With a [Combo], I killed both Swordsmen. I kept a steady tempo of striking rapidly, then retreating before they could strike back. The Mage recoiled back to avoid any more attacks and cried out, "Dammit, how is it that Xiao Yao Zi Zai has improved this much? Information said that he was ranked way over 300,000 players recently. How come on the CBN Battle website rankings he jumped several hundred thousand spots? His strength...has it improved so much that he could enter the battle website's grandmaster rankings?"

A bleeding Knight hung onto his spear, "My god, even at a time like this you have so much to say. Why don't you just go die then?"

Just then, another [Fierce Roar] was heard, killing both the Mage and Knight! From a party of 8 players, it had instantly dwindled down to the single Knight: Don't Be Foolish! He approached behind me slowly, his spear in hand, and said in a resolute voice, "Guild Master Jian Feng Han has 9 other experts that will be here in 10 seconds. I don't see you running away, what are you waiting for?!"

I didn't say anything and just gripped my sword tightly while swallowing an Indigo Sea Pill. Then, I directly charged over to [Vanguard]'s number one Knight!

.....

"Clang!"

The edge of my blade knocked aside the spear he was using to block, then I kicked him with my boots, forcing him back several steps. Following closely after him, I activated a Lv 7 [Combo]!

442 !

472 !

501 !

449 !

Tsk, this 2200+ defense couldn't be underestimated. Even my [Combo] barely did enough damage. With his extra hidden 14% additional defense, this guy was almost like an iron board refusing to be cut!

However, not being able to cut him didn't mean I couldn't kill him!

With a flick of my wrist, I activated a Lv 7 [Fierce Wind Blade] with my Frost Rain Sword!

"Huacha!" A 1107 floated above Don't be Foolish's head and his face grew cold. Despite his defenses being broken, the remains of his spear flew out to greet my stomach with a [Flame Blade]!

219 !

"Eh..." His face turned green this time, "An attack of 1500+ is only able to do this much damage?"

I couldn't help but laugh, "I have around 2034 defense, did you think I was a fragile Swordsman?"

With casual banter and even more relaxed movements, I attacked him three times with regular attacks and then used a [Fierce Ice Blade] to freeze both his legs. He only had 1400 health left, and even a health potion wouldn't bring him back to full now. Now he began to panic, trying to retreat with his spear as he cried out, "Xiao Yao Zi Zai, if you're really so cocky, then come after me!"

I watched him as he ran away and laughed, "Why would I need to chase you to kill you?"

With a lift of my right hand, my Frost Rain Sword released 3 phantasmal swords. The next second, [Great Realm of Desolation] was cast, and the three swords immediately pierced through Don't Be Foolish. With a cyan green light to show that it was a fatal strike, a huge number floated above—

2897 !

.....

"Plop..."

Both his knees dropped to the ground as he leaned on his spear. As he sat there dying, his eyes grew large, “My god, I had 2278 points of defense at that moment, how was I hurt for almost 3000 points of damage? Xiao Yao Zi Zai, you...”

“Crash...”

He died straight after, leaving behind a shield afterwards. A quick glance told me it was a Purple Tier shield, but it was a pity that I didn’t have time to pick it up as a group of people chose that time to scatter out from behind the bushes. In the front stood Jian Feng Han carrying his Flaming Cloud Sword. By his side was a golden armored pet; it appeared to be his newly obtained Purple Tier BOSS rank pet– Rock Spirit Fighter. It was a humanoid monster, but it was a rumor that had never been confirmed on the forums, since no one had faced its might before until now.

“Shua...”

I hid among the bushes once more and advanced toward them until I was about 70 meters away, but I could not get any closer or else I would be at risk of Jian Feng Han discovering my presence. A high-leveled player like him could easily kill the group of players I had killed with the same amount of effort.

.....

“Move forward, but be careful!”

Jian Feng Han abruptly leapt into the bushes with his sword. His clear eyes gazed at the surrounding area as he raised his arm higher in the air, “Don’t be reckless and stick with me. Probe around the bushes while the Wind Elves fly 30 meters into the air. Observe all of Xiao Yao Zi Zai’s possible movements!”

“Shua!”

A Lv 61 female Wind Elf Archer flew into the sky carrying her longbow. Her beautiful eyes swept the ground below. Since this area didn’t have that many big trees, she was in no danger of a possible ambush. That was

probably the reason as to why Jian Feng Han let her fly up.

“Guild Master...” Fushen Thousand Blades said with his staff in hand. “Xiao Yao Zi Zai already killed 18 of the 27 people you brought. We currently only have 10 people including you. Do we have a high chance of victory?”

Jian Feng Han clenched his fist, “If he dares to show his face, then I’ll duel with him. It’s a shame that Xiao Yao Zi Zai doesn’t seem to be willing to though. Keep on looking; with me here, as soon as Xiao Yao Zi Zai comes within my range of vision, I won’t let him escape!”

“Okay!”

.....

I exhaled slightly as I stared at the sky. The Wind Elf Archer was still flying about with her Purple Tier bow in her hand, ready to fire a [Scatter Shot]. This wouldn’t do; there was no way I could let her fly above me. Her perception was strong enough to be able to sense me if she flew near me, so I wasn’t sure if I could remain hidden for much longer.

My hand clasped onto the Frost Rain Sword, and I waited for 3 seconds. Even if I got killed by Jian Feng Han, I had to get rid of this Archer!

Facing the sky, I lifted my left hand and activated [Great Realm of Desolation]. The three swords crackled like thunder as it shot down the archer with ease!

“Ah!”

However, a small shield appeared on her body before the move struck. It looked like the special effect of her equipment, protecting and saving her life from certain death!

1992 !

Dammit! I gritted my teeth as I charged up my sword with mana. Another slash of my sword released [Seven Star Fragment Slash] into the air!

“Screeech!”

The sword's mana swept past, and the Female Wind Elf cried, "Wu wu," as she died. But this that, my position was suddenly exposed! With a furious roar, the Spirit Fighter of Jian Feng Fan went straight at me. The battle axe tore through the air, actually causing a whirlwind!

MISS !

971 !

874 !

I continued to get attacked 3 more times. One attack MISSED, but 2 axes landed. It hurt so much. At the same time, my body became exposed and I fell into thick grass. Even though my invisibility activated, I still left an imprint on the grass.

"Shua!"

Wielding his Flaming Cloud Sword, Jian Feng Han split the grass searching for me. He used his [Combo] in the open space; although he couldn't see me, he could still approximate my location!

From another direction, a Lv 60 third advancement Berserker attacked. He followed Jian Feng Han's attack and used his 3rd class advancement skill, [Axe Throw]!

If I don't do anything, I'll die!

I didn't dare delay, and immediately activated [Shield of the Crimson Dragon]; the shield formed a huge protective aura around my body. My shoulders felt the damage coming from Jian Feng Han's [Combo] and [Skyslaker Slash] from above. At the same time, I was nearly decapitated by the Berserker's axe that was thrown by that Berserker.

371 !

404 !

MISS !

397 !

1129 !

F*ck, Jian Feng Han's attack was too high; [Crimson Dragon Shield] couldn't withstand his attacks either!

I made my choice; my feet slid toward the Berserker, as I used a health potion to bring back some of my health. My Frost Rain Sword went straight into the Berserker's neck, the cut was accompanied by a [Fierce Ice Blade]. He was dead before I had even started my third attack!

My back felt a piercing chill; Jian Feng Han had struck his Flaming Cloud sword through my back. This must be his [Ice Blade] ability.

"Keng"

875 !

I slowly retreated; my health points did not even reach 50%. What's worst was that Jian Feng Han's pet was like a shadow. Rock Spirit released a loud growl, and holding its axe it used its ability — [Great Penetration Strike]!

1102 !

Damn! My heart went cold. What kind of attack was this? Even with my [Crimson Dragon Shield], it was still able to do such a massive amount of damage to me?!

Chapter 238: Who is the Prey?

“Die!”

Jian Feng Han’s eyes burned with anger, his Flaming Cloud Sword carried a [Skyshaker Slash] as his sword came towards me towards me. He wanted to finish me in one move; this I already knew. After Jian Feng Han forced me back with [Skyshaker Slash], he would then follow up with [Corrupt Wolf Edge]. Under such a combo, my health of only 700+ had no way of handling it.

Under the effects of [Shield of the Crimson Dragon], I lifted my sword to try blocking Jian Feng Han’s [Skyshaker Slash]. There was no way to avoid it. Jian Feng Han’s agility was about the same as mine, so his hit rate was very high. He definitely wouldn’t give the attack a chance to “MISS”.

“Klang!”

Sparks lit up the surrounding forest; Flaming Cloud Sword’s attack was really high, I was losing by quite a bit. As I quickly retreated backward, I turned to look at the ground behind me. Behind me there was a short, solid stump. Piercing the Frost Rain Sword, I twisted around with a “peng” while my Purple Dawn Boots stepped onto the short stump. Using strength to propel myself, my entire body landed in a field of grass with a “swoosh”!

With a “Peng” sound, [Corrupt Wolf Edge] arrived behind me, right after I moved out of the way. It directly broke the short stump into pieces; Jian Feng Han’s attack was really showy!

.....

“Roar!”

Flaming Tiger God’s roar disturbed the entire forest. Its body suddenly grew bigger, and [Burstfire Raid] swept through the group of people. Jian Feng Han brought along 9 people, one of them was already dead, while the other two Archers had lost more than half their health from the [Burstfire Raid]. Before they could react, my Flaming Tiger God let out

[Fierce Roar].

“Bzzz.....”

The sound wave swept across the grassland, and the 2 Archers died immediately. Another Lv 60 third advancement Mage’s [Mana Shield] was also shattered. With a quiet shout, I locked onto the Mage with my hand and activated [Great Realm of Desolation].

2761 !

Insta-Kill!

After that, Jian Feng Han had only 5 people around him. That group included Fushen Thousand Blade the Monk, 2 Swordsmen and 2 Archers; both were DPS classes. They no longer had any Healers!

Quietly waiting in the grass field, I used [Heal] 3 times consecutively to fully recover my health. Flaming Tiger God, using its powerful mobility, leapt into the grass to escape the attacks. However it still took one of Jian Feng Han’s [Skyslayer Slash]s and only had 1400+ health left. Good thing it was a Valkyrie Tier BOSS pet, so its health regeneration speed was fast. If it was not attacked within 2 minutes, it could almost completely recover its health. We hid under the cover of darkness. There would be another chance; we could wait.

Twisting my head to look toward the west, the last ray of sunlight disappeared from the sky. In game, night time had arrived.

“Crap!”

Fushen Thousand Blade holding his staff, raised a fist, and said in anger, “Xiao Yao is really crafty. He killed so many of us in this way and can still retreat without dying...”

Jian Feng Han held the Flaming Cloud Sword tightly. With a pair of clear eyes that was full of battle intent, he smiled slightly, “It looks like I have taken Xiao Yao too lightly. His current battle tactics and decision-making have grown a lot since I first saw him. His strength is growing at a very fast pace; even the Fang Ge Que from the past would be slightly inferior. Such a terrifying opponent; only this kind of opponent is worthy

of our [Vanguard]'s respect!"

One of the Archers asked, "Guild Master, what should we do now? That little rascal hid again ..."

Jian Feng Han didn't look too far away, then waved his hand to summon the system tools and said, "He is in that area. You two Archers use multiple [Triple Shot]'s to sweep. I will summon a group of Musketeers and Mages over. Using [Bombardment] on the entire area, I will show Xiao Yao that you can temporarily hide in the grass field but you can't hide forever. In the end, he is still the prey of Jian Feng Han!"

The Archer smiled, "Guild Master, I will also gather troops here. They are really too eager to kill him; I'll summon 100 elite long range players, the best of the best in our [Vanguard]!"

Jian Feng Han furrowed his brows and said, "Alright, gather them quickly. Let's finish this battle soon and kill Xiao Yao Zi Zai. We have to get rid of him; otherwise [Misty Palace], [Ruined Bones] and [Winds of Battle] will see us as a joke!"

Fushen Thousand Blade coughed, "Actually, we, the 28 main members of [Vanguard], grouped together to kill Xiao Yao Zi Zai and only have 6 members left now. Aren't we a joke already? Hahaha...."

The corners of Jian Feng Han's mouth twitched, "Don't make fun of us, prepare for battle!"

.....

In the bushes, I didn't move an inch. The situation right now was extremely difficult. I had to take the initiative instead of being passive. I needed to rush over and kill the few people left first. Otherwise, when 100 long ranged players arrive and start using [Bombardment] on the whole area, I wouldn't even have to come out from the bushes; I'd die on the spot.

After waiting for around a minute, Flaming Tiger God's health had regenerated back to full. Yeah, this was my chance! I had to use a different strategy this time: divide and conquer the enemies together with

Flaming Tiger God. We waited for the opportunity to start the attack!

“Hou!”

Under the twilight of the setting sun, Flaming Tiger God flew out from the bushes suddenly, its body alight with fire. Its four paws leapt off the ground, leaving a flaming path as it swept past 2 Archers on the enemy side. Raising its claws, [Flaming Claws] struck a Swordsman’s chestplate!

1572 !

Raising its head, [Flaming Roar] was activated!

Unfortunately, Jian Feng Han was too close. With a slash of his Flaming Cloud Sword, he started a showcase of his S-ranked combo, inflicting a series of attacks on the tiger’s chest. Not only did his attack intercept [Flaming Roar], it also left the tiger with only 1200 health. His Flaming Cloud Sword began to shake again as [Skyshaker Slash] began. He wanted to kill my pet first!

“Shua!”

In this critical moment, I rushed out of the bushes. Running in an arc, I quickly found the correct angle and unleashed [Seven Star Fragment Slash]!

“Hong!”

With dust scattering in the wind, 2 Archers fell on the ground!

Moving back, I parried the other Swordsman’s [Combo] attack. My shoulders slammed into his chest and I bent my body slightly. Bathed in the light of the sword, the tip of my blade suddenly pierced through the bodies of the two Swordsmen!

1763 !

1837 !

One of them had received my tiger’s [Flaming Claw] attack, so he immediately died. The other still had a small amount of health left and was scampering away, running for his life. But there was no way I’d let him run away; I chased after him and killed him with a swing of my

sword.

Flaming Tiger God roared in anguish as its health dropped even more. It had received yet another attack from Rock Spirit Fighter's [Great Penetration Strike]!

"Hou!"

Its claws drenched with blood, Flaming Tiger God ferociously slashed at Rock Spirit Fighter's chest, activating [Blood Drain]!

2578 !

+1289 !

Flaming Tiger God received 50% of the damage it delivered with its attack back as health as I raised my hands from afar. With a low command, I activated [Great Realm of Desolation]. Three blades pierced through Rock Spirit Fighter's body!

3128 !

As expected, Rock Spirit Fighter was a pet that had 10 points added to strength each time it leveled up. Its level was not as high as Flaming Tiger God and its health was also at most 3500. It let out a pitiful howl as it dropped dead on the ground.

Fushen Thousand Blade raised his staff as he unleashed [Mountain Strike] and [Put Down The Knife] yet again on Flaming Tiger God. Jian Feng Han also slashed his sword, unleashing his [Combo] attack!

"Wuwu...."

Flaming Tiger God's last thread of health faded away as it turned into a white light, flying back to my pet slot. At that moment, there were only 3 people left on the battle ground. Me with full health on one side, and Jian Feng Han and Fushen Thousand Blade with full health on the other side!

.....

Fushen Thousand Blade waved his staff as he inflicted [Put Down The Knife] on me from afar. My attack went down by 10%!

I furrowed my brows, as there was an even greater problem. From far away, a bunch of people were rushing here through the open space. They were all [Vanguard]'s elite long-ranged players; this battle situation could not be continued!

“Swoosh...”

As the late night wind blew and the bushes parted, I saw the battleground in front of me. [Misty Palace], [Ruined Bones] and [Winds of Battle], these three guilds, had only 20 people left, desperately fighting. On the other side, [Vanguard] players were reviving in large numbers. It was a one-sided massacre!

.....

“Keng!”

As his axe hacked through a Swordsman's armor, tearing it to shreds, Misty Clouds looked at me. He couldn't help but laugh aloud, “Jian Feng Han, aren't you called Ba Huang City's number one? How could you, even with 28 people hunting Xiao Yao Zi Zai, be annihilated down to 2 people now? What happened to your bold, visionary speech just now? Looks like [Vanguard] is not invincible, just one single Xiao Yao Zi Zai could make you guys so pitiful. If Zhan Long's General Li Mu, General Wang Jian and Yue Qing Qian attacked you together, wouldn't [Vanguard]'s troops all be annihilated?!”

Jian Feng Han, even after hearing such insults, still smiled lightly and replied loudly from afar, “Xiao Yao Zi Zai is indeed a strong opponent, worthy of [Vanguard]'s respect! Today, [Vanguard] has crushed [Misty Palace], [Ruined Bones], and [Winds of Battle] these three guilds, this is also an undeniable fact. Arctic Fox Forest will from today onwards be [Vanguard]'s. We'll stay here, and hope that you three guilds will give me, Jian Feng Han, some face. After this battle, we are still fellow soldiers, the battle just now was a friendly competition!”

Misty Clouds couldn't stop his laugh, “What? Is terrorizing the weak the way you treat other players? Let me tell you, Jian Feng Han. I, Misty Clouds, will never acknowledge you. We, [Misty Palace], will never

acknowledge [Vanguard]. Kill us all if you have the balls, sweep us away from Ba Huang City's map. If you can't do it, then [Vanguard] doesn't have the right to be called Ba Huang City's Ruler!"

Jian Feng Han didn't reply, and simply bit his lips. Waving his fists, a team leader replied from afar. Wielding his sword, he bellowed, "Kill, it's the last annihilation!"

Misty Clouds roared as he parried an attack with his axe. At the same time, he yelled, "Xiao Yao Zi Zai, run away quickly; you have no more business here!"

.....

I nodded, and without saying anything, I slowly retreated back into the forest behind me.

Jian Feng Han looked at me, and said lightly, "Xiao Yao Zi Zai, our battle has just begun...."

I also looked at him and smiled slowly, "Then you should work hard to improve your skills. Otherwise, you've already lost our next battle."

"....."

Jian Feng Han froze, and coldly looked at me. Clenching his fist, he didn't say anything, not even to deny my words.

.....

Leaving the fight, I quickly got away from the battleground. This place was all surrounded by [Vanguard] players; I couldn't remain here to train. However, this trip hadn't been in vain, since killing so many elite players from [Vanguard] boosted my rank on the CBN rankings by a lot.

Looking at my skills window, although the first three skills of Mohist Five Scrolls were green, denoting that they could be used, it was something that could not be helped since I lacked the necessary materials to activate them. First I'll return to Ba Huang City and look for a way to find The God Army Card that's necessary for Mohist Five Scrolls. If I have no God Army Cards', then having a powerful Mohist attack is nearly

useless. Such a shame!

Chapter 239: Weapon Dismantle

Ba Huang City, North Gate.

After returning to the city, I received multiple messages from my friends

—

Yue Qing Qian: “Brother Xiao Yao, what were you doing fighting against Jian Feng Han? The forums are going crazy over the news! A video of your fight has already gone viral.....”

General Wang Jian: “Ahem, Boss went out to PK without calling us to join....”

Wan Er: “I heard you killed 27 of Jian Feng Han’s people by yourself. Hehe, I’ll download the game video to watch later...”

Dong Cheng Yue: “I just finished watching the video of the fight between you and Jian Feng Han; that ranged attack style is starting to reach its full potential huh. You killed Fallen Wolf, North Pole, and Don’t Be Foolish, a group of high level players. Your ranking on CBN has definitely risen quite a bit. In the future remember to treat me for a meal~~”

.....

I couldn’t help but smile, and replied to each of the messages while I started to research the uses of the Mohist Five Scrolls.

Clicking into the scrolls options, there wasn’t a choice to use the scrolls. It did, however, ask for a certain item, called God’s Army Card. After clicking into the details of the God’s Army Card, a skill window appeared – [Weapon Dismantle]!

【Weapon Dismantle】: Dismantle any equipment higher than Silver Tier to obtain a fixed amount of God’s Army Cards!

.....

I clapped my hands together. Turns out this was the trick. The God’s Army Cards came from dismantling equipment, however it must be

equipment that is Silver Tier or higher, which was a pretty hefty price. The current market price for Silver Tier equipment was not any lower than it was before. Any Silver Tier equipment that was Lv 50+ was at least 100 RMB. Looks like I could only use cheap Silver Tier equipment to dismantle.

Looking in my bag, I took out a pair of Lv 41 Silver Tier boots, [Weapon Dismantle]!

“Ding”

System Notification: You dismantled【Hairy Wild Bear Boots】and received God’s Army Card x1

.....

My heart sunk, one Silver Tier equipment can only change into one God’s Army Card. Dear lord, this Mohist Five Scrolls costs too damn much. I can’t use these God’s Army Cards too carelessly.

Looking at my bag, I took out 14 low level Silver Tier equipments and dismantled them all, getting 14 God’s Army Cards. I carefully put them at the very bottom of my bag, holding it in place, so that I could easily access them during a PK.

Then I opened up my friends list, and found Glass Fox, “Fox, are you in Ba Huang City?”

“Ya, I’m selling some stuff, do you need anything?”

“Come to the Warehouse.”

“Sure!”

Within minutes, Fox rushed over, and smiled while asking, “Whats up Boss, do you need something?”

I opened up a trade and gave Fox all of the 21 Gold and Purple Tier equipment that I had gotten from [Vanguard]’s people, saying, “Take these to sell!”

Fox stood shocked, “Damn, all this equipment.... Li bastard, did you rob someone?”

I smiled : “Not at all, I just killed a bunch of [Vanguard]’s players in the Arctic Fox Forest.”

Fox grinned: “Motherf*cker, and I thought Little Wolf was bluffing. You actually went by yourself to pick a fight with Jian Feng Han. You’ve got guts; you live up to the name of [Zhan Long]’s Guildmaster. All of this equipment will definitely sell for lots of money. At a glance, it’s at least 100,000 RMB. How much of this should we keep for the studio?”

I thought about it, “How about 50%, the studio and the guild are both low on money. Either way the guild is our own, we don’t need to be too stingy. We can share the profits later!”

Fox thought about what I said and in the end he still agreed with me, “Yep, I agree with this logic.... is there anything else? If there isn’t, I’ll go put these up in the stall. It seems putting up a stall sells stuff much faster than auctioning.”

Me: “Can you help me stock up on Lv 50 and below Silver Tier equipment? Get whatever you can, but the highest price cannot exceed 5G; otherwise don’t get it. Here, this is 5000G; just use this money to collect them.... after you collect them, put them in this warehouse. When we’re free you can give them to me.”

Fox hesitated: “Sure, but what do you need all this trash Silver Tier equipment for? To tell the truth, only the lowest level players are using Silver Tier equipment, not to mention they’re under Lv 50. Of what use can they be?”

I grinned: “Hermits have their secret methods; just help me collect them!”

“Sure, wait for my good news!”

“Okay, then I’ll be on my way!”

“Okay!”

.....

After dealing with all of my business, I finally had time to look at

another treasure in my bag. It was the time-worn dull sword--

【Ancient Soul Sword】: A sealed dull sword, the sword spirit within is in a deep slumber. It must be awakened, and then it must be smelted with rare metal before it can become a new godly equipment! At the moment the sword spirit's awakening is at: 0%!

I didn't even know where to begin to break the sword's seal. Without a clue as to where to start, I first went to the smith to see if he had any ideas.

Following a small alley that passed through Ba Huang City's Marketplace, the weapons sector was right in front of me when a screen of green smoke appeared and four smith stalls stood on the street.

Thousand Success Smith Store!

Quickly, I stepped into the store that looked the biggest. A shirtless middle aged blacksmith was hammering away on a piece of metal. The moment the piece of metal was submerged into the icy water, making a "Puchi" sound, the blacksmith's expression was overjoyed as he said, "The noblemen from Knight Academy will get another sharp iron sword. This sword is at least a Silver Tier!"

At one side, a young student asked, "Master, when can I also create a Silver Tier weapon?"

The middle aged blacksmith laughed and said, "Don't be too arrogant. You must slowly work at it in order to understand the mysteries of casting and experience the profoundness of smithing. Sooner or later you'll end up becoming a quality blacksmith. You might even be recruited by the emperor and become a famous royal blacksmith, used exclusively by dukes and generals to create their weapons. If that happens, your name will follow your creations and last throughout history!"

The small blacksmith began imagining his future glory, and was completely immersed in his dream world.

I walked up to talk to the middle aged blacksmith, "Master, I want to seek out your expertise on a problem!"

The middle aged blacksmith glanced at me, and muttered, “Young adventurer, what do you need from me? Hurry up and say it; I’m very busy and I don’t have time to talk about meaningless things with you...”

I nodded my head, and took the sealed sword from my bag, as I said, “This is a spirit weapon. Apparently, using some type of method, I can awaken the sword’s spirit. Master, can you take a look at it for me....”

The middle aged smith looked at me warily, and took the sealed sword, then gave a deep sigh, as he said, “This is a broken sword, what do you want me to see? You’re wasting my time. Youngster, leave, my time is very precious.... “

I was startled, “Okay... alright then.....”

After leaving, I went into a second smith shop, but the answer I got was the same. In fact, the next three smith shops that I went to all thought my soul weapon was a broken piece of equipment.

I was starting to feel hopeless when I walked into the fourth smith’s stall!

“Creak..... “

The thin dry door was pushed open. It seemed as though it had been a long time since anyone had been to the shop. The fires within the furnace had burnt out long ago. It seemed as though there hadn’t been any business in this shop for a long time. An old smith sat across the room, blowing into a smoke pipe. “Ba da Ba da” nonstop. Above his head were some floating words–

【Old Smith Li Leng】(Purple tier Boss)

Level: 70

Introduction: An elderly blacksmith that seems to know many stories

.....

I strolled into the room, my armor covering my body and my sword carried on my back. I didn’t say anything and just walked up to the old man.

Li Leng looked up into my eyes and said, "I must apologize to you customer, but I do not have enough coal, and cannot smelt any equipment right now. This smith stall is currently out of business, go find another stall...."

I smiled: "Old man, I'm not here to make any equipment."

"Then what are you here for?"

"It's like this, I want you to take a look at something."

"Oh? What is it?"

I took the broken sword from my bag and handed it to the old man. At that moment, the old man suddenly shivered, and he unconsciously backed away a few steps, "This.... where did this extremely strong spirit sword come from? Heavens, what a powerful spirit sword . Even after sleeping for so long it can still amaze people to this extent....."

I was completely overjoyed, "Old man, are you saying that the sword spirit in this broken sword still has a chance?"

Li Leng nodded: "That's right! Youngster, this is an interesting ancient godly weapon that holds a very powerful strength. However, the sword spirit has been sleeping for too long and thus it'll be very hard to awaken him. Or.... waking up this sword spirit will cost a lot, are you sure you want to do that?"

Previously, during the battle between me and Jian Feng Han, I could feel that the pain of having a lower attributed weapon. Whether it was Wan Er's Scarlet Edge or Ran Min's Haunted Blade Twin Axe, they could all beat my Frost Rain Sword. Switching to another weapon had become a compulsory thing to do. It was also the most important thing for me to do now. If a top notch swordsman doesn't have a top notch weapon, it is really something regrettable.

I nodded, clenching my fist as I replied, "Yeah, no matter how much I have to pay, I want to reforge this godly weapon!"

"Okay!"

The old smith Li Leng suddenly got up and said, “Let me help you awaken this sword spirit. Kid, are you willing to accept the quest of awakening this spirit?”

I nodded, “Yes!”

“Ding!”

System Announcement: You have accepted an S-ranked quest【Awakening the Ancient Sword Spirit】!

.....

Li Leng coughed hard as he said, “My smelting furnace had not been lit with fire for a long time. I need 100 high grade pieces of wood to start the fire. You have to go to the east of Ba Huang City and chop down 100 pieces of Green Wood from the Green Bamboo Mountain. This is the only way that I can heat up the Ancient Weapon. It must be heated under a very hot fire if we want to have a chance at awakening the spirit!”

I nodded, the next step of the quest had already appeared. Green Bamboo Mountain was next to Li Hua Forest, it wasn't that far away. Currently it was under the control of [Wrath of the Heroes]. It shouldn't be a problem if I secretly chopped down a few trees!

Leaving the blacksmith, I rushed towards Green Bamboo Mountain, reaching the lush forest not even 10 minutes later. Shoots of green bamboo covered the whole mountain area. Furthermore, there were a few short trees among the tall bamboo forest. They looked like strong bamboo shoots, green in colour; these were exactly the Green Wood requested by the quest. The texture of the Green Wood was extremely magical; when lit on fire it would burn extremely hot creating a nice flame. Hence, its extreme popularity amongst the blacksmiths.

Lifting my arms, I drew my sword!

“Keng!”

What a hard wood, it could actually cause sparks to fly out of my Frost Rain Sword!

After slashing it for 10 or more times, the first Green Wood fell into my hands with a “Ka Cha” sound. Throwing it into my inventory, I thanked god that it was a quest item, otherwise 100 pieces of wood would be too heavy for me.

.....

As I chopped away, a voice sounded behind me –

“That bastard Wang Zi Cheng, I will give him a painful death sooner or later!” It was the voice of Tyrant of Western Chu, Liu Ying.

Piggy ran along, carrying his musket on his shoulders, “Boss, I heard that Wang Zi Cheng has joined , did you know about that?”

“What?!”

Liu Ying drew his sword suddenly, and bellowed, “Gather everyone and head toward Wang Zi Cheng’s city; I’m gonna kill him so much that he can’t leave the newbie village!”

Chapter 240: Sword Spirit's Restoration

Piggy replied softly, "Boss, calm down. Right now we have no idea what Wang Zi Cheng's ID is, so it is impossible to find him right now. Furthermore, going to the newbie village to kill a new player is something that goes against the unwritten rules for players. We'll be spurned by all of Ba Huang City's, Fan Shu City's and Jiu Li City's big guilds; we might even become the public enemy #1. It won't be good for [Wrath of the Heroes]'s development in the future."

Liu Ying clenched his sword and replied coldly, "I don't care if it's favorable or not. I only know that I want to kill Wang Zi Cheng and grind him down until there is nothing left but ashes, then I will scatter them in the wind!"

Piggy suddenly laughed, "Boss, what are your true intentions?"

"What..." Liu Ying froze, "What do you mean by that?"

Piggy replied seriously, "I have seen you and Xu Yue from start to end. The problem was actually very simple. Boss, your relationship rule is to have fun and play around, but you accidentally went too far with Xu Yue. I believe she really loved you, that's what drove her to act that way with that bastard Wang Zi Cheng in front of you. But anyways, it doesn't matter if she loves you or not, the way she retaliated by acted like a spoiled girl proves she isn't good enough for you. She didn't need to belittle herself to take revenge against you. She could only do that because she only knows how to do that. Do you have to lose your mind over this kind of person, Boss?"

Liu Ying stood there blankly, awe struck.

Piggy smiled lightly and continued, "Right now, what can be done is very little. Just be yourself; continue to be the Liu Ying that doesn't have a heart and likes to play around with girls. Or you can be a man with eyes for one girl only; find a girl who's really worth it and devote yourself, mind and body to her. Then, you have to expand [Wrath of the Heroes]'s power. Have a righteous heart, and lead [Wrath of the Heroes] to become

a real grandmaster guild. Force everyone to acknowledge you; this is how you can prove yourself. I can only tell you this; it's up to you, Boss, if you want to do it or not."

"Eh..."

After a long time, Liu Ying let out a single breath, "Fine then, brother, what you said has some logic in it. I can't believe I lost my head over something like this; when Xue Yue and Wang Zi Cheng kissed, she and I no longer had anything between us. To get angry over a girl like her, was a foolish thing to do..."

Piggy couldn't help but laugh, "Yup, this is the Boss I want to follow!"

"Piggy, tell me, what shall we do next? I don't want to live in such a confused and hectic manner anymore. I...I vow to not be involved with any woman for half a year! Wait no, I take that back, how about a month... forget it, half a month....or maybe just a week..."

Piggy's face darkened, "Boss, you can avoid making the same mistakes, but still be close to another woman!"

Liu Ying laughed, "I'm still a little hazy, we've already spent over 8,000,000RMB on , yet [Wrath of the Heroes] can't afford to take another hit. At Qilin Valley, our enemy [Zhan Long] only had around 25% of our numbers, how could we still lose?"

"It's our fighting strength....."

Piggy held his gun and said, "Our men individually are quite weak and [Zhan Long] has lots of experts. Li Mu, Wang Jian, Yue Qing Qian, Hero Ran Min, Bai Qi, Cang Lei, they are all top level players, adding in Xiao Yao Zi Zai's power, we were destined to lose that fight. Think about it, Ran Min's [Savage Jump Slash] and [Whirlwind Slash] had killed so many people from the start to finish; I counted 100 people at the very least, and what about us? You can count our expert players on one hand. Thousand Suns Over A Snowy Field was one of them, but she was taken away from us by tactics on Li Xiao Yao's part and by our failures. This is something we have to reflect on."

Liu Ying stared into empty space: “Oh, that matter with Thousand Suns was my fault..... I saw from her picture that she was very pretty, so I thought to.....in a moment of folly, I caused us to lose one of our core players.....”

Piggy let out an unhappy laugh: “Even you know that it was a mistake? I advise you to control your lower body better. Compare yourself to Xiao Yao Zi Zai, he has gathered so many beauties like Yue Qing Qian, Yue Wei Liang, Thousand Suns Over Snowy Lands, Darling Duck and Strawberry Matcha in [Zhan Long]. Did he ever make a move on any of the beauties in his guild? No! Xiao Yao Zi Zai knows how to respect a woman, and more importantly, how to protect them. This is why all these female players are willing to stay by his side, advancing and retreating together. And it is due to these numerous female players that [Zhan Long] is able to easily recruit new blood and old experts to fill their ranks, achieving a strength that has surpassed our own. Money is not all-powerful; even if we could buy the services of expert players, we are unable to buy the loyalty for them to stick with us through thick and thin, and the determination to fight as one on the battlefield.”

Liu Ying nodded, ashamed of himself. He patted Piggy’s shoulder as he said “Damn, just because you have this opportunity, don’t keep nagging me alright? Talk instead about what we should do, not what should’ve been done in the past. What should I do now so that I can really strengthen [Wrath of the Heroes], and establish it so that it becomes a force worthy to be reckoned with by elite guilds like [Vanguard] and [Prague]?”

Piggy thought about it for a second, “Lead by example. We need to have stricter rules and plan out what’s going to happen a month in advance. Don’t be partial to those you like and enforce the guild rules. We need to keep the same standards for regular guild members as well as team leaders. We don’t need to spend a lot of money but we have to put effort in.”

Liu Ying laughed: “Ok, we’ll listen to you. However these regulations will all be overseen by you.”

“Sure.” Piggy ran quickly: “Additionally, there are a few other things I need you to do personally.”

“Oh, what things?” Liu Ying asked in surprise.

Piggy was quite serious when he said, “We don’t have enough experts, we need more of them! I’ve already contacted some top 500 CBN ranking players but my words don’t count for enough, so we need you! Among them, I have the rank 14 Archer in Fan Shu City, Loving Song. He lives in Wuxi and you can drive over to meet up with him so that he joins [Wrath of the Heroes]. In addition, Heart Fire, a girl in Chu Zhou, is the rank 27 Mage within Jiu Li City. We must also get her over too. Finally, Rain and Gravestones, a high health and defense Knight. I heard that he just left his original guild. This is a great chance to gain a high level player. I would suggest that you get plane tickets this second...”

Liu Ying’s eyes showed some fighting spirit as he made a fist and smiled: “Ok, I understand. Give me their numbers and addresses right away; I will do my utmost to complete this task!”

Piggy nodded and smiled: “Okay, then I’m relieved. Give me the Vice Guild Master position; starting from the afternoon, I will start to organize all of the guild’s matters. I will put all my effort into giving [Wrath of the Heroes] a new face!”

“Ok!”

.....

As their group walked and brushed away the bamboo, they noticed a person going to great lengths to cut down the green trees. Of course, that person was none other than me, unintentionally eavesdropping on the boring plans of their guild

“It’s Xiao Yao Zi Zai!”

A Swordsman from [Wrath of the Heroes] raised his hand and drew his sword, shouting in a deep voice: “Brothers, attack with me and get rid of him! The Guild Master of [Zhan Long] is here and alone. He’s definitely asking to die!”

Who would've thought that Piggy actually ran forward and shouted: "Stop! Who permitted you to take action by yourself?"

The Swordsman lifted his head: "Brother Piggy, didn't we say..... say that [Zhan Long] was our sworn enemy?"

"Times have changed and the situation is no longer the same..." A ferocious glint flashed in Piggy's eyes and he said, "From today on, [Wrath of the Heroes] will no longer be enemies with [Zhan Long]. We need to work hard to develop our own strength and our grudge against Xiao Yao will be only hinder us, as of today we no longer bear a grudge."

Liu Ying also walked forwards, hand resting on his sword hilt. He smiled and said, "Li Xiao Yao, what brings you to [Wrath of the Heroes]'s area? How interesting...."

I collected a green wood and put it in my bag, while I raised my eyebrows and said, "Cough cough, Green Bamboo forest is a public map and not your [Wrath of the Heroes]'s territory. I came here to gather materials only."

Liu Ying waved his hand, laughing loudly "As you wish, you are more then welcome to harvest as many as you want, if it makes you happy. Right, if there's anyone being disrespectful to you, just let me know and 2000 men from our [Wrath of Heroes] will be ready to serve!"

I couldn't hold in my laughter, holding my Frost Rain Sword "Actually, around here, nobody can bully me, if someone capable of bullying me bothered to come this way, then [Wrath of the Heroes] wouldn't be a match for them anyways. Besides, Liu Ying, are we that close? Even if [Zhan Long] and [Wrath of the Heroes] aren't enemies, we definitely aren't allies."

Liu Ying touched his nose "Fine, have it your way then....."

I nodded, "Okay, then bye!"

.....

Watching the [Wrath of the Heroes] group walk away, I continued to cut down green wood. To be honest, I wasn't interested in how [Wrath of

the Heroes] developed. It wouldn't pose a problem to [Zhan Long] and I knew Liu Ying very well. Even though he might seem like he's changed right now, as soon as [Wrath of the Heroes] becomes larger, he will go back to his old self.

After half an hour, I had gathered the required 100 Green Woods in my bag. Mission complete, time to return to the city!

Returning to the run down smith shop, the old Blacksmith Li Leng sat there trembling. Seeing the materials I carried, he laughed: "Youngster, you really do have the willpower and resolution. Fine, I will now light the furnace!"

After getting a bit of experience, I threw the green wood into the furnace before lighting it. "Hua", the fire burned quite brightly as the temperature within the furnace quickly rose with wisps of green smoke.

.....

"The temperature is about right....."

Li Leng looked for a second more and quickly threw my broken sword into the furnace before starting to pull on the lever to add more air into the furnace. Even though he was old, his strength was still immense!

"Si si...."

A green smoke slowly began to rise from the broken sword within the furnace, and it gradually began to vibrate. After burning for nearly an hour, I had just about run out of patience, when the old blacksmith Li Leng finally lifted his head to look at me, saying, "Kid, the weapon's spirit is starting to awaken but we need some things to speed up the process. Go find some swords for me!"

"Swords?"

"Yes, why are you still here? !"

"Ding!"

System announcement: Your S Rank Mission 【Awaken the Ancient Sword Spirit】has entered the next phase, gather a certain number of

longswords (Silver Tier and above) and pass them to Li Leng, only then will you be able to awaken the Sword Spirit!

Chapter 241: The Incomplete Item

Gather swords that had to be Silver Tier or higher?

My mind began to race, this mission to awaken the Sword Spirit was far too harsh. In Ba Huang City, the most common type of class is the heavy armor class. Since the entire male gender is all hot blooded, most of them choose the close combat class and the swordsman class. These classes make up the biggest segment of the playerbase, especially in the end game. Therefore, sword related items are generally the most popular type of weapons. A sword with the same attributes are usually 1.5 to 2 times the price of a similar battle axe or spear; how ridiculous!

As of right now, this quest wanted me to gather a bunch of swords; this mission would definitely make me spend a ton of money!

Looking into my inventory, I only had a Lv 41 Silver Tier sword that has served as my backup sword. I quickly handed it over for the sake of the mission. The old blacksmith took it without another word, and threw it into the forge. With a poof, the sword seemed to evaporate and it melted into a red liquid that seeped into the broken sword.

“Ding!”

System Message: The Sword Spirit has awakened 0.1% of its consciousness!

.....

“What....” My jaw dropped, a Silver Tier sword wasn’t even enough to raise its conscious by 1%. Did I really need 1000 Silver Tier swords to awaken it? Even though Silver Tier swords were considered trash, they still costed about 50 RMB a sword. If I wanted to awaken the Sword Spirit, how much money did I need to spend?

I looked at the money in my bank account from when I started playing up until now. Aside from the money I’d used for my living expenses and such, I only had a little over 60,000 RMB remaining. This was quite a predicament...

On the side, Li Leng looked at the broken sword absorbing the other sword with a very content expression as he perked his head up to smile, "This is good, it looks like the Sword Spirit desires to awaken as well. This sword here is the king of all swords, it requires a tremendous amount of swords in order to awaken. Child, hurry and gather even more swords!"

I nodded, "I will, please wait for me..."

I felt a little bit happy because if what the elder Li Leng said was true, then this sword was not just your everyday sword. As long as the spirit awakened, then all the money I have spent on it would be worth it; after all, this was my future weapon!

Walking out of the exit to my right, I began to dash towards the north gate of Ba Huang City. Setting up a booth, I started to sell a few strong looking items but were actually pretty weak, shouting, "Buying every single Silver Tier or higher sword; name your price! However much you have is however much I'll buy!!"

Changing the name of my stall to "Offering expensive prices for trashy swords", I sat down and awaited for the sellers to come!

Sure enough, because Ba Huang City had plenty of players, in less than a minute 10 people were already trying to sell me their swords. Of course the prices they were requesting were far too high, so I didn't buy them. That being said, there were some that sold me their swords for 1 Gold, because trying to haggle for a lower price would have been pointless.

After less than an hour, I had bought around 47 swords. I just wasn't getting swords fast enough, so as I ran back to the blacksmith, I messaged Fox to have him help me gather some more swords. Afterwards, I opened up my friends list, and then called Wan Er-

"Wan Er?"

"Yes? I'm here, what do you need?"

"Can you help me with this one favor?"

"Say it...", Wan Er laughed, "What has gotten your confidence so low?"

“It’s not much...” I waved my hand, “What I really need...is for you to go to Fan Shu City, and grab every trashy sword you can find. They have to be Silver Tier or higher though. Please help me out, all of the trash tier swords in Ba Huang City have already been wiped out...”

“Eh? What do you want to do with all of these swords?”

“I need them for my quest. Do you remember that ancient spirit sword I got? In order to awaken the spirit in the sword, I need to gather and forge swords together into it. Since it is like that, I probably need around 1000 of them...”

Wan Er went silent for a second, “Alright then, just wait for me. I’ll have some friends in Fan Shu City help out, so keep on working and we should be done after 2 hours or so...”

“Okay, thanks!”

.....

Not long afterwards, Fox as well as a few other uncles from the guild scattered towards each of the city gates to help collect swords. I continued to wander around Ba Huang City’s north gate. After another hour, I managed to collect another 91 swords and almost filled up my entire inventory. Nearly 100 slots of my inventory had been taken up by all these trash swords!

“Di!”

Wan Er reported back with some information, “Hey... we’ve managed to get you around 519 swords in total, but did you still need it? How many did you guys get?”

I was overjoyed, “Fox and the others helped me gather over 300 swords, so that should be enough. I’ll come over to Fan Shu City to collect them right away!”

“Don’t worry...” Wan Er laughed, “Besides, what if you get killed on the way here? Even if you don’t die, you can’t carry all of those swords by yourself, I’ll have some people bring it over, so you stay at Ba Huang City and wait for us. We’ll be there within half an hour.”

“That sounds good, I’ll be waiting then!”

“Okay!”

First I had Fox help carry the swords to Li Leng, to smelt the swords down. At this point, the Sword Spirit was at 50.7% percent. With the swords that Wan Er was bringing, the Sword Spirit will have awoken by the end of today! I was excited for this; when the spirit awoke, what type of new sword I would receive from it?

As I waited on the northern bridge for nearly an hour, I saw a group of people emerging from the forests. At the head of the group was a beautiful assassin. Her body was covered by leather armor that had a magical glow to it. Who else could this be but Wan Er?

Aside from her, there were 6 other players from Fan Shu City’s [Hero Mound] guild. All of them already had their third class advancements and the sight of those 7 were a sight to behold. It was actually quite terrifying, as they were all high leveled players. Each one was completely decked out in purple tier equipment!

I quickly walked over and welcomed them, laughing: “Wan Er, you’ve worked hard!”

Wan Er shook her head and laughed lightly: “It wasn’t much work, just a walk in the park. Come on, I want to personally witness how this sword spirit will recover. Right, I forgot to introduce you. These people are all my friends, all of them are quite well-known Fan Shu City.....”

I pursed my lips: “[Hero Mound] is truly a place where large amounts of hidden talents reside. There’s actually so many third job experts.....”

One pretty Lv 61 archer laughed lightly: “You flatter us guildmaster Zi Zai. How can we be considered experts when [Hero Mound] already has at least 200+ third advancement players. We can only be considered mainstream players.....”

Another berserker hefted his battle axe and laughed, saying: “Xiao Yao Zi Zai has established [Zhan Long] to the point that it is able to contend with the top guilds. This is a true expert. Furthermore, you’ve actually

made our Beautiful Elder Cang Tong come so far to make a simple delivery. Hehe, everybody understands.....”

I was pretty embarrassed as I looked towards Wan Er.

Wan Er’s face reddened as she laughed, “What are you staring at? Don’t think too much about it. These are a few of my friends that I’ve met from past games. They’re all really reliable and if...I were to join [Zhan Long], then they would follow me. What’s wrong, did you not think that I wouldn’t think about the future of [Zhan Long]?”

I was overjoyed and couldn’t help but laugh, saying: “Really?”

That berserker youth laughed then thumped his chest, saying: “I was already a big fan of Cang Tong and I was also in the same guild as her in for many years. According to Beautiful Cang Tong, Li Xiao Yao is actually a true martial arts expert. For you to beat Q Sword in real life, you are way too OP. Guildmaster Zi Zai, are you accepting disciples? Take me as one, and with martial art skills, picking up girls won’t require as much effort later on.....”

My face went green, “My god, don’t tell me you learned martial arts just to pick up girls? You really have no future...”

Everyone began to burst into laughter as Wan Er placed a gentle hand on my shoulder, “Let’s go to the blacksmith’s store. We’ve come from a long way just to see what your Spirit Sword would be like...”

“Alright then, let’s go!”

.....

Bringing along this group of people to enter the city made all of the players in Ba Huang City’s center immediately turn around and look in our direction. Many people recognized the beauty at my side, and one by one they began to gossip—

“That...amazing beauty is...is that Cang Tong? Wa...why did Fan Shu City’s number one beauty come to our Ba Huang City?”

“Pei pei, [Hero Mound]’s beautiful vice guildmaster came to Ba Huang

City; there are also quite a few high-leveled players here as well. Is that... is that [Hero Mound]'s team leader and flagbearer? Who would have the honor of making them arrive here at Ba Huang City?"

"Who else could it be, let's go see who's with Cang Tong!"

"F**k! That's..... Xiao Yao Zi Zai, [Zhan Long]'s guildmaster. No wonder, no wonder....."

.....

I felt pretty embarrassed but Wan Er was already accustomed to such attention. With a sideways glance towards me, she said, "Let's go and awaken that Spirit Sword already, so stop staring at the girls along the road..."

Me: "Oh, okay....."

After walking on the road for some time, we reached the blacksmith store. Everyone was filled to the brim with trash tier swords. I walked towards the forge and dropped them in by one by one. With a sizzling sound, they melted into a red liquid and were absorbed by the broken sword. The broken sword began to tremble and shake while emitting a bright light. It looked like the amount of sword was enough to recover it, things were starting to get exciting!

Lin Wan Er was at my side quietly looking at me, her pretty eyes brimming with anticipation. Actually, she was also hoping for me to get a great sword that would fully overshadow Jian Feng Han's Flaming Cloud Sword, that godly sword!

.....

Not long after, after using up all the junk swords, a system notification resounded in my ear—

"Ding!"

System Announcement: Congratulations, Spirit Sword has completely awakened 100% of its consciousness!

.....

“Hahahaha.....”

The old blacksmith Li Leng gripped the incomplete sword's handle and whooped: “Finally..... the Spirit Sword has finally awoken. As expected, this sword is a masterpiece. It's a shame that its forging is still not completely finished!”

My gaze grew solemn as I took up the sword handle. Immediately, an incomparably powerful strength flowed through my arm. At the same time, this incomplete sword's attributes appeared floating in midair—

[Emperor Qin's Sword] (Incomplete Item)

Attack: 900-1250

Strength: +57

Endurance: +55

Agility: +51

Extra: Increase the attack by 14%

Extra: Ignore 20% of the target's defense.

Special Effect: Unlimited durability, no matter how much you use this sword, it will never break.

Description: In the ancient times there lived an emperor that was both kind and known to all under the heavens. His saber was forged in the city of Long Quan but in the midsts of a fierce battle, it snapped in half. The broken pieces were then buried into the ground, staying there for countless generations. At last the broken sword has been unearthed and still contains the vast powers of the emperor. This sword would be known to the future generations as the king of swords and after the previous owner of the sword as [Emperor Qin's Sword].

Chapter 242: Not Even an Inch

“Incomplete item....this is an incomplete item...” I held the sword as I looked into the sky, “What use is there for this incomplete sword? I cannot even equip it, what...what can I do with it?”

Li Leng gave a faint laugh, “Child, the spirit in the sword has already awakened. This sword has magical abilities and as long as you can find enough proficient blacksmiths to cast metals for you, then you’ll have for yourself a weapon fit for a god!”

By my side, Wan Er laughed as well, “That’s right, it’s still an incomplete sword but has stats like this. What would the completed item look like then?”

“Only, what are the requirements to cast metals for the sword?”

The elder Li Leng gently stroked his beard, “It’s quite simple, all you need to do is to find a blacksmith capable of fixing these kinds of items. However, because of the war that took place 100 years ago, most of the blacksmiths were transferred to the border of Ba Huang City’s lands. In a great disaster, many of the blacksmiths were wiped out. So as far as I know, no blacksmith in Ba Huang City is capable of fixing something on this level. So, this task you have set out for you is a long yet hard one...”

I was heartbroken, “What does a blacksmith need in order to have the power to do this?”

Li Leng stared at me, “You’d need a 10th ranked blacksmith with level 10 mining. You’d also need 100 Level 10 Qilin Iron Ore in order to have the metal to fix the sword. Any other type of metal would be unable to contain the power of the spirit within the sword!”

“Ah...”

I took two steps back with a cold and heavy heart. Where would I find a player with level 10 blacksmithing and mining?

Wan Er looked at my crestfallen face and laughed, walking up to pat my shoulder. She said, “Don’t worry, the current players are leveling up their

production professions at a rapid pace. There are many people with the blacksmith profession; Fan Shu City has a 9th ranked alchemist for example. Blacksmithing has more people attracted to it than alchemy. Perhaps there's someone with it already, we can always look slowly in the future..."

I nodded and gave Wan Er a bright smile, "Ah, that's right. I'll just set aside this sword for later, it's not like it'll run away from me..."

"That's right, there's no need to rush at all."

"Hey Wan Er, are you going to get off?" I looked at the time, it was already 7 at night.

"Dong Cheng is still doing an S rank mission but she'll be done soon. Shall we wait for her?"

"Alright..."

.....

"Oh right..."

Right as Wan Er turned away to walk, she turned back towards me. As she approached, she smiled, "Have you checked your ranking on the CBN Battle network site yet? The rankings were updated an hour ago, and your new ranking is up..."

"Eh? Whats my ranking?"

"Take a look yourself..."

Wan Er waved her hand and immediately a light blue ranking list appeared in front of my eyes. Between the 31-35 ranking spots said-

31. Yue Qing Qian Lv 64 Class: Assassin

32. Immortality Codex Lv 63 Class: Healer

33. Simple Lv 64 Class: Mage

34. Xiao Yao Zi Zai Lv 64 Class: Night Watch of Dragon City

35. Death's Contract Lv 63 Class: Knight

.....

“Damn...” I was stupefied, it was definitely hard to believe the sight, “I’ve already entered the top 100? What a fast development, isn’t it true that...to enter CBN’s top 100 grandmasters one had to be an expert player?”

“Of course that’s the case...” The beautiful Miss smiled, “These are China’s top 100 players; you are definitely an expert. Combined with your fast rate of development, entering the top 10 wouldn’t be all that hard. At Firestone Valley, you essentially killed almost 30 players from [Vanguard] except for Simple and Jian Feng Han. Hehe, those players were within the top 500, the point you’ve made from the battle must have been tremendous. Of course, if you had been able to kill Jian Feng Han, you might have been able to be within the top 30, what a shame...”

Pouting, I said, “Even if I were to focus on trying to kill Jian Feng Han, I’d just be killed shortly afterwards. Jian Feng Han had many people by his side, I’m only a single person. If I had you, Dong Cheng, and Qing Qian by my side, then I’d be willing to try another time.”

“Alright, just wait for me to join [Zhan Long] then!”

“I will!”

.....

With a golden light, Wan Er returned back to Fan Shu City from Ba Huang City. She was only considered as a traveler in Ba Huang City but once she and Dong Cheng joined [Zhan Long], then they would most likely change their main cities to Ba Huang City afterwards. After all, Ba Huang city’s badge [Let the Blood Spill over Ba Huang] gave a buff of a 3% increase in both attack and defense. In the later stages of the game, when base stats were higher, the practicality of Fan Shu City’s badge would clearly not be equal to [Let the Blood Spill over Ba Huang]. At times, a 3% increase in attack and defense would be extremely important.

As I watched Wan Er return to her city, I continued to stand on the streets of Ba Huang City. I glanced at the the sword in my inventory, the stats on the Emperor Qin’s Sword were quite strong, it was a crying

shame that I couldn't use it. Truly regretful!

Opening up my friends list, I sent a message to Li Mu, Qing Qian, Promised Love, Fox, and Wolf to have them help me find someone with level 10 blacksmithing. I didn't know how effective this would be but it'd be best to find one as soon as possible. The sooner I had the Emperor Qin Sword, the better my chances would be when I fight against Jian Feng Han and his crew. Currently, in the process of [Zhan Long] rapidly spreading its name, it would definitely receive challenges from others. Within [Zhan Long] right now there's quite a few experts like General Li Mu, General Wang Jian and the others to ward off Jian Feng Han's threats to lower the tension. Even though Yue Qing Qian and Yue Wei Liang both are pretty strong, they didn't have Wan Er's mind reading ability or her God Tier armor, nor were they as strong of an Assassin as she was. At the moment, it looked like I was the only one that could go toe to toe with Jian Feng Han. We both were coincidentally Guild Masters and a fight between two Guild Masters was the epitome of 2 guilds fighting against each other.

.....

"Di!"

After some time, a message popped up from Yue Qing Qian, "Brother Xiao Yao!"

"Yes? Qing Qian, what happened?"

"I found a person with Lv 9 blacksmithing, did you want to meet up with him? This guy could possibly be the first Lv 10 blacksmith!"

"Sure, where are you at?"

"He's currently at the mines, you should go yourself, eh....the exact coordinates are at Firestone Valley's Arctic Fox Forest at the east side. (77643, 42664). I'll be on my way there immediately, how about you?"

"Ah, Yeah I'll be there...." I muttered for a second, then repeated, "Qing Qian, Arctic Fox Forest is currently under the control of [Vanguard], if we were to go over there, we'll definitely be at a disadvantage if found. Be

careful..."

Qing Qian laughed, "Don't worry brother Xiao Yao, I spoke with Old K. He's going to bring another 100 players to help protect us; 100 of [Zhan Long]'s elite members won't be killed off that easily. Besides, if [Vanguard] takes action against us, then it'll be an all out war. Well, we'll be fighting against them sooner or later anyways! Should we get some allies to come too?"

I thought for a moment, "Let's not worry about that for now, we shouldn't be starting a fight with them first. It's only 100 men, let's see if Jian Feng Han will let [Zhan Long] cross. If he really starts a fight with us, then we'll have a real reason to fight him!"

"Okay! Oh right..." Yue Qing Qian had a happy tune, "Yesterday night the guild rose to level 3 and there are now 972 people in [Zhan Long]. We're now considered a top rank guild. If we really want to fight against [Vanguard], then we can bring around 700 of our expert players to help us fight!"

"Alright, we'll set out then!"

"Okay..."

.....

Exiting the city, I saw that Yue Qing Qian and the 100 people that Old K brought were waiting on the outskirts of the city. Most of them were heavy armor classes like Swordsmen and Berserkers; classes that focused on attack. As they watched me approach with my sword in hand, the group all nodded their heads, "Hello Guild Master!"

I nodded my head to return the greeting, "I'll be making a personal trip, so to have you all accompany me, I'm a bit embarrassed!"

Thousand Suns Over Snowy Lands raised her staff and said, "Us members of [Zhan Long] will definitely try to find a way to expand the guild. We can't let the people of [Vanguard] bully others without lifting a finger. Firestone Valley's Arctic Fox Forest may be under the control of [Vanguard] but this time, we will be testing the waters. We'll see if

[Vanguard] dares to try and fight against [Zhan Long]!”

I couldn't help but smile: “Thousand Suns saw through it, it really is like that. Let's go!”

.....

Our group majestically left Ba Huang City and went straight towards Firestone Valley. Any monster that was unfortunate enough to be on our path was immediately wiped out. I also let out my Flaming Tiger God and had him cast [Burstfire Raid], causing the entire group to be stunned at its power. Even Thousand Suns Over Snowy Lands had her small mouth drop wide open, “Wow, Guild Master's pet...it's incredibly strong. Haha, it's even cute looking...”

Yue Qing Qian laughed, “Wei, the Flaming Tiger God grew even bigger, it looks so strong...”

I scratched the head of the tiger, “Of course it's strong, if I didn't have his help, then I wouldn't had been able to kill so many people under Jian Feng Han's watchful eyes...”

Thousand Suns Over Snowy Lands asked, “Guild Master, what tier is this Flaming Tiger God?”

I answered honestly, “Valkyrie Tier BOSS rank....”

“Eh...” Thousand Suns Over Snowy Lands went silent for a while before perking up her head again, “Guild Master, getting myself involved with you wasn't a bad decision at all...”

I didn't say anything.

.....

After 10 minutes or so, we finally arrived at Firestone Valley with me at the front of the group with my Frost Rain Sword at the ready, “Everyone, be ready to enter the forest, we definitely don't want to be the first one to strike against any other player. But if we get attacked by another group, then immediately counterattack!”

The Healers all began buffing the group one by one with [Encourage]

and even Yue Qing Qian used her stealth mode. Old K carried his Haunted Twinblade Axe with a ferocious look as he walked by my side. Then the rest of the hundred players began their descent into the depths of Firestone Valley.

Arctic Fox Forest was enveloped in layers of dark clouds; it seemed that today, it would rain.

I checked the map coordinates, it seemed that the rumored Lv 9 Blacksmith should be ahead of us to the right. The distance was less than 1000 meters. After a few minutes we would be able to reach it.

Suddenly, a group of players walked out from behind the bushes, it was a group of players from [Vanguard] with their Vice Guild Master—Fushen Thousand Blades!

He raised his monk's staff, and growled, "Halt, this place is under the control of [Vanguard], please turn back and walk a different way! The monsters here are for us to kill."

I strode forward with my sword in hand until the distance between Fushen Thousand Blades and I wasn't even a single meter. With a faint laugh, I refused to obey his instructions to stop and continued to walk forward. I brushed past him with my sword held up high, and yelled out, "People of [Zhan Long], walk with me! We're merely passing by, if anyone dares to attack us, then kill him!"

Old K, Thousand Suns Over Snowy Lands, and the rest followed me one after another, in a state of mutual hostility!

Behind Fushen Thousand Blades, the group of [Vanguard]'s players stood dumbstruck, as if they never thought of the possibility that I wouldn't answer and would simply walk across just like that. After that, I even made a threat, something totally beyond their imaginations. In other words, I hadn't acted according to the way [Vanguard] had expected me to act.

.....

"Vice Guild Master....." One of [Vanguard]'s Archers opened his mouth,

looking at our [Zhan Long] group as we entered the forest, asking:
“What..... what should we do?”

Fushen Thousand Blades hefted his staff and gritted his teeth: “I’ll ask Guild Master’s opinion first!”

“Okay.....”

Chapter 243: Please Count Me In

“Huaaa...”

The bushes shook, and our group of players from [Zhan Long] charged across the edge of the forest, quickly entering the depths of Arctic Fox Forest. Behind us, Fushen Thousand Blade pursued with approximately 200 players from [Vanguard]. Old K and Thousand Suns Over Snowy Lands carried their weapons and led some Mages in the rear. [Zhan Long] already had three third advancement mages and [Dimensional Leap]’s effect was enough to let them avoid being killed, not to mention that they had powerful spells to kill others. It was best to leave them at the rear.

“Qing Qian, how far are we from the blacksmith we are looking for?” I asked.

Yue Qing Qian bit her lips and said, “Not that far, he should be at the foot of that mountain, mining ores...”

“Yeah, alright...”

.....

Our group of players entered the forest and quickly moved forward. The view of the endless mountain range had a stunning tinge of scarlet on the horizon. The scarlet tinge effect was from the Scarlet Copper minerals. This whole mountain was rich in minerals, ranging from Scarlet Copper all the way to Blood Gold. Therefore, it had become the place where people with [Mining] skills would grind their skill Lvs.

“It’s right over there, we’ll reach it soon!”

Yue Qing Qian pointed into the distance, as she grabbed my arm with her free hand. She smiled, “Big Brother Xiao Yao, let’s get there quickly...”

I was a full fledged Swordsman, so my movement speed couldn’t possibly match Yue Qin Qian’s, who put all of her stat points into agility. As she dragged me through the bamboo forest, Old K and the others readied their sharp blades and followed us. On the side of the bamboo forest, we could hear “Ding ding ding” mining sounds from afar. There

were even Lv 62 elite wolves howling nearby, which really surprised me. Someone who would dare to mine here alone must be an extraordinary person!

The smell of fresh dirt filled my nose as Yue Qing Qian brought me to some nearby bushes. Looking in front, I saw a player wearing full body armor and wielding a hammer and a shovel, mining away at a silver ore node. This person seemed to be around 28 years old, his face brimming with sweat and unspoken stories. However, the way he swung his hammer was extremely accurate; he always managed to hit the weakest parts of the silver ore. “Keng keng” he dug away and in just a moment, he extracted a huge chunk of ore.

“Hi!” Yue Qing Qian moved forward and smiled sweetly, “I brought the person who wanted to meet you here...”

“Oh?”

The mining youth turned his body and a few lines appeared at the top of his head—

Palace Decree Lv 60 Golden Knight

City: Ba Huang City

Guild: Legendary Myth

Position: Junior Member

.....

Palace Decree looked at me and laughed, “Xiao Yao Zi Zai, it really is you. I never would have thought that I would get to meet such a legendary figure that managed to completely turn Ba Huang City on its head!”

I laughed modestly, “Say what you will about me but I’m really just a wandering nobody that ends up being chased by everyone. But anyways, this time I was looking for you because I need you to help forge a sword for me....”

Palace Decree was astounded, “Oh? From what I know, the Sword Forging Blueprints and ores that players get nowadays are only for Lv 60

and below. In Ba Huang City, there should be countless blacksmiths with Lv 6 Blacksmithing.”

I shook my head, “Unfortunately, this blade of mine doesn’t require a Lv 6 blacksmith, it requires a Lv 10 one!”

“Ah? Lv 10...” Palace’s Decree’s eye flickered with some doubt, “Guild Master Xiao Yao, could you show me your raw materials first? To be honest, I don’t really believe that you’d really need a Lv 10 blacksmith at this point of the game to make a sword for you...”

I nodded, bringing out the incomplete Emperor Qin’s Sword and extended it towards him. The stats appeared in front of Palace Decree’s face as I said, “This is the item. I need a Lv 10 blacksmith, as well as 100 pieces of Lv 10 Qilin Iron Ore in order to reforge this sword and recover its lost glory!”

Palace’s Decree narrowed his eyes in thought, as the hammer in his hand began to tremble with excitement. “My god, what a great item! Ever since I started playing , I’ve never seen an item as great as this!”

I laughed and then asked, “Are you willing to forge it then?”

Palace’s Decree clenched his hand with determination, “I will, but my conditions are quite harsh!”

“Oh? Say it.”

“It’ll be like this...” Palace’s Decree pointed at the mountain range, “My blacksmithing is only at Lv 9 right now. I still have 77% left to go until then, but at the moment, I can only mine Lv 8 silver ore so it’s hard to Lv. The best minerals to mine to increase my Lv are the Lv 9 gold ores in this mine here. Unfortunately, this mine is under the control of [Vanguard]. They’ve prohibited any non-members from entering the mines to excavate Blood Gold.”

Having said that, he sneered, “It’s quite ridiculous of [Vanguard]. The miners in that guild are at lv 7 mining at most. Although they have occupied the mine so that no one else can get in, I was actually planning on secretly entering the mines. But I saw how hard it would be, since Jian

Feng Han is personally supervising a few people at the entrance of the mine. He's not letting anyone else in ...”

Old K walked forward with his battle axe, “We’ve already confirmed the layout of the area, [Vanguard] has the final say for the mines. Other guilds can only stare at it from afar and fantasize about the treasures inside.”

Palace Decree’s eyes shone with fiery hate. “That’s right. It’s only fair that the public resources in this game should be fair game to all. If your Lv is high enough, then you should be able to mine it. But what [Vanguard] is doing isn’t fair at all; they’re treating the mine as if it’s their own personal garden.”

“Guild Master, what shall we do?” Thousand Suns Over Snowy Lands asked.

I looked off into the distance and exhaled, “Since the situation is like this, we’ll just have to break open this place!”

“How will we do that?” Palace’s Decree began to look excited.

I answered, “Qing Qian, Old K and Matcha, you three contact Li Mu and Wang Jian’s group. [Zhan Long] will fight with our 700 members at Firestone Valley. We’ll enter the Arctic Fox Forest! Then... I will form a group with [Misty Palace], [Ruined Bones], and [Winds of Battle]. With our 4 guilds combined, we’ll see how [Vanguard] will defend against us!”

Old K slapped his leg and roared with laughter, “I’ve been waiting for you to say something like this; [Vanguard] has been too arrogant. They’ve been calling themselves the number 1 guild in Ba Huang City and bully others. Today will be the day our swords and spears do the talking!”

I nodded, “Hurry up and make contact with the others, let everyone know of the plan!”

“Okay!”

Afterwards, I sent a friend request to the leader of [Misty Palace], and immediately got a response back, saying–

“Xiao Yao Zi Zai?” Misty Clouds laughed, “I didn’t think you would be the one to take the initiative to add me as a friend. So, what’s the matter?”

I said, “Misty Clouds, Arctic Fox Forest with Jian Feng Han led to quite big losses to you three other guilds. Right now, I’m bringing 700 players to prepare to fight in the forest and force [Vanguard] to share the mine with every other player in Ba Huang City, so I thought I’d invite you and your guild [Misty Palace] to come and fight with us!”

Misty Clouds jumped, “[Zhan Long] is really going to fight with [Vanguard] at last?”

“Yep, would I lie to you?”

“Hahaha...” Misty Clouds roared, “I’ve waited for far too long for this, just you wait. In one hour, I’ll be done gathering everyone. I’ll notify [Ruined Bones] and [Winds of Battle] to bring some players over. Together, our three guilds would have around 2500 players, with [Zhan Long]’s 700 players, our chances of success are huge!”

I nodded, “Yea, hurry up and do that then. I’ll be waiting at the border of Arctic Fox Forest!”

“Okay!”

.....

After, I immediately opened my friend’s list again, and contacted Han Bei Song of [Blood Contract].

“Xiao Yao Zi Zai? Haha, what did you call for?” Came his reply.

I nodded, “I’ve heard that yesterday afternoon, 50 players of your guild had their training spot and BOSS stolen and the players PKed by members of [Vanguard] in Magical Trace Forest. I just wanted to know what you thought about that?”

Han Bei Song laughed awkwardly, “What can I think? How could you not suffer beatings when adventuring out to the world? [Blood Contract] was just recently established, so getting bullied is perfectly normal. Otherwise how could we grow out of our irritating ways? I intend to find

an opportunity to ask Jian Feng Han out to a six star hotel to eat a scrumptious meal and ask for forgiveness. [Blood Contract] shouldn't have appeared on the same Ba Huang City map as [Vanguard] and become an eyesore – we want to ask their forgiveness for this!”

I replied indifferently, “Continue to be an eyesore then! [Zhan Long], [Ruined Bones], [Winds of Battle] and [Misty Palace] are planning a showdown against [Vanguard] over the rights for Firestone Valley. What do you think?”

“You guys!” Indignation filled Han Bei Song’s face. “Guild Master Zi Zai, you...what do you think we play this game for? We play to experience the joy of playing the game, not to kill others or get our joy from the suffering of others. This is a very selfish attitude, it’s also something that I, Han Bei Song, will never do in my life. With regards to you and the other three guilds joining hands against [Vanguard], and disturbing the game’s peace and fairness, towards this kind of vile attitude, I can only say four words – Please count me in!”

My mouth twitched, “Gather the elite players from your [Blood Contract] that are online immediately, we’ll start our attack in an hour. You should also form an alliance with the other three guilds, this way we can collaborate better!”

“Okay!” Han Bei Song showed an excited face. “Motherf*cker, at last, us underdogs have started to join together to fight that rich-ass Jian Feng Han. To express my joy and delight for this happy occasion, after finishing this Arctic Fox Forest battle, I will go to a bar and drink till I’m drunk...”

Me: “Remember to drive sober”

Han Bei Song: “...”

.....

A cool breeze swept through the forest on the foot of the mountain, rustling the leaves on the trees, making a “sha sha” sound through the forest.

I wielded my Frost Rain Sword as I watched a group of people from afar. They were all [Vanguard] players, arranged horizontally, surrounding the entire mining entrance as an emergency measure. Anyone that was not a player from [Vanguard] was prohibited from entering.

“Keng!”

Jian Feng Han stood in front of all of them and drew his Flaming Cloud Sword. He looked at me indifferently, “Xiao Yao Zi Zai, you are here yet again. What do you want?”

I stuck my Frost Rain Sword into the ground and leaned onto it. I said, “Jian Feng Han, in the long history of virtual gaming, the vilest thing to do is to use power to dominate the game’s training maps. The mine mountain behind you contains almost 70% of Firestone Valley’s minerals, yet you, [Vanguard], occupied it. If you do this, what will happen to the numerous other guilds in Ba Huang City?”

Jian Feng Han chuckled, “Is that so? Actually, some other maps: Ba Huang Forest, Plains of the Setting Sun, and Frost Lands are also rich in ores, so why don’t you choose to go there? Instead, you insist on hounding [Vanguard] here. Can I assume that [Zhan Long] is picking a fight with us?”

I sighed a breath and replied, “Let me tell you the truth. I’m trying to finish a quest to forge a sword. The quest required a Lv 9 ores for someone quickly rise to Lv 10 mining, but all the Lv 9 Blood Gold ores are almost all buried in the mining cave behind you. That’s why I’d like [Vanguard] to give us leeway and let our friend go in and mine the Blood Gold ores.”

.....

Jian Feng Han stayed silent for close to a minute then suddenly raised his head and readied his sword, “Xiao Yao Zi Zai, when you have killed so many of our [Vanguard] brethren, did you think that you’d be able to ask me for a favor today? Let me tell you I, Jian Feng Han, want you to take responsibility for our brothers’ loss in Lvs and equipment. We will recover all the Lvs and equipment we lost to you one by one. Today is only the

beginning; this is our first battle!”

As he spoke, he raised his sword and pointed it towards me. He smiled coldly, “You want Blood Gold? Sure, over my dead body. I’ll let you mine to your heart’s fill if you manage to defeat me! But will some kind of third-rate guild like [Zhan Long] be worthy enough to accomplish that?”

Chapter 244: Five Against One

“Damn!”

Old K picked up his axe as he yelled, “Jian Feng Han you’re a bit too arrogant aren’t you? Don’t you see anyone in Ba Huang City as a fellow human being anymore?!”

Jian Feng Han lightly smiled: “Hero Ran Min.... a trash built up with equipment and skills..... “

Old K couldn’t take it anymore.

I quickly raised my hand in front of Old K to stop him and murmured, “Don’t be rash, just let [Vanguard] be arrogant some more!”

As I said that, I looked at Jian Feng Han and coldly said, “I already called all of [Zhan Long]’s members here, along with [Ruined Bones], [Winds of Battle], [Misty Palace], and [Blood Contract]; these four guilds will soon arrive within an hour. Jian Feng Han, right now the China guild rankings have [Vanguard] ranked as third and today I want to see just how tough China Billboard’s third highest guild’s bones really are.”

Fallen Wolf picked up his battle axe and grinned, “I’m afraid these bones are so hard that they’ll knock your teeth out!”

I lowered my voice, “Even if all of [Zhan Long]’s teeth fall out, today we will definitely bite through that bone. Just you wait!”

Turning around, I announced to everyone and brought the hundred or so people to retreat.

.....

“Why aren’t we directly confronting them?” The confused Old K asked.

Yue Qin Qian grinned: “Uncle Old K, do you not see it? Just looking at the bottom of the mountain there are close to 300+ of [Vanguard]’s players and the mines have at least 200+ players along with Jian Feng Han and Fallen Wolf. With the hundred people we have right now, we aren’t even enough to get stuck between their teeth.....”

I nodded: “Basically, and to top it all off we don’t have enough Healers. Once we start fighting there won’t be any way to recover and then we would be completely screwed.”

Thousand Suns Over Snowy Lands said, “Also..... yesterday’s maintenance nerfed the skill – [Revive]. Within 30 minutes, a player can at most revive only two times, and no more..... even if there were Healers we’d be killed to the point where we can no longer revive.”

I lifted Frost Rain Sword and walked up to the frontline and looked out into the distance, “Just wait for a while, soon the reinforcements will arrive and at that moment we’ll strike the mines!”

On the sidelines, Palace Decree lifted his hammer and smiled, “I didn’t think Xiao Yao Zi Zai would be so focused on these mines, he seems very determined to win.... Hehe, looks like I still have hope in entering the cave to mine some more Blood Gold to help Palace Spirit’s blacksmithing skill to reach Lv 10.....”

“Who is Palace Spirit?” I asked in surprise.

Palace Decree couldn’t help but smile and said, “I forgot to mention it but I have a sister, who’s 23 years old; her ID is Palace Spirit. We split up the work, so usually I’ll grind [Mining] levels, while Spirit rushes her [Blacksmithing] levels. That way I have Lv 9 [Mining] and can also help her level up [Blacksmithing] to Lvl 9. How else would her [Blacksmithing] be at such a high level?”

My ears perked, and asked: “Palace Decree, why don’t you come and join [Zhan Long]? We can provide the best environment for leveling [Blacksmithing].

Palace Decree smiled slightly: “Unfortunately, not at the moment. I just joined [Legendary Myth], and the Guild Master treats Palace Spirit and I very well, so I won’t leave the guild for the time being. Also... the Guild Master is putting a lot of resources into making Spirit and I number one in [Blacksmithing] and [Mining] and I don’t want to be indebted to anyone. I implore Guild Master Xiao Yao to wait patiently. It’s not that I’m avoiding [Zhan Long], I just don’t want to change guilds too quickly.”

TL: SORRYYYYY! I didn't realize that legends was already used :(. Since 史诗 also means legends.

I nodded: "Sure, that won't be a problem but you need to agree to help me recast Emperor Qin's Sword."

Palace Decree laughed: "A gentleman's word is a promise, I will definitely refine Emperor Qin's Sword! Also, my sister Palace Spirit is your fan. She watched your legendary battle in Green Qilin Valley, when you fought back against [Wrath of the Heroes]'s hundreds of players and has repeatedly said that you were truly an exceptionally skilled player."

I just smiled and didn't say anything.

Yue Qing Qian sent me a message that secretly said, "Brother Xiao Yao, don't be impatient. Palace Spirit is your fan, so there's still a chance. I'll start with Palace Spirit and then lure these two siblings out from [Legendary Myth]. It won't be a big problem."

I chuckled as I replied, "Sure, it's really nice to have the reliable Qing Qian here..."

Yue Qing Qian's face turned beet red as she replied, "I was originally in charge of PR in [Prague], I've poached people out of their guilds a lot of times. Wuwu, does big brother Xiao Yao think that my character is bad?"

I couldn't hold back a giggle, "This is a headhunter's work. What's your character got to do with it?"

"Yeah, that's okay then..."

.....

A little after half an hour, the first batch of reinforcements arrived. A bunch of people came down from the skies; the person standing in front was a graceful and beautiful Wind Elf Knight. It was Matcha wielding the majestic Glass Spear of the Dragon's Soul. Following her were a bunch of Wind Elf players from [Zhan Long] with the Archer, Musketeer, Mage, and Healer professions.

"Sha sha..."

Matcha floated down to the ground and lightly smiled: "I'm not too late am I?"

"Nope!"

"Once I heard the news, I brought all 127 of the Wind Elf players and immediately rushed over...." Matcha looked at me and said, "When I told them that our boss' face was being punched in, these players flew much faster. Boss, look at how much these guys love you; when can [Zhan Long] pass out salaries?"

I flinched at once, "Not happening...."

Matcha: "Humph..."

.....

Not much later, another bunch of troops burst out from within the forest with Misty Clouds leading in front and his axe ready. Following closely behind him were Sword Reborn and Fighting in Blood. [Ruined Bones], [Winds of Battle] and [Misty Clouds], these three guilds, had finally gathered their troops together.

Misty Clouds approached me directly and politely smiled, "Guild Master Zi Zai, we meet again so soon, yet I never imagined that our second meeting would be the day our guild formed an alliance and fought together against [Vanguard]!"

I nodded, "Yeah, I also never thought that things would progress so quickly. I need Lv 9 ores to rush skill levels but [Vanguard] won't let people in. I'm not gonna say that I'm doing this for justice; once it concerns our personal benefit, [Zhan Long] wouldn't keep watching on the sidelines..."

Misty Clouds burst out laughing, "That's true; if Arctic Fox Forest continued to be controlled under [Vanguard], then all of the blacksmiths in Ba Huang City will belong to the [Vanguard] family in the future. This is a future that nobody is willing to accept!"

Sword Reborn quipped, "Guild Master Zi Zai, [Zhan Long] has more elite players than us; how many people do you have now?"

Matcha replied, "There's still 2 minutes remaining. Li Mu and Little Wolf are bringing 500 players here soon!"

Sword Reborn clenched his fist and grinned, "That's good then. With the strength of [Zhan Long] in our alliance, we will have at least a 30% chance of success!"

Matcha froze, "Guild Master of [Ruined Bones], how can you have so little confidence? We have four guilds working together, how could we still lose to [Vanguard]? Even if [Vanguard] is strong, they aren't strong to the point of being undefeatable..."

"Matcha, you don't understand..." Sword Reborn replied quietly, his face ashen, "Outside of Ba Huang City, some of my brothers have heard news that Jian Feng Han had mobilized the whole force of [Vanguard]. He's determined to keep Arctic Fox Forest, so [Vanguard] will make use of its full force to win this Arctic Fox Forest battle. Do you know...how many online players [Vanguard] has in Ba Huang City?"

Matcha shook her head, "Not sure..."

Sword Reborn smiled weakly, "[Vanguard] is the first guild in Ba Huang City that has reached Lv 4; the main guild currently has a full capacity of 3000 players who are always online for a long time. Furthermore, they still have at least 10 smaller groups; the number of [Vanguard]'s registered players are close to 70,000 people. At least 50,000 players have just joined, so currently the number of online players that can be mobilized is around 15,000 people. The four of us joined together only amounts to 3,000 people. By numbers...we'll definitely be crushed by [Vanguard]..."

I was quietly surprised, "These numbers, are they accurate?"

Sword Reborn nodded, "Yes. These numbers can all be trusted! Previously when we, these few guilds, battled with [Vanguard] over Arctic Fox Forest, Jian Feng Han didn't even use all his cards. He crushed our three guilds with not even 40% of his fighting strength. This time, humph, it will be really hard to say since Jian Feng Han is taking it seriously!"

Little Wolf readied his dagger and quickly moved forward, smiling quietly, “That’s okay, when we, [Zhan Long], get serious, victory is expected. Furthermore, we still have [Blood Contract]’s help!”

Misty Clouds grit his teeth, “It’s a pity that we can’t pull [Prague] along for this battle. Otherwise, if [Prague] sided with us, with the advantage of close to 20,000 online [Prague] players and the elites in [Zhan Long], we’d crush [Vanguard] in no time with little difficulty.”

At this moment, another bunch of people came out from within the depths of the forest. It was [Blood Contract]’s Guild Master, Han Bei Song, who was wearing a full body armor and wielding a sword raging with flames. His mouth showed an insolent smile, “No can do. It’s more fun fighting with less people; using a few to defeat the many is one of the qualities of heroes. Depending solely on numbers to win the battle, how can one be proud of that?”

I nodded: “Han Bei Song is right; the few of us are being bullied by [Vanguard]. This time, the five stiny cobblers are gathered together; let’s see if we can defeat the giant known as [Vanguard]!”

TL: Saying in chinese that 3 Stiny Cobblers > Genius

On one side, Matcha waved her hands and the map of the foot of the mountain in Arctic Fox Forest appeared. She quipped, “In reality, this mountain is surrounded by thick forest all around, so players won’t be able to pass through easily. There are many obstacles; it’s not a wide open plain, so [Vanguard]’s superiority in numbers might not be able to come out in full swing. We can utilize this weakness and break through them. From what I know, [Vanguard]’s 10,000 reinforcements will need at least 20 minutes to arrive. We should set up an ambush in the surrounding areas to intercept them in advance and attack Jian Feng Han in the inner areas. Then, with our superiority in numbers against Jian Feng Han’s 500 right now, we should have a chance of winning.”

“That’s right!” Misty Clouds shouted, “[Vanguard] has the advantage in numbers but they also have the weakness of organizing and mobilizing them. We are fewer in number but we are more flexible. Let’s prepare an

ambush in this Arctic Fox Forest right away; it's possible to win this war."

Li Mu came in with a smile being displayed in his face as he declared: "Let's kill each of their members once or twice, then at least half of them will not be willing to resurrect anymore. We should be able to display formidable military performance even with such a numerical inferiority. [Zhan Long]'s, [Ruined Bones]'s, [Winds of Battle]'s, [Misty Palace]'s and [Blood Contract]'s names will be etched in history! "

"Who will command this squad? " Misty Clouds asked.

Wang Jian faintly laughed: "Who could be a more suitable candidate than the Guild Master of our [Zhan Long]?"

I laughed as well: "There is one; Matcha has the best strategical instinct among us, so she will be the commander. Does anyone object? "

Misty Clouds said: "Whatever. There is no real suitable candidate anyways, so let this beautiful sister Matcha do it. "

Chapter 245: Let's try it out

“How do we split our forces?” Han Bei Song asked.

Behind Han Bei Song, Who's Blue pursed her lips as she interjected, “Our [Crimson Contract] has less people, please don't assign us as the main assault force to attack Jian Feng Han, we will be massacred.....”

Matcha could not help but laugh, she reassured Who's Blue, “We won't, [Crimson Contract] just has to stay on the outer ring and kill off any [Vanguard] members there. I plan to split our forces into three groups, of which [Misty Palace] contributes 200 and Zhan Long 200. This force should mainly comprise of Monks, Knights and Healers etc; their main objective is to block off the mine entrance and defend against any [Vanguard] forces that Jian Feng Han tries to use. Then we will concentrate our most elite forces to ambush any reinforcements from the outside.”

As she explained the plan, Matcha took a moment to share the map with the rest, she then continued, “To the south of Arctic Fox Forest are impassable cliffs and thorn forests. There are only two ways into Arctic Fox Forest, the Waning Moon Valley to the east and Red Grassland to the west. [Zhan Long] and [Ruined Bones] shall send their elite forces to set up an ambush from both sides of the high grounds of Waning Moon Valley while [Misty Palace] and [Crimson Contract] will send their elite battle forces to block off Red Grassland. Within an hour we need to ensure that all of [Vanguard]'s reinforcements die once, this way, [Vanguard]'s morale will take a serious blow. Finally we will turn our sights to the cave entrance and strike the final blow against Jian Feng Han.”

Han Bei Song let out a deep sigh and asked to confirm, “So [Crimson Contract] will defend the plains?”

“Yes!”

“Alright, got it. The pressure is pretty high!”

“The pressure is high no matter where you are!”

“Okay.....”

.....

Han Bei Song, Misty Clouds and Fighting In Blood quickly brought almost 1700 of their guild players into the Red Grasslands. Meanwhile [Zhan Long] and [Ruined Bones] 1400+ members entered the Waning Moon Valley area. Waning Moon Valley is located outside of Arctic Fox Forest, 1000 meters away. There weren't any [Vanguard] players on the lookout, so it bode well for our ambush.

Walking along the bushes, we stood at the passage leading to Waning Moon Valley. Looking up, two mountain ranges towered on both of our sides. The forests on the high grounds were extremely dense, it was a very good location to shield ourselves. Furthermore, rain constantly fell on the forest. Hence on the intersection between the valley and the mountain, there flowed a 5 meters deep by 3 meters wide trench that was a river when it rained.

Matcha pointed at the river channel and said, “Everybody move quickly. Cut down a few trees to cover the river channel. This river channel can be used as a small trap!”

Wolf nodded, “Yeah, Old K, Ah Lei, bring a few people along and follow me to cut some trees. We only have 10 minutes left!”

I pointed at the two mountain ranges and said, “Thousand Sun and Darling Duck, mobilize our long range players on the mountains, find a location with good coverage and hide yourselves within the thick bushes. Make sure to thoroughly cover yourself so you won't be able to be seen on the map, not even a single dot.”

Thousand Suns Over Snowy Lands nodded her head, “Yes, understood!”

The twins Yue Qing Qian and Yue Wei Liang held their daggers. Nearly in sync with each other, they asked “Brother Xiao Yao. What will we do?”

I turned my head to Matcha. She replied with a smile, “Vice Guild Leader should bring all Assassins to hide behind the trap we set up earlier. They have far too many members, so some will most definitely

cross this 'ultimate trap'. Use [Ambush] and [Gouge] to interrupt them. You guys will have support from the group atop the mountain range. However, try not to overdo it. If you get hurt, fall back to recover your health!"

Yue Qing Qian giggled while holding her dagger. "Understood. Let's go!"

The 900+ players from [Ruined Bones] then climbed up the mountain one by one. Sword Reborn lifted his spear, walked over and said, "With this, the two sides of this mountain range are secured with long range and Healer players. But we would need people to intercept in the middle. Let me bring some people over and become cannon fodder, someone has to do this anyway."

I couldn't help but laugh, "It's okay, Li Mu, Wang Jian, Old K, Dong Cheng Lei and I will be there with you. The purpose of this battle now is not to kill a lot of people but just to prevent [Vanguard]'s reinforcements from advancing further forward!"

Sword Reborn clenched his fist, getting excited, "Good, I'm really looking forward to this ambush!"

Matcha frowned, "Alright, everyone go to your own positions. There are still 7 minutes before they get here!"

"Yeah!"

.....

Archers, Mages, Musketeers and Healers climbed up the mountains one by one. Using the thick and dense forest and bushes, they covered their positions. Not long after that, only a few small dots were still exposed here and there and under Matcha's orders, they were quickly hidden away. Only 200 people from [Zhan Long] and [Ruined Bones] heavy armored players and Healers stood exposed in the middle of the narrow passage, prepared to welcome [Vanguard]'s players to their deaths!

"Huff..."

Matcha who stood by me, holding her Glass Spear of the Dragon Soul, and was breathing heavily. Her oval face showed a tinge of red and her

34C breast heaved up and down. A pair of mesmerizing eyes looked off into the distance.

“What, are you nervous now?” I laughed.

Matcha bit her lips, “Boss, this is my first time commanding such a large number of people in a battle, do you think I can remain calm?”

I laughed heartily, “It’s okay, we are all here with you!”

“Yeah!”

Dong Cheng Lei also laughed aloud, “That’s right, there’s big brother Xiao Yao and us here with you. We’ll definitely be able to force those third rate [Vanguard] players to retreat...”

Li Mu froze, “Oh no, they are actually not third rate players. I’ve gotten news that the group of [Vanguard] players coming through Waning Moon Valley are led by North Pole. They have a total force of 6000 people, all equipped with strong skills. Their numbers are almost four times ours!”

I locked my hand on my sword, “Then, the troops dispatched to the Red Grasslands should easily be more than 8000 players and led by Simple. [Crimson Contract], [Misty Palace] and [Winds of Battle] won’t be able to stop them. We have to quickly finish the battle here and go over there to help them!”

Li Mu nodded, “I am also worried about that. They should have brought a bunch of Mages since Simple is leading. These forces are not something that our fellow guild friends can handle.”

Sword Reborn slammed his shield on the ground and chuckled, “No need to worry so much, we should have more confidence in our allied guilds. From what I know, Misty Clouds, Fighting in Blood and Han Bei Song are masters in desperate fighting. They won’t even care if they die, even Simple, that Mage won’t be able to handle them. Anyways, we should win this battle!”

“Yes!”

.....

A few minutes later.

“They are here!” From the skies, Matcha readied her spear. Flapping her wings, she flew down to the ground and said, “North Pole is leading a tremendous amount of people here, everyone get ready!”

I took out a card and yelled, “Everyone use your Pardon Cards. Don’t lose too many levels!”

Li Mu, Wang Jian, Old K, Sword Reborn and the others used their Pardon Cards one by one. This is one of the must have for PKing. Once entering a battle, they would be able to kill at least 10 people. Without Pardon Cards, once you become a Red-name player and are killed a few times, the cost is not something that anyone would want to bear. After all, training to raise a level is too hard, it’s not everyday you can get a level SS quest and level up a lot.

On the horizon, North Pole held his staff and led a huge group of people bearing [Vanguard]’s emblem on their shoulders out of the forest. Every single one looked austere and sinister, like the single sharp blade symbol on [Vanguard]’s emblem.

Don’t be Foolish readied his spear, squinted his eyes and looked into the distance. He said, “North Pole, this is not good. They are all prepared. Look at them, [Zhan Long] and [Ruined Bones] have all stationed their players and are ready to battle us. Looks like Xiao Yao Zi Zai has come prepared, what do we do now? Do you think we should turn back and try entering the battle from the thorns forest on the west side?”

North Pole shook his head, “No, the thorns will deal a lot of damage to our troops. Since you are a Knight with a lot of health and defense, you won’t be affected that much. How about us Mages and Archers? We’ll be poked to death by the thorns! Don’t be Foolish, look clearly. [Zhan Long] and [Ruined Bones] only have 300 people at most. Dispatching such a small number, I think they only wanted to delay us. I’ve heard the news that they are organizing an attack on the mine. We have 7000 men behind us, we can crush them straight away and join together with Guild Master!”

Don't be Foolish nodded, "Ok, this time you are the commander of this 7000-man troop, I'll listen to you!"

On one side, Goodbye Tears frowned, "Do you think there will be people lying in ambush on the two mountain sides?"

North Pole laughed coldly, "You, this ignorant Buddhist monk.... how many people in total will [Zhan Long] and [Ruined Bones] have combined? Even if they are lying in ambush, we'd still be able to crush them?"

Goodbye tears only shook his head, "No can do, let's order some people to recede first!"

He waved his hands and said, "10 Wind Elves, help us check if there are any people lying in ambush in the mountains!"

"Huahua.."

In the skies, 10 Wind Elves flew over!

.....

"Not good...." Matcha frowned and said, "They are checking the surroundings, what do we do?"

Thousand Suns Over Snowy Lands flew down from the skies carrying her staff. She laughed, "Matcha, shall we both kill them all? Do you have the confidence?"

"Of course!"

At once, the two beautiful Wind Elves quickly flew up. Matcha, wielding her Glass Spear of Dragon Soul, cast her [Phantom Shield] before they neared the Wind Elves. Their defense increased right away. Then she unleashed [Phantom Ray], sweeping across the three Wind Elf Archers, causing more than 1000 health to be lost from each player. At the same time, her attack did more than 20% of the Wind Elves total health which caused the three Wind Elves to fall down to the forests beneath them.

"Shua!"

The Illusionary Butterfly Queen fluttered about and unleashed its

[Vines of the Dancing Butterfly] along with another few spells. Yet another two Wind Elves lost their ability to fly.

Thousand Suns Over Snowy Lands lifted her staff and started to cast her [Mana Shield] as she flew across. [Pillars of Ice and Fire] engulfed and killed 2 Wind Elves. Following through, she activated [Dimensional Leap], “shua” and leapt across 24 yards. Her [Icicle Spell] struck at another Wind Elf to knock him out of the air and not stopping at that, she activated another [Dimensional Leap] and unleashed [Indigo Sea Arrow], killing another Wind Elf Archer on the spot. With her third [Dimensional Leap], the last Wind Elf also fell to the ground!

Sword Reborn was stunned, the loud sound of his saliva being swallowed could be heard, “Well damn, Thousand Suns Over Snowy Lands’ magical power and control over her battle rhythm is quite good. Guild Master Zi Zai, where did you find such a terrifyingly beautiful monster of a Mage like her?”

I only laughed, “Only fate knows....”

Sword Reborn: “....”

.....

The two Wind Elf girls quickly came flying back after finishing their skirmish. The opposing 10 Wind Elves on the ground didn’t dare fly into the air and scout ahead anymore.

“Keng!”

One of the flag bearers took out his sword and yelled, “F*ck, I can’t take this anymore! A small group like this dares to be this arrogant; Squad Leader North Pole, let us charge ahead and kill the members of [Zhan Long] and [Ruined Bones] one by one!”

North Pole thrust his staff into the air and cried out, “Everybody charge! Break through the front ranks of their defenses, and then bring back Strawberry Matcha and Thousand Suns Over Snowy Lands to be our mistresses!”

One by one, the [Vanguard] players each brought their swords and

charged, roaring as they came rushing towards us...

Chapter 246: Death Rhythm

“Ready your swords!”

With my command, the members of [Zhan Long] and the members of [Ruined Bones] at the entrance of Waning Moon Valley all pulled out their weapons: swords, sabers, spears, halberds and blades flashed under the moonlight. Our group was responsible for delaying the enemy’s front line.

Behind me, Darling Duck raised her Healing Rod, with a “Whoosh” I was bathed in a shining light creating a protective wall around me. A battle notification appeared: Player Darling Duck has cast Lv 6【Protection】on you, raising your defense and magic resistance by 12% for 30 minutes.

“Tsk”, 3rd job advancement Healers could cast [Protection] and at Lv 10 it could raise a player’s defense and magic resistance by 20%; it was a skill that greatly increases ones survivability. The potential of a Healer’s support skills were becoming much clearer.

Sadly, there were too few high level Healers in [Zhan Long]; Darling Duck was the only Healer with the 3rd job advancement. Otherwise, we would be able to cast [Protection] on everyone. That would make us unkillable!

.....

My Frost Rain Sword twitched as the distance between [Vanguard]’s players and us decreased. When there were only 10 steps between us, Fox asked in the party chat: “Xiao Yao, when are we going to start our attack?”

I sternly said: “Don’t be impatient, once [Vanguard] clashes with our frontline we will strike from behind, making it so that they won’t even have the chance to retreat!”

“Ok!”

“Here they come!” Matcha lifted her Glass Spear of the Dragon’s Soul

and directly unleashed a [Phantom Ray] attack!

“Hong!”

Dust blanketed the fields, while the attack, with such a poor angle, only struck two people.....

My face almost turned black: “Matcha, you...”

Matcha’s face turned red: “Boss, my hit was a bit off....”

“Don’t miss again next time, picture the spot you want to hit before you activate the skill.....”

“Ok, sure....”

My Frost Rain Sword trembled as a group of Swordsmen and Berserkers arrived before our eyes. I immediately cast [Seven Star Fragment Slash]. The sword glowed with energy as it carved into the center of the group, inflicting a large amount of damage to each of them

1827 !

1939 !

2001 !

.....

Crouching slightly, I activated [Blade Rush], seizing the opportunity to finish off a few [Vanguard] members.

“Clash!”

My body charged 5 meters past the group, leaving a trail of bodies in my wake. [Seven Star Fragment Slash] and [Blade Rush] were sufficient for killing most of [Vanguard’s] players; only elite players like Jian Feng Han, Fushen Thousand Blades and others like them could survive that combination.

“Damn!”

Don’t Be Foolish lifted his spear and yelled: “Hey Monk! Cast [Put Down the Knife] on Xiao Yao Zi Zai! His attack power is too high and our Knights cannot defend against him! This will not do!”

Goodbye Tears nodded: “Ok!”

With an “om” sound, a golden Buddha light descended from above me, lowering my attack by 10%!

In the party chat, Thousand Suns Over Snowy Lands said, “Boss, let’s work together to kill Goodbye Tears. Once the caster dies, [Put Down the Knife]’s effect will disappear!”

“Okay!”

Surging forward, I lifted my fist; summoning my Flaming Tiger God. He roared as he appeared. His body grew larger as his claws, clad with fire, pounced on Goodbye Tears, knocking off 1429 points of his health. This bastard’s defense was truly high!

I crouched down and punched the ground, activating [Binding Chains]!

“Bang!”

Chains broke out from the ground, shooting straight at Goodbye Tears and binding his legs. I waved my hand and cast [Great Realm of Desolation]!

1821 !

Not good, my attack power had been reduced by 10%; [Great Realm of Desolation] barely did 2000 damage....

Behind me, Thousand Suns Over Snowy Lands jumped to the front lines with a “whoosh”. Words spilled out of her mouth, while her staff danced through the air, creating an indigo magic arrow that shot through the air. Goodbye Tears’ eyes widened as he saw the beautiful Mage’s attack and he cursed under his breath: “F*ck, double-teaming me, that’s cheap....”

“Bang!”

The [Indigo Sea Arrow] pierced the Monk’s chest, causing a big damage number to appear--

2428 !

From the mountain peak, two shots sounded as Fox activated [Double

Shot], sniping and finishing off Goodbye Tears.

.....

Deep within the ranks of [Vanguard] players, I was surrounded by flashes of swords striking me, but the damage was insignificant to me. With the 12% boost, my defense was at 2278, similar to that of high level Knights like Don't be Foolish. How could average Swordsmen break through my defense?

Waving my sword, I used [Combo] and [Fierce Ice Blade] to kill 2 Swordsmen in front of me. I didn't even bother to retreat and kept moving on forward. At the same time, I cast a Lv 7 [Heal], recovering 1050 of my own health. My self-sufficiency was high enough that there wasn't anything I was afraid of!

Behind me, with his whirlwind and glowing battle axe that terrified all, Old K had already engulfed a crowd of enemies with [Whirlwind Slash]. Immediately switching over to [Savage Jump Slash], he managed to kill and scare off many [Vanguard] players. A Knight stood at the front and roared bravely, "Stand strong! I will block Ran Min's attack; Swordsmen attack! Use your [Flame Blade]s to kill him!"

"Clang!"

Old K swung down onto the Knight's shield fiercely, however it did not affect the Lv 60 Knight at all. From the sides, many Swordsmen and Berserkers from [Vanguard] attacked him, bringing his health down rapidly!

I hurriedly retreated and cast [Heal] on him while shouting, "Pull back! [Whirlwind Slash] is on cooldown, wait for it to come back on before attacking again!"

Old K glared at the Knight with a murderous intent, "But I want to kill this bloody Knight before I go!"

"Brother Old K, allow me!"

From behind, Dong Cheng Lei raised his battle axe and charged, both of his hands swung his weapon down onto the Knight. With a bang, his

super strength completely overwhelmed and shattered the Knight's defenses, knocking his shield out of his hands. Thousand Suns Over Snowy Lands and Matcha took this chance to kill him!

.....

From both sides of the mountain range, spells and arrows began to rain down on the [Vanguard] players. The 1000 players from [Vanguard] finally had a taste of how difficult it was to deal with us in this narrow mountain pass. The amount of casualties were rising rapidly; the players that were resurrected by Healers in the back found themselves being killed again almost instantly. It was due to Thousand Suns Over Snowy Lands and her strong magical prowess; her [Pillars of Ice & Fire] practically left the heavy armor class enemies weeping.

“Hou!”

The tiger bounded out of the forest and used [Fierce Roar] to immediately kill off a nearby group of [Vanguard] players. Then came another [Burstfire Raid], killing a squad of Archers and Mages. North Pole's face had nearly blacked out after seeing that, and quickly tried to cast [Pillars of Ice & Fire] underneath the tiger in hopes of killing it. Unfortunately for him, the Flaming Tiger God recovered its health with a [Bloodthirsty Strike] and Darling Duck kept casting [Heal] on the tiger, so that it could always maintain at least 70% health.

My way of fighting was relatively simple; I would cast [Seven Star Fragment Slash] and [Blade Rush] when I advanced. I didn't activate any single target skill. That way, I was saving myself some mana, and even if I only used a normal sword attack, the [Vanguard] players wouldn't be able to endure it!

General Li Mu, General Wang Jian, and General Bai Qi were all fighting and killing players within a crowd. No matter where they were in the crowd however, they had Healers from every corner ready to heal them. That way, the top quality heavy armor classes could fight without having to worry about their own health.

It hadn't even been 10 minutes before the battle records were already

showing that around 2272 members from [Vanguard] had already died. In this tight area, they didn't have any superiority in numbers and with our ambush, there weren't any words that could describe their bitterness!

.....

“My god...”

Don't Be Foolish carried his spear and pointed towards the mountains, “North Pole, we can't act rashly like this. I'll take some men and storm this side of the mountains to kill off their long range units. You should take some people and go to the left side and reconnect with the men over there so we can suppress them from all four sides!”

North Pole nodded his head, “Will do!”

A group noisily charged forward with Don't Be Foolish at the front brandishing his spear. As they approached the foot of the mountain though, they suddenly heard a cracking sound underneath their feet. A trap was set off, throwing the entire group down a gorge 3 meters deep into the dirt. It wasn't only Don't Be Foolish that had been caught but around a few hundred of the heavy armor forces had been caught in it as well!

“Motherf*cker...there's an ambush here as well...” Don't Be Foolish charged upward with his spear raised. Since it was a naturally formed gorge and not a cliff, it was easy for him to climb back upwards.

Fox held his rifle and shouted from the mountain top, “Fire! Concentrate your fire on the trap that Don't Be Foolish is in! I want him buried where he stands!”

“Bang bang bang bang...”

A small haze of black gunpowder smoke could be seen rising up as the Musketeers opened fire. Immediately, the ditch was completely razed to the ground. As the smoke from the guns began to dissipate ahead, Don't Be Foolish had one hand on his spear, another hand pointing up. He had been completely roasted and his mouth had smoke coming out of it like a cigarette. The last of his health had been taken from him by an arrow.

Emitting one more breath of smoke, his voice came out as he fell to the ground, "I'm so done, they've roasted me like a sweet potato..."

.....

With Don't Be Foolish gone, North Pole's face nearly went green. Exclaiming loudly, he said, "Continue onwards! Healers, revive Don't Be Foolish and the Monk so they can continue protecting the rest! No one should retreat even one step; they only have 500 men at most on the top of the mountain, their firing strength is nothing special. If we can get further up, we'll be able to rendezvous with the Guild Master in Arctic Fox Forest. The Guild Master is under attack and needs our reinforcements!"

"Shua..."

Two bright rays of light fell from the skies, reviving Don't Be Foolish to half health at his original position but his face was still dark. "My god, I was resurrected so quickly, was me dying not enough for you all? Fine then...brothers, let us charge then...."

A few Healers locked onto Don't Be Foolish with [Heal] and right as he reached full health again, he charged straight out of the gorge with his spear ready to strike!

"Shua!"

A flash of blood came out, leaving Don't Be Foolish standing still, stunned in place. The beautiful Assassin Yue Qing Qian carried her twin daggers and laughed as she launched her first combo attack, [Gouge]+ [Twin Harmony Strike], to penetrate through the body of Don't Be Foolish. His formidable defenses were completely ignored. This was the power of an Assassin-

974 !

1741 !

Qing Qian finished off her attack in a flash while Wei Liang used [Twinblade Harmony] at the same time. Not too far away, Thousand Suns Over Snowy Lands nodded in understanding as she cast [Indigo Sea

Arrow], and shot it from afar!

“Pa!”

2341 !

.....

Don't Be Foolish knelt onto the floor with his spear in hand and his face slowly turned green, “I'm done, I don't want to play like this anymore... This is a death rhythm ...?!”

Chapter 247: Zhan Long, Attack!

As Don't Be Foolish fell down onto the ground, Goodbye Tears turned purple, "No more of this...every heavy armor player here, charge with me. Don't let them find an opportunity to attack us; go on, charge!"

A few hundred heavy armor players started to charge towards the mountains with Goodbye Tears at the front. However at that moment... from the bloodstained grass came the figure of Wolf, stunning Goodbye Tears. Straight after, [Pillars of Ice & Fire] came blossoming out of the ground under his feet and dropped his health majorly. Without even waiting for Thousand Suns Over Snowy Lands to cast another spell, Wolf slashed out with his dagger, dropping Goodbye Tears to 0% health!

"Plop!"

Goodbye Tears' knees fell to the grassy grounds as he looked around himself blankly, "How is it that with so many people charging I was the first one to die?"

Wolf perked his daggers and said coldly, "Blame yourself for being [Vanguard]'s flagbearer..."

Goodbye Tears tearfully closed his eyes, as if to say goodbye as he died.

.....

"Aim at the Healers in the back and fire!" Matcha pointed with her spear as she floated in the skies and overlooked the situation on the battlefield.

Fox immediately turned his gun around and with 10 other Musketeers, cast [Bombardment] onto the grounds below. Being 70 meters higher than the opposition gave them a clear advantage and allowed them to easily fire at [Vanguard] from far away. Dense smoke and bullets covered the incoming [Vanguard] Healers, leaving the Mages alone in their formation.

"Boooommmmmmm....."

As the thick smoke continued and the gunfire shook the earth, nearly

100 Healers died in the resulting fire almost instantaneously. The [Vanguard] players were not expecting this outcome at all; no one had any idea that the enemy fire would have been strong enough to deal such a heavy blow to them!

North Pole's face ashened as he retreated while activating his [Mana Shield]. As he cast the shield, he cried out, "Where is our Musketeer squad? I want them up front and locate Xiao Yao Zi Zai's coordinates! Shoot him dead and intimidate the rest of his army!"

Some distance away, the Musketeers raised their rifles and started to fire!

I took in the sight in front of me and then charged straight ahead with my hand upraised as I got ready to cast a skill. My body bent downwards as I waved my sword to activate [Blade Rush]. I dashed into the enemy crowd while behind me, Darling Duck had already figured out my plan. "Healers!" She cried, "Lock onto the Guild Master, don't let him die!"

Looking up, I concentrated on dodging the enemy fire and players. [Vanguard] really did have too many people, I counted almost 100 Musketeers focusing on me. The damage was going to be horrendous. Not getting hit was an impossible outcome so I activated [Shield of the Crimson Dragon] and the roar of a dragon was heard as the crimson dragon came crashing through the ground and hovered around me to protect me from damage. The gunfire came raining down on me, and a continuous string of damage came flying up in a nonstop stream—

89 !

101 !

73 !

44 !

.....

There were barely any attacks that did 3 digit damages and I had a few dozen Healers behind me ready to cast [Heal]. There was no way I'd die!

“Hou...”

The Flaming Tiger God roared and used [Burstfire Raid] to attack a group and then roared with [Fierce Roar], unsettling another group as it hit them, causing them to fall to the ground. A [Flaming Claw] struck a Knight in the stomach and brought him to half health. Turning around, the tiger gave a mighty roar and ran all over the place, causing terror and carnage everywhere as it killed players from [Vanguard] left and right.

“Onwards!”

Li Mu roared as his sword was hoisted into the air, “The Guild Master has already taken the first round of damage! Wang Jian, Old K, Cang Lei, it’s our turn to lead the charge! Attack the [Vanguard] squad in the valley, don’t let them do too much damage to our troops!”

Old K readied his Haunted Twinblade Axe and laughed, “I’ve been wanting to do this forever, who’ll be the first one up?”

Wang Jian answered, “Let’s have Cang Lei go first; break apart their defenses!”

Dong Cheng Lei had no objections, so he carried his battle axe on his shoulder and walked forward. Facing against a Knight that carried a shield and another Monk that was already roaring in preparation to fight, Cheng Lei brandished his battle axe. He pounded into the shield with a great downwards smash and split the shield and Knight in two. The dozen enemies nearby grew mad with rage and attacked him with [Flame Blade] in hopes of killing him. All it did however, was cause Cheng Lei to stamp on the ground in annoyance as a wall of stars came up behind him. This was the skill I gave him– [Absolute Zero Megrez Wall]!

“Papapa...”

The [Flame Blade]s struck against the wall uselessly. Not many of them could hurt the beautifully equipped Dong Cheng Lei let alone kill him. Combined with the Healers behind him, Dong Cheng Lei was able of taking on tens of thousands of enemies by himself.

“Kill!”

Li Mu, Wang Jian and Bai Chi cut into the enemy lines side by side and caused confusion everywhere with their skills. The opposing heavy armor classes were all scattered and in disorder as Old K's [Whirlwind Slash] wrecked havoc everywhere amongst them. With the rest of the heavy armor players of [Zhan Long] charging in, the defensive wave of players from [Vanguard] was completely obliterated. Li Mu took control of his Valiant Bravery group and charged in between the gap and began to kill the long ranges without mercy!

.....

The battle at the base of the mountain was still fervently increasing in intensity. Wolf continuously flitted back and forth between the enemy lines; his dagger flitting across the neck of a single Archer before he disappeared back into the shadows. With each kill, he was healed as the two sisters Yue Qing Qian and Yue Wei Liang retreated with half their health left. Around 50 Assassins were at the foot of the mountain but there were just far too many players from [Vanguard], their group was slowly but surely advancing higher and higher up the mountain in a dense pack.

"We have to block them!"

Yue Qing Qian struck a Swordsman that had 50% of his health in the stomach using [Twin Harmony Strike]. Using [God's Dance], she became a blur as she ran in a zigzag formation and dodged two Berserkers as they tried to hit her. Her body whirled around crazily as she slashed at the two Berserkers' necks. Numbers flew up from the two as they fell to the ground, symbolizing the gap in strength between the heavy and light armor classes. Yue Qing Qian had completely dominated the two in a flash!

"Sister!"

Yue Wei Liang slipped across, her twin daggers fending off the attack of a Swordsman. Aside from helping Yue Qing Qian block a fatal strike from the Swordsman, she had her snow white legs kick out explosively at the Swordsman's stomach. Leaning in, she held her two daggers parallel to

each other, and struck straight through the neck of the Swordsman with [Twin Harmony Strike].

1711 !

The Swordsman died in a second!

Wolf retreated backwards; on his way back, 3 [Vanguard] Swordsmen and 2 Berserkers had already fallen prey to his daggers. [Zhan Long]'s three Assassins had already thrown off the rhythm of [Vanguard] with their destruction and had already accomplished the extremes of what was expected of them.

.....

On top of the mountain, Fox reloaded his rifle and commanded, "Mages, use [Pillars of Ice & Fire] and [Rock Spikes] and attack! Don't use any single target spells and Musketeers! Use [Bombardment] without discrimination; Archers, fire off as many arrows as you can, I want these players to drop dead! I don't want a single toe touching the highlands of this mountain! Brothers of the fourth squad, look out at the skies in case they have any Wind Elves; shoot them down if any appear!"

Arrows and spells interlocked with each other as the Healers continuously revived the fallen Assassins in the front lines. In a flash, clusters of warriors from [Zhan Long] and [Ruined Bones] began fighting to protect the path from the gorge to the highlands. By this point, [Vanguard] had already left over 3000 corpses. The path towards them was cut off by Li Mu, Old K, and I so that the Healers on the other side didn't even have a chance to cast [Revive] on anyone who had died!

In the middle of the battle, Sword Reborn stabbed a Swordsman through his guts with his spear. With a [Fire Blade] to finish him off, he pumped his fist up and laughed, "How cool is this?! With this type of terrain advantage, we few can hold off the thousands!"

Old K brandished his battle axe as he ran through multiple people with a laugh, "What a joke, our Matcha doesn't have the title of Godly Strategist for nothing!"

“Huacha!”

My [Blade Rush] incapacitated 7 players while my pet tiger let out a [Fierce Roar] and killed another ten players. Standing still and wiping the blood off my sword, I looked around the battlefield and laughed. “Looking at this battle in Waning Moon Valley, I can see the ending!”

Matcha flew around in a circle in the sky as she surveyed the land below. With a wink, she said, “I’ve calculated it out, out of all of the members in [Vanguard] that participated in this battle, 5744 of their members have died once at the very least, and 3129 have died twice. Another 1984 players have already died three times. Even now, there are plenty of members that aren’t willing to fight anymore...”

“And what are our losses?”

“Over 900 players have died on our side, but all of them have been revived already...[Vanguard] still hasn’t reached the highlands and are pretty much just walking targets at this point. The huge amount of damage we’re doing to them shows that North Pole guy isn’t really a good commander. If they had swapped him out for a smarter person...I would have been afraid of an early flank towards our sides from the thorn bushes and then an attack from behind....”

“That’s good then...”

.....

Sword Reborn suddenly trembled as he looked off into the distance. Slapping his thigh in frustration, he cried, “My god, we screwed up...”

“What’s wrong?” Li Mu asked.

Sword Reborn was fuming with rage, “News just came from the Red Grass Plains. [Misty Palace], [Winds of Battle], and [Blood Contract] couldn’t handle [Vanguard]’s offense. Simple led an army 7000 people strong and without even losing 2000 people, they already killed everyone once, I’m afraid of the consequences if they die another time...”

Li Mu’s face paled, “Guild Master, what do we do?”

I clenched onto the Frost Rain Sword and said, “What else can we do? Let’s go and help them...I’ll go over there with the Valiant Bravery group and Zhan Long group. Sword Reborn, that will leave you with around 50% of the people here to defend this place. North Pole and his men already lost their wills to fight, so just stopping them from moving on will do. We’ll take 1000 men to attack Simple from behind; that way, there may be a chance to win!”

Sword Reborn nodded, “I understand, I’ll have my Vice Guild Master protect this place and the rest of my elite players will go with you!”

“Good...” I looked at Fox who was still on the mountain, “Fox! Stay with Zhan Long’s long range players here to help relieve some of the pressure [Ruined Bones] is feeling! The rest of us will go attack Simple and her 7000 players. The movement speed long ranges are too slow and wouldn’t be of much help when we get there!”

Fox nodded, “Ah, got it!”

.....

Far away, North Pole commanded his 2000+ players to retreat back into the bushes for a temporary retreat to plan their next strike. Likewise, we took around 950 players and slowly retreated over the ridges of Waning Moon Valley to rush off into the Red Grass Plains.

The moonlight was shining bright, giving us a nice twilight scene. With our 1000 players closing in on Red Grass Plains, we would be able to arrive within 10 minutes!

We took an indirect route which added 5 minutes, making the trip 15 minutes long, but we finally reached the end of Red Grass Plains!

“Sha...”

Being the first one to step onto the red grass with my sword in hand, I witnessed a mighty battle that was taking place not too far away. Misty Clouds and Han Bei Song were both trying to resist dying while Simple led an overwhelming amount of players that was crushing their resistance.

.....

“Hua!”

Suddenly standing up, I held my Frost Rain Sword high and proud. With a low but powerful voice, I cried, “[Zhan Long], come with me and attack!”

Chapter 248: The Grassland Pursuit

The Red Grass Plains looked as if the entire place had been dyed red with blood. Over 6000 players from [Vanguard] were battling it out intensely with the players of [Winds of Battle], [Misty Palace], [Blood Contract], whom had 1000 players left.

“Hua...”

The night wind blew up against my Illusion Cloak as I charged straight in and shouted, “Slice and dice their Healers and Mage teams. Anyone that finds out the coordinates of Simple inform me right away. The first priority has to be killing Simple, killing her will destroy [Vanguard]’s fighting spirit!”

Li Mu, Wang Jian, and Sword Reborn came charging with me as the rest of the 1000 players charged as one toward the opposing long ranged team!

.....

Under the moonlight, a team of Archers gossiped while standing in a carefree manner. With the tall grass and winds concealing us, they had no idea that we were coming. It was only when we were around 100 meters away that one Archer raised his head and saw us. His eyes widened in surprise, “F*ck! Xiao Yao Zi Zai brought the rest of [Zhan Long] for an ambush! Vice Guild Master, there’s an ambush behind us!”

“Keng!”

Lifting my hand, I pulled my Frost Rain Sword out from its scabbard, giving them little time to respond to us. Running swiftly, I dodged all of the [Scatter Shots] they shot at me, and dashed into a crowd of Archers and Healers. My feet never stopped for a second; my blade shook as I activated [Seven Star Fragment Slash], and seven star fragments roared out of my blade!

“Bang!”

The light from my sword shook the whole group as 14 Healers and

Archers fell dead. Another wave of my arm sent the Flaming Tiger God roaring as it charged forwards. [Burstfire Raid] engulfed the group and left behind a deep 50 meters burn scar on the plains. Continuing onward, the tiger roared with [Fierce Roar], killing many people indiscriminately!

Li Mu, Wang Jian, and Sword Reborn cut their way into the group as Old K ferociously swung his battle axe and sent [Whirlwind Slash] out. He activated [Savage Jump Slash], killing a third class advanced Archer. Dong Cheng Lei was at the side of Old K and the two hot headed Berserkers were killing with ease. Behind them, Yue Qing Qian and Wolf were leading a group of Assassins to try and kill as many people as they could. Although we had only 1000 people, our killing ability far surpassed the other side!

.....

While the rear guard was left to fend itself in confusion, the front lines were still being controlled by [Vanguard]'s many warriors. However, they definitely wouldn't be feeling happy for much longer!

Far away, Misty Palace lifted his battle axe as he looked around. Bursting out in laughter, he said, "Haha, [Zhan Long] and [Ruined Bones] have come to our rescue! Brothers, the time to counterattack has come, let us charge!"

With this pincer attack from front and back, the [Vanguard]'s strong 6000 people army began to panic as chaos ensued. After the group led by me had ambushed them, over 1000 of the long range in the rear guard were killed in less than 5 minutes! With the Healers also gone, there would be no one left to revive other players, so after we were done, there would be a sea of corpses behind us!

"Everyone, calm down!"

In the midst of a crowd, Simple raised her staff and cried, "Leafy Gentleman, lead a group of heavy armor warriors to block Xiao Yao Zi Zai and Sword Reborn's group of players! I'll immediately gather some firepower to stop them. Xiao Yao Zi Zai didn't bring many people; there can't be more than 1000 players so they won't be able to handle our

firepower. With this formation, victory will be in our grasp!”

Leafy Gentleman was a Lv 60 3rd class advanced Swordsman and one of the squad leaders of [Vanguard]. His shoulder displayed the guild’s emblem of a blade. With his longsword raised high in the air, he shouted, “The first squad of heavy armor players, come with me! We’ll be the first line of defense and defend our army from the onslaught of [Zhan Long] and [Ruined Bones]. Let’s kill these reckless idiots and dye the Red Grass Plains with their blood!”

Immediately, almost 500 players turned around to rush at us. A few Knights were at the front of the charge, their shields dragging on the ground. Immediately, they set up a 200 meter defensive perimeter with Leafy Gentleman standing behind them shouting, “Archers and Mages, prepare to fire! When they are 40 meters away, fire away!”

.....

“Kacha!”

The Frost Rain Sword slashed on a Berserker. Raising my head, I saw that the only things remaining were corpses. The 1500+ players from [Vanguard] had been brutally murdered and their corpses lay on the grassy fields. Our losses were not small either, numbering at least 300 people. Fortunately, we had brought over 50 Healers, even Darling Duck flew over. Standing on the ground, the people were revived one by one. The 1000 man battalion stood again, lively as ever.

Sword Reborn lifted his spear and shouted. “They want to use their heavy line of defense and long ranged attacks to mow us down. We can’t give them too much time. Guild Master Zi Zai, let’s rush over and break their defenses!

I nodded. “Old K, Li Mu, Wang Jian, we’ll go together. Ah Lei, is responsible for breaking their defenses!”

“Yes!”

Our group unhesitatingly rushed onward. I once again used [Haste] to dash forward, leading the small group. Above the slope, rains of arrows

and spells flew down. The rhythm for instant death!

“Hong!”

A Crimson Dragon emerged from the ground, protecting me. “Pi pa pi pa...” Arrows hit my shoulder in quick succession. Withstanding the barrage of arrows and spells, I raised my arm and cast a Lv 7 [Heal] to recover 1050 health. We were only 5 meters away! I stretched my arm holding the Frost Rain Sword backwards, and using that stored potential energy I swept my sword in a curved path, cutting atop the shield formation.

“Ah ah ah...”

Three Knights were knocked back, unable to bear the strength of my attack. Not waiting for them to regain their postures, I lowered my body... [Blade Rush]!

“Huacha!”

Cutting through an entire wall of people, the attack made all of the heavy armor players suffer damage. I turned around and used [Seven Star Fragments Slash], killing another group of Assassins. At the same time, my Flaming Tiger God used [Burstfire Raid], [Fierce Roar] and [Flame Claw] simultaneously, slaughtering even more players and leaving them in despair.

On the other hand, Li Mu, Wang Jian and Sword Reborn used their skills to bombard the enemy's defenses. The Swordsmen, almost instantly after the bombardment, rushed forwards to strike the heavy armor battalion. In an instant, these three Swordsmen tore apart [Vanguard]'s wall of defense. Along with Dong Cheng Lei and Old K's sudden attacks, [Vanguard]'s first line of defense had fallen!

“F*ck...”

Leafy Gentleman furrowed his brows. “How did they die so quickly!? Dammit, Archers lock onto Hero Ran Min; his attacks are too overwhelming!

Leafy Gentleman's swift footwork wasn't half bad. With matchless

agility, he leaped around and then decisively charged towards Old K, swinging his sword. The sword's tip wavered and six bright golden hexagrams appeared, hitting Old K on his shoulder!

723 !

747 !

698 !

721 !

Old K was quite smart this time. He managed to gobble down a health potion, barely surviving the attack. If the Archers behind Leafy Gentleman were to shoot him, then it would be troublesome!

“Brother Old K...”

Dong Cheng Lei let out a furious roar. Wielding his axe, he rushed forwards to defend Old K. With both arms trembling, he activated [Absolute Zero Megrez Wall]. At the same time, his war axe struck Leafy Gentleman's sword. Obviously, Leafy Gentleman couldn't possibly withstand Cang Lei's godly strength. He flew away like a kite with a snapped string. With a chill behind his back as he flew, Yue Qing Qian used a [Bleed] on him!

“Xi!”

A pair of fair-skinned arms raised in the air, Yue Qing Qian's daggers intertwined. [Twin Blade Harmony] !

1987 !

Together with the [Bleed], Leafy Gentleman furrowed his brows as his health dropped to 0. In a flash, he was killed by Yue Qing Qian's successive strikes. Before he vanished, he mumbled, “Focus your fire at Yue Qing Qian. Kill the Vice Guild Master of [Zhan Long]!”

Unfortunately, Yue Qing Qian was clever. Swaying her arms, she used [God's Dance], drastically increasing her chances of dodging. Immediately after, she also used [Absolute Step], leaving her body as light as a feather. A few moments later, she gently touched down into [Zhan

Long]'s camp, not giving the enemy any chances of hitting her.

.....

Spells and arrows covered the entire sky and shots were fired non-stop. [Vanguard]'s people, whose numbers were overwhelming, had finally appeared. Heavy armored players from [Zhan Long] and [Ruined Bones] were massacred mercilessly. However, the Healers kept reviving them. Many of them had been revived two to three times already. Because of this war, most of the members went all out!

“Wu...wuuu...”

Holding her shield littered with arrows, Matcha slowly walked forwards step by step. Using Phantom Holy Shield as soon as the cooldown time was over, she managed to be the last person standing on the frontlines. Of course, there was also my pet, the Flaming Tiger God. His health was really just too high! He ran around enemy terrain, causing chaos while using [Blood Drain] to recover health. The adorable tiger also used [Fierce Roar] to wreck havoc on the enemy. Moving at such high speeds, many Archers and Mages could absolutely not catch up! This was able to close the distance between our numbers and theirs!

On the frontlines, 7 of our third advancement Swordsmen kept penetrating their defenses, causing our frontline to keep changing. I jumped forward, landing in front of Matcha. The [Seven Star Fragments Slash], together with a [Fierce Roar] from my tiger, killed a whole bunch of Archers and Mages. Meanwhile, Yue Qing Qian, Yue Wei Liang and Song Han led the group of Assassins to infiltrate the enemy lines, cutting the pressure on the frontline. In the back, [Zhan Long]'s long ranged attackers had finally arrived. Thousand Suns Over Snowy Lands' magic spells were cast continuously. In the distance, miserable cries could be heard.

Suddenly, I felt a strong sense of longing for Dong Cheng Yue. If there was a super almighty Mage right here, right now, that [Chain Lightning] and [Magma Lance] could effortlessly slaughter an entire group. If she were here, the members of [Vanguard] would definitely be crying.

.....

“Be careful! They sent their Assassins to get rid of our Mages!” Yue Qing Qian shouted in the group chat.

Even before her voice faded, blood spilled from Thousand Suns Over Snowy Lands’ body as two Assassins almost simultaneously used [Ambush]. Luckily, Thousand Suns Over Snowy Lands’ reaction speed was fast, as she immediately using [Dimensional Leap] and dodged one of the attacks. Immediately, she cast [Pillar of Fire & Ice] on the area she stood before, killing 3 Assassins on the spot. The Archers nearby, taking advantage of what happened, used their [Multi Shots] and cleaned the area of Assassins.

Squinting my eyes, I looked into the distance. Simple’s distance from us was only around 100 meters!

“Kacha!”

Striking an Archer on the shoulder, Li Mu lifts his sword. “So, shall we take down Simple?”

I nodded. “Yup! Everyone, rush forward. Shorten the distance between us and Simple to around 40 meters! If my tiger and I are able to lock on to Simple, she is a goner!”

Yue Qing Qian slowly went into the Stealth. “Brother Xiao Yao, I’ll follow you!”

“Good!”

.....

Simple, Ba Huang City’s Number One Mage, third on the Leaderboard. Here, she was our biggest threat!

“Hua!”

A breeze billowed under my feet, as I activated [Haste]. Once again, I dashed forwards at high speed. At the same time I commanded the Flaming Tiger God to attack. A [Burstfire Raid] was cast as he rushed straight towards Simple!

“Hou!”

[Flame Claw] clipped onto Simple’s shoulder!

“Ah!?”

Simple’s line of sight swept over and immediately cast a [Dimensional Leap]!

Credits

Translator: [Hello Translations](#) / [Gravity Tales](#)

Epub: [Estevam](#) / [dotNOVEL](#)